THE Novelist's Magazine.

VOL. XII.

(CONTAINING)

The Female Quixote.
Journey from this World to the next.
Joe Thompson.
and Peter Wilkins.

LONDON:
Printed for Harrison and Co
No. 18 Paternoster Row.
1783.


BRITISH MUSEUM

THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF

ARABELLA.

BY MRS. LENOX.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoſter-Row.
M DCC LXXXIII.

THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF

ARABELLA.

BY MRS. LENOX.

TO THE

Right Honourable the Earl of Middlesex.

MY LORD,

SUCH is the power of interest over almost every mind, that no one is long without arguments to prove any position which is ardently wished to be true, or to justify any measures which are dictated by inclination.

By this subtle sophistry of desire, I have been persuaded to hope, that this book may, without impropriety, be inscribed to your lordship; but am not certain that my reasons will have the same force upon other understandings.

The dread which a writer feels of the publick censure; the still greater dread of neglect; and the eager wish for support and protection, which is impressed by the consciousness of imbecility; are unknown to those who have never adventured into the world; and I am afraid, my lord, equally unknown to those, who have always found the world ready to applaud them.

It is, therefore, not unlikely, that the design of this address may be mistaken, and the effects of my fear imputed to my vanity: those who see your lordship's name prefixed to my performance, will rather condemn my presumption, than compassionate my anxiety.

But, whatever be supposed my motive, the praise of judgment cannot be denied me; for to whom can timidity so properly fly for shelter, as to him who has been so long distinguished for candour and humanity? How can vanity be so compleatly gratified, as by the allowed patronage of him whose judgment has so long given a standard to the national taste? Or by what other means could I so powerfully suppress all opposition, but that of envy, as by declaring myself,

My LORD,

Your LORDSHIP'S

Obliged and most Obedient

Humble Servant,

THE AUTHOR.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINS A TURN AT COURT, NEITHER NEW NOR SURPRIZING.—SOME USELESS ADDITIONS TO A FINE LADY'S EDUCATION.—THE BAD EFFECTS OF A WHIMSICAL STUDY, WHICH SOME WILL SAY IS BORROWED FROM CERVANTES.

THE Marquis of ——, for a long series of years, was the first and most distinguished favourite at court: he held the most honourable employments under the crown, disposed of all places of profit as he pleased, presided at the council, and in a manner governed the whole kingdom.

This extensive authority could not fail of making him many enemies: he fell at last a sacrifice to the plots they were continually forming against him; and was not only removed from all his employments, but banished the court for ever.

The pain his undeserved disgrace gave him, he was enabled to conceal by the natural haughtiness of his temper; and, behaving rather like a man who had resigned, than been dismissed from his posts, he imagined he triumphed sufficiently over the malice of his enemies, while he seemed to be wholly insensible of the effects it produced. His secret discontent, however, was so much augmented by the opportunity he now had of observing the baseness and ingratitude of mankind, which in some degree he experienced every day, that he resolved to quit all society whatever, and devote the rest of his life to solitude and privacy. For the place of his retreat, he pitched upon a castle he had in a very remote province of the kingdom, in the neighbourhood of a small village, and several miles distant from any town. The vast extent of ground which surrounded this noble building, he had caused to be laid out in a manner peculiar to his taste: the most laborious endeavours of art had been used to make it appear like the beautiful product of wild uncultivated nature. But if this epitome of Arcadia could boast of only artless and simple beauties, the inside of the castle was adorned with a magnificence suitable to the dignity and immense riches of the owner.

While things were preparing at the castle for his reception, the marquis, though now advanced in years, cast his eyes on a young lady, greatly inferior to himself in quality, but whose beauty and good sense promised him an agreeable companion. After a very short courtship, he married her, and in a few weeks carried his new bride into the country, from whence he absolutely resolved never to return.

The marquis, following the plan of

life he had laid down, divided his time between the company of his lady, his library, which was large and well furniſhed, and his gardens. Sometimes he took the diverſion of hunting, but never admitted any company whatever; his pride and extreme reſerve rendered him ſo wholly inacceſſible to the country gentry about him, that none ever preſumed to ſolicit his acquaintance.

In the ſecond year of his retirement, the marchioneſs brought him a daughter, and died in three days after her delivery. The marquis, who had tenderly loved her, was extremely afflicted at her death; but time having produced it's uſual effects, his great fondneſs for the little Arabella entirely engroſſed his attention, and made up all the happineſs of his life. At four years of age he took her from under the direction of the nurſes and women appointed to attend her, and permitted her to receive no part of her education from another, which he was capable of giving her himſelf. He taught her to read and write in a very few months; and, as ſhe grew older, finding in her an uncommon quickneſs of apprehenſion, and an underſtanding capable of great improvements, he reſolved to cultivate ſo promiſing a genius with the utmoſt care; and, as he frequently, in the rapture of paternal fondneſs, expreſſed himſelf, render her mind as beautiful as her perſon was lovely.

Nature had indeed given her a moſt charming face, a ſhape eaſy and delicate, a ſweet and inſinuating voice, and an air ſo full of dignity and grace, as drew the admiration of all that ſaw her. Theſe native charms were improved with all the heightenings of art; her dreſs was perfectly magnificent; the beſt maſters of muſick and dancing were ſent for from London to attend her. She ſoon became a perfect miſtreſs of the French and Italian languages, under the care of her father; and it is not to be doubted, but ſhe would have made a great proficiency in all uſeful knowledge, had not her whole time been taken up by another ſtudy.

From her earlieſt youth ſhe had diſcovered a fondneſs for reading, which extremely delighted the marquis; he permitted her therefore the uſe of his library, in which, unfortunately for her, were great ſtore of romances, and, what was ſtill more unfortunate, not in the original French, but very bad tranſlations.

The deceaſed marchioneſs had purchaſed theſe books, to ſoften a ſolitude which ſhe found very diſagreeable; and, after her death, the marquis removed them from her cloſet into his library, where Arabella found them.

The ſurprizing adventures with which they were filled, proved a moſt pleaſing entertainment to a young lady who was wholly ſecluded from the world; who had no other diverſion, but ranging like a nymph through gardens, or, to ſay better, the woods and lawns in which ſhe was incloſed; and who had no other converſation but that of a grave and melancholy father, or her own attendants.

Her ideas, from the manner of her life, and the objects around her, had taken a romantick turn; and ſuppoſing romances were real pictures of life, from them ſhe drew all her notions and expectations. By them ſhe was taught to believe, that love was the ruling principle of the world; that every other paſſion was ſubordinate to this; and that it cauſed all the happineſs and miſeries of life. Her glaſs, which ſhe often conſulted, always ſhewed her a form ſo extremely lovely, that, not finding herſelf engaged in ſuch adventures as were common to the heroines in the romances ſhe read, ſhe often complained of the inſenſibility of mankind, upon whom her charms ſeemed to have ſo little influence.

The perfect retirement ſhe lived in, afforded indeed no opportunities of making the conqueſts ſhe deſired; but ſhe could not comprehend, how any ſolitude could be obſcure enough to conceal a beauty like hers from notice; and thought the reputation of her charms ſufficient to bring a crowd of adorers to demand her of her father. Her mind being wholly filled with the moſt extravagant expectations, ſhe was alarmed by every trifling incident; and kept in a continual anxiety by a viciſſitude of hopes, fears, wiſhes, and diſappointments.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CONTAINS A DESCRIPTION OF A LADY'S DRESS, IN FASHION NOT MUCH ABOVE TWO THOUSAND YEARS AGO.—THE BEGINNING OF AN ADVENTURE WHICH SEEMS TO PROMISE A GREAT DEAL.

ARABELLA had now entered into her seventeenth year, with the regret of seeing herself the object of admiration to a few rusticks only, who happened to see her; when, one Sunday, making use of the permission the marquis sometimes allowed her, to attend divine service at the church belonging to the village near which they lived, her vanity was flattered with an adorer not altogether unworthy of her notice.

This gentleman was young, gay, handsome, and very elegantly dressed; he was just come from London with an intention to pass some weeks with a friend in that part of the country; and at the time Arabella entered the church, his eyes, which had wandered from one rural fair to another, were in an instant fixed upon her face. She blushed with a very becoming modesty; and, pleased with the unusual appearance of so fine a gentleman, and the particular notice he took of her, passed on to her seat through a double row of country people; who, with a profusion of awkward bows and curtsies, expressed their respect.

Mr. Hervey, for that was the stranger's name, was no less surprized at her beauty, than the singularity of her dress; and the odd whim of being followed into the church by three women attendants, who, as soon as she was seated, took their places behind her.

Her dress, though singular, was far from being unbecoming. All the beauties of her neck and shape were set off to the greatest advantage by the fashion of her gown, which, in the manner of a robe, was made to sit tight to her body, and fastened on the breast with a knot of diamonds. Her fine black hair hung upon her neck in curls, which had so much the appearance of being artless, that all but her maid, whose employment it was to give them that form, imagined they were so. Her head-dress was only a few knots advantageously disposed, over which she wore a white sarsenet hood, somewhat in the form of a veil, with which she sometimes wholly covered her fair face, when she saw herself beheld with too much attention.

This veil had never appeared to her so necessary before. Mr. Hervey's eager glances threw her into so much confusion, that, pulling it over her face as much as she was able, she remained invisible to him all the time they afterwards stayed in the church. This action, by which she would have had him understand that she was displeased at his gazing on her with so little respect, only increased his curiosity to know who she was.

When the congregation was dismissed, he hastened to the door, with an intention to offer her his hand to help her to her coach; but seeing the magnificent equipage that waited for her, and the number of servants that attended it, he conceived a much higher idea of her quality than he had at first; and, changing his design, contented himself with only bowing to her as she passed; and as soon as her coach drove away, inquired of some persons nearest him, who she was.

These rusticks, highly delighted with the opportunity of talking to the gay Londoner, whom they looked upon as a very extraordinary person, gave him all the intelligence they were able, concerning the lady he enquired after; and filled him with an inconceivable surprize at the strange humour of the marquis, who buried so beautiful a creature in obscurity.

At his return home he expressed his admiration of her in terms that persuaded his friend she had made some impression on his heart; and, after raillying him a little upon this suspicion, he assumed a more serious air, and told him, if he really liked Lady Bella, he thought it not impossible but he might obtain her. 'The poor girl,' added he, 'has 'been kept in confinement so long, that 'I believe it would not be difficult to 'persuade her to free herself by mar'riage. She never had a lover in her 'life; and therefore the first person 'who addresses her has the fairest 'chance for succeeding.'

Mr. Hervey, though he could not persuade himself his cousin was in earnest

when he adviſed him to court the only daughter of a man of the marquis's quality, and heireſs to his vaſt eſtates; yet reliſhed the ſcheme, and reſolved to make ſome attempt upon her before he left the country. However, he concealed his deſign from his couſin, not being willing to expoſe himſelf to be ridiculed, if he did not ſucceed; and, turning the advice he had given him into a jeſt, left him in the opinion, that he thought no more of it.

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE GOES ON AFTER THE ACCUSTOMED MANNER.

ARABELLA, in the mean time, was wholly taken up with the adventure, as ſhe called it, at church: the perſon and dreſs of the gentleman who had ſo particularly gazed on her there, was ſo different from what ſhe had been accuſtomed to ſee, that ſhe immediately concluded he was of ſome diſtinguiſhed rank. It was paſt a doubt, ſhe thought, that he was exceſſively in love with her; and, as ſhe ſoon expected to have ſome very extraordinary proofs of his paſſion, her thoughts were wholly employed on the manner in which ſhe ſhould receive them.

As ſoon as ſhe came home, and had paid her duty to the marquis, ſhe hurried to her chamber, to be at liberty to indulge her agreeable reflections; and, after the example of her heroines, when any thing extraordinary happened to them, called her favourite woman; or, to uſe her own language, her in whom ſhe confided her moſt ſecret thoughts.

'Well, Lucy,' ſaid ſhe, 'did you 'obſerve that ſtranger who ey'd *us** 'ſo heedfully to-day at church?'

This girl, notwithſtanding her country ſimplicity, knew a compliment was expected from her on this occaſion; and therefore replied, that ſhe did not wonder at the gentleman's ſtaring at her; for ſhe was ſure he had never ſeen any body ſo handſome as her ladyſhip before.

'I have not all the beauty you attribute to me,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling a little; 'and with a very moderate ſhare of it, I might well fix the 'attention of a perſon who ſeemed not 'to be over much pleaſed with the 'objects about him. However,' purſued ſhe, aſſuming a more ſerious air, 'if this ſtranger be weak enough to 'entertain any ſentiments more than 'indifferent for me; I charge you, upon 'pain of my diſpleaſure, do not be acceſſary to the conveying his preſumptuous thoughts to me either by 'letters or meſſages; nor ſuffer him 'to corrupt your fidelity with the preſents he will very probably offer you.'

Lucy, to whom this ſpeech firſt gave a hint of what ſhe ought to expect from her lady's lovers, finding herſelf of more importance than ſhe imagined, was ſo pleaſed at the proſpect which opened to her, that it was with ſome heſitation ſhe promiſed to obey her orders.

Arabella, however, was ſatisfied with her aſſurances of obſerving her directions; and diſmiſſed her from her preſence, not without an apprehenſion of being too well obeyed.

A whole week being elapſed without meeting with the importunities ſhe expected, ſhe could hardly conceal her ſurprize at ſo mortifying a diſappointment; and frequently interrogated Lucy, concerning any attempts the ſtranger had made on her fidelity; but the anſwers ſhe received only increaſed her diſcontent, as they convinced her, her charms had not had the effect ſhe imagined.

Mr. Hervey, however, had been all this time employed in thinking of ſome means to get acquainted with the marquis; for, being poſſeſſed with an extraordinary opinion of his wit, and perſonal accompliſhments, he did not fear making ſome impreſſion on the heart of the young lady; provided he could have an opportunity of converſing with her.

His couſin's advice was continually in his mind, and flattered his vanity with the moſt agreeable hopes: but the marquis's fondneſs for ſolitude, and that haughtineſs which was natural to him, rendered him ſo difficult of acceſs, that Hervey, from the intelligence he received of his humour, de-

* The heroines always ſpeak of themſelves in the plural number.

ſpaired

ſpaired of being able to proſecute his ſcheme; when, meeting with a young farmer in one of his evening-walks, and entering into converſation with him upon ſeveral country ſubjects, the diſcourſe at laſt turned upon the Marquis of ——, whoſe fine houſe and gardens were within their view; upon which the young fellow informed him, he was brother to a young woman that attended the Lady Arabella; and, being fond of lengthening out the converſation with ſo fine a gentleman, gave him, without being deſired, the domeſtick hiſtory of the whole family, as he had received it from Lucy, who was the ſiſter he mentioned.

Hervey, exceſſively delighted at this accidental meeting with a perſon ſo capable of ſerving his deſign, affected a great deſire of being better acquainted with him; and, under pretence of acquiring ſome knowledge in rural affairs, accuſtomed himſelf to call ſo often at William's farm, that, at laſt, he met with the perſon whom the hopes of ſeeing had ſo often carried him thither.

Lucy, the moment ſhe ſaw him enter, knowing him again, bluſhed at the remembrance of the diſcourſe which had paſſed between her lady and herſelf concerning him; and was not at all ſurprized at the endeavours he uſed to ſpeak to her apart: but as ſoon as he began a converſation concerning Arabella, ſhe interrupted him by ſaying, 'I know, Sir, that you are *diſtractedly* in love with my lady; but ſhe has 'forbid me to receive any letters or 'meſſages from you; and therefore I 'beg you will not offer to bribe me; for 'I dare not diſobey her.'

Mr. Hervey was at firſt ſo aſtoniſhed at her ſpeech, that he knew not what to think of it; but, after a little reflection, attributing to an exceſs of aukward cunning what, in reality, was an effect of her ſimplicity, he reſolved to make uſe of the hint ſhe had given him; and, preſenting her with a couple of guineas, intreated her to venture diſpleaſing her lady, by bearing a letter from him; promiſing to reward her better, if ſhe ſucceeded.

Lucy made ſome difficulty to comply; but, not being able abſolutely to refuſe the firſt bribe that ever was offered to her, ſhe, after ſome intreaties, conſented to take the letter; and receiving the money he preſented her, left him at liberty to write, after ſhe had got her brother to furniſh him with materials for that purpoſe.

CHAP. IV.

A MISTAKE, WHICH PRODUCES NO GREAT CONSEQUENCES—AN EXTRAORDINARY COMMENT UPON A BEHAVIOUR NATURAL ENOUGH—AN INSTANCE OF A LADY'S COMPASSION FOR HER LOVER, WHICH THE READER MAY POSSIBLY THINK NOT VERY COMPASSIONATE.

HERVEY, who was maſter of no great elegance in letter-writing, was at firſt at ſome loſs how to addreſs a lady of her quality, to whom he was an abſolute ſtranger, upon the ſubject of love; but, conceiving there was no great occaſion for much ceremony in declaring himſelf to one who had been educated in the country, and who, he believed, could not be diſpleaſed with a lover of his figure, he therefore, in plain terms, told her, how deeply he was enamoured of her; and conjured her to afford him ſome opportunity of paying his reſpects to her.

Lucy received this letter from him with a worſe grace than ſhe did the gold; and, though ſhe promiſed him to deliver it to her lady immediately, yet ſhe kept it a day or two before ſhe had the courage to attempt it; at laſt, drawing it out of her pocket, with a baſhful air, ſhe preſented it to her lady, telling her it came from the fine gentleman whom ſhe ſaw at church.

Arabella bluſhed at the ſight of the letter; and though in reality, ſhe was not diſpleaſed, yet, being a ſtrict obſerver of romantick forms, ſhe chid her woman ſeverely for taking it. 'Carry it 'back,' added ſhe, 'to the preſumptuous 'writer of it; and let him know how 'greatly his inſolence has offended me.'

Lucy, however, ſuffered the letter to remain on the toilet, expecting ſome change in her lady's mind; for ſhe traverſed the chamber in great ſeeming irreſolution, often ſtealing a glance to the letter which ſhe had a ſtrong inclination to open; but fearching the records of

her

her memory for a precedent, and not finding that any lady ever opened a letter from an unknown lover, she reiterated her commands to Lucy to carry it back, with a look and accent so very severe, that the girl, extremely apprehensive of having offended her, put the letter again in her pocket, resolving to return it the first opportunity.

Mr. Hervey, who had his thoughts wholly taken up with the flattering prospect of success, no sooner saw Lucy, who gave him his letter without speaking a word, than, supposing it had been the answer he expected, he eagerly snatched it out of her hand, and, kissing it first in a rapture of joy, broke it open; but his surprize and confusion, when he saw it was his own letter returned, was inexpressible. For some moments he kept his eyes fastened upon the tender billet, as if he was really reading it. His disappointment, and the ridiculous figure he knew he must make in the eyes of his messenger, filled him with so much confusion, that he did not dare to look up; but, recovering himself at last, he affected to turn it into a jest; and, laughing first himself, gave Lucy the liberty of laughing also, who had, with much difficulty, been able to prevent doing it before.

The curiosity he felt to hear how she had acquitted herself of the trust he had reposed in her, made him oblige her to give a truce to her mirth, in order to satisfy him; and Lucy, who was extremely exact in her relations, told him all that had passed, without omitting the smallest circumstance.

Though it was impossible to draw any favourable omen from what he heard, yet he determined to make another effort, before he set out for London; and taking leave of his confident, after he had appointed her to meet him again the next day, at her brother's, he went home to consider upon means to effect his designs, which the ill success of his first attempt had not forced him to abandon.

Arabella, who expected to hear that the return of his letter would make her lover commit some very extravagant actions; and having impatiently waited for an account of them from Lucy; finding she seemed to have no intention to begin a discourse concerning him; asked her, at last, if she had executed her commission, and returned the letter to the insolent unknown?

The girl answered, 'Yes.'

Which not being all that her lady expected—'And how did he receive 'it?' resumed she, peevishly.

'Why, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'I 'believe he thought your ladyship had 'sent him an answer; for he kissed the 'letter several times.'

'Foolish wench!' replied Arabella, 'how can you imagine he had the temerity to think I should answer his 'letter? A favour which, though he 'had spent years in my service, would 'have been infinitely greater than he 'could have expected. No, Lucy, he 'kissed the letter, either because he 'thought it had been touched at least 'by my hands, or to shew the perfect 'submission with which he received 'my commands; and it is not to be 'doubted but his despair will force him 'to commit some desperate outrage 'against himself, which I do not hate 'him enough to wish, though he has 'mortally offended me.'

Arabella was possessed of great sensibility and softness; and being really persuaded that her lover would entertain some fatal design, seemed so much affected with the thoughts of what might happen, that Lucy, who tenderly loved her, begged her not to be so much concerned for the gentleman; 'There is no fear,' added she, 'that 'he will do himself a mischief; for 'when he discovered his mistake, he 'laughed heartily, as well as myself.'

'How!' replied Arabella, extremely surprized, 'Did he laugh?'

Which Lucy confirming, 'Doubtless,' resumed she, 'having taken a 'little time to consider of so strange a 'phænomenon, he laughed, because his 'reason was disturbed at the sudden 'shock he received: unhappy man! his 'presumption will be severely enough 'punished, though I do not add anger 'to the scorn which I have expressed for 'him; therefore, Lucy, you may tell 'him, if you please, that, notwithstanding the offence he has been 'guilty of, I am not cruel enough to 'wish his death, and that I command 'him to live, if he can live without 'hope.'

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH ONE WOULD IMAGINE THE ADVENTURE CONCLUDED, BUT FOR A PROMISE THAT SOMETHING ELSE IS TO COME.

LUCY now began to think there was something more, than she imagined, in this affair. Mr. Hervey, indeed, in her opinion, had seemed to be very far from having any design to attempt his own life: but her lady, she thought, could not possibly be mistaken; and therefore she resolved to carry her message to him immediately, though it was then late in the evening.

Accordingly, she went to her brother's, where she had some hope of meeting with him; but not finding him there, she obliged him to go to the house where he lived, and tell him she desired to speak with him.

William being let into the secret of his sister's frequent meetings with Mr. Hervey, imagined she had some agreeable news to acquaint him with; and therefore ran immediately to his relation's house, which was but at a small distance; but he was told Mr. Hervey was in bed, very much indisposed, and could not be seen.

This news put Lucy in a terrible fright: she told her apprehensions to her brother; which being such as her lady had put into her head, and were now confirmed by Mr. Hervey's illness, the young farmer stood amazed, not being able to comprehend her meaning; and she, without staying to explain herself any farther, went home to the castle, and told her lady, that what she feared was come to pass, the gentleman would certainly die, for he was very ill in bed.

This being no more than what Arabella expected, she discovered no surprize; but only asked Lucy, if she had delivered her message to him.

'Would you have me, Madam,' replied she, 'go his house? I am afraid 'the marquis will hear of it.'

'My father,' replied Arabella, 'can 'never be offended with me for doing 'a charitable action.'

'Ah! Madam,' interrupted Lucy, 'let me go then immediately, for fear 'the poor gentleman should grow 'worse.'

'If he be sick almost to death,' resumed Arabella, 'he will recover, if I 'command him to do so. When did 'you hear of a lover dying through 'despair, when his mistress let him 'know it was her pleasure he should 'live? But as it will not be altogether 'so proper for you to go to his house, 'as it may be suspected you come from 'me, I'll write a few lines, which 'you shall copy, and your brother may 'carry them to him to-morrow, and 'I'll engage he shall be well in a few 'hours.'

Saying this, she went into her closet; and, having written a short note, made Lucy write it over again. It was as follows—

'LUCY, TO THE UNFORTUNATE 'LOVER OF HER LADY.

'MY lady, who is the most gene-'rous person in the world, has 'commanded me to tell you, that, pre-'sumptuous as you are, she does not 'desire your death; nay, more, she 'commands you to live, and permits 'you, in case you obey her, to hope 'for her pardon, provided you keep 'within the bounds she prescribes to 'you. Adieu.'

This letter Lucy copied; and Arabella, examining it again, thought it rather too kind: and, seeming desirous of making some alteration in it, Lucy, who was extremely anxious for Mr. Hervey's life, fearing lest she should alter it in such a manner that the gentleman might be at liberty to die if he chose it, conjured her lady in such pressing terms to let it remain as it was, that Arabella suffered herself to be prevailed upon by her intreaties; and, remembering that it was not uncommon for the ladies in romances to relax a little in their severity through the remonstrances of their women, told her, with an enchanting smile, that she would grant her desire; and went to bed with that pleasing satisfaction, which every generous mind experiences at the consciousness of having done some very benevolent action.

In the morning, this life-restoring billet was dispatched by Lucy to her brother, inclosed in one to him, charging him to carry it to the sick gentleman immediately.

William,

William, having a ſtrong curioſity to ſee what his ſiſter had written, ventured to open it; and, not being able to imagine Lady Bella had really given her orders to write what appeared to him the moſt unintelligible ſtuff in the world, reſolved to ſuppreſs this letter till he had queſtioned her a little concerning it.

A few hours after, Mr. Hervey, who expected to meet Lucy at her brother's, came in. His illneſs having been only a violent head-ache, to which he was ſubject, being now quite off, he remembered the appointment he had made; but having waited ſome time, and ſhe not coming, he returned again to his couſin's, leaving word for her, that he would ſee her the next day.

Scarce was he gone out, when Lucy, who longed to know what effect her letter had produced in his health, came in; and eagerly enquiring of her brother how Mr. Hervey was, received for anſwer, that he had been there a moment before ſhe came.

'Well,' cried ſhe, claſping her hands together, with ſurprize, 'my lady ſaid, 'her letter would cure him, if he was 'ever ſo ſick; but I did not imagine he 'would have been well enough to come 'abroad ſo ſoon.'

'Your lady!' interrupted William; 'why, was it not yourſelf that wrote the 'letter you gave to me?'

'No, truly, brother,' reſumed ſhe: 'how was it poſſible I ſhould write ſo 'fine a letter? My lady *made* every 'word of it, and I only wrote it after 'her.'

William, hearing this, would not own the indiſcretion he now thought he had been guilty of, in keeping the letter; but ſuffered his ſiſter to return to her lady, in the belief that he had delivered it; reſolving, when he ſaw her next, to ſay he had loſt it: for he knew not what excuſe to make to Mr. Hervey for not giving it him when he ſaw him.

Arabella received the account of her lover's recovery as a thing ſhe was abſolutely ſure of before; and thinking ſhe had now done all that could be expected from her compaſſion, reſumed her uſual ſeverity, and commanded Lucy to mention him no more. 'If he 'loves me with that purity he ought 'to do,' purſued ſhe, 'he will ceaſe 'to importune me any farther: and 'though his paſſion be ever ſo violent, 'his reſpect and ſubmiſſion to my com-'mands will oblige him to ſilence. The 'obedience he has already ſhewn, in 'recovering at the firſt intimation I 'gave, that it was my will he ſhould 'do ſo, convinces me, I need not ap-'prehend he will renew his follies to 'diſpleaſe me.'

Lucy, who found by this diſcourſe of her lady's, that her commiſſion was at an end with regard to Mr. Hervey, followed her directions ſo exactly, that ſhe not only ſpoke no more of him to her; but alſo, in order to avoid him, neglected to go to her brother's.

His impatience at not ſeeing her made him prevail upon her brother to go to the caſtle, and intreat her to give him another interview: but Lucy poſitively refuſed; and, to make a merit with her lady of her obedience, informed her what he had requeſted.

Arabella, reſenting a boldneſs which argued ſo little reſpect to her commands, began now to repent of the compaſſion ſhe had ſhewn him; and, commending Lucy for what ſhe had done, bid her tell the inſolent unknown, if he ever ſent to her again, that ſhe was reſolved never to pardon the contempt he had ſhewn for her orders.

Mr. Hervey, finding himſelf deſerted by Lucy, reſolved to give over his attempts, congratulating himſelf for his diſcretion in not acquainting his couſin with what he had already done: his heart not being very much engaged, he found no great difficulty in conſoling himſelf for his bad ſucceſs. In a few days he thought of Lady Bella no more than if he had never ſeen her; but an accident bringing her again in his way, he could not reſiſt the inclination he felt to ſpeak to her: and by that means drew upon himſelf a very ſenſible mortification.

CHAP. VI.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE IS REALLY CONCLUDED; THOUGH, POSSIBLY, NOT AS THE READER EXPECTED.

THE marquis ſometimes permitting his daughter to ride out, and this being the only diverſion ſhe was allowed, or ever experienced, ſhe did not fail to take it as often as ſhe could.

She was returning from one of theſe airings

airings one day, attended by two ſervants, when Mr. Hervey, who happened to be at ſome diſtance, obſerving a lady on horſeback, who made a very graceful figure, he rode up to her, in order to have a nearer view; and, knowing Lady Bella again, reſolved to ſpeak to her: but while he was conſidering how he ſhould accoſt her, Arabella ſuddenly ſeeing him, and obſerving he was making up to her, her imagination immediately ſuggeſted to her, that this inſolent lover had a deſign to ſeize her perſon; and this thought terrifying her extremely, ſhe gave a loud ſhriek; which Mr. Hervey hearing, rode eagerly up to her to enquire the reaſon of it, at the ſame time that her two attendants, as much amazed as himſelf, came galloping up alſo.

Arabella, upon his coming cloſe to her, redoubled her cries. 'If you 'have any valour,' ſaid ſhe to her ſervants, 'defend your unfortunate miſ'treſs, and reſcue her from this un'worthy man.'

The ſervants, believing him to be an highwayman, by this exclamation, and dreading leſt he ſhould preſent his piſtol at their heads, if they offered to make any reſiſtance, recoiled a few paces back, expecting he would demand their purſes when he had robbed their lady: but the extreme ſurprize he was in, keeping him motionleſs, the fellows not ſeeing any piſtols in his hand, and animated by Arabella's cries, who, calling them cowards and traitors, urged them to deliver her; they both, in a moment, laid hold of Mr. Hervey, and forced him to alight; which they did alſo themſelves, ſtill keeping faſt hold of him, whom ſurprize, ſhame, and rage, had hitherto kept ſilent.

'Raſcals!' cried he, when he was able to ſpeak, 'what do you mean by 'uſing me in this manner? Do you 'ſuppoſe I had any intention to hurt 'the lady?—What do you take me 'for?'

'For a raviſher,' interrupted Arabella, 'an impious raviſher! who, con'trary to all laws, both human and 'divine, endeavour to poſſeſs yourſelf 'by force of a perſon whom you are 'not worthy to ſerve; and whoſe cha'rity and compaſſion you have returned 'with the utmoſt ingratitude.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Hervey, 'I don't underſtand one word 'you ſay: you either miſtake me for 'ſome other perſon, or are pleaſed to 'divert yourſelf with the ſurprize I am 'in. But, I beſeech you, carry the jeſt 'no farther, and order your ſervants 'to let me go; or, by Heaven—' cried he, ſtruggling to get looſe—'if I can 'but free one of my hands, I'll ſtab 'the ſcoundrels before your face.'

'It is not with threats like theſe,' reſumed Arabella, with great calmneſs, 'that I can be moved. A little more 'ſubmiſſion and reſpect would become 'you better; you are now wholly in 'my power: I may, if I pleaſe, carry 'you to my father, and have you ſe'verely puniſhed for your attempt; 'but, to ſhew you that I am as gene'rous as you are baſe and deſigning, 'I'll give you freedom, provided you 'promiſe me never to appear before me 'again. But, in order to ſecure my 'own ſafety, you muſt deliver up your 'arms to my ſervants, that I may be 'aſſured you will not have it in your 'power to make a ſecond attempt up'on my liberty.'

Mr. Hervey, whoſe aſtoniſhment was increaſed by every word ſhe ſpoke, began now to be apprehenſive, that this might prove a very ſerious affair, ſince ſhe ſeemed reſolved to believe he had a deſign to carry her off; and, knowing that an attempt of that nature upon an heireſs might have dangerous conſequences, he reſolved to accept the conditions ſhe offered him: but while he delivered his hanger to the ſervant, he aſſured her in the ſtrongeſt terms, that he had no other deſign in riding up to her, but to have a nearer view of her perſon.

'Add not falſhood,' ſaid Arabella ſternly, 'to a crime already black 'enough; for though, by an effect of 'my generoſity, I have reſolved not to 'deliver you up to the reſentment of my 'father, yet nothing ſhall ever be able 'to make me pardon this outrage. Go 'then,' purſued ſhe, 'go, baſe man, 'unworthy of the care I took of thy 'ſafety; go to ſome diſtant country, 'where I may never hear of thee more; 'and ſuffer me, if poſſible, to loſe the 'remembrance of thy crimes.'

Saying this, ſhe ordered her ſervants, who had got the hanger in their poſſeſſion, to ſet him at liberty, and mount their horſes; which they did immediately, and followed their lady, who

rode with all imaginable ſpeed to the caſtle.

Mr. Hervey, not yet recovered from his ſurprize, ſtood ſome moments conſidering the ſtrange ſcene he had been witneſs to; and in which he had, much againſt his will, appeared the principal character. As he was not acquainted with Lady Bella's foible, he concluded her fears of him were occaſioned by her ſimplicity, and ſome miſrepreſentations that had been made her by Lucy, who, he thought, had betrayed him; and, fearing this ridiculous adventure would be ſoon made publick, and himſelf expoſed to the ſneers of his country acquaintance, he reſolved to go back to London as ſoon as poſſible.

The next day, pretending he had received a letter which obliged him to ſet out immediately, he took leave of his couſin, heartily glad at the eſcape he ſhould make from his raillery; for he did not doubt but the ſtory would very ſoon be known, and told greatly to his diſadvantage.

But Arabella, in order to be compleatly generous, a quality for which all the heroines are famous, laid a command upon her two attendants not to mention what had paſſed, giving them, at the ſame time, money to ſecure their ſecrecy; and threatening them with her diſpleaſure, if they diſobeyed.

Arabella, as ſoon as ſhe had an opportunity, did not fail to acquaint her faithful Lucy with the danger from which ſhe had ſo happily eſcaped, thanking Heaven at the ſame time, with great devotion, for having preſerved her from the hands of the raviſher.

Two or three months rolled away, after this accident, without offering any new adventure to our fair viſionary; when her imagination, always prepoſſeſſed with the ſame fantaſtick ideas, made her ſtumble upon another miſtake, equally abſurd and ridiculous.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH SOME CONTRADICTIONS ARE VERY HAPPILY RECONCILED.

THE marquis's head-gardener had received a young fellow into his maſter's ſervice, who had lived in ſeveral families of diſtinction. He had a good face; was tolerably genteel; and, having an underſtanding ſomething above his condition, joined to a great deal of *ſecond-hand* politeneſs, which he had contracted while he lived at London, he appeared a very extraordinary perſon among the ruſticks who were his fellow-ſervants.

Arabella, when ſhe walked in the garden, had frequent opportunities of ſeeing this young man, whom ſhe obſerved with a very particular attention. His perſon and air had ſomething, ſhe thought, very diſtinguiſhing. When ſhe condeſcended to ſpeak to him about any buſineſs he was employed in, ſhe took notice that his anſwers were framed in a language vaſtly ſuperior to his condition; and the reſpect he paid her had quite another air from that of the aukward civility of the other ſervants.

Having diſcerned ſo many marks of a birth far from being mean, ſhe eaſily paſſed from an opinion that he was a gentleman, to a belief that he was ſomething more; and every new ſight of him adding ſtrength to her ſuſpicions, ſhe remained, in a little time, perfectly convinced that he was ſome perſon of quality, who, diſguiſed in the habit of a gardener, had introduced himſelf into her father's ſervice, in order to have an opportunity of declaring a paſſion to her, which muſt certainly be very great, ſince it had forced him to aſſume an appearance ſo unworthy of his noble extraction.

Wholly poſſeſſed with this thought, ſhe ſet herſelf to obſerve him more narrowly: and ſoon found out, that he went very aukwardly about his work; that he ſought opportunities of being alone; that he threw himſelf in her way as often as he could, and gazed on her very attentively. She ſometimes fancied ſhe ſaw him endeavour to ſmother a ſigh when he anſwered her any queſtion about his work; once ſaw him leaning againſt a tree with his hands croſſed upon his breaſt; and, having loſt a ſtring of ſmall pearls, which ſhe remembered he had ſeen her threading as ſhe ſat in one of the arbours, was perſuaded he had taken it up, and kept it for the object of his ſecret adoration.

She often wondered, indeed, that ſhe did not find her name carved on the trees, with ſome myſterious expreſſions

of

of love; that he was never discovered lying along the side of one of the little rivulets, increasing the stream with his tears; nor, for three months that he had lived there, had ever been sick of a fever caused by his grief and the constraint he put upon himself in not declaring his passion. But she considered again, that his fear of being discovered kept him from amusing himself with making the trees bear the records of his secret thoughts, or of indulging his melancholy in any manner expressive of the condition of his soul; and, as for his not being sick, his youth, and the strength of his constitution, might, even for a longer time, bear him up against the assaults of a fever: but he appeared much thinner and paler than he used to be; and she concluded, therefore, that he must in time sink under the violence of his passion, or else be forced to declare it to her, which she considered as a very great misfortune; for, not finding in herself any disposition to approve his love, she must necessarily banish him from her presence, for fear he should have the presumption to hope that time might do any thing in his favour; and it was possible also, that the sentence she would be obliged to pronounce, might either cause his death, or force him to commit some extravagant action, which would discover him to her father, who would, perhaps, think her guilty of holding a secret correspondence with him.

These thoughts perplexed her so much, that, hoping to find some relief by unburdening her mind to Lucy, she told her all her uneasiness. 'Ah!' said she to her, looking upon Edward, who had just passed them, 'how unfortunate do I think myself in being 'the cause of that passion which makes 'this illustrious unknown wear away 'his days in so shameful an obscurity! Yes, Lucy,' pursued she, 'that Edward, whom you regard as 'one of my father's menial servants, is 'a person of sublime quality, who 'submits to this disguise only to have 'an opportunity of seeing me every 'day. But why do you seem so surprized? Is it possible that you have 'not suspected him to be what he is! 'Has he never unwittingly made any 'discovery of himself? Have you not 'surprized him in discourse with his 'faithful squire, who certainly lurks 'hereabouts to receive his commands, 'and is haply the confident of his passion? Has he never entertained you 'with any conversation about me? Or 'have you never seen any valuable 'jewels in his possession, by which you 'suspected him to be not what he appears?'

'Truly, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'I 'never took him for any body else but 'a simple gardener; but, now you open 'my eyes, methinks I can find I have 'been strangely mistaken, for he does 'not look like a man of low degree, 'and he talks quite in another manner 'from our servants. I never heard 'him indeed speak of your ladyship, 'but once; and that was, when he first 'saw you walking in the garden, he 'asked our John if you was not the 'marquis's daughter; and he said you 'was as beautiful as an angel. As 'for fine jewels, I never saw any, and 'I believe he has none; but he has a 'watch, and that looks as if he was 'something, Madam: nor do I remember to have seen him talk with 'any stranger that looked like a squire.'

Lucy, having thus with her usual punctuality, answered every question her lady put to her; proceeded to ask her, what she should say, if he should beg her to give her a letter as the other gentleman had done.

'You must by no means take it,' replied Arabella; 'my compassion had be'fore like to have been fatal to me. If 'he discovers his quality to me, I shall 'know in what manner to treat him.

They were in this part of their discourse, when a noise they heard at some distance, made Arabella bend her steps to the place from whence it proceeded; and, to her infinite amazement, saw the head-gardener, with a stick he had in his hand, give several blows to the concealed hero, who suffered the indignity with admirable patience.

Shocked at seeing a person of sublime quality treated so unworthily, she called out to the gardener to hold his hand; who immediately obeyed: and Edward, seeing the young lady advance, sneaked off with an air very different from an Oroondates.

'For what crime, pray,' said Arabella, with a stern aspect, 'did you 'treat the person I saw with you so 'cruelly? He whom you take such un'becoming liberties with; may possi-

'bly——But again I aſk you, what 'has he done? You ſhould make ſome 'allowance for his want of ſkill, in the 'abject employment he is in at pre-'ſent.'

'It is not for his want of ſkill, Ma-'dam,' ſaid the gardener, 'that I cor-'rected him; he knows his buſineſs 'very well, if he would mind it; but, 'Madam, I have diſcovered him—'

'Diſcovered him, do you ſay?' interrupted Arabella: 'and has the 'knowledge of his condition not been 'able to prevent ſuch uſage? or rather 'has it been the occaſion of his receiv-'ing it?'

'His conditions are very bad, Ma-'dam,' returned the gardener; 'and I 'am afraid are ſuch as will one day 'prove the ruin of body and ſoul too. 'I have for ſome time ſuſpected he had 'evil deſigns in his head; and juſt now 'watched him to the fiſh-pond, and 'prevented him from—'

'O dear!' interrupted Lucy, look-ing pitifully on her lady, whoſe fair boſom heaved with compaſſion, 'I war-'rant he was going to make away with 'himſelf.'

'No,' reſumed the gardener, ſmiling at the miſtake, 'he was only going to 'make away with ſome of the carp, 'which the rogue had caught, and in-'tended, I ſuppoſe, to ſell; but I 'threw them into the water again, and 'if your ladyſhip had not forbid me, 'I would have drubbed him ſoundly 'for his pains.'

'Fye! fye!' interrupted Arabella, out of breath with ſhame and vexation, 'tell me no more of theſe idle tales.'

Then, haſtily walking on, to hide the bluſhes which this ſtrange accuſation of her illuſtrious lover had raiſed in her face, ſhe continued for ſome time in the greateſt perplexity imaginable.

Lucy, who followed her, and could not poſſibly reconcile what her lady had been telling her concerning Ed-ward, with the circumſtance of his ſtealing the carp, ardently wiſhed to hear her opinion of this matter; but, ſeeing her deeply engaged with her own thoughts, ſhe would not venture to diſ-turb her.

Arabella, indeed, had been in ſuch a terrible conſternation, that it was ſome time before ſhe even reconciled appear-ances to herſelf; but, as ſhe had a moſt happy facility in accommodating every incident to her own wiſhes and conceptions, ſhe examined this matter ſo many different ways, drew ſo many concluſions, and fancied ſo many myſ-teries in the moſt indifferent actions of the ſuppoſed noble unknown, that ſhe remained at laſt more than ever con-firmed in the opinion that he was ſome great perſonage, whom her beauty had forced to aſſume an appearance un-worthy of himſelf: when Lucy, no longer able to keep ſilence, drew off her attention from thoſe pleaſing ima-ges, by ſpeaking of the carp-ſtealing affair again.

Arabella, whoſe confuſion returned at that diſagreeable ſound, charged her, in an angry tone, never to mention ſo injurious a ſuſpicion any more: 'For, 'in fine,' ſaid ſhe to her, 'do you 'imagine a perſon of his rank could 'be guilty of ſtealing carp? Alas!' purſued ſhe, ſighing, 'he had, indeed, 'ſome fatal deſign; and, doubtleſs, 'would have executed it, had not this 'fellow ſo luckily prevented him.'

'But Mr. Woodbind, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'ſaw the carp in his hand: I 'wonder what he was going to do with 'them.'

'Still,' reſumed Arabella, extreme-ly chagrined, 'ſtill will you wound 'my ears with that horrid ſound? I 'tell you, obſtinate and fooliſh wench, 'that this unhappy man went thither 'to die; and if he really caught the 'fiſh, it was to conceal his deſign from 'Woodbind; his great mind could 'not ſuggeſt to him, that it was poſ-'ſible he might be ſuſpected of a baſe-'neſs like that this ignorant fellow 'accuſed him of; therefore he took 'no care about it, being wholly poſ-'ſeſſed by his deſpairing thoughts.'

'However, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'your ladyſhip may prevent his going 'to the fiſh-pond again, by laying 'your commands upon him to live.'

'I ſhall do all that I ought,' an-ſwered Arabella; 'but my care for 'the ſafety of other perſons muſt not 'make me forget what I owe to my 'own.'

As ſhe had always imputed Mr Hervey's fancied attempt to carry her away, to the letter ſhe had written to him, upon which he had probably founded his hopes of being pardoned for it, ſhe reſolved to be more cautious for the future in giving ſuch inſtances

of

of her compaſſion; and was at a great loſs in what manner to comfort her deſpairing lover, without raiſing expectations ſhe had no inclination to confirm: but ſhe was delivered from her perplexity a few days after, by the news of his having left the marquis's ſervice; which ſhe attributed to ſome new deſign he had formed to obtain her; and Lucy, who always thought as her lady did, was of the ſame opinion; though it was talked among the ſervants, that Edward feared a diſcovery of more tricks, and reſolved not to ſtay till he was diſgracefully diſmiſſed.

CHAP. VIII.

IN WHICH A MISTAKE, IN POINT OF CEREMONY, IS RECTIFIED.

ARABELLA had ſcarce done thinking of this laſt adventure, when the marquis communicated a piece of intelligence to her, which opened a proſpect of an infinite number of new ones.

His nephew, having juſt returned from his travels, was preparing to come and pay him a viſit in his retreat; and, as he always deſigned to marry Arabella to this youth, of whom he was extremely fond, he told his daughter of the intended viſit of her couſin, whom ſhe had not ſeen ſince ſhe was eight years old; and, for the firſt time, inſinuated his deſign of giving him to her for an huſband.

Arabella, whoſe delicacy was extremely ſhocked at this abrupt declaration of her father, could hardly hide her chagrin; for, though ſhe always intended to marry ſome time or other, as all the heroines had done, yet ſhe thought ſuch an event ought to be brought about with an infinite deal of trouble; and that it was neceſſary ſhe ſhould paſs to this ſtate through a great number of cares, diſappointments, and diſtreſſes of various kinds, like them; that her lover ſhould purchaſe her with his ſword from a crowd of rivals; and arrive to the poſſeſſion of her heart by many years of ſervices and fidelity.

The impropriety of receiving a lover of a father's recommending, appeared in it's ſtrongeſt light. What lady in romance ever married the man that was thoſe for her? In thoſe caſes the remonſtrances of a parent are called perſecutions; obſtinate reſiſtance, conſtancy and courage; and an aptitude to diſlike the perſon propoſed to them, a noble freedom of mind which diſdains to love or hate by the caprice of others.

Arabella, ſtrengthening her own reſolutions by thoſe examples of heroick diſobedience, told her father, with great ſolemnity of accent, that ſhe would always obey him in all juſt and reaſonable things; and, being perſuaded that he would never attempt to lay any force upon her inclinations, ſhe would endeavour to make them conformable to his, and receive her couſin with that civility and friendſhip due to ſo near a relation, and a perſon whom he honoured with his eſteem.

The marquis, having had frequent occaſions of admiring his daughter's eloquence, did not draw any unpleaſing concluſion from the nice diſtinctions ſhe made; and, being perfectly aſſured of her conſent whenever he demanded it, expected the arrival of his nephew with great impatience.

Arabella, whoſe thoughts had been fully employed ſince this converſation with her father, was indulging her meditations in one of the moſt retired walks in the garden; when ſhe was informed by Lucy, that her couſin was come, and that the marquis had brought him into the garden to look for her.

That inſtant they both entered the walk; when Arabella, prepoſſeſſed as ſhe was againſt any favourable thought of the young Glanville, could not help betraying ſome ſurprize at the gracefulneſs of his figure.

'It muſt be confeſſed,' ſaid ſhe to her attendant, with a ſmile, 'that this 'lover my father has brought us, is 'no contemptible perſon: nevertheleſs 'I feel an invincible repugnance in 'myſelf againſt receiving him in that 'character.'

As ſhe finiſhed theſe words, the marquis came up, and preſented Mr. Glanville to her; who, ſaluting her with the freedom of a relation, gave her a diſguſt that ſhewed itſelf immediately in her fair face, which was overſpread with ſuch a gloom, that the marquis was quite aſtoniſhed at it. Indeed, Arabella, who expected he

wou

would hardly have presumed to kiss her hand, was so surprized at his freedom, in attempting her lips, that she not only expressed her indignation by frowns, but gave him to understand he had mortally offended her.

Mr. Glanville, however, was neither surprized nor angry at her resentment; but, imputing it to her country education, endeavoured to rally her out of her ill-humour; and the marquis, being glad to find a behaviour, which he thought proceeded from her dislike of her cousin, was only an effect of an over-scrupulous modesty, told her that Mr. Glanville had committed no offence by saluting her, since that was a civility which was granted to all strangers at the first interview, and therefore could not be refused to a relation.

'Since the world is so degenerate in 'it's customs from what it was formerly,' said Arabella, with a smile full of contempt upon her cousin, 'I 'am extremely happy in having lived 'in a solitude which has not yet exposed me to the mortification of being 'a witness to manners I cannot approve; for if every person I shall 'meet with for the future be so deficient in their respects to ladies as 'my cousin is, I shall not care how 'much I am secluded from society.'

'But, dear Lady Bella,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, gaily, 'tell me, I be'seech you, how I must behave to 'please you; for I should be extremely glad to be honoured with your 'good opinion.'

'The person,' resumed she, 'whom 'I must teach how to acquire my good 'opinion, will, I am afraid, hardly 'recompence me by his docility in 'learning, for the pains I should be 'at in instructing him.'

'But,' resumed Glanville, 'that I 'may avoid any more occasions of offending you, only let me know how 'you would be approached for the 'future.'

'Since,' answered she, 'there is no 'necessity to renew the ceremony of 'introducing you again to me, I have 'not a second affront of that kind to 'apprehend; but I pray tell me, if 'all cavaliers are as presuming as 'yourself; and if a relation of your 'sex does not think a modest embrace 'from a lady a welcome sufficiently 'tender*?

'Nay, cousin,' cried Glanville, eagerly, 'I am now persuaded you are 'in the right; an embrace is certainly 'to be preferred to a cold salute. What 'would I give, that the marquis would 'introduce me a second time, that I 'might be received with so delightful 'a welcome?'

The vivacity with which he spoke this was so extremely disagreeable to Arabella, that she turned from him abruptly, and, striking into another walk, ordered Lucy to tell him she commanded him not to follow her.

Mr. Glanville, however, who had no notion of the exact obedience which was expected from him, would have gone after her, notwithstanding this prohibition, which Lucy delivered in a most peremptory manner, after her lady's example; but the marquis, who had left the two young people at liberty to discourse, and had walked on that he might not interrupt them, turning about, and seeing Glanville alone, called him to have some private discourse with him; and, for that time, spared Arabella the mortification of seeing her commands disobeyed.

CHAP. IX.

IN WHICH A LOVER IS SEVERELY PUNISHED FOR FAULTS WHICH THE READER NEVER WOULD HAVE DISCOVERED, IF HE HAD NOT BEEN TOLD.

THE marquis, though he had resolved to give Arabella to his nephew, was desirous he should first receive some impressions of tenderness for her, before he absolutely declared his resolution; and ardently wished he might be able to overcome that reluctance which she seemed to have for marriage; but, though Glanville in a very few days became passionately in love with his charming cousin, yet she discovered so strong a dislike to him, that

* The heroines, though they think a kiss of the hand a great condescension to a lover, and never grant it without blushes and confusion, yet make no scruple to embrace him upon every short absence.

the

the marquis feared it would be difficult to make her receive him for an husband: he observed she took all opportunities of avoiding his conversation; and seemed always out of temper when he addressed any thing to her; but was well enough pleased when he discoursed with him; and would listen to the long conversations they had together with great attention.

The truth is, she had too much discernment not to see Mr. Glanville had a great deal of merit; his person was perfectly handsome; he possessed a great share of understanding, an easy temper, and a vivacity which charmed every one, but the insensible Arabella.

She often wondered, that a man, who, as she told her confident, was master of so many fine qualities, should have a disposition so little capable of feeling the passion of love, with a delicacy and fervour she expected to inspire; or that he, whose conversation was so pleasing on every other subject, should make so poor a figure when he entertained her with matters of gallantry. 'However,' added she, 'I 'should be to blame to desire to be beloved by Mr. Glanville; for I am 'persuaded that passion would cause 'no reformation in the coarseness of 'his manners to ladies, which makes 'him so disagreeable to me, and might 'possibly increase my aversion.'

The marquis, having studied his nephew's looks for several days, thought he saw inclination enough in them for Arabella, to make him receive the knowledge of his intention with joy: he, therefore, called him into his closet, and told him in few words, that, if his heart was not pre-engaged, and his daughter capable of making him happy, he resolved to bestow her upon him, together with all his estates.

Mr. Glanville received this agreeable news with the strongest expressions of gratitude; assuring his uncle, that Lady Bella, of all the women he had ever seen, was most agreeable to his taste; and that he felt for her all the tenderness and affection his soul was capable of.

'I am glad of it, my dear nephew,' said the marquis, embracing him: 'I 'will allow you,' added he, smiling, 'but a few weeks to court her; gain 'her heart as soon as you can, and 'when you bring me her consent, 'your marriage shall be solemnized 'immediately.'

Mr. Glanville needed not a repetition of so agreeable a command: he left his uncle's closet, with his heart filled with the expectation of his approaching happiness; and, understanding Arabella was in the garden, he went to her with a resolution to acquaint her with the permission her father had given him to make his addresses to her.

He found his fair cousin, as usual, accompanied with her women; and, seeing that, notwithstanding his approach, they still continued to walk with her, and impatient of the restraint they laid him under, 'I beseech, you, 'cousin,' said he, 'let me have the 'pleasure of walking with you alone: 'what necessity is there for always 'having so many witnesses of our con'versation?—You may retire,' said he, speaking to Lucy, and the other woman; 'I have something to say to 'your lady in private.'

'Stay, I command you,' said Arabella, blushing at an insolence so uncommon, 'and take orders from no 'one but myself.—I pray you, Sir,' pursued she, frowning, 'what intercourse of secrets is there between 'you and me, that you expect I should 'favour you with a private conversation? an advantage which none of 'your sex ever boasted to have gained 'from me; and which, haply, you 'should be the last upon whom I should 'bestow it.'

'You have the strangest notions,' answered Glanville, smiling at the pretty anger she discovered: 'certain'ly you may hold a private conver'sation with any gentleman, without 'giving offence to decorum; and I 'may plead a right to this happiness, 'above any other, since I have the ho'nour to be your relation.'

'It is not at all surprising,' resumed Arabella gravely, 'that you and I 'should differ in opinion upon this oc'casion: I don't remember that ever 'we agreed in any thing; and, I am 'apt to believe, we never shall.'

'Ah! don't say so, Lady Bella,' interrupted he: 'what a prospect of 'misery you lay before me! for, if 'we are always to be opposite to each

'other,

'other, it is necessary you must hate 'me as much as I admire and love 'you.'

These words, which he accompanied with a gentle pressure of her hand, threw the astonished Arabella into such an excess of anger and shame, that, for a few moments, she was unable to utter a word.

What a horrid violation this, of all the laws of gallantry and respect, which decree a lover to suffer whole years in silence before he declares his flame to the divine object that causes it; and then with awful tremblings and submissive prostrations at the feet of the offended fair!

Arabella could hardly believe her senses when she heard a declaration, not only made without the usual forms, but also, that the presumptuous criminal waited for an answer without seeming to have any apprehension of the punishment to which he was to be doomed; and that, instead of deprecating her wrath, he looked with a smiling wonder upon her eyes, as if he did not fear their lightnings would strike him dead.

Indeed, it was scarce possible for him to help smiling, and wondering too, at the extraordinary action of Arabella; for, as soon as he had pronounced those fatal words, she started back two or three steps; cast a look at him full of the highest indignation; and, lifting up her fine eyes to Heaven, seemed, in the language of romance, to accuse the gods for subjecting her to so cruel an indignity.

The tumult of her thoughts being a little settled, she turned again towards Glanville, whose countenance expressing nothing of that confusion and anxiety common to an adorer in so critical a circumstance, her rage returned with greater violence than ever.

'If I do not express all the resent-'ment your insolence has filled me 'with,' said she to him, affecting more scorn than anger, 'tis because I hold 'you too mean for my resentment; 'but never hope for my pardon for 'your presumptuous confession of a 'passion I could almost despise myself 'for inspiring. If it be true that you 'love me, go and find your punish-'ment in that absence to which I doom 'you; and never hope I will suffer a 'person in my presence, who has af-'fronted me in the manner you have 'done.'

Saying this, she walked away, making a sign to him not to follow her.

Mr. Glanville, who was at first disposed to laugh at the strange manner in which she received his expressions of esteem for her, found something so extremely haughty and contemptuous in the speech she had made, that he was almost mad with vexation.

As he had no notion of his cousin's heroick sentiments, and had never read romances, he was quite ignorant of the nature of his offence; and supposing the scorn she had expressed for him was founded upon the difference of their rank and fortune, his pride was so sensibly mortified at that thought, and at her so insolently forbidding him her presence, that he was once inclined to shew his resentment of such ungenteel usage, by quitting the castle without taking leave even of the marquis, who, he thought, could not be ignorant of the reception he was likely to meet with from his daughter, and ought to have guarded him against it, if he really meant him so well as he seemed to do.

As he was extremely violent and hasty in his resolutions, and nicely sensible of the least affront, he was not in a condition to reason justly upon the marquis's conduct in this affair; and while he was fluctuating with a thousand different resolutions, Lucy came to him with a billet from her lady, which she delivered without staying till he opened it, and was superscribed in this manner—

'ARABELLA, TO THE MOST PRE-'SUMPTUOUS MAN IN THE 'WORLD—

'YOU seem to acknowledge so lit-'tle respect and deference for the 'commands of a lady, that I am afraid 'it will be but too necessary to reiterate 'that which, at parting, I laid upon 'you: know, then, that I absolutely 'insist upon your repairing, in the only 'manner you are able, the affront you 'have put upon me; which is, by ne-'ver appearing before me again. If

'you

'you think proper to confine me to my 'chamber, by continuing here any 'longer, you will add disobedience to 'the crime by which you have already 'mortally offended

'ARABELLA.'

The superscription of this letter, and the uncommon stile of it, persuaded Mr. Glanville, that what he had been foolish enough to resent as an affront, was designed as a jest, and meant to divert him as well as herself: he examined her behaviour again, and wondered at his stupidity in not discovering it before. His resentment vanishing immediately, he returned to the house; and went, without ceremony, to Arabella's apartment, which he entered before she perceived him, being in a profound musing at one of the windows; the noise he made, in approaching her, obliged her at last to look up; when, starting, as if she had seen a basilisk, she flew to her closet, and, shutting the door with great violence, commanded him to leave her chamber immediately.

Mr. Glanville, still supposing her in jest, intreated her to open the door; but, finding she continued obstinate, 'Well,' said he, going away, 'I shall 'be revenged on you some time hence, 'and make you repent the tricks you 'play me now.'

Arabella not being able to imagine any thing, by these words he spoke in raillery, but that he really, in the spite and anguish of his heart, threatened her with executing some terrible enterprize; she did not doubt, but he either intended to carry her away; or, thinking her aversion to him proceeded from his having a rival happy enough to be esteemed by her, those mysterious words he had uttered related to his design of killing him; so that as she knew he could discover no rival to wreak his revenge upon, she feared that, at once to satisfy that passion as well as his love, he would make himself master of her liberty: 'For, in 'fine,' said she to Lucy, to whom she communicated all her thoughts, 'have 'I not every thing to apprehend from 'a man who knows so little how to 'treat my sex with the respect which 'is our due; and who, after having, 'contrary to the timorous nature of 'that passion, insulted me with a free 'declaration of love, treated my commands with the utmost contempt by 'appearing before me again; and even 'threatens me with the revenge he is 'meditating at this moment?'

Had Mr. Glanville been present, and heard the terrible misfortunes which she presaged from the few words he had jestingly spoke, he would certainly have made her quite furious, by the diversion her mistake would have afforded him. But the more she reflected on his words, the more she was persuaded of the terrible purpose of them.

It was in vain to acquaint her father with the reasons she had for disliking his choice; his resolution was fixed, and if she did not voluntarily conform to it, she exposed herself to the attempts of a violent and unjust lover, who would either prevail upon the marquis to lay a force upon her inclinations, or make himself master of her person, and never cease persecuting her till he had obliged her to give him her hand.

Having reasoned herself into a perfect conviction that all these things must necessarily happen, she thought it both just and reasonable to provide for her own security by a speedy flight: the want of a precedent, indeed, for an action of this nature, held her a few moments in suspense; for she did not remember to have read of any heroine that voluntarily left her father's house, however persecuted she might be; but she considered, that there was not any of the ladies in romances, in the same circumstances with herself, who was without a favoured lover, for whose sake it might have been believed she had made an elopement, which would have been highly prejudicial to her glory; and, as there was no foundation for any suspicion of that kind in her case, she thought there was nothing to hinder her from withdrawing from a tyrannical exertion of parental authority, and the secret machinations of a lover, whose aim was to take away her liberty, either by obliging her to marry him, or by making her a prisoner.

CHAP. X.

CONTAINS SEVERAL INCIDENTS, IN WHICH THE READER IS EXPECTED TO BE EXTREMELY INTERESTED.

ARABELLA had ſpent ſome hours in her cloſet, revolving a thouſand different ſtratagems to eſcape from the misfortune that threatened her, when ſhe was interrupted by Lucy, who, after deſiring admittance, informed her, that the marquis, having rode out to take the air that evening, had fallen from his horſe and received ſome hurt; that he was gone to bed, and deſired to ſee her.

Arabella, hearing her father was indiſpoſed, ran to him, exceſſively alarmed; and reflecting on the reſolution ſhe had juſt before taken, of leaving him, which aggravated her concern, ſhe came to his bedſide with her eyes ſwimming in tears. Mr. Glanville was ſitting near him; but, riſing at her appearance to give her his chair, which ſhe accepted without taking any notice of him, he ſtood at ſome diſtance contemplating her face, to which ſorrow had given ſo many charms, that he gazed on her with an eagerneſs and delight that could not eſcape her obſervation.

She bluſhed exceſſively at the paſſionate looks he gave her; and, finding the marquis's indiſpoſition not conſiderable enough to oblige her to a conſtant attendance at his bed-ſide, ſhe took the firſt opportunity of returning to her chamber; but, as ſhe was going out, Glanville preſented his hand to lead her up ſtairs, which ſhe ſcornfully refuſing—

'Sure, couſin,' ſaid he, a little piqued, 'you are not diſpoſed to carry 'on your ill-natured jeſt any farther?'

'If you imagined I jeſted with you,' ſaid Arabella, 'I am rather to accuſe 'the ſlowneſs of your underſtanding, 'for your perſiſting in treating me thus 'freely, than the inſolence I firſt im-'puted it to: but, whatever is the 'cauſe of it, I now tell you again, 'that you have extremely offended 'me; and if my father's illneſs did 'not ſet bounds to my reſentment at 'preſent, I would make you know, 'that I would not ſuffer the injury 'you do me, ſo patiently.'

'Since you would have me to be-'lieve you are ſerious,' replied Glanville, 'be pleaſed to let me know what 'offence it is you complain of; for I 'proteſt I am quite at a loſs to under-'ſtand you.'

'Was it not enough,' reſumed Arabella, 'to affront me with an inſolent 'declaration of your paſſion, but you 'muſt alſo, in contempt of my com-'mands to the contrary, appear be-'fore me again, purſue me to my 'chamber, and uſe the moſt brutal 'menaces to me?'

'Hold, pray, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'and ſuffer me to aſk you, 'if it is my preſumption, in declaring 'myſelf your admirer, that you are ſo 'extremely offended at?'

'Doubtleſs it is, Sir,' anſwered Arabella; 'and ſuch a preſumption as, 'without the aggravating circum-'ſtances you have ſince added to it, is 'ſufficient to make me always your 'enemy.'

'I beg pardon,' returned Mr. Glanville, gravely, 'for that offence; 'and alſo for ſtaying any longer in a 'houſe which you have ſo genteelly 'turned me out of.'

'My pardon, Mr. Glanville,' reſumed ſhe, 'is not ſo eaſily gained: 'time, and your repentance, may, in-'deed, do much towards obtaining it.'

Saying this, ſhe made a ſign to him to retire, for he had walked up with her to her chamber; but finding he did not obey her, for really he was quite unacquainted with theſe ſorts of dumb commands, ſhe haſtily retired to her cloſet, leſt he ſhould attempt to move her pity by any expreſſions of deſpair for the cruel baniſhment ſhe had doomed him to.

Mr. Glanville, ſeeing ſhe had ſhut herſelf up in her cloſet, left her chamber, and retired to his own, more confounded than ever at the behaviour of his couſin.

Her bidding him ſo peremptorily to leave the houſe, would have equally perſuaded him of her ignorance and ill-breeding, had not the elegance of her manners, in every other reſpect, proved the contrary; nor was it poſſible to doubt ſhe had a great ſhare of underſtanding, ſince her converſation, ſingular as ſome of her ſentiments ſeemed to him, was far ſuperior to moſt other ladies. Therefore, he concluded, the affront

affront he had received proceeded from her diſdain to admit the addreſſes of any perſon whoſe quality was inferior to hers; which, probably, was increaſed by ſome particular diſlike ſhe had to his perſon.

His honour would not permit him to make uſe of that advantage her father's authority could give him; and, wholly engroſſed by his reſentment of the uſage he had received from her, he reſolved to ſet out for London the next day without ſeeing the marquis, from whom he was apprehenſive of ſome endeavours to detain him.

Having taken this reſolution, he ordered his ſervant to have the horſes ready early in the morning; and, without taking any notice of his intention, he left the caſtle, riding as faſt as poſſible to the next ſtage, from whence he wrote to his uncle; and, diſpatching a meſſenger with his letter, held on his way to London.

The marquis being pretty well recovered from his indiſpoſition by a good night's reſt, ſent for Mr. Glanville in the morning, to walk with him, as was his cuſtom, in the garden; but hearing he had rode out, though he imagined it was only to take the air, yet he could not help accuſing him, in his own thoughts, of a little neglect; for which he reſolved to chide him when he returned: but his long ſtay filling him with ſome ſurprize, he was beginning to expreſs his fears that ſomething had befallen him, to Arabella, who was then with him, when a ſervant preſented him the letter, which Mr. Glanville's meſſenger had that moment brought.

The marquis caſting his eyes on the direction, and knowing his nephew's hand, 'Bleſs me!' cried he, extremely ſurprized, 'What can this mean?'—'Bella,' added he, 'here's a letter 'from your couſin.'

Arabella, at theſe words, ſtarted up; and preventing her father, with a reſpectful action, from opening it, 'I 'beſeech you, my lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'before you read this letter, ſuffer me to 'aſſure you, that if it contains any 'thing fatal, I am not at all acceſſary 'to it: 'tis true, I have baniſhed my 'couſin, as a puniſhment for the offence he was guilty of towards me; 'but, Heaven is my witneſs, I did not 'deſire his death; and if he has taken 'any violent reſolution againſt himſelf, he has greatly exceeded my commands.'

The marquis, whoſe ſurprize was conſiderably increaſed by theſe words, haſtily broke open the letter, which ſhe perceiving, hurried out of the room; and, locking herſelf up in her cloſet, began to bewail the effect of her charms, as if ſhe was perfectly aſſured of her couſin's death.

The marquis, however, who, from Lady Bella's exclamation, had prepared himſelf for the knowledge of ſome very extraordinary accident, was leſs ſurprized, than he would otherwiſe have been, at the contents; which were as follow—

'MY LORD,

'AS my leaving your houſe ſo abruptly will certainly make me 'appear guilty of a moſt unpardonable 'rudeneſs, I cannot diſpenſe with myſelf from acquainting your lordſhip 'with the cauſe; though, to ſpare the 'reproaches Lady Bella will probably 'caſt on me for doing ſo, I could wiſh 'you knew it by any other means.

'But, my lord, I value your eſteem 'too much to hazard the loſs of it by 'ſuffering you to imagine, that I am 'capable of doing any thing to diſpleaſe you. Lady Bella was pleaſed 'to order me to ſtay no longer in the 'houſe, and menaced me with ſome 'very terrible uſage, if I diſobeyed 'her: ſhe uſed ſo many other contemptuous expreſſions to me, that, I 'am perſuaded, I ſhall never be ſo 'happy as to poſſeſs the honour you 'deſigned for, my lord, your moſt 'obedient, &c.

'CHARLES GLANVILLE.'

When the marquis had read this letter, he went to his daughter's apartment with an intention to chide her ſeverely for her uſage of his nephew; but ſeeing her come to meet him with her eyes bathed in tears, he inſenſibly loſt ſome part of his reſentment.

'Alas! my lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'I know 'you come prepared to load me with 'reproaches upon my couſin's account; but I beſeech your lordſhip, 'do not aggravate my ſorrows: though 'I baniſhed Mr. Glanville, I did not 'deſire his death; and, queſtionleſs, if

'he knew how I *resent* it, his ghost 'would be satisfied with the sacrifice I 'make him.'

The marquis not being able to help smiling at this conceit, which he saw had so strongly possessed her imagination that she had no sort of doubt but that her cousin was dead, asked her, if she really believed Mr. Glanville loved her well enough to die with grief at her ill usage of him.

'If,' said she, 'he loves me not well 'enough to die for me, he certainly 'loves me but little; and I am the less 'obliged to him.'

'But I desire to know,' interrupted the marquis, 'for what crime it was 'you took the liberty to banish him 'from my house?'

'I banished him, my lord,' resumed she, 'for his presumption in telling me 'he loved me.'

'That presumption, as you call it, 'though I know not for what reason,' said the marquis, 'was authorized by 'me; therefore know, Bella, that I 'not only permit him to love you, but 'I also expect you should endeavour to 'return his affection, and look upon 'him as the man whom I design for 'your husband: there's his letter,' pursued he, putting it into her hand. 'I 'blush for the rudeness you have been 'guilty of; but endeavour to repair 'it by a more obliging behaviour for 'the future: I am going to send after 'him immediately to prevail upon him 'to return; therefore, write him an 'apology, I charge you, and have it 'done by the time my messenger is 'ready to set out.'

Saying this he went out of the room: Arabella eagerly opened the letter, and finding it in a stile so different from what she expected, her dislike of him returned with more violence than ever.

'Ah! the traitor!' said she aloud, 'is it thus that he endeavours to move 'my compassion? How greatly did I 'over-rate his affection, when I imagined his despair was capable of killing him?—Disloyal man!' pursued she, walking about, 'is it by complaints to my father that thou expectest to succeed? And dost thou 'imagine the heart of Arabella is to 'be won by violence and injustice?'

In this manner she wasted the time allotted for her to write; and when the marquis sent for her letter, having no intention to comply, she went to his chamber, conjuring him not to oblige her to a condescension so unworthy of her.

The marquis, being now excessively angry with her, rose up in a fury, and, leading her to his writing-desk, ordered her instantly to write to her cousin.

'If I must write, my lord,' said she, sobbing, 'pray be so good as to dictate 'what I must say.'

'Apologize for your rude behaviour,' said the marquis; 'and desire him, in 'the most obliging manner you can, 'to return.'

Arabella, seeing there was a necessity for obeying, took up the pen, and wrote the following billet—

'THE UNFORTUNATE ARABELLA, 'TO THE MOST UNGENEROUS 'GLANVILLE.

'IT is not by the power I have over 'you, that I command you to re-'turn; for I disclaim any empire over 'so unworthy a subject; but, since it 'is my father's pleasure I should invite 'you back, I must let you know, that 'I repeal your banishment, and ex-'pect you will immediately return 'with the messenger who brings this: 'however, to spare your acknowledg-'ments, know, that it is in obedience 'to my father's absolute commands, 'that you receive this mandate from

'ARABELLA.'

Having finished this billet, she gave it to the marquis to read; who, finding a great deal of his own haughtiness of temper in it, could not resolve to check her for a disposition so like his own: yet he told her her stile was very uncommon. 'And pray,' added he, smiling, 'who taught you to superscribe 'your letters thus, "The unfortunate "Arabella, to the most ungenerous "Glanville?" Why, Bella, this su-'perscription is wholly calculated for 'the bearer's information: but come, 'alter it immediately; for I don't 'chuse my messenger should know that 'you are unfortunate, or that my ne-'phew is ungenerous.'

'Pray, my lord,' replied Arabella, 'content yourself with what I have 'already done in obedience to your 'commands, and suffer my letter to

'remain

'remain as it is: methinks it is but 'reasonable I should express some lit-'tle resentment at the complaint my 'cousin has been pleased to make to 'you against me; nor can I possibly 'make my letter more obliging, with-'out being guilty of an unpardonable 'meanness.'

'You are a strange girl,' replied the marquis, taking the letter, and inclosing it in one from himself; in which he earnestly intreated his nephew to return, threatening him with his displeasure if he disobeyed, and assuring him that his daughter would receive him as well as he could possibly desire.

The messenger being dispatched, with orders to ride post, and overtake the young gentleman, he obeyed his orders so well, that he came up with him at ——, where he intended to lodge that night.

Mr. Glanville, who expected his uncle would make use of some methods to recal him, opened his letter without any great emotion; but seeing another inclosed, his heart leaped to his mouth, not doubting but it was a letter from Arabella; but the contents surprized him so much, that he hardly knew whether he ought to look upon them as an invitation to return, or a new affront, her words were so distant and haughty. The superscription being much the same with a billet he had received from her in the garden, which had made him conclude her in jest, he knew not what to think of it. 'One would swear this 'dear girl's head is turned,' said he to himself, 'if she had not more *wit* than 'her whole sex besides.'

After reading Arabella's letter several times, he at last opened his uncle's; and seeing the pressing instances he made him to return, he resolved to obey; and the next morning set out for the castle.

Arabella, during the time her cousin was expected, appeared so melancholy and reserved, that the marquis was extremely uneasy. 'You have never,' said he to her, 'disobeyed me in any 'one action of your life; and I may 'with reason expect you will conform 'to my will in the choice I have made 'of a husband for you, since it is im-'possible to make any objection either 'to his person or mind; and being the 'son of my sister, he is certainly not 'unworthy of you, though he has not 'a title.'

'My first wish, my lord,' replied Arabella, 'is to live single, not being 'desirous of entering into any engage-'ment which may hinder my solici-'tude and cares, and lessen my atten-'dance upon the best of fathers, who, 'till now, has always most tenderly 'complied with my inclinations in 'every thing: but if it is your abso-'lute command that I should marry, 'give me not to one, who, though he 'has the honour to be allied to you, 'has neither merited your esteem, or 'my favour, by any action worthy of 'his birth, or the passion he pretends 'to have for me; for in fine, my lord, 'by what services has he deserved the 'distinction with which you honour 'him? Has he ever delivered you from 'any considerable danger? Has he 'saved your life, and hazarded his 'own for you, upon any occasion 'whatever? Has he merited my esteem 'by his sufferings, fidelity, and re-'spect? or, by any great and generous 'action, given me a testimony of his 'love, which should oblige me to re-'ward him with my affection? Ah! 'my lord, I beseech you, think not so 'unworthily of your daughter, as to 'bestow her upon one who has done so 'little to deserve her: if my happiness 'be dear to you, do not precipitate me 'into a state from whence you cannot 'recal me, with a person whom I can 'never affect.'

She would have gone on, but the marquis interrupted her sternly. 'I'll 'hear no more,' said he, 'of your 'foolish and ridiculous objections. 'What stuff is this you talk of? What 'service am I to expect from my ne-'phew? And by what sufferings is he 'to merit your esteem? Assure your-'self, Arabella,' continued he, 'that 'I will never pardon you, if you pre-'sume to treat my nephew in the man-'ner you have done: I perceive you 'have no real objection to make to 'him; therefore I expect you will en-'deavour to obey me without reluc-'tance; for, since you seem to be so 'little acquainted with what will most 'conduce to your own happiness, you 'must not think it strange, if I insist 'upon directing your choice in the most 'important business of your life.'

Arabella

Arabella was going to reply, but the marquis ordered her to be silent; and she went to her own apartment in so much affliction, that she thought her misfortunes were not exceeded by any she had ever read.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH A LOGICAL ARGUMENT IS UNSEASONABLY INTERRUPTED.

THE marquis was also extremely uneasy at her obstinacy: he desired nothing more ardently than to marry her to his nephew; but he could not resolve to force her consent; and, however determined he appeared to her, yet, in reality, he intended only to use persuasions to effect what he desired; and, from the natural sweetness of her temper, he was sometimes not without hopes that she might at last be prevailed upon to comply.

His nephew's return restored him to part of his usual tranquillity: after he had gently chid him for suffering himself to be so far transported with his resentment at the little humours of a lady, as to leave his house without acquainting him, he bid him go to Arabella, and endeavour to make his peace with her.

Mr. Glanville accordingly went to her apartment, resolving to oblige her to come to some explanation with him concerning the offence she complained of; but that fair incensed lady, who had taken shelter in her closet, ordered Lucy to tell him she was indisposed, and could not see him.

Glanville, however, comforted himself for this disappointment by the hopes of seeing her at supper; and accordingly she came when the supper-bell rung, and, making a very cool compliment to her cousin, placed herself at table. The soft langour that appeared in her eyes, gave such an additional charm to one of the loveliest faces in the world, that Glanville, who sat opposite to her, could not help gazing on her with a very particular attention; he often spoke to her, and asked her trifling questions, for the sake of hearing the sound of her voice, which sorrow had made inchantingly sweet.

When supper was over, she would have retired; but the marquis desired her to stay and entertain her cousin, while he went to look over some dispatches he had received from London.

Arabella blushed with anger at this command; but not daring to disobey, she kept her eyes fixed on the ground, as if she dreaded to hear something that would displease her.

'Well, cousin,' said Glanville, 'though you desire to have no empire 'over so unworthy a subject as myself, 'yet I hope you are not displeased at 'my returning, in obedience to your 'commands.'

'Since I am not allowed any will 'of my own,' said she, sighing, 'it 'matters not whether I am pleased or 'displeased; nor is it of any conse-'quence to you to know.'

'Indeed but it is, Lady Bella,' interrupted he; 'for if I knew how to 'please you, I would never, if I could 'help it, offend: therefore, I beg 'you, tell me how I have disobliged 'you; for certainly you have treated 'me as harshly as if I had been guilty 'of some very terrible offence.'

'You had the boldness,' said she, 'to talk to me of love; and you well 'know that persons of my sex and 'quality are not permitted to listen to 'such discourses; and if for that of-'fence I banished you my presence, 'I did no more than decency required 'of me, and which I would yet do, 'were I mistress of my own actions.'

'But is it possible, cousin,' said Glanville, 'that you can be angry 'with any one for loving you? Is that 'a crime of so high a nature as to 'merit an eternal banishment from 'your presence?'

'Without telling you,' said Arabella, blushing, 'whether I am angry 'at being loved, it is sufficient you 'know, that I will not pardon the man 'who shall have the presumption to tell 'me he loves me.'

'But, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'if the person who tells you he 'loves you, be of a rank not beneath 'you, I conceive you are not at all in-'jured by the favourable sentiments he 'feels for you; and though you are 'not disposed to make any returns to 'his passion, yet you are certainly 'obliged to him for his good opinion.'

'Since love is not voluntary,' replied Arabella, 'I am not obliged to 'any

'any person for loving me; for, question-
'less, if he could help it, he
'would.'

'If it is not a voluntary favour,' interrupted Glanville, 'it is not a vo-
'luntary offence; and if you do not
'think yourself obliged by the one,
'neither are you at liberty to be offend-
'ed with the other.'

'The question,' said Arabella, 'is
'not whether I ought to be offended
'at being loved, but whether it is not
'an offence to be told I am so.'

'If there is nothing criminal in
'the passion itself, Madam,' resumed Glanville, 'certainly there can be no
'crime in declaring it.'

'However specious your arguments
'may appear,' interrupted Arabella,
'I am persuaded it is an unpardonable
'crime to tell a lady you love her;
'and though I had nothing else to
'plead, yet the authority of custom is
'sufficient to prove it.'

'Custom, Lady Bella,' said Glanville, smiling, 'is wholly on my side;
'for the ladies are so far from being
'displeased at the addresses of their
'lovers, that their chiefest care is to
'gain them, and their greatest triumph
'to hear them talk of their passion:
'so, Madam, I hope you'll allow that
'argument has no force.'

'I don't know,' answered Arabella,
'what sort of ladies they are who al-
'low such unbecoming liberties; but
'I am certain, that Statira, Parisatis,
'Clelia, Mandana, and all the illustri-
'ous heroines of antiquity, whom it
'is a glory to resemble, would never
'admit of such discourses.'

'Ah! for Heaven's sake, cousin,' interrupted Glanville, endeavouring to stifle a laugh, 'do not suffer yourself
'to be governed by such antiquated
'maxims! The world is quite differ-
'ent to what it was in those days; and
'the ladies in this age would as soon
'follow the fashions of the Greek and
'Roman ladies, as mimick their man-
'ners; and, I believe, they would be-
'come one as ill as the other.'

'I am sure,' replied Arabella, 'the
'world is not more virtuous now than
'it was in their days, and there is good
'reason to believe it is not much wiser;
'and I don't see why the manners of
'this age are to be preferred to those
'of former ones, unless they are wiser
'and better: however, I cannot be
'persuaded that things are as you say,
'but that when I am a little better ac-
'quainted with the world, I shall find
'as many persons who resemble O-
'roondates, Artaxerxes, and the il-
'lustrious lover of Clelia, as those who
'are like Tiribases, Artaxes, and the
'presuming and insolent Glanville.'

'By the epithets you give me, Ma-
'dam,' said Glanville, 'I find you
'have placed me in very bad company:
'but pray, Madam, if the illustrious
'lover of Clelia had never discovered
'his passion, how would the world
'have come to the knowledge of it?'

'He did not discover his passion, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'till, by the services
'he did the noble Clelius, and his in-
'comparable daughter, he could plead
'some title to their esteem: he several
'times preserved the life of that re-
'nowned Roman; delivered the beauti-
'ful Clelia when she was a captive;
'and, in fine, conferred so many obli-
'gations upon them, and all their
'friends, as he might well expect to
'be pardoned by the divine Clelia for
'daring to love her. Nevertheless, she
'used him very harshly when he first
'declared his passion, and banished
'him also from her presence; and it
'was a long time before she could pre-
'vail upon herself to compassionate his
'sufferings.'

The marquis coming in, interrupted Arabella; upon which she took occasion to retire, leaving Glanville more captivated with her than ever.

He found her usage of him was grounded upon examples she thought it her duty to follow; and, strange as her notions of life appeared, yet they were supported with so much wit and delicacy, that he could not help admiring her, while he foresaw the oddity of her humour would throw innumerable difficulties in his way before he should be able to obtain her.

However, as he was really passionately in love with her, he resolved to accommodate himself, as much as possible, to her taste, and endeavour to gain her heart by a behaviour most agreeable to her: he therefore assumed an air of great distance and respect; never mentioned his affection, nor the intentions of her father in his favour; and the marquis, observing his daughter conversed with him with less reluctance than usual, leaving to time,

and

and the merit of his nephew, to diſpoſe her to comply with his deſires, reſolved not to interpoſe his authority in an affair upon which her own happineſs ſo much depended.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH THE READER WILL FIND A SPECIMEN OF THE TRUE PATHETICK, IN A SPEECH OF OROONDATES—THE ADVENTURE OF THE BOOKS.

ARABELLA ſaw the change in her couſin's behaviour with a great deal of ſatisfaction; for ſhe did not doubt but his paſſion was as ſtrong as ever, but that he forebore, through reſpect, from entertaining her with any expreſſions of it: therefore ſhe now converſed with him with the greateſt ſweetneſs and complaiſance; ſhe would walk with him for ſeveral hours in the garden, leaning upon his arm, and charmed him to the laſt degree of admiration by the agreeable ſallies of her wit, and her fine reaſoning upon every ſubject he propoſed.

It was with the greateſt difficulty he reſtrained himſelf from telling her a thouſand times a day that he loved her to exceſs, and conjuring her to give her conſent to her father's deſigns in his favour: but, though he could get over his fears of offending her, yet it was impoſſible to expreſs any ſentiments of this nature to her, without having her women witneſſes of his diſcourſe, for when he walked with her in the garden, Lucy and another attendant always followed her; if he ſat with her in her own chamber, her women were always at one end of it; and when they were both in the marquis's apartment, where her women did not follow her, poor Glanville found himſelf embarraſſed by his preſence; for conceiving his nephew had opportunities enough of talking to his daughter in private, he always partook of their converſation.

He paſſed ſome weeks in this manner, extremely chagrined at the little progreſs he made; and was beginning to be heartily weary of the conſtraint he laid upon himſelf, when Arabella one day furniſhed him, without deſigning it, with an opportunity of talking to her on the ſubject he wiſhed for.

'When I reflect,' ſaid ſhe, laughing, 'upon the difference there was 'between us ſome days ago, and the 'familiarity in which we live at preſent, I cannot imagine by what means 'you have arrived to a good fortune 'you had ſo little reaſon to expect; 'for, in fine, you have given me no 'ſigns of repentance for the fault you 'committed, which moved me to baniſh 'you; and I am not certain whether, 'in converſing with you in the manner 'I do, I give you not as much reaſon 'to find fault with my too great eaſineſs, as you did me to be diſpleaſed 'with your preſumption.'

'Since,' returned Glanville, 'I have 'not perſiſted in the commiſſion of 'thoſe faults which diſpleaſed you, 'what greater ſigns of repentance can 'you deſire, than this reformation in 'my behaviour?'

'But repentance ought to precede reformation,' replied Arabella, 'otherwiſe, there is great room to ſuſpect 'it is only feigned; and a ſincere repentance ſhews itſelf in ſuch viſible 'marks, that one can hardly be deceived in that which is genuine. I 'have read of many indiſcreet lovers, 'who not ſucceeding in their addreſſes, 'have pretended to repent, and acted 'as you do; that is, without giving 'any ſigns of contrition for the fault 'they had committed, have eat and 'ſlept well, never loſt their colour, or 'grew one bit thinner by their ſorrow; but contented themſelves with 'ſaying they repented, and, without 'changing their diſpoſition to renew 'their fault, only concealed their intention for fear of loſing any favourable opportunity of committing 'it again: but true repentance, as I 'was ſaying, not only produces reformation, but the perſon who is poſſeſſed of it voluntarily puniſhes himſelf for the faults he has been guilty 'of. Thus, Mazares, deeply repenting of the crime his paſſion for the 'divine Mandana had forced him to 'commit; as a puniſhment, obliged 'himſelf to follow the fortune of his 'glorious rival, obey all his commands, and, fighting under his banners, aſſiſt him to gain the poſſeſſion 'of his adored miſtreſs. Such a glorious inſtance of ſelf-denial was, in-

'deed,

'deed, a ſufficient proof of his repentance; and infinitely more convincing than the ſilence he impoſed upon himſelf with reſpect to his paſſion.

'Oroondates, to puniſh himſelf for his preſumption, in daring to tell the admirable Statira that he loved her, reſolved to die, to expiate his crime; and, doubtleſs, would have done ſo, if his fair miſtreſs, at the intreaty of her brother, had not commanded him to live.'

'But pray, Lady Bella,' interrupted Glanville, 'were not theſe gentlemen happy at laſt in the poſſeſſion of their miſtreſſes?'

'Doubtleſs they were, Sir,' reſumed ſhe; 'but it was not till after numberleſs misfortunes, infinite ſervices, and many dangerous adventures, in which their fidelity was put to the ſtrongeſt trials imaginable.'

'I am glad, however,' ſaid Glanville, 'that the ladies were not inſenſible; for, ſince you do not diſapprove of their compaſſion for their lovers, it is to be hoped you will not be always as inexorable as you are now.'

'When I ſhall be ſo fortunate,' interrupted ſhe, 'to meet with a lover who ſhall have as pure and perfect a paſſion for me as Oroondates had for Statira, and give me as many glorious proofs of his conſtancy and affection, doubtleſs I ſhall not be ungrateful; but, ſince I have not the merits of Statira, I ought not to pretend to her good fortune; and ſhall be very well contented if I eſcape the perſecutions which perſons of my ſex, who are not frightfully ugly, are always expoſed to, without hoping to inſpire ſuch a paſſion as that of Oroondates.'

'I ſhould be glad to be better acquainted with the actions of this happy lover, Madam,' ſaid Glanville; 'that, forming myſelf upon his example, I may hope to pleaſe a lady as worthy of my regard as Statira was of his.'

'For Heaven's ſake, couſin,' reſumed Arabella, laughing, 'how have you ſpent your time; and to what ſtudies have you devoted all your hours, that you could find none to ſpare for the peruſal of books from which all uſeful knowledge may be drawn; which give us the moſt ſhining examples of generoſity, courage, virtue, and love; which regulate our actions, form our manners, and inſpire us with a noble deſire of emulating thoſe great, heroick, and virtuous actions, which made thoſe perſons ſo glorious in their age, and ſo worthy imitation in ours? However, as it is never too late to improve, ſuffer me to recommend to you the reading of theſe books, which will ſoon make you diſcover the improprieties you have been guilty of; and will, probably, induce you to avoid them for the future.'

'I ſhall certainly read them, if you deſire it,' ſaid Glanville; 'and I have ſo great an inclination to be agreeable to you, that I ſhall embrace every opportunity of becoming ſo; and will therefore take my inſtructions from theſe books, if you think proper, or from yourſelf; which, indeed, will be the quickeſt method of teaching me.'

Arabella having ordered one of her women to bring Cleopatra, Caſſandra, Clelia, and the Grand Cyrus, from her library, Glanville no ſooner ſaw the girl return, ſinking under the weight of thoſe voluminous romances, but he began to tremble at the apprehenſion of his couſin laying her commands upon him to read them; and repented of his complaiſance, which expoſed him to the cruel neceſſity of performing what to him appeared an Herculean labour, or elſe incurring her anger by his refuſal.

Arabella, making her women place the books upon a table before her, opened them, one after another, with eyes ſparkling with delight; while Glanville ſat wrapt in admiration at the ſight of ſo many huge folios written, as he conceived, upon the moſt trifling ſubjects imaginable.

'I have choſen out theſe few,' ſaid Arabella, (not obſerving his conſternation) 'from a great many others, which compoſe the moſt valuable part of my library; and by that time you have gone through theſe, I imagine you will be conſiderably improved.'

'Certainly, Madam,' replied Glanville, turning over the leaves in great confuſion, 'one may, as you ſay, be greatly improved; for theſe books

'contain a great deal:' and, looking over a page of Caſſandra, without any deſign, read theſe words, which were part of Oroondates's ſoliloquy when he received a cruel ſentence from Statira—

'Ah, cruel!' (ſays this miſerable lover) 'and what have I done to merit 'it? Examine the nature of my of-'fence, and you will ſee I am not ſo 'guilty, but that my death may free 'me from part of that ſeverity: ſhall 'your hatred laſt longer than my life? 'and can you deteſt a ſoul that for-'ſakes it's body only to obey you? 'No, no, you are not ſo hard-heart-'ed; that ſatisfaction will, doubtleſs, 'content you: and, when I ſhall ceaſe 'to be, doubtleſs I ſhall ceaſe to be 'odious to you.'

'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid Glanville, ſtifling a laugh with great difficulty, 'I 'cannot help blaming the lady this 'ſorrowful lover complains of, for her 'great cruelty; for here he gives one 'reaſon to ſuſpect, that ſhe will not 'even be contented with his dying in 'obedience to her commands, but will 'hate him after death; an impiety 'quite inexcuſable in a chriſtian!'

'You condemn this illuſtrious prin-'ceſs with very little reaſon,' interrupted Arabella, ſmiling at his miſtake; 'for, beſides that ſhe was not a 'chriſtian, and ignorant of thoſe di-'vine maxims of charity and forgive-'neſs, which chriſtians, by their pro-'feſſion, are obliged to practiſe, ſhe 'was very far from deſiring the death 'of Oroondates; for, if you will take 'the pains to read the ſucceeding paſ-'ſages, you will find that ſhe expreſſes 'herſelf in the moſt obliging manner 'in the world; for when Oroondates 'tells her he would live, if ſhe would 'conſent he ſhould, the princeſs moſt 'ſweetly replies, "I not only conſent, "but alſo intreat it; and, if I have any "power, command it." However, 'leſt you ſhould fall into the other ex-'treme, and blame this great princeſs 'for her eaſineſs, (as you before con-'demned her for her cruelty) 'tis ne-'ceſſary you ſhould know how ſhe was 'induced to this favourable beha-'viour to her lover: therefore pray 'read the whole tranſaction. Stay! 'here it begins,' continued ſhe; turning over a good many pages, and marking where he ſhould begin to read.

Glanville, having no great ſtomach to the taſk, endeavoured to evade it, by intreating his couſin to relate the paſſages ſhe deſired he ſhould be acquainted with: but ſhe declining it, he was obliged to obey; and began to read where ſhe directed him; and, to leave him at liberty to read with the greater attention, ſhe left him, and went to a window at another end of the chamber.

Mr. Glanville, who was not willing to diſpleaſe her, examined the taſk ſhe had ſet him, reſolving, if it was not a very hard one, to comply; but, counting the pages, he was quite terrified at the number, and could not prevail upon himſelf to read them: therefore glancing them over, he pretended to be deeply engaged in reading, when, in reality, he was contemplating the ſurprizing effect theſe books had produced in the mind of his couſin; who, had ſhe been untainted with the ridiculous whims they created in her imagination, was, in his opinion, one of the moſt accompliſhed ladies in the world.

When he had ſat long enough to make her believe he had read what ſhe had deſired, he roſe up, and joining her at the window, began to talk of the pleaſantneſs of the evening, inſtead of the rigour of Statira.

Arabella coloured with vexation at his extreme indifference in a matter which was of ſuch prodigious conſequence, in her opinion; but diſdaining to put him in mind of his rudeneſs, in quitting a ſubject they had not thoroughly diſcuſſed, and which ſhe had taken ſo much pains to make him comprehend, ſhe continued ſilent, and would not condeſcend to afford him an anſwer to any thing he ſaid.

Glanville, by her ſilence and frowns, was made ſenſible of his fault; and, to repair it, began to talk of the inexorable Statira, though, indeed, he did not well know what to ſay.

Arabella, clearing up a little, did not diſdain to anſwer him upon her favourite topick: 'I knew,' ſaid ſhe, 'you 'would be ready to blame this princeſs 'equally for her rigour and her kind-'neſs; but it muſt be remembered, that 'what ſhe did in favour of Oroondates 'was wholly owing to the generoſity of 'Artaxerxes.'

Here ſhe ſtopped, expecting Glanville to give his opinion; who, ſtrangely puzzled, replied at random, 'To be

'ſure

'sure, Madam, he was a very generous
'rival.'

'Rival!' cried Arabella; 'Artaxerxes the rival of Oroondates! why certainly you have loſt you wits; he was Statira's brother; and it was to his mediation that Oroondates, or Orontes, owed his happineſs.'

'Certainly, Madam,' replied Glanville, 'it was very generous in Artaxerxes, as he was brother to Statira, to interpoſe in the behalf of an unfortunate lover; and both Oroondates and Orontes were extremely obliged to him.'

'Orontes,' replied Arabella, 'was more obliged to him than Oroondates; ſince the quality of Orontes was infinitely below that of Oroondates.'

'But, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, (extremely pleaſed at his having ſo well got over the difficulty he had been in) 'which of theſe two lovers did Statira make happy?'

This unlucky queſtion immediately informed Arabella, that ſhe had been all this time the dupe of her couſin; who, if he had read a ſingle page, would have known that Orontes and Oroondates was the ſame perſon; the name of Orontes being aſſumed by Oroondates to conceal his real name and quality.

The ſhame and rage ſhe conceived at ſo glaring a proof of his diſreſpect, and the ridicule to which ſhe had expoſed herſelf, were ſo great, that ſhe could not find words ſevere enough to expreſs her reſentment; but, proteſting that no conſideration whatever ſhould oblige her to converſe with him again, ſhe ordered him inſtantly to quit her chamber; and aſſured him, if he ever attempted to approach her again, ſhe would ſubmit to the moſt terrible effects of her father's reſentment, rather than be obliged to ſee a perſon who had, by his unworthy behaviour, made himſelf her ſcorn and averſion.

Glanville, who ſaw himſelf going to be diſcarded a ſecond time, attempted, with great ſubmiſſion, to move her to recal her cruel ſentence; but Arabella, burſting into tears, complained ſo pathetically of the cruelty of her deſtiny, in expoſing her to the hated importunities of a man ſhe deſpiſed, and whoſe preſence was ſo inſupportable, that Glanville, thinking it beſt to let her rage evaporate a little before he attempted to pacify her, quitted her chamber, curſing Statira and Orontes a thouſand times, and loading the authors of thoſe books with all the imprecations his rage could ſuggeſt.

CHAP. XIII.

THE ADVENTURE OF THE BOOKS CONTINUED.

IN this temper he went to the gardens to paſs over the chagrin this unfortunate accident had given him; when, meeting the marquis, who inſiſted upon knowing the cauſe of that ill-humour ſo viſible in his coutenance, Glanville related all that had paſſed; but, in ſpite of his anger, it was impoſſible for him to repeat the circumſtances of his diſgrace without laughing, as well as the marquis; who thought the ſtory ſo extremely diverting, that he would needs hear it over again.

'However, Charles,' ſaid he, 'though 'I ſhall do what I can to gain your 'pardon from Bella, yet I ſhall not 'ſcruple to own you acted extremely 'wrong, in not reading what ſhe deſired you; for, beſides loſing an opportunity of obliging her, you drew 'yourſelf into a terrible dilemma; for 'how was it poſſible for you to evade 'a diſcovery of the cheat you put upon 'her, when ſhe began to talk with 'you upon thoſe paſſages ſhe had deſired you to read?'

'I acknowledge my error, my lord,' anſwered Glanville; 'but if you reſtore me to my couſin's favour again, 'I promiſe you to repair it by a different behaviour for the future.'

'I'll ſee what I can do for you,' ſaid the marquis, leaving him, to go to Arabella's apartment, who had retired to her cloſet, extremely afflicted at this new inſult ſhe had received from her couſin: her grief was the more poignant, as ſhe was beginning to imagine, by the alteration in his behaviour, that he would prove ſuch a lover as ſhe wiſhed for; Mr. Glanville's perſon and qualifications had attracted her particular notice; and, to ſpeak in the language of romance, ſhe did not hate him; but, on the contrary, was very much diſpoſed to wiſh him well; therefore it was no wonder ſhe extremely reſented the affront ſhe had received from him.

The marquis not finding her in her chamber, proceeded to her closet, where her women informed him she was retired; and knocking gently at the door, was admitted by Arabella, whom he immediately discerned to have been weeping very much; for her fine eyes were red and swelled, and the traces of her tears might still be observed on her fair face, which at the sight of the marquis was overspread with a blush, as if she was conscious of her weakness in lamenting the crime her cousin had been guilty of.

The marquis drew a favourable omen for his nephew from her tears and confusion; but not willing to increase it by acknowledging he had observed it, he told her he was come, at Mr. Glanville's request, to make up the quarrel between them.

'Ah! my lord,' interrupted Arabella, 'speak no more to me of that 'unworthy man, who has so grossly 'abused my favour, and the privilege 'I allowed him: his baseness and ingratitude are but too manifest; and 'there is nothing I so much regret as 'my weakness in restoring him to 'part of my good opinion, after he had 'once forfeited it, by an insolence not 'to be paralleled.'

'Indeed, Bella,' said the marquis, smiling, 'you resent too deeply these 'slight matters: I can't think my 'nephew so guilty as you would have 'me believe he is; and you ought neither to be angry or surprized, that he 'preferred your conversation before 'reading in a foolish old-fashioned 'book that you put in his hands.'

'If your lordship had ever read 'these books,' replied Arabella, reddening with vexation, 'it is probable 'you would have another opinion of 'them: but, however that may be, 'my cousin is not to be excused for 'the contempt he shewed to my commands; and for daring, by the cheat 'he put on me, to expose me to the 'shame of seeing myself so ridiculously imposed upon.'

'However, you must forgive him,' said the marquis; 'and I insist upon it, 'before I quit your apartment, that 'you receive him into favour.'

'Pardon me, my lord,' replied Arabella; 'this is what I neither can, 'nor ought to do; and I hope you will 'not wrong me so much as to continue 'to desire it.'

'Nay, Bella,' said he, 'this is carrying things too far, and making 'trifling disputes of too great consequence. I am surprized at your 'treatment of a man whom, after all, 'if ever you intend to obey me, you 'must consent to marry.'

'There is no question, my lord,' replied she, 'but it would be my glory 'to obey you in whatever is possible; 'but this you command me now to 'do, not being so, I conceive you 'will rather impute my refusal to necessity than choice.'

'How!' returned the marquis, 'will 'you endeavour to persuade me, that 'it is not possible Mr. Glanville 'should be your husband?'

'It is impossible he should be so 'with my consent,' resumed Arabella; 'and I cannot give it without wounding my own quiet in a most sensible 'manner.'

'Come, come, Bella,' said the marquis, (fretting at her extreme obstinacy) 'this is too much: I am to 'blame to indulge your foibles in this 'manner: your cousin is worthy of 'your affection, and you cannot refuse 'it to him without incurring my displeasure.'

'Since my affection is not in my 'own power to bestow,' said Arabella, weeping, 'I know not how to remove 'your displeasure; but, questionless, I 'know how to die, to avoid the effects 'of what would be to me the most terrible misfortune in the world.'

'Foolish girl!' interrupted the marquis, 'how strangely do you talk? 'Are the thoughts of death become so 'familiar to you, that you speak of 'dying with so little concern?'

'Since, my lord,' resumed she, in an exalted tone, 'I do not yield, either 'in virtue or courage, to many others 'of my sex, who, when persecuted like 'me, have fled to death for relief, I 'know not why I should be thought 'less capable of it than they; and if 'Artemisa, Candace, and the beautiful daughter of Cleopatra, could 'brave the terrors of death for the sake 'of the men they loved, there is no 'question but I also could imitate 'their courage, to avoid the man I 'have so much reason to hate.'

'The

'The girl is certainly distracted,' interrupted the marquis, excessively enraged at the strange speech she had uttered: 'these foolish books my nephew talks of have turned her brain! Where are they?' pursued he, going into her chamber; 'I'll burn all I can lay my hands upon.'

Arabella, trembling for the fate of her books, followed her father into the room; who seeing the books which had caused this woeful adventure lying upon the table, he ordered one of her women to carry them into his apartment, vowing he would commit them all to the flames.

Arabella not daring, in the fury he was in, to interpose, he went out of the room, leaving her to bewail the fate of so many illustrious heroes and heroines, who, by an effect of a more cruel tyranny than any they had ever experienced before, were going to be cast into the merciless flames; which would, doubtless, pay very little regard to the divine beauties of the admirable Clelia, or the heroick valour of the brave Orontes; and the rest of those great princes and princesses, whose actions Arabella proposed for the model of hers.

Fortune, however, which never wholly forsook these illustrious personages, rescued them from so unworthy a fate, and brought Mr. Glanville into the marquis's chamber just as he was giving orders to have them destroyed.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE OF THE BOOKS IS HAPPILY CONCLUDED.

THE marquis, as ſoon as he ſaw Mr. Glanville, told him he was reſolved to cure Arabella of her whims, by burning the books that had put them into her head: 'I have ſeized upon ſome 'of them,' purſued he, ſmiling; 'and 'you may, if you pleaſe, wreak your 'ſpite upon theſe authors of your diſ-'grace, by burning them yourſelf.'

'Though I have all the reaſon in the 'world to be enraged with that incen-'diary Statira,' ſaid Glanville, laugh-ing, 'for the miſchief ſhe has done 'me; yet I cannot conſent to put ſuch 'an affront upon my couſin, as to 'burn her favourite books: and now 'I think of it, my lord,' purſued he, 'I'll endeavour to make a merit with 'Lady Bella by ſaving them; there-'fore ſpare them, at my requeſt, and let 'me carry them to her. I ſhall be quite 'unhappy till we are friends again.'

'You may do as you will,' ſaid the marquis; 'but I think it is encourag-'ing her in her follies to give them to 'her again.'

Glanville, without replying, eagerly took up the books, for fear the marquis ſhould change his mind; and, high-ly delighted with the opportunity he had got of making his peace with Lady Bella, ran to her apartment, loaded with theſe kind interceſſors; and, mak-ing his way by Lucy, who would have oppoſed him, penetrated even into the cloſet of the melancholy fair-one, who was making bitter reflections on the cruelty of her deſtiny, and bewailing her loſs with a deluge of tears.

As ridiculous as the occaſion of theſe tears was, yet Glanville could not be-hold them without being affected: aſ-ſuming, therefore, a countenance as ſad as he was able, he laid the books before her; and told her, he hoped ſhe would excuſe his coming into her pre-ſence without her permiſſion, ſince it was only to reſtore her thoſe books, whoſe loſs ſhe ſeemed ſo greatly to la-ment; and added, that it was with much difficulty he prevailed upon the mar-quis not to burn them immediately; and his fears, that he might really do as he threatened, made him ſnatch them up, and bring them, with ſo little ceremony, into her cloſet.'

Arabella, whoſe countenance bright-ened into a ſmile of pleaſing ſurprize at the ſight of her recovered treaſure, turned her bright eyes upon Glanville with a look of complacency that went to his heart.

'I well perceive,' ſaid ſhe, 'that in 'exaggerating the merit of this little 'ſervice you have done me, you ex-'pect I ſhould ſuffer it to cancel your 'paſt offences: I am not ungrateful 'enough to be inſenſible of any kind-'neſs that is ſhewn me; and, though 'I might be excuſed for ſuſpecting it 'was rather policy than friendſhip, 'that induced you to ſeek my ſatisfac-

'tion,

'tion, by ſaving theſe innocent victims 'of my father's diſpleaſure, nevertheleſs I pardon you upon the ſuppoſition, 'that you will, for the future, avoid 'all occaſion of offending me.'

At theſe words ſhe made a ſign to him to be gone, fearing the extravagance of his joy would make him throw himſelf at her feet to thank her for the infinite favour ſhe had conferred upon him; but finding he ſeemed diſpoſed to ſtay longer, ſhe called one of her women into the cloſet; and, by ſome very ſignificant frowns, gave Glanville to underſtand his ſtay was diſpleaſing; ſo that he left her, with a very low bow, highly pleaſed at her having repealed his baniſhment, and aſſured the marquis that nothing could have happened more fortunate for him, than his intended diſpoſal of his daughter's books, ſince it had proved the means of reſtoring him to her favour.

CHAP. II.

WHICH CONTAINS A VERY NATURAL INCIDENT.

FROM this time Mr. Glanville, though he was far from coming up to Lady Bella's idea of a lover, yet, by the pains he apparently ſeemed to be at in obliging her, made every day ſome progreſs in her eſteem. The marquis was extremely pleaſed at the harmony which ſubſiſted between them; though he could have wiſhed to have ſeen their marriage advance a little faſter; but Glanville, who was better acquainted with Arabella's foible than the marquis, aſſured him, he would ruin all his hopes if he preſſed her to marry; and intreated him to leave it entirely to him, to diſpoſe her to conſent to both their wiſhes.

The marquis was ſatisfied with his reaſons, and reſolving not to importune his daughter upon that ſubject any more, they lived for ſome months in a perfect tranquillity; to which an illneſs the marquis was ſeized with, and which was from the firſt thought to be dangerous, gave a ſad interruption.

Arabella's extreme tenderneſs upon this occaſion, her anxious ſolicitude, her pious cares, and never-ceaſing attendance at the bedſide of her ſick father, were ſo many new charms, that engaged the affection of Glanville more ſtrongly. As the marquis's indiſpoſition increaſed, ſo did her care and aſſiduity: ſhe would not allow any one to give him any thing but herſelf; bore all the pettiſh humours of a ſick man with a ſurprizing ſweetneſs and patience; watched whole nights ſucceſſively by his bedſide; and when, at his importunity, ſhe conſented to take any reſt, it was only upon a couch in his chamber, from whence no intreaties could make her remove. Mr. Glanville partook with her in theſe fatigues; and by his care of her father, and tenderneſs for her, confirmed her in the eſteem ſhe had entertained of him.

The marquis, who had ſtruggled with the violence of his diſtemper for a fortnight, died on the fifteenth day in the arms of Arabella, who received his laſt looks; his eyes never removing themſelves from her face, till they were cloſed by death. Her ſpirits, which the deſire ſhe had of being uſeful to him, had alone ſupported, now failed her at once; and ſhe fell upon the bed, without ſenſe or motion, as ſoon as ſhe ſaw him expire.

Mr. Glanville, who was kneeling on the other ſide, and had been holding one of his uncle's hands, ſtarted up in the moſt terrible conſternation, and, ſeeing the condition ſhe was in, flew to her relief; her women, while he ſupported her, uſed all the endeavours they could think of to recover her; but ſhe continued ſo long in her ſwoon, that they apprehended ſhe was dead; and Glanville was reſigning himſelf up to the moſt bitter ſorrow, when ſhe opened her eyes; but it was only to cloſe them again. Her faintings continued the whole day; and the phyſicians declaring ſhe was in great danger, from her extreme weakneſs, ſhe was carried to bed in a condition that ſeemed to promiſe very little hopes of her life.

The care of the marquis's funeral devolving upon Mr. Glanville, he ſent a meſſenger expreſs for his father, who was appointed guardian to Lady Bella; the marquis having firſt aſked her if ſhe was willing it ſhould be ſo. This gentleman arrived time enough to be witneſs of that ſad ceremony, which

was

was performed with a magnificence ſuitable to the birth and fortune of the marquis.

Lady Bella kept her bed ſeveral days, and her life was thought to be in danger; but her youth, and the ſtrength of her conſtitution, overcame her diſeaſe; and, when ſhe was ſo well recovered as to be able to admit of a viſit from her uncle, Mr. Glanville ſent for permiſſion to introduce him: the afflicted Arabella granted his requeſt; but, being then more indiſpoſed than uſual, ſhe intreated they would defer their viſit for an hour or two, which they complied with; and returning at the appointed time, were conducted into her dreſſing-room by Lucy, who informed them her lady was juſt fallen into a ſlumber.

Mr. Glanville, who had not ſeen her for ſome days, expected her waking with great impatience; and pleaſed himſelf with deſcribing her, with a lover's fondneſs, to his father, when the ſound of her voice in the next room interrupted him.

CHAP. III.

WHICH TREATS OF A CONSOLATORY VISIT, AND OTHER GRAVE MATTERS.

ARABELLA, being then awaked from her ſlumber, was indulging her grief by complaints, which her women were ſo uſed to hear, that they never offered to diſturb her. 'Mercileſs fate!' ſaid ſhe, in the moſt moving tone imaginable, 'cruel deſtiny! that, not contented with having deprived my infancy of the ſoft cares, and tender indulgences, of a mother's fondneſs, has robbed me of the only parent I had left, and expoſed me, at theſe early years, to the grief of loſing him who was not only my father, but my friend, and protector of my youth!'

Then, pauſing a moment, ſhe renewed her complaints with a deep ſigh: 'Dear relicks of the beſt of fathers!' purſued ſhe, 'why was it not permitted me to bathe you with my tears? Why were thoſe ſacred remains of him, from whom I drew my life, ſnatched from my eyes, ere they had poured their tribute of ſorrow over them?—Ah, pitileſs women!' ſaid ſhe to her attendants, 'you prevented me from performing the laſt pious rites to my dear father! You, by your cruel care, hindered me from eaſing my ſad heart, by paying him the laſt duties he could receive from me! Pardon, O dear and ſacred ſhade of my loved father! pardon this unwilling neglect of thy afflicted child, who, to the laſt moment of her wretched life, will bewail thy loſs!'

Here ſhe ceaſed ſpeaking; and Mr. Glanville, whom this ſoliloquy had much leſs confounded than his father, was preparing to go in, and comfort her; when the old gentleman ſtopping him with a look of great concern, 'My niece is certainly much worſe than we apprehend,' ſaid he. 'She is in a delirium. Our preſence may, perhaps, diſcompoſe her too much.'

'No, Sir,' replied Glanville, extremely confuſed at this ſuſpicion; 'my couſin is not ſo bad as you ſuppoſe: it is common enough for people in any great affliction to eaſe themſelves by complaints.'

'But theſe,' replied the knight, 'are the ſtrangeſt complaints I ever heard, and ſavour ſo much of phrenzy, that I am perſuaded her head is not quite right.'

Glanville was going to reply, when Lucy, entering, told him her lady had ordered their admiſſion: upon which they followed her into Arabella's chamber, who was lying negligently upon her bed.

Her deep mourning, and the black gauze, which covered part of her fair face, was ſo advantageous to her ſhape and complexion, that Sir Charles, who had not ſeen her ſince ſhe grew up, was ſtruck with an extreme ſurprize at her beauty, while his ſon was gazing on her ſo paſſionately, that he never thought of introducing his father to her, who contemplated her with as much admiration as his ſon, though with leſs paſſion.

Arabella, riſing from her bed, ſaluted her uncle with a grace that wholly charmed him; and turning to receive Mr. Glanville, ſhe burſt into tears at the remembrance of his having aſſiſted her in her laſt attendance upon her father. 'Alas, Sir!' ſaid ſhe, 'when we ſaw each other laſt, we were both engaged in a very melancholy office:

'had

'had it pleased Heaven to have spared 'my father, he would, doubtless, have 'been extremely sensible of your ge- 'nerous cares; nor shall you have any 'reason to accuse me of ingratitude, 'since I shall always acknowledge 'your kindness as I ought.'

'If you think you owe me any obli- 'gation,' returned Glanville, 'pay me, 'dearest cousin, by moderating your 'sorrow: indeed, you suffer yourself 'to sink too much under an affliction 'which is impossible to be remedied.'

'Alas!' answered Arabella, 'my 'grief is very slight, compared to that 'of many others upon the death of 'their relations. The great Syfigam- 'bis, who, questionless, wanted nei- 'ther fortitude nor courage, upon the 'news of her grand-daughter's death, 'wrapt herself up in her veil; and, 'resolving never more to behold the 'light, waited for death in that pos- 'ture.

'Menecrates, upon the loss of his 'wife, built a magnificent tomb for 'her; and, shutting himself up in it, 'resolved to pass away the remainder 'of his life with her ashes. These, 'indeed, were glorious effects of piety 'and affection, and unfeigned signs 'of an excessive sorrow: what are the 'few tears I shed, to such illustrious 'instances of grief and affection as 'these?'

Glanville, finding his cousin upon this strain, blushed extremely, and would have changed the subject; but the old gentleman, who had never heard of these two persons she mentioned, who expressed their sorrow for their losses in so strange a manner, was surprized at it, and was resolved to know more about them.

'Pray, niece,' said he, 'were you 'acquainted with these people, who 'could not submit to the dispensation 'of Providence, but, as one may say, 'flew in the face of Heaven by their 'impatience?'

'I am very well acquainted with 'their history,' resumed Arabella; 'and I can assure you, they were both 'very admirable persons.'

'Oh! Oh! their history!' interrupt- ed the knight. 'What, I warrant 'you, they are to be found in the Fairy 'Tales, and those sort of books! Well, 'I never could like such romances, 'not I; for they only spoil youth, and 'put strange notions into their heads.'

'I am sorry,' resumed Arabella, blushing with anger, 'that we are like 'to differ in opinion upon so important 'a point.'

'Truly, niece,' said Sir Charles, 'if we never differ in any thing else, I 'shall be very easy about this slight 'matter; though I think a young la- 'dy of your fine sense (for my son 'praises you to the skies for your *wit*) 'should not be so fond of such ridi- 'culous nonsense as these story-books 'are filled with.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' resumed Ara- bella, 'all the respect I owe you can- 'not hinder me from telling you, that 'I take it extremely ill you should, 'in my presence, rail at the finest pro- 'ductions in the world. I think we 'are infinitely obliged to these authors, 'who have, in so sublime a stile, de- 'livered down to posterity the heroick 'actions of the bravest men, and most 'virtuous of women. But for the 'inimitable pen of the famous Scudery, 'we had been ignorant of the lives of 'many great and illustrious persons: 'the warlike actions of Oroondates, 'Aronces, Juba, and the renowned 'Artaban, had, haply, never been 'talked of in our age; and those fair 'and chaste ladies, who were the ob- 'jects of their pure and constant pas- 'sions, had still been buried in obscu- 'rity; and neither their divine beau- 'ties, or singular virtue, been the 'subject of our admiration and praise. 'But for the famous Scudery, we had 'not known the true cause of that 'action of Clelia's, for which the se- 'nate decreed her a statue; namely, 'her casting herself, with an unparal- 'leled courage, into the Tyber, a deep 'and rapid river, as you must certainly 'know, and swimming to the other 'side. It was not, as the Roman histo- 'rians falsely report, a stratagem to 'recover herself, and the other hostages, 'from the power of Porsena; it was 'to preserve her honour from violation 'by the impious Sextus, who was in 'the camp. But for Scudery, we had 'still thought the inimitable poetess 'Sappho to be a loose wanton, whose 'verses breathed nothing but unchaste 'and irregular fires: on the contrary, 'she was so remarkably chaste, that she

'would never even consent to marry; 'but, loving Phaon, only with a pla-'tonick paſſion, obliged him to re-'ſtrain his deſires within the compaſs 'of a brother's affection. Number-'leſs are the miſtakes he has cleared 'up of this kind; and I queſtion, if 'any other hiſtorian but himſelf, knew 'that Cleopatra was really married to 'Julius Cæſar; or that Cæſario, her 'ſon by this marriage, was not mur-'dered, as was ſuppoſed, by the order 'of Auguſtus, but married the fair 'Queen of Ethiopia, in whoſe domi-'nions he took refuge. The prodi-'gious acts of valour, which he has re-'counted of thoſe accompliſhed princes, 'have never been equalled by the he-'roes of either the Greek or Roman 'hiſtorians; how poor and inſignifi-'cant are the actions of their warriors 'to Scudery's, where one of thoſe ad-'mirable heroes would put whole ar-'mies into terror, and with his ſingle 'arm oppoſe a legion!'

'Indeed, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, no longer able to forbear interrupting her, 'theſe are all very improbable 'tales. I remember, when I was a 'boy, I was very fond of reading the 'hiſtory of Jack the Giant Killer, and 'Tom Thumb; and theſe ſtories ſo 'filled my head, that I really thought 'one of thoſe little fellows killed men 'an hundred feet high; and that the 'other, after a great many ſurprizing 'exploits, was ſwallowed up by a 'cow.'

'You was very young, Sir, you 'ſay,' interrupted Arabella, tartly, 'when thoſe ſtories gained your be-'lief; however, your judgment was 'certainly younger, if you ever be-'lieved them at all; for as credulous as 'you are pleaſed to think me, I ſhould 'never, at any age, have been per-'ſuaded ſuch things could have hap-'pened.'

'My father, Madam,' ſaid Glan-ville, who was ſtrangely confuſed all this time, 'bore arms in his youth; 'and ſoldiers, you know, never trou-ble themſelves much with reading.'

'Has my uncle been a ſoldier,' ſaid Arabella, 'and does he hold in con-'tempt the actions of the braveſt ſol-'diers in the world?'

'The ſoldiers you ſpeak of, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'were, indeed, the 'braveſt ſoldiers in the world; for I 'don't believe they ever had their 'equals.'

'And yet, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'there 'are a great number of ſuch ſoldiers 'to be found in Scudery.'

'Indeed, my dear niece,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'they are to be found no-'where elſe, except in your imagina-'tion, which, I am ſorry to ſee, is filled 'with ſuch *whimſies*.'

'If you mean this to affront me, 'Sir,' reſumed Arabella, hardly able to forbear tears, 'I know how far, as 'my uncle, I ought to bear with you: 'but methinks it is highly unkind to 'aggravate my ſorrows by ſuch cruel 'jeſts; and ſince I am not in an hu-'mour to ſuffer them, don't take it ill, 'if I intreat you to leave me to my-'ſelf.'

Mr. Glanville, who knew nothing pleaſed his couſin ſo much as paying an exact obedience to her commands, roſe up immediately; and, bowing reſpect-fully to her, aſked his father if he ſhould attend him into the gardens.

The baronet, who thought Arabella's behaviour bordered a good deal upon rudeneſs, took his leave with ſome ſigns of diſpleaſure upon his countenance; and, notwithſtanding all his ſon could ſay in excuſe for her, he was extremely offended.

'What,' ſaid he to Mr. Glanville, 'does ſhe ſo little underſtand the reſpect 'that is due to me as her uncle, that 'ſhe ſo peremptorily deſired me to 'leave her room? My brother was to 'blame to take ſo little care of her 'education; ſhe is quite a ruſtick!'

'Ah! don't wrong your judgment 'ſo much, Sir,' ſaid Glanville; 'my 'couſin has as little of the ruſtick as 'if ſhe had paſſed all her life in a 'court: her fine ſenſe, and the native 'elegance of her manners, give an in-'imitable grace to her behaviour; and 'as much exceed the ſtudied politeneſs 'of other ladies I have converſed with, 'as the beauties of her perſon do all 'I have ever ſeen.'

'She is very handſome, I confeſs,' returned Sir Charles; 'but I cannot 'think ſo well of her *wit* as you do; 'for methinks ſhe talks very oddly, 'and has the ſtrangeſt conceits! Who, 'but herſelf, would think it probable 'that one man could put a whole army 'to flight; or commend a fooliſh fel-'low for living in a tomb, becauſe his

'wife

'wife was buried in it? Fie! fie!—'these are silly and extravagant no-'tions, and will make her appear very 'ridiculous.'

Mr. Glanville was so sensible of the justness of this remark, that he could not help sighing; which his father observing, told him, that, since she was to be his wife, it was his business to produce a reformation in her; 'For,' added he, 'notwithstanding the im-'mense fortune she will bring you, I 'should be sorry to have a daughter-'in-law for whom I should blush as 'often as she opened her mouth.'

'I assure you, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, 'I have but very little hopes that 'I shall be so happy as to have my 'cousin for a wife; for though it was 'my uncle's command I should make 'my addresses to her, she received me 'so ill, as a lover, that I have never 'dared to talk to her upon that subject 'since.'

'And pray,' resumed Sir Charles, 'upon what terms are you at present?'

'While I seem to pretend nothing 'to her as a lover,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'she is very obliging, and we 'live in great harmony together; but, 'I am persuaded, if I exceed the bounds 'of friendship in my professions, she 'will treat me extremely ill.'

'But,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'when she shall know that her father 'has bequeathed you one third of his 'estate, provided she don't marry you, 'tis probable her mind may change; 'and you may depend upon it, since 'your heart is so much set upon her, 'that, as I am her gurdian, I shall 'press her to perform the marquis's 'will.'

'Ah! Sir,' resumed Mr. Glanville, 'never attempt to lay any constraint 'upon my cousin in an affair of this 'nature: permit me to tell you, it 'would be an abuse of the marquis's 'generous confidence, and what I 'would never submit to.'

'Nay, nay,' said the old gentleman, 'you have no reason to fear any com-'pulsion from me: though her father 'has left me her guardian, till she is 'of age, yet it is with such restriction, 'that my niece is quite her own mis-'tress in that respect; for though she 'is directed to consult me in her choice 'of an husband, yet my consent is not 'absolutely necessary. The marquis 'has certainly had a great opinion of 'his daughter's prudence; and I hope 'she will prove herself worthy of it by 'her conduct.'

Mr. Glanville was so taken up with his reflections upon the state of his affairs, that he made but little reply; and, as soon as he had disengaged himself, retired to his chamber, to be at more liberty to indulge his meditations. As he could not flatter himself with having made any impression upon the heart of Arabella, he foresaw a thousand inconveniences from the death of the marquis; for, besides that he lost a powerful mediator with his cousin, he feared that, when she appeared in the world, her beauty and fortune would attract a crowd of admirers, among whom, it was probable, she would find some one more agreeable to her taste than himself. As he loved her with great tenderness, this thought made him extremely uneasy; and he would sometimes wish the marquis had laid a stronger injunction upon her in his will to marry him; and regretted the little power his father had over her: but he was too generous to dwell long upon these thoughts, and contented himself with resolving to do all that was honourable to obtain her, without seeking for any assistance from unjustifiable methods.

CHAP. IV.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME COMMON OCCURRENCES, BUT PLACED IN A NEW LIGHT.

ARABELLA, in a few days, leaving her chamber, had so many opportunities of charming her uncle by her conversation, which, when it did not turn upon any incident in her romances, was perfectly fine, easy, and entertaining, that he declared he should quit the castle with great regret; and endeavoured to persuade her to accompany him to town: but Arabella, who was determined to pass the year of her mourning in the retirement she had always lived in, absolutely refused, strong as her curiosity was to see London.

Mr. Glanville secretly rejoiced at this resolution, though he seemed desirous of making her change it; but she was

unalterable; and, therefore, the baronet did not think proper to preſs her any more.

Her father's will being read to her, ſhe ſeemed extremely pleaſed with the article in favour of Mr. Glanville, wiſhing him joy of the eſtate that was bequeathed to him, with a moſt inchanting ſweetneſs.

Mr. Glanville ſighed, and caſt his eyes on the ground, as he returned her compliment, with a very low bow; and Sir Charles, obſerving his confuſion, told Arabella, that he thought it was a very bad omen for his ſon, to wiſh him joy of an eſtate which he could not come to the poſſeſſion of but by a very great misfortune.

Arabella, underſtanding his meaning, bluſhed; and, willing to change the diſcourſe, proceeded to conſult her uncle upon the regulation of her houſe. Beſides the legacies her father had bequeathed to his ſervants, thoſe who were more immediately about his perſon ſhe deſired might have their ſalaries continued to them: ſhe made no other alteration, than diſcharging theſe attendants, retaining all the others; and ſubmitting to her uncle the management of her eſtates, receiving the allowance he thought proper to aſſign her, till ſhe was of age, of which ſhe wanted three years.

Every thing being ſettled, Sir Charles prepared to return to town. Mr. Glanville, who deſired nothing ſo much as to ſtay ſome time longer with his couſin in her ſolitude, got his father to intreat that favour for him of Arabella: but ſhe repreſented to her uncle the impropriety of a young gentleman's ſtaying with her, in her houſe, now her father was dead, in a manner ſo genteel and convincing, that Sir Charles could preſs it no farther; and all that Mr. Glanville could obtain, was a permiſſion to viſit her ſome time after, provided he could prevail upon his ſiſter, Miſs Charlotte Glanville, to accompany him.

The day of their departure being come, Sir Charles took his leave of his charming niece, with many expreſſions of eſteem and affection; and Mr. Glanville appeared ſo concerned, that Arabella could not help obſerving it, and bade him adieu with great ſweetneſs.

When they were gone, ſhe found her time hung heavy upon her hands; her father was continually in her thoughts, and made her extremely melancholy: ſhe recollected the many agreeable converſations ſhe had had with Glanville, and wiſhed it had been conſiſtent with decency to have detained him. Her books being the only amuſement ſhe had left, ſhe applied herſelf to reading with more eagerneſs than ever; but, notwithſtanding the delight ſhe took in this employment, ſhe had ſo many hours of ſolitude and melancholy to indulge the remembrance of her father in, that ſhe was very far from being happy.

As ſhe wiſhed for nothing more paſſionately than an agreeable companion of her own ſex and rank, an accident threw a perſon in her way, who for ſome days afforded her a little amuſement. Stepping one day out of her coach, to go into church, ſhe ſaw a young lady enter, accompanied with a middle-aged woman, who ſeemed to be an attendant. As Arabella had never ſeen any one, above the rank of a gentleman-farmer's daughter, in this church, her attention was immediately engaged by the appearance of this ſtranger, who was very magnificently dreſſed. Though ſhe did not ſeem to be more than eighteen years of age, her ſtature was above the ordinary ſize of women; and, being rather too plump to be delicate, her mien was ſo majeſtick, and ſuch an air of grandeur was diffuſed over her whole perſon, joined to the charms of a very lovely face, that Arabella could hardly help thinking ſhe ſaw the beautiful Candace before her, who, by Scudery's deſcription, very much reſembled this fair one.

Arabella, having heedfully obſerved her looks, thought ſhe ſaw a great appearance of melancholy in her eyes, which filled her with a generous concern for the misfortunes of ſo admirable a perſon; but the ſervice beginning, ſhe was not at liberty to indulge her reflections upon this occaſion, as ſhe never ſuffered any thoughts, but thoſe of religion, to intrude upon her mind during theſe pious rites.

As ſhe was going out of church, ſhe obſerved the young lady, attended only with the woman who came with her, preparing to walk home, and therefore ſtept forward, and ſaluting her with a grace peculiar to herſelf, intreated her to come into her coach, and give her the pleaſure of ſetting her down at her

her own houſe. So obliging an offer, from a perſon of Arabella's rank, could not fail of being received with great reſpect by the young lady, who was not ignorant of all the forms of good-breeding, and, accepting her invitation, ſhe ſtepped into the coach; Arabella obliging her woman to come in alſo, for whom, as ſhe had that day only Lucy along with her, there was room enough.

As they were going home, Arabella, who longed to be better acquainted, intreated the fair ſtranger, as ſhe called her, to go to the caſtle, and ſpend the day with her; and ſhe conſenting, they paſſed by the houſe where ſhe lodged, and alighted at the caſtle, where Arabella welcomed her with the moſt obliging expreſſions of civility and reſpect. The young lady, though perfectly verſed in the modes of town-breeding, and *nothing-meaning* ceremony, was at a loſs how to make proper returns to the civilities of Arabella. The native elegance and ſimplicity of her manners were accompanied with ſo much real benevolence of heart, ſuch inſinuating tenderneſs, and graces ſo irreſiſtible, that ſhe was quite oppreſſed with them; and having ſpent moſt of her time between her toilet and quadrille, was ſo little qualified for partaking a converſation ſo refined as Arabella's, that her diſcourſe appeared quite tedious to her, ſince it was neither upon faſhions, aſſemblies, cards, or ſcandal.

Her ſilence, and that abſence of mind which ſhe betrayed, made Arabella conclude ſhe was under ſome very great affliction; and to amuſe her after dinner, led her into the gardens, ſuppoſing a perſon whoſe uneaſineſs, as ſhe did not doubt, proceeded from love, would be pleaſed with the ſight of groves and ſtreams, and be tempted to diſcloſe her misfortunes while they wandered in that agreeable privacy. In this, however, ſhe was deceived; for though the young lady ſighed ſeveral times, yet, when ſhe did ſpeak, it was only of indifferent things, and not at all in the manner of an afflicted heroine.

After obſerving upon a thouſand trifles, ſhe told Arabella at laſt, to whom ſhe was deſirous of making known her alliance to quality, that theſe gardens were extremely like thoſe of her father's-in-law, the Duke of ——, at ——.

At this intimation, ſhe expected Arabella would be extremely ſurprized; but that lady, whoſe thoughts were always familiarized to objects of grandeur, and would not have been aſtoniſhed if ſhe had underſtood her gueſt was the daughter of a king, appeared ſo little moved, that the lady was piqued by her indifference; and, after a few moment's ſilence, began to mention going away.

Arabella, who was deſirous of retaining her a few days, intreated her ſo obligingly to favour her with her company for ſome time in her ſolitude, that the other could not refuſe; and diſpatching her woman to the houſe where ſhe lodged, to inform them of her ſtay at the caſtle, would have diſpenſed with her coming again to attend her, had not Arabella inſiſted upon the contrary.

The reſerve which the daughter-in-law of the Duke of —— ſtill continued to maintain, notwithſtanding the repeated expreſſions of friendſhip Arabella uſed to her, increaſed her curioſity to know her adventures, which ſhe was extremely ſurprized ſhe had never offered to relate; but attributing her ſilence upon this head to her modeſty, ſhe was reſolved, as was the cuſtom in thoſe caſes, to oblige her woman, who, ſhe preſumed, was her confidante, to relate her lady's hiſtory to her; and ſending for this perſon one day, when ſhe was alone, to attend her in her cloſet, ſhe gave orders to her women, if the fair ſtranger came to enquire for her, to ſay ſhe was then buſy, but would wait on her as ſoon as poſſible.

After this caution, ſhe ordered Mrs. Morris to be admitted; and, obliging her to ſit down, told her ſhe ſent for her in order to hear from her the hiſtory of her lady's life, which ſhe was extremely deſirous of knowing.

Mrs. Morris, who was a perſon of ſenſe, and had ſeen the world, was extremely ſurprized at this requeſt of Arabella, which was quite contrary to the laws of good-breeding, and, as ſhe thought, betrayed a great deal of impertinent curioſity: ſhe could not tell how to account for the free manner in which ſhe deſired her to give up her lady's ſecrets, which, indeed, were not of a nature to be told; and appeared ſo much confuſed, that Arabella took notice of it; and ſuppoſing it was her baſhfulneſs which cauſed her embar-

raſſment,

raſſment, ſhe endeavoured to re-aſſure her by the moſt affable behaviour imaginable.

Mrs. Morris, who was not capable of much fidelity for her lady, being but lately taken into her ſervice, and not extremely fond of her, thought ſhe had now a fine opportunity of recommending herſelf to Arabella, by telling her all ſhe knew of Miſs Groves, for that was her name; and therefore told her, ſince ſhe was pleaſed to command it, ſhe would give her what account ſhe was able of her lady: but intreated her to be ſecret, becauſe it was of great conſequence to her, that her affairs ſhould not be known.

'I always imagined,' ſaid Arabella, 'that your beautiful miſtreſs had ſome 'particular reaſon for not making her-'ſelf known, and for coming in this 'private manner into this part of the 'country: you may aſſure yourſelf, 'therefore, that I will protect her as 'far as I am able, and offer her all the 'aſſiſtance in my power to give her; 'therefore you may acquaint me with 'her adventures, without being appre-'henſive of a diſcovery that would be 'prejudicial to her.'

Mrs. Morris, who had been much better pleaſed with the aſſurances of a reward for the intelligence ſhe was going to give her, looked a little fooliſh at theſe fine promiſes, in which ſhe had no ſhare; and Arabella, ſuppoſing ſhe was endeavouring to recollect all the paſſages of her lady's life, told her ſhe need not give herſelf the trouble to acquaint her with any thing that paſſed during the infancy of her lady, but proceed to acquaint her with matters of greater importance: 'And ſince,' ſaid ſhe, 'you have, no doubt, been 'moſt favoured with her confidence, 'you will do me a pleaſure to deſcribe 'to me, exactly, all the thoughts of 'her ſoul, as ſhe has communicated 'them to you, that I may the better 'comprehend her hiſtory.'

CHAP. V.

THE HISTORY OF MISS GROVES, INTERSPERSED WITH SOME VERY CURIOUS OBSERVATIONS.

'THOUGH, Madam,' ſaid Mrs. Morris, 'I have not been long 'in Miſs Groves's ſervice, yet I know 'a great many things by the means of 'her former woman, who told them 'to me, though my lady thinks I am 'ignorant of them; and I know that 'this is her ſecond trip into the coun-'try.'

'Pray,' interrupted Arabella, 'do 'me the favour to relate things metho-'dically: of what uſe is it to me to 'know that this is your lady's ſecond 'trip, as you call it, into the country, 'if I know not the occaſion of it?— 'Therefore begin with informing me, 'who were the parents of this admira-'ble young perſon.'

'Her father, Madam,' ſaid Mrs. Morris, 'was a merchant; and at his 'death left her a large fortune, and ſo 'conſiderable a jointure to his wife, 'that the Duke of ——, being then a 'widower, was tempted to make his 'addreſſes to her. Mrs. Groves was 'one of the proudeſt women in the 'world; and this offer flattering her 'ambition more than ever ſhe had rea-'ſon to expect, ſhe married the duke 'after a very ſhort courtſhip, and car-'ried Miſs Groves down with her to '——, where the duke had a fine ſeat, 'and where ſhe was received by his 'grace's daughters, who were much 'about her own age, with great civility. 'Miſs Groves, Madam, was then about 'twelve years old, and was educated 'with the duke's daughters, who in 'a little time became quite diſguſted 'with their new ſiſter; for Miſs Groves, 'who inherited her mother's pride, 'though not her underſtanding, in all 'things affected an equality with thoſe 'young ladies, who, conſcious of the 'ſuperiority of their birth, could but 'ill bear with her inſolence and pre-'ſumption. As they grew older, the 'difference of their inclinations cauſed 'perpetual quarrels amongſt them; for 'his grace's daughters were ſerious, 'reſerved, and pious. Miſs Groves af-'fected noiſy mirth, was a great romp, 'and delighted in maſculine exerciſes.

'The dutcheſs was often reflected on 'for ſuffering her daughter, without 'any other company than two or three 'ſervants, to ſpend great part of the 'day in riding about the country, 'leaping over hedges and ditches, ex-'poſing her fair face to the injuries of 'the ſun and wind; and, by thoſe 'coarſe exerciſes, contracting a maſ-'culine and robuſt air not becoming

'her

'her ſex and tender years: yet ſhe 'could not be prevailed upon to re-'ſtrain her from this diverſion, till it 'was reported, ſhe had liſtened to the 'addreſſes of a young ſportſman, who 'uſed to mix in her train, when ſhe 'went upon thoſe rambles, and pro-'cured frequent opportunities of con-'verſing with her.'

'There is a great difference,' interrupted Arabella, 'in ſuffering ad-'dreſſes, and being betrayed into an 'involuntary hearing of them, and 'this laſt, I conceive to have been the 'caſe of your lady; for it is not very 'probable ſhe would ſo far forget 'what ſhe owed to her own glory, as 'to be induced to liſten quietly to diſ-'courſes like thoſe you mention.'

'However, Madam,' reſumed Mrs. Morris, 'the dutcheſs thought it ne-'ceſſary to keep her more at home; 'but even here ſhe was not without 'meeting adventures, and found a 'lover in the perſon who taught her 'to write.'

'That, indeed, was a very notable 'adventure,' ſaid Arabella; 'but it 'is not ſtrange that love ſhould pro-'duce ſuch metamorphoſes; it is not 'very long ago that I heard of a man 'of quality who diſguiſed himſelf in 'a poor habit, and worked in the gar-'dens of a certain nobleman, whoſe 'daughter he was enamoured with: 'theſe things happen every day.'

'The perſon I ſpeak of, Madam,' ſaid Mrs. Morris, 'was never diſ-'covered to be any thing better than 'a writing-maſter; and yet, for all 'that, Miſs was *ſmitten* with his fine 'perſon, and was taking meaſures to 'run away with him, when the in-'trigue was diſcovered, the lover diſ-'miſſed, and the young lady, whoſe 'faulty conduct had drawn upon her 'her mother's diſlike, was ſent up to 'London, and allowed to be her own 'miſtreſs at ſixteen; to which unpar-'donable neglect of her mother ſhe 'owes the misfortunes that have ſince 'befallen her.'

'Whatever may be the common 'opinion of this matter,' interrupted Arabella again, 'I am perſuaded the 'writing-maſter, as you call him, was 'ſome perſon of quality, who made 'uſe of that device to get acceſs to his 'beautiful miſtreſs. Love is inge-'nious in artifices; who would have 'thought, that, under the name of 'Alcippus, a ſimple attendant of the 'fair Artemiſa princeſs of Armenia, 'the gallant Alexander ſon of the 'great and unfortunate Antony, by 'Queen Cleopatra, was concealed, 'who took upon himſelf that mean 'condition for the ſake of ſeeing his 'adored princeſs? Yet the contrivance 'of Orontes, Prince of the Maſſage-'tes, was far more ingenious, and 'even dangerous; for this valiant and 'young prince happening to ſee the 'picture of the beautiful Thaleſtris, 'daughter of the Queen of the Ama-'zons, he fell paſſionately in love with 'her; and, knowing that the entrance 'into that country was forbid to men, 'he dreſſed himſelf in women's ap-'parel; and, finding means to be in-'troduced to the queen, and her fair 'daughter, whoſe amity he gained by 'ſome very ſingular ſervices in the 'wars, he lived ſeveral years undiſ-'covered in their court; I ſee, there-'fore, no reaſon to the contrary, but 'that this writing-maſter might have 'been ſome illuſtrious perſon, whom 'love had diſguiſed; and, I am per-'ſuaded,' added ſhe, ſmiling, 'that I 'ſhall hear more of him anon, in a 'very different character.'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Mrs. Morris, whom this ſpeech of Arabella had extremely ſurprized, 'I never heard 'any thing more about him, than what 'I have related; and, for what I 'know, he continues ſtill to teach writ-'ing; for I don't ſuppoſe the dutcheſs's 'diſpleaſure could affect him.'

'How is it poſſible,' ſaid Arabella, 'that you can ſuppoſe ſuch an offence 'to probability? In my opinion it is 'much more likely, that this unfor-'tunate lover is dead through deſpair; 'or, perhaps, wandering over the world 'in ſearch of that fair-one who was 'ſnatched from his hopes.'

'If it was his deſign to ſeek for her, 'Madam,' reſumed Mrs. Morris, 'he 'need not have gone far, ſince ſhe was 'only ſent to London, whither he 'might eaſily have followed her.'

'There is no accounting for theſe 'things,' ſaid Arabella; 'perhaps he 'has been impoſed upon, and made 'to believe, that it was ſhe herſelf that 'baniſhed him from her preſence: it 'is probable, too, that he was jealous, 'and thought ſhe preferred ſome one

'of

'of his rivals to him. Jealouſy is in-
'ſeparable from true love; and the
'ſlighteſt matters imaginable will oc-
'caſion it; and, what is ſtill more
'wonderful, this paſſion creates the
'greateſt diſorders in the moſt ſenſible
'and delicate hearts. Never was there
'a more refined and faithful paſſion
'than that of the renowned Artamenes
'for Mandana; and yet this prince
'was driven almoſt to diſtraction by a
'ſmile, which he fancied he ſaw in
'the face of his divine miſtreſs, at a
'time when ſhe had ſome reaſon to
'believe he was dead; and he was ſo
'tranſported with grief and rage, that,
'though he was a priſoner in his ene-
'my's camp, where the knowledge of
'his quality would have procured him
'certain death, yet he determined to
'hazard all things for the ſake of pre-
'ſenting himſelf before Mandana, and
'upbraiding her with her infidelity;
'when, in reality, nothing was far-
'ther from the thoughts of that fair
'and virtuous princeſs, than the light-
'neſs he accuſed her of; ſo that, as I
'ſaid before, it is not at all to be
'wondered at, if this diſguiſed lover
'of your lady was driven to deſpair
'by ſuſpicions as groundleſs, perhaps,
'as thoſe of Artamenes, yet not the
'leſs cruel and tormenting.'

Mrs. Morris, finding Arabella held her peace at theſe words, went on with her hiſtory in this manner—'Miſs 'Groves, Madam, being directed by 'her woman in all things, took up 'her lodgings in her father's houſe, 'who was a broken tradeſman, and 'obliged to keep himſelf concealed for 'fear of his creditors; here ſhe formed 'her equipage, which conſiſted of a 'chair, one footman, a cook, and her 'woman: as ſhe was indulged with 'the command of what money ſhe 'pleaſed, her extravagance was bound-'leſs; ſhe laviſhed away large ſums 'at gaming, which was her favourite 'diverſion; kept ſuch a number of 'different animals for favourites, that 'their maintenance amounted to a con-'ſiderable ſum every year; her wo-'man's whole family were ſupported 'at her expence; and, as ſhe fre-'quented all publick places, and ſur-'paſſed ladies of the firſt quality in 'finery, her dreſs alone conſumed 'great part of her income. I need 'not tell you, Madam, that my lady 'was a celebrated beauty; you have 'yourſelf been pleaſed to ſay, that ſhe 'is very handſome. When ſhe firſt 'appeared at court, her beauty and 'the uncommon dignity of her perſon, 'at ſuch early years, made her the 'object of general admiration. The 'king was particularly ſtruck with 'her; and declared to thoſe about 'him, that Miſs Groves was the fineſt 'woman at court. The ladies, how-'ever, found means to explain away 'all that was flattering in this diſ-'tinction; they ſaid, Miſs Groves 'was clumſy; and it was her reſem-'blance to the *unwieldy German* la-'dies that made her ſo much admired 'by his majeſty. Her pride, and the 'quality-airs ſhe affected, were the 'ſubject of great ridicule to thoſe that 'envied her charms; ſome cenſures 'were maliciouſly caſt on her birth; 'for, as ſhe was always ſtiled the 'Dutcheſs of ——'s daughter, a cuſ-'tom ſhe introduced herſelf, ſhe ſeem-'ed to diſclaim all title to a legal 'father. Miſs Groves, as univerſally 'admired as ſhe was, yet made but 'very few particular conqueſts. Her 'fortune was known to be very con-'ſiderable, and her mother's jointure 'was to deſcend to her after her death: 'yet there was no gentleman who 'would venture upon a wife of Miſs 'Groves's taſte for expence, as very 'few eſtates, *to which ſhe could pre-'tend*, would ſupport her extrava-'gance. The Honourable Mr. L——, 'brother to the Earl of ——, was the 'only one, amidſt a crowd of ad-'mirers, who made any particular ad-'dreſs to her. This gentleman was 'tolerably handſome, and had the art 'of making himſelf agreeable to the 'ladies by a certain air of ſoftneſs 'and tenderneſs which never failed 'to make ſome impreſſion upon thoſe 'he deſired to deceive.

'Miſs Groves was raviſhed with 'her conqueſt; and boaſted of it ſo 'openly, that people who were ac-'quainted with this gentleman's cha-'racter, foreſeeing her fate, could not 'help pitying her.

'A very few months courtſhip com-'pleated the ruin of poor Miſs Groves: 'ſhe fell a ſacrifice to oaths which had 'been often proſtituted for the ſame 'inhuman purpoſes; and became ſo 'fond of her betrayer, that it was with

'great

'great difficulty he could perſuade her 'not to give him, even in publick, 'the moſt ridiculous proofs of her *ten-derneſs*. Her woman pretends, that 'ſhe was ignorant of this intrigue, 'till Miſs Groves growing big with 'child, it could no longer be conceal-'ed; it was at length agreed, ſhe 'ſhould lie-in at her own lodgings, to 'prevent any ſuſpicions from her re-'treating into the country; but that 'ſcheme was over-ruled by her wo-'man's mother, who adviſed her to 'conceal herſelf in ſome village, not 'far from town, till the affair was 'over.

'Miſs Groves approved of this ſe-'cond propoſal, but took advantage 'of her ſhape, which, being far from 'delicate, would not eaſily diſcover 'any growing bigneſs, to ſtay in town 'as long as ſhe poſſibly could. When 'her removal was neceſſary, ſhe went 'to the lodgings provided for her, a 'few miles diſtant from London: and, 'notwithſtanding the excuſes which 'were framed for this ſudden abſence, 'the true cauſe was more than ſu-'ſpected by ſome buſy people, who in-'duſtriouſly inquired into her affairs.

'Mr. L—— ſaw her but ſeldom 'during her illneſs: the fear of being 'diſcovered was his pretence; but her 'friends eaſily ſaw through this diſ-'guiſe, and were perſuaded Miſs Groves 'was waning in his affections.

'As ſhe had a very ſtrong conſtitu-'tion, ſhe returned to town at the end 'of three weeks: the child was dead, 'and ſhe looked handſomer than ever. 'Mr. L—— continued his viſits; and 'the town to make remarks of them. 'All this time the dutcheſs never trou-'bled herſelf about the conduct of this 'unfortunate young creature; and the 'people ſhe was with had not the good-'neſs to give her any hint of her miſ-'conduct, and the waſte of her for-'tune: on the contrary, they almoſt 'turned her head with their flatteries, 'preyed upon her fortune, and wink-'ed at her irregularities.

'She was now a ſecond time with 'child; her character was pretty ſe-'verely handled by her enemies; Mr. 'L—— began openly to ſlight her; and 'ſhe was ſeveral thouſand pounds in 'debt. The mother and ſiſters of her 'woman, in whoſe houſe ſhe ſtill was, 'were baſe enough to whiſper the fault 'ſhe had been guilty of to all their ac-'quaintances. Her ſtory became ge-'nerally known; ſhe was ſhunned and 'neglected by every body; and even 'Mr. L——, who had been the cauſe 'of her ruin, entirely abandoned her, 'and boaſted openly of the favours he 'had received from her.

'Miſs Groves proteſted to her friends, 'that he had promiſed her marriage; 'but Mr. L—— conſtantly denied it; 'and never ſcrupled to ſay, when he 'was queſtioned about it, that he found 'Miſs Groves too eaſy a conqueſt to 'make any perjury neceſſary. Her 'tenderneſs, however, for this baſe 'man, was ſo great, that ſhe never 'could bear to hear him railled at in 'her preſence; but would quarrel with 'the only friends ſhe had left, if they 'ſaid any thing to his diſadvantage. 'As ſhe was now pretty far advanced 'with child, ſhe would have retired 'into the country; but the bad con-'dition of her affairs made her remo-'val impoſſible: in this extremity ſhe 'had recourſe to her uncle, a rich mer-'chant in the city, who, having taken 'all the neceſſary precautions for his 'own ſecurity, paid Miſs Groves's 'debts, carrying on, in her name, a 'law-ſuit with the dutcheſs, for ſome 'lands, which were to be put into her 'hands when ſhe was of age, and 'which that great lady detained. Miſs 'Groves, being reduced to live upon 'ſomething leſs than an hundred a 'year, quitted London, and came into 'this part of the country, where ſhe 'was received by Mrs. Barnet, one 'of her woman's ſiſters, who is mar-'ried to a country-gentleman of ſome 'fortune; in her houſe ſhe lay-in of a 'girl, which Mr. L—— ſent to de-'mand, and will not be perſuaded to 'inform her how, or in what manner, 'he has diſpoſed of the child.

'Her former woman leaving her, I 'was received in her place, from whom 'I learnt all theſe particulars: and 'Miſs Groves having gained the af-'fections of Mr. Barnet's brother, her 'beauty, and the large fortune which 'ſhe has in reverſion, has induced him, 'notwithſtanding the knowledge of 'her paſt unhappy conduct, to marry 'her. But their marriage is yet a ſe-'cret, Miſs Groves being apprehen-'ſive of her uncle's diſpleaſure for not 'conſulting him in her choice.

'Her husband is gone to London, 'with an intention to acquaint him 'with it; and, when he returns, their 'marriage will be publickly owned.'

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING WHAT A JUDICIOUS READER WILL HARDLY APPROVE.

MRS. Morris ending her narration, Arabella, who had not been able to restrain her tears at some parts of it, thanked her for the trouble she had been at; and assured her of her secrecy: 'Your lady's case,' said she, 'is much to be lamented; and greatly 'resembles the unfortunate Cleopatra's, whom Julius Cæsar privately 'marrying, with a promise to own her 'for his wife when he should be 'peaceable master of the Roman empire, left that great queen big with 'child; and, never intending to perform his promise, suffered her to be 'exposed to the censures the world has 'so freely cast upon her, and which 'she so little deserved.'

Mrs. Morris seeing the favourable light in which Arabella viewed the actions of her *lady*, did not think proper to say any thing to undeceive her; but went out of the closet, not a little mortified at her disappointment; for she saw she was likely to receive nothing for betraying her lady's secrets, from Arabella; who seemed so little sensible of the pleasure of scandal, as to be wholly ignorant of it's nature; and not to know it when it was told her.

Miss Groves, who was just come to Lady Bella's chamber-door, to inquire for her, was surprized to see her woman come out of it; and who, upon meeting her, expressed great confusion. As she was going to ask her some questions concerning her business there, Arabella came out of the closet; and, seeing Miss Groves in her chamber, asked her pardon for staying so long from her.

'I have been listening to your his-'tory,' said she with great frankness, 'which your woman has been 'relating; and I assure you I am ex-'tremely sensible of your misfortunes.'

Miss Groves, at these words, blushed with extreme confusion; and Mrs. Morris turned pale with astonishment and fear. Arabella, not sensible that she had been guilty of any indiscretion, proceeded to make reflections upon some part of her story; which, though they were not at all disadvantageous to that young lady, she received as so many insults; and asked Lady Bella, if she was not ashamed to tamper with a servant to betray the secrets of her mistress.

Arabella, a little surprized at so rude a question, answered, however, with great sweetness; and protested to her, that she would make no ill use of what she had learned of her affairs: 'For, in fine, Madam,' said she, 'do 'you think I am less fit to be trusted 'with your secrets, than the princess 'of the Leontines was with those of 'Clelia; between whom there was no 'greater amity and acquaintance, than 'with us? And you must certainly 'know, that the secrets which that 'admirable person entrusted with Ly-'simena, were of a nature to be more 'dangerous, if revealed, than yours. 'The happiness of Clelia depended 'upon Lysimena's fidelity; and the 'liberty, nay, haply, the life of 'Aronces, would have been in dan-'ger, if she had betrayed them. Though 'I do not intend to arrogate to myself 'the possession of those admirable quali-'ties which adorned the princess of 'the Leontines, yet I will not yield 'to her, or any one else, in generosity 'and fidelity; and if you will be 'pleased to repose as much confidence 'in me, as those illustrious lovers did 'in her, you shall be convinced I will 'labour as earnestly for your interest, 'as that fair princess did for those of 'Aronces and Clelia.'

Miss Groves was so busied in reflecting upon the baseness of her woman in exposing her, that she heard not a word of this fine harangue, (at which Mrs. Morris, notwithstanding the cause she had for uneasiness, could hardly help laughing;) but, assuming some of that haughtiness in her looks, for which she used to be remarkable, she told Lady Bella, that she imputed her impertinent curiosity to her country ignorance, and ill breeding; and she did not doubt but she would be served in her own *kind*, and meet with as bad

fortune

fortune as she had done; and, perhaps, deserve it *worse* that she did; for there are more false men in the world besides Mr. L——; and she was no handsomer than other people.'

Saying this, she flung out of the room, her woman following, leaving Arabella in such confusion at a behaviour of which she had never before had an idea, that for some moments she remained immoveable.

Recollecting herself, at last, and conceiving that civility required she should endeavour to appease this incensed lady, she went down stairs after her; and, stopping her just as she was going out of the house, intreated her to be calm, and suffer her to vindicate herself from the imputation of being impertinently curious to know her affairs.

Miss Groves, quite transported with shame and anger, refused absolutely to stay.

'At least, Madam,' said Arabella; 'stay till my coach can be got ready, 'and don't think of walking home so 'slightly attended.'

This offer was as sullenly answered as the other; and Arabella, finding she was determined to venture home, with no other guard than her woman, who silently followed her, ordered two of her footmen to attend her at a small distance; and to defend her, if there should be occasion.

'For who knows,' says she to Lucy, 'what accident may happen? Some 'one or other of her insolent lovers 'may take this opportunity to carry her 'away; and I should never forgive 'myself for being the cause of such a 'misfortune to her.'

Mrs. Morris having found it easy to reconcile herself to her lady, by assuring her, that Lady Bella was acquainted with great part of her story before; and that what she told her, tended only to justify her conduct, as she might have been convinced by what Lady Bella said; they both went home with a resolution to say nothing of what had passed, with relation to the cause of the disgust Miss Groves had received; but only said, in general, that Lady Bella was the most ridiculous creature in the world, and was so totally ignorant of good-breeding, that it was impossible to converse with her.

CHAP. VII.

WHICH TREATS OF THE OLYMPIC GAMES.

WHILE Arabella was ruminating on the unaccountable behaviour of her new acquaintance, she received a letter from her uncle, informing her (for she had expressly forbid Mr. Glanville to write to her) that his son and daughter intended to set out for her seat in a few days.

This news was received with great satisfaction by Arabella, who hoped to find an agreeable companion in her cousin; and was not so insensible of Mr. Glanville's merit, as not to feel some kind of pleasure at the thought of seeing him again.

This letter was soon followed by the arrival of Mr. Glanville, and his sister; who, upon the sight of Arabella, discovered some appearance of astonishment and chagrin; for, notwithstanding all her brother had told her of her accomplishments, she could not conceive it possible for a young lady, bred up in the country, to be so perfectly elegant and genteel as she found her cousin.

As Miss Charlotte had a large share of coquetry in her composition, and was fond of beauty in none of her own sex but herself, she was sorry to see Lady Bella possessed of so great a share; and, being in hopes her brother had drawn a flattering figure of her cousin, she was extremely disappointed at finding the original so handsome.

Arabella, on the contrary, was highly pleased with Miss Glanville; and, finding her person very agreeable, did not fail to commend her beauty: a sort of complaisance mightily in use among the heroines, who knew not what envy or emulation meant.

Miss Glanville received her praises with great politeness, but could not find in her heart to return them: and, as soon as these compliments were over, Mr. Glanville told Lady Bella, how tedious he had found the short absence she had forced him to, and how great was his satisfaction at seeing her again.

'I shall not dispute the truth of your 'last assertion,' replied Arabella, smiling, 'since I verily believe, you are

'mighty well satisfied at present; but 'I know not how you will make it 'appear, that an absence, which you 'allow to be short, has seemed so tedi-'ous to you; for this is a manifest 'contradiction: however,' pursued she, preventing his reply, 'you look so 'well, and so much at ease, that I am 'apt to believe, absence has agreed very 'well with you.'

'And yet I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, interrupting her, 'that I have suffered more uneasiness 'during this absence, than I fear you 'will permit me to tell you.'

'Since,' replied Arabella, 'that 'uneasiness has neither made you thin-'ner, nor paler, I don't think you 'ought to be pitied: for, to say the 'truth, in these sort of matters, a 'person's bare testimony has but little 'weight.'

Mr. Glanville was going to make her some answer; when Miss Glanville, who, while they had been speaking, was adjusting her dress at the glass, came up to them, and made the conversation more general.

After dinner they adjourned to the gardens, where the gay Miss Glanville, running eagerly from one walk to another, gave her brother as many opportunities of talking to Lady Bella as he could wish: however, he stood in such awe of her, and dreaded so much another banishment, that he did not dare, otherwise than by distant hints, to mention his passion; and Arabella, well enough pleased with a respect that in some measure came up to her expectation, discovered no resentment at insinuations she was at liberty to dissemble the knowledge of; and if he could not, by her behaviour, flatter himself with any great hopes, yet he found as little reason, in Arabella's language, to despair.

Miss Glanville, at the end of a few weeks, was so tired of the magnificent solitude she lived in, that she heartily repented her journey; and insinuated to her brother, her inclination to return to town.

Mr. Glanville, knowing his stay was regulated by his sister's, intreated her not to expose him to the mortification of leaving Arabella so soon; and promised her he would contrive some amusements for her, which should make her relish the country better than she had yet done.

Accordingly, he proposed to Arabella to go to the races, which were to be held at ——, a few miles from the castle: she would have excused herself, upon account of her mourning; but Miss Glanville discovered so great an inclination to be present at this diversion, that Arabella could no longer refuse to accompany her.

'Since,' said she to Miss Glanville, 'you are fond of publick diversions, it 'happens very luckily, that these races 'are to be held at the time you are 'here: I never heard of them before, 'and I presume it is a good many 'years since they were last celebrated. '—Pray, Sir,' pursued she, turning to Glanville, 'do not these races, in some 'degree, resemble the Olympick games? 'Do the candidates ride in chariots?'

'No, Madam,' replied Glanville; 'the jockeys are mounted upon the 'fleetest coursers they can procure; 'and he who first reaches the goal ob-'tains the prize.'

'And who is the fair lady that is 'to bestow it?' resumed Arabella: 'I 'dare engage one of her lovers will 'enter the lists; she will, doubtless, 'be in no less anxiety than he; and 'the shame of being overcome will 'hardly affect him with more concern 'than herself; that is, provided he be 'so happy as to have gained her affec-'tions. I cannot help thinking the 'fair Elismonda was extremely happy 'in this particular: for she had the 'satisfaction to see her secret admirer 'victor in all the exercises at the 'Olympick games, and carry away the 'prize from many princes, and persons 'of rare quality, who were candidates 'with him; and he had also the glory 'to receive three crowns, in one day, 'from the hands of his adored prin-'cess; who, questionless, bestowed 'them upon him with an infinite deal 'of joy.'

'What sort of races were those, 'Madam?' said Miss Glanville; whose reading had been very confined.

'The Olympick games, Miss,' said Arabella, 'so called from Olympia, a 'city near which they were performed, 'in the plains of Elis, consisted of 'foot and chariot-races; combats with 'the Cestus; wrestling, and other sports.

'They

'They were instituted in honour of 'the gods and heroes; and were there-'fore termed sacred, and were con-'sidered as a part of religion.

'They were a kind of school, or mili-'tary apprenticeship; in which the cou-'rage of the youth found constant em-'ployment: and the reason why victory 'in those games was attended with such 'extraordinary applause, was, that 'their minds might be quickened with 'great and noble prospects, when, in 'this image of war, they arrived to a 'pitch of glory, approaching, in some 'respects, to that of the most famous 'conquerors. They thought this sort 'of triumph one of the greatest parts 'of happiness of which human na-'ture was capable: so that when Dia-'goras had seen his sons crowned in 'the Olympick games, one of his 'friends made him this compliment: "Now, Diagoras, you may die satis-"fied; since you can't be a god." It 'would tire you, perhaps, was I to de-'scribe all the exercises performed 'there: but you may form a general 'notion of them, from what you have 'doubtless read of justs and tourna-'ments.'

'Really,' said Miss Glanville, 'I 'never read about any such things.'

'No!' replied Arabella, surprized: 'Well, then, I must tell you, that 'they hold a middle place, between a 'diversion and a combat; but the 'Olympick games were attended with 'a much greater pomp and variety: 'and not only all Greece, but other 'neighbouring nations, were in a 'manner drained, to furnish out the 'appearance.'

'Well, for my part,' said Miss Glanville, 'I never before heard of 'these sort of races; those I have been 'at were quite different. I know the 'prizes and bets are sometimes very 'considerable.'

'And, doubtless,' interrupted Arabella, 'there are a great many heroes 'who signalize themselves at these 'races; not for the sake of the prize, 'which would be unworthy of great 'souls, but to satisfy that burning 'desire of glory, which spurs them on 'to every occasion of gaining it.'

'As for the heroes or jockeys,' said Miss Glanville, 'call them what you 'please, I believe they have very little 'share, either of the profit or glo-'ry; for their masters have the one, 'and the horses the other.'

'Their masters!' interrupted Arabella: 'what, I suppose a great many 'foreign princes send their favourites 'to combat, in their name? I remem-'ber to have read, that Alcibiades 'triumphed three times successively at 'the Olympick games, by means of 'one of his domesticks, who, in his 'master's name, entered the lists.'

Mr. Glanville, fearing his sister would make some absurd answer, and thereby disoblige his cousin, took up the discourse: and turning it upon the Grecian history, engrossed her conversation for two hours, wholly to himself; while Miss Glanville (to whom all they said was quite unintelligible) diverted herself with humming a tune, and tinkling her cousin's harpsichord; which proved no interruption to the more rational entertainment of her brother and Arabella.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONCLUDES WITH AN EXCELLENT MORAL SENTENCE.

THE day being come on which they designed to be present at the races, (or, as Arabella called them, the games) Miss Glanville, having spent four long hours in dressing herself to the greatest advantage, in order, if possible, to eclipse her lovely cousin, whose mourning, being much deeper, was less capable of ornaments, came into her chamber; and, finding her still in her morning-dress, 'For Heaven's 'sake, Lady Bella,' said she, 'when 'do you purpose to be ready? Why it 'is almost time to be gone, my brother 'says, and here you are not a bit 'dressed!'

'Don't be uneasy,' said Arabella, smiling; and going to her toilet, 'I 'shan't make you wait long.'

Miss Glanville seating herself near the table, resolved to be present while her cousin was dressing, that she might have an opportunity to make some remarks to her disadvantage: but she was extremely mortified, to observe the haste and negligence she made her women use in this important employment; and

and that, notwithſtanding her indifference, nothing could appear more lovely and genteel.

Miſs Glanville, however, pleaſed herſelf with the certainty of ſeeing her couſin's dreſs extremely ridiculed, for the peculiar faſhion of her gown; and the veil, which, as becoming as it was, would, by it's novelty, occaſion great diverſion among the ladies, helped to comfort her for the ſuperiority of her charms; which, partial as ſhe was to her own, ſhe could not help ſecretly confeſſing.

Arabella being dreſſed in much leſs time than her couſin, Mr. Glanville was admitted, who led her down ſtairs to her coach. His ſiſter, (ſecretly repining at the advantage Arabella had over her, in having ſo reſpectful an adorer) followed; and, being placed in the coach, they ſet out with great appearance of good-humour on all ſides.

They got to —— but juſt time enough to ſee the beginning of the firſt courſe. Arabella, who fancied the jockeys were perſons of great diſtinction, ſoon became intereſted in the fate of one of them, whoſe appearance pleaſed her more than the others. Accordingly, ſhe made vows for his ſucceſs, and appeared ſo extremely rejoiced at the advantage he had gained, that Miſs Glanville maliciouſly told her, people would make remarks at the joy ſhe expreſſed, and fancy ſhe had a more than ordinary intereſt in that jockey who had firſt reached the goal.

Mr. Glanville, whom this impertinent inſinuation of his ſiſter had filled with confuſion and ſpite, ſat biting his lips, trembling for the effect it would produce in Arabella: but ſhe, giving quite another turn to her couſin's words, 'I aſſure you,' ſaid ſhe, with a ſmile, 'I am not any farther intereſted in the 'fate of this perſon, who has hitherto 'been ſucceſsful, than what the handſomeneſs of his garb, and the ſuperiority of his ſkill, may demand, 'from an unprejudiced ſpectator; and 'though I perceive you imagine he is 'ſome concealed lover of mine, yet I 'don't remember to have ever ſeen 'him; and I am confident it is not for 'my ſake that he entered the liſts; nor 'is it my preſence which animates 'him.'

'Lord bleſs me, Madam!' replied Miſs Glanville, 'who would ever think 'of ſuch ſtrange things as theſe you 'talk of? Nobody will pretend to de'ny that you are very handſome, to be 'ſure; but yet, thank Heaven, the 'ſight of you is not ſo dangerous, but 'that ſuch ſort of people as theſe are 'may eſcape your chains.'

Arabella was ſo wholly taken up with the event of the races, that ſhe gave but very little heed to this ſarcaſtick anſwer of Miſs Glanville; whoſe brother, taking advantage of an opportunity which Arabella gave him by putting her head quite out of the coach, chid her very ſeverely for the liberty ſhe took with her couſin. Arabella, by looking earneſtly out of the window, had given ſo full a view of her fine perſon to a young baronet, who was not many paces from the coach, that, being ſtruck with admiration at the ſight of ſo lovely a creature, he was going up to ſome of her attendants to aſk who ſhe was, when he perceived Mr. Glanville, with whom he was intimately acquainted, in the coach with her: immediately he made himſelf known to his friend, being exceſſively rejoiced at having got an opportunity of beginning an acquaintance with a lady whoſe ſight had ſo charmed him.

Mr. Glanville, who had obſerved the profound bow he made to Arabella, accompanied with a glance that ſhewed an extreme admiration of her, was very little pleaſed at this meeting; yet he diſſembled his thoughts well enough in his reception of him. But Miſs Glanville was quite overjoyed, hoping ſhe would now have her turn of gallantry and compliment; therefore, accoſting him in her free manner, 'Dear Sir 'George,' ſaid ſhe, 'you come in a 'lucky time to brighten up the con'verſation: relations are ſuch dull 'company for one another, 'tis half a 'minute ſince we have exchanged a 'word.'

'My couſin,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling, 'has ſo ſtrange a diſpoſition for 'mirth, that ſhe thinks all her mo'ments are loſt, in which ſhe finds no'thing to laugh at: for my part, I do 'ſo earneſtly long to know to which 'of theſe pretenders fortune will give 'the victory, that I can ſuffer my cares 'for them to receive no interruption 'from my couſin's agreeable gaiety.'

Mr. Glanville, obſerving the baronet

ronet gazed upon Arabella earneſtly while ſhe was ſpeaking thoſe few words, reſolved to hinder him from making any reply, by aſking him ſeveral queſtions concerning the racers, their owners, and the bets which were laid; to which Arabella added, 'And pray, 'Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'do me the favour to 'tell me, if you know who that gal-'lant man is, who has already won 'the firſt courſe.'

'I don't know really, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'what his name is!' extremely ſurprized at her manner of aſking.

The jockey had now gained the goal a ſecond time; and Arabella could not conceal her ſatisfaction. 'Queſtion-'leſs,' ſaid ſhe, 'he is a very extra-'ordinary perſon; but I am afraid we 'ſhall not have the pleaſure of know-'ing who he is; for if he has any rea-'ſon for keeping himſelf concealed, 'he will evade any inquiries after him, 'by ſlipping out of the liſts while this 'hurry and tumult laſts, as Horten-'ſius did at the Olympick games; yet, 'notwithſtanding all his care, he was 'diſcovered by being obliged to fight 'a ſingle combat with one of the per-'ſons whom he had worſted at thoſe 'games.'

Mr. Glanville, who ſaw his ſiſter, by her little coquetries with Sir George, had prevented him from hearing great part of this odd ſpeech, propoſed returning to the caſtle, to which Arabella agreed; but conceiving civility obliged her to offer the convenience of a lodging to a ſtranger of Sir George's appearance, and who was an acquaintance of her couſins, 'You muſt per-'mit me,' ſaid ſhe to Mr. Glanville, 'to intreat your noble friend will ac-'company us to the caſtle, where he 'will meet with better accommoda-'dations than at any inn he can find; 'for I conceive, that coming only to 'be a ſpectator of theſe games, he is 'wholly unprovided with a lodging.'

The baronet, ſurprized at ſo uncommon a civility, was at a loſs what anſwer to make her at firſt; but, recollecting himſelf, he told her that he would, if ſhe pleaſed, do himſelf the honour to attend her home; but as his houſe was at no great diſtance from ——, he would be put to no inconveniency for a lodging.

Miſs Glanville, who was not willing to part ſo ſoon with the baronet, inſiſted, with her couſin's leave, upon his coming into the coach; which he accordingly did, giving his horſe to the care of his ſervant; and they proceeded together to the caſtle; Arabella ſtill continuing to talk of the games, as ſhe called them, while poor Glanville, who was exceſſively confuſed, endeavoured to change the diſcourſe, not without an apprehenſion, that every ſubject he could think of, would afford Arabella an occaſion of ſhewing her foible; which, notwithſtanding the pain it gave him, could not leſſen his love.

Sir George, whoſe admiration of Lady Bella increaſed the longer he ſaw her, was extremely pleaſed with the opportunity ſhe had given him of cultivating an acquaintance with her: he therefore lengthened out his viſit, in hopes of being able to ſay ſome fine things to her before he went away; but Miſs Glanville, who ſtrove by all the little arts ſhe was miſtreſs of, to engage his converſation wholly to herſelf, put it abſolutely out of his power; ſo that he was obliged to take his leave without having the ſatisfaction of even preſſing the fair hand of Arabella; ſo cloſely was he obſerved by her couſin. Happy was it for him, that he was prevented by her vigilance from attempting a piece of gallantry, which would undoubtedly have procured him a baniſhment from her preſence; but, ignorant how kind fortune was to him in baulking his deſigns, he was ungrateful enough to go away in a mighty ill-humour with this fickle goddeſs: ſo little capable are poor mortals, of knowing what is beſt for them!

CHAP. IX.

CONTAINING SOME CURIOUS ANECDOTES.

LADY Bella, from the familiarity with which Miſs Glanville treated this gay gentleman, concluding him her lover, and one who was apparently well received by her, had a ſtrong curioſity to know her adventures; and as they were walking the next morning in the

the garden, she told her, that she thought it was very strange they had hitherto observed such a reserve to each other, as to banish mutual trust and confidence from their conversation: 'Whence comes it, cousin,' added she, 'being so young and lovely as 'you are, that you, questionless, have 'been engaged in many adventures, 'you have never reposed trust enough 'in me to favour me with a recital of 'them?'

'Engaged in many adventures, Madam!' returned Miss Glanville, not liking the phrase: 'I believe I have 'been engaged in as few as your lady-'ship.'

'You are too obliging,' returned Arabella, who mistook what she said for a compliment; 'for, since you have 'more beauty than I, and have also 'had more opportunities of making 'yourself beloved, questionless you 'have a greater number of admirers.'

'As for admirers,' said Miss Charlotte, bridling, 'I fancy I have had 'my share! Thank God, I never found 'myself neglected; but, I assure you, 'Madam, I have had no adventures, 'as you call them, with any of them.'

'No, really,' interrupted Arabella, innocently.

'No really, Madam!' retorted Miss Glanville; 'and I am surprized you 'should think so.'

'Indeed, my dear,' said Arabella, 'you are very happy in this respect, 'and also very singular; for I believe 'there are few young ladies in the 'world, who have any pretensions to 'beauty, that have not given rise to a 'great many adventures; and some of 'them haply very fatal.'

'If you knew more of the world, 'Lady Bella,' said Miss Glanville, pertly, 'you would not be so apt to 'think, that young ladies engage them-'selves in troublesome adventures: 'truly, the ladies that are brought up 'in town are not so ready to run away 'with every man they see.'

'No, certainly,' interrupted Arabella; 'they do not give their consent 'to such proceedings; but, for all that, 'they are doubtless run away with 'many times; for truly there are some 'men, whose passions are so unbridled, 'that they will have recourse to the 'most violent methods to possess them-'selves of the objects they love. Pray 'do you remember how often Man-'dana was run away with?'

'Not I, indeed, Madam,' replied Miss Glanville; 'I know nothing about her: 'but I suppose she is a Jew, by her out-'landish name.'

'She was no Jew,' said Arabella, 'though she favoured that people very 'much; for she obtained the liberty 'of great numbers of them from Cy-'rus, who had taken them captives, 'and could deny her nothing she 'asked.'

'Well,' said Miss Glanville, 'and 'I suppose she denied *him* nothing he 'asked; and so they were even.'

'Indeed but she did though,' resumed Arabella; 'for she refused to 'give him a glorious scarf which she 'wore, though he begged it on his 'knees.'

'And she was very much in the 'right,' said Miss Glanville; 'for I 'see no reason why a lover should ex-'pect a gift of any value from his mis-'tress.'

'Doubtless,' said Arabella, 'such 'a gift was worth a million of services; 'and had he obtained it, it would have 'been a glorious distinction for him; 'however, Mandana refused it; and, 'severely virtuous as you are, I am 'persuaded you can't help thinking she 'was a little too rigorous in denying 'a favour to a lover like him.'

'Severely virtuous, Lady Bella!' said Miss Glanville, reddening with anger. 'Pray what do you mean by 'that? Have you any reason to ima-'gine I would grant any favour to a 'lover?'

'Why, if I did, cousin,' said Arabella, 'would it derogate so much from 'your glory, think you, to bestow a 'favour upon a lover worthy your 'esteem, and from whom you had re-'ceived a thousand marks of a most 'pure and faithful passion, and also a 'great number of very singular ser-'vices?'

'I hope, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, 'it will never be my fate to be 'so much obliged to any lover, as to 'be under a necessity of granting him 'favours in requital.'

'I vow, cousin,' interrupted Arabella, 'you put me in mind of the fair 'and virtuous Antonia, who was so 'rigid and austere, that she thought all 'expressions of love were criminal;

'and

'and was so far from granting any 'person permission to love her, that she 'thought it a mortal offence to be 'adored even in private.'

Miss Glanville, who could not imagine Arabella spoke this seriously, but that it was designed to sneer at her great eagerness to make conquests, and the liberties she allowed herself in, which had probably come to her knowledge, was so extremely vexed at the malicious jest, as she thought it, that, not being able to revenge herself, she burst into tears.

Arabella's good-nature made her be greatly affected at this sight; and, asking her pardon for having undesignedly occasioned her so much uneasiness, begged her to be composed, and tell her in what she had offended her, that she might be able to justify herself in her apprehensions!

'You have made no scruple to own, 'Madam,' said she, 'that you think 'me capable of granting favours to 'lovers; when, Heaven knows, I never 'granted a kiss without a great deal of 'confusion!'

'And you had certainly much reason for confusion,' said Arabella, excessively surprized at such a confession: 'I assure you I never injured you 'so much in my thoughts, as to suppose you ever granted a favour of so 'criminal a nature.'

'Look you there, now!' said Miss Glanville, weeping more violently than before: 'I knew what all your round-'about speeches would come to. All 'you have said in vindication of granting favours, was only to draw me into a confession of what I have done: 'how ungenerous was that!'

'The favours I spoke of, Madam,' said Arabella, 'were quite of another 'nature, than those it seems you have 'so liberally granted: such as giving 'a scarf, a bracelet, or some such thing, 'to a lover, who had haply sighed 'whole years in silence, and did not 'presume to declare his passion, till he 'had lost best part of his blood in defence of the fair-one he loved. It 'was when you maintained, that Mandana was in the right to refuse her 'magnificent scarf to the illustrious 'Cyrus, that I took upon me to oppose your rigidness; and so much 'mistaken was I in your temper, that 'I foolishly compared you to the fair 'and wise Antonia, whose severity was 'so remarkable; but really, by what 'I understand from your own confession, your disposition resembles that 'of the inconsiderate Julia, who would 'receive a declaration of love without 'anger from any one; and was not 'over-shy, any more than yourself, of 'granting favours almost as considerable as that you have mentioned.'

While Arabella was speaking, Miss Glanville, having dried up her tears, sat silently swelling with rage, not knowing whether she should openly avow her resentment for the injurious language her cousin had used to her, by going away immediately, or, by making up the matter, appear still to be her friend, that she might have the more opportunities of revenging herself. The impetuosity of her temper made her most inclined to the former; but the knowledge that Sir George was to stay yet some months in the country, made her unwilling to leave a place, where she might often see a man whose fine person had made some impression upon her heart; and, not enduring to leave such a charming conquest to Arabella, she resolved to suppress her resentment for the present; and listened, without any appearance of discomposure, to a fine harangue of her cousin upon the necessity of reserve, and distant behaviour, to men who presumed to declare themselves lovers, enforcing her precepts with examples drawn from all the romances she had ever read; at the end of which she embraced her, and assured her, if she had said any thing harsh, it proceeded from her great regard to her glory, of which she ardently wished to see her as fond as herself.

Miss Glanville constrained herself to make a reply that might not appear disagreeable: and they were upon these terms when Mr. Glanville came up to them, and told Lady Bella Sir George had sent to intreat their company at his house that day: 'But,' added he, 'as 'I presume you will not think proper 'to go, on account of your mourning, 'neither my sister nor I will accept the 'invitation.'

'I dare say,' interrupted Miss Glanville, hastily, 'Lady Bella will not ex-'pect such a needless piece of cere-'mony from us; and if she don't think 'proper to go, she won't confine *us*.'

'By no means, couſin,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling; 'and being perſuaded 'Sir George makes the entertainment 'purely for your ſake, it would not 'be kind in me to deprive him of 'your company.'

Mr. Glanville being pleaſed to find his couſin diſcovered no inclination to go, would have perſuaded his ſiſter not to leave Lady Bella: but Miſs Glanville looked ſo much diſpleaſed at his requeſt, that he was obliged to inſiſt upon it no more; and both retiring to dreſs, Lady Bella went up to her apartment, and betook herſelf to her books, which ſupplied the place of all company to her.

Miſs Glanville, having taken more than ordinary pains in dreſſing herſelf, in order to appear charming in the eyes of Sir George, came in to pay her compliments to Lady Bella before ſhe went, not doubting but ſhe would be chagrined to ſee her look ſo well: but Lady Bella, on the contrary, praiſed the clearneſs of her complexion, and the ſparkling of her eyes.

'I queſtion not,' ſaid ſhe, 'but you 'will give fetters to more perſons than 'one to-day; but remember, I charge 'you,' added ſhe, ſmiling, 'while you 'are taking away the liberty of others, 'to have a ſpecial care of your own.'

Miſs Glanville, who could not think it poſſible one woman could praiſe another with any ſincerity, caſt a glance at the glaſs, fearing it was rather becauſe ſhe looked but indifferently that her couſin was ſo laviſh in her praiſes; and while ſhe was ſettling her features in a mirror which every day repreſented a face infinitely more lovely than her own, Mr. Glanville came in, who, after having very reſpectfully taken leave of Lady Bella, led his ſiſter to the coach.

Sir George, who was extremely mortified to find Lady Bella not in it, handed Miſs Glanville out with an air ſo reſerved, that ſhe raillied him upon it; and gave her brother a very unpleaſing emotion, by telling Sir George ſhe hoped Lady Bella's not coming along with them would not make him bad company.

As he was too gallant to ſuffer an handſome young lady, who ſpread all her attractions for him, to believe he regretted the abſence of another when ſhe was preſent; he coquetted with her ſo much, that Mr. Glanville was in hopes his ſiſter would wholly engage him from Lady Bella.

CHAP. X.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS ENGAGED IN A VERY PERILOUS ADVENTURE.

IN the mean time, that ſolitary fair-one was alarmed by a fear of a very unaccountable nature; for being in the evening in her cloſet, the windows of which had a proſpect of the gardens, ſhe ſaw her illuſtrious concealed lover, who went by the name of Edward, while he was in her father's ſervice, talking with great emotion to her houſe-ſteward, who ſeemed earneſtly to liſten to ſome propoſitions he was making to him. Her ſurprize at this ſight was ſo great, that ſhe had not power to obſerve them any longer; but, ſeating herſelf in her chair, ſhe had juſt ſpirits enough to call Lucy to her aſſiſtance; who, extremely frighted at the pale looks of her lady, gave her a ſmelling-bottle, and was preparing to cut her lace, when Arabella, preventing her, told her, in a low voice, that ſhe feared ſhe ſhould be betrayed into the hands of an inſolent lover, who was come to ſteal her away. 'Yes,' added ſhe, with great emotion, 'I have ſeen this 'preſumptuous man holding a con-'verſation with one of my ſervants; 'and though I could not poſſibly, at 'this diſtance, hear their diſcourſe 'yet the geſtures they uſed in ſpeaking 'explained it too well to me; and I 'have reaſon to expect, I ſhall ſuffer 'the ſame violence that many illuſtrious 'ladies have done before me; and be 'carried away by force from my own 'houſe, as they were.'

'Alas! Madam!' ſaid Lucy, terrified at this diſcourſe, 'who is it that 'intends to carry your ladyſhip away? 'Sure no robbers will attempt any 'miſchief at ſuch a time as this!'

'Yes, Lucy,' replied Arabella, with great gravity, 'the worſt kind of rob-'bers; robbers who do not prey upon 'gold and jewels; but, what is infi-'nitely more precious, liberty and 'honour. Do you know, that perſon 'who called himſelf Edward, and 'worked in theſe gardens like a com-'mon gardener, is now in the houſe,

'corrupting

'corrupting my ſervants; and, queſ-
'tionleſs, preparing to force open my
'chamber, and carry me away? And
'Heaven knows when I ſhall be de-
'livered from his chains!'

'God forbid,' ſaid Lucy, ſobbing,
'that ever ſuch a lady ſhould have ſuch
'hard hap! What crime, I wonder,
'can you be guilty of, to deſerve to
'be in chains?'

'My crime,' reſumed Arabella, 'is
'to have attractions which expoſe me
'to theſe inevitable misfortunes, which
'even the greateſt princeſſes have not
'eſcaped. But, dear Lucy, can you
'not think of ſome methods by which
'I may avoid the evil which waits me?
'Who knows but that he may, with-
'in theſe few moments, force a paſ-
'ſage into my apartment? Theſe ſlight
'locks can make but a poor reſiſtance
'to the violence he will be capable of
'uſing.'

'Oh, dear Madam!' cried Lucy, trembling, and preſſing near her, 'what
'ſhall we do?'

'I aſked your advice,' ſaid ſhe;
'but I perceive you are leſs able than
'myſelf to think of any thing to ſave
'me.—Ah! Glanville,' purſued ſhe, ſighing, 'would to Heaven thou wert
'here now!'

'Yes, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'Mr.
'Glanville, I am ſure, would not
'ſuffer any one to hurt your ladyſhip.'

'As thou valueſt my friendſhip,'
ſaid Arabella, with great earneſtneſs,
'never acquaint him with what has
'juſt now eſcaped my lips: true, I
'did call upon him in this perplexity;
'I did pronounce his name; and that,
'haply, with a ſigh, which involun-
'tarily forced it's way; and, queſtion-
'leſs, if he knew his good fortune,
'even amidſt the danger of loſing me
'for ever, he would reſent ſome emo-
'tions of joy; but I ſhould die with
'ſhame at having ſo indiſcreetly con-
'tributed to his ſatisfaction; and,
'therefore, again I charge you, con-
'ceal, with the utmoſt care, what I
'have ſaid.'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'I
'ſhall tell him nothing but what your
'ladyſhip bids me; and I am ſo fright-
'ed, that I can think of nothing but
'that terrible man that wants to carry
'you away. Mercy on us!' added ſhe, ſtarting, 'I think I hear ſomebody
'on the ſtairs!'

'Do not be alarmed,' ſaid Arabella, in a majeſtick tone; 'it is I who have
'moſt reaſon to fear: nevertheleſs, I
'hope the grandeur of my courage
'will not ſink under this accident.
'Hark, ſomebody knocks at the door
'of my antechamber—My own vir-
'tue ſhall ſupport me—Go, Lucy,
'and aſk who it is.'

'Indeed I can't, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, clinging to her: 'Pray, pardon me:
'indeed I am ſo afraid, I cannot ſtir.'

'Weak-ſouled wench!' ſaid Arabella, 'how unfit art thou for acci-
'dents like theſe! Ah, had Cylenia
'and Marteſia been like thee, the fair
'Berenice, and the divine princeſs of
'Media, had not ſo eagerly intreated
'their raviſhers to afford them their
'company in their captivity! but go,
'I order you, and aſk who it is that
'is at the door of my apartment; they
'knock again; offer at no excuſes,
'but do your duty.'

Lucy ſeeing her lady was really angry, went trembling out of the cloſet; but would go no farther than her bed-chamber, from whence ſhe called out to know who was at the door.

'I have ſome buſineſs with your
'lady,' ſaid the houſe-ſteward (for it was he that knocked:) 'can I ſpeak
'with her at preſent?'

Lucy, a little re-aſſured by his voice, made no anſwer; but, creeping ſoftly to the door of the antechamber, double-locked it; and then cried out in a tranſport, 'No, I will take care you ſhall
'not come to my lady.'

'And why, pray, Mrs. Lucy?' ſaid the ſteward: 'What have I done,
'that you are ſo much my enemy?'

'You are a rogue,' ſaid Lucy, growing very courageous, becauſe the door was locked between them.

'A rogue!' ſaid he, 'What reaſon
'have you for calling me a rogue? I
'aſſure you I will acquaint my lady
'with your inſolence. I came to
'ſpeak to her ladyſhip about Edward;
'who prayed me to intercede for him,
'that he may be taken again into her
'ſervice; for he ſays my lady never
'believed any thing againſt him; and
'that was my buſineſs; but, when I
'ſee her, I'll know whether you are
'allowed to abuſe me in this manner.'

Arabella, by this time, was advanced as far as the bed-chamber, longing to know what ſort of conference Lucy

was holding with her intended raviſher; when that faithful confidant, ſeeing her, came running to her, and whiſpered her, that the houſe-ſteward was at the door, and ſaid he wanted to intercede for Edward.

'Ah, the traitor!' ſaid Arabella, retiring again: 'Has he, then, really 'bargained with that diſloyal man, to 'deliver up his miſtreſs?—I am undone, 'Lucy,' ſaid ſhe, 'unleſs I can find 'a way to eſcape out of the houſe. 'They will, queſtionleſs, ſoon force 'the doors of my apartments.'

'Suppoſe,' ſaid Lucy, 'your lady-'ſhip went down the ſtairs that lead 'from your dreſſing-room into the gar-'den; and you may hide yourſelf in 'the gardener's houſe till Mr. Glan-'ville come.'

'I approve,' ſaid Arabella, 'of one 'part of your propoſal; but I ſhall 'not truſt myſelf in the gardener's 'houſe; who, queſtionleſs, is in the 'plot with the reſt of my perfidious 'ſervants, ſince none of them have 'endeavoured to advertiſe me of my 'danger. If we can gain the gardens 'undiſcovered, we may get out by 'that door at the foot of the terrace, 'which leads into the fields; for you 'know I always keep the key of that 'private door; ſo, Lucy, let us com-'mend ourſelves to the direction of Pro-'vidence, and be gone immediately.'

'But what ſhall we do, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'when we are got out?'

'Why,' ſaid Arabella, 'you ſhall 'conduct me to your brother's; and, 'probably, we may meet with ſome 'generous cavalier by the way, who 'will protect us till we get thither: 'however, as I have as great a dan-'ger to fear within doors as without, 'I will venture to make my eſcape, 'though I ſhould not be ſo fortunate 'as to meet with any knight who will 'undertake to protect me from the 'danger which I may apprehend in 'the fields.'

Saying this, ſhe gave the key of the door to Lucy, whoſe heart beat violently with fear; and, covering herſelf with ſome black cypreſs, which ſhe wore in the nature of a veil, went ſoftly down the little ſtair-caſe to the terrace, followed by Lucy, (who looked eagerly about her every ſtep that ſhe went;) and, having gained the garden-door, haſtily unlocked it, and fled as faſt as poſſible croſs the fields, in order to procure a ſanctuary at William's houſe; Arabella begging Heaven to throw ſome generous cavalier in her way, whoſe protection ſhe might implore, and taking every tree at a diſtance for a horſe and knight, haſtened her ſteps to meet her approaching ſuccour; which as ſoon as ſhe came near, miſerably baulked her expectations.

Though William's farm was not more than two miles from the caſtle; yet Arabella, unuſed to ſuch a rude way of travelling, began to be greatly fatigued: the fear ſhe was in of being purſued by her apprehended raviſher, had ſo violent an effect upon her ſpirits, that ſhe was hardly able to proſecute her flight; and, to compleat her misfortunes, happening to ſtumble over a ſtump of a tree that lay in her way, ſhe ſtrained her ancle, and the violent anguiſh ſhe felt threw her into a ſwoon.

Lucy, upon whoſe arm ſhe leaned, perceiving her fainting, ſcreamed out aloud, not knowing what to do with her in that condition: ſhe placed her upon the ground, and ſupporting her head againſt that fatal ſtump, began to rub her temples, weeping exceſſively all the time. Her ſwoon ſtill continuing, the poor girl was in inconceivable terror: her brother's houſe was now but a little way off; but it being impoſſible for her to carry her lady thither without ſome help, ſhe knew not what to reſolve upon.

At length, thinking it better to leave her for a few moments to run for aſſiſtance, than to ſit by her and ſee her periſh for want of it, ſhe left her, though not without extreme agony, and flew with the utmoſt eagerneſs to her brother's. She was lucky enough to meet him juſt coming out of his door; and telling him the condition in which ſhe left her lady, he, without aſking any queſtions about the occaſion of ſo ſtrange an accident, notwithſtanding his amazement, ran with all ſpeed to the place where Lucy had left her; but, to their aſtoniſhment and ſorrow, ſhe was not to be found; they walked a long time in ſearch of her; and Lucy being almoſt diſtracted with fear, leſt ſhe had been carried away, made complaints that ſo puzzled her brother he knew not what to ſay to her: but finding their ſearch fruitleſs, they agreed to go home to the caſtle, ſuppoſing,

ſuppoſing, with ſome appearance of reaſon, that they might hear of her there.

Here they found nothing but grief and confuſion. Mr. Glanville and his ſiſter were juſt returned, and had been at Lady Bella's apartment; but, not finding her there, they aſked her women where ſhe was, who, not knowing any thing of her flight, concluded ſhe was in the garden with Lucy. Mr. Glanville, ſurprized at her being at that hour in the garden, ran eagerly to engage her to come in, being apprehenſive ſhe would take cold, by ſtaying ſo late in the air; but not finding her in any of her uſual walks, he ordered ſeveral of the ſervants to aſſiſt him in ſearching the whole garden, ſending them to different places; but they all returned without ſucceſs, which filled him with the utmoſt conſternation.

He was returning exceſſively uneaſy to the houſe, when he ſaw Lucy, who had been juſt told, in anſwer to her inquiries about her lady, that they were gone to look for her in the garden; and running up to Mr. Glanville, who hoped to hear news of Lady Bella from her, 'Oh, Sir!' ſaid ſhe, 'is my lady 'found?'

'What, Lucy!' ſaid Mr. Glanville (more alarmed than before) 'do 'not you know where ſhe is? I thought 'you had been with her.'

'Oh, dear!' cried Lucy, wringing her hands; 'for certain my poor lady 'was ſtolen away while ſhe was in that 'fainting fit.—Sir,' ſaid ſhe to Glanville, 'I know who the perſon is that 'my lady ſaid (and almoſt broke my 'heart) would keep her in chains: he 'was in the houſe not many hours ago.'

Mr. Glanville, ſuſpecting this was ſome new whim of Arabella's, would not ſuffer Lucy to ſay any more before the ſervants, who ſtood gaping with aſtoniſhment at the ſtrange things ſhe uttered; but bid her follow him to his apartment, and he would hear what ſhe could inform him concerning this accident. He would, if poſſible, have prevented his ſiſter from being preſent at the ſtory; but, not being able to form any excuſe for not ſuffering her to hear every thing that related to her couſin, they all three went into his chamber; where he deſired Lucy to tell him what ſhe knew about her lady.

'You muſt know, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, ſobbing, 'that there came a man here 'to take away my lady; a great man 'he is, though he worked in the gardens; for he was in love with her; 'and ſo he would not own who he 'was.'

'And pray,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'who told you he was a great 'man, as you ſay?'

'My lady told me,' ſaid Lucy: 'but, *howſomever*, he was turned 'away; for the gardener ſays he catched him ſtealing carp.'

'A very great man, indeed,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'that would ſteal 'carp!'

'You muſt know, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'that was only a pretence; for he 'went there, my lady ſays, to drown 'himſelf.'

'Bleſs me!' cried Miſs Glanville, laughing; 'the girl's diſtracted, ſure. '—Lord! brother, don't liſten to her 'nonſenſical tales; we ſhall never find 'my couſin by her.'

'Leave her to me,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, whiſpering: 'perhaps I may diſcover ſomething by her diſcourſe, 'that will give us ſome light into this 'affair.'

'Nay, I'll ſtay, I am reſolved,' anſwered ſhe; 'for I long to know where 'my couſin is: though, do you think 'what this girl ſays is true, about a 'great man diſguiſed in the gardens? 'Sure my couſin could never tell her 'ſuch ſtuff: but, now I think of it,' added ſhe, 'Lady Bella, when we were 'ſpeaking about the jockey, talked 'ſomething about a lover: I vow I 'believe it is as the girl ſays. Pray 'let's hear her out.'

Mr. Glanville was ready to die with vexation, at the charmer of his ſoul's being thus expoſed: but there was no help for it.

'Pray,' ſaid he to Lucy, 'tell us 'no more about this man: but, if you 'can gueſs where your lady is, let me 'know.'

'Indeed I can't, Sir,' ſaid ſhe; 'for 'my lady and I both ſtole out of the 'houſe, for fear Edward ſhould break 'open the doors of her apartment; 'and we were running as faſt as poſſible to my brother's houſe, (where 'ſhe ſaid ſhe would hide herſelf till 'you came:) but my poor dear lady 'fell down, and hurt herſelf ſo much, 'that ſhe fainted away: I tried what

'I could

'I could to fetch her again; but she 'did not open her eyes: so I ran like 'lightning to my brother, to come and 'help me to carry her to the farm; 'but, when we came back, she was 'gone.'

'What do you say?' cried Mr. Glanville, with a distracted look: 'did 'you leave her in that condition in the 'fields? And was she not to be found 'when you came back?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' said Lucy, weeping, 'we could not find her, though 'we wandered about a long time.'

'Oh, Heavens!' said he, walking about the room in a violent emotion, 'where can she be? what is become 'of her?—Dear sister,' pursued he, 'order somebody to saddle my horse: I'll 'traverse the country all night in quest 'of her.'

'You had best enquire, Sir,' said Lucy, 'if Edward is in the house; he 'knows, may be, where my lady is.'

'Who is he?' cried Glanville.

'Why the great man, Sir,' said Lucy, 'whom we thought to be a gardener, who came to carry my lady 'away, which made her get out of 'the house as fast as she could.'

'This is the strangest story,' said Miss Glanville, 'that ever I heard: 'sure nobody would be so mad to attempt such an action; my cousin has 'the oddest whims——'

Mr. Glanville, not able to listen any longer, charged Lucy to say nothing of this matter to any one; and then ran eagerly out of the room, ordering two or three of the servants to go in search of their lady: he then mounted his horse in great anguish of mind, not knowing whither to direct his course.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH THE LADY IS WONDERFULLY DELIVERED.

BUT to return to Arabella, whom we left in a very melancholy situation. Lucy had not been gone long from her before she opened her eyes; and, beginning to come perfectly to herself, was surprized to find her woman not near her: the moon shining very bright, she looked round her, and called Lucy as loud as she was able; but not seeing her, or hearing any answer, her fears became so powerful, that she had like to have relapsed into her swoon.

'Alas! unfortunate maid that I 'am!' cried she, weeping excessively, 'questionless I am betrayed by her 'on whose fidelity I relied, and who 'was acquainted with my most secret 'thoughts: she is now with my ravisher, directing his pursuit, and I have 'no means of escaping from his 'hands! Cruel and ungrateful wench, 'thy unparalleled treachery grieves me 'no less than all my other misfortunes: 'but why do I say, her treachery is 'unparalleled? Did not the wicked 'Arianta betray her mistress into the 'power of her insolent lover? Ah! 'Arabella, thou art not single in thy 'misery, since the divine Mandana 'was, like thyself, the dupe of a mercenary servant.'

Having given a moment or two to these sad reflections, she rose from the ground with an intention to walk on; but her ancle was so painful, that she could hardly move: her tears began now to flow with greater violence; she expected every moment to see Edward approach her; and was resigning herself up to despair, when a chaise, driven by a young gentleman, passed by her. Arabella, thanking Heaven for sending this relief, called out as loud as she could, conjuring him to stay.

The gentleman hearing a woman's voice, stopped immediately, and asked what she wanted.

'Generous stranger,' said Arabella, advancing as well as she was able, 'do 'not refuse your assistance to save me 'from a most terrible danger: I am 'pursued by a person whom, for very 'urgent reasons, I desire to avoid. I 'conjure you, therefore, in the name of 'her you love best, to protect me; and 'may you be crowned with the enjoyment of all your wishes, for so charitable an action!'

If the gentleman was surprized at this address, he was much more astonished at the beauty of her who made it: her stature, her shape, her inimitable complexion; the lustre of her fine eyes, and the thousand charms that adorned her whole person, kept him a minute silently gazing upon her, without having the power to make her an answer.

Arabella, finding he did not speak, was extremely disappointed. 'Ah, 'Sir!'

'Sir!' said she, 'what do you delibe-
'rate upon? Is it possible you can deny
'so reasonable a request, to a lady in
'my circumstances?'

'For God's sake, Madam,' said the gentleman, alighting, and approaching her, 'let me know who you are, and 'how I can be of any service to you.'

'As for my quality,' said Arabella, 'be assured it is not mean; and let 'this knowledge suffice at present. 'The service I desire of you, is, to con-'vey me to some place where I may be 'in safety for this night: to-morrow I 'will intreat you to let some persons, 'whom I shall name to you, know 'where I am; to the end they may 'take proper measures to secure me 'from the attempts of an insolent man, 'who has driven me from my own 'house, by the designs he was going 'to execute.'

The gentleman saw there was some mystery in her case, which she did not chuse to explain; and, being extremely glad at having so beautiful a creature in his power, told her she might command him in all she pleased; and, helping her into the chaise, drove off as fast as he could; Arabella suffering no apprehensions from being alone with a stranger, since nothing was more common to heroines than such adventures; all her fears being of Edward, whom she fancied every moment she saw pursuing them; and, being extremely anxious to be in some place of safety, she urged her protector to drive as fast as possible: who, willing to have her at his own house, complied with her request; but was so unlucky in his haste, as to overturn the chaise. Though neither Arabella nor himself were hurt by the fall, yet the necessity there was to stay some time to put the chaise in a condition to carry them any farther, filled her with a thousand apprehensions, lest they should be overtaken.

In the mean time, the servants of Arabella, among whom Edward, not knowing how much he was concerned in her flight, was resolved to distinguish himself by his zeal in searching for her, had dispersed themselves about in different places; chance conducted Edward to the very spot where she was; when Arabella, perceiving him while he was two or three paces off, 'Oh, 'Sir!' cried she, 'behold my persecu-'tor! can you resolve to defend me 'against the violence he comes to of-'fer me?'

The gentleman, looking up, and seeing a man in livery approaching them, asked her, if that was the person she complained of; and if he was her servant.

'If he is my servant, Sir,' replied she, blushing, 'he never had my per-'mission to be so: and, indeed, no one 'else can boast of my having granted 'them such a liberty.'

'Do you know whose servant he is, 'then, Madam?' replied the gentleman, a little surprized at her answer; which he could not well understand.

'You throw me into a great em-'barrassment, Sir,' resumed Arabella, blushing more than before: 'question-'less, he appears to be mine; but 'since, as I told you before, he never 'discovered himself to me, and I ne-'ver permitted him to assume that title, 'his services, if ever I received any 'from him, were not at all considered 'by me as things for which I was 'obliged to him.'

The gentleman, still more amazed at answers so little to the purpose, was going to desire her to explain herself upon this strange affair; when Edward coming up close to Arabella, cried out in a transport, 'O Madam! thank 'God you are found.'

'Hold, impious man!' said Arabella, 'and do not give thanks for that 'which, haply, may prove thy punish-'ment. If I am found, thou wilt be 'no better for it; and if thou conti-'nuest to persecute me, thou wilt pro-'bably meet with thy death where thou 'thinkest thou hast found thy happi-'ness.'

The poor fellow, who understood not a word of this discourse, stared upon her like one that had lost his wits; when the protector of Arabella approaching him, asked him, with a stern look, what he had to say to that lady, and why he presumed to follow her.

As the man was going to answer him, Mr. Glanville came galloping up; and Edward seeing him, ran up to him, and informed him that he had met with Lady Bella, and a gentleman, who seemed to have been overturned in a chaise, which he was endeavouring to refit, and that her ladyship was offended with him for coming up to her; and

alſo, that the gentleman had uſed ſome threatening language to him upon that account.

Mr. Glanville, exceſſively ſurprized at what he heard, ſtopped; and ordering a ſervant who came along with him to run back to the caſtle, and bring a chaiſe thither to carry Lady Bella home, he aſked Edward ſeveral more queſtions relating to what ſhe and the gentleman had ſaid to him: and, notwithſtanding his knowledge of her ridiculous humour, he could not help being alarmed by her behaviour, nor concluding that there was ſomething very myſterious in the affair.

While he was thus converſing with Edward, Arabella, who had ſpied him almoſt as ſoon, was filled with apprehenſion to ſee him hold ſo quiet a parly with her raviſher: the more ſhe reflected upon this accident, the more her ſuſpicions increaſed; and perſuading herſelf at laſt that Mr. Glanville was privy to his deſigns, this belief, however improbable, wrought ſo powerfully upon her imagination, that ſhe could not reſtrain her tears.

'Doubtleſs,' ſaid ſhe, 'I am betrayed, and the perjured Glanville is 'no longer either my friend or lover: 'he is this moment concerting meaſures with my raviſher how to deliver me into his power; and, like 'Philidaſpes, is glad of an opportunity, by this treachery, to be rid of a 'woman whom his parents and hers 'had deſtined for his wife.'

Mr. Glanville having learned all he could from Edward, alighted; and giving him his horſe to hold, came up to Arabella: and, after expreſſing his joy at meeting with her, begged her to let him know what accident had brought her, unattended, from the caſtle, at that time of night.

'If by this queſtion,' ſaid the incenſed Arabella, 'you would perſuade 'me you are ignorant of the cauſe of 'my flight, know, your diſſimulation 'will not ſucceed; and that, having 'reaſon to believe you are equally 'guilty with him from whoſe intended 'violence I fled, I ſhall have recourſe 'to the valour of this knight you ſee 'with me to defend me, as well againſt 'you as that raviſher, with whom I ſee 'you leagued.—Ah, unworthy couſin!' purſued ſhe, 'what doſt thou 'propoſe to thyſelf by ſo black a treachery? What is to be the price of 'my liberty, which thou ſo freely diſpoſeſt of? Has thy friend there,' ſaid ſhe, (pointing to Edward) 'a ſiſter, or 'any relation, for whom thou bartereſt 'by delivering me up to him? But 'aſſure thyſelf, this ſtratagem ſhall be 'of no uſe to thee; for if thou art baſe 'enough to oppreſs my valiant deliverer with numbers, and thinkeſt by 'violence to get me into thy power, 'my cries ſhall arm Heaven and earth 'in my defence. Providence may, 'haply, ſend ſome generous cavaliers 'to my reſcue; and, if Providence 'fails me, my own hand ſhall give me 'freedom: for that moment thou offereſt to ſeize me, that moment ſhall 'be the laſt of my life.'

While Arabella was ſpeaking, the young gentleman and Edward, who liſtened to her eagerly, thought her brain was diſturbed: but Mr. Glanville was in a terrible confuſion, and ſilently curſed his ill fate, to make him in love with a woman ſo ridiculous.

'For Heaven's ſake, couſin,' ſaid he, ſtriving to repreſs ſome part of his diſorder, 'do not give way to theſe extravagant notions! there is nobody 'intends to do you any wrong.'

'What!' interrupted ſhe, 'would 'you perſuade me that that impoſtor 'there,' pointing to Edward, 'has not 'a deſign to carry me away; which 'you, by ſupporting him, are not 'equally guilty of?'

'Who? I, Madam!' cried out Edward: 'ſure your ladyſhip does not 'ſuſpect me of ſuch a ſtrange deſign! 'God knows I never thought of ſuch 'a thing!'

'Ah, diſſembler!' interrupted Arabella, 'do not make uſe of that ſacred 'name to maſk thy impious falſhoods: 'confeſs with what intent you came 'into my father's ſervice diſguiſed?'

'I never came diſguiſed, Madam,' returned Edward.

'No!' ſaid Arabella. 'What means 'that dreſs in which I ſee you, then?'

'It is the marquis's livery, Madam,' ſaid Edward, 'which he did not order 'to be taken from me when I left his 'ſervice.'

'And with what purpoſe didſt thou 'wear it?' ſaid ſhe. 'Do not your 'thoughts accuſe you of your crime?'

'I always hoped, Madam—' ſaid he.

'You hoped!' interrupted Arabella, frowning.

frowning. 'Did I ever give you rea-
'ſon to hope? I will not deny but I
'had compaſſion on you; but even
'that you was ignorant of.'

'I know, Madam, you had compaſ-
'ſion on me,' ſaid Edward; 'for your
'ladyſhip, I always thought, did not
'believe me guilty.'

'I was weak enough,' ſaid ſhe, 'to
'have compaſſion on you, though I *did*
'believe you guilty.'

'Indeed, Madam,' returned Edward,
'I always hoped, as I ſaid before, (but
'your ladyſhip would not hear me out)
'that you did not believe any mali-
'cious reports; and therefore you had
'compaſſion on me.'

'I had no reports of you,' ſaid ſhe,
'but what my own obſervation gave
'me; and that was ſufficient to con-
'vince me of your fault.'

'Why, Madam,' ſaid Edward, 'did
'your ladyſhip ſee me ſteal the carp
'then, which was the fault unjuſtly
'laid to my charge?'

Mr. Glanville, as much cauſe as he had for uneaſineſs, could with great difficulty reſtrain laughter at this ludicrous circumſtance; for he gueſſed what crime Arabella was accuſing him of: as for the young gentleman, he could not conceive what ſhe meant, and longed to hear what would be the end of ſuch a ſtrange conference. But poor Arabella was prodigiouſly confounded at his mentioning ſo low an affair; not being able to endure that Glanville and her protector ſhould know a lover of hers could be ſuſpected of ſo baſe a theft.

The ſhame ſhe conceived at it, kept her ſilent for a moment: but recovering herſelf at laſt, 'No,' ſaid ſhe, 'I
'knew you better than to give any
'credit to ſuch an idle report: perſons
'of your condition do not commit ſuch
'paltry crimes.'

'Upon my ſoul, Madam,' ſaid the young gentleman, 'perſons of his con-
'dition often do worſe.'

'I don't deny it, Sir,' ſaid Arabella; 'and the deſign he meditated of carry-
'ing me away was infinitely worſe.'

'Really, Madam,' returned the gentleman, 'if you are ſuch a perſon as I
'apprehend, I don't ſee how he durſt
'make ſuch an attempt.'

'It is very poſſible, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that I might be carried away, though
'I was of greater quality than I am:
'were not Mandana, Candace, Clelia,
'and many other ladies who under-
'went the ſame fate, of a quality more
'illuſtrious than mine?'

'Really, Madam,' ſaid he, 'I know
'none of theſe ladies.'

'No, Sir!' ſaid Arabella, extremely mortified.

'Let me intreat you, couſin,' interrupted Glanville, who feared this converſation would be very tedious, 'to
'expoſe yourſelf no longer to the air at
'this time of night: ſuffer me to con-
'duct you home.'

It concerns my honour,' ſaid ſhe, 'that this generous ſtranger ſhould not
'think I am the only one that was ever
'expoſed to theſe inſolent attempts.—
'You ſay, Sir,' purſued ſhe, 'that you
'don't know any of theſe ladies I
'mentioned before: let me aſk you,
'then, if you are acquainted with Par-
'theniſſa, or Cleopatra; who were both
'for ſome months in the hands of their
'raviſhers?'

'As for Partheniſſa, Madam,' ſaid he, 'neither have I heard of her; nor
'do I remember to have heard of any
'more than one Cleopatra: but ſhe
'was never raviſhed, I am certain, for
'ſhe was too willing.'

'How, Sir!' ſaid Arabella, 'was
'Cleopatra ever willing to run away
'with her raviſher?'

'Cleopatra was a whore, was ſhe not Madam?' ſaid he.

'Hold thy peace, unworthy man,' ſaid Arabella, 'and profane not the
'memory of that fair and glorious
'queen by ſuch injurious language:
'that queen, I ſay, whoſe courage was
'equal to her beauty; and her virtue
'ſurpaſſed by neither. Good Heavens!
'what a black defamer have I choſen
'for my protector!'

Mr. Glanville rejoicing to ſee Arabella in a diſpoſition to be offended with her new acquaintance, reſolved to ſoothe her a little, in hopes of prevailing upon her to return home. 'Sir,' ſaid he to the gentleman, who could not conceive why the lady ſhould ſo warmly defend Cleopatra, 'you were in the wrong to
'caſt ſuch reflections upon that great
'queen, (repeating what he had heard
'his couſin ſay before;) for all the
'world,' purſued he, 'knows ſhe was
'married to Julius Cæſar.'

'Though I commend you,' ſaid Arabella, 'for taking the part of a
'lady ſo baſely vilified; yet let not
'your zeal for her honour induce you

'to ſay more than is true for it's juſtification; for thereby you weaken, inſtead of ſtrengthening, what may be ſaid in her defence. One falſhood always ſuppoſes another, and renders all you can ſay ſuſpected; whereas pure, unmixed truth, carries conviction along with it, and never fails to produce it's deſired effect.'

'Suffer me, couſin,' interrupted Glanville, 'again to repreſent to you, the inconveniency you will certainly feel, by ſtaying ſo late in the air; leave the juſtification of Cleopatra to ſome other opportunity, and take care of your own preſervation.'

'What is it you require of me?' ſaid Arabella.

'Only,' reſumed Glanville, 'that you would be pleaſed to return to the caſtle, where my ſiſter, and all your ſervants, are inconſolable for your abſence.'

'But who can aſſure me,' anſwered ſhe, 'that I ſhall not, by returning home, enter voluntarily into my priſon? The ſame treachery which made the palace of Candace the place of her confinement, may turn the caſtle of Arabella into her gaol. For, to ſay the truth, I ſtill more than ſuſpect you abet the deſigns of this man; ſince I behold you in his party, and ready, no doubt, to draw your ſword in his defence; how will you be able to clear yourſelf of this crime? Yet I will venture to return to my houſe, provided you will ſwear to me you will offer me no violence, with regard to your friend there; and alſo I inſiſt, that he, from this moment, diſclaim all intentions of perſecuting me, and baniſh himſelf from my preſence for ever. Upon this condition I pardon him, and will likewiſe pray to Heaven to pardon him alſo.—Speak, preſumptuous unknown,' ſaid ſhe to Edward, 'wilt thou accept of my pardon upon the terms I offer it thee? And wilt thou take thyſelf to ſome place where I may never behold thee again?'

'Since your ladyſhip,' ſaid Edward, 'is reſolved not to receive me into your ſervice, I ſhan't trouble you any more; but I think it hard to be puniſhed for a crime I was not guilty of.'

'It is better,' ſaid Arabella, turning from him, 'that thou ſhouldeſt complain of my rigour, than the world tax me with lightneſs and indiſcretion.—And now, Sir,' ſaid ſhe to Glanville, 'I muſt truſt myſelf to your honour, which I confeſs I do a little ſuſpect; but, however, it is poſſible you have repented, like the poor Prince Thraſybulus, when he ſubmitted to the ſuggeſtions of a wicked friend, to carry away the fair Alcionida, whom he afterwards reſtored. Speak, Glanville,' purſued ſhe, 'are you deſirous of imitating that virtuous prince, or do you ſtill retain your former ſentiments?'

'Upon my word, Madam,' ſaid Glanville, 'you will make me quite mad, if you go on in this manner: pray let me ſee you ſafe home; and then, if you pleaſe, you may forbid my entrance into the caſtle, if you ſuſpect me of any bad intentions towards you.'

'It is enough,' ſaid ſhe; 'I will truſt you.—As for you, Sir,' ſpeaking to the young gentleman, 'you are ſo unworthy, in my apprehenſions, by the calumnies you have uttered againſt a perſon of that ſex which merits all your admiration and reverence, that I hold you very unfit to be a protector of any of it: therefore I diſpenſe with your ſervices upon this occaſion; and think it better to truſt myſelf to the conduct of a perſon, who, like Thraſybulus, by his repentance, has reſtored himſelf to my confidence, than to one, who, though indeed he has never betrayed me, yet ſeems very capable of doing ſo, if he had the power.'

Saying this, ſhe gave her hand to Glanville, who helped her into the chaiſe that was come from the caſtle; and the ſervant who brought it, mounting his horſe, Mr. Glanville drove her home, leaving the gentleman, who by this time had refitted his chaiſe, in the greateſt aſtoniſhment imaginable at her unaccountable behaviour.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

TWO CONVERSATIONS, OUT OF WHICH THE READER MAY PICK UP A GREAT DEAL.

ARABELLA, continuing to ruminate upon her adventure during their little journey, appeared so low-spirited and reserved, that Mr. Glanville, though he ardently wished to know all the particulars of her flight, and meeting with that gentleman, whose company he found her in, was obliged to suppress his curiosity for the present, out of a fear of displeasing her. As soon as they alighted at the castle, her servants ran to receive her at the gates, expressing their joy to see her again, by a thousand confused exclamations.

Miss Glanville being at her toilet when she heard of her arrival, ran down to welcome her; in her hurry forgetting, that as her woman had been curling her hair, she had no cap on.

Arabella received her compliments with a little coolness; for, observing that her grief for her absence had not made her neglect any of her usual solicitude about her person, she could not conceive it had been very great; therefore, when she had made some slight answer to the hundred questions she asked in a breath, she went up to her apartment; and, calling Lucy, who was crying with joy for her return, she questioned her strictly concerning her leaving her in the fields, acknowledging to her that she suspected her fidelity, though she wished at the same time she might be able to clear herself.

Lucy, in her justification, related, after her punctual way, all that had happened; by which Arabella was convinced she had not betrayed her; and was also in some doubt, whether Mr. Glanville was guilty of any design against her.

'Since,' said she to Lucy, 'thou 'art restored to my good opinion, I 'will, as I have always done, unmask 'my thoughts to thee. I confess then, 'with shame and confusion, that I 'cannot think of Mr. Glanville's as'sisting the unknown to carry me 'away, without *resenting* a most poig'nant grief; questionless, my weak'ness will surprize thee; and could I 'conceal it from myself, I would 'from thee; but, alas! it is certain that 'I do not hate him; and I believe I 'never shall, guilty as he may be in 'my apprehensions.'

'Hate him! Madam,' said Lucy; 'God forbid you should ever hate Mr. 'Glanville; who, I am sure, loves 'your ladyship as well as he does his 'own sister!'

'You are very confident, Lucy,' said Arabella, blushing, 'to mention the 'word *love* to me; if I thought my 'cousin had bribed thee to it, I should 'be greatly incensed; however, though 'I forbid you to talk of his passion, 'yet I permit you to tell me the vio'lence of his transports when I was 'missing; the threats he uttered against

'my raviſhers; the complaints he made 'againſt fortune; the vows he offered 'for my preſervation; and, in fine, 'whatever extravagances the exceſs of 'his ſorrow forced him to commit.'

'I aſſure you, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'I did not hear him ſay any of all 'this.'

'What!' interrupted Arabella: 'and didſt thou not obſerve the tears 'trickle from his eyes, which, haply, 'he ſtrove to conceal? Did he not 'ſtrike his boſom with the vehemence 'of his grief; and caſt his accuſing 'and deſpairing eyes to Heaven, which 'had permitted ſuch a misfortune to 'befal me?'

'Indeed, Madam, I did not,' reſumed Lucy; 'but he ſeemed to be 'very ſorry; and ſaid, he would go 'and look for your ladyſhip.'

'Ah, the traitor!' interrupted Arabella, in a rage: 'fain would I have 'found out ſome excuſe for him, and 'juſtified him in my apprehenſions; 'but he is unworthy of theſe favour-'able thoughts. Speak of him no 'more, I command you; he is guilty 'of aſſiſting my raviſher to carry me 'away, and therefore merits my eter-'nal diſpleaſure. But though I could 'find reaſons to clear him even of that 'crime, yet he is guilty of indiffe-'rence and inſenſibility for my loſs, 'ſince he neither died with grief at the 'news of it; nor needed the interpo-'ſition of his ſiſter, or the deſire of 'delivering me, to make him live.'

Arabella, when ſhe had ſaid this, was ſilent; but could not prevent ſome tears ſtealing down her fair face; therefore, to conceal her uneaſineſs, or to be more at liberty to indulge it, ſhe ordered Lucy to make haſte and undreſs her; and, going to bed, paſſed the ſmall remainder of the night, not in reſt, which ſhe very much needed, but in reflections on all the paſſages of the preceding day: and finding, or imagining ſhe found, new reaſons for condemning Mr. Glanville, her mind was very far from being at eaſe.

In the morning, lying later than uſual, ſhe received a meſſage from Mr. Glanville, inquiring after her health; to which ſhe anſwered, that he was too little concerned in the preſervation of it, to make it neceſſary to acquaint him.

Miſs Glanville ſoon after ſent to deſire permiſſion to drink her chocolate by her bedſide; which as ſhe could not in civility refuſe, ſhe was very much perplexed how to hide her melancholy from the eyes of that diſcerning lady, who, ſhe queſtioned not, would interpret it in favour of her brother.

Upon Miſs Glanville's appearance, ſhe forced herſelf to aſſume a chearful look, aſking her pardon for receiving her in bed; and complaining of bad reſt, which had occaſioned her lying late.

Miſs Glanville, after anſwering her compliments with almoſt equal politeneſs, proceeded to aſk her an hundred queſtions concerning the cauſe of her abſence from the caſtle: 'Your wo-'man,' purſued ſhe, laughing, 'told 'us a ſtrange medley of ſtuff about a 'great man, who was a gardener, and 'wanted to carry you away; ſure 'there was nothing in it! Was there?'

'You muſt excuſe me, couſin,' ſaid Arabella, 'if I do not anſwer your 'queſtions preciſely now: 'tis ſuffi-'cient that I tell you, certain reaſons 'obliged me to act in the manner I 'did, for my own preſervation; and 'that, another time, you ſhall know 'my hiſtory; which will explain many 'things you ſeem to be ſurprized at, 'at preſent.'

'Your hiſtory!' ſaid Miſs Glanville. 'Why, will you write your own hiſ-'tory then?'

'I ſhall not write it,' ſaid Arabella; 'though, queſtionleſs, it will be writ-'ten after my death.'

'And muſt I wait till then for it?' reſumed Miſs Glanville, gaily.

'No, no,' interrupted Arabella: 'I mean to gratify your curioſity 'ſooner; but it will not be yet a good 'time; and, haply, not till you have 'acquainted me with yours.'

'Mine!' ſaid Miſs Glanville: 'it 'would not be worth your hearing; for 'really I have nothing to tell, that 'would make an hiſtory.'

'You have, queſtionleſs,' returned Arabella, 'gained many victories over 'hearts; have occaſioned many quar-'rels between your ſervants, by fa-'vouring ſome one more than the 'others; probably you have cauſed 'ſome bloodſhed; and have not eſcaped 'being carried away once or twice: 'you have alſo, I ſuppoſe, undergone 'ſome perſecution from thoſe who

'have

'have the diſpoſal of you, in favour 'of a lover whom you have an averſion 'to; and laſtly, there is haply ſome 'one among your admirers, who is 'happy enough not to be hated by 'you.'

'I aſſure you,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'I hate none of my ad-'mirers; and I can't help thinking 'you very unkind to uſe my brother 'as you do: I am ſure, there is not 'one man in an hundred, that would 'take ſo much from your hands as he 'does.'

'Then there is not one man in an 'hundred,' reſumed Arabella, 'whom 'I ſhould think worthy to ſerve me: 'but pray, Madam, what ill uſage 'is it your brother complains of? I 'have treated him with much leſs ſe-'verity than he had reaſon to expect; 'and, notwithſtanding he had the pre-'ſumption to talk to me of love, I 'have endured him in my ſight; an 'indulgence for which I may haply 'be blamed in after-ages.'

'Why ſure, Lady Bella,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'it would be no ſuch crime 'for my brother to love you!'

'But it was a mortal crime to tell 'me ſo,' interrupted Arabella.

'And why was it ſuch a mortal 'crime to tell you ſo?' ſaid Miſs Glanville. 'Are you the firſt woman, 'by millions, that has been told ſo?'

'Doubtleſs,' returned Arabella, 'I 'am the firſt woman of my quality, 'that ever was told ſo by any man, 'till after an infinite number of ſer-'vices, and ſecret ſufferings: and truly, 'I am of the illuſtrious Mandana's 'mind; for ſhe ſaid, that ſhe ſhould 'think it an unpardonable preſump-'tion, for the greateſt king on earth to 'tell her he loved her, though after ten 'years of the moſt faithful ſervices, 'and concealed torments.'

'Ten years!' cried out Miſs Glan-ville, in amazement: 'did ſhe conſider 'what alterations ten years would 'make in her face, and how much old-'er ſhe would be at the end of ten 'years, than ſhe was before?'

'Truly,' ſaid Arabella, 'it is not 'uſual to conſider ſuch little matters 'ſo nicely; one never has the idea of 'an heroine older than eighteen, though 'her hiſtory begins at that age; and 'the events which compoſe it, contain 'the ſpace of twenty more.'

'But, dear couſin,' reſumed Miſs Glanville, 'do you reſolve to be ten 'years a courting? Or rather, will 'you be loved in ſilence ten years, and 'be courted the other ten; and ſo 'marry when you are an old woman?'

'Pardon me, couſin,' reſumed Ara-bella; 'I muſt really find fault with 'the coarſeneſs of your language. 'Courting, and old woman! What 'ſtrange terms! Let us, I beſeech you, 'end this diſpute: if you have any 'thing to ſay in juſtification of your 'brother, which, I ſuppoſe, was the 'chief intention of your viſit, I ſhall 'not be rude enough to reſtrain you; 'though I could wiſh you would not 'lay me under the neceſſity of hearing 'what I cannot perſuade myſelf to be-'lieve.'

'Since,' returned Miſs Glanville, 'I know of no crime my brother has 'been guilty of, I have nothing to ſay 'in his juſtification: I only know, 'that he is very much mortified at 'the meſſage you ſent him this morn-'ing; for I was with him when he 'received it. But pray, what has he 'done to offend you?'

'If Mr. Glanville,' interrupted Arabella, 'hopes for my pardon, he 'muſt purchaſe it by his repentance, 'and a ſincere confeſſion of his fault; 'which you may much better under-'ſtand from himſelf, than from me; 'and, for this purpoſe, I will con-'deſcend to grant him a private au-'dience, at which I deſire you would 'be preſent; and alſo, I ſhould take 'it well, if you will let him know, 'that he owes this favour wholly to 'your interpoſition.'

Miſs Glanville, who knew her bro-ther was extremely deſirous of ſeeing Arabella, was glad to accept of theſe ſtrange terms; and left her chamber, in order to acquaint him with that la-dy's intentions.

CHAP. II.

A SOLEMN INTERVIEW.

IN the mean time, that fair-one being riſen, and negligently dreſſed, as was her cuſtom, went into her cloſet, ſending to give Miſs Glanville notice that ſhe was ready to ſee her. This meſſage immediately brought both the brother

brother and ſiſter to her apartment: and Miſs Glanville, at her brother's requeſt, ſtaying in the chamber, where ſhe buſied herſelf in looking at her couſin's jewels, which lay upon the toilet, he came alone into the cloſet, in ſo much confuſion at the thoughts of the ridiculous figure he made in complying with Arabella's fantaſtical humours, that his looks perſuading her there was ſome great agitation in his mind, ſhe expected to ſee him fall at her feet, and endeavour to deprecate her wrath by a deluge of tears.

Mr. Glanville, however, diſappointed her in that reſpect; for, taking a ſeat near her, he began to intreat her, with a ſmiling countenance, to tell him in what he had offended her; proteſting, that he was not conſcious of doing or ſaying any thing to diſpleaſe her.

Arabella was greatly confuſed at this queſtion, which ſhe thought ſhe had no reaſon to expect; it not being poſſible for her to tell him ſhe was offended, that he was not in abſolute deſpair for her abſence, without, at the ſame time, confeſſing ſhe looked upon him in the light of a lover, whoſe expreſſions of a violent paſſion would not have diſpleaſed her: therefore, to diſengage herſelf from the perplexity his queſtion threw her into, ſhe was obliged to offer ſome violence to her ingenuouſneſs; and, contrary to her real belief, tax him again with a deſign of betraying her into the power of the unknown.

Mr. Glanville, though exceſſively vexed at her perſiſting in ſo ridiculous an error, could hardly help ſmiling at the ſtern manner in which ſhe ſpoke; but knowing of what fatal conſequence it would be to him, if he indulged any gaiety in ſo ſolemn a conference, he compoſed his looks to a gravity ſuitable to the occaſion; and aſked her, in a very ſubmiſſive tone, what motive ſhe was pleaſed to aſſign for ſo extraordinary a piece of villainy, as that ſhe ſuppoſed him guilty of.

'Truly,' anſwered ſhe, bluſhing, 'I do not pretend to account for the 'actions of wicked and ungenerous 'perſons.'

'But, Madam,' reſumed Glanville, 'if I muſt needs be ſuſpected of a deſign to ſeize upon your perſon, me-'thinks it would have been more rea-'ſonable to ſuppoſe, I would rather 'uſe that violence in favour of my 'own pretenſions, than thoſe of any 'other whatever; for, though you 'have expreſsly forbid me to tell you 'I love you, yet I hope, you ſtill con-'tinue to think I do.'

'I aſſure you,' returned Arabella, aſſuming a ſevere look, 'I never gave 'myſelf the trouble to examine your 'behaviour with care enough to be 'ſenſible if you ſtill were guilty of 'the weakneſs which diſpleaſed me; 'but, upon a ſuppoſition that you re-'pented of your fault, I was willing 'to live with you upon terms of civi-'lity and friendſhip, as became per-'ſons in that degree of relationſhip in 'which we are: therefore, if you are 'wiſe, you will not renew the remem-'brance of thoſe follies I have long 'ſince pardoned; nor ſeek occaſions 'of offending me by new ones of the 'ſame kind, leſt it produce a more ſe-'vere ſentence than that I formerly 'laid upon you.'

'However, Madam,' replied Glanville, 'you muſt ſuffer me to aſſure 'you, that my own intereſt, which 'was greatly concerned in your ſafety, 'and my principles of honour, would 'never allow me to engage in ſo vil-'lainous an enterprize, as that of abet-'ting any perſon in ſtealing you away; 'nor can I conceive how you poſſibly 'could imagine a fellow who was 'your menial ſervant, could form ſo 'preſumptuous and dangerous a de-'ſign.'

'By your manner of ſpeaking,' reſumed Arabella, 'one would imagine 'you were really ignorant, both of 'the quality of that preſumptuous 'man, as well as his deſigned offence: 'but yet, 'tis certain, I ſaw you in 'his company; and ſaw you ready to 'draw your ſword in his defence, 'againſt my deliverer. Had I not the 'evidence of my own ſenſes, for your 'guilt, I muſt confeſs I could not be 'perſuaded of it by any other means: 'therefore, ſince appearances are cer-'tainly againſt you, it is not ſtrange if 'I cannot conſent to acquit you in my 'apprehenſions, till I have more cer-'tain confirmation of your innocence, 'than your bare teſtimony only; 'which, at preſent, has not all the

'weight

'weight with me it had ſome time 'ago.'

'I proteſt, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, who was ſtrangely perplexed, 'I have reaſon to think my caſe extremely hard, ſince I have brought 'myſelf to be ſuſpected by you, only 'through my eagerneſs to find you, 'and ſolicitude for your welfare.'

'Doubtleſs,' interrupted Arabella, 'if you are innocent, your caſe is extremely hard; yet it is not ſingular; 'and therefore you have leſs reaſon 'to complain: the valiant Coriolanus, 'who was the moſt paſſionate and 'faithful lover imaginable, having, by 'his admirable valour, aſſiſted the raviſhers of his adored Cleopatra, 'againſt thoſe who came to reſcue her, 'and by his arm alone, oppoſed to 'great numbers of their enemies, facilitated the execution of their deſign, 'had the mortification afterwards to 'know, that he had all that time been 'fighting againſt that divine princeſs, 'who loaded him with the moſt cruel 'reproaches for the injury he had done 'her: yet fortune was ſo kind as to 'give him the means of repairing his 'fault, and reſtoring him to ſome part 'of her good opinion; for, covered 'with wounds as he was, and fatigued 'with fighting, before; yet he undertook, in that condition, to prevent 'her raviſhers from carrying her off; 'and, for ſeveral hours, continued 'fighting alone with near two hundred 'men, who were not able to overcome 'him, notwithſtanding his extreme 'wearineſs, and the multitude of 'blows which they aimed at him; 'therefore, Glanville, conſidering you, 'as Cleopatra did that unfortunate 'prince, who was before ſuſpected by 'her, as neither guilty nor innocent, I 'can only, like her, wiſh you may find 'ſome occaſion of juſtifying yourſelf 'from the crime laid to your charge. 'Till then, I muſt be under a neceſſity 'of baniſhing you from my preſence, 'with the ſame conſolatory ſpeech ſhe 'uſed to that unfortunate prince— 'Go, therefore, Glanville, go, and 'endeavour your own juſtification; I 'deſire you ſhould effect it no leſs 'than you do yourſelf; and if my 'prayers, can obtain from Heaven 'this favour for you, I ſhall not 'ſcruple to offer ſome *in your behalf.*'

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH THE INTERVIEW IS ENDED, NOT MUCH TO THE LOVER'S SATISFACTION, BUT EXACTLY CONFORMABLE TO THE RULES OF ROMANCE.

ARABELLA, when ſhe had pronounced theſe words, bluſhed exceſſively, thinking ſhe had ſaid too much: but, not ſeeing any ſigns of extreme joy in the face of Glanville, who was ſilently curſing Cleopatra, and the authors of thoſe romances that had ruined ſo noble a mind, and expoſed him to perpetual vexations, by the unaccountable whims they had raiſed— 'Why are you not gone,' ſaid ſhe, 'while I am in an humour not to repent of the favour I have ſhewn you?'

'You muſt excuſe me, couſin,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, peeviſhly, 'If I do not 'think ſo highly as you do of the favour. Pray how am I obliged to 'you for depriving me of the pleaſure 'of ſeeing you, and ſending me on a 'wild-gooſe chace, after occaſions to 'juſtify myſelf of a crime I am wholly innocent of, and would ſcorn to 'commit?'

'Though' reſumed Arabella, with great calmneſs, 'I have reaſon to be 'diſſatisfied with the cool and unthankful manner in which you receive my 'indulgence, yet I ſhall not change the 'favourable diſpoſition I am in towards you, unleſs you provoke me 'to it by new acts of diſobedience: 'therefore, in the language of Cleopatra, I ſhall tell you——'

'Upon my ſoul, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'I have no patience with 'that rigorous gipſey, whoſe example 'you follow ſo exactly, to my ſorrow: 'ſpeak in your own language, I beſeech you; for I am ſure neither 'hers, nor any one's upon earth, can 'excel it.'

'Yet,' ſaid Arabella, ſtriving to repreſs ſome inclination to ſmile at this ſally, 'notwithſtanding your unjuſt 'prohibitions, I ſhall make uſe of the 'language of that incomparable lady, 'to tell you my thoughts; which are, 'that it is poſſible you might be ſufficiently juſtified in my apprehenſions,

'by

'by the anxiety it now appears you 'had for my ſafety, by the probability 'which I find in your diſcourſe, and 'the good opinion I have of you, 'were it not requiſite to make your in-'nocence apparent to the world, that 'ſo it might be lawful for Arabella to 're-admit you, with honour, into her 'former eſteem and friendſhip.'

Mr. Glanville, ſeeing it would be in vain to attempt to make her alter her fantaſtical determination at this time, went out of the cloſet without deigning to make any reply to his ſentence, though delivered in the language of the admirable Cleopatra: but his ill-humour was ſo viſible in his face, that Arabella, who miſtook it for an exceſs of deſpair, could not help feeling ſome kind of pity for the rigour which the laws of honour and romance obliged her to uſe him with. And while ſhe ſat meditating upon the ſcene which had juſt paſſed, Mr. Glanville returned to his own room, glad that his ſiſter, not being in Arabella's chamber, where he had left her, had no opportunity of obſerving his diſcontent, which ſhe would not fail to enquire the cauſe of.

Here he ſat, ruminating upon the follies of Arabella, which he found grew more glaring ever day: every thing furniſhed matter for ſome new extravagance; her character was ſo ridiculous, that he could propoſe nothing to himſelf but eternal ſhame and diſquiet, in the poſſeſſion of a woman for whom he muſt always bluſh and be in pain. But her beauty had made a deep impreſſion on his heart; he admired the ſtrength of her underſtanding, her lively wit, the ſweetneſs of her temper, and a thouſand amiable qualities which diſtinguiſhed her from the reſt of her ſex: her follies, when oppoſed to all thoſe charms of mind and perſon, ſeemed inconſiderable and weak; and though they were capable of giving him great uneaſineſs, yet they could not leſſen a paſſion which every ſight of her ſo much the more confirmed.

As he feared it was impoſſible to help loving her, his happineſs depended upon curing her of her romantick notions; and though he knew not how to effect ſuch a change in her as was neceſſary to compleat it, yet he would not deſpair, but comforted himſelf with hopes of what he had not courage to attempt. Sometimes he fancied company, and an acquaintance with the world, would produce the alteration he wiſhed: yet he dreaded to ſee her expoſed to ridicule by her fantaſtical behaviour, and become the jeſt of perſons who were not poſſeſſed of half her underſtanding.

While he traverſed his chamber, wholly engroſſed by theſe reflections, Miſs Glanville was entertaining Sir George, of whoſe coming ſhe was informed while ſhe was in Arabella's chamber.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS GREATLY DISAPPOINTED.

MISS Glanville, ſuppoſing her brother would be glad not to be interrupted in his conference with Lady Bella, did not allow any one to acquaint them with Sir George's viſit; and telling the baronet her couſin was indiſpoſed, had by theſe means all his converſation to herſelf.

Sir George, who ardently wiſhed to ſee Lady Bella, protracted his viſit, in hopes that he ſhould have that ſatisfaction before he went away. And that fair lady, whoſe thoughts were a little diſcompoſed by the deſpair ſhe apprehended Mr. Glanville was in, and fearful of the conſequences, when ſhe had ſat ſometime after he left her, ruminating upon what had happened, quitted her cloſet, to go and enquire of Miſs Glanville in what condition his mind ſeemed to be when he went away; for ſhe never doubted but that he was gone, like Coriolanus, to ſeek out for ſome occaſion to manifeſt his innocence.

Hearing, therefore, the voice of that lady, who was talking and laughing very loud in one of the ſummer-parlours, and being terrified with the apprehenſion that it was her brother with whom ſhe was thus diverting herſelf, ſhe opened the door of the room precipitately, and by her entrance filled Sir George with extreme pleaſure; while her unexpected ſight produced a quite contrary effect on Miſs Glanville.

Arabella, eaſed of her fear that it was Mr. Glanville, who, inſtead of dying with deſpair, was giving occaſion

ſion for that noiſy laugh of his ſiſter, ſaluted the baronet with great civility; and, turning to Miſs Glanville, 'I 'muſt needs chide you,' ſaid ſhe, 'for 'the inſenſibility with which it appears 'you have parted with your brother.'

'Bleſs me, Madam!' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'what do you mean? 'Whither is my brother gone?'

'That, indeed, I am quite ignorant 'of,' reſumed Arabella; 'and I ſup-'poſe he himſelf hardly knows what 'courſe he ſhall take: but he has been 'with you, doubtleſs, to take his 'leave.'

"Take his leave!" repeated Miſs Glanville: 'has he left the caſtle ſo 'ſuddenly then, and gone away with-'out me?'

'The enterprize upon which he is 'gone,' ſaid Arabella, 'would not 'admit of a lady's company: and, 'ſince he has left ſo conſiderable an 'hoſtage with me as yourſelf, I expect 'he will not be long before he return, 'and, I hope, to the ſatisfaction of us 'both.'

Miſs Glanville, who could not penetrate into the meaning of her couſin's words, began to be ſtrangely alarmed: but preſently, ſuppoſing ſhe had a mind to divert herſelf with her fears, ſhe recovered herſelf, and told her ſhe would go up to her brother's chamber, and look for him.

Arabella did not offer to prevent her, being very deſirous of knowing whether he had not left a letter for her upon his table, as was the cuſtom in thoſe caſes: and, while ſhe was gone, Sir George ſeized the opportunity of ſaying an hundred gallant things to her, which ſhe received with great indifference; the moſt extravagant compliments being what ſhe expected from all men: and provided they did not directly preſume to tell her they loved her, no ſort of flattery or adulation could diſpleaſe her.

In the mean time, Miſs Glanville having found her brother in his chamber, repeated to him what Lady Bella had ſaid, as ſhe ſuppoſed, to fright her.

Mr. Glanville hearing this, and that Sir George was with her, haſtened to them as faſt as poſſible, that he might interrupt the fooliſh ſtories he did not doubt ſhe was telling.

Upon Miſs Granville's appearance with her brother, Arabella was aſtoniſhed.

'I apprehended, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that 'you were ſome miles from the caſtle 'by this time: but your delay and in-'difference convince me you neither 'expect nor wiſh to find the means of 'being juſtified in my opinion.'

'Pray, couſin,' interrupted Glanville, ſpeaking ſoftly to her, 'let us 'leave this diſpute to ſome other 'time.'

'No, Sir,' reſumed ſhe, aloud, 'my 'honour is concerned in your juſtifi-'cation: nor is it fit I ſhould ſubmit 'to have the appearance of amity for 'a perſon who has not yet ſufficiently 'cleared himſelf of a crime, with too 'much reaſon, laid to his charge. Did 'Coriolanus, think you, act in this 'manner? Ah! if he had, doubtleſs 'Cleopatra would never have pardoned 'him: nor will I any longer ſuffer you 'to give me repeated cauſes of diſ-'content.'

Sir George, ſeeing confuſion in Mr. Glanville's countenance, and rage in Arabella's, began to think that what he had at firſt took for a jeſt, was a ſerious quarrel between them, at which it was not proper he ſhould be preſent; and was preparing to go, when Arabella, ſtopping him with a graceful action—

'If, noble ſtranger,' ſaid ſhe, 'you 'are ſo partial to the failings of a 'friend, that you will undertake to de-'fend any unjuſtifiable action he may 'be guilty of, you are at liberty to de-'part: but if you will promiſe to be 'an unprejudiced hearer of the diſpute 'between Mr. Glanville and myſelf, 'you ſhall know the adventure which 'has given riſe to it; and will be 'judge of the reaſonableneſs of the 'commands I have laid on him.'

'Though, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, bowing very low to her, 'Mr. Glan-'ville is my friend, yet there is no 'likelihood I ſhall eſpouſe his intereſt 'againſt yours: and a very ſtrong pre-'poſſeſſion I feel in favour of you, al-'ready perſuades me that I ſhall give 'ſentence on your ſide, ſince you have 'honoured me ſo far as to conſtitute 'me judge of this difference.'

The ſolemn manner in which Sir George (who began to ſuſpect Lady Bella's peculiar turn, ſpoke this, pleaſed

her infinitely; while Mr. Glanville, vexed as he was, could hardly forbear laughing: when Arabella, after a look of approbation to Sir George, replied—

'I find I have unwillingly engaged 'myself to more than I first intended: 'for, to enable you to judge clearly 'of the matter in diſpute, it is neceſſary 'you ſhould know my whole hiſtory.'

Mr. Glanville, at this word, not being able to conſtrain himſelf, uttered a groan of the ſame nature with thoſe which are often heard in the pit at the repreſentation of a new play. Sir George underſtood him perfectly well, yet ſeemed ſurprized; and Arabella, ſtarting up—

'Since,' ſaid ſhe, 'I have given you 'no new cauſe of complaint, pray from 'whence proceeds this increaſe of af-'fliction?'

'I aſſure you, couſin,' anſwered he, 'my affliction, if you pleaſe to term it 'ſo, increaſes every day, and I believe 'it will make me mad at laſt; for this 'unaccountable humour of yours is 'not to be borne.'

'You do not ſeem,' replied Arabella, 'to be far from madneſs already; 'and if your friend here, upon hearing 'the paſſages between us, ſhould pronounce you guilty, I ſhall be at a loſs 'whether I ought to treat you as a 'madman, or a criminal.—Sir,' added ſhe, turning to Sir George, 'you will 'excuſe me, if, for certain reaſons, I 'can neither give you my hiſtory myſelf, nor be preſent at the relation of 'it: one of my women, who is moſt 'in my confidence, ſhall acquaint you 'with all the particulars of my life; 'after which I expect Mr. Glanville 'will abide by your deciſion, as, I 'aſſure myſelf, I ſhall be contented 'to do.'

Saying this ſhe went out of the parlour, in order to prepare Lucy for the recital ſhe was to make.

Mr. Glanville, reſolving not to be preſent at this new abſurdity, ran out after her, and went into the garden, with a ſtrong inclination to hate the lovely viſionary who gave him ſuch perpetual uneaſineſs; leaving his ſiſter alone with the baronet, who diverted herſelf extremely with the thoughts of hearing her couſin's hiſtory, aſſuring the baronet that he might expect ſomething very curious in it, and find matter ſufficient to laugh at; for ſhe was the moſt whimſical woman in the world.

Sir George, who reſolved to profit by the knowledge of her foible, made very little reply to Miſs Glanville's ſneers; but waited patiently for the promiſed hiſtory, which was much longer coming than he imagined.

CHAP. V.

SOME CURIOUS INSTRUCTIONS FOR RELATING AN HISTORY.

ARABELLA, as ſoon as ſhe left them, went up to her apartment; and calling Lucy into her cloſet, told her, that ſhe had made choice of her, ſince ſhe was beſt acquainted with her thoughts, to relate her hiſtory to her couſins, and a perſon of quality who was with them.

'Sure your ladyſhip jeſts with me,' ſaid Lucy. 'How can I make a hiſtory 'about your ladyſhip?'

'There is no occaſion,' replied Arabella, 'for you to make a hiſtory; 'there are accidents enough in my life 'to afford matter for a long one: all 'you have to do is to relate them as 'exactly as poſſible. You have lived 'with me from my childhood, and are 'inſtructed in all my adventures; ſo 'that you muſt be certainly very capable of executing the taſk I have 'honoured you with.'

'Indeed,' ſaid Lucy, 'I muſt beg 'your ladyſhip will excuſe me: I never 'could tell how to repeat a ſtory when 'I have read it; and I know it is not 'ſuch ſimple girls as I can tell hiſtories; 'it is only fit for clerks, and ſuch ſort 'of people, that are very learned.'

'You are learned enough for that 'purpoſe,' ſaid Arabella; 'and if you 'make ſo much difficulty in performing this part of your duty, pray how 'came you to imagine you were fit for 'my ſervice, and the diſtinction I have 'favoured you with? Did you ever 'hear of any woman that refuſed to 'relate her lady's ſtory when deſired? 'Therefore, if you hope to poſſeſs my 'favour and confidence any longer, 'acquit yourſelf handſomely of this 'taſk to which I have preferred you.'

Lucy, terrified at the diſpleaſure ſhe ſaw in her lady's countenance, begged her to tell her what ſhe muſt ſay.

'Well!'

'Well!' exclaimed Arabella; 'I am 'certainly the moſt unfortunate wo-'man in the world! Every thing hap-'pens to me in a contrary manner from 'any other perſon! Here, inſtead of 'my deſiring you to ſoften thoſe parts 'of my hiſtory where you have greateſt 'room to flatter, and to conceal, if 'poſſible, ſome of thoſe diſorders my 'beauty has occaſioned, you aſk me to 'tell you what you muſt ſay, as if it 'was not neceſſary you ſhould know 'as well as myſelf, and be able not 'only to recount all my words and 'actions, even the ſmalleſt and moſt in-'conſiderable, but alſo all my thoughts, 'however inſtantaneous; relate exact-'ly every change of my countenance, 'number all my ſmiles, half-ſmiles, 'bluſhes, turnings pale, glances, pau-'ſes, full-ſtops, interruptions; the riſe 'and falling of my voice, every motion 'of my eyes, and every geſture which 'I have uſed for theſe ten years paſt; 'nor omit the ſmalleſt circumſtance 'that relates to me.'

'Lord bleſs me, Madam!' ſaid Lu-cy, exceſſively aſtoniſhed, 'I never, till 'this moment, it ſeems, knew the hun-'dredth thouſandth part of what was 'expected from me: I am ſure, if I 'had, I would never have gone to ſer-'vice; for I might well know I was 'not fit for ſuch ſlavery.'

'There is no ſuch great ſlavery in 'doing all I have mentioned to you,' interrupted Arabella: 'it requires, in-'deed, a good memory, in which I 'never thought you deficient; for you 'are punctual to the greateſt degree of 'exactneſs in recounting every thing 'one deſires to hear from you.'

Lucy, whom this praiſe ſoothed into good-humour, and flattered with a be-lief that ſhe was able, with a little in-ſtruction, to perform what her lady re-quired, told her, if ſhe pleaſed only to put her in a way how to tell her hiſtory, ſhe would engage, after doing it once, to tell it again whenever ſhe was de-ſired.

Arabella being obliged to comply with this odd requeſt, for which there was no precedent in all the romances her library was ſtuffed with, began to inform her in this manner—

'Firſt,' ſaid ſhe, 'you muſt relate 'my birth, which you know is very 'illuſtrious; and becauſe I am willing 'to ſpare you the trouble of repeating 'things that are not abſolutely ne-'ceſſary, you muſt apologize to your 'hearers for ſlipping over what paſſed 'in my infancy, and the firſt eight or 'ten years of my life; not failing, 'however, to remark, that, from ſome 'ſprightly ſallies of imagination, at 'thoſe early years, thoſe about the 'conceived marvellous hopes of my 'future underſtanding: from thence 'you muſt proceed to an accurate de-'ſcription of my perſon.'

'What, Madam!' interrupted Lu-cy, 'muſt I tell what ſort of perſon 'you have, to people who have ſeen 'you but a moment ago?'

'Queſtionleſs you muſt,' replied Arabella; 'and herein you follow the 'examples of all the ſquires and maids 'who relate their maſters and ladies 'hiſtories; for though it be to a bro-'ther, or near relation, who has ſeen 'them a thouſand times, yet they never 'omit an exact account of their per-'ſons.'

'Very well, Madam,' ſaid Lucy: 'I ſhall be ſure not to forget that part 'of my ſtory. I wiſh I was as perfect 'in all the reſt.'

'Then, Lucy, you muſt repeat all 'the converſations I ever held with 'you upon the ſubjects of love and 'gallantry, that your audience may be 'ſo well acquainted with my humour, 'as to know exactly, before they are 'told, how I ſhall behave, in what-'ever adventures befal me.—After 'that, you may proceed to tell them 'how a noble unknown ſaw me at 'church: how prodigiouſly he was 'ſtruck with my appearance; the tu-'multuous thoughts that this firſt view 'of me occaſioned in his mind.'

'Indeed, Madam,' interrupted Lu-cy again, 'I can't pretend to tell his 'thoughts; for how ſhould I know 'what they were? None but himſelf 'can tell that.'

'However that may be,' ſaid Ara-bella, 'I expect that you ſhould de-'cypher all his thoughts, as plainly as 'he himſelf could do; otherwiſe my 'hiſtory will be very imperfect. Well, 'I ſuppoſe you are at no loſs about 'that whole adventure, in which you 'yourſelf bore ſo great a ſhare; ſo I 'need not give you any farther in-'ſtructions concerning it: only you 'muſt be ſure, as I ſaid before, not 'to omit the leaſt circumſtance in my

'behaviour, but relate every thing I 'did, said, and thought, upon that 'occasion. The disguised gardener 'must appear next in your story: here 'you will of necessity be a-little de-'ficient, since you are not able to ac-'quaint your hearers with his true 'name and quality; which, question-'less, is very illustrious. However, 'above all, I must charge you not to 'mention that egregious mistake about 'the carp; for you know how—'

Here Miss Glanville's entrance put a stop to the instructions Lucy was receiving; for she told Arabella, that Sir George was gone.

'How!' returned she, 'is he gone? 'Truly I am not much obliged to him 'for the indifference he has shewed to 'hear my story.'

'Why really, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, 'neither of us expected you 'would be as good as your word, you 'were so long in sending your woman 'down; and my brother persuaded Sir 'George you were only in jest; and 'Sir George has carried him home to 'dinner.'

'And is it at Sir George's,' replied Arabella, 'that your brother hopes to 'meet with an occasion of clearing 'himself? He is either very insensible 'of my anger, or very conscious of 'his own innocence.'

Miss Glanville, having nothing to say in answer to an accusation she did not understand, changed the discourse; and the two ladies passed the rest of the day together, with tolerable good-humour on Miss Glanville's side; who was in great hopes of making a conquest of the baronet, before whom Arabella had made herself ridiculous enough: but that lady was far from being at ease; she had laid herself under a necessity of banishing Mr. Glanville, if he did not give her some convincing proof of his innocence; which, as matters stood, she thought would be very hard for him to procure; and, as she could not absolutely believe him guilty, she was concerned she had gone so far.

CHAP. VI.

A VERY HEROICK CHAPTER.

MR. Glanville, coming home in the evening, a little elevated with the wine, of which he had drank too freely at Sir George's, being told the ladies were together, entered the room where they were sitting; and, beholding Arabella, whose pensiveness had given an inchanting softness to her face, with a look of extreme admiration—

'Upon my soul, cousin,' said he, 'if you continue to treat me so cruelly, 'you'll drive me mad. How I could 'adore you this moment,' added he, gazing passionately at her, 'if I might 'but hope you did not hate me!'

Arabella, who did not perceive the condition he was in, was better pleased with this address than any he had ever used; and, therefore, instead of chiding him, as she was wont, for the freedom of his expressions, she cast her bright eyes upon the ground with so charming a confusion, that Glanville, quite transported, threw himself on his knees before her; and, taking her hand, attempted to press it to his lips: but she, hastily withdrawing it—

'From whence is this new boldness?' said she. 'And what is it 'you would implore by that prostrate 'posture? I have told you already 'upon what conditions I will grant 'you my pardon. Clear yourself of 'being an accomplice with my design-'ed ravisher, and I am ready to restore 'you to my esteem.'

'Let me perish, Madam,' returned Glanville, 'if I would not die to 'please you, this moment!'

'It is not your death that I require,' said she: 'and though you should never 'be able to justify yourself in my 'opinion, yet you might, haply, ex-'piate your crime by a less punish-'ment than death.'

'What shall I do, then, my an-'gelick cousin?' resumed he.

'Truly,' said she, 'the sense of 'your offence ought so mortally to 'afflict you, that you should invent 'some strange kind of penance for 'yourself, severe enough to prove your 'penitence sincere.—You know, I sup-'pose, what the unfortunate Orontes 'did, when he found he had wronged 'his adored Thalestris by an injurious 'suspicion.'

'I wish he had hanged himself!' said Mr. Glanville, rising up in a passion, at seeing her again in her altitudes.

'And why, pray, Sir,' said Arabella, 'are you so severe upon that

'poor

'poor prince; who was, haply, infi-
'nitely more innocent than yourſelf.'

'Severe, Madam!' ſaid Glanville, fearing he had offended her. 'Why, 'to be ſure, he was a ſad ſcoundrel to 'uſe his adored Thaleſtris as he did: 'and I think one cannot be too ſevere 'upon him.'

'But,' returned Arabella, 'appearances were againſt her; and he 'had ſome ſhadow of reaſon for his 'jealouſy and rage: then, you know, 'amidſt all his tranſports, he could 'not be prevailed upon to draw his 'ſword againſt her.'

'What did that ſignify?' ſaid Glanville. 'I ſuppoſe he ſcorned to draw 'his ſword upon a woman: that would 'have been a ſhame indeed.'

'That woman, Sir,' reſumed Arabella, 'was not ſuch a contemptible 'antagoniſt as you think her: and 'men as valiant, poſſibly, as Orontes '(though, queſtionleſs, he was one 'of the moſt valiant men in the world) 'have been cut in pieces by the ſword 'of that brave Amazon.'

'Lord bleſs me!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'I ſhould be afraid to look at 'ſuch a terrible woman: I am ſure ſhe 'muſt be a very maſculine ſort of 'creature.'

'You are much miſtaken, Miſs,' ſaid Arabella: 'for Thelaſtris, though 'the moſt ſtout and courageous of 'her ſex, was, nevertheleſs, a per-'fect beauty; and had as much har-'mony and ſoftneſs in her looks and 'perſon, as ſhe had courage in her 'heart, and ſtrength in her blows.'

'Indeed, Madam,' reſumed Miſs Glanville, 'you can never perſuade 'me, that a woman who can fight, 'and cut people to pieces with their 'blows, can have any ſoftneſs in her 'perſon: ſhe muſt needs have very 'maſculine hands, that could give ſuch 'terrible blows; and I can have no 'notion of the harmony of a perſon's 'looks, who, by what you ſay, muſt 'have the heart of a tyger. But, in-'deed, I don't think there ever could 'be ſuch a woman.'

'What, Miſs!' interrupted Arabella: 'do you pretend to doubt, that 'there ever was ſuch a perſon as Tha-'leſtris, Queen of the Amazons? Does 'not all the world know the adven-'tures of that illuſtrious princeſs; her 'affection for the unjuſt Orontes, who 'accuſed her of having a ſcandalous 'intrigue with Alexander, whom ſhe 'went to meet, with a very different 'deſign, upon the borders of her king-'dom; the injurious letter he wrote 'her, upon this ſuſpicion, made her 'reſolve to ſeek for him all over the 'world, to give him that death he had 'merited, by her own hand: and it 'was in thoſe rencounters that he had 'with her; while ſhe was thus incenſed, 'that he forebore to defend himſelf 'againſt her, though her ſword was 'often pointed to his breaſt.'

'But, Madam,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'pray what became of this 'queen of the Amazons? Was ſhe not 'killed at the ſiege of Troy?'—'She 'never was at the ſiege of Troy,' returned Arabella: 'but ſhe aſſiſted the 'princes who beſieged Babylon, to 'recover the liberty of Statira and 'Pariſates; and it was in the oppoſite 'party that ſhe met with her faithleſs 'lover.'

'If he was faithleſs, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'he deſerved to die; 'and I wiſh, with all my ſoul, ſhe had 'cut him in pieces with that famous 'ſword of hers that had done ſuch 'wonders.'

'Yet this faithleſs man,' reſumed Arabella, 'whom you ſeem to have 'ſuch an averſion to, gave ſo glorious 'a proof of his repentance and ſor-'row that the fair queen reſtored him 'to her favour, and held him in much 'dearer affection than ever: for, after 'he was convinced of her innocence, 'he was reſolved to puniſh himſelf 'with a rigour equal to the fault he 'had been guilty of; and, retiring to 'the woods, abandoned for ever the 'ſociety of men; dwelling in a cave, 'and living upon bitter herbs, paſſing 'the days and nights in continual tears 'and ſorrow for his crime: and here 'he propoſed to end his life, had not 'the fair Thaleſtris found him out in 'this ſolitude; and, ſtruck with the 'ſincerity of his repentance, pardoned 'him; and, as I have ſaid before, re-'ſtored him to her favour.'

'And to ſhew you,' ſaid Glanville, 'that I am capable of doing as 'much for you, I will, if you inſiſt 'upon it, ſeek out for ſome cave, and 'do penance in it, like that Orontes, 'provided

'provided you will come and fetch me 'out of it, as that ſame fair queen 'did him.'

'I do not require ſo much of you,' ſaid Arabella; 'for I told you be'fore, that, haply, you are juſtified 'already in my opinion; but yet it is 'neceſſary, you ſhould find out ſome 'method of convincing the world of 'your innocence; otherwiſe it is not 'fit I ſhould live with you upon terms 'of friendſhip and civility.'

'Well, well, Madam,' ſaid Glanville, 'I'll convince you of my inno'cence, by bringing that raſcal's head 'to you, whom you ſuſpect I was in'clined to aſſiſt in ſtealing you away.'

'If you do that,' reſumed Arabella, 'doubtleſs you will be juſtified 'in my opinion, and the world's alſo; 'and I ſhall have no ſcruple to treat 'you with as much friendſhip as I did 'before.'

'My brother is much obliged to you, 'Madam,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'for putting him upon an action 'that would coſt him his life!'

'I have ſo good an opinion of your 'brother's valour,' ſaid Arabella, 'that I am perſuaded he will find no 'difficulty in performing his promiſe; 'and I make no queſtion but I ſhall 'ſee him covered with the ſpoils of that 'impoſtor, who would have betrayed 'me; and I flatter myſelf, he will be in 'a condition to bring me his head, as 'he bravely promiſes, without endan'gering his own life.'

'Does your ladyſhip conſider,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'that my brother can 'take away no perſon's life whatever, 'without endangering his own?'

'I conſider, Madam,' ſaid Arabella, 'your brother as a man poſſeſ'ſed of virtue and courage enough to 'undertake to kill all my enemies and 'perſecutors, though I had ever ſo 'many; and I preſume he would be 'able to perform as many glorious ac'tions for my ſervice, as either Juba, 'Cæſario, Artamenes, or Artaban, 'who, though not a prince, was greater 'than any of them.'

'If thoſe perſons you have named,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'were murderers, 'and made a practice of killing people, 'I hope my brother will be too wiſe 'to follow their examples: a ſtrange 'kind of virtue and courage, indeed, 'to take away the lives of one's fel'low-creatures! How did ſuch wretch'es eſcape the gallows, I wonder?'

'I perceive,' interrupted Arabella, 'what kind of apprehenſions you have; 'I ſuppoſe you think, if your brother 'was to kill my enemy, the law 'would puniſh him for it; but pray 'undeceive yourſelf, Miſs: the law has 'no power over heroes; they may kill 'as many men as they pleaſe, without 'being called to any account for it; 'and the more lives they take away, 'the greater is their reputation for vir'tue and glory. The illuſtrious Ar'taban, from the condition of a private 'man, raiſed himſelf to the ſublimeſt 'pitch of glory by his valour; for he 'not only would win half a dozen 'battles in a day; but, to ſhew that 'victory followed him wherever he 'went, he would change parties, and 'immediately the vanquiſhed became 'conquerors; then, returning to the 'ſide he had quitted, changed the 'laurels of his former friends into 'chains. He made nothing of tum'bling kings from their thrones, and 'giving away half a dozen crowns in 'a morning; for his generoſity was 'equal to his courage; and to this 'height of power did he raiſe himſelf 'by his ſword. Beginning at firſt 'with petty conqueſts, and not diſ'daining to oppoſe his glorious arm to 'ſometimes leſs than a ſcore of his 'enemies; ſo, by degrees, enuring 'himſelf to conquer inconſiderable 'numbers, he came at laſt to be the 'terror of whole armies, who would 'fly at the ſight of his ſingle ſword.'

'This is all very aſtoniſhing, in'deed,' ſaid Miſs Glanville: 'however, 'I muſt intreat you not to inſiſt upon 'my brother's quarrelling and fighting 'with people, ſince it will be neither 'for your honour, nor his ſafety; for 'I am afraid, if he was to commit 'murder to pleaſe you, the laws would 'make him ſuffer for it; and the world 'would be very free with it's cenſures 'on your ladyſhip's reputation, for put'ting him upon ſuch ſhocking crimes.'

'By your diſcourſe, Miſs,' replied Arabella, 'one would imagine you 'knew as little in what the good re'putation of a lady conſiſts, as the 'ſafety of a man; for certainly the 'one depends entirely upon his ſword, 'and the other upon the noiſe and 'buſtle ſhe makes in the world. The

'blood

'blood that is ſhed for a lady enhances the value of her charms; and 'the more men a hero kills, the greater his glory, and, by conſequence, 'the more ſecure he is. If to be the 'cauſe of a great many deaths can 'make a lady infamous, certainly none 'were ever more ſo than Mandana, 'Cleopatra, and Statira, the moſt illuſtrious names in antiquity; for 'each of whom, haply, an hundred 'thouſand men were killed; yet none 'were ever ſo unjuſt as to profane the 'virtue of thoſe divine beauties, by 'caſting any cenſures upon them for 'theſe glorious effects of their charms, 'and the heroick valour of their admirers.'

'I muſt confeſs,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'I ſhould not be ſorry to 'have a duel or two fought for me in 'Hyde Park; but then I would not 'have any blood ſhed for the world.'

Glanville here interrupting his ſiſter with a laugh, Arabella alſo could not forbear ſmiling at the harmleſs kind of combats her couſin was fond of.

But to put an end to the converſation, and the diſpute which gave riſe to it, ſhe obliged Mr. Glanville to promiſe to fight with the impoſtor Edward, whenever he found him; and either take away his life, or force him to confeſs, he had no part in the deſign he had meditated againſt her.

This being agreed upon, Arabella, conducting Miſs Glanville to her chamber, retired to her own; and paſſed the night with much greater tranquillity, than ſhe had done the preceding; being ſatisfied with the care ſhe had taken of her own glory, and perſuaded that Glanville was not unfaithful, a circumſtance that was of more conſequence to her happineſs, than ſhe was yet aware of.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS SUSPECTED OF INSENSIBILITY.

WHILE theſe things paſſed at the caſtle, Sir George was meditating on the means he ſhould uſe to acquire the eſteem of Lady Bella, of whoſe perſon he was a little enamoured, but of her fortune a great deal more. By the obſervations he had made on her behaviour, he diſcovered her peculiar turn; he was well read in romances himſelf, and had actually employed himſelf ſome weeks in giving a new verſion of the Grand Cyrus; but the prodigious length of the taſk he had undertaken, terrified him ſo much that he gave it over: nevertheleſs, he was perfectly well acquainted with the chief characters in moſt of the French romances; could tell every thing that was borrowed from them in all the new novels that came out; and, being a very accurate critick, and a mortal hater of Dryden, ridiculed him for want of invention, as it appeared by his having recourſe to theſe books for the moſt ſhining characters and incidents in his plays. Almanzor, he would ſay, was the copy of the famous Artaban in Cleopatra, whoſe exploits Arabella had expatiated upon to Miſs Glanville and her brother: his admired character of Melantha in Marriage A-la-mode, was drawn from Berniſſa in the Grand Cyrus; and the ſtory of Oſmyn and Benſayda, in his Conqueſt of Grenada, taken from Seſoſtris and Timerilla in that romance.

Fraught, therefore, with the knowledge of all the extravagances and peculiarities in thoſe books, he reſolved to make his addreſſes to Arabella in the form they preſcribed; and, not having delicacy enough to be diſguſted with the ridicule in her character, ſerved himſelf with her foible to effect his deſigns.

It being neceſſary, in order to his better acquaintance with Arabella, to be upon very friendly terms with Miſs Glanville and her brother, he ſaid a thouſand gallant things to the one, and ſeemed ſo little offended with the gloom he obſerved upon the countenance of the other, who poſitively aſſured him, that Arabella meant only to laugh at him, when ſhe promiſed him her hiſtory, that he intreated him with the moſt obliging earneſtneſs, to favour him with his company at his houſe, where he omitted no ſort of civility, to confirm their friendſhip and intimacy; and perſuaded him, by ſeveral little and ſeemingly unguarded expreſſions, that he was not ſo great an admirer of Lady Bella, as her agreeable couſin Miſs Glanville.

Having thus ſecured a footing in the caſtle, he furniſhed his memory with all

all the neceſſary rules of making love in Arabella's taſte, and deferred his next viſit no longer than till the following day; but Mr. Glanville being indiſpoſed, and not able to ſee company, he knew it would be in vain to expect to ſee Arabella, ſince it was not to be imagined Miſs Glanville could admit of a viſit, her brother being ill; and Lady Bella muſt be alſo neceſſarily engaged with her.

Contenting himſelf, therefore, with having enquired after the health of the two ladies, he returned home, not a little vexed at his diſappointment.

Mr. Glanville's indiſpoſition increaſing every day, grew at laſt dangerous enough to fill his ſiſter with extreme apprehenſions. Arabella, keeping up to her forms, ſent regularly every day to enquire after his health; but did not offer to go into his chamber, though Miſs Glanville was almoſt always there.

As ſhe conceived his ſickneſs to be occaſioned by the violence of his paſſion for her, ſhe expected ſome overture ſhould be made her by his ſiſter, to engage her to make him a viſit; ſuch a favour being never granted by any lady to a ſick lover, till ſhe was previouſly informed her preſence was neceſſary to hinder the increaſe of his diſtemper.

Miſs Glanville would not have failed to repreſent to her couſin the incivility and careleſſneſs of her behaviour, in not deigning to come and ſee her brother in his indiſpoſition, had not Mr. Glanville, imputing this neglect to the nicety of her notions, which he had upon other occaſions experienced, abſolutely forbid her to ſay any thing to her couſin upon this ſubject.

Miſs Glanville being thus forced to ſilence, by the fear of giving her brother uneaſineſs, Arabella was extremely diſappointed to find, that, in five days illneſs, no application had been made to her, either by the ſick lover, or his ſiſter, who ſhe thought intereſted herſelf too little in his recovery; ſo that her glory obliging her to lay ſome conſtraint upon herſelf, ſhe behaved with a coolneſs and inſenſibility, that increaſed Miſs Glanville's averſion to her, while, in reality, ſhe was extremely concerned for her couſin's illneſs; but not ſuppoſing it dangerous, ſince they had not recourſe to the uſual remedy of beſeeching a viſit from the perſon whoſe preſence was alone able to work a cure, ſhe reſolved to wait patiently the event.

However, ſhe never failed in her reſpect to Miſs Glanville, whom ſhe viſited every morning before ſhe went to her brother; and alſo conſtantly dined with her in her own apartment, enquiring always, with great ſweetneſs, concerning her brother's health; when perceiving her in tears one day as ſhe came in, as uſual, to dine with her, ſhe was extremely alarmed; and aſked with great precipitation if Mr. Glanville was worſe.

'He is ſo bad,' Madam, returned Miſs Glanville, 'that I believe it will 'be neceſſary to ſend for my papa, for 'fear he ſhould die, and he not ſee 'him.'

'Die, Miſs!' interrupted Arabella eagerly: 'No, he muſt not die; and 'ſhall not, if the pity of Arabella is 'powerful enough to make him live. 'Let us go then, couſin,' ſaid ſhe, her eyes ſtreaming with tears; 'let us go 'and viſit this dear brother, whom you 'lament: haply my ſight may repair 'the evils my rigour has cauſed him; 'and ſince, as I imagine, he has for-'borne, through the profound reſpect 'he has for me, to requeſt the favour 'of a viſit, I will voluntarily beſtow 'it on him, as well for the affection I 'bear you, as becauſe I do not wiſh 'his death.'

'You do not wiſh his death, Ma-'dam!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, exceſſively angry at a ſpeech, in her opinion, extremely inſolent. 'Is it ſuch a 'mighty favour, pray, not to wiſh the 'death of my brother, who never in-'jured you? I am ſure your beha-'viour has been ſo extremely inhu-'man, that I have repented a thouſand 'times we ever came to the caſtle.'

'Let us not waſte the time in idle 'reproaches,' ſaid Arabella: 'if my 'rigour has brought your brother into 'this condition, my compaſſion can 'draw him out of it; it is no more 'than what all do ſuffer, who are 'poſſeſſed of a violent paſſion; and few 'lovers ever arrive to the poſſeſſion of 'their miſtreſſes, without being ſeveral 'times brought almoſt to their graves, 'either by their ſeverity, or ſome other 'cauſe; but nothing is more eaſy than 'to work a cure in theſe caſes; for the

'very

Plate II.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. May 24, 1783.

'very ſight of the perſon beloved ſome-
'times does it, as it happened to Ar-
'tamenes, when the divine Mandana
'condeſcended to viſit him: a few
'kind words ſpoken by the fair prin-
'ceſs of Perſia to Oroondates, recalled
'him from the gates of death; and
'one line from Pariſatis's hand, which
'brought a command to Lyſimachus
'to live, made him not only reſolve,
'but even able, to obey her.'

Miſs Glanville, quite out of patience at this tedious harangue, without any regard to ceremony, flounced out of the room, and ran to her brother's chamber, followed by Arabella, who imputed her rude haſte to a ſuſpicion that her brother was worſe.

CHAP. VIII.

BY WHICH WE HOPE THE READER WILL BE DIFFERENTLY AFFECTED.

AT their entrance into the room, Miſs Glanville enquired of the phyſician, juſt going out, how he found her brother; who replied, that his fever was increaſed ſince laſt night, and that it would not (ſeeing Arabella preparing to go to his bedſide) be proper to diſturb him.

Saying this, he bowed, and went out; and Miſs Glanville repeating what the phyſician had ſaid, begged her to defer ſpeaking to him till another time.

'I know,' ſaid ſhe, 'that he ap-
'prehends the ſight of me will cauſe
'ſo many tumultuous motions in the
'ſoul of his patient, as may prove
'prejudicial to him: nevertheleſs, ſince
'his diſorder is, queſtionleſs, more in
'his mind than body, I may prove,
'haply, a better phyſician than he;
'ſince I am more likely than he, to
'cure an illneſs I have cauſed.'

Saying this, ſhe walked up to Mr. Glanville's bed-ſide, who, ſeeing her, thanked her with a weak voice, for coming to ſee him; aſſuring her, he was very ſenſible of the favour ſhe did him—

'You muſt not,' ſaid ſhe, bluſhing, 'thank me too much, leſt I think the 'favour I have done you is really of 'more conſequence than I imagined, 'ſince it merits ſo many acknowledg-'ments. Your phyſician tells us,' purſued ſhe, 'that your life is in dan-'ger; but I perſuade myſelf you will 'value it ſo much from this moment, 'that you will not protract your cure 'any longer.'

'Are you mad, Madam,' whiſpered Miſs Glanville, who ſtood behind her, 'to tell my brother that the phy-'ſician ſays he is in danger? I ſuppoſe 'you really wiſh he may die, or you 'would not talk ſo.'

'If,' anſwered ſhe, whiſpering again to Miſs Glanville, 'you are not ſatis-'fied with what I have already done 'for your brother, I will go as far as 'modeſty will permit me;' and gently pulling open the curtains—

'Glanville,' ſaid ſhe, with a voice too much raiſed for a ſick perſon's ear, 'I grant to your ſiſter's ſollicita-'tions, what the fair Statira did to an 'intereſt yet more powerful, ſince, as 'you know it was her own brother 'who pleaded in favour of the dying 'Orontes; therefore, conſidering you 'in a condition haply no leſs dange-'rous than that of that paſſionate 'prince, I condeſcend, like her, to 'tell you that I do not wiſh your death; 'that I entreat you to live; and, laſt-'ly, by all the power I have over you, 'I command you to recover.'

Ending theſe words, ſhe cloſed the curtain, that her tranſported lover might not ſee her bluſhes and confuſion, which were ſo great, that, to conceal them, even from Miſs Glanville, ſhe hurried out of the room, and retired to her own apartment, expecting, in a little time, to receive a billet, under the ſick man's hand, importing, that in obedience to her commands, he was recovered, and ready to throw himſelf at her feet, to thank her for that life ſhe had beſtowed upon him, and to dedicate the remains of it to her ſervice.

Miſs Glanville, who ſtaid behind her, in a ſtrange ſurprize at her ridiculous behaviour, though ſhe longed to know what her brother thought of it, finding he continued ſilent, would not diſturb him. The ſhame he conceived at hearing ſo abſurd a ſpeech from a woman he paſſionately loved, and the deſire he had not to hear his ſiſter's ſentiments upon it, made him counterfeit ſleep to avoid any diſcourſe with her upon ſo diſagreeable a ſubject.

That day his fever increaſed; and the next, the phyſician pronouncing

him in great danger, a meſſenger was diſpatched to town, to haſten the coming of Sir Charles; and poor Miſs Glanville was quite inconſolable, under the apprehenſions of loſing him.

Arabella, not to derogate from her character, affected great firmneſs of mind upon this occaſion; ſhe uſed the moſt perſuaſive eloquence to moderate her couſin's affliction, and cauſed all imaginable care to be taken of Mr. Glanville: while any one was preſent, her looks diſcovered only a calm and decent ſorrow; yet when ſhe was alone, or had only her dear Lucy with her, ſhe gave free vent to her tears; and diſcovered a grief for Mr. Glanville's illneſs, little different from that ſhe had felt for her father's.

As ſhe now viſited him conſtantly every day, ſhe took an opportunity, when ſhe was alone by his bed-ſide, to chide him for his diſobedience, in not recovering, as ſhe had commanded him.

'Dear couſin,' anſwered he, faintly, 'Can you imagine health is not my 'choice? And do you think I would 'ſuffer theſe pains if I could poſſibly 'eaſe myſelf of them?'

'Thoſe pains,' replied Arabella, miſtaking his complaint, 'ought to 'have ceaſed when the cauſe of them 'did; and when I was no longer ri-'gorous, you ought no longer to have 'ſuffered: but tell me, ſince you are, 'queſtionleſs, one of the ſtrangeſt men 'in the world, and the hardeſt to be 'comforted; nay, and I may add, the 'moſt diſobedient of all that ever wore 'the fetters of love; tell me, I ſay, 'what muſt I do to content you?'

'If I live, couſin,' ſaid Glanville—

'Nay,' interrupted Arabella, 'ſince 'my empire over you is not ſo abſo-'lute as I thought; and ſince you think 'fit to reſerve to yourſelf the liberty 'of dying, contrary to my deſire; I 'think I had better reſolve not to 'make any treaty with you: how-'ever, as I have gone thus far, I will 'do ſomething more; and tell you, 'ſince I have commanded you to live, 'I will alſo permit you to love me, in 'order to make the life I have beſtow-'ed on you, worthy your acceptance. 'Make me no reply,' ſaid ſhe, putting her hand on his mouth; 'but begin 'from this moment to obey me.'

Saying this, ſhe went out of the room—

A few hours after, his fever being come to a height, he grew delirious, and talked very wildly; but a favourable criſis enſuing, he fell into a ſound and quiet ſleep, and continued in it for ſeveral hours: upon his waking, the phyſician declared, his fever was greatly abated; and the next morning pronounced him out of danger—

Miſs Glanville, tranſported with joy, ran to Lady Bella, and informed her of this good news; but as ſhe did not make her the acknowledgments ſhe expected, for being the cauſe of his recovery, ſhe behaved with more reſerve than Miſs Glanville thought was neceſſary; which renewed her former diſguſts; yet, dreading to diſpleaſe her brother, ſhe concealed it from the obſervation of her couſin.

Arabella, being deſirous of compleating her lover's cure by ſome more favourable expreſſions, went to his chamber, accompanied by Miſs Glanville.

'I ſee,' ſaid ſhe, approaching to his bed-ſide, with an inchanting ſmile, 'that you know how to be obedient, 'when you pleaſe; and I begin to 'know, by the price you ſet upon your 'obedience, that ſmall favours will 'not content you.'

'Indeed, my deareſt couſin,' ſaid Glanville, who had found her more intereſted in his recovery than he expected, 'you have been very obliging, 'and I will always moſt gratefully 'own it.'

'I am glad,' interrupted Arabella, 'that gratitude is not baniſhed from 'all your family; and that that perſon 'in it, for whom I have the moſt ſen-'ſibility, is not entirely diveſted of it.'

'I hope,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'my 'ſiſter has given you no cauſe to com-'plain of her.'

'Indeed but ſhe has,' replied Arabella; 'for, notwithſtanding ſhe is 'obliged to me for the life of a brother, 'whom queſtionleſs ſhe loves very well; 'nevertheleſs, ſhe did not deign to 'make me the leaſt acknowledgment 'for what I have done in your favour; 'however, Glanville, provided you 'continue to obſerve that reſpect and 'fidelity towards me, which I have 'reaſon to hope for from you, your

'condition

'condition shall be never the worse 'for Miss Glanville's unacknowledg-'ing temper; and I now confirm the 'grant I yesterday made you, and re-'peat it again; that I permit you to 'love me, and promise you not to be 'displeased at any testimonies you will 'give me of your passion, provided you 'serve me with an inviolable fidelity.'

'But, Madam,' returned Mr. Glanville, 'to make my happiness compleat, 'you must also promise to love me; 'or else what signifies the permission 'you give me to love you?'

'You are almost as unacknowledg-'ing as your sister,' resumed Arabella, blushing; 'and if your health was per-'fectly re-established, questionless, I 'should chide you for your presump-'tion; but since something must be al-'lowed to sick persons, whose reason, 'one may suppose, is weakened by 'their indisposition, I will pardon your 'indiscretion at this time, and counsel 'you to wait patiently for what Hea-'ven will determine in your favour: 'therefore endeavour to merit my af-'fection by your respect, fidelity, and 'services; and hope from my justice 'whatever it ought to bestow.'

Ending this speech with a solemnity of accent that gave Mr. Glanville to understand, any reply would offend her, he silently kissed her fair hand, which she held out to him; a favour, his sickness, and the terms upon which they now were, gave him a right to expect—And, finishing her visit for that time, left him to his repose; being extremely pleased at the prospect of his recovery, and very well satisfied at having so gracefully got over so great a difficulty, as that of giving him permission to love her; for by the laws of romance, when a lady has once given her lover that permission, she may lawfully allow him to talk to her upon the subject of his passion, accept all his gallantries, and claim an absolute empire over all his actions; reserving to herself the right of fixing the time when she may own her affection: and when that important step is taken, and his constancy put to a few years more trial, when he has killed all his rivals, and rescued her from a thousand dangers; she at last condescends to reward him with her hand; and all her adventures are at an end for the future.

END OF THE THIRD BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE DISCOVERS HER KNOWLEDGE IN ASTRONOMY.

SIR George, who had never miſſed a day, during Mr. Glanville's illneſs, in ſending to the caſtle, now he was able to ſee company, viſited him very frequently; and ſometimes had the happineſs to meet with Arabella in his chamber: but knowing the conditions of her father's will, and Mr. Glanville's pretenſions, he was obliged to lay ſo much conſtraint upon himſelf, in the preſence of Miſs Glanville, and her brother, that he hardly durſt truſt his eyes, to expreſs his admiration of her, for fear of alarming them with any ſuſpicion of his deſigns: however, he did not fail to recommend himſelf to her eſteem, by a behaviour to her full of the moſt perfect reſpect; and very often, ere he was aware, uttered ſome of the extravagant compliments that the gallants in the French romances uſe to their miſtreſſes.

If he walked with her in the gardens, he would obſerve, that the flowers, which were before languiſhing and pale, bloomed with freſh beauty at her approach; that the ſun ſhined out with double brightneſs, to exceed, if poſſible the luſtre of her eyes; and that the wind, fond of kiſſing her celeſtial countenance, played with her fair hair; and, by gentle murmurs, declared it's happineſs.

If Miſs Glanville happened to be preſent, when he talked to her in this ſtrain, ſhe would ſuppoſe he was ridiculing her couſin's fantaſtical turn; and when ſhe had an opportunity of ſpeaking to him alone, would chide him, with a great deal of good-humour, for giving her ſo much diverſion at her couſin's expence.

Sir George, improving this hint, perſuaded Miſs Glanville by his anſwers, that he really laughed at Arabella; and, being now leſs fearful of giving any ſuſpicion to the gay coquet, ſince ſhe aſſiſted him to deceive her, he applied himſelf, with more aſſiduity than ever, to inſinuate himſelf into Arabella's favour.

However, the neceſſity he was under of being always of Arabella's opinion, ſometimes drew him into little difficulties with Miſs Glanville. Knowing that young lady was extremely fond of ſcandal, he told her, as a moſt agreeable piece of news, one afternoon when he was there, that he had ſeen Miſs Groves, who, he ſuppoſed, had come into the country upon the ſame account as ſhe had done a twelve-month before: her marriage being yet a ſecret, the complaiſant baronet threw out an hint or two concerning the familiarity and correſpondence there was between her and the gentleman to whom ſhe was really ſecretly married.

Miſs Glanville, making the moſt of this

this intelligence, ſaid a thouſand ſevere things againſt the unfortunate Miſs Groves; which Arabella, always benevolent and kind, could not bear.

'I perſuade myſelf,' ſaid ſhe to her couſin, 'that you have been miſinformed concerning this beauty, whoſe misfortunes you aggravate by your cruel cenſures; and whoever has given you the hiſtory of her life, has, haply, done it with great injuſtice.'

'Why, Madam,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'do you think you are better acquainted with her hiſtory, as you call it, who have never been in town, where her follies made her ſo remarkable, than perſons who were eye-witneſſes of all her ridiculous actions?'

'I apprehend,' ſaid Arabella, 'that I, who have had a relation made to me of all the paſſages of her life, and have been told all her moſt ſecret thoughts, may know as much, if not more, than perſons who have lived in the ſame place with her, and have not had that advantage; and I think I know enough to vindicate her from many cruel aſperſions.'

'Pray, Madam,' returned Miſs Glanville, 'will your ladyſhip pretend to defend her ſcandalous commerce with Mr. L——?'

'I know not, Miſs,' ſaid Arabella, 'why you call her intercourſe with that perjured man by ſo unjuſt an epithet. If Miſs Groves be unchaſte, ſo was the renowned Cleopatra, whoſe marriage with Julius Cæſar is controverted to this day?'

'And what reaſons, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'have you for ſuppoſing Miſs Groves was married to Mr. L——, ſince all the world knows to the contrary?'

'Very ſufficient ones,' ſaid Arabella; 'ſince it is hardly poſſible to ſuppoſe, a young lady of Miſs Groves's quality would ſtain the luſtre of her deſcent by ſo ſhameful an intrigue; and alſo, ſince there are examples enough to be found of perſons, who ſuffered under the ſame unhappy circumſtances as herſelf, yet were perfectly innocent, as was that great queen I have mentioned—who queſtionleſs, you, Sir, are ſufficiently convinced, was married to that illuſtrious conqueror; who, by betraying ſo great and ſo fair a queen, in a great meaſure tarniſhed the glory of his laurels.'

'Married, Madam!' replied Sir George, 'Who preſumes to ſay, that fair queen was not married to that illuſtrious conqueror?'

'Nay, you know, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'many people did ſay, even while ſhe was living, that ſhe was not married; and have branded her memory with infamous calumnies, upon account of the ſon ſhe had by Cæſar, the brave Cæſario, who, under the name of Cleomedon, performed ſuch miracles of valour in Ethiopia.'

'I aſſure you, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'I was always a great admirer of the famous Cleomedon, who was certainly the greateſt hero in the world.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' ſaid Arabella; 'Cleomedon was, queſtionleſs, a very valiant man; but he, and all the heroes that ever were, muſt give place to the unequalled Prince of Mauritania; that illuſtrious, and for a long time unfortunate, lover of the divine Cleopatra, who was daughter, as you queſtionleſs know, of the great queen we have been ſpeaking of.'

'Dear heart!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'what is all this to the purpoſe? I would fain know, whether Sir George believes Miſs Groves was ever married to Mr. L——.'

'Doubtleſs, I do,' ſaid he; 'for, as Lady Bella ſays, ſhe is in the ſame unhappy circumſtance with the great Cleopatra; and if Julius Cæſar could be guilty of denying his marriage with that queen, I ſee no reaſon to ſuppoſe, why Mr. L—— might not be guilty of the ſame kind of injuſtice.'

'So then,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, reddening with ſpite, 'you will really offer to maintain, that Miſs Groves was married? Ridiculous! how ſuch a report would be laughed at in London!'

'I aſſure you,' replied Arabella, 'if ever I go to London, I ſhall not ſcruple to maintain that opinion to every one, who will mention that fair one to me; and uſe all my endeavours to confirm them in it.'

'Your ladyſhip would do well,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'to perſuade people

that

'that Miſs Groves, at fifteen, did not 'want to run away with her writing-'maſter.'

'As I am perſuaded myſelf,' ſaid Arabella, 'that writing-maſter was 'ſome noble ſtranger in diſguiſe, who 'was paſſionately in love with her, I 'ſhall not ſuffer any body in my hearing to propagate ſuch an unlikely 'ſtory; but ſince he was a perſon worthy of her affection, if ſhe had run 'away with him, her fault was not 'without example, and even excuſe.— 'You know what the fair Artemiſa did 'for Alexander, Sir,' purſued ſhe, turning to Sir George. 'I would fain 'know your ſentiments upon the action of that princeſs, which ſome 'have not ſcrupled to condemn.'

'Whoever they are, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'who condemn the fair 'Artemiſa for what ſhe did for Alexander, are miſcreants and ſlanderers; 'and though that beautiful princeſs 'has been dead more than two thouſand years, I would draw my ſword 'in defence of her character, againſt 'all who ſhould preſume, in my preſence, to caſt any cenſures upon it.'

'Since you are ſo courageous,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, laughing exceſſively at this ſally, which ſhe thought was to ridicule her couſin, 'it is to be hoped 'you will defend a living lady's character, who may thank you for it, 'and make the world believe that her correſpondence with Mr. L—— was 'entirely innocent, and that ſhe never 'had any deſign to run away with her 'writing-maſter.'

'Are you reſolved, couſin,' ſaid Lady Bella, 'to perſiſt in that ridiculous miſtake, and take a nobleman 'for a writing-maſter only becauſe his love put him upon ſuch a ſtratagem 'to obtain his miſtreſs?'

'Indeed, Lady Bella,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, ſmiling, 'you may as well 'perſuade me the moon is made of a 'cream-cheeſe, as that any nobleman turned himſelf into a writing-maſter 'to obtain Miſs Groves.'

'Is it poſſible, Miſs,' ſaid Arabella, 'that you can offer ſuch an affront to 'my underſtanding, as to ſuppoſe I 'would argue upon ſuch a ridiculous 'ſyſtem, and compare the ſecond glorious luminary of the Heavens to ſo 'unworthy a reſemblance? I have 'taken ſome pains to contemplate the 'heavenly bodies; and by reading and 'obſervation, am able to comprehend 'ſome part of their excellence; therefore it is not proable I ſhould deſcend 'to ſuch trivial compariſons, and liken 'a planet, which haply is not much 'leſs than our earth, to a thing ſo inconſiderable as that you name.'

'Pardon me, dear couſin,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, laughing louder than before, 'if I divert myſelf a little 'with the extravagance of your notions. Really, I think you have no 'reaſon to be angry if I ſuppoſed you 'might make a compariſon between 'the moon and a cream-cheeſe, ſince 'you ſay that ſame moon, which don't 'appear broader than your gardener's 'face, is not much leſs than the whole 'world. Why, certainly, I have more 'reaſon to truſt my own eyes than 'ſuch whimſical notions as theſe.'

Arabella, unwilling to expoſe her couſin's ignorance by a longer diſpute upon this ſubject, begged her to let it drop for the preſent; and, turning to Sir George, 'I am very glad,' ſaid ſhe, 'that having always had ſome inclination to excuſe, and even defend, the 'flight of Artemiſa with Alexander, 'my opinion is warranted by that of 'a perſon ſo generous as yourſelf: indeed, when we conſider that this 'princeſs forſook her brother's dominions, and fled away with a lover 'whom ſhe did not hate; queſtionleſs, 'her enemies accuſe her, with ſome 'appearance of reaſon, of too great 'imbecility.'

'But, Madam,' replied Sir George, 'her enemies will not take the pains 'to examine her reaſons for this conduct.'

'True, Sir,' reſumed Arabella; 'for ſhe was in danger of ſeeing a 'prince, who loved her, put to a cruel 'and infamous death upon a publick 'ſcaffold; and ſhe did not reſolve to 'fly with him, till all her tears and 'prayers were found ineffectual to 'move the king her brother to mercy.'

'Though,' replied Sir George, 'I 'am extremely angry with the indiſcreet Cepio, who diſcovered Alexander to the Armenian king; yet what 'does your ladyſhip think of that gallant action of his, when he ſaw him 'upon the ſcaffold, and the executioner 'ready to cut off his head? How brave 'it was of him to paſs undauntedly

'through

'through the prodigious number of 'guards that invironed the scaffold; 'and, with his drawn sword, run the 'executioner through the body, in the 'sight of them all! Then giving the 'prince another sword, engage more 'than two thousand men in his de-'fence!'

'Questionless,' replied Arabella, 'it 'was a glorious action; and when I 'think how the king of Armenia was 'enraged to see such a multitude of 'soldiers fly from the swords of two 'men, I cannot chuse but divert my-'self with the consternation he was in: 'yet that was nothing to the horrible 'despair which tormented him after-'wards, when he found that Alexan-'der, after being again taken and im-'prisoned, had broken his chains, and 'carried away with him the princess 'Artemisa his sister.'

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH A VERY PLEASING CONVERSATION IS LEFT UNFINISHED.

AS Arabella was in this part of her discourse, a servant came to inform her that Sir Charles Glanville was just alighted. Upon which Miss Glanville flew to receive her father; and Arabella, walking a little slower after her, gave Sir George an opportunity of holding a little longer conversation with her.

'I dare believe, Madam,' said he, 'when you read the story of the un-'fortunate Alexander, your fair eyes 'did not refuse to shed some tears at 'the barbarous and shameful death he 'was going to suffer: yet I assure you, 'melancholy as his situation was, it 'was also very glorious for him, since 'he had the sublime satisfaction of dy-'ing for the person he adored; and had 'the ravishing pleasure to know, that 'his fate would draw tears from that 'lovely princess for whom he sacrificed 'his life: such a condition, Madam, 'ought to be envied rather than pitied; 'for, next to the happiness of possessing 'the person one adores, certainly the 'glory of dying for her is most to be 'coveted.'

Arabella, pleasingly surprized to hear language so conformable to her own ideas, looked for a moment upon the baronet with a most inchanting complacency in her eyes.

'It must be confessed, Sir,' says she, 'that you speak very rationally upon 'these matters; and by the tenderness 'and generosity of your sentiments, 'you give me cause to believe that your 'heart is prepossessed with some object 'worthy of inspiring them.'

Sir George seeming as if he struggled to suppress a sigh, 'You are in 'the right, Madam,' said he, 'to sup-'pose, that if my heart be prepossessed 'with any object, it is with one who 'is capable of inspiring a very sublime 'passion; and I assure you, if ever it 'submits to any fetters, they shall be 'imposed on me by the fairest person 'in the world.'

'Since love is not voluntary,' replied Arabella, smiling, 'it may hap-'pen that your heart may be surprized 'by a meaner beauty than such a one 'as you describe: however, as a lover 'has always an extraordinary partia-'lity for the beloved object, it is pro-'bable what you say may come to 'pass; and you may be in love with 'the fairest person in the world, in 'your own opinion.'

They were now so near the house, that Sir George could reply no other ways than by a very passionate glance, which Arabella did not observe, being in haste to pay her respects to her uncle, whom she met just going to Mr. Glanville. Her looks were directed to him. Sir Charles saluting her with great affection, they all went into Mr. Glanville's chamber, who received his father with the utmost respect and tenderness; extremely regretting the trouble he had been at in taking a journey to the castle upon his account; and gently blaming his sister for her precipitancy in alarming him so soon.

Sir Charles, extremely overjoyed to find him so well recovered, would not allow him to blame Miss Glanville for what she had done; but, addressing himself to his niece, he thanked her for the care she had taken of Mr. Glanville, in very obliging terms.

Arabella could not help blushing at her uncle's compliment, supposing he thanked her for having restored her cousin to his health.

'I assure you, Sir,' said she, 'Mr. 'Glanville is less obliged to my com-'mands, than to the goodness of his 'constitution, for his recovery; and 'herein he was not so obedient as many 'persons I could name to him.'

Mr.

Mr. Glanville, willing to prevent the company's obſervation upon this ſpeech, began to acquaint his father with the riſe and progreſs of his diſtemper: but though the old gentleman liſtened with great attention to his ſon while he was ſpeaking, yet not having loſt a word of what Arabella had ſaid, as ſoon as he was done, he turned to his niece, and aſked her how ſhe could be ſo unjuſt to accuſe his ſon of diſobedience, becauſe he did not recover when ſhe commanded him. 'Why, 'Madam,' added he, 'you want to 'carry your power farther than ever 'any beauty did before you; ſince you 'pretend to make people ſick and well 'whenever you pleaſe.'

'Really, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'I 'pretend to no more power than what 'I preſume all others of my ſex have 'upon the like occaſions; and ſince 'nothing is more common than for a 'gentleman, though ever ſo ſick, to 'recover in obedience to the commands 'of that perſon who has an abſolute 'power over his life, I conceive I have 'a right to think myſelf injured, if 'Mr. Glanville, contrary to mine, had 'thought proper to die.'

'Since,' ſaid the old gentleman, ſmiling, 'my ſon has ſo well obeyed 'your commands in recovering his 'health, I ſhall tremble, leſt, in obe-'dience to a contrary command of 'yours, he ſhould die, and deprive me 'of an heir; a misfortune, which, if 'it ſhould happen, I ſhould place to 'your account.'

'I aſſure you, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, very gravely, 'I have too great an 'eſteem for Mr. Glanville to condemn 'him to ſo ſevere a puniſhment as death 'for light offences; and ſince it is not 'very probable that he will ever com-'mit ſuch crimes againſt me, as can 'be only expiated by his death, ſuch 'as infidelity, diſobedience, and the 'like, you have no reaſon to fear ſuch 'a misfortune by my means.'

'Alas!' replied Sir George, 'you 'beauties make very nice diſtinctions 'in theſe caſes; and think, if you do 'not directly command your lovers to 'die, you are no ways accountable for 'their death: and when a lover, as it 'often happens, dies through deſpair 'of ever being able to make himſelf 'beloved; or, being doomed to baniſh-'ment or ſilence, falls into a fever, 'from which nothing but kindneſs can 'recover him; and that being denied, 'he patiently expires: I ſay, when 'theſe things happen, as they certainly 'do every day, how can you hold your-'ſelves guiltleſs of their deaths, which 'are apparently occaſioned either by 'your ſcorn or inſenſibility.'

Sir Charles and Miſs Glanville were extremely diverted at this ſpeech of Sir George's; and Mr. Glanville, though he would have wiſhed he had been rallying any other perſon's follies than his couſin's, yet could not help ſmiling at the ſolemn accent in which he delivered himſelf.

Arabella, mightily pleaſed with his manner of talking, was reſolved to furniſh him with more occaſions of diverting the company at her expence.

'I ſee,' anſwered ſhe, 'you are one 'of thoſe perſons who call a juſt de-'corum, which all ladies, who love 'glory as they ought to do, are obliged 'to preſerve, by the name of ſeverity: 'but, pray, what would you have a 'lady do, whom an importunate lover 'preſumes to declare his paſſion to?— 'You know it is not permitted us to 'liſten to ſuch diſcourſes; and you 'know alſo, whoever is guilty of ſuch 'an offence, merits a moſt rigorous 'puniſhment: moreover, you find, that 'when a ſentence of baniſhment or 'ſilence is pronounced upon them, 'theſe unhappy criminals are ſo con-'ſcious of the juſtice of their doom, 'that they never murmur againſt their 'judge who condemns them; and 'therefore, whatever are their fates in 'conſequence of that anger they have 'incurred, the ladies, thus offended, 'ought not to be charged with it as 'any cruel exertion of their power.'

'Such eloquence as yours, Madam,' replied Sir George, 'might defend 'things yet more unjuſtifiable: how-'ever, you muſt give me leave, as be-'ing intereſted in the ſafety of my ſex, 'ſtill to be of opinion, that no man 'ought to be hated becauſe he adores a 'beautiful object, and conſecrates all 'his moments to her ſervice.'

'Queſtionleſs,' reſumed Arabella, 'he will not be hated, while, out of 'the reſpect and reverence he bears 'her, he carefully conceals his paſſion 'from her knowledge; but as ſoon as 'ever he breaks through the bounds 'which that reſpect preſcribes him,

'and

'and lets her understand his true sentiments, he has reason to expect a most rigorous sentence, since he certainly, by that presumption, has greatly deserved it.'

'If the ladies,' replied Sir George, 'were more equitable, and would make some distinction between those who really love them in a passionate and respectful silence, and others who do not feel the power of their charms, they might spare themselves the trouble of hearing what so mortally offends them: but when a lady sees a man every day, who by his looks, sighs, and solicitude to please her, by his numberless services, and constant attendance of her, makes it evident that his soul is possessed with a violent passion for her; I say, when a lady sees, and yet will not see, all this, and persists in using a passionate adorer with all the indifference due to a man wholly insensible of the power of her charms; what must he do in such a mortifying situation, but make known his torments to her that occasions them, in order to prevail upon her to have some sense of what he does and feels hourly for her sake?'

'But since he gains nothing by the discovery of his passion,' resumed Arabella, 'but, on the contrary, loses the advantages he was before possessed of, which were very great, since he might see and discourse with his mistress every day, and haply have the honour to do her a great many petty services, and receive some of her commands; all these advantages he loses when he declares he loves: and, truly, I think a man who is so unwise as to hazard a certain happiness for a very improbable hope, deserves to be punished, as well for his folly as presumption; and, upon both these accounts, banishment is not too rigorous a sentence.'

CHAP. III.

DEFINITION OF LOVE AND BEAUTY—THE NECESSARY QUALITIES OF A HERO AND HEROINE.

'THOUGH,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'you are very severe in the treatment you think it necessary our sex should receive from yours; yet I wish some of our town-beauties were, if not altogether of your opinion, yet sufficiently so as to make it not a slavery for a man to be in their company; for unless one talks of love to these fair coquets the whole time one is with them, they are quite displeased, and look upon a man who can think any thing, but themselves, worthy his thoughts or observation, with the utmost contempt.—How often have you and I, Sir George,' pursued he, 'pitied the condition of the few men of sense, who are sometimes among the crowd of beaux who attend the two celebrated beauties to all places of polite diversion in town? For those ladies think it a mortal injury done to their charms, if the men about them have eyes or ears for any object but their faces, or any sound but that of their voices: so that the connoisseurs in musick, who attend them to Ranelagh, must stop their ears, like Ulysses, when the syren Frasi sings; and the wits who gallant them to the side-box, must lay a much greater constraint upon themselves, in order to resist the soul-moving Garrick, and appear insensible while he is upon the stage.'

'Upon my soul,' added Sir George, (forgetting the character he assumed) 'when I have seen some persons of my acquaintance talking to the eldest of these ladies, while one of Congreve's comedies has been acting; his face quite turned from the stage, and hers overspread with an eternal smile; her fine eyes sometimes lifted up in a beautiful surprize, and a little enchanting giggle half-hid with her fan; in spite of their inattention, I have been ready to imagine, he was entertaining her with remarks upon the play, which she was judicious enough to understand; and yet I have afterwards been informed by himself, that nothing was less in their thoughts; and all that variety in her face, and that extreme seeming earnestness in his discourse, was occasioned by the most trifling subjects imaginable; he perhaps had been telling her, how the sight of her squirrel, which peeped out of her pocket, surprized some ladies she was visiting; and what they said upon her fondness for it, when she was gone; blaming them at the same time for their want of

'delicacy, in not knowing how to ſet 'a right value upon ſuch pleaſing ani- 'mals: hence proceeded her ſmiles, 'the lifting up of her eyes, the half- 'ſtifled laugh, and all the pretty geſ- 'tures that appeared ſo wonderfully 'charming to all thoſe who did not hear 'their diſcourſe; and it is upon ſuch 'trifles as theſe, or elſe on the inex- 'hauſtible ſubject of their charms, that 'all who are ambitious of being near 'theſe miracles, are under a neceſſity 'of talking.'

'And pray,' interrupted Arabella, 'what ſubjects afford matter for a 'more pleaſing variety of converſation, 'than thoſe of beauty and love? Can 'we ſpeak of any object ſo capable of 'delighting as beauty, or of any paſ- 'ſion of the mind more ſublime and 'pleaſing than love?'

'With ſubmiſſion, Madam,' ſaid Glanville, 'I conceive, all that can be 'ſaid either of beauty, or of love, may 'be comprized in a very few words; all 'who have eyes, and behold true 'beauty, will be ready to confeſs it 'is a very pleaſing object; and all 'that can be ſaid of it, may be ſaid 'in a very few words; for when we 'have run over the catalogue of charms, 'and mentioned fine eyes, fine hair, 'delicate complexion, regular fea- 'tures, and an elegant ſhape, we can 'only add a few epithets more, ſuch 'as lovely, dangerous, inchanting, 'irreſiſtible, and the like; and every 'thing that can be ſaid of beauty is 'exhauſted: and ſo likewiſe it is 'with love; we know that admiration 'precedes it, that beauty kindles it, 'hope keeps it alive, and deſpair puts 'an end to it; and that ſubject may 'be as ſoon diſcuſſed as the other, 'by the judicious uſe of proper words; 'ſuch as wounds, darts, fires, lan- 'guiſhings, dyings, torture, rack, jea- 'louſy, and a few more of no ſigni- 'fication, but upon this ſubject.'

'Certainly, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'you have not well conſidered what 'you ſay, ſince you maintain, that 'love and beauty are ſubjects eaſily 'and quickly diſcuſſed: take the pains, 'I beſeech you, to reflect a little upon 'thoſe numerous and long converſa- 'tions, which the ſubjects have given 'riſe to in Clelia, and the Grand Cy- 'rus, where the moſt illuſtrious and 'greateſt perſonages in the world ma- 'nage the diſputes; and the agreeable 'diverſity of their ſentiments on thoſe 'heads affords a moſt pleaſing and ra- 'tional entertainment; you will there 'find, that the greateſt conquerors, 'and heroes of invincible valour, rea- 'ſon with the moſt exact and ſcrupu- 'lous nicety upon love and beauty; 'the ſuperiority of fair and brown 'hair controverted by warriors, with 'as much eagerneſs as they diſpute 'for the victory in the field; and the 'different effects of that paſſion upon 'different hearts defined with the ut- 'moſt accuracy and eloquence.'

'I muſt own,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'I ſhould have but a mean opinion of 'thoſe warriors, as you call them, who 'could buſy themſelves in talking of 'ſuch trifles; and be apt to imagine 'ſuch inſignificant fellows, who could 'wrangle about the colour of their 'miſtreſs's hair, would be the firſt 'to turn their backs upon the enemy in 'battle.'

'Is it poſſible, Sir,' reſumed Arabella, glowing with indignation, 'that 'you can entertain ſuch unworthy 'thoughts of heroes, who merit the 'admiration and praiſe of all ages 'for their ineſtimable valour, whom 'the ſpears of a whole army oppoſed 'to each of their ſingle ſwords would 'not oblige to fly?—What think 'you, Sir,' purſued ſhe, looking at Sir George, 'of the injurious words 'my uncle has uttered againſt thoſe 'heroick princes, whoſe courage, I 'believe, you are as well acquainted 'with as myſelf? The great Oroon- 'dates, the invincible Artaban, the 'valiant and fortunate Artamenes, the 'irreſiſtible Juba, the incomparable 'Cleomedon, and an hundred other 'heroes I could name, are all injured 'by this unjuſt aſſertion of my uncle; 'ſince certainly they were not more 'famous for their noble and wonder- 'ful actions in war, than for the ſub- 'limity and conſtancy of their affec- 'tions in love.'

'Some of theſe heroes you have 'named,' replied Sir George, 'had 'the misfortune, even in their lives, to 'be very cruelly vilified. The great 'Oroondates was a long time accuſed 'of treachery to his divine princeſs; 'the valiant and unfortunate Arta- 'menes was ſuſpected of inconſtancy; 'and the irreſiſtible Juba reproached

'with

'with infidelity and baſeneſs, by both 'his miſtreſs and friend.'

'I never knew you was ſo well ac- 'quainted with theſe perſons,' interrupted Mr. Glanville; 'and I fancy 'it is but very lately that you have 'given yourſelf the trouble to read 'romances.'

'I am not of your opinion,' ſaid Arabella. 'Sir George, queſtionleſs, 'has appropriated great part of his 'time to the peruſal of thoſe books, 'ſo capable of improving him in all 'uſeful knowledge; the ſublimity of 'love, and the quinteſſence of valour; 'which two qualities, if poſſeſſed in 'a ſuperlative degree, form a true and 'perfect hero, as the perfection of 'beauty, wit, and virtue, make a he- 'roine worthy to be ſerved by ſuch an 'illuſtrious perſonage; and I dare ſay, 'Sir George has profited ſo much by 'the great examples of fidelity and 'courage he has placed before his 'eyes, that no conſideration whatever 'could make him for one moment fail 'in his conſtancy to the divine beauty 'he adores; and, inſpired by her 'charms, he would ſcorn to turn his 'back, as my uncle phraſes it, upon an 'army of an hundred thouſand men.'

'I am extremely obliged to you, 'Madam,' ſaid Sir George, bowing his head to the ground, to hide a ſmile he could not poſſibly reſtrain, 'for 'the good opinion you have of my 'courage and fidelity.'

'As for Sir George's courage, cou- 'ſin,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, laughing, 'I never diſputed it; and though it 'be, indeed, a very extraordinary exer- 'tion of it, to fight ſingly againſt an 'army of an hundred thouſand men; 'yet ſince you are pleaſed to think it 'probable, I am as willing to believe 'Sir George may do it as any other 'man; but, as for his fidelity in mat- 'ters of love, I greatly ſuſpect it, 'ſince he has been charged with ſome 'very flagrant crimes of that nature.'

'How, Sir!' reſumed Arabella. 'Have you ever been faithleſs, then? 'and, after having ſworn, haply, to 'devote your whole life to the ſervice 'of ſome beauty, have you ever vio- 'lated your oaths, and been baſe 'enough to forſake her?'

'I have too much complaiſance, 'Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'to con- 'tradict Mr. Glanville, who has been 'pleaſed poſitively to aſſert, that I have 'been faithleſs, as you moſt unkindly 'phraſe it.'

'Nay, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'this 'accuſation is not of a nature to be 'neglected; and though a king ſhould 'ſay it, I conceive, if you are innocent, 'you have a right to contradict him, 'and clear yourſelf: do you conſider 'how deeply this aſſertion wounds 'your honour and happineſs for the 'future? What lady, think you, will 'receive your ſervices, loaded as you 'are with the terrible imputation of 'inconſtancy?'

'Oh! as for that, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'I believe no lady 'will think the worſe of Sir George 'for being faithleſs: for my part, I 'declare nothing pleaſes me ſo much, 'as gaining a lover from another lady; 'which is a greater compliment to 'one's beauty, than the addreſſes of a 'man that never was in love before.'

'You may remember, couſin,' replied Arabella, 'that I ſaid once be- 'fore, your ſpirit and humour re- 'ſembled a certain great princeſs very 'much; and I repeat it again, never 'was there a greater conformity in 'tempers and inclinations.'

'My daughter,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'is mightily obliged to you, Lady 'Bella, for comparing her to a great 'princeſs: undoubtedly you mean it 'as a compliment.'

'If you think,' ſaid Arabella, 'that 'barely comparing her to a princeſs 'be a compliment, I muſt take the 'liberty to differ from you: my cou- 'ſin is not ſo many degrees below a 'princeſs, as that ſuch a compariſon 'ſhould be thought extraordinary; for 'if her anceſtors did not wear a crown, 'they might, haply, have deſerved it; 'and her beauty may one day procure 'her a ſervant, whoſe ſword, like that 'of the great Artaban, may win her a 'ſceptre; who, with a noble confi- 'dence, told his princeſs, when the 'want of a crown was objected to 'him, "I wear a ſword, Madam, "that can perform things more diffi- "cult than what you require; and if "a crown be all that I want to make "me worthy of you, tell me what "kingdom in the world you chuſe to "reign in, and I will lay it at your "feet."

'That was a promiſe,' replied Sir

George, 'fit only for the great Artaban to make: but, Madam, if you will permit me to make any compariſon between that renowned warrior and myſelf, I would venture to tell you, that even the great Artaban was not exempted from the character of inconſtancy any more than myſelf, ſince, as you certainly know, he was in love with three great princeſſes ſucceſſively.'

'I grant you,' replied Arabella, 'that Artaban did wear the chains of three princeſſes ſucceſſively; but it muſt alſo be remembered in his juſtification, that the two firſt of theſe beauties refuſed his adorations, and treated him with contempt, becauſe he was not a prince: therefore, recovering his liberty, by thoſe diſdains they caſt on him, he preſerved that illuſtrious heart from deſpair, to tender it with more paſſionate fidelity to the divine princeſs of the Parthians; who, though greatly their ſuperior in quality and beauty, did permit him to love her. However, I muſt confeſs, I find ſomething like levity in the facility he found in breaking his fetters ſo often; and when I conſider, that among all thoſe great heroes, whoſe hiſtories I have read, none but himſelf ever bore, without dying, the cruelties he experienced from thoſe princeſſes, I am ſometimes tempted to accuſe him myſelf of inconſtancy: but indeed every thing we read of that prodigy of valour is wholly miraculous; and ſince the performance of impoſſibilities was reſerved for him, I conclude this miracle alſo, among many others, was poſſible to him, whom nothing was ever able to reſiſt upon earth. However,' purſued ſhe, riſing, 'I ſhall not abſolutely condemn you, till I have heard your adventures from your own mouth, at a convenient time, when I ſhall be able to judge how far you merit the odious appellation of inconſtancy.'

Saying this, ſhe ſaluted her uncle, who had for ſome time been converſing in a low voice with his ſon, with a grace wholly charming, and retired to her apartment. Miſs Glanville following her a few moments after, (the compliment, extravagant as it was, which ſhe had paid her, having procured her ſome good-will from the vain and intereſted Miſs Glanville) they converſed together with a great deal of good-humour till dinner-time, which, becauſe Mr. Glanville was not abſolutely recovered, was ſerved in his chamber.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS ENGAGED IN A NEW ADVENTURE.

AS Mr. Glanville took a great deal of pains to turn the diſcourſe upon ſubjects on which the charming Arabella could expatiate, without any mixture of that abſurdity which mingled itſelf in a great many others, the reſt of that day and ſeveral others, were paſſed very agreeably: at the end of which, Mr. Glanville being perfectly recovered, and able to go abroad, the baronet propoſed to take the diverſion of hunting; which Arabella, who was uſed to it, conſented to partake of; but being informed, that Miſs Glanville could not ride, and choſe to ſtay at home, ſhe would have kept her company, had not Sir Charles inſiſted upon the contrary.

As Sir George, and ſome other gentlemen, had invited themſelves to be of the party, Arabella, on her coming down to mount her horſe, found a great many young gallants, ready to offer her their aſſiſtance upon this occaſion: accepting, therefore, with great politeneſs, this help from a ſtranger, who was neareſt her, ſhe mounted her horſe, giving occaſion to every one that was preſent, to admire the grace with which ſhe ſat and managed him. Her ſhape being as perfect as any ſhape could poſſibly be, her riding-habit diſcovered all it's beauties: her hat, and the white feather waving over part of her fine black hair, gave a peculiar charm to her lovely face; and ſhe appeared with ſo many advantages in this dreſs and poſture, that Mr. Glanville, forgetting all her abſurdities, was wholly loſt in the contemplation of ſo many charms, as her whole perſon was adorned with.

Sir George, though he really admired Arabella, was not ſo paſſionately in love as Mr. Glanville; and, being a keen ſportſman, eagerly purſued the game, with the reſt of the hunters; but Mr. Glanville minded nothing but his couſin, and kept cloſe by her.

After having rode a long time, Arabella,

bella, conceiving it a piece of cruelty, not to give her lover an opportunity of talking to her, as, by his extreme ſolicitude, he ſeemed ardently to deſire, coming to a delightful valley ſhe ſtopped, and told Mr. Glanville, that, being weary of the chace, ſhe ſhould alight, and repoſe herſelf a little under the ſhade of thoſe trees.

Mr. Glanville, extremely pleaſed at this propoſition, diſmounted; and, having helped her to alight, ſeated himſelf by her on the graſs.

Arabella, expecting he would begin to talk to her of his paſſion, could not help bluſhing at the thoughts of having given him ſuch an opportunity; and Mr. Glanville endeavouring to accommodate himſelf to her ideas of a lover, expreſſed himſelf in terms extravagant enough to have made a reaſonable woman think he was making a jeſt of her: all which, however, Arabella was extremely pleaſed with; and ſhe obſerved ſuch a juſt decorum in her anſwers, that, as the writers of romance phraſe it, if ſhe did not give him any abſolute hopes of being beloved, yet ſhe ſaid enough to make him conclude ſhe did not hate him.

They had converſed in this manner near a quarter of an hour, when Arabella, perceiving a man at a little diſtance, walking very compoſedly, ſhrieked out aloud; and, riſing with the utmoſt precipitation, flew from Mr. Glanville, and went to untie her horſe; while his aſtoniſhment being ſo great at her behaviour, that he could not, for a moment or two, aſk her the cauſe of her fear.

'Do you not ſee,' ſaid ſhe, out of breath with the violence of her apprehenſions, 'the perſon who is coming 'towards us? It is the ſame, who, 'ſome months ago, attempted to carry 'me away, when I was riding out 'with only two attendants; I eſcaped, 'for that time, the danger that threat'ened me; but, queſtionleſs, he comes 'now to renew his attempts; there'fore can you wonder at my fear?'

'If it ſhould be as you ſay, Ma'dam,' interrupted Glanville, 'what 'reaſon have you to fear? Do you not 'think I am able to defend you?'

'Ah! without doubt, you are able 'to defend me,' anſwered ſhe: 'and 'though, if you offer to reſiſt the vio'lence he comes to uſe againſt me, he 'will, haply, call two or three dozen 'armed men to his aſſiſtance, who are, 'I ſuppoſe, concealed hereabouts, yet 'I am not apprehenſive, that you will 'be worſted by them; but as it hap'pened to the brave Juba, and Cleo'medon, while they were fighting 'with ſome hundred men, who want'ed to carry away their princeſſes be'fore their faces, and were giving 'death at every blow, in order to pre'ſerve them, the commander of theſe 'raviſhers ſeeing the two princeſſes 'ſitting, as I was, under a tree, or'dered them to be ſeized by two of his 'men, and carried away, while the 'two princes were loſing beſt part of 'their blood in their defence; there'fore, to prevent ſuch an accident hap'pening, while you are fighting for 'my reſcue, I think it will be the 'ſafeſt way for me to get on horſe'back, that I may be in a condition 'to eſcape; and that you may not em'ploy your valour to no purpoſe.'

Saying this, having, with Mr. Glanville's aſſiſtance, looſed her horſe from the tree, he helped her to mount, and then remounted his own.

'Your antagoniſt,' ſaid Arabella, 'is on foot; and therefore, though I 'prize your life extremely, yet I can'not diſpenſe with myſelf from telling 'you, that it is againſt the laws of 'knighthood to take any advantage of 'that kind over your enemy; nor will 'I permit your concern for my ſafety 'to make you forget what you owe to 'your own reputation.'

Mr. Glanville, fretting exceſſively at her folly, begged her not to make herſelf uneaſy about things that were never likely to happen.

'The gentleman yonder,' added he, 'ſeems to have no deſigns to make any 'attempt againſt you; if he ſhould, I 'ſhall know how to deal with him; 'but, ſince he neither offers to aſſault 'me, nor affront you, I think we 'ought not to give him any reaſon to 'imagine we ſuſpect him, by gazing 'on him thus; and letting him un'derſtand by your manner, that he is 'the ſubject of our converſation; if 'you pleaſe, Madam, we will en'deavour to join our company.'

Arabella, while he was ſpeaking, kept her eyes fixed upon his face, with looks which expreſſed her thoughts were labouring upon ſome very important

portant point; and, after a pauſe of ſome moments, 'Is it poſſible,' ſaid ſhe, with a tone of extreme ſurprize, 'that I ſhould be ſo miſtaken in you? 'Do you really want courage enough 'to defend me againſt that raviſher?'

'Oh, Heavens! Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'try not my temper 'thus: courage enough to defend you! 'Sdeath! you will make me mad! 'Who, in the name of wonder, is 'going to moleſt you?'

'He whom you ſee there,' replied Arabella, pointing to him with her finger: 'for know, cold and inſenſible as thou art to the danger which 'threatens me, yonder knight is thy 'rival, and a rival, haply, who deſerves my eſteem better than thou 'doſt; ſince, if he has courage enough 'to get me by violence into his power, 'that ſame courage would make him 'defend me againſt any injuries I 'might be offered from another: and 'ſince nothing is ſo contemptible in 'the eyes of a woman, as a lover who 'wants ſpirit to die in her defence, 'know, I can ſooner pardon him, 'whom thou wouldſt cowardly fly from, 'for the violence which he meditates 'againſt me, than thyſelf for the puſillanimity thou haſt betrayed in my 'ſight.'

With theſe words ſhe galloped away from her aſtoniſhed lover; who, not daring to follow her, for fear of increaſing her ſuſpicions of his cowardice, flung himſelf off his horſe in a violent rage; and, forgetting that the ſtranger was obſerving, and now within hearing, he fell a curſing and exclaiming againſt the books that had turned his couſin's brain, and railling at his own ill fate that condemned him to the puniſhment of loving her. Mr. Harvey (for it really was he whom an affair of conſequence had brought again into the country) hearing ſome of Mr. Glanville's laſt words, and obſerving the geſtures he uſed, concluded he had been treated like himſelf by Arabella, whom he knew again at a diſtance: therefore coming up to Mr. Glanville, laughing—

'Though I have not the honour of 'knowing you, Sir,' ſaid he, 'I muſt 'beg the favour you will inform me, 'if you are not diſturbed at the ridiculous folly of the lady I ſaw with you 'juſt now? She is the moſt fantaſtical 'creature that ever lived, and, in my 'opinion, fit for a mad-houſe: pray, 'are you acquainted with her?'

Mr. Glanville, being in a very ill humour, could not brook the freedom of this language againſt his couſin, whoſe follies he could not bear any one ſhould rail at but himſelf; and, being provoked at his ſneers, and the interruption he had given to their converſation, he looked upon him with a diſdainful frown, and told him in an haughty tone, that he was very impertinent to ſpeak of a lady of her quality and merit ſo rudely.

'Oh! Sir, I beg your pardon,' replied Mr. Harvey, laughing more than before; 'what, I ſuppoſe you are the 'champion of this fair lady! But, I 'aſſure myſelf, if you intend to quarrel with every one that will laugh at 'her, you will have more buſineſs 'upon your hands than you can well 'manage.'

Mr. Glanville, tranſported with rage at this inſolence, hit him ſuch a blow with the butt-end of his whip, that it ſtunned him for a moment; but recovering himſelf, he drew his ſword, and, mad with the affront he had received, made a puſh at Glanville; who, avoiding it with great dexterity, had recourſe to his hanger for his defence.

Arabella, in the mean time, who had not rid far, concealing herſelf behind ſome trees, ſaw all the actions of her lover, and intended raviſher; and, being poſſeſſed with an opinion of her couſin's cowardice, was extremely rejoiced to ſee him fall upon his enemy firſt, and that with ſo much fury, that ſhe had no longer any reaſon to doubt his courage; her ſuſpicions therefore being removed, her tenderneſs for him returned; and when ſhe ſaw them engaged with their ſwords (for, at that diſtance, ſhe did not plainly perceive the difference of their weapons) her apprehenſions for her couſin were ſo ſtrong, that, though ſhe did not doubt his valour, ſhe could not bear to ſee him expoſe his life for her; and without making any reflections upon the ſingularity of her deſign, ſhe was going to ride up to them, and endeavour to part them; when ſhe ſaw ſeveral men come towards them, whom ſhe took to be the aſſiſtants of her raviſher, though they were, in reality, haymakers; who, at a diſtance, having

having ſeen the beginning of their quarrel, had haſtened to part them.

Terrified, therefore, at this reinforcement, which ſhe thought would expoſe her couſin to great danger, ſhe galloped with all ſpeed after the hunters, being directed by the ſound of the horn. Her anxiety for her couſin made her regardleſs of her own danger, ſo that ſhe rode with a ſurprizing ſwiftneſs; and, overtaking the company, ſhe would have ſpoken to tell them of her couſin's ſituation; when, her ſpirits failing her, ſhe could only make a ſign with her hand, and ſunk down in a ſwoon, in the arms of Sir George, who eagerly galloped up to her; and, ſupporting her as well as he was able till ſome others came to her relief, they took her off her horſe, and placed her upon the ground; when, by the help of ſome water they brought from a ſpring near them, in a little time ſhe came to herſelf.

Sir Charles, who, ſeeing her come up to them without his ſon, and by her fainting concluded ſome misfortune had happened to him, the moment ſhe opened her eyes, aſked her eagerly, where he was.

'Your ſon,' ſaid Arabella, ſighing, 'with a valour equal to that of the 'brave Cleomedon, is this moment 'fighting in my defence againſt a 'crowd of enemies; and is, haply, 'ſhedding the laſt drop of his blood in 'my quarrel.'

'Shedding the laſt drop of his blood, '*haply!*' repeated Sir Charles, exceſſively grieved; and not a little enraged at Arabella, ſuppoſing ſhe had introduced him into ſome quarrel: 'it 'may be *happy* for you, Madam; but 'I am ſure it will make me very miſerable, if my ſon comes to any harm.'

'If it be the will of Heaven he 'ſhould fall in this combat,' reſumed Arabella, 'he can never have a more 'glorious deſtiny; and as that conſideration will, doubtleſs, ſweeten his 'laſt moments, ſo it ought to be your 'conſolation: however, I beg you'll 'loſe no time, but haſte to his aſſiſtance; for ſince he has a conſiderable 'number of enemies to deal with, it 'is not improbable but he may be 'overpowered at laſt.'

'Where did you leave my ſon, Madam?' cried Sir Charles, eagerly.

'He is not far off,' replied Arabella: 'and you will, doubtleſs, be 'directed to the place, by the ſight of 'the blood of his enemies which he 'has ſpilt. Go that way,' purſued ſhe, pointing with her finger towards the place where ſhe had left her couſin; 'there you will meet with him, amidſt 'a crowd of foes, which he is ſacrificing to my ſafety, and his juſt reſentment.'

Sir Charles not knowing what to think, galloped away, followed by moſt part of the company; Sir George telling Lady Bella, that he would ſtay to defend her againſt any attempts that might be made on her liberty, by any of her raviſher's ſervants, who were, probably, ſtraggling about. Arabella, however, being perfectly recovered, inſiſted upon following her uncle.

'There is no queſtion,' ſaid ſhe, 'but Mr. Glanville is victorious; I 'am only apprehenſive for the dangerous wounds he may have received 'in the combat, which will require all 'our care and aſſiſtance.'

Sir George, who wanted to engroſs her company a little to himſelf, in vain repreſented to her, that, amidſt the horrors of a fight ſo bloody as that muſt certainly be, in which Mr. Glanville and his friends would be now engaged, it would be dangerous for her to venture her perſon; yet ſhe would not be perſuaded; but, having mounted her horſe, with his aſſiſtance, ſhe rode as faſt as ſhe was able after the reſt of the company.

CHAP. V.

BEING A CHAPTER OF MISTAKES.

SIR Charles, who, by this time, had got to the place ſhe directed him to, but ſaw no appearance of fighting, and only a few haymakers in diſcourſe together, enquired if there had been any quarrel between two gentlemen in that place.

One of them, at this queſtion, advancing, told Sir Charles, that two gentlemen had quarrelled there, and were fighting with ſwords; but that they had parted them; and that one of them having an horſe tied to a tree, mounted him and rode away: that the other, they believed, was not far off; and that there had been no blood ſhed,

they

they having come time enough to prevent it.

Sir Charles was extremely satisfied with this account; and giving the haymakers some money for the good office they did in parting the two combatants, rode up to meet Lady Bella, and informed her that his son was safe.

'I cannot imagine he is safe,' replied she, 'when I see some of his 'enemies (pointing to the haymakers) 'still alive; it is not customary, in 'those cases, to suffer any to escape; 'and, questionless, my cousin is either 'dead, or a prisoner, since all his adversaries are not vanquished.'

'Why, you dream, Madam,' replied Sir Charles; 'those fellows yonder are haymakers: what should make 'them enemies to my son? They were 'lucky enough to come in time to prevent him and another gentleman from 'doing each other a mischief. I cannot imagine for what reason my son 'quarrelled with that person they speak 'of; perhaps you can inform me?'

'Certainly, Sir,' said Arabella, 'I 'can inform you, since I was the cause 'of their quarrel. The story is too 'long to tell you now; and, besides, 'it is so connected with the other accidents of my life, that it is necessary 'you should be acquainted with my 'whole history, in order to comprehend it; but if those persons are 'what you say, and did really part 'my cousin and his antagonist, truly 'I believe they have done him a very 'ill office; for, I am persuaded, my 'cousin will never be at rest, till, by 'his rival's death, he has freed himself from one capable of the most 'daring enterprizes to get me into his 'power: and, since I cannot be in security while he lives, and persists in 'the resolution he has taken to persecute me, it had been better if he had 'suffered all the effects of my cousin's 'resentment at that time, than to give 'him the trouble to hunt him through 'the world, in order to sacrifice him 'to the interest of his love and vengeance.'

Sir Charles, no less astonished than alarmed at this discovery of his niece's sanguinary sentiments, told her, he was sorry to see a lady so far forget the gentleness of her sex, as to encourage and incite men to such extremities upon her account. 'And, for the future,' added he, 'I must intreat you, niece, 'to spare me the affliction of seeing my 'son exposed to these dangerous quarrels; for, though his life is so little 'regarded by you, yet it is of the utmost consequence to me.'

Arabella, who found matter sufficient in the beginning of this speech, to be offended with her uncle, yet, mistaking the latter part of it for a pathetick complaint of her cruelty, replied very gravely, that her cousin's safety was not so indifferent to her as he imagined; and that she did not hate him so much, but that his death would affect her very sensibly.

Arabella, in speaking these words, blushed with shame, as thinking they were rather too tender; and Sir Charles, who coloured likewise, from a very different motive, was opening his mouth to tell her, that he did not think his son was much obliged to her for not hating him; when Arabella, supposing he designed to press her to a further explanation of the favourable sentiments she felt for Mr. Glanville, stopped him with precipitation; 'Press me 'no more,' said she, 'upon this subject; and, as I have already spoken 'too much, haply, before so many 'witnesses, seek not to enhance my 'confusion, by prolonging a discourse 'that at present must needs be disagreeable to me.'

'I shall readily agree with you, 'Madam,' replied Sir Charles, 'that 'you have spoken too much; and if I 'had thought you capable of speaking 'in the manner you have done, I would 'have been more cautious in giving 'you an occasion for it.'

'I should imagine, Sir,' said Arabella, blushing with anger, as she before did with shame, 'that you would 'be the last person in the world who 'could think I had spoken too much 'upon this occasion: and, since you 'are pleased to tell me so, I think it fit 'to let you know, that I have not, in 'my opinion, transgressed the laws of 'decency and decorum, in what I have 'said in my cousin's favour; and I 'can produce many examples of greater 'freedom of speech, in princesses, and 'ladies of the highest quality; however, I shall learn such a lesson of 'moderation in this respect, from your 'reproof, that I promise you, neither 'yourself, or Mr. Glanville, shall 'have

'have any cauſe, for the future, to 'complain of my want of diſcretion.'

Sir Charles, who was very polite and good-natured, was half angry with himſelf, for having obliged his niece to ſuch a ſubmiſſion, as he thought it; and, apologizing for the rudeneſs of his reprehenſion, aſſured her, that he was perfectly convinced of her diſcretion in all things; and did not doubt but her conduct would be always agreeable to him.

Arabella, who, from what her uncle had ſaid, began to entertain ſuſpicions that would never have entered any imagination but hers, looked earneſtly upon him for half a moment, as if ſhe wiſhed to penetrate into the moſt ſecret receſſes of his heart: but, fancying ſhe ſaw ſomething in his looks that confirmed her apprehenſions, ſhe removed her eyes from his face, and faſtening them on the ground, remained for ſome moments in confuſion.—Sir Charles, whom her apparent diſturbance made very uneaſy, propoſed returning to the caſtle; telling Lady Bella he expected to find his ſon already there.

'It is more than probable,' ſaid ſhe, turning to Sir George, 'that my 'couſin is gone in purſuit of my raviſher; and the interruption that has 'been given to his deſigned vengeance, making him more furious 'than before, it is not likely he will return till he has puniſhed his inſolence by that death he ſo juſtly merits.'

'Mr. Glanville is already ſo happy 'in your opinion,' ſaid Sir George, with a very profound ſigh, 'that there 'is no need of his rendering you this 'ſmall ſervice to increaſe your eſteem: 'but, if my prayers are heard, the 'puniſhment of your raviſher will be 'reſerved for a perſon leſs fortunate, 'indeed, than Mr. Glanville, though 'not leſs devoted to your intereſt, and 'concerned in your preſervation.'

Sir George counterfeiting a look of extreme confuſion and fear, as he ended theſe words—

Arabella, who perfectly comprehended the meaning they were deſigned to convey, thought herſelf obliged to take no notice of them: and, therefore, without making any reply to the young baronet, who ventured ſlowly to lift his eyes to her face, in order to diſcover if there were any ſigns of anger in it, ſhe told Sir Charles ſhe inclined to go home; and Sir George, with the reſt of the company, attended them to the caſtle; where, as ſoon as they arrived, they took their leave.

Sir George, notwithſtanding Arabella's care to deprive him of an opportunity of ſpeaking to her, told her, in a whiſper, having eagerly alighted to help her off her horſe—

'I am going, Madam, to find out 'that inſolent man, who has dared to 'offer violence to the faireſt perſon in 'the world: and, if I am ſo happy as 'to meet with him, he ſhall either take 'my life, or I will put him into a 'condition never to commit any more 'offences of that nature.'

Saying this, he made a low bow; and, being deſirous to prevent her anſwer, remounted his horſe, and went away with the reſt of the company.

Arabella, who, upon this occaſion, was to be all confuſion, mixed with ſome little reſentment, diſcovered ſo much emotion in her looks, while Sir George was whiſpering to her, that her uncle, as he was handing her into the houſe, aſked her, if ſhe was offended at any thing Sir George had ſaid to her.

Arabella, conſtruing this queſtion as ſhe had done ſome other things her uncle had ſaid to her, replied, in a reſerved manner, 'Since my looks, con-'trary to my intention, have betrayed 'my thoughts to you, I will not 'ſcruple to confeſs, that I have ſome 'cauſe to be offended with Sir George; 'and that, in two inſtances to-day, he 'has ſeemed to forget the reſpect he 'owes me.'

Sir Charles was fired at this account: 'Is it poſſible,' ſaid he, 'that Sir George 'has had the aſſurance to ſay any thing 'to offend you, and that before my 'face too? This affront is not to be 'borne.'

'I am ſorry,' replied Arabella, eyeing him heedfully, 'to ſee you ſo 'much concerned at it.'

'Don't be uneaſy,' interrupted Sir Charles: 'there will be no bad conſe-'quences happen from it: but he ſhall 'hear of it,' added he, raiſing his voice with paſſion; 'I'll force him this night 'to explain himſelf.'

'You muſt pardon me, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, more and more confirmed in her notions, 'if I tell you, that I am 'extremely offended at your uncom-

'mon zeal upon this occaſion; and 'alſo I muſt aſſure you, that a little 'more calmneſs would be leſs liable to 'ſuſpicion.'

Miſs Glanville coming to meet them, Sir Charles, who did not take much notice of what Arabella ſaid, eagerly enquired for his ſon; and, hearing he was not come home, was apprehenſive of his meeting again with the perſon he had quarrelled with: but his fears did not laſt long; for Mr. Glanville came in, having purpoſely avoided the company, to hide the uneaſineſs Lady Bella's tormenting folly had given him.

CHAP. VI.

IN WHICH THE MISTAKES ARE CONTINUED.

AS ſoon as Mr. Glanville appeared, the two ladies retired; Miſs Glanville aſking Arabella a hundred queſtions concerning their diverſion, the drift of which was, to know how Sir George behaved to her: but that fair lady, whoſe thoughts were wholly employed on the ſtrange accidents which had happened to her that day, longed to be at liberty to indulge her reflections; and, complaining of extreme wearineſs, under pretence of repoſing herſelf till dinner, got quit of Miſs Glanville's company, which, at that time, ſhe thought very tedious.

As ſoon as ſhe was left to herſelf, her imagination running over all that had happened, ſhe could not help confeſſing, that few women ever met with ſuch a variety of adventures in one day: in danger of being carried off by violence by one lover; delivered by another; inſinuations of love from a third, who, ſhe thought, was enamoured of her couſin; and, what was ſtill more ſurprizing a diſcovery, that her uncle was not inſenſible of her charms, but was become the rival of his own ſon.

As extravagant as this notion was, Arabella found precedents in her romances of paſſions full as ſtrange and unjuſtifiable; and confirmed herſelf in that opinion, by recollecting ſeveral examples of unlawful love. 'Why 'ſhould I not believe,' ſaid ſhe, 'that 'my charms can work as powerful 'effects as thoſe of Olympia, Princeſs 'of Thrace, whoſe brother was paſ-'ſionately enamoured of her?'

'Did not the divine Clelia inſpire 'Maherbal with a violent paſſion for 'her, who, though diſcovered to be her 'brother, did not, nevertheleſs, ceaſe to 'adore her? And, to bring an inſtance 'ſtill nearer to my own caſe, was not 'the uncle of the fair Alcyone in love 'with her? And did he not endeavour 'to win her heart by all the methods in 'his power?

'Ah? then,' purſued ſhe, 'let us 'doubt no more of our misfortune; 'and, ſince our fatal beauty has raiſed 'this impious flame, let us ſtifle it 'with our rigour, and not allow an 'ill-timed pity, or reſpect, to encou-'rage a paſſion which may, one day, 'caſt a blemiſh upon our glory.'

Arabella, having ſettled this point, proceeded to reflect on the conqueſt ſhe had made of Sir George: ſhe examined his words over and over, and found them ſo exactly conformable to the language of an Oroondates or Orontes, that ſhe could not chuſe but be pleaſed; but, recollecting that it behoved her, like all other heroines, to be extremely troubled and perplexed at an inſinuation of love, ſhe began to lament the cruel neceſſity of parting with an agreeable friend; who, if he perſiſted in making her acquainted with his thoughts, would expoſe himſelf to the treatment perſons ſo indiſcreet always meet with; nor was ſhe leſs concerned, leſt, if Mr. Glanville had not already diſpatched her raviſher, Sir George, by wandering in ſearch of him, and, haply, ſacrificing him to his eager deſire of ſerving her, ſhould, by that means, lay her under an obligation to him, which, conſidering him as a lover, would be a great mortification.

Sir George, however, was gone home to his own houſe, with no thoughts of purſuing Arabella's raviſher: and Mr. Glanville, being queſtioned by his father concerning his quarrel, invented ſome trifling excuſe for it; which not agreeing with the account the baronet had received from Arabella, he told his ſon, that he had concealed the truth from him; and that there was more in that affair than he had owned. 'You 'quarrelled,' added he, 'upon Ara-'bella's account; and ſhe did not ſcruple 'to affirm it before all the company.'

Mr.

Mr. Glanville, who had vainly flattered himſelf with an hope that his couſin had not acquainted the company with her whimſical apprehenſions, was extremely vexed when he found ſhe had expoſed herſelf to their ridicule, and that it was probable even he had not eſcaped: but willing to know from her own mouth how far ſhe had carried her folly, he went up to her chamber; and, being immediately admitted, ſhe began to congratulate him upon the conqueſt he had gained, as ſhe ſuppoſed, over his enemy; and thanked him very ſolemnly for the ſecurity he had procured for her.

Mr. Glanville, after aſſuring her that ſhe was in no danger of ever being carried away by that perſon whom ſhe feared, proceeded to enquire into all that had paſſed between her and the company whom ſhe had joined when ſhe left him; and Arabella, relating every particular, gave him the mortification to know that her folly had been ſufficiently expoſed: but ſhe touched upon her fears for him with ſo much delicacy, and mentioned her fainting in ſuch a manner, as inſinuated a much greater tenderneſs than he before had reaſon to hope for; and this knowledge deſtroying all his intentions to quarrel with her for what ſhe had ſaid, he appeared ſo eaſy and ſatisfied, that Arabella, reflecting upon the misfortune his father's new-born paſſion would probably be the occaſion of to him, could not help ſighing at the apprehenſion; looking on him, at the ſame time, with a kind of pitying complacency, which did not eſcape Mr. Glanville's notice.

'I muſt know the reaſon of that 'ſigh, couſin,' ſaid he, ſmiling, and taking her hand.

'If you are wiſe,' replied Arabella, gravely, 'you will be contented to re'main in the pleaſing ignorance you 'are at preſent; and not ſeek to know 'a thing which will, haply, afford you 'but little ſatisfaction.'

'You have increaſed my curioſity ſo 'much by this advice,' reſumed he, accommodating his looks to Arabella's, 'that I ſhall not be at reſt till I know 'what it is you conceal from me: and 'ſince I am ſo much concerned in it, 'even by your own confeſſion, I have 'a right to preſs you to explain your'ſelf.'

'Since you are ſo importunate,' replied Arabella, 'I muſt tell you that I 'will not do you ſo great a diſkindneſs 'as to explain myſelf; nor will I be 'the firſt who ſhall acquaint you with 'your misfortune, ſince you will, 'haply, too ſoon arrive at the know'ledge of it by other means.'

Glanville, who imagined this was ſome new whim that had got into her head, was but little perplexed at an inſinuation, which, had he been ignorant of her foible, would have given him great uneaſineſs: but, being ſenſible that ſhe expected he would preſs her to diſcloſe herſelf, and appear extremely concerned at her refuſing him that ſatisfaction, he counterfeited ſo well, that ſhe was at a loſs how to evade the arguments he uſed to make her unfold the terrible myſtery; when the dinner-bell ringing, and relieving her for the preſent, Mr. Glanville led her down to the parlour, where Sir Charles and his daughter attended their coming.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH THE MISTAKES ARE NOT YET CLEARED UP.

THE baronet, who had been put into a bad humour by Arabella's inſinuations that Sir George had affronted her, appeared reſerved and uneaſy; and, being reſolved to queſtion her about it, was willing firſt to know exactly what it was his niece had been offended at: but as he feared, if it came to his ſon's knowledge, it would produce a quarrel between the young gentlemen, that might have dangerous conſequences, he was deſirous of ſpeaking to her alone; and, as ſoon as dinner was over, aſked her to take a walk with him upon the terrace, telling her he had ſomething to ſay to her in private. Arabella, whoſe fears had been conſiderably increaſed by the penſiveneſs which appeared in her uncle's looks during dinner, and ſuppoſing he wanted a private converſation only to explain himſelf more clearly to her than he had yet done, was exceſſively alarmed at this requeſt; and caſting her eyes down to the ground, bluſhed in ſuch a manner as betrayed her confuſion, and made Miſs Glanville and her brother believe that ſhe ſuſpected her uncle had

a deſign to preſs her ſoon to give her hand to Mr. Glanville, which occaſioned her apparent diſorder.

Sir Charles, however, who had not ſo heedfully obſerved her behaviour, repeated his requeſt; adding, with a ſmile, upon her giving him no anſwer, 'Sure, Lady Bella, you are not afraid 'to be alone with your uncle?'

'No, Sir,' replied Arabella, giving him a piercing look; 'I am not afraid 'of being alone with my uncle; and, 'as long as he pretends to be no more 'than my uncle, I ſhall not ſcruple to 'hear what he has to ſay to me.'

Sir Charles, a little vexed at an anſwer which inſinuated, as he thought, a complaint of his having pretended to more authority over her than he ought, told her, he hoped ſhe had no cauſe to believe he would diſpleaſe her by any improper exertion of that power over her, with which her father had intruſted him: 'For I aſſure you,' added he, 'I would rather you ſhould follow 'my advice as an uncle, than obey me 'as a guardian; and, ſince my affection for you is, perhaps, greater than 'what many people have for a niece, 'my ſolicitude ought to be imputed to 'that motive.'

'I have all the ſenſe I ought to have 'of that affection you honour me with,' replied Arabella; 'and ſince I hope it 'will be always what it ſhould be, 'without wiſhing for it's increaſe, I 'am contented with thoſe teſtimonies 'I have already received of it, and do 'not deſire any other.'

Sir Charles, a little puzzled to underſtand the meaning of theſe words, which the grave looks of Arabella made yet more myſterious, roſe from his ſeat with an air of diſcontent. 'I ſhould have 'been glad to have ſpoken a word in 'private to you, niece,' ſaid he; 'but 'ſince you think proper to make ſo 'much ceremony in ſuch a trifle, I'll 'defer it till you are in a better humour.'

Miſs Glanville ſeeing her father going out of the room, ſtepped before him; 'Nay, papa,' ſaid ſhe, 'if you want to 'ſpeak with my couſin, my brother and 'I will go out, and leave you to yourſelves.'

'You will do me a very great diſpleaſure,' ſaid Arabella; 'for I am 'ſure my uncle has not any thing of 'conſequence to ſay to me: however,' added ſhe, ſeeing Miſs Glanville go away, 'I am reſolved I will not be left 'alone; and therefore, Mr. Glanville, 'ſince I can pretend to ſome power 'over you, I command you to ſtay.'

'You may remember, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, with a ſmile, 'you re'fuſed to gratify my curioſity with 'regard to ſomething you hinted to me 'ſome time ago; and to puniſh you,' added he, going out of the room, 'I 'am reſolved you ſhall liſten to what 'my father has to ſay to you; for, by 'your unwillingneſs to hear it, I imagine you ſuſpect already what it is.'

Arabella, finding ſhe had no way to avoid hearing what ſhe dreaded ſo much, and obſerving her uncle had reſumed his chair, prepared to give him audience; but, in order to deprive him of all hope that ſhe would receive his diſcourſe favourably, ſhe aſſumed the ſevereſt look ſhe was capable of; and, caſting her eyes on the ground, with a mixture of anger and ſhame, waited with a kind of fear and impatience for what he had to ſay.

'I ſee, Madam,' ſaid the baronet, obſerving her confuſion, 'that you ap'prehend what I am going to ſay to 'you; but, I beſeech you, do not fear 'I have any intentions but ſuch as 'you'll approve.'

'You are certainly in the right, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'in the interpretation 'you have put on my looks: I am 'really in pain about the purport of 'your diſcourſe; and you would particularly oblige me, if you would diſpenſe with me from hearing it.'

'I ſee,' replied Sir Charles, 'that, 'out of a miſtaken fear, you are unwilling to hear me, in order to avoid 'coming to the explanation I deſire: 'but I tell you, once again, you have 'nothing to apprehend.'

'I have every thing to apprehend, Sir,' reſumed Arabella, tartly, 'while you 'perſiſt in your deſign of diſobliging 'me; and you cannot give me a greater 'proof of the badneſs of your intentions, than by thus forcing me to 'liſten to diſcourſes I ought to avoid.'

'Since my word has no weight with 'you,' replied Sir Charles, 'I'll condeſcend to aſſure you, by the moſt 'ſacred oath, that I do not mean to 'come to any extremities with Sir 'George concerning what you already 'told me; all I deſire to know is, if

'you

'you think you had any reaſon to be 'offended with him for any thing he 'ſaid? And in that caſe I cannot diſ-'penſe with myſelf from expoſtulating 'with him about it.'

'You would do me a favour, Sir,' reſumed Arabella, 'if you would in-'tereſt yourſelf a little leſs in what 'Sir George ſaid to me: the offence 'was committed againſt me only; and 'none but myſelf has any right to re-'ſent it.'

'It is enough, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, riſing. 'You acknowledge 'ſufficient to make me reſolve to oblige 'him to aſk pardon for the affront you 'have received: however, I beg you 'may make yourſelf eaſy; no ill con-'ſequences will happen from this af-'fair, provided my ſon does not know 'it; and I know you have too much 'diſcretion to acquaint him with it.'

Saying this, he went out of the room, leaving Arabella in great confuſion at what he had ſaid; which, in her opinion, had amounted almoſt to a plain declaration of his paſſion; and his deſign of putting an end to Sir George's pretenſions, whom, it was probable, he looked upon as a more dangerous rival than his ſon, confirmed her in the opinion of his reſolution to perſecute her.

Full of the reflections this accident had occaſioned, ſhe went to walk in the garden, where Mr. Glanville, his ſiſter having juſt left him, joined her.

As he imagined his father's deſign, in ſpeaking to her alone, was to prevail upon her to conſent to marry him before ſhe left the country, which was what he moſt earneſtly wiſhed, he drew a bad omen from the diſcontent which appeared in her eyes.

'Is it with me, couſin,' ſaid he, 'or with what my father has been ſay-'ing to you, that you are angry?'

'With both,' replied Arabella, haſtily; 'for if you had ſtaid in the 'room, as I commanded you, I ſhould 'not have been expoſed to the pain of 'hearing things ſo diſagreeable.'

'Since I knew what would be the 'purport of my father's diſcourſe,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'you ought not to be 'ſurprized I could not reſolve to give 'any interruption to it, by my preſence; 'and being ſo much intereſted in the 'ſucceſs of his ſolicitations, I could 'not chuſe but give him an opportu-'nity of ſpeaking to you alone, as he 'deſired.'

'It ſeems, then,' reſumed Arabella, 'you know what was the ſubject of 'his converſation.'

'I believe I can gueſs,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, ſmiling.

'Is it poſſible,' cried Arabella, ſtarting back in great ſurprize, 'that, know-'ing, as you ſay you do, your father's 'intentions, you would reſolve to fur-'niſh him with an opportunity of diſ-'cloſing them?'

'Can you blame me,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'for ſuffering him to un-'dertake what I durſt not myſelf? I 'know your delicacy, or rather your 'ſeverity, ſo well, that I am ſenſible, 'if I had taken the liberty to ſay what 'my father has ſaid, you would have 'been extremely offended, and pu-'niſhed me, as you have often done, 'with a baniſhment from your pre-'ſence; nay,' purſued he, ſeeing aſto-niſhment and anger in her countenance, 'I perceive you are, at this moment, 'going to pronounce ſome terrible ſen-'tence againſt me.'

'You are deceived,' ſaid Arabella, with a forced calmneſs; 'I am ſo far 'from being offended with you, that 'I am ready to acknowledge, you me-'rit very extraordinary praiſes for the 'perfect reſignation you ſhew to the 'will, and, for your credit, I will ſup-'poſe, the commands of your father; 'but I would adviſe you to be con-'tented with the reputation of being 'a dutiful ſon; and, for the future, 'never aſpire to that of being a faithful 'lover.'

Speaking theſe words, which were wholly unintelligible to her amazed admirer, ſhe left him, and went to her own apartment, ſtrangely ſurprized at the indifference of Mr. Glanville; who, as ſhe underſtood what he had ſaid, was not only willing to reſign her to his father, but alſo took upon him to mediate in his behalf.

As ſhe was unwilling to acknowledge, even to herſelf, that the grief ſhe felt at this diſcovery proceeded from any affection for her couſin, ſhe imputed it to the ſhame of ſeeing herſelf ſo baſely forſaken and neglected; and, not being able to find a precedent for ſuch an indignity offered to the charms

of

of any lady in her romances, the ſingularity of her fate, in this reſpect, ſeemed to demand all her uneaſineſs.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME NECESSARY CONSEQUENCES OF THE FOREGOING MISTAKES—A SOLILOQUY ON A LOVE-LETTER.

WHILE Arabella paſſed her time in her cloſet, in the moſt diſagreeable reflections, Glanville was racking his brain to find out the meaning of thoſe myſterious words ſhe had uttered at leaving him; he examined them twenty times over, but could not poſſibly penetrate into their ſenſe; but ſuppoſing, at laſt, that they really meant nothing at all, or were occaſioned by ſome new flight of her imagination, he went to find out his father, in order to know what had paſſed between him and Arabella.

Sir Charles, however, was not to be found; he had ordered his horſe to be made ready, under pretence of taking a little ride after dinner; and, paſſing by Sir George's houſe, alighted to pay him a viſit.

The young baronet, being at home, received him with great politeneſs; and Sir Charles, whoſe peculiar diſpoſition was to be nicely tenacious of every thing which he imagined had any relation to the honour of his family, took the firſt opportunity to queſtion him concerning the confuſion his whiſper had occaſioned in Lady Bella; adding, that ſhe had confeſſed he had given her reaſon to take ill what he had ſaid to her.

Sir George, who was by no meaus willing to quarrel with the uncle of Arabella, received the old gentleman's remonſtrances with a great deal of calmneſs; and, finding Arabella had not diſcovered the purport of that whiſper which had offended her, he told Sir Charles that the confuſion he ſaw in her countenance was occaſioned by his raillying her upon the fright ſhe had been in upon Mr. Glanville's account: he added ſome other particulars that entirely taking away all inclination in Sir Charles to purſue the matter any farther, they parted upon very good terms; Sir George promiſing, very ſoon, to return his viſit at the caſtle.

Mr. Glanville, upon his father's return, being impatient to know what he had ſaid to Arabella, enquired with ſo much precipitation, concerning the converſation they had had together, that Sir Charles, unwilling to tell him the truth, and not having time to conſider of an anſwer, evaded his queſtion in ſuch a manner, that Mr. Glanville could not help making ſome obſervation upon it; and, comparing this circumſtance with what Arabella had ſaid, though he could not comprehend the meaning that ſeemed to be concealed under their behaviour, he immediately concluded, there was ſome myſtery which it concerned him to find out.

Poſſeſſed with this opinion, he longed for an opportunity to talk with Arabella alone; but he was not ſo happy to obtain one; for, though that fair-one preſided at the tea-table, as uſual, and alſo appeared at ſupper, yet ſhe ſo induſtriouſly avoided all occaſions of being alone with him, though but for a moment, and appeared ſo reſerved and uneaſy, that it was impoſſible for him to ſpeak to her upon that ſubject.

As ſoon as it was time to retire, having reſolved to requeſt the favour of a few moments converſation with her, in her own apartment, and when he had, as was his cuſtom, handed her up ſtairs, inſtead of wiſhing her a good night, at her chamber-door, he was going to deſire permiſſion to enter it with her; when Lucy, coming to meet her lady, whiſpered her in the ear, upon which Arabella, turning towards him, gave him a haſty ſalute, and hurried into her apartment.

Glanville, no leſs vexed at this diſappointment, than perplexed at that whiſper, which had cauſed ſuch a viſible emotion in Arabella, retired to his own room, tormented with a thouſand uneaſy ſuſpicions, for which he could not exactly aſſign a cauſe; and wiſhing impatiently for the next day, in which he hoped to procure ſome explanation of what at preſent greatly perplexed him.

In the mean time, Arabella, who had been informed by Lucy, in that whiſper, who was eager to let her know it, that a meſſenger had brought a letter from Sir George, and late as it was at night, waited for an anſwer, was debating

bating with herſelf, whether ſhe ſhould open this billet or not: ſhe had a ſtrong inclination to ſee what it contained; but, fearful of tranſgreſſing the laws of romance, by indulging a curioſity not juſtifiable by example, ſhe reſolved to return this letter unopened.

'Here,' ſaid ſhe to Lucy, 'give 'this letter to the meſſenger that 'brought it, and tell him, I was exceſſively offended with you, for receiving it from his hands.'

Lucy, taking the letter, was going to obey her orders; when, recollecting herſelf, ſhe bid her ſtay.

'Since Sir George,' ſaid ſhe to herſelf, 'is no declared lover of mine, I 'may, without any offence to decorum, ſee what this letter contains: 'to refuſe receiving it, will be to acknowledge, that his ſentiments are 'not unknown to me; and, by conſequence, to lay myſelf under a neceſſity of baniſhing him; nor is it 'fit that I ſhould allow him to believe I am ſo ready to apprehend 'the meaning of every gallant ſpeech, 'which is uſed to me; and to conſtrue ſuch inſinuations, as he took 'the liberty to make me, into declarations of love.'

Allowing, therefore, the juſtice of of theſe reaſons, ſhe took the letter out of Lucy's hand; and, being upon the point of opening it, a ſudden thought controuled her deſigns: ſhe threw it ſuddenly upon her toilet; and, looking very earneſtly upon it—

'Preſumptuous paper!' ſaid ſhe, ſpeaking with great emotion to the letter, 'Bold repoſitory of thy maſter's daring thoughts! Shall I not be 'blamed by all who hereafter will hear 'or read my hiſtory, if, contrary to 'the apprehenſions I have, that thou 'containeſt a confeſſion that will diſpleaſe me, I open thy ſeal, and become acceſſary to thy writer's guilt, 'by deigning to make myſelf acquainted with it? And thou, too indiſcreet 'and unwary friend, whoſe folds contain the acknowledgment of his 'crime! what will it advantage thee 'or him, if, torn by my reſenting 'hand, I make thee ſuffer for the part 'thou beareſt in thy maſter's fault; 'and teach him, by thy fate, how little kindneſs he has to expect from 'me! Yet, to ſpare myſelf the trouble 'of reading what will, queſtionleſs, 'greatly diſpleaſe me, I will return 'thee, uninjured, into thy maſter's 'hands; and, by that moderation, 'make him repent the preſumption he 'has been guilty of!'

CHAP. IX.

CONTAINING A LOVE-LETTER IN THE HEROICK STILE; WITH SOME OCCASIONAL REASONINGS BY LUCY, FULL OF WIT AND SIMPLICITY.

OUR fair heroine having ended the foregoing ſoliloquy, took up the letter and gave it to Lucy, who had, all the time ſhe was ſpeaking, obſerved a profound ſilence, mixed with a moſt eager attention.

'Here,' purſued ſhe, 'carry it to 'the perſon who brought it, and bid 'him tell his maſter, that, leſt I ſhould 'find any thing in it which may offend 'me, I have choſen not to read it; 'and, if he is wiſe, he will profit by 'my concern for him, and take care 'how he hazards diſpleaſing me a ſecond time by an importunity of this 'kind, which I ſhall not ſo eaſily pardon him.'

Lucy, who had taken particular notice of this ſpeech, in order to remember every word of it when ſhe repeated it again, went conning her leſſon to the place where ſhe had deſired the ſervant to wait her coming: but he was gone; ſuch being indeed his maſter's orders; for he was apprehenſive that, following the cuſtom of the ladies in romances, Arabella would return his letter; and therefore, to deprive her of an opportunity of ſending it back that night, he ordered his man to ſay he waited for an anſwer; but, as ſoon as he conveniently could, to come away without one.

Lucy, in a great ſurprize at the ſervant's going away, returned to her lady with the letter in her hand, telling her ſhe muſt needs read it now, ſince the perſon who brought it was gone.

'It muſt be confeſſed,' ſaid Arabella, taking the letter from her, with a ſmile, 'he has fallen upon an ingenious de'vice to make me keep it for this night; 'and ſince, haply, I may be miſtaken 'in the contents, I have a mind to 'open it.'

Lucy

Lucy did not fail to confirm her lady in this deſign: and Arabella, making as if ſhe yielded to the importunities of her confidante, opened the letter; which ſhe found as follows—

'THE UNFORTUNATE AND DESPAIRING BELLMOUR, TO THE DIVINE ARABELLA.

'MADAM,

'SINCE it is, doubtleſs, not only with your permiſſion, but even by your commands, that your uncle, Sir Charles Glanville, comes to pronounce the ſentence of my death, in the denunciation of your anger, I ſubmit, Madam, without repining at the rigour of that doom you have inflicted on me. Yes, Madam, this criminal, who has dared to adore you with the moſt ſublime and perfect paſſion that ever was, acknowledges the juſtice of his puniſhment; and, ſince it is impoſſible to ceaſe loving you, or to live without telling you he does ſo, he is going voluntarily to run upon that death your ſeverity makes him wiſh for, and the greatneſs of his crime demands. Let my death then, O divine Arabella, expiate the offence I have been guilty of! And let me hope thoſe fair eyes, that have beheld me with ſcorn when alive, will not refuſe to ſhed ſome tears upon my tomb! and that, when you remember my crime of loving you, you will alſo be pleaſed to remember that I died for that crime; and wiſh for no other comfort in death, but the hope of your not hating, when he is no more, the unhappy

'BELLMOUR.'

Arabella, who had read this letter aloud, ſighed gently at the concluſion of it; but poor Lucy, who was greatly affected at ſo dolorous an epiſtle, could not reſtrain her tears; but ſobbed ſo often, and with ſo much violence, as at length recalled her lady from the reverie into which ſhe was plunged.

'What ails you?' ſaid ſhe to her confidante, greatly ſurprized. 'What is the cauſe of this unſeemly ſorrow?'

'Oh! Madam!' cried Lucy, her ſobs making a frequent and unpleaſing interruption in her words; 'I ſhall break my heart to be ſure: never was ſuch a ſad mournful letter in the world; I could cry my eyes out for the poor gentleman. Pray excuſe me, Madam; but, indeed, I can't help ſaying you are the moſt hard-hearted-eſt lady I ever knew in my born days. Why, to be ſure, you don't care if an hundred fine gentlemen ſhould die for you, though their ſpirits were to haunt you every night! Well, I would not have what your ladyſhip has to anſwer for, for all the world!'

'You are a fooliſh wench!' replied Arabella, ſmiling at her ſimplicity. 'Do you think I have any cauſe to accuſe myſelf, though five thouſand men were to die for me! It is very certain my beauty has produced very deplorable effects: the unhappy Hervey has expiated, by his death, the violence his too-deſperate paſſion forced him to meditate againſt me: the no leſs guilty, the noble unknown Edward, is wandering about the world in a tormenting deſpair, and ſtands expoſed to the vengeance of my couſin, who has vowed his death. My charms have made another perſon, whoſe character ought to be ſacred to me, forget all the ties of conſanguinity, and become the rival of his ſon, whoſe intereſt he once endeavoured to ſupport: and laſtly, the unfortunate Bellmour conſumes away in an hopeleſs paſſion; and, conſcious of his crime, dooms himſelf, haply, with more ſeverity than I deſire, to a voluntary death, in hopes thereby of procuring my pardon and compaſſion when he is no more. All theſe, Lucy, as I ſaid before, are very deplorable effects of my beauty; but you muſt obſerve, that my will has no part in the miſeries that unfortunate beauty occaſions; and that, though I could even wiſh myſelf leſs fair, in order to avoid giving ſo much unhappineſs to others, yet theſe wiſhes would not avail; and ſince, by a fatal neceſſity, all theſe things will happen, whether I would or no, I muſt comfort myſelf under the uneaſineſs which the ſenſibility of my temper makes me feel, by the reflection, that, with my own conſent, I contribute nothing to the misfortune of thoſe who love me.'

'Will your ladyſhip, then, let poor Sir George die?' ſaid Lucy, who had liſtened

listened very attentively to this fine harangue without understanding what it meant.

'Questionless, he must die,' replied Arabella, 'if he persists in his design 'of loving me.'

'But pray, Madam,' returned Lucy, 'cannot your ladyship command him 'to live as you did Mr. Hervey and 'Mr. Glanville, who both did as you 'bid them?'

'I may command him to live,' said Arabella; 'and there is no question but 'he would obey me, if I likewise permit him to love me; but this last not 'being fit for me to do, I see no way 'to prevent the sad resolution he has 'taken.'

'To be sure, Madam,' returned Lucy, 'your ladyship knows what you 'ought to do better than I can advise 'your ladyship, being that you are 'more learned than me: but, for all 'that, I think it's better to save life 'than to kill, as the Bible-book says; 'and since I am sure your ladyship is a 'good christian, if the gentleman dies 'for the want of a few kind words, or 'so, I am sure you will be troubled in 'mind about it.'

'It must be confessed,' said Arabella, smiling, 'that though your so-'licitations are not very eloquent, they 'are very earnest and affecting; and I 'promise you I will think about it: 'and, if I can persuade myself I am 'doing no wrong thing by concerning 'myself about his preservation, I will 'dispatch you to-morrow morning 'with my orders to him to live, or at 'least to proceed no farther in his de-'sign of dying, till he has farther 'cause.'

Lucy being extremely glad she had gained her point, called in her lady's other women, who, having assisted her to undress, left her in her closet, to which she always retired for an hour before she went to bed.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

A DISPUTE VERY LEARNEDLY HANDLED BY TWO LADIES, IN WHICH THE READER MAY TAKE WHAT PART HE PLEASES.

MR. Glanville, who was too much in love to paſs the night with any great degree of tranquillity, under the apprehenſions he felt, it being the nature of that paſſion to magnify the moſt inconſiderable trifles into things of the greateſt importance, when they concern the beloved object, did not fail to torment himſelf with a thouſand different fears, which the myſterious behaviour of his father, and the more myſterious words of his miſtreſs, gave riſe to.—Among many various conjectures, all equally unreaſonable, he fixed upon one no way advantageous to Sir Charles; for, ſuppoſing that the folly of Arabella had really diſguſted him, and made him deſirous of breaking off the deſigned match between them, he was, as he thought, taking meaſures to bring this about, knowing, that if Lady Bella refuſed to fulfil her father's deſire in this particular, a very conſiderable eſtate would deſcend to him.

Upon any other occaſion, Mr. Glanville would not have ſuſpected his father of ſo ungenerous an action; but lovers think every thing poſſible which they fear; and being prepoſſeſſed with this opinion, he reſolved the next morning to ſound his father's inclinations, by intreating him to endeavour to prevail upon Lady Bella to marry him before her year of mourning for the marquis was expired.

Attending him, therefore, at breakfaſt, in his own chamber, he made his deſigned requeſt, not without heedfully obſerving his countenance at the ſame time, and trembling leſt he ſhould make him an anſwer that might confirm his uneaſy ſuſpicion.

Sir Charles, however, agreeably ſurprized him, by promiſing to comply with his deſire that day; 'For,' added he, 'though my niece has ſome odd 'ways, yet, upon the whole, ſhe is a 'very accompliſhed woman; and when 'you are her huſband, you may pro'bably find the means of curing her 'of thoſe little follies which at preſent 'are conſpicious enough; but being 'occaſioned by a country education, 'and a perfect ignorance of the world, 'the inſtruction which then you will 'not ſcruple to give her, and which 'from a huſband, without any offence 'to her delicacy, ſhe may receive, may 'reform her conduct, and make her 'behaviour as compleat as, it muſt be 'confeſſed, both her perſon and mind 'now are.'

Mr. Glanville having acquieſced in the juſtice of this remark, as ſoon as breakfaſt was over, went to viſit the two ladies, who generally drank their chocolate together.

Miſs Glanville being then in Lady Bella's apartment, he was immediately admitted, where he found them engaged in a high diſpute; and, much againſt his will, was obliged to be arbitrator in the affair, they having, upon his entrance, both appealed to him.

But, in order to place this momentous affair in a true light, it is neceſſary to go back a little, and acquaint the reader with what had paſſed in the apartment; and alſo, following the cuſtom of the romance and novel-writers, in the heart of our heroine.

No ſooner were her fair eyes open in the morning, than the unfortunate Sir George preſenting himſelf to her imagination, her thoughts, to uſe Scudery's phraſe, were at a cruel war with each other: ſhe wiſhed to prevent the death of this obſequious lover; but ſhe could not reſolve to preſerve his life, by giving him that hope he required; and without which, ſhe feared, it would be impoſſible for him to live.

After pondering a few hours upon the neceſſity of his caſe, and what a juſt regard to her own honour required of her, decorum prevailed ſo much over compaſſion, that ſhe reſolved to abandon the miſerable Sir George to all the rigour of his deſtiny; when, happily for the diſconſolate lover, the hiſtory of the fair Amalazontha coming into her mind, ſhe remembered, that this haughty princeſs, having refuſed to marry the perſon her father recommended to her, becauſe he had not a crown upon his head; nevertheleſs, when he was dying for love of her, condeſcended to viſit him, and even to give him a little hope, in order to preſerve his life: ſhe conceived it could be no blemiſh to her character, if ſhe followed the example of this moſt glorious princeſs, and ſuffered herſelf to relax a little in her ſeverity, to prevent the effects of her lover's deſpair.

'Fear not, Arabella,' ſaid ſhe to herſelf; 'fear not to obey the dictates 'of thy compaſſion, ſince the glorious 'Amalazontha juſtifies, by her example, the means thou wilt uſe to 'preſerve a noble life, which depends 'upon a few words thou ſhalt utter,'

When ſhe had taken this reſolution, ſhe rung her bell for her women; and as ſoon as ſhe was dreſſed, ſhe diſmiſſed them all but Lucy, whom ſhe ordered to bring her paper and pens, telling her, ſhe would write an anſwer to Sir George's letter.

Lucy obeyed with great joy; but by that time ſhe had brought her lady all the materials for writing, her mind was changed; ſhe having reflected, that Amalazontha, whoſe example, in order to avoid the cenſure of future ages, ſhe was reſolved exactly to follow, did not write to Ambiomer, but paid him a viſit, ſhe reſolved to do the like; and therefore bid Lucy take them away again, telling her ſhe had thought better of it, and would not write to him.

Lucy, extremely concerned at this reſolution, obeyed her very ſlowly, and with great ſeeming regret.

'I perceive,' ſaid Arabella, 'you are 'afraid I ſhall abandon the unfortu-'nate man you ſolicit for, to the vio-'lence of his deſpair; but though I do 'not intend to write to him, yet I'll 'make uſe of a method, perhaps as 'effectual; for, to ſpeak truly, I mean 'to make him a viſit; his fever I ſup-'poſe being violent enough by this 'time to make him keep his bed.'

'And will you be ſo good, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'to go and ſee the poor 'gentleman? I warrant you, he will 'be ready to die for joy when he ſees 'you.'

'It is probable what you ſay may 'happen,' replied Arabella, 'but there 'muſt be proper precautions uſed to 'prevent thoſe conſequences which 'the ſudden and unexpected ſight of 'me may produce. Thoſe about him, 'I ſuppoſe, will have diſcretion 'enough for that; therefore give or-'ders for the coach to be made ready, 'and tell my women they muſt attend 'me; and be ſure you give them di-'rections, when I enter Sir George's 'chamber, to ſtay at a convenient diſ-'tance, in order to leave me an oppor-'tunity of ſpeaking to him, without 'being heard; as for you, you may 'approach the bed-ſide with me; ſince, 'being my confident, you may hear all 'we have to ſay.'

Arabella, having thus ſettled the ceremonial of her viſit, according to the rules preſcribed by romances, ſat down

down to her tea-table, having ſent to know if Miſs Glanville was up, and received for anſwer, that ſhe would attend her at breakfaſt.

Arabella, who had at firſt determined to ſay nothing of this affair to her couſin, could not reſiſt the deſire ſhe had of talking upon a ſubject ſo intereſting; and, telling her with a ſmile, that ſhe was about to make a very charitable viſit that morning, aſked her, if ſhe was diſpoſed to bear her company in it.

'I know you country ladies,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'are very fond of viſiting your ſick neighbours: for my part, I do not love ſuch a grave kind of amuſement; yet, for the ſake of the airing, I ſhall be very willing to attend you.'

'I think,' ſaid Arabella, with a more ſerious air than before, 'it behoves every generous perſon to compaſſionate the misfortunes of their acquaintance and friends, and to relieve them as far as lies in their power; but thoſe miſeries we ourſelves occaſion to others, demand, in a more particular manner, our pity; and, if conſiſtent with honour, our relief.'

'And pray,' returned Miſs Glanville, 'who is it you have done any miſchief to, which you are to repair by this charitable viſit, as you call it?'

'The miſchief I have done,' replied Arabella, bluſhing, and caſting down her eyes, 'was not voluntary, I aſſure you: yet I will not ſcruple to repair it, if I can; though, ſince my power is confined by certain unavoidable laws, my endeavours may not haply have all the ſucceſs I could wiſh.'

'Well, but dear couſin,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'tell me in plain Engliſh, what this miſchief is, which you have done; and to what purpoſe you are going out this morning?'

'I am going to pay a viſit to Sir George Bellmour,' replied Arabella; 'and I intreat you, fair couſin, to pardon me for robbing you of ſo accompliſhed a lover. I really always thought he was in love with you, till I was undeceived by ſome words he ſpoke yeſterday, and a letter I received from him laſt night, in which he has been bold enough to declare his paſſion to me, and through the apprehenſion of my anger, is this moment dying with grief; and it is to reconcile him to life, that I have prevailed upon myſelf to make him a viſit; in which charitable deſign, as I ſaid before, I ſhould be glad of your company.'

Miſs Glanville, who believed not a word Lady Bella had ſaid, burſt out a laughing at a ſpeech that appeared to her ſo extremely falſe and ridiculous.

'I ſee,' ſaid Arabella, 'you are of a humour to divert yourſelf with the miſeries of a deſpairing lover; and in this particular you greatly reſemble the fair and witty Doraliſa, who always jeſted at ſuch maladies as are occaſioned by love: however, this inſenſibility does not become you ſo well as her, ſince all her conduct was conformable to it, no man in the world being bold enough to talk to her of love; but you, couſin, are ready, even by your own confeſſion, to liſten to ſuch diſcourſes from any body; and therefore this behaviour in you may be with more juſtice termed levity, than indifference.'

'I perceive, couſin,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'I have always the worſt of thoſe compariſons you are pleaſed to make between me and other people; but, I aſſure you, as free and indiſcreet as you think me, I ſhould very much ſcruple to viſit a man, upon any occaſion whatever.'

'I am quite aſtoniſhed, Miſs Glanville,' reſumed Arabella, 'to hear you aſſume a character of ſo much ſeverity; you who have granted favours of a kind in a very great degree criminal.'

'Favours!' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'criminal favours! pray explain yourſelf, Madam.'

'Yes, couſin,' ſaid Arabella, 'I repeat it again; criminal favours, ſuch as allowing perſons to talk to you of love; not forbidding them to write to you; giving them opportunities of being alone with you for ſeveral moments together; and ſeveral other civilities of the like nature, which no man can poſſibly merit, under many years ſervices, fidelity, and pains: all theſe are criminal favours, and highly blameable in a lady who has any regard for her reputation.'

'All theſe,' replied Miſs Glanville, 'are nothing in compariſon of making them

'them viſits; and no woman, who has 'any reputation at all, will be guilty 'of taking ſuch liberties.'

'What! Miſs,' replied Arabella, 'will you dare, by this inſinuation, to 'caſt any cenſures upon the virtue of 'the divine Mandana, the haughty 'Amalazontha, the fair Statira, the 'cold and rigid Pariſatis, and many 'other illuſtrious ladies, who did not 'ſcruple to viſit their lovers, when 'confined to their beds, either by 'the wounds they received in battle, 'or the more cruel and dangerous ones 'they ſuffered from their eyes? Theſe 'chaſte ladies, who never granted a 'kiſs of their hand to a lover, till he 'was upon the point of being their 'huſband, would nevertheleſs moſt 'charitably condeſcend to approach 'their bed-ſide, and ſpeak ſome com-'paſſionate words to them, in order to 'promote their cure, and make them 'ſubmit to live; nay, theſe divine 'beauties would not refuſe to grant 'the ſame favour to perſons whom 'they did not love, to prevent the fa-'tal conſequences of their deſpair.'

'Lord, Madam!' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'I wonder you can talk ſo 'blaſphemouſly, to call a parcel of 'confident creatures divine, and ſuch 'terrible words.'

'Do you know, Miſs,' ſaid Arabella, with a ſtern look, 'that it is of 'the greateſt princeſſes that ever were, 'whom you ſpeak in this irreverent 'manner! Is it poſſible that you can 'be ignorant of the ſublime quality of 'Mandana, who was the heireſs of two 'powerful kingdoms? Are you not 'ſenſible, that Amalazontha was 'queen of Turringia? and will you 'pretend to deny the glorious extrac-'tion of Statira and Pariſatis, prin-'ceſſes of Perſia?'

'I ſhall not trouble myſelf to deny 'any thing about them, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'for I never heard 'of them before; and really I do not 'chuſe to be always talking of queens 'and princeſſes, as if I thought none 'but ſuch great people were worthy 'my notice: it looks ſo affected, I 'ſhould imagine every one laughed at 'me that heard me.'

'Since you are ſo very ſcrupulous,' returned Arabella, 'that you dare not 'imitate the ſublimeſt among mortals, 'I can furniſh you with many ex-'amples, from the conduct of perſons, 'whoſe quality was not much ſuperior 'to yours, which may reconcile you 'to an action, you at preſent, with ſo 'little reaſon, condemn: and, to name 'but one among ſome thouſands, the 'fair Cleonice, the moſt rigid and 'auſtere beauty in all Sardis, paid ſeve-'ral viſits to the paſſionate Ligdamis, 'when his melancholy, at the ill ſuc-'ceſs of his paſſion, threw him into a 'fever, that confined him to his bed.'

'And pray, Madam, who was that 'Cleonice?' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'and 'where did ſhe live?'

'In Sardis, I tell you,' ſaid Arabella, 'in the kingdom of Lydia.'

'Oh! then it is not in our king-'dom,' ſaid Miſs Glanville: 'what 'ſignifies what foreigners do? I ſhall 'never form my conduct upon the ex-'ample of outlandiſh people; what is 'common enough in their countries, 'would be very particular here; and 'you can never perſuade me, that it is 'ſeemly for ladies to pay viſits to men 'in their beds.'

'A lady,' ſaid Arabella, extremely angry at her couſin's obſtinacy, 'who 'will ſuffer men to preſs her hand, 'write to her, and talk to her of 'love, ought to be aſhamed of ſuch 'an affected niceneſs as that you pre-'tend to.'

'I inſiſt upon it, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'that all thoſe inno-'cent liberties you rail at, may be 'taken by any woman without giving 'the world room to cenſure her: but, 'without being very bold and impu-'dent, ſhe cannot go to ſee men in 'their beds; a freedom that only be-'comes a ſiſter, or near relation.'

'So then,' replied Arabella, red-dening with vexation, 'you will per-'ſiſt in affirming the divine Mandana 'was impudent?'

'If ſhe made ſuch indiſcreet viſits 'as thoſe, ſhe was,' ſaid Miſs Glan-ville.

'Oh, Heavens!' cried Arabella, 'have I lived to hear the moſt illuſtri-'ous princeſs that ever was in the 'world, ſo ſhamefully reflected on?'

'Bleſs me, Madam!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'what reaſon have you to 'defend the character of this princeſs 'ſo much? She will hardly thank you 'for your pains, I fancy.'

'Were you acquainted with the 'character

'character of that moſt generous prin-
'ceſs,' ſaid Arabella, 'you would be
'convinced that ſhe was ſenſible of the
'ſmalleſt benefits; but it is not with
'a view of acquiring her favour, that
'I defend her againſt your inhuman
'aſperſions, ſince it is more than two
'thouſand years ſince ſhe died; yet
'common juſtice obliges me to vindi-
'cate a perſon ſo illuſtrious for her
'birth and virtue; and were you not
'my couſin, I ſhould expreſs my re-
'ſentment in another manner, for the
'injury you do her.'

'Truly,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'I
'am not much obliged to you, Ma-
'dam, for not downright quarrelling
'with me for one that has been in her
'grave two thouſand years: however,
'nothing ſhall make me change my
'opinion, and I am ſure moſt people
'will be of my ſide of the argument.'

That moment Mr. Glanville ſending for permiſſion to wait upon Arabella, ſhe ordered him to be admitted, telling Miſs Glanville ſhe would acquaint her brother with the diſpute; to which ſhe conſented.

CHAP. II.

WHICH INCULCATES, BY A VERY GOOD EXAMPLE, THAT A PERSON OUGHT NOT TO BE TOO HASTY IN DECIDING A QUESTION HE DOES NOT PERFECTLY UNDERSTAND.

'YOU are come very opportune-
'ly, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, when he entered the room, 'to be judge of
'a great controverſy between Miſs
'Glanville and myſelf. I beſeech you,
'therefore, let us have your opinion
'upon the matter.

'Miſs Glanville maintains, that it
'is leſs criminal in a lady to hear per-
'ſons talk to her of love, allow them
'to kiſs her hand, and permit them to
'write to her, than to make a chari-
'table viſit to a man who is confined
'to his bed through the violence of
'his paſſion and deſpair; the intent
'of this viſit being only to prevent the
'death of an unfortunate lover, and,
'if neceſſary, to lay her commands
'upon him to live.'

'And this latter is your opinion, is
'it not, Madam?' ſaid Mr. Glanville,

'Certainly, Sir,' replied Arabella;
'and in this I am juſtified by all the
'heroines of antiquity.'

'Then you muſt be in the right,
'Madam,' returned Mr. Glanville,
'both becauſe your own judgment tells
'you ſo, and alſo the example of theſe
'heroines you mention.'

'Well, Madam,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, haſtily, 'ſince my brother
'has given ſentence on your ſide, I
'hope you will not delay your viſit to
'Sir George any longer.'

'How!' ſaid Mr. Glanville, ſurprized, 'is Lady Bella going to viſit
'Sir George?—Pray, Madam, may I
'preſume to enquire the reaſon for
'your doing him this extraordinary
'favour?'

'You are not very wiſe,' ſaid Arabella, looking gravely upon Miſs Glanville, 'to diſcover a thing which may
'haply create a quarrel between your
'brother and the unfortunate perſon
'you ſpeak of: yet ſince this indiſ-
'cretion cannot be recalled, we muſt
'endeavour to prevent the conſequences
'of it.'

'I aſſure you, Madam,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, extremely impatient to know the meaning of theſe hints, 'you
'have nothing to fear from me; there-
'fore you need not think yourſelf un-
'der any neceſſity of concealing this
'affair from me.'

'You are not, haply, ſo moderate
'as you pretend,' ſaid Arabella, (who would not have been diſpleaſed to have ſeen him in all the jealous tranſports of an enraged Orontes;) 'but what-
'ever enſues, I can no longer keep
'from your knowledge a truth your
'ſiſter has begun to diſcover; but in
'telling you what you deſire to know,
'I expect you will ſuppreſs all incli-
'nations to revenge, and truſt the care
'of your intereſt to my generoſity.

'You are to know, then, that in the
'perſon of your friend Sir George,
'you have a rival, haply the more to
'be feared, as his paſſion is no leſs
'reſpectful than violent; I poſſibly
'tell you more than I ought,' purſued ſhe, bluſhing, and caſting down her eyes, 'when I confeſs, that for certain
'conſiderations, wherein perhaps you
'are concerned, I have received the
'firſt inſinuation of this paſſion with
'diſdain enough; and I aſſure myſelf
'that you are too generous to deſire

'any

'any revenge upon a miſerable rival, 'of whom death is going to free you.'

Then, taking Sir George's letter out of her cabinet, ſhe preſented it to Mr. Glanville.

'Read this,' added ſhe; 'but read 'it without ſuffering yourſelf to be 'tranſported with any violent motions 'of anger; and as in fight I am per-'ſuaded you would not oppreſs a fall-'en and vanquiſhed foe, ſo in love I 'may hope an unfortunate rival will 'merit your compaſſion.'

'Never doubt it, Madam,' replied Mr. Glanville, receiving the letter, which Miſs Glanville, with a beating heart, earneſtly deſired to hear read. Her brother, after aſking permiſſion of Arabella, prepared to gratify her curioſity; but he no ſooner read the firſt ſentence, than, notwithſtanding all his endeavours, a ſmile appeared in his face; and Miſs Glanville, leſs able, and indeed leſs concerned to reſtrain her mirth at the uncommon ſtile, burſt out a laughing, with ſo much violence, as obliged her brother to ſtop, and counterfeit a terrible fit of coughing, in order to avoid giving Arabella the like offence.

The aſtoniſhment of this lady, at the ſurprizing and unexpected effect her lover's letter produced on Miſs Glanville, kept her in a profound ſilence, her eyes wandering from the ſiſter to the brother; who, continuing his cough, was not able, for ſome moments, to go on with his reading.

Arabella, during this interval, having recovered herſelf a little, aſked Miſs Glanville if ſhe found any thing in a lover's deſpair capable of diverting her ſo much as ſhe ſeemed to be with that of the unfortunate Sir George.

'My ſiſter, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, preventing her reply, 'knows ſo 'many of Sir George's infidelities, 'that ſhe cannot perſuade herſelf he is 'really in ſuch a dangerous way as he 'inſinuates: therefore you ought not 'to be ſurprized, if ſhe is rather diſ-'poſed to laugh at this epiſtle, than 'to be moved with any concern for the 'writer, who, though he is my rival, 'I muſt ſay, appears to be in a de-'plorable condition.'

'Pray, Sir,' reſumed Arabella, a little compoſed by thoſe words, 'finiſh 'the letter: your ſiſter may poſſibly 'find more cauſe for pity than con-'tempt, in the latter part of it.'

Mr. Glanville, giving a look to his ſiſter, ſufficient to make her comprehend that he would have her reſtrain her mirth for the future, proceeded in his reading; but every line increaſing his ſtrong inclination to laugh, when he came to the pathetick wiſh, that her fair eyes might ſhed ſome tears upon his tomb, no longer able to keep his aſſumed gravity, he threw down the letter in a counterfeited rage.

'Curſe the ſtupid fellow!' cried he, 'is he mad, to call the fineſt black eyes 'in the univerſe fair.—Ah! couſin,' ſaid he to Arabella, 'he muſt be little 'acquainted with the influence of your 'eyes, ſince he can ſo egregiouſly miſ-'take their colour.'

'And it is very plain,' replied Arabella, 'that you are little acquainted 'with the ſublime language in which 'he writes, ſince you find fault with 'an epithet which marks the beauty, 'not the colour, of thoſe eyes he praiſes; 'for, in fine, fair is indifferently ap-'plied, as well to black and brown 'eyes, as to light and blue ones, 'when they are either really lovely in 'themſelves, or by the lover's imagi-'nation created ſo: and therefore, 'ſince Sir George's prepoſſeſſion has 'made him ſee charms in my eyes, 'which, queſtionleſs, are not there, 'by calling them fair, he has very hap-'pily expreſſed himſelf, ſince therein 'he has the ſanction of thoſe great 'hiſtorians, who wrote the hiſtories 'of lovers he ſeems to imitate, as well 'in his actions as ſtile.'

'I find my rival is very happy in 'your opinion, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville; 'and I am apt to believe, 'I ſhall have more reaſon to envy than 'pity his ſituation.'

'If you keep within the bounds I 'preſcribe you,' replied Arabella, 'you 'ſhall have no reaſon to envy his ſitu-'ation; but, conſidering the condition 'to which his deſpair has by this time 'certainly reduced him, humanity re-'quires that we ſhould take ſome care 'of him; and, to ſhew you how great 'my opinion of your generoſity is, I 'will even intreat you to accompany 'me in the viſit I am going to make 'him.'

Mr. Glanville, being determined, if poſſible,

poſſible, to prevent her expoſing herſelf; affected to be extremely moved at this requeſt; and riſing from his chair in great ſeeming agitation, traverſed the room for ſome moments, without ſpeaking a word: then ſuddenly ſtopping—

'And can you, Madam,' ſaid he, looking upon Arabella, 'ſuppoſe that 'I will conſent to your viſiting my 'rival; and that I will be mean enough 'to attend you myſelf to his houſe? 'Do you think that Orontes, you have 'often reproached me with, would act 'in ſuch a manner?'

'I don't know how Orontes would 'have acted in this caſe,' ſaid Arabella, 'becauſe it never happened that 'ſuch a proof of his ſubmiſſion was 'ever deſired of him; but conſidering 'that he was of a very fiery and jealous 'diſpoſition, it is probable he might 'act as you do.'

'I always underſtood, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'that Orontes was 'a favourite of yours, but it ſeems I 'was miſtaken.'

'You will be very unjuſt,' ſaid Arabella, 'to draw any unfavourable con'cluſion from what I have ſaid, to the 'prejudice of that valiant prince, for 'whom I confeſs I have a great eſteem; 'and, truly, whoever reflects upon the 'great actions he did in the wars be'tween the Amazons and the fierce 'Naobarzanes king of the Cilicians, 'muſt needs conceive a very high idea 'of his virtue; but if I cannot bring 'the example of Orontes to influence 'you in the preſent caſe, I can men'tion thoſe of other perſons, no leſs 'illuſtrious for their birth and cou'rage, than him. Did not the brave 'Memnon, when his rival Oxyatres 'was ſick, intreat the beautiful Bar'ſina to favour him with a viſit? And 'the complaiſant huſband of the divine 'Pariſatis was not contented with bare'ly deſiring her to viſit Lyſimachus, 'who was dying with deſpair at their 'marriage, but would many times 'bring her himſelf to the bed-ſide of 'this unfortunate lover, and, leaving 'her there, give him an opportunity 'of telling her what he ſuffered for 'her ſake.'

'I am afraid,' Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'I ſhall never be capable 'of imitating either the brave Mem'non, nor the complaiſant Lyſimachus, 'in this caſe; and the humour of 'Orontes ſeems to me the moſt com'mendable.'

'Nevertheleſs,' ſaid Arabella, 'the 'humour of Orontes coſt him an in'finite number of pains; and it may 'happen, you will as near reſemble 'him in his fortune as you do in his 'diſpoſition; but pray let us end this 'diſpute at preſent. If you are not 'generous enough to viſit an unfor'tunate rival, you ſhall not put a ſtop 'to the charity of my intentions; and 'ſince Miſs Glanville is all of a ſudden 'become ſo ſevere, that ſhe will not 'accompany me in this viſit, I ſhall 'be contented with the attendance of 'my women.'

Saying this, ſhe roſe from her ſeat, calling Lucy, and ordered her to bid her companions attend.

Mr. Glanville, ſeeing her thus determined, was almoſt mad with vexation.

'Upon my ſoul, Madam,' ſaid he, ſeizing her hand, 'you muſt not go.'

'How, Sir!' ſaid Arabella, ſternly.

'Not without ſeeing me die firſt,' reſumed he, in a languiſhing tone.

'You muſt not die,' replied Arabella, gravely; 'nor muſt you pretend 'to hinder me from going.'

'Nay, Madam,' ſaid Glanville, 'one of theſe two things will certain'ly happen: either you muſt reſolve 'not to viſit Sir George, or elſe be 'contented to ſee me die at your feet.'

'Was ever any lady in ſo cruel a 'dilemma?' ſaid Arabella, throwing herſelf into the chair in a languiſhing poſture: 'what can I do to prevent 'the fate of two perſons, one of whom 'I infinitely pity, and the other, ob'ſtinate as he is, I cannot hate? Shall 'I reſolve to let the miſerable Bell'mour die, rather than grant him a 'favour the moſt rigid virtue would 'not refuſe him? or ſhall I, by op'poſing the impetuous humour of a 'lover, to whom I am ſomewhat 'obliged, make myſelf the author of 'his death? Fatal neceſſity! which 'obliges me either to be cruel or un'juſt; and, with a diſpoſition to nei'ther, makes me, in ſome degree, 'guilty of both.'

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS IN SOME LITTLE CONFUSION.

WHILE Arabella was uttering this pathetick complaint, Mr. Glanville, with great difficulty, kept himself from smiling; and, by some supplicating looks to his sister, prevented her laughing out; yet she giggled in secret behind her fan; but Arabella was so lost in her melancholy reflections, that she kept her eyes immoveably fixed on the ground for some moments: at last, casting an upbraiding glance at Glanville—

'Is it possible, cruel person that you are!' said she to him, 'that you 'can, without pity, see me suffer so 'much uneasiness; and, knowing the 'sensibility of my temper, can expose 'me to the grief of being accessary to 'the death of an unfortunate man, 'guilty indeed of a too violent passion, 'which merits a gentler punishment 'than that you doom him to?'

'Don't be uneasy, dear cousin,' interrupted Miss Glanville; 'I dare assure you Sir George won't die.'

'It is impossible to think that,' said Arabella, 'since he has not so much as 'received a command from me to live; 'but tell me truly,' pursued she, 'do 'you believe it probable, that he will 'obey me, and live?'

'Indeed, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, 'I could swear for him that he will.'

'Well,' replied Arabella, 'I will 'content myself with sending him my 'commands in writing; but it is to 'be feared they will not have so much 'efficacy upon his spirit.'

Mr. Glanville, extremely pleased that she had laid aside her design of visiting Sir George, did not oppose her writing to him, though he was plotting how to prevent the letter reaching his hands; and while she went into her closet to write, he conferred with his sister upon the means he should use, expressing, at the same time, great resentment against Sir George, for endeavouring to supplant him in his cousin's affection.

'What then,' said Miss Glanville, 'do you really imagine Sir George is 'in love with Lady Bella?'

'He is either in love with her per-'son or estate,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'or perhaps with both; for she is 'handsome enough to gain a lover of 'his merit, though she had no fortune; 'and she has fortune enough to do it, 'though she had no beauty.'

'My cousin is well enough, to be 'sure,' said Miss Glanville; 'but I 'never could think her a beauty.'

'If,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'a most 'lovely complexion, regular features, 'a fine stature, an elegant shape, and 'an inexpressible grace in all her mo-'tions, can form a beauty, Lady Bella 'may pretend to that character, with-'out any dispute.'

'Though she was all that you say,' returned Miss Glanville, 'I am certain 'Sir George is not in love with her.'

'I wish I was certain of that,' replied Mr. Glanville; 'for it is very 'probable you are mistaken.'

'You may see by his letter,' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'what a jest he 'makes of her; and if you had heard 'how he talked to her the other day 'in the garden, you would have died 'with laughing; yet my poor cousin 'thought he was very serious, and was 'so foolishly pleased!'

'I assure you, Charlotte,' said Mr. Glanville, gravely, 'I shall take it 'very ill, if you make so free with 'your cousin's little foibles; and if 'Sir George presumes to make a jest 'of her, as you say, I shall teach him 'better manners.'

'You are the strangest creature in 'the world!' said Miss Glanville: 'a minute or two ago, you was wish-'ing to be sure he was not in love 'with her; and now you are angry, 'when I assure you he is only in jest.'

Arabella, that moment coming out of her closet, broke off their discourse. 'I have written to Sir George,' said she, addressing herself to Mr. Glanville; 'and you are at liberty, if you 'please, to read my letter, which I 'propose to send away immediately.'

Mr. Glanville, taking the letter out of her hand, with a low bow, began to read it to himself; but Arabella, willing his sister should also be acquainted with the contents, obliged him, much against his will, to read it aloud. It was as follows—

'ARABELLA, TO BELLMOUR.

'WHATEVER offence your pre-'sumptuous declaration may 'have given me, yet my resentment 'will

'will be appeaſed with a leſs puniſh-
'ment than death: and that grief and
'ſubmiſſion you have teſtified in your
'letter, may haply have already pro-
'cured you pardon for your fault, pro-
'vided you do not forfeit it by diſ-
'obedience.

'I therefore command you to live,
'and command you by all that power
'you have given me over you.

'Remember I require no more of
'you, than Pariſates did of Lyſima-
'chus, in a more cruel and inſupport-
'able misfortune: imitate, then, the
'obedience and ſubmiſſion of that il-
'luſtrious prince; and though you
'ſhould be as unfortunate as he, let
'your courage alſo be equal to his;
'and, like him, be contented with
'the eſteem that is offered you, ſince it
'is all that can be beſtowed, by

'ARABELLA.'

Mr. Glanville, finding by this epiſtle, that Arabella did not deſign to encourage the addreſſes of Sir George, would not have been againſt his receiving it, had he not feared the conſequence of his having ſuch a convincing proof of the peculiarity of her temper in his poſſeſſion; and while he kept the letter in his hand, as if he wanted to conſider it a little better, he meditated on the means to prevent it's ever being delivered; and had poſſibly fixed upon ſome ſucceſsful contrivance, when a ſervant coming in, to inform the ladies that Sir George was come to wait on them, put an end to his ſchemes; and he immediately ran down to receive him, not being willing to increaſe, by his ſtay, the aſtoniſhment and confuſion which appeared in the countenance of Arabella, at hearing a man, whom ſhe had believed and repreſented to be dying, was come to pay her a viſit.

CHAP. IV.

WHERE THE LADY EXTRICATES HERSELF OUT OF HER FORMER CONFUSION, TO THE GREAT ASTONISHMENT, WE WILL SUPPOSE, OF THE READER.

MISS Glanville, not having ſo much delicacy as her brother, could not help exulting a little upon this occaſion.

'After the terrible fright you have
'been in, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'upon
'Sir George's account, I wonder you
'do not rather think it is his ghoſt
'than himſelf that is come to ſee us.'

'There is no queſtion but it is him-
'ſelf that is come,' ſaid Arabella, (who had already reconciled this viſit to her firſt thoughts of him;) 'and it
'is, haply, to execute his fatal deſign
'in my preſence, that has brought
'him here; and, like the unfortunate
'Agilmond, he means to convince me
'of his fidelity and love, by falling
'upon his ſword before my eyes.'

'Bleſs me, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'what horrid things come
'into your head! I vow you terrify
'me out of my wits, to hear you.'

'There is no occaſion for your fears,' interrupted Arabella; 'ſince we already
'ſuſpect his deſigns, it will be very
'eaſy to prevent them: had the prin-
'ceſs of the Sarmatians known the fa-
'tal intentions of her deſpairing lover,
'doubtleſs, ſhe would have uſed ſome
'precautions to hinder him from exe-
'cuting them; for want of which,
'ſhe ſaw the miſerable Agilmond wel-
'tering in his blood at her feet; and
'with reaſon accuſed herſelf of being
'the cauſe of ſo deplorable a ſpec-
'tacle.'

The aſtoniſhment Miſs Glanville was in, to hear her couſin talk in this manner, kept her from giving her any interruption, while ſhe related ſeveral other terrible inſtances of deſpair.

In the mean time, Sir George, who was impatient to go up to Lady Bella's apartment, having flattered himſelf into a belief, that his letter was favourably received; and that he ſhould be permitted to *hope* at leaſt; made a ſhort viſit to Sir Charles in his own room; and, accompanied by Mr. Glanville, who was reſolved to ſee in what manner Arabella received him, went to her apartment.

As he had taken care, at his entrance, to accommodate his looks to the character he had aſſumed of an humble deſpairing lover, Arabella no ſooner ſaw him, but her countenance changed; and, making a ſign to Mr. Glanville, who could not comprehend what ſhe meant, to ſeize upon the guard of his ſword, ſhe haſtily ſtept forward to meet him.

'I am too well convinced,' ſaid ſhe to Sir George, 'that the intent of your

'coming hither to-day is to commit 'some violence againſt yourſelf before 'my eyes: but liſten not, I beſeech 'you, to the dictates of your deſpair. 'Live; I command you, live; and 'ſince you ſay I have the abſolute diſ-'poſal of your life, do not deprive 'yourſelf of it, without the conſent of 'her on whom you profeſs to have 'beſtowed it.'

Sir George, who did not imagine Arabella would communicate his letter to her couſins, and only expected ſome diſtant hints from her concerning it, was ſo confounded at this reception before them, that he was not able to reply: he bluſhed, and turned pale alternately; and, not daring to look either upon Miſs Glanville or her brother, or to meet the eyes of the fair viſionary, who with great impatience expected his anſwer, he hung down his head in a very ſilly poſture; and, by his ſilence, confirmed Arabella in her opinion.

As he did not want for wit and aſſurance, during that interval of ſilence and expectation from all parties, his imagination ſuggeſted to him the means of extricating himſelf out of the ridiculous perplexity he was in; and as it concerned him greatly to avoid any quarrel with the brother and ſiſter, he determined to turn the whole matter into a jeſt; but, if poſſible, to manage it ſo that Arabella ſhould not enter into his meaning.

Raiſing therefore his eyes, and looking upon Arabella with a melancholy air—

'You are not deceived, Madam,' ſaid he: 'this criminal with whom you 'are ſo juſtly offended, comes with an 'intention to die at your feet, and 'breathe out his miſerable life, to ex-'piate thoſe crimes of which you ac-'cuſe him: but ſince your ſevere com-'paſſion will oblige me to live, I obey, 'O moſt divine, but cruel Arabella! 'I obey your harſh commands; and, 'by endeavouring to live, give you a 'more convincing proof of that reſpect 'and ſubmiſſion I ſhall always have 'for your will.'

'I expected no leſs from your cou-'rage and generoſity,' ſaid Arabella, with a look of great complacency; 'and 'ſince you ſo well know how to imi-'tate the great Lyſimachus in your 'obedience, I ſhall be no leſs acknow-'ledging than the fair Pariſatis; but 'will have for you an eſteem equal to 'that virtue I have obſerved in you.'

Sir George having received this gracious promiſe with a moſt profound bow, turned to Mr. Glanville with a kind of chaſtened ſmile upon his countenance.

'And you, fortunate and deſerving 'knight,' ſaid he, 'happy in the affec-'tions of the faireſt perſon in the world! 'grudge me not this ſmall alleviation 'of my misfortunes; and envy me not 'that eſteem which alone is able to 'make me ſuffer life, while you poſſeſs, 'in the heart of the divine Arabella, a 'felicity that might be envied by the 'greateſt monarchs in the world.'

As diverting as this ſcene was, Mr. Glanville was extremely uneaſy; for though Sir George's ſtratagem took, and he believed he was only indulging the gaiety of his humour by carrying on this farce, yet he could not endure he ſhould divert himſelf at Arabella's expence. The ſolemn ſpeech he had made him, did indeed force him to ſmile; but he ſoon aſſumed a graver look, and told Sir George, in a low voice, that when he had finiſhed his viſit he ſhould be glad to take a turn with him in the garden.

Sir George promiſed to follow him, and Mr. Glanville left the room, and went into the gardens; where the baronet, having taken a reſpectful leave of Arabella, and by a ſly glance convinced Miſs Glanville he had ſacrificed her couſin to her mirth, went to join her brother.

Mr. Glanville, as ſoon as he ſaw him, walked to meet him with a very reſerved air; which Sir George obſerving, and being reſolved to keep up his humour—

'What, inhuman but too-happy lo-'ver,' ſaid he, 'what am I to under-'ſtand by that cloud upon your brow? 'Is it poſſible that thou canſt envy me 'the ſmall comfort I have received? 'And, not ſatisfied with the glorious 'advantages thou poſſeſſeſt, wilt thou 'ſtill deny me that eſteem which the 'divine Arabella has been pleaſed to 'beſtow upon me?'

'Pray, Sir George,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'lay aſide this pompous ſtile: I 'am not diſpoſed to be merry at pre-'ſent, and have not all the reliſh for 'this

'this kind of wit that you seem to ex-
'pect. I desired to see you here, that
'I might tell you, without witnesses,
'I take it extremely ill you should pre-
'sume to make my cousin the object
'of your mirth. Lady Bella, Sir, is
'not a person with whom such liberties
'ought to be taken; nor will I, in the
'double character of her lover and re-
'lation, suffer it from any one what-
'ever.'

'Cruel fortune!' said Sir George, stepping back a little, and lifting up his eyes, 'shall I always be exposed to thy 'persecutions? And must I, without 'any apparent cause, behold an enemy 'in the person of my friend; who, 'though without murmuring, I resign 'to him the adorable Arabella, is yet 'resolved to dispute with me a satis-'faction which does not deprive him 'of any part of that glorious fortune 'to which he is destined? Since it is 'so, unjust and cruel friend,' pursued he, 'strike this breast which carries 'the image of the divine Arabella; 'but think not that I will offer to de-'fend myself, or lift my sword against 'a man beloved by her.'

'This is all very fine,' returned Mr. Glanville, hardly able to forbear laugh-ing; 'but it is impossible, with all your 'gaiety, to hinder me from being se-'rious upon this business.'

'Then be as serious as thou wilt, 'dear Charles,' interrupted Sir George, 'provided you will allow me to be 'gay; and not pretend to infect me 'with thy unbecoming gravity.'

'I have but a few words to say to 'you, then, Sir,' replied Mr. Glan-ville: 'either behave with more respect 'to my cousin, or prepare to give me 'satisfaction for the insults you offer 'her.'

'Oh! I understand you, Sir,' said Sir George; 'and because you have 'taken it into your head to be offended 'at a trifle of no consequence in the 'world, I must give you a fair chance 'to run me through the body! There 'is something very foolish, faith, in 'such an extravagant expectation: but 'since custom has made it necessary that 'a man must venture his soul and body 'upon these important occasions, be-'cause I will not be out of the fashion, 'you shall command me whenever you 'think fit; though I shall fight with 'my school-fellow with a very ill will, 'I assure you.'

'There is no necessity for fighting,' said Mr. Glanville, blushing at the ludicrous light in which the gay baronet had placed his challenge; 'the con-'cession I have required is very small, 'and not worth the contesting for on 'your side. Lady Bella's peculiarity, 'to which you contribute so much, 'can afford you at best but an ill-na-'tured diversion, while it gives me a 'real pain; and sure you must acknow-'ledge you are doing me a very great 'injury, when you endeavour to con-'firm a lady, who is to be my wife, in 'a behaviour that excites your mirth, 'and makes her a fit object for your 'ridicule and contempt.'

'You do Lady Bella a much greater 'injury than I do,' replied Sir George, 'by supposing she can ever be an object 'of ridicule and contempt: I think 'very highly of her understanding; and 'though the bent of her studies has 'given her mind a romantick turn, yet 'the singularity of her manners is far 'less disagreeable than the lighter 'follies of most of her sex.'

'But to be absolutely perfect,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'I must cure 'her of that singularity; and therefore 'I beg you will not persist in assuming 'a behaviour conformable to her ro-'mantick ideas; but rather help me to 'banish them from her imagination.'

'Well,' replied Sir George, 'since 'you no longer threaten, I'll do what 'I can to content you; but I must 'quit my heroicks by degrees, and 'sink with decency into my own cha-'racter, otherwise she will never en-'dure me in her presence.'

Arabella and Miss Glanville appearing in the walk, broke off the conversation. The baronet and Mr. Glanville walked forward to meet them; but Arabella, who did not desire company, struck into another walk, whither Mr. Glanville following, proposed to join her, when he saw his father, who had been taking a turn there alone, make up to Arabella; and supposing he would take that opportunity to talk to her concerning him, he went back to his sister and Sir George, whose conversa-tion he interrupted, to the great regret of Miss Glanville.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH WILL BE FOUND ONE OF THE FORMER MISTAKES PURSUED, AND ANOTHER CLEARED UP, TO THE GREAT SATISFACTION OF TWO PERSONS; AMONG WHOM THE READER, WE EXPECT, WILL MAKE A THIRD.

ARABELLA no sooner saw Sir Charles advancing towards her, when, sensible of the consequence of being alone with a person whom she did not doubt would make use of that advantage to talk to her of love, she endeavoured to avoid him, but in vain; for Sir Charles, guessing her intentions, walked hastily up to her; and, taking hold of her hand—

'You must not go away, Lady Bella,' said he; 'I have something to say to 'you.'

Arabella, extremely discomposed at this behaviour, struggled to free her hand from her uncle; and giving him a look, on which disdain and fear were visibly painted—

'Unhand me, Sir,' said she, 'and 'force me not to forget the respect I 'owe you as my uncle, by treating 'you with a severity such uncommon 'insolence demands.'

Sir Charles, letting go her hand in a great surprize at the word insolent, which she had used, asked her if she knew to whom she was speaking.

'Questionless, I am speaking to my 'uncle,' replied she; 'and it is with 'great regret I see myself obliged to 'make use of expressions no way con-'formable to the respect I bear that 'sacred character.'

'And pray, Madam,' said Sir Charles, somewhat softened by this speech, 'who is it that obliges you to 'lay aside that respect you seem to ac-'knowledge is due to your uncle?'

'You do, Sir,' replied she; 'and it 'is with infinite sorrow that I beheld 'you assuming a character unbecom-'ing the brother of my father.'

'This is pretty plain, indeed,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'but pray, Ma-'dam, inform me what it is you com-'plain of?'

'You, questionless, know much 'better than I can tell you,' replied Arabella, blushing, 'the offence I ac-'cuse you of; nor is it proper for me 'to mention what it would not become 'me to suffer.'

'Zounds!' cried Sir Charles, no longer able to suppress his growing anger, 'this is enough to make a man 'mad.'

'Ah! I beseech you, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'suffer not an unfortunate 'and ill-judged passion to be the bane 'of all your happiness and virtue: re-'cal your wandering thoughts; reflect 'upon the dishonour you will bring 'upon yourself by persisting in such 'unjustifiable sentiments.'

'I do not know how it is possible to 'avoid it,' said Sir Charles; 'and, not-'withstanding all this fine reasoning, 'there are few people but would fly into 'greater extremities; but my affection 'for you makes me—'

'Hold! hold! I conjure you, Sir!' interrupted Arabella; 'force me not 'to listen to such injurious language; 'carry that odious affection somewhere 'else, and do not persecute an unfor-'tunate maid, who has contributed 'nothing to thy fault, and is only 'guilty of too much compassion for 'thy weakness.'

'Good God!' cried Sir Charles, starting back, and looking upon Arabella with astonishment; 'how I pity 'my son! What would I not give if he 'did not love this girl!'

'Think not,' replied Arabella, 'that 'the passion your son has for me makes 'your condition a bit the worse; for I 'would be such as I am with respect 'to you, were there no Mr. Glanville 'in the world.'

'I never thought, niece,' said Sir Charles, after a little pause, 'that any 'part of my behaviour could give you 'the offence you complain of, or au-'thorize that hatred and contempt you 'take the liberty to express for me; 'but since it is so, I promise you I will 'quit your house, and leave you to 'yourself: I have always been solici-'tous for your welfare; and, ungrate-'ful as you are—'

'Call me not ungrateful,' interrupted Arabella again; 'Heaven is my 'witness, that had you not forgot I 'was your niece, I would have always 'remembered you was my uncle; and 'not only have regarded you as such, 'but have looked upon you as another 'father, under whose direction Pro-

'vidence

'vidence had placed me, since it had 'deprived me of my real father; and 'whose tenderness and care might have 'in some measure supplied the loss I 'had of him: but Heaven has decreed 'it otherwise; and since it is it's will 'that I should be deprived of the com-'fort and assistance my orphan state 'requires, I must submit, without 'murmuring, to my destiny. Go then, 'unfortunate and lamented uncle,' pursued she, wiping some tears from her fine eyes; 'go, and endeavour by 'reason and absence to recover thy re-'pose; and be assured, whenever you 'can convince me you have triumphed 'over these sentiments which now cause 'both our unhappiness, you shall have 'no cause to complain of my conduct 'towards you.'

Finishing these words, she left him with so much speed, that it would have been impossible for him to have stopped her, though he had intended it: but indeed he was so lost in wonder and confusion at a behaviour for which he was not able to assign any other cause than madness, that he remained fixed in the same posture of surprize, in which she had left him; and from which he was first interrupted by the voice of his son, who, seeing Arabella flying towards the house in great seeming emotion, came to know the result of their conversation.

'Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, who had spoken to his father before, but had no answer, 'will you not inform me 'what success you have had with my 'cousin? How did she receive your 'proposal?'

'Speak of her no more,' said Sir Charles; 'she is a proud ungrateful 'girl, and unworthy the affection you 'have for her.'

Mr. Glanville, who trembled to hear so unfavourable an answer to his enquiries, was struck dumb with his surprize and grief; when Sir Charles taking notice of the alteration in his countenance—

'I am sorry,' said he, 'to find you 'have set your heart upon this fan-'tastic girl; if ever she be your wife, 'which I very much doubt, she will 'make you very unhappy: but, 'Charles,' pursued he, 'I would ad-'vise you to think no more of her; 'content yourself with the estate you 'gain by her refusal of you; with that 'addition to your own fortune, you 'may pretend to any lady whatever; 'and you will find many that are full 'as agreeable as your cousin, who will 'be proud of your addresses.'

'Indeed, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, with a sigh, 'there is no woman upon 'earth whom I would chuse to marry, 'but Lady Bella; I flattered myself I 'had been happy enough to have made 'some progress in her affection; but 'it seems I was mistaken; however, I 'should be glad to know, if she gave 'you any reasons for refusing me.'

'Reasons,' said Sir Charles; 'there 'is no making her hear reason, or ex-'pecting reason from her; I never 'knew so strange a woman in my life; 'she would not allow me to speak what 'I intended concerning you; but in-'terrupted me every moment, with 'some high-flown stuff or other.'

'Then I have not lost all hopes of 'her,' cried Mr. Glanville, eagerly; 'for since she did not hear what you 'had to say, she could not possibly 'deny you.'

'But she behaved in a very impert-'inent manner to me,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'complained of my harsh 'treatment of her; and said several 'other things, which, because of her 'uncommon stile, I could not perfect-'ly understand; yet they seemed shock-'ing; and, upon the whole, treated 'me so rudely, that I am determined 'to leave her to herself, and trouble 'my head no more about her.'

'For God's sake, dear Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, alarmed at this reso-lution, 'suspend your anger till I have 'seen my cousin; there is some mis-'take, I am persuaded, in all this. 'I know she has some very odd hu-'mours, which you are not so well 'acquainted with, as I am. I'll go 'to her, and prevail upon her to ex-'plain herself.'

'You may do so if you please,' re-plied Sir Charles; 'but I fear it will 'be to very little purpose; for I really 'suspect her head is a little turned: I 'do not know what to do with her; 'it is not fit she should have the ma-'nagement of herself; and yet it is 'impossible to live upon easy terms 'with her.'

Mr. Glanville, who did not doubt but Arabella had been guilty of some very ridiculous folly, offered nothing more.

more in her justification; but, having attended his father to his own chamber, went to Arabella's apartment.

He found the pensive fair-one in a melancholly posture, her head reclined upon one of her fair hands; and though her eyes were fixed upon a book she held in the other, yet she did not seem to read, but rather to be wholly buried in contemplation.

Mr. Glanville having so happily found her alone, (for her women were not then in her chamber) seated himself near her; having first asked pardon for the interruption he had given to her studies; and Arabella, throwing aside her book, prepared to listen to his discourse; which by the agitation which appeared in his looks, she imagined would be upon some extraordinary subject.

'I left my father just now,' said he, 'in a great deal of uneasiness, on account of something you said to him, 'Lady Bella; he apprehends you are 'disobliged, and he would willingly 'know how.'

'Has your father then acquainted 'you with the subject of our conversation?' interrupted Arabella.

'I know what would have been the 'subject of your conversation,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'if you had been 'pleased to listen to what Sir Charles 'intended to say to you on my behalf.'

'On your behalf?' interrupted Arabella: 'Ah, poor deceived Glanville! 'how I pity thy blind sincerity! But 'it is not for me to undeceive thee: 'only thus much I may say to you, 'beware of committing your interests 'to a person who will be a much better advocate for another than for you.'

Mr. Glanville, rejoiced to find by these words, that her resentment against his father was occasioned by a suspicion so favourable for him, assured her, that Sir Charles wished for nothing more earnestly than that he might be able to merit her esteem; and that it was to dispose her to listen to his addresses, that he wanted to discourse with her that morning.

Mr. Glanville being obliged, through his knowledge of his cousin's temper, to speak to her in this distant manner, went on with his assurances of his father's candour in this respect; and Arabella, who would not declare her reasons for doubting it, only replied, that she wished Sir Charles meant all that he had said to him; but that she could not persuade herself to believe him sincere, till his future actions had convinced her he was so.

Mr. Glanville, impatient to let his father know how greatly he had been mistaken in the cause of Arabella's behaviour, made his visit shorter than he would otherwise have done, in order to undeceive him.

'Is it possible,' said Sir Charles, when his son had repeated the conversation he had just had with Arabella, 'that 'she could be so foolish as to imagine 'I had a design to propose any one 'else to her but you? What reason 'have I ever given her, to think I 'would not be glad to have her for my 'daughter-in-law? Indeed, she has 'some odd ways that are very disagreeable; but she is one of the best 'matches in England for all that: 'poor girl!' pursued he, 'she had reason to be angry, if that was the case; 'and now I remember, she cried, when 'I told her I would leave the house; 'yet her spirit was so great, that she 'told me I might go. Well, I'll go 'and make it up with her; but who 'could have imagined she would have 'been so foolish?' Sir Charles, at the repetition of these words, hurried away to Arabella's apartment.

'Niece,' said he, at his entrance, 'I 'am come to ask your pardon, for having led you into a belief, that I 'meant—'

'It is enough, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'I grant you my pardon for 'what is past; and as it does not become me to receive submissions from 'my uncle, while he remembers he is 'so, I will dispense with your acknowledgments at present; only to 'convince me, that this sudden alteration is sincere, avoid, I beseech you, 'for the future, all occasions of displeasing me.'

'I protest,' cried Sir Charles, 'that 'I never intended—'

'I will not hear you say a word more 'of your past intentions,' interrupted Arabella again; 'I have forgot them 'all; and, while you continue to regard me as your niece, I will never 'remember them to your disadvantage.'

'Then I may hope——' said Sir Charles.

'Oh!

'Oh, Heavens!' cried Arabella, not suffering him to proceed; 'do you 'come to insult me thus, with a mock 'repentance? And has my easiness in 'being so ready to forget the injury 'you would have done me, made you 'presumptuous enough to cherish an 'insolent hope that I will ever change 'my resolution?'

'How vexatious is this!' replied Sir Charles, fretting to see her continually mistaking him. 'I swear to 'you, by all that is sacred, that it is 'my son, for whom I would solicit 'your consent!'

'How!' said Arabella, astonished, 'will you then be just at last? And can 'you resolve to plead for that son, 'whose interest, but a moment ago, 'you would have destroyed?'

'I see,' said Sir Charles, 'it is im-'possible to convince you.'

'No, no!' interrupted Arabella, hastily; 'it is not impossible but my 'own ardent wishes that it may be so, 'will help to convince me of the truth 'of what you say: for, in fine, do you 'think, I shall not be as glad as yourself, 'to find you capable of acting honour-'ably by your son; and to see myself 'no longer the cause of the most un-'justifiable conduct imaginable?'

Sir Charles was opening his mouth, to press her in favour of Mr. Glanville; whom, notwithstanding her strange behaviour, he was glad to find she loved; when Arabella preventing him—

'Seek not, I beseech you,' said she, 'to destroy that belief I am willing to 'give your words, by any more at-'tempts at this time to persuade me; 'for truly, I shall interpret your soli-'citude no way in your favour; there-'fore, if you desire I should be con-'vinced you are sincere, let the silence 'I require of you be one proof of it.'

Sir Charles, who looked excessively out of countenance at such a peremptory command from his niece, was going out of her chamber in a very ill humour, when the dinner-bell ringing, she gave him her hand with a very gracious air; and permitted him to lead her into the dining-room, where they found Mr. Glanville, his sister, and Sir George, who had been detained to dinner by Miss Glanville, expecting their coming.

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING SOME ACCOUNT OF THALESTRIS, QUEEN OF THE AMAZONS, WITH OTHER CURIOUS ANECDOTES.

LADY Bella having recovered her usual chearfulness, through the satisfaction she felt at her uncle's returning to reason, and the abatement she perceived in Sir George's extreme melancholy, mixed in the conversation with that wit and vivacity which was natural to her, and which so absolutely charmed the whole company, that not one of them remembered any of her former extravagancies.

Mr. Glanville gazed on her with a passionate tenderness, Sir George with admiration, and the old baronet with wonder and delight.

But Miss Glanville, who was inwardly vexed at the superiority her cousin's wit gave her over herself, wished for nothing more than an opportunity of interrupting a conversation in which she could have no share; and, willing to put them in mind of some of Arabella's strange notions, when she observed them disputing concerning some of the actions of the ancient Romans, she very innocently asked Sir George, whether in former times women went to the wars, and fought like men? 'For my cousin,' added she, 'talks of 'one Thaletris, a woman, that was as 'courageous as any soldier whatever.'

Mr. Glanville, horridly vexed at a question that was likely to engage Arabella in a discourse very different from that she had been so capable of pleasing in, frowned very intelligibly at his sister; and, to prevent any answer being given to her absurd demand, directed some other conversation to Arabella: but she, who saw a favourite subject started, took no notice of what Mr. Glanville was saying to her; but, directing her looks to Sir George—

'Though Miss Glanville,' said she, 'be a little mistaken in the name of 'that fair queen she has mentioned; 'yet I am persuaded you know whom 'she means; and that it is the renown-'ed Thalestris, whose valour staggers

'her belief, and of whom she wants to 'be informed.'

'Aye, aye, Thalestris,' said Miss Glanville: 'it is such a strange name 'I could not remember it; but, pray, 'was there ever such a person?'

'Certainly, Madam, there was,' replied Sir George; 'she was queen 'of the Amazons, a warlike nation 'of women, who possessed great part 'of Cappadocia, and extended their 'conquests so far, that they became 'formidable to all their neighbours.'

'You find, Miss,' said Arabella, 'I did not attempt to impose upon you, 'when I told you of the admirable 'valour of that beautiful queen; which 'indeed was so great, that the united 'princes, in whose cause she fought, 'looked upon her assistance to be equal 'to that of a whole army; and they 'honoured her accordingly with the 'most distinguishing marks of their 'esteem and acknowledgment, and 'offered her the chief command of their 'forces.'

'O shameful!' cried Sir Charles; 'offer a woman the command of an 'army! Brave fellows indeed, that 'would be commanded by a woman! 'Sure you mistake, niece; there never 'was such a thing heard of in the 'world.'

'What, Sir,' said Arabella, 'will 'you contradict a fact attested by the 'greatest historians that ever were? 'You may as well pretend to say, there 'were never such persons as Oroon-'dates or Juba, as dispute the exist-'ence of the famous Thalestris.'

'Why, pray, Madam,' said Sir Charles, 'who were those?'

'One of them,' replied Arabella, 'was the great king of Scythia; and 'the other, prince of the Two Mau-'sitanias.'

'Ods-heart!' interrupted Sir Charles, 'I believe their kingdoms are in the 'moon; I never heard of Scythia, or 'the Two Mauritanias, before.'

'And yet, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'those kingdoms are doubtless as well 'known as France or England; and 'there is no question, but the descend-'ants of the great Oroondates, and 'the valiant Juba, sway the sceptres of 'them to this day.'

'I must confess,' said Sir George, 'I have a very great admiration for 'those two renowned princes, and have 'read their beautiful exploits with 'infinite pleasure; notwithstanding 'which, I am more inclined to esteem 'the great Artaban than either of them.'

'Though Artaban,' replied Arabella, 'is, without question, a warrior 'equal to either of them, and haply 'no person in the world possessed so 'sublime a courage as his was; yet, 'it may be, your partiality proceeds 'from another cause; and you having 'the honour to resemble him in some 'little infidelities he was accused of, 'with less justice than yourself per-'haps, induces you to favour him more 'than any other.'

Arabella blushed when she ended these words: and Sir George replied, with a sigh—

'I have, indeed, the honour, Ma-'dam, to resemble the great Artaban, 'in having dared to raise my thoughts 'towards a divine person, who, with 'reason, condemns my adorations.'

'Hey-day!' cried Sir Charles, 'are 'you going to speak of divine things, 'after all the fables you have been 'talking of? Troth, I love to hear 'young men enter upon such subjects—'but pray, niece, who told you Sir 'George was an infidel?'

'Mr. Glanville,' replied Arabella: 'and I am inclined to think he spoke 'truth; for Sir George has never pre-'tended to deny it.'

'How!' interrupted Sir Charles; 'I am sorry to hear that. I hope you 'have never,' added he, looking at the young baronet, 'endeavoured to 'corrupt my son with any of your 'free-thinking principles: I am for 'every body having liberty of con-'science; but I cannot endure to hear 'people of your stamp endeavouring 'to propagate your mischievous no-'tions; and because you have no re-'gard for your own future happiness, 'disturbing other people in the lau-'dable pursuit of theirs.'

'We will not absolutely condemn 'Sir George,' said Arabella, 'till we 'have heard his history from his own 'mouth, which he promised some time 'ago to relate when I desired it.'

'I do not imagine his history is fit 'to be heard by ladies,' said Sir Charles; 'for your infidels live a strange kind 'of life.'

'However

'However that may be,' replied Arabella, 'we must not dispense with 'Sir George from performing his pro-'mise; I dare say there are no ladies 'here who will think the worse of 'him for freely confessing his faults.'

'You may answer for yourself, if 'you please, Madam,' said Sir Charles; 'but I hope my girl there will not say 'as much.'

'I dare say my cousin is not so 'rigid,' said Arabella; 'she has too 'much the spirit of Julia in her to find 'fault with a little infidelity.'

'I am always obliged to you for 'your comparisons, cousin,' said Miss Glanville; 'I suppose this is greatly 'to my advantage, too.'

'I assure you, Madam,' said Sir George, 'Lady Bella has done you no 'injury by the comparison she has just 'now made; for Julia was one of the 'finest princesses in the world.'

'Yet she was not free from the su-'spicion of infidelity,' replied Arabella; 'but though I do not pretend 'to tax my cousin with that fault, yet 'it is with a great deal of reason that 'I say she resembles her in her volatile 'humour.'

'I was never thought to be ill-hu-'moured in my life, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, colouring; 'and I 'cannot imagine what reason I have 'given you for saying I am.'

'Nay, cousin,' said Arabella, 'I am 'not condemning your humour; for, 'to say the truth, there are a great 'many charms in a volatile disposition; 'and, notwithstanding the admirable 'beauty of Julia, it is possible she made 'as many slaves by her light and airy 'carriage, as she did by her eyes, 'though they were the fairest in the 'world, except the divine Cleopatra's.'

'Cleopatra!' cried Sir Charles: 'why she was a gypsey, was she not?'

'I never heard her called so,' said Arabella, gravely; 'and I am apt to 'believe you are not at all acquainted 'with her; but pray,' pursued she, 'let us wave this discourse at present, 'and prepare to listen to Sir George's 'relation of his life; which, I dare 'say, is full of very extraordinary 'events—however, Sir,' added she, directing her speech to the young baronet, 'I am afraid your modesty will 'induce you to speak with less can-'dour than you ought, of those great 'actions, which questionless you have 'performed; therefore we shall hear 'your history, with greater satisfaction, 'from the mouth of your faithful 'squire, who will not have the same 'reasons that you have, for suppressing 'what is most admirable in the adven-'tures of your life.'

'Since it is your pleasure, Madam, replied Sir George, 'to hear my ad-'ventures, I will recount them as well 'as I am able myself, to the end that 'I may have an opportunity of oblig-'ing you by doing some violence to 'my natural modesty, which will not 'suffer me to relate things the world 'have been pleased to speak of to my 'advantage, without some little con-'fusion.'

Then, casting down his eyes, he seemed to be recollecting the most material passages in his life. Mr. Glanville, though he could have wished he had not indulged Arabella in her ridiculous request, was not able to deny himself the diversion of hearing what kind of history he would invent; and therefore resolved to stay and listen to him.

Miss Glanville was also highly delighted with the proposal; but Sir Charles, who could not conceive there could be any thing worth listening to, in a young rake's account of himself, got up with an intention to walk in the garden; when, perceiving it rained, he changed his resolution, and resuming his seat, prepared to listen, as every one else did, to the expected story.

When Sir George, after having paused a quarter of an hour longer, during which all the company observed a profound silence, began his relation in this manner, addressing himself to Arabella.

END OF THE FIFTH BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINING THE BEGINNING OF SIR GEORGE'S HISTORY; IN WHICH THE INGENIOUS RELATOR HAS EXACTLY COPIED THE STILE OF ROMANCE.

'THOUGH at present, 'Madam, you behold me 'in the quality of a private gentleman, in the 'possession only of a tolerable estate, yet my 'birth is illustrious enough; my ancestors having formerly worn a crown; 'which, as they won by their valour, 'so they lost by their misfortune only.'

'How,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'are you descended from kings? Why, 'I never heard you say so before: 'pray, Sir, how far are you removed 'from royal blood? and which of 'your forefathers was it that wore a 'crown?'

'Sir,' replied Sir George, 'it is 'not much more than eight hundred 'years since my ancestors, who were 'Saxons, swayed the sceptre of Kent; 'and from the first monarch of that 'mighty kingdom am I lineally de'scended.'

'Pray, where may that kingdom of 'Kent lie?' said Sir Charles.

'Sir,' replied Sir George, 'it is 'bounded by Sussex on the south-west; 'Surrey on the west; the English Chan'nel on the south; Dover Streights on 'the south-east; and the Downs on 'the east; and it is divided from Mid'dlesex and Essex on the north by the 'Thames.'

'A mighty kingdom, indeed!' said Sir Charles: 'why, it makes but a 'very small part of the kingdom of 'Britain now: well, if your ancestors 'were kings of that country, as it is 'now called, it must be confessed their 'dominions were very small.'

'However that may be,' said Arabella, 'it raises Sir George greatly in 'my esteem, to hear he is descended 'from kings; for, truly, a royal ex'traction does infinitely set off noble 'and valiant actions, and inspires only 'lofty and generous sentiments—there'fore, illustrious prince, (for in that 'light I shall always consider you) 'be assured, though fortune has de'spoiled you of your dominions, yet 'since she cannot deprive you of your 'courage and virtue, Providence will 'one day assist your noble endeavours 'to recover your rights, and place you 'upon the throne of your ancestors, 'from whence you have been so in'humanly driven: or, haply, to re'pair that loss, your valour may pro'cure you other kingdoms, no less 'considerable than that to which you 'was born.'

'For Heaven's sake, niece,' said Sir Charles, 'how come such improbable 'things into your head? Is it such an 'easy matter, think you, to conquer 'kingdoms,

kingdoms, that you can flatter a young man, who has neither fleets nor armies, with such strange hopes?'

'The great Artaban, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'had neither fleets nor armies, and was master only of a single sword; yet he soon saw himself greater than any king, disposing the destinies of monarchs by his will, and deciding the fates of empires by a single word: but pray let this dispute rest where it is, and permit Sir George to continue his relation.'

'It is not necessary, Madam,' resumed Sir George, 'to acquaint you with the misfortunes of my family, or relate the several progressions it made towards the private condition in which it now is; for, besides that reciting the events of so many hundred years may haply, in some measure, try your patience, I should be glad if you would dispense with me from entering into a detail of accidents that would sensibly afflict me: it shall suffice, therefore, to inform you, that my father, being a peaceable man, fond of retirement and tranquillity, made no attempts to recover the sovereignty from which his ancestors had been unjustly expelled; but quietly beheld the kingdom of Kent in the possession of other masters, while he contented himself with the improvement of that small pittance of ground, which was all that the unhappy Prince Veridomer, my grandfather, was able to bequeath to him.'

'Hey-day!' cried Sir Charles, 'will you new-christen your grandfather, when he has been in his grave these forty years? I knew honest Sir Edward Bellmour very well, though I was but a youth when he died; but I believe no person in Kent ever gave him the title of Prince Veridomer: Fie! fie! these are idle brags.'

Sir George, without taking notice of the old baronet's heat, went on with his narration in this manner—

'Things were in this state, Madam, when I was born. I will not trouble you with the relation of what I did in my infancy.'

'No, pray skip over all that,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'I suppose your infancy was like other people's; what can there be worth hearing in that?'

'You are deceived, Sir,' said Arabella; 'the infancy of illustrious personages has always something very extraordinary in it; and from their childish words and actions there have been often presages drawn of their future greatness and glory.'

'Not to disoblige Sir Charles, however,' said the young Prince of Kent, 'I will not repeat many things which I said and did in the first years of my life, that those about me thought very surprizing; and from them prognosticated that very strange accidents would befal me.'

'I have been a witness of some very unfavourable prognosticks of you,' said Sir Charles, smiling; 'for you was the most unlucky bold spark that ever I knew in my life.'

'It is very certain,' pursued Sir George, 'that the forwardness of my spirit gave great uneasiness to my father; who being, as I said before, inclinable to a peaceable and sedentary life, endeavoured as much as possible to repress that vivacity in my disposition, which he feared might involve me in dangerous enterprizes. The pains he took in my education, I recompensed by a more than ordinary docility; and, before I was thirteen, performed all my exercises with a marvellous grace, and, if I may dare say so, was, at those early years, the admiration and wonder of all that saw me.'

'Lady Bella had some reason to fear your modesty, I find,' said Sir Charles, smiling; 'for, methinks you really speak too slightly of your excellences.'

'However that may be,' resumed Sir George; 'my father saw these early instances of a towering genius in me, with a pleasure, chastened by his fears, that the grandeur of my courage would lead me to attempt something for the recovery of that kingdom, which was my due, and which might haply occasion his losing me.

'Possessed with these thoughts, he carefully avoided saying any thing to me concerning the glorious pretences to which my birth gave me a right; and often wished it had been possible for him to conceal from me, that I was the true and lawful heir of the kingdom of Kent; a circumstance he never chose to mention to any per-

son,

'ſon, and would have been glad if it 'had always remained a ſecret.'

'And ſo it was a ſecret,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'for, till this day, I 'never heard of it; and it might ſtill 'have been a ſecret if you had pleaſed; 'for nobody, I dare ſay, would ſuſpect ſuch a thing; and very few, I 'believe, will be inclined to think 'there is any thing in ſuch an improbable tale.'

'Notwithſtanding all my father's 'endeavours to the contrary, Madam,' purſued Sir George, 'I cheriſhed thoſe 'towering ſentiments the knowledge 'of my birth inſpired me with; and 'it was not without the utmoſt impatience that I brooked the private 'condition to which I found myſelf 'reduced.

"Cruel fate!" would I ſometimes 'cry; "was it not enough to deprive "me of that kingdom, which is my "due, and ſubject me to a mean and "inglorious ſtate; but to make that "condition infinitely more grievous, "muſt thou give me a ſoul towering "above my abject fortune? A ſoul, "that cannot but diſdain the baſe ſubmiſſion I muſt pay to thoſe who "triumph in the ſpoils of my ruined "houſe? A ſoul, which ſees nothing "above it's hopes and expectations? "And, in fine, a ſoul, that excites me "daily to attempt things worthy of my "birth, and thoſe noble ſentiments I "inherit from my great forefathers? "Ah!" purſued I, "unhappy Bellmour; what hinders thee from making thyſelf known and acknowledged "for what thou art? What hinders "thee from boldly aſſerting thy juſt "and natural rights; and from defying the uſurper, who detains them "from thee? What hinders thee, I "ſay?"

'What?' interrupted Sir Charles; 'why the fear of a halter, I ſuppoſe: 'there is nothing more eaſy than to 'anſwer that queſtion.'

'Such, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'were the thoughts which continually 'diſturbed my imagination; and, 'doubtleſs, they had not failed to puſh 'me on to ſome hazardous enterprize, 'had not a fatal paſſion interpoſed; and 'by it's ſweet, but dangerous allurements, ſtifled for a while that flame 'which ambition, and the love of glory, kindled in my ſoul.'

Sir George here pauſing, and fixing his eyes with a melancholy air on the ground, as if preſt with a tender remembrance—

Mr. Glanville aſked him, ſmiling, if the thoughts of poor Dolly diſturbed him? 'Pray,' added he, 'give us the 'hiſtory of your firſt love, without 'any mixture of fable; or ſhall I take 'the trouble off you? For you know, 'I am very well acquainted with 'your affair with the pretty milkmaid, and can tell it very ſucinctly.'

'It is true, Sir,' ſaid Sir George, ſighing, 'I cannot recal the idea 'of Dorothea into my remembrance 'without ſome pain; that fair but unfaithful ſhepherdeſs, who firſt taught 'me to ſigh, and repaid my tenderneſs with the blackeſt infidelity; yet 'I will endeavour to compoſe myſelf, 'and go on with my narration.'

'Be pleaſed to know, then, Madam,' purſued Sir George, 'that 'having my thoughts, in this manner, wholly employed with the diſaſters of my family, I had arrived to 'my ſeventeenth year, without being 'ſenſible of the power of love; but 'the moment now arrived, which was 'to prove fatal to my liberty. Following the chace one day with my 'father, and ſome other gentlemen, I 'happened to lag a little behind them; 'and, being taken up with my ordinary reflections, I loſt my way, and 'wandered a long time, without knowing or conſidering whither I was going. Chance at laſt conducted me 'to a pleaſant valley, ſurrounded with 'trees; and, being tired with riding, 'I alighted, and tying my horſe to a 'tree, walked forward, with an intention to repoſe myſelf a few moments under the ſhade of one of thoſe 'trees that had attracted my obſervation: but while I was looking for 'the moſt convenient place, I ſpied, 'at the diſtance of ſome few yards 'from me, a woman lying aſleep upon 'the graſs. Curioſity tempted me to 'go nearer this perſon; and, advancing ſoftly, that I might not diſturb 'her, I got near enough to have a 'view of her perſon: but, ah! Heavens! what wonders did my eyes encounter in this view!—The age of 'this fair ſleeper ſeemed not to exceed 'ſixteen; her ſhape was formed with 'the exacteſt ſymmetry; one of her

'hands

'hands ſupported her head; the other, 'as it lay careleſsly ſtretched at her 'ſide, gave me an opportunity of ad-'miring it's admirable colour and pro-'portion. The thin covering upon 'her neck diſcovered part of it's ini-'mitable beauty to my eyes; but her 'face, her lovely face, fixed all my 'attention.

'Certain it is, Madam, that, out 'of this company, it would be hard 'to find any thing ſo perfect as what 'I now viewed. Her complexion was 'the pureſt white imaginable, height-'ened by the enchanting glow, which 'dyed her fair cheeks with a colour 'like that of a new-blown roſe: her 'lips, formed with the greateſt per-'fection, and of a deeper red, ſeemed 'to receive new beauties from the fra-'grance of that breath that parted 'from them. Her auburn hair fell in 'looſe ringlets over her neck; and 'ſome ſtraggling curls, that play-'ed upon her fair forehead, ſet off by 'a charming contraſt the whiteneſs of 'that ſkin it partly hid: her eyes in-'deed were cloſed; and though I knew 'not whether their colour and beauty 'were equal to thoſe other miracles in 'her face, yet their proportion ſeemed 'to be large; and the ſnowy lids, 'which covered them, were admirably 'ſet off by thoſe long and ſable laſhes 'that adorned them.

'For ſome moments I gazed upon 'this lovely ſleeper, wholly loſt in 'wonder and admiration.

"Where," whiſpered I, "where "has this miracle been concealed, that "my eyes were never bleſſed with the "ſight of her before?" Theſe words, 'though I uttered them ſoftly, and 'with the utmoſt caution, yet by the 'murmuring noiſe they made, cauſed 'an emotion in the beauteous ſleeper, 'that ſhe ſtarted, and preſently after 'opened her eyes: but what words 'ſhall I find to expreſs the wonder, the 'aſtoniſhment, and rapture, which the 'ſight of thoſe bright ſtars inſpired me 'with? The flames which darted from 'thoſe glorious orbs, caſt ſuch a daz-'zling ſplendor upon a ſight too weak 'to bear a radiance ſo unuſual, that 'ſtepping back a few paces, I con-'templated at a diſtance that bright-'neſs which began already to kindle 'a conſuming fire in my ſoul.'

'Bleſs me!' interrupted Sir Charles, confounded at ſo pompous a deſcrip-tion; 'who could this be?'

'The pretty milk-maid, Dolly 'Acorn,' replied Mr. Glanville, grave-ly: 'did you never ſee her, Sir, when 'you was at your ſeat, at ———? She 'uſed often to bring cream to my lady.'

'Aye, aye,' replied Sir Charles, 'I remember her; ſhe was a very pretty 'girl. And ſo it was from her eyes 'that all thoſe ſplendors and flames 'came, that had like to have burnt you 'up, Sir George? Well, well, I gueſs 'how the ſtory will end: pray let us 'hear it out.'

'I have already told you, Madam,' reſumed Sir George, 'the marvellous 'effects the ſight of thoſe bright eyes 'produced upon my ſpirit: I remain-'ed fixed in a poſture of aſtoniſhment 'and delight; and all the faculties of 'my ſoul were ſo abſorbed in the con-'templation of the miracles before me, 'that I believe, had ſhe ſtill continued 'before my eyes, I ſhould never have 'moved from the place where I then 'ſtood; but the fair virgin, who had 'ſpied me at the ſmall diſtance to which 'I was retired, turned haſtily about, 'and flew away with extraordinary 'ſwiftneſs.

'When love, now lending me wings, 'whom admiration had before made 'motionleſs, I purſued her ſo eagerly, 'that at laſt I overtook her; and, 'throwing myſelf upon my knees be-'fore her—

"Stay, I conjure you," cried I; "and if you be a divinity, as your "celeſtial beauty makes me believe, "do not refuſe the adoration I offer "you: but if, as I moſt ardently wiſh, "you are a mortal, though ſure the "faireſt that ever graced the earth; "ſtop a moment, to look upon a man, "whoſe reſpects for you as a mortal "fall little ſhort of thoſe adorations "he offers you as a goddeſs."

'I can't but think,' cried Sir Charles, laughing, 'how poor Dolly muſt be 'ſurprized at ſuch a rhodomontade 'ſpeech!'

'Oh, Sir!' replied Mr. Glanville, 'you will find ſhe will make as good 'a one.'

'Will ſhe, by my troth?' ſaid Sir Charles: 'I don't know how to be-'lieve it.'

'This

'This action,' purſued Sir George, 'and the words I uttered, a little ſurprized that fair maid, and brought a bluſh into her lovely cheeks; but recovering herſelf, ſhe replied with an admirable grace—

"I am no divinity," ſaid ſhe; "and "therefore your adorations are miſ"placed: but if, as you ſay, my "countenance moves you to any re"ſpect for me, give me a proof of it, "by not endeavouring to hold any far"ther diſcourſe with me, which is not "permitted me from one of your ſex "and appearance."

'A very wiſe anſwer, indeed!' interrupted Sir Charles again. 'Very 'few town-ladies would have diſclaim'ed the title of goddeſs, if their lov'ers had thought proper to beſtow it 'upon them. I am mightily pleaſed 'with the girl for her ingenuity.'

'The diſcretion of ſo young a dam'ſel,' reſumed Sir George, 'charmed 'me no leſs than her beauty; and I 'beſought her, with the utmoſt ear'neſtneſs, to permit me a longer con'verſation with her.

"Fear not, lovely virgin," ſaid I, "to liſten to the vows of a man, who, "till he ſaw you, never learnt to ſigh: "my heart, which defended it's li"berty againſt the charms of many "admirable ladies, yields, without "reluctance, to the pleaſing violence "your beauties lay upon me. Yes, "too charming and dangerous ſtranger, "I am no longer my own maſter; it "is in your power to diſpoſe of my "deſtiny: conſider therefore, I beſeech "you, whether you can conſent to ſee "me die? For I ſwear to you, by the "moſt ſacred oaths, unleſs you pro"miſe to have ſome compaſſion on me, "I will no longer behold the light of "day."

'You may eaſily conceive, Madam, 'that, conſidering this lovely maid in 'the character of a ſhepherdeſs, in 'which ſhe appeared, I made her a 'declaration of my paſſion, without 'thinking myſelf obliged to obſerve 'thoſe reſpects, which, to a perſon of 'equal rank with myſelf, decorum 'would not have permitted me to for'get.

'However, ſhe repelled my boldneſs 'with ſo charming a modeſty, that I 'began to believe ſhe might be a per'ſon of illuſtrious birth, diſguiſed 'under the mean habit ſhe wore; but, 'having requeſted her to inform me 'who ſhe was, ſhe told me her name 'was Dorothea; and that ſhe was 'daughter to a farmer that lived in the 'neighbouring valley. This know'ledge increaſing my confidence, I 'talked to her of my paſſion, without 'being the leaſt afraid of offending 'her.'

'And therein you was greatly to 'blame,' ſaid Arabella: 'for, truly, 'though the fair Dorothea told you 'ſhe was daughter to a farmer, yet, 'in all probability, ſhe was of a much 'higher extraction, if the picture you 'have drawn of her be true.

'The fair Arſinoe, Princeſs of Ar'menia, was conſtrained for a while 'to conceal her true name and quality, 'and paſs for a ſimple country-wo'man, under the name of Delia: yet 'the generous Philadelph, Prince of 'Cilicia, who ſaw and loved her under 'that diſguiſe, treated her with all the 'reſpect he would have done, had he 'known ſhe was the daughter of a 'king. In like manner, Prince Phi'loxipes, who fell in love with the 'beautiful Policrete, before he knew 'ſhe was the daughter of the great So'lon, and while he looked upon her 'as a poor ſtranger, born of mean pa'rents; nevertheleſs, his love ſupply'ing the want of thoſe advantages of 'birth and fortune, he wooed her with 'a paſſion as full of awe and delicacy, 'as if her extraction had been equal 'to his own. And therefore thoſe ad'mirable qualities the fair Dorothea 'poſſeſſed, might alſo have convinced 'you ſhe was not what ſhe ſeemed, 'but, haply, ſome great princeſs in 'diſguiſe.'

'To tell you the truth, Madam,' replied Sir George, 'notwithſtanding 'the fair Dorothea informed me ſhe 'was of a mean deſcent, I could not 'eaſily forego the opinion that ſhe 'was of an illuſtrious birth; and the 'hiſtories of thoſe fair princeſſes you 'have mentioned, coming into my 'mind, I alſo thought it very poſſible, 'that this divine perſon might either 'be the daughter of a great king, or 'law-giver, like them; but, being 'wholly engroſſed by the violence of 'my new-born affection, I liſtened to 'nothing but what moſt flattered my 'hopes; and, addreſſing my lovely

'ſhepherdeſs

'shepherdess with all the freedom of a 'person who thinks his birth much 'superior to hers; she listened to my 'protestations, without any seeming 'reluctance, and condescended to as-'sure me before we parted, that she 'did not hate me. So fair a begin-'ning, seemed to promise me the most 'favourable fortune I could with rea-'son expect. I parted from my fair 'shepherdess with a thousand vows of 'fidelity; exacting a promise from 'her, that she would meet me as often 'as she conveniently could, and have 'the goodness to listen to those assur-'ances of inviolable tenderness my 'passion prompted me to offer her. 'When she left me, it seemed as if my 'soul had forsaken my body to go after 'her: my eyes pursued her steps as 'long as she was in sight; I envied 'the ground she prest as she went along, 'and the breezes that kissed that ce-'lestial countenance in their flight.

'For some hours I stood in the same 'posture in which she had left me; 'contemplating the sudden change I 'had experienced in my heart, and the 'beauty of that divine image, which 'was now engraven in it. Night 'drawing on, I began to think of go-'ing home; and, untying my horse, 'I returned the way I had come; and 'at last struck into a road, which 'brought me to the place where I part-'ed from the company; from whence 'I easily found my way home, so 'changed both in my looks and car-'nage, that my father, and all my 'friends, observed the alteration with 'some surprize.'

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH SIR GEORGE, CONTINUING HIS SURPRIZING HISTORY, RELATES A MOST STUPENDOUS INSTANCE OF A VALOUR, ONLY TO BE PARALLELED BY THAT OF THE GREAT OROONDATES, CÆSAREO, &c. &c. &c.

'FOR some months,' continued Sir George, 'I prosecuted my 'addresses to the admirable Dorothea; 'and I flattered myself with a hope 'that I had made some progress in her 'heart: but, alas! this deceitful fair-'one, who only laughed at the tor-'ments she made me endure at the 'time she vowed eternal constancy to 'me, gave her hand to a lover of her 'father's providing, and abandoned 'me, without remorse, to the most 'cruel despair.

'I will not trouble you, Madam, 'with the repetition of those com-'plaints which this perfidious action 'drew from me for a long time. At 'length, my courage enabling me to 'overcome the violence of my grief, 'I resolved to think of the ungrateful 'Dorothea no more; and the sight of 'another beauty compleating my cure, 'I no longer remembered the unfaith-'ful shepherdess but with indiffe-'rence.

'Thus, Madam, have I faithfully 'related one of those infidelities where-'with my enemies slander me; who 'can support their assertion with no 'better proof than that I did not die 'when Dorothea abandoned me: but 'I submit it to your candour, whether 'an unfaithful mistress deserved such 'an instance of affection from a lover 'she had betrayed?'

'Why, really,' replied Arabella, after a little pause, 'you had some ex-'cuse to plead for your failure in this 'point: and though you cannot be 'called the most perfect amongst lovers, 'seeing you neither died, nor was in 'danger of dying; yet neither ought 'you to be ranked among those who 'are most culpable. But pray proceed 'in your story; I shall be better able 'to form a right judgment of your 'merit as a lover, when I have heard 'all your adventures.'

'My passion for Dorothea,' resumed Sir George, 'being cured by her trea-'chery towards me, the love of glory 'began again to revive in my soul. I 'panted after some occasion to signa-'lize my valour, which yet I had met 'with no opportunity of doing; but 'hearing that a mighty army was pre-'paring to march upon a secret expe-'dition, I privately quitted my father's 'seat; and attended only by my faith-'ful squire, I took the same route the 'army had taken, and arrived the day 'before the terrible battle of ——— 'was fought, where, without making 'myself known, I performed such pro-'digies of valour as astonished all who 'beheld me! Without doubt I should 'have been highly caressed by the com-

'mander, who certainly would have 'given me the honour of a victory my 'ſword alone had procured for him; 'but having unwittingly engaged my-'ſelf too far in purſuit of the flying 'enemy, I found myſelf alone, en-'compaſſed with a party of about five 'hundred men, who, ſeeing they were 'purſued only by a ſingle man, faced 'about, and prepared to kill or take 'me priſoner.'

'Pray, Sir,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'when did all this happen? and how 'came it to paſs that your friends have 'been ignorant to this moment of thoſe 'prodigies of valour you performed 'at that battle? I never heard you was 'ever in a battle. Fame has done you 'great injuſtice by concealing the part 'you had in that famous victory.'

'The great care I took to conceal 'myſelf,' replied Sir George, 'was 'one reaſon why my friends did not 'attribute to me the exploits which the 'knight in black armour, who was no 'other than myſelf, performed; and 'the accident I am going to relate pre-'vented my being diſcovered, while 'the memory of thoſe great exploits 'were yet freſh in the minds of thoſe 'I had ſo greatly obliged.

'Be pleaſed to know, therefore, Ma-'dam, that ſeeing myſelf about to be 'encompaſſed by this party of the ene-'my, I diſdained to fly; and, though 'I was alone, reſolved to ſuſtain their 'attack, and ſell my life as dear as 'poſſible.'

'Why, if you did ſo, you was a 'madman,' cried Sir Charles, in a heat: 'the braveſt man that ever lived 'would not have preſumed to fight 'with ſo great a number of enemies. 'What could you expect but to be cut 'in pieces? Pooh! pooh! don't think 'any body will credit ſuch a ridicu-'lous tale; I never knew you was ſo 'addicted to—'

Lying, perhaps, the good knight would have ſaid; but Sir George, who was concerned he was preſent at his legend, and could not blame him for doubting his veracity, prevented his ut-terance of a word he would be obliged to take ill, by abruptly going on with his ſtory.

'Placing my back therefore againſt 'a tree,' purſued he, 'to prevent my 'being aſſaulted behind, I preſented 'my ſhield to the boldeſt of theſe aſ-'ſailants; who, having ſtruck an im-'potent blow upon it, as he was lifting 'up his arm to renew his attack, I cut 'it off with one ſtroke of my ſword, 'and the ſame inſtant plunged it to 'the hilt in the breaſt of another, and 'clove the ſkull of a third, who was 'making at me, in two parts.'

Sir Charles, at this relation, burſt into a loud fit of laughter; and being more inclined to divert himſelf, than be offended at the folly and vanity of the young baronet, he permitted him to go on with his ſurprizing ſtory with-out giving him any other interruption.

'Theſe three executions, Madam,' purſued Sir George, 'were the effects 'only of ſo many blows, which raiſed 'ſuch indignation in my enemies, that 'they preſt forward in great numbers 'to deſtroy me; but having, as I be-'fore ſaid, poſted myſelf ſo advan-'tageouſly, that I could only be aſ-'ſaulted before, not more than three 'or four could attack me at one time. 'The deſire of lengthening out my 'life, till happily ſome ſuccour might 'come to my relief, ſo invigorated my 'arm, and added to my ordinary 'ſtrength an almoſt irreſiſtible force, 'that I dealt death at every blow; and 'in leſs than a quarter of an hour, ſaw 'more than fifty of my enemies at my 'feet, whoſe bodies ſerved for a bul-'wark againſt their fellows ſwords.

'The commander of this little body 'not having generoſity enough to be 'moved with thoſe prodigious effects of 'valour in my favour, was tranſported 'with rage at my reſiſtance; and the 'ſight of ſo many of his men ſlain be-'fore his face, ſerved only to increaſe 'his fury; and that moment, ſeeing 'that, with two more blows, I had 'ſent two of his moſt valiant ſoldiers 'to the ſhades, and that the reſt, fear-'ing to come within the length of my 'ſword, had given me a few moments 'reſpite—

"Ah! cowards!" cried he, "are "you afraid of a ſingle man? And "will you ſuffer *him* to eſcape from "your vengeance, who has ſlain ſo "many of your brave comrades be-"fore your eyes?"

'Theſe words inſpiring them with 'a fierceneſs, ſuch as he deſired, they 'advanced towards me with more fury 'than before. By this time I had re-'ceived ſeveral large wounds, and my

'blood

'blood ran down from many parts of 'my body; yet was I not ſenſible of 'any decay of ſtrength, nor did the 'ſettled deſigns of my enemies to de-'ſtroy me, daunt me in the leaſt. I ſtill 'relied upon the aſſiſtance I expected 'Providence would ſend to my relief, 'and determined, if poſſible, to pre-'ſerve my life till it arrived.

'I fought, therefore, with a reſolu-'tion which aſtoniſhed my enemies, 'but did not move them to any regard 'for my ſafety: and obſerving their 'brutal commander a few paces from 'me encouraging his men, both with 'his cries and geſtures, indignation 'againſt this inhuman wretch ſo tranſ-'ported me out of my diſcretion, that 'I quitted my poſt, in order to ſacri-'fice him to my revenge.

'Seeing me advance furiouſly to-'wards him, he turned pale with fear, 'and endeavoured to ſhelter himſelf in 'the midſt of his men, who, more va-'liant than himſelf, oppoſed themſelves 'to my rage to favour his retreat; but 'quickly clearing myſelf a way with 'my ſword, I preſſed towards the bar-'barous coward, and, ere he could 'avoid the blow I aimed at him, it 'ſtruck him ſenſeleſs at my feet.

'My particular revenge thus ſatis-'fied, I was ſenſible of the fault I had 'committed in quitting my poſt, by 'which I expoſed myſelf to be ſur-'rounded by the enemy. I endeavour-'ed to regain it, but in vain; I was 'beſet on all ſides, and now deſpaired 'of any ſafety; and therefore only 'ſought to die courageouſly, and make 'as many of my enemies as I could 'attend my fall.

'Exaſperated by the misfortunes of 'their commander, they preſſed upon 'me with redoubled fury. Faint as I 'was with the loſs of blood, and ſo 'fatigued with the paſt action, and 'the obſtinate fight I had maintained 'ſo long with ſuch a conſiderable num-'ber, I could hardly any longer lift 'up my arm; and, to compleat my 'misfortune, having thruſt my ſword 'into the body of one of the forwardeſt 'of my enemies, in my endeavouring 'to regain it, it broke in pieces, and 'the hilt only remained in my hand.

'This accident compleated my de-'feat; deprived of my ſword, I was 'no longer capable of making any 'defence: ſeveral of them preſſed up-'on me at once, and throwing me 'down, tied my hands together be-'hind me. Shame and rage at this 'indignity worked ſo forcibly upon 'my ſpirits, weakened as I then was, 'that I fell into a ſwoon. What hap-'pened till my recovery I am not able 'to tell; but at the return of my 'ſenſes, I found myſelf laid on a bed 'in a tolerable chamber, and ſome 'perſons with me, who kept a pro-'found ſilence.'

CHAP. III.

A LOVE-ADVENTURE, AFTER THE ROMANTICK TASTE.

'RECOLLECTING in a few 'moments all that happened to 'me, I could not chuſe but be ſur-'prized at finding myſelf treated with 'ſo little ſeverity, conſidering I was 'priſoner to perſons who had been 'witneſſes of the great quantity of 'blood I had ſhed in my own defence. 'My wounds had been dreſſed while 'I continued in my ſwoon; and the 'faces of thoſe perſons who were 'about me expreſſed nothing of un-'kindneſs.

'After reflecting ſome time longer 'on my ſituation, I called to a young 'man, who ſat near my bed-ſide, and 'intreated him to inform me where I 'was, and to whom I was a priſoner; 'but could get no other anſwer to 'thoſe queſtions than a moſt civil in-'treaty to compoſe myſelf, and not 'protract the cure of my wounds by 'talking, which the ſurgeons had de-'clared would be of a bad conſe-'quence; and had therefore ordered 'me to be as little diſturbed as poſ-'ſible.

'Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, 'I repeated my requeſt, promiſing to 'be entirely governed by them for the 'future in what regarded my health, 'provided they would ſatisfy me in 'thoſe particulars: but my attendant 'did not ſo much as reply to thoſe im-'portunities; but, to prevent the con-'tinuance of them, roſe from his ſeat, 'and retired to the other end of the 'chamber.

'I paſſed that day and ſeveral others 'without being able to learn the truth 'of my condition. All this time I

'was diligently waited on by the two 'perſons I had firſt ſeen, neither of 'whom I could prevail upon to inform 'me of what I deſired to know; and 'judging by this obſtinate reſerve, and 'the manner of my treatment, that 'there was ſome myſtery in the caſe, I 'forbore to aſk them any more queſ-'tions, conceiving they had particular 'orders not to anſwer them.

'The care that was taken to for-'ward my cure, in three weeks en-'tirely reſtored me to health. I longed 'impatiently to know what was to be 'my deſtiny, and buſied myſelf in 'conjecturing it in vain; when one 'morning an elderly lady entered my 'chamber, at whoſe appearance my 'two attendants retired.

'After ſhe had ſaluted me very ci-'villy, and enquired after my health, 'ſhe ſeated herſelf in a chair near my 'bed-ſide, and ſpoke to me in this 'manner—

"I make no queſtion, Sir, but you "are ſurprized at the manner in which "you have been treated, and the care "there has been taken to prevent diſ-"covering to you the place where you "now are; but you will doubtleſs be "more ſurprized to hear you are in the "fortreſs of ——, and in the houſe of "Prince Marcomire, whoſe party you "fought againſt alone, and whom you "ſo dangerouſly wounded before you "was taken priſoner by his men."

"Is it poſſible, Madam," ſaid I, who 'from the firſt moment of her appear-'ance had been in a ſtrange perplexity, "is it poſſible I am in the houſe of a "man whoſe life I endeavoured ſo "eagerly to deſtroy? And is it to him, "who oppreſſed me ſo baſely with "numbers, that I am obliged for the "ſuccour I have received?"

"It is not to him," replied the lady, "that you are obliged for the favour-"able treatment you have had; but "liſten to me patiently, and I will diſ-"cloſe the truth of your adventure.

"Prince Marcomire, who was the "perſon that headed that party againſt "which you ſo valiantly defended "yourſelf, after the loſs of the battle, "was haſtening to throw himſelf into "this place, where his ſiſter, and many "ladies of quality, had come for ſecu-"rity: your indiſcreet purſuit engaged "you in the moſt unequal combat that "ever was fought; and—"

'Nay, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'though I do not refuſe to give you all 'the praiſes your gallant defence of 'yourſelf againſt five hundred men de-'ſerves; yet I cannot agree with that 'lady, in ſaying, it was the moſt un-'equal combat that ever was fought: 'for, do but reflect, I beſeech you, 'upon that which the brave prince of 'Mauritania ſuſtained againſt twice 'that number of men, with no other 'arms than his ſword; and, you hav-'ing been in battle that day, was, as 'I conceive, compleatly armed. The 'young prince of Egypt, accompanied 'only by the valiant, but indiſcreet, 'Cepio his friend, engaged all the 'king of Armenia's guards, and put 'them all to flight. The courageous 'Ariobaſanes ſcorned to turn his back 'upon a whole army; not to mention 'the invincible Artaban, whom a 'thouſand armies together could not 'have made to turn.'

'Be pleaſed to obſerve, Madam,' ſaid Sir George, 'that to the end I may 'faithfully recount my hiſtory, I am 'under a neceſſity of repeating things, 'which, haply, may ſeem too advan-'tageous for a man to ſay of himſelf: 'therefore I, indeed, greatly approve 'of the cuſtom, which, no doubt, 'this inconveniency introduced, of a 'ſquire, who is thoroughly inſtructed 'with the ſecrets of his maſter's heart, 'relating his adventures, and giving 'a proper eulogium of his rare valour, 'without being in danger of offending 'the modeſty of the renowned knight; 'who, as you know, Madam, upon 'thoſe occaſions, commodiouſly ſlips 'away.

'It being, however, this lady's 'opinion, that no man ever under-'took a more hazardous combat, or 'with greater odds, againſt him, ſhe 'did not fail to expreſs her admiration 'of it in very high terms.

"The noiſe of this accident," pur-'ſued ſhe, "was ſoon ſpread over the "whole town; and the beautiful "Sydimiris, Marcomire's ſiſter, hear-"ing that her brother was wounded, "as it was thought, to death, and that "the perſon who killed him, was taken "priſoner; ſhe flew out to meet her "wounded brother, diſtracted with "grief, and vowing to have the ſeve-"reſt tortures executed on him, who "had thus barbarouſly murdered her

"brother,

" brother. Thoſe who bore that un-
" happy prince, having brought him
" into the houſe, his wounds were
" ſearched; and the ſurgeons declared
" they were very dangerous.

" Sydimiris, hearing this, redoubled
" her complaints and vows of ven-
" geance againſt you: her brother hav-
" ing then the chief authority in the
" place, ſhe commanded, in his name,
" to have you brought hither, and to
" be moſt ſtrictly guarded; determined,
" if her brother died, to ſacrifice you to
" his ghoſt.

" Full of theſe ſanguinary reſolu-
" tions, ſhe left his chamber, having
" ſeen him laid in bed, and his wounds
" dreſſed; but paſſing along a gallery
" to her own apartment, ſhe met the
" perſons who were bringing you to
" the room that was to be your priſon:
" you was not," purſued the lady,
" yet recovered from your ſwoon, ſo
" that they carried you like one that
" was dead; they had taken off your
" helmet to give you air, by which
" means your face being quite un-
" covered, pale, languiſhing, and your
" eyes cloſed, as if in death, pre-
" ſented the moſt moving, and, at the
" ſame time, moſt pleaſing object in
" the world.

" Sydimiris, who ſtopt, and for a
" moment eagerly gazed upon you, loſt
" all of a ſudden the fierceneſs which
" before had animated her againſt you;
" and lifting up her eyes to view thoſe
" men that carried you—

" Are you ſure," ſaid ſhe to them,
" that this is the perſon who wounded
" my brother?"

" Yes, Madam," replied one of
" them; " this muſt be he, ſince there
" was no other in his company; and
" he alone ſuſtained the attack of five
" hundred men; and would probably
" not have left one of them alive, had
" not his ſword, by breaking, put it
" into our power to take him priſoner."

" Carry him away," ſaid Sydimiris;
" but let his wounds be dreſſed, and let
" him be carefully looked to, that, if
" my brother dies, he may be puniſhed
" as he deſerves."

" Pronouncing theſe words in a low
" and faltering voice, ſhe turned her
" eyes a ſecond time upon you; then,
" haſtily averting her looks, ſhe hurried
" to her own chamber, and threw her-
" ſelf into a chair, with all the marks
" of a very great diſturbance.

" The affection I have for her, being
" the perſon who had brought her up,
" and moſt favoured with her confi-
" dence, made me behold her in this
" condition with great concern; and
" ſuppoſing it was her brother that diſ-
" quieted her, I beſought her not to
" give way to the violence of her grief,
" but to hope that Heaven would re-
" ſtore him to her prayers.

" Alas! my dear Urinoe," ſaid ſhe,
" I am more culpable than you can
" imagine; and I grieve leſs for the
" condition to which I ſee Marcomire
" reduced, than for that moderation
" wherewith I am conſtrained, ſpite of
" myſelf, to behold his enemy.

" Yes, dear Urinoe," purſued ſhe,
" bluſhing, and caſting down her eyes,
" the actions of this unknown appear
" to me in quite another light ſince I
" have ſeen him; and, inſtead of look-
" ing upon him as the murderer of my
" brother, I cannot help admiring that
" rare valour with which he defended
" himſelf againſt ſo great a number of
" enemies; and am even ready to con-
" demn the furious Marcomire for
" oppreſſing ſo brave a man."

" As I had never approved of thoſe
" violent tranſports of grief and rage,
" which ſhe had expreſſed upon the
" firſt news of her brother's misfor-
" tune; and as I looked upon your
" glorious defence with the utmoſt
" admiration; ſo, far from condemn-
" ing the change of her thoughts, I
" confirmed her in the favourable
" opinion ſhe began to entertain of
" you; and, continuing to make re-
" marks upon all the particulars of
" the combat, which had come to our
" knowledge, we found nothing in
" your behaviour but what increaſed
" our admiration.

" Sydimiris therefore, following the
" dictates of her own generoſity, as
" well as my advice, placed two per-
" ſons about you, whoſe fidelity we
" could rely on, and gave them or-
" ders to treat you with all imaginable
" care and reſpect, but not to inform
" you of the place in which you was,
" or to whom you was priſoner.

" In the mean time, Marcomire,
" whoſe wounds had been again exa-
" mined, was declared out of danger

" by

" by the ſurgeons; and he having un-
" derſtood the exceſs of his ſiſter's
" grief, and the revenge ſhe had vow-
" ed againſt you, gave her thanks for
" thoſe expreſſions of her tenderneſs;
" and alſo uttered ſome threats, which
" intimated a violent hatred againſt
" you, and a deſign of proſecuting
" his revenge upon you, as ſoon as
" he was in a condition to leave his
" chamber.

" Sydimiris, who heard him, could
" with difficulty diſſemble her con-
" cern.

" Ah! Urinoe," ſaid ſhe to me, ' when we were alone; " it is now, that
" I more than ever repent of that ex-
" ceſs of rage which tranſported me
" againſt the brave unknown. I have
" thereby put him entirely into my
" brother's power, and ſhall be haply
" acceſſary to that death he is medita-
" ting for him, or elſe a perpetual im-
" priſonment."

" This reflection gave her ſo much
" pain, that I could not chuſe but pity
" her; and conſidering that the only
" way to preſerve you, was for her
" to diſſemble a rage equal to Mar-
" comire's againſt you, in order to
" prevent being ſuſpected of any de-
" ſign in your favour, I perſuaded her
" to join with him in every thing he
" ſaid; while, in the mean time, we
" would endeavour to get you cured
" of your wounds, that you might at
" leaſt be in a condition once more to
" defend yourſelf with that miracu-
" lous valour Heaven has beſtowed on
" you.

" Sydimiris perceiving her brother
" would ſoon be in a condition to exe-
" cute his threats, reſolved to hazard
" every thing, rather than to expoſe
" you to his rage: ſhe therefore com-
" municated to me her deſign of giv-
" ing you liberty, and, by preſenting
" a ſufficient reward to your guard,
" inducing them to favour your e-
" ſcape.

" I undertook to manage this buſi-
" neſs in her name, and have done it
" ſo effectually, that you will this
" night be at liberty, and may depart
" the town immediately, in which it
" will be dangerous to ſtay any time,
" for fear of being diſcovered.

" Sydimiris forbade me to let you
" know the perſon to whom you would
" be obliged for your freedom; but I
" could not endure that you ſhould
" unjuſtly involve the ſiſter of Mar-
" comire in that reſentment you will
" queſtionleſs always preſerve againſt
" *him*; and to keep you from being
" innocently guilty of ingratitude, I
" reſolved to acquaint you with the na-
" ture of thoſe obligations you owe to
" her."

CHAP. IV.

THE ADVENTURE CONTINUED.

" AH, Madam!" ſaid I, perceiv-
' ing ſhe had finiſhed her diſ-
' courſe, " doubt not but I ſhall moſt
" gratefully preſerve the remembrance
" of what the generous Sydimiris has
" done for me; and ſhall always be
" ready to loſe that life in her defence,
" which ſhe has had the ſuperlative
" goodneſs to take ſo much care of.
" But, Madam," purſued I, with an
' earneſt look, " do not, I beſeech you,
" refuſe me one favour, without which
" I ſhall depart with inconceivable
" ſorrow."

" Depend upon it, valiant Sir," re-
' plied ſhe, " that if what you will re-
" quire of me, be in my power, and fit
" for me to grant, I ſhall very willing-
" ly oblige you."

" It is then, reſumed I," trembling
' at the boldneſs of my requeſt, " that
" you would condeſcend to intreat the
" moſt generous Sydimiris to favour
" me with an interview, and give me
" an opportunity of throwing myſelf
" at her feet, to thank her for all thoſe
" favours I have received from her
" compaſſion."

" I cannot promiſe you," replied
' the lady, riſing, " to prevail upon
" Sydimiris to grant you an audience;
" but I aſſure you, that I will endea-
" vour to diſpoſe her to do you this fa-
" vour; and it ſhall not be my fault
" if you are not ſatisfied."

' Saying this, ſhe went out of my
' chamber, I having followed her to
' the door, with proteſtations that I
' would never forget her kindneſs upon
' this occaſion.

' I paſt the reſt of that day in an
' anxious impatience for night, divided
' between fear and hope, and more
' taken up with the thoughts of ſeeing
' Sydimiris, than with my expected
' liberty.

' Night

'Night came at laſt, and the door 'of my apartment opening, I ſaw the 'lady who had been with me in the 'morning, enter.

"I have prevailed upon Sydimiris to "ſee you," ſaid ſhe; "and ſhe is "willing, at my intreaty, to grant that "favour to a perſon who, ſhe with "reaſon thinks, has been inhumanly "treated by her brother."

'Then giving me her hand, ſhe 'conducted me along a large gallery, 'to a ſtately apartment; and after 'traverſing ſeveral rooms, ſhe led me 'into one where Sydimiris herſelf 'was; who, as ſoon as ſhe perceived 'me, roſe from her ſeat, and received 'me with great civility.

'In the tranſport I then was, I 'know not how I returned the grace-'ful ſalute the incomparable Sydimiris 'gave me; for moſt certain it is, that 'I was ſo loſt in wonder, at the ſight 'of the many charms I beheld in her 'perſon, that I could not unlock my 'tongue, or remove my eyes from her 'inchanting face; but remained fixed 'in a poſture which at once expreſſed 'my admiration and delight.

'To give you a deſcription of that 'beauty which I then contemplated, I 'muſt inform you, Madam, that Sy-'dimiris is tall, of a handſome ſtature, 'and admirably proportioned; her 'hair was of the fineſt black in the 'world; her complexion marvelloufly 'fair; all the lineaments of her viſage 'were perfectly beautiful; and her 'eyes, which were large and black, 'ſparkled with ſo quick and piercing 'a fire, that no heart was able to reſiſt 'their powerful glances: moreover, 'Sydimiris is admirably ſhaped; her 'port is high and noble; and her air 'ſo free, yet ſo commanding, that 'there are few perſons in the world 'with whom ſhe may not diſpute the 'priority of beauty. In fine, Madam, 'Sydimiris appeared with ſo many ad-'vantages to a ſpirit prepoſſeſſed al-'ready with the moſt grateful ſenſe of 'her favours, that I could not reſiſt 'the ſweet violence wherewith her 'charms took poſſeſſion of my heart: 'I yielded therefore, without reluc-'tance, to my deſtiny, and reſigned 'myſelf, in an inſtant, to thoſe fetters, 'which the ſight of the divine Sydi-'miris prepared for me: recovering 'therefore a little from that admiration 'which had ſo totally engroſſed all my 'faculties, I threw myſelf at her feet 'with an action wholly compoſed of 'tranſport.

"Divine Sydimiris!" ſaid I, be-'holding her with eyes in which the 'letters of my new-born paſſion might 'very plainly be read, "ſee at your "feet a man devoted to your ſervice "by all ties of gratitude and reſpect. "I come, Madam, to declare to you, "that, from the firſt moment you gave "me liberty, I had devoted that and "my life to you; and at your feet I "confirm the gift, proteſting by all "that is moſt dear and ſacred to me, "that ſince I hold my life from the "divine Sydimiris, ſhe alone ſhall "have the abſolute diſpoſal of it for "the future; and ſhould ſhe pleaſe "again to demand it, either to appeaſe "her brother's fury, or to ſacrifice it "to her own ſecurity, I will moſt "faithfully perform her will, and ſhed "the laſt drop of that blood at her "command which I would with tranſ-"port loſe in her defence!"

'A fine high-flown ſpeech, indeed!' ſaid Sir Charles, laughing. 'But I 'hope you did not intend to keep your 'word.'

'Sure, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'you 'do not imagine that Sir George would 'have failed in executing all he had 'promiſed to the beautiful and gene-'rous Sydimiris: what could he poſſi-'bly have ſaid leſs? And indeed what 'leſs could ſhe have expected from a 'man, whom, at the hazard of her 'own life and happineſs, ſhe had given 'freedom to?'

'I accompanied theſe words, Ma-'dam,' purſued Sir George, 'with ſo 'paſſionate a look and accent, that the 'fair Sydimiris bluſhed, and for a mo-'ment caſt down her eyes with a viſible 'confuſion. At laſt—

"Sir," replied ſhe, "I am too well "ſatisfied with what I have done with "reſpect to your ſafety, to require any "proofs of your gratitude that might "be dangerous to it; and ſhall remain "extremely well ſatisfied, if the obli-"gations you think you owe me may "induce you to moderate your reſent-"ment againſt my brother, for the "cruel treatment you received from "him."

"Doubt not, Madam," interrupted 'I, eagerly, "but I ſhall, in the perſon

"of

" of Maromire, regard the brother " of the divine Sydimiris; and that " conſideration will be ſufficient not " only to make me forget all the vio- " lences he committed againſt me, but " even to defend his life, if need be, " with the hazard of my own."

'Exceſſively generous indeed!' ſaid Sir Charles: 'I never heard any thing 'like it.'

'Oh! dear Sir,' replied Arabella, 'there are numberleſs inſtances of 'equal and even ſuperior generoſity to 'be met with in the lives of the heroes 'of antiquity: you will there ſee a 'lover, whoſe miſtreſs has been taken 'from him either by treachery or force, 'venture his life in defence of the in- 'jurious huſband who poſſeſſes her; 'and though all his felicity depends 'upon his death, yet he will reſcue 'him from it at the expence of the 'greater part of his blood.

'Another, who after a long and 'bloody war, has, by taking his ene- 'my priſoner, an opportunity of ter- 'minating it honourably; yet, through 'an heroick principle of generoſity, 'he gives his captive liberty without 'making any conditions, and has all 'his work to do over again.

'A third having contracted a vio- 'lent friendſhip for the enemies of his 'country, through the ſame generous 'ſentiments, draws his ſword in their 'defence, and makes no ſcruple to 'fight againſt an army where the king 'his father is in perſon.'

'I muſt confeſs,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'that generoſity ſeems to me very pe- 'culiar that will make a man fight for 'his enemies againſt his own father.'

'It is in that peculiarity, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'that his generoſity conſiſts; 'for certainly there is nothing extra- 'ordinary in fighting for one's father 'and one's country; but when a man 'has arrived to ſuch a pitch of great- 'neſs of ſoul as to neglect thoſe mean 'and ſelfiſh conſiderations, and, lov- 'ing virtue in the perſons of his ene- 'mies, can prefer their glory before 'his own particular intereſt, he is then 'a perfect hero indeed; ſuch an one 'was Oroondates, Artaxerxes, and 'many others I could name, who all 'gave eminent proofs of their diſin- 'tereſtedneſs and greatneſs of ſoul up- 'on the like occaſions; therefore, not 'to detract from Sir George's merit, 'I muſt ſtill inſiſt, that in the reſo- 'lutions he had taken to defend his ene- 'my's life at the expence of his own, 'he did no more than what any man 'of ordinary generoſity ought to do, 'and what he was particularly obliged 'to, by what the amiable Sydimiris 'had done for him.'

'I was happy, however, Madam,' continued Sir George, 'to find that 'thoſe expreſſions of my gratitude 'wrought ſomewhat upon the heart of 'the lovely Sydimiris in my favour: 'her words diſcovered as much, and 'her eyes ſpoke yet more intelligibly; 'but our converſation was interrupted 'by the diſcreet Urinoe, who, fearing 'the conſequence of ſo long a ſtay in 'her chamber, repreſented to me that 'it was time to take my leave.

'I turned pale at this cruel ſound; 'and beholding Sydimiris with a lan- 'guiſhing look—

" Would to Heaven, Madam," ſaid 'I, " that, inſtead of giving me liber- " ty, you would keep me eternally " your priſoner; for though a dun- " geon was to be the place of my con- " finement, yet, if it was near you, " it would ſeem a palace to me; for " indeed I am no longer in a condition " to reliſh that freedom you beſtow " upon me, ſince it muſt remove me " farther from you. But I beſeech " you, Madam, to believe, that in de- " livering me from your brother's fet- " ters, you have caſt me into your " own, and that I am more a priſoner " than ever, but a priſoner to ſo lovely " a conqueror, that I do not wiſh to " break my chains, and prefer the " ſweet and glorious captivity I am in " to all the crowns in the world."

" You are very bold," ſaid Sydi- 'miris, bluſhing, " to entertain me " with ſuch diſcourſe; yet I pardon " this offence, in conſideration of what " you have ſuffered from my brother, " and on condition that you will de- " part immediately without ſpeaking " another word."

'Sydimiris ſpoke this ſo earneſtly, 'that I durſt not diſobey her; and 'kiſſing the hem of her robe with a 'paſſionate air, I left her chamber, 'conducted by Urinoe, who having 'brought me to a private door, which 'carried us into the ſtreet, I there 'found a man waiting for me, whom 'I knew to be the ſame that had at-

'tended

'tended me during my ſtay in that 'houſe.

'Urinoe having recommended to 'him to ſee me ſafe out of the town, 'I took leave of her with the moſt 'grateful acknowledgments for her 'kindneſs, and followed my conduc-'tor ſo oppreſſed with grief at the 'thoughts of leaving the place where 'Sydimiris was, that I had hardly 'ſtrength to walk.'

CHAP. V.

AN EXTRAORDINARY INSTANCE OF GENEROSITY IN A LOVER, SOMEWHAT RESEMBLING THAT OF THE GREAT ARTAXERXES IN CASSANDRA.

'THE farther I went,' continued Sir George, 'the more my re-'gret increaſed; and finding it would 'be impoſſible to live and quit the 'divine Sydimiris, I all at once took 'a reſolution to remain in the town 'concealed; and, communicating my 'deſign to my guide, I engaged him 'to aſſiſt me in it by a preſent of a 'conſiderable ſum, which he could 'not reſiſt: accordingly, he left me in 'a remote part of the town, and went 'to find out a convenient lodging for 'me; which he ſoon procured, and 'alſo a ſuit of cloaths to diſguiſe me, 'my own being very rich and mag-'nificent.

'Having recommended me as a re-'lation of his, who was newly arriv-'ed, I was received very civilly by the 'people with whom he placed me; 'and finding this young man to be 'very witty and diſcreet, and alſo very 'capable of ſerving me, I communi-'cated to him my intentions by ſtay-'ing, which were only to be near the 'divine Sydimiris, and to have the 'happineſs of ſometimes ſeeing her 'when ſhe went abroad.

'This man entering into my mean-'ing, aſſured me he would faithfully 'keep my ſecret, and that he would 'not fail to bring me intelligence of 'all that paſſed in the palace of Mar-'comire.

'I could with difficulty keep myſelf 'from falling at his feet to expreſs my 'ſenſe of his kind and generous of-'fers; but I contented myſelf with 'preſenting him another ſum of mo-'ney larger than the firſt, and aſſured 'him of my future gratitude.

'He then took leave, and left me 'to my reflections, which were wholly 'upon the image of the divine Sydi-'miris, and the happineſs of being ſo 'near the object I adored.

'My confidant came to me the next 'day, but brought me no other news 'than that my eſcape was not yet 'known to Marcomire. I enquired if 'he had ſeen Sydimiris; but he re-'plied he had not, and that Urinoe 'had only aſked him if he had con-'ducted me ſafe out of town; to which 'he had anſwered as we had agreed, 'that I had got out ſafe and undiſ-'covered.

'A day or two after he brought me 'news more pleaſing; for he told me 'that Sydimiris had ſent for him into 'her chamber, and aſked him ſeveral 'queſtions concerning me; that ſhe 'appeared very melancholy, and even 'bluſhed whenever ſhe mentioned my 'name.

'This account gave ſufficient mat-'ter for my thoughts to work upon 'for ſeveral days. I interpreted Sydi-'miris's bluſh a thouſand different 'ways; I reflected upon all the diffe-'rent cauſes to which it might be ow-'ing, and buſied myſelf with all thoſe 'innumerable conjectures, which, as 'you know, Madam, ſuch an incident 'always gives riſe to in a lover's ima-'gination. At length I explained it 'to my own advantage, and felt there-'by a conſiderable increaſe of my af-'fection.

'A whole week having elapſed with-'out another ſight of my confidant, 'I began to be greatly alarmed; when, 'on the eighth day of this cruel ſu-'ſpenſe, I ſaw him appear, but with 'ſo many marks of diſturbance in his 'face, that I trembled to hear what he 'had to acquaint me with.

"Oh! Sir," ſaid he, as ſoon as his 'concern ſuffered him to ſpeak, "Mar-"comire has diſcovered your eſcape, "and the means by which it was pro-"cured. One of thoſe in whom Uri-"noe confided, has betrayed it to him; "and the beauteous Sydimiris is likely "to feel the moſt terrible effects of his "diſpleaſure: he has confined her to "her chamber, and vows to ſacrifice "her life to the honour of his family,

" which he says she has stained; and " he loads that admirable lady with so " many reproaches, that it is thought " her grief for such undeserved ca- " lumnies will occasion her death."

'Scarce had he finished these cruel words, when I, who all the time he had been speaking beheld him with a dying eye, sunk down at his feet in a swoon, which continued so long, that he began to think me quite dead: however, I at last opened my eyes; but it was only to pour forth a river of tears, and to utter complaints which might have moved the most obdurate heart.

'After having a long time tormented myself in weeping and complaining, I at last took a resolution which offered me some alleviation of my grief; and the faithful Toxares, seeing me a little composed, left me to myself, with a promise to return soon, and acquaint me with what passed farther in the palace of Marcomire.

'As soon as he was gone, I rose from my bed; and, dressing myself in those cloaths I wore when I was taken prisoner, I went to the palace of Marcomire, and, demanding to see him, I was told he was in the apartment of Sydimiris, and at my earnest desire they conducted me thither.

'When I entered the room, I beheld that incomparable beauty stretched upon a couch dissolved in tears, and Urinoe upon her knees before her, accompanying with her own those precious drops which fell from the bright eyes of her mistress.

'Marcomire, who was walking furiously about the room, exclaiming with the utmost violence against that fair sufferer, did not observe my entrance; so that I had an opportunity of going towards Sydimiris, who lifting up her eyes to look upon me, gave a loud shriek, and, by a look of extreme anguish, let me understand how great her apprehensions were upon my account.

" I am come, Madam," said I, " to " perform part of the promise I made " you, and by dying, to prove your " innocence; and, freeing you from " the reproaches you suffer on my ac- " count, I shall have the happiness to " convince you that my life is infi- " nitely less dear to me than your tran- " quillity." Sydimiris, who hearkened 'to me with great emotion, was going 'to make some answer, when Marco- 'mire, alarmed by his sister's shriek, 'came towards us, and, viewing me 'at first with astonishment, and then 'with a smile of cruelty and revenge—

" Is it possible," said he, " that I " behold my designed murderer again " in my power?"

" I am in thy power," said I, " be- " cause I am willing to be so, and " came voluntarily to put myself into " your hands, to free that excellent " lady from the imputation you have " laid on her. Know, Marcomire, " that it is to myself alone I owed my " liberty, which I would still preserve " against all the forces thou couldst " bring to deprive me of it; and this " sword, which left thee life enough " to threaten mine, would haply once " more put yours in danger, were I " not restrained by a powerful con- " sideration which leaves me not the " liberty of even wishing you ill."

" Ah, dissembler!" said Marcomire, 'in a rage, " think not to impose up- " on me by thy counterfeited mildness: " thou art my prisoner once more, and " I shall take care to prevent your " escaping a second time."

" I am not your prisoner," replied I, " while I possess this sword, which has " already defended me against greater " numbers than you have here to op- " pose me. But," continued I, throwing down my sword at Sydimiris's 'feet, " I resign my liberty to restore " that lady to your good opinion, and " to free her from those base aspersions " thou hast unjustly loaded her with " upon my account."

" It matters not," said the brutal 'brother, taking up my sword, " whe- " ther thou hast resigned, or I have " deprived thee of liberty; but since " thou art in my power, thou shalt " feel all the effects of my resentment. " —Take him away," pursued he, to 'some of his people; " put him into " the worst dungeon you can find; " and let him be guarded carefully, " upon pain of death if he again es- " capes."

'With these words several men offered to lead me out of the room, 'but I repulsed them with disdain; 'and making a low reverence to Sydi- 'miris, whose countenance expressed 'the extremes of fear and anguish, I

'followed

'followed my conductors to the pri-
'son allotted for me, which, hideous
'as it was, I contemplated with a
'secret pleasure, since I had by that
'action which had brought me into it,
'given a testimony of my love for the
'adorable Sydimiris.'

CHAP. VI.

IN WHICH IT WILL BE SEEN, THAT THE LADY IS AS GENEROUS AS HER LOVER.

'I Passed some days in this confine-
'ment, melancholy enough: my
'ignorance of the destiny of Sydimiris
'gave me more pain than the sense of
'my own misfortunes; and one even-
'ing, when I was more than usually
'disquieted, one of my guard entered
'my prison, and giving me a letter,
'retired without speaking a word. I
'opened this letter with precipitation,
'and by the light of a lamp which
'was allowed me, I read the following
'words—

"SYDIMIRIS, TO THE MOST GENE-
"ROUS BELLMOUR.

"IT is not enough to tell you that
"the method you took to free me
"from my brother's severity, has filled
"me with the utmost esteem and ad-
"miration. So generous an action
"merits a greater acknowledgment,
"and I will make no scruple to con-
"fess that my heart is most sensibly
"touched by it. Yes, Bellmour, I
"have received this glorious testimony
"of your affection with such a grati-
"tude as you yourself could have
"wished to inspire me with; and it shall
"not be long before you will have a
"convincing proof of the effect it has
"had upon the spirit of

"SYDIMIRIS."

'This letter, Madam,' pursued Sir George, 'being wholly calculated to 'make me hope that I was not hated 'by the divine Sydimiris, and that she 'meditated something in my favour, I 'resigned myself up to the most de-'lightful expectations.

"What!" cried I, transported with the excess of my joy, "does the most "admirable Sydimiris condescend to "assure me that I have touched her "heart? And does she promise me that "I shall receive some convincing proof "of her acknowledgment!

"Ah! too happy and too fortunate "Bellmour, to what a glorious destiny "hast thou been reserved! And how "oughtest thou to adore these fetters "that have procured thee the esteem of "the divine Sydimiris!"

'Such, Madam, were the apprehen-'sions which the billet I had received, 'inspired me with. I continually flat-'tered myself with the most pleasing 'hopes; and during three weeks longer, 'in which I heard no more from Sydi-'miris, my imagination was wholly 'filled with those sweet thoughts which 'her letter had made me entertain.

'At length, on the evening of a 'day which I had wholly spent in read-'ing over Sydimiris's letter, and in-'terpreting the sense of it a thousand 'different ways, but all agreeable to 'my ardent wishes; I saw the sage 'Urinoe enter my prison, accompanied 'by Toxares, whom I had not seen 'during my last confinement. Wholly 'transported at the sight of these two 'friends, and not doubting but they 'had brought me the most agreeable 'news, I ran towards them; and 'throwing myself at Urinoe's feet, I 'begged her, in an extasy of joy, to 'acquaint me with Sydimiris's com-'mands.

'Urinoe, in some confusion at this 'action, intreated me to rise. "It is "fit," cried I, in a transport I could 'not master, "that in this posture I "should receive the knowledge of that "felicity Sydimiris has had the good-"ness to promise me." Urinoe sighed 'at these words; and beholding me 'with a look of compassion and ten-'derness—

"Would to God," said she, "that "all I have to say, were as agreeable "as the first news I have to tell you; "which is, that you are free, and at "liberty to leave the town this mo-"ment! Sydimiris," continued she, "has bought your freedom, at the ex-"pence of her own; and, to deliver "you from her brother's chains, she "has put on others, haply more cruel "than those you have worn: in fine, "she has married a man, whom she "detested, to procure your liberty;

" her brother having granted it to her " upon that condition alone."

' Scarce had Urinoe finiſhed theſe ' words, when I fell without ſenſe or ' motion at her feet. Toxares and ' ſhe, who had foreſeen what might ' happen, having provided themſelves ' with cordials neceſſary to reſtore me, ' brought me to myſelf with infinite ' trouble.

" Cruel!" ſaid I to them, with a ' tone and look which witneſſed the ' exceſs of my deſpair, " why have " you hindered me from dying, at " once to prevent the thouſand deaths " I ſhall ſuffer from my grief? Is this " the confirmation of thoſe glorious " hopes Sydimiris had permitted me " to entertain? Is this that proof of " the acknowledgments I was to ex- " pect? And is it by throwing herſelf " into the arms of my rival, that ſhe " repays thoſe obligations ſhe thinks " ſhe owes me?

" Ah, inhuman Sydimiris! was it " to make my deſpair more poignant, " that thou flatteredſt me with ſuch a " proſpect of happineſs? And was it " neceſſary to the grandeur of thy " nuptials, that my life ſhould be the " ſacrifice?

" But, how unjuſt am I," cried I, ' repenting in an inſtant of thoſe inju- ' rious ſuſpicions; " how unjuſt am I, " to accuſe the divine Sydimiris of in- " humanity? Was it not to give me " freedom, that ſhe beſtowed herſelf " upon a man ſhe hates? And has ſhe " not made herſelf miſerable for ever, " to procure me a fancied happineſs?

" Ah! if it be ſo, what a wretch " am I! I, who have been the only " cauſe of that miſery, to which ſhe " has doomed herſelf? Ah, liberty!" ' purſued I, " how I deteſt thee, ſince " purchaſed by the misfortune of Sy- " dimiris! And how far more ſweet " and glorious were thoſe chains " which I wore for her ſake!"

' My ſighs and tears leaving me no ' longer the power of ſpeech, I ſunk ' down on my bed, oppreſſed with a ' mortal grief.

' Urinoe and Toxares drew near to ' comfort me, and ſaid all that ſenſible ' and diſcreet perſons could think of ' to alleviate my deſpair.

" Though I have heard that Sydi- " miris is married," replied I, " with- " out dying immediately; yet do not " imagine that I will ſuffer this odious " life to continue long. If ſorrow do " not quickly diſpatch me, I will ſeek " death by other means; for ſince Sy- " dimiris is loſt, I have no more bu- " ſineſs in the world."

' The charitable Urinoe and Tox- ' ares endeavoured in vain to divert ' me from this ſad reſolution, when ' Urinoe, finding all their reaſonings ' ineffectual, drew a letter out of her ' pocket, and preſenting it to me, " I " had orders," ſaid ſhe, " not to let " this letter be delivered to you, till " you had left the town; but the de- " ſpair, to which I ſee you reduced, " does, I conceive, diſpenſe with my " rigorous obſervation of thoſe di- " rections."

' While Urinoe was ſpeaking, I ' opened this letter, trembling, and ' found it as follows.'

CHAP. VII.

CONTAINING AN INCIDENT FULL AS PROBABLE AS ANY IN SCUDERY'S ROMANCES.

" SYDIMIRIS, TO BELLMOUR.

" IF that proof of my gratitude, " which I promiſed to give you, " fall ſhort of your expectations, blame " not the defect of my will, but the " rigour of my deſtiny; it was by " this only way I could give you li- " berty; nor is it too dearly bought " by the loſs of all my happineſs, if " you receive it as you ought: had I " been allowed to follow my own in- " clinations, there is no man in the " world I would have preferred to your- " ſelf. I owe this confeſſion to the " remembrance of your affection, of " which you gave me ſo generous an " inſtance; and the uſe I expect you will " make of it, is to conſole you under " a misfortune, which is common to " us both; though I haply have moſt " reaſon to complain, ſince I could not " be juſt to you, without being cruel " at the ſame time, or confer a benefit, " without loading you with a misfor- " tune. If the ſacrifice I have made " of myſelf for your ſake, gives me " any claim to the continuance of " your love, I command you, by the " power it gives me over you, to live,

" and

" and not add to the miſeries of my " condition, the grief of being the " cauſe of your death. Remember, I " will look upon your diſobedience, " as an act of the moſt cruel ingrati- " tude; and your compliance with " this requeſt ſhall ever be eſteemed " as the deareſt mark you can give of " that paſſion you have borne to the " unfortunate

" SYDIMIRIS."

" Ah, Sydimiris!" cried I, having ' read this letter, " more cruel in your " kindneſs than ſeverity! After hav- " ing deprived me of yourſelf, do you " forbid me to die; and expoſe me by " ſo rigorous a command to ills in- " finitely more hard and painful than " death?

" Yes," purſued I, after a little ' pauſe; " yes, Sydimiris, thou ſhalt " be obeyed; we will not die, ſince " thou haſt commanded us to live; " and, notwithſtanding the tortures " to which thou condemneſt us, we " will obey this command, and give " thee a glorious proof of our pre- " ſent ſubmiſſion, by enduring that " life which the loſs of thee has ren- " dered truly wretched."

' Urinoe and Toxares, ſomewhat ' re-aſſured by the reſolution I had ' taken, exhorted me by all the per- ' ſuaſions friendſhip could put in their ' mouths, to perſevere in it; and, Uri- ' noe bidding me farewel, I endea- ' voured to prevail upon her to pro- ' cure me a ſight of Sydimiris once ' more, or at leaſt to bear a letter from ' me to her; but ſhe refuſed both theſe ' requeſts ſo obſtinately, telling me, ' Sydimiris would neither conſent to ' the one nor the other, that I was ' obliged to be contented with the pro- ' miſe ſhe made me, to repreſent my ' affliction in a true light to her miſ- ' treſs; and to aſſure her, that nothing ' but her abſolute commands could ' have hindered me from dying. Then, ' taking leave of me with much ten- ' derneſs, ſhe went out of the priſon, ' leaving Toxares with me, who aſ- ' ſiſted me to dreſs, and conducted me ' out of that miſerable place, where I ' had paſſed ſo many ſad, and alſo joyful ' hours. At a gate to which he brought ' me, I found a horſe waiting; and, ' having embraced this faithful con- ' fidant, with many expreſſions of gra- ' titude, I beſtowed a ring of ſome va- ' lue upon him to remember me by; ' and, mounting my horſe, with a ' breaking heart, I took the firſt road ' which preſented itſelf to my eyes, and ' galloped away, without knowing ' whither I went. I rode the whole ' night, ſo totally engroſſed by my de- ' ſpair, that I did not perceive my ' horſe was ſo tired, it could hardly ' carry me a ſtep farther: at laſt the ' poor beaſt fell down under me, ſo ' that I was obliged to diſmount; and, ' looking about me, perceived I was ' in a foreſt, without ſeeing the leaſt ' appearance of any habitation.

' The wildneſs and ſolitude of the ' place flattered my deſpair, and while ' my horſe was feeding upon what graſs ' he could find, I wandered about: the ' morning juſt breaking, gave me light ' enough to direct my ſteps. Chance ' at laſt conducted me to a cave, which ' ſeemed to have been the reſidence of ' ſome hermit, or unfortunate lover ' like myſelf. It was dug at the ſide ' of a rock, the entrance to it thick ſet ' with buſhes, which hid it from view. ' I deſcended by a few ſteps cut rudely ' enough, and was convinced it had ' formerly ſerved for a habitation for ' ſome religious or melancholy perſon; ' for there were ſeats of turf raiſed on ' each ſide of it, a kind of bed com- ' poſed of dried leaves and ruſhes, and ' a hole made artificially at the top, to ' admit the light.

' While I conſidered this place at- ' tentively, I all at once took up a re- ' ſolution, inſpired by my deſpair; ' which was, to continue there, and in- ' dulge my melancholy in a retirement ' ſo fitted for my purpoſe.

' Giving my horſe, therefore, liberty ' to go where he pleaſed, and hanging ' up my arms upon a tree near my cave, ' I took poſſeſſion of this ſolitary man- ' ſion, with a gloomy kind of ſatis- ' faction, and devoted all my hours to ' the contemplation of my misfortunes.

' I lived in this manner, Madam, ' for ten months, without feeling the ' leaſt deſire to change my habitation; ' and, during all that time, no mortal ' approached my ſolitude, ſo that I ' lived perfectly ſecure and undiſco- ' vered.'

Sir George pauſing here to take breath, the old baronet ſaid what will be found in the following chapter.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

A SINGLE COMBAT FOUGHT WITH PRODIGIOUS VALOUR, AND DESCRIBED WITH AMAZING ACCURACY.

'GIVE me leave, Sir,' said Sir Charles, 'to ask if you eat in all this time?'

'Alas, Sir,' replied Sir George, 'sighs and tears were all my sustenance.'

Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and Miss, laughing at this answer, Arabella seemed greatly confused.

'It is not to be imagined,' said she, 'that Sir George, or, to say better, Prince Viridomer, lived ten months without eating any thing to support nature; but such trifling circumstances are always left out in the relations of histories; and truly an audience must be very dull and unapprehensive, that cannot conceive, without being told, that a man must necessarily eat in the space of ten months.'

'But the food Sir George lived on,' replied the baronet, 'was very unsubstantial, and would not afford him much nourishment.'

'I suppose,' resumed Arabella, 'he lived upon such provisions as the forest afforded him, such as wild fruits, herbs, bitter sallads, and the like; which, considering the melancholy that possessed him, would appear a voluptuous repast; and which the unfortunate Grontes, when he was in the same situation, thought infinitely too good for him.'

Sir Charles, finding Arabella took no notice of the historian's hyperbole of living upon his sighs and tears, passed it over, for fear of offending her; and Sir George, who had been in some anxiety how to bring himself off, when he perceived Arabella was reasonable enough to suppose he must have eat during his abode in the forest, went on with his relation in this manner.

'I lived, as I before observed to you, Madam, in this cave for ten months; and truly I was so reconciled to that solitary way of life, and found so much sweetness in it, that I believe I should have remained there till this day, but for the adventure which I am going to recount.

'It being my custom to walk out every evening in the forest, returning to my cave, something later than usual, I heard the cries of a woman at some distance, who seemed to be in distress: I stopped to listen from what side those cries proceeded; and, perceiving they seemed to approach nearer to me, I took down my armour from the tree where I had hung it; and hastily arming myself, shaped my course towards the place from whence those complaints seemed to come, resolving to assist that unknown person with all the strength that was left me.

'Having gone some paces, I spied through the branches of the trees a man on horseback, with a lady, who struggled to get loose, and at times calling aloud for succour.

'This sight inflaming me with rage against that impious ravisher, I flew towards him; and when I came within hearing—

"Hold, wretch!" cried I, "and cease to offer violence to that lady, "whom thou bearest away by force; "or prepare to defend thyself against "one who will die before he will "suffer thee to prosecute thy unjust "designs."

'The man, without answering me, clapped spurs to his horse; and it would have been impossible to have overtaken him, had not my own horse, which had never quitted the forest, appeared in my view: I quickly mounted him, and followed the track the ravisher had taken, with such speed, that I came up with him in a moment.

"Caitiff!" said I, "release the lady, "and defend thyself." These words, which I accompanied with a thundering blow upon his head-piece, obliged him to set down the lady, who implored Heaven, with the utmost ardour, to grant me the victory; and, recoiling back a few paces, to take a view of me—

"I know not," said he, "for what "reason thou settest thyself to oppose "my designs; but I well know, that "thou shalt dearly repent of thy te-"merity."

'Saying this, he advanced furiously towards me, and aimed so heavy a

'blow

Plate IV.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. June 7, 1783.

'blow at my head, that, had I not received it on my shield, I might haply 'have no longer been in a condition 'to defend the distressed lady: but 'having, with the greatest dexterity 'imaginable, avoided this blow, I 'made at him with so much fierceness, 'and directed my aims so well, that 'in a few moments I wounded him in 'several places; and his arms were all 'dyed with his blood.

'This good success redoubled my 'vigour; and having, by a lucky 'stroke with my sword, cut the strings 'of his head-piece, it fell off; and his 'head being bare, I was going to let 'fall a dreadful blow upon it, which 'doubtless would have shivered it in 'a thousand pieces, when he cried out 'for quarter, and, letting fall his 'sword, by that action assured me my 'victory was entire.

"Live, wretch," cried I, "since "thou art base enough to value life "after being vanquished: but swear "upon my sword, that thou wilt "never more attempt the liberty of "that lady."

'While I was speaking, I perceived 'he was no longer able to sit his horse; 'but, staggering a moment, he fell off, 'and lay extended without motion 'upon the ground. Touched with com-'passion at this sight, I alighted, and 'supposing him to be in a swoon, was 'preparing to give him some assistance; 'but upon my nearer approach, I found 'he was quite dead.

'Leaving therefore this mournful 'object, I turned about, with an in-'tention to go and offer the distressed 'lady my farther help; but I perceived 'her already at my feet.

"Valiant knight," said she, with a 'tone of voice so bewitching, that all 'my faculties were suspended, as by 'inchantment, "suffer me, on my "knees, to thank you for the deliver-"ance you have procured me from "that base man; since to your admi-"rable valour I owe not only the pre-"servation of my life, but, what is "infinitely dearer to me, my honour."

'The astonishment wherewith I be-'held the miraculous beauty that ap-'peared before me, kept me a moment 'in such an attentive gaze, that I for-'got she was at my feet: recollecting 'myself, however, with some confu-'sion at my neglect—

"Oh, rise, Madam!" cried I, help-'ing her up with infinite respect, "and "debase not such perfection to a pos-"ture, in which all the monarchs on "the earth might glory to appear be-"fore it."

'That you may the better conceive 'the alteration which the sight of this 'fair unknown produced in my soul, 'I will endeavour to give you a de-'scription of her beauty, which was 'altogether miraculous.'

CHAP. IX.

IN WHICH THE READER WILL FIND A DESCRIPTION OF A BEAUTY, IN A STYLE TRULY SUBLIME.

'THE new fallen snow,' pursued Sir George, 'was tanned, in 'comparison of the refined purity of 'that white which made up the ground 'of her complexion; and though fear 'had a little gathered the carnations 'of her cheeks, yet her joy at being 'delivered seemed to plant them there 'with such fresh advantages, that any 'eye might shrink at the brightness of 'that mingled lustre; her mouth, as 'well for shape as colour, might shame 'the imitation of the best pencils, and 'the liveliest tints; and though through 'some petty intervals of joy, it want-'ed the smiles which grief and ter-'ror sequestered, yet she never opened 'it, but, like the east, at the birth of 'a beautiful day, and then discovered 'treasures, whose excelling whiteness 'made the price inestimable: all the 'features of her face had so near a 'kindred to proportion and symmetry, 'as the several masters of Apelles's 'art might have called it his glory to 'have copied beauties from her, as 'the best of models; the circumference 'of her visage shewed the extremes of 'an imperfect circle, and almost form-'ed it to a perfect oval; and this 'abridgment of marvels was tapered 'by a pair of the brightest stars that 'ever were lighted up by the hand of 'nature; as their colour was the same 'with the Heavens, there was a spheri-'cal harmony in their motion, and 'that mingled with a vivacity so pe-'netrating, as neither the firmest eye, 'nor the strongest soul, could arm 'themselves with a resistance of proof

'against

'against those pointed glories; her 'head was crowned with a prodigious 'quantity of fair long hair, which 'colour as fitly suited the beauty of 'her eyes, as imagination could make 'it: to these marvels of face were 'joined the rest of her neck, hands, 'and shape; and there seemed a con-'test between the form and whiteness 'of the two former, which had the 'largest commission from nature to 'work wonders.

'In fine, her beauty was miracu-'lous, and could not fail of pro-'ducing a sudden effect upon a heart 'like mine.

'Having passed in an instant from 'the extremest admiration to something 'yet more tender, I reiterated my 'offers of service to the fair unknown; 'who told me she feared her father 'had occasion for some assistance, her 'ravisher having left his men to en-'gage him, and keep off his pursuit, 'while he rode off with his prize: 'hereupon I begged her to direct me 'to the place where she left her father, 'assuring her I would gladly venture 'my life a second time, to preserve 'his; and she desiring to go with me, 'I placed her before me on my horse, 'and had the exquisite pleasure of sup-'porting with my arms the fairest and 'most admirable creature in the world.

'In less than half an hour, which 'had appeared to me but a moment, 'we got to the place where she had 'been torn from her father; whom 'we beheld with three of his servants, 'maintaining a fight against twice as 'many of their enemies.

'Having gently set down the beau-'teous unknown upon the grass, I 'flew to the relief of her father; and, 'throwing myself furiously among his 'assailants, dispatched two of them 'with so many blows: the others seeing 'so unexpected an assistance, gave back 'a little, and I took advantage of their 'consternation, to redouble my blows, 'and brought two more of them at my 'feet.

'There remained now but four to 'overcome; and my arrival having 'given new vigour to those whose part 'I had taken, they seconded me so 'well, that we soon had nothing more 'left to do; for the rest, seeing their 'comrades slain, sought their safety 'in flight: we were too generous to 'pursue them, the blood of such 'wretches being unworthy to be shed 'by our swords.

'The fair unknown, seeing us con-'querors, flew to embrace her father; 'who, holding her pressed between his 'arms, turned his eyes upon me; then 'quitting her, came towards me, and 'in the most obliging terms imagina-'ble, returned me thanks for the assist-'ance I had brought him; and being 'informed, by his daughter, of what I 'had done for her preservation, this 'old gentleman renewed his acknow-'ledgments, calling me the preserver 'of his life, the valiant defender of 'his daughter's honour, his tutelary 'angel, and the guardian of his house.

'In fine, he loaded me with so many 'thanks and praises, that I could not 'chuse but be in some confusion; and 'to put an end to them, I begged he 'would inform me by what means he 'came into that misfortune.

'He told me, that, residing in a 'castle at the extremity of this forest, 'the charms of his daughter had cap-'tivated a neighbouring lord, whose 'character and person being disagree-'able both to her and himself, he had 'absolutely refused to give her to him: 'thereupon he had set upon them as 'they were going to visit a relation at 'some distance, and dragging Philo-'nice out of the coach, put her before 'him on his horse, and carried her 'away, leaving eight of his men to 'engage him and his servants; who, 'being but four in number, must in-'evitably have perished, had I not 'come to his relief, and by my mi-'raculous valour, vanquished all his 'enemies.

'Saying this, he desired me to go 'home with him to the castle; and 'having led his daughter to the coach, 'insisted upon my placing myself next 'her; and, getting in himself, order-'ed them to return home.

'This accident having altered his 'design of making the visit which had 'been the occasion of this journey—

'The baron, for that I found was 'his title, entertained me all the way 'with repeated expressions of acknow-'ledgments and tenderness; and the 'incomparable Philonice condescend-'ed also to assure me of her gratitude 'for the service I had done her.

'At our arrival at the castle, I per-

'ceived

'ceived it was very large and magnificent; the baron conducted me to one of the beſt apartments, and would ſtay in the room till my armour was taken off, that he might be aſſured I had received no hurts: having rendered him the like civility in his own chamber, and ſatisfied myſelf he was not wounded, we returned to the beautiful Philonice; and this ſecond ſight having finiſhed my defeat, I remained ſo abſolutely her ſlave, that neither Dorothea nor Sydimiris were more paſſionately beloved.

'At the earneſt entreaty of the baron, I ſtaid ſome weeks in the caſtle; during which, the daily ſight of Philonice ſo augmented my flames, that I was no longer in a condition to conceal them; but, fearing to diſpleaſe that divine beauty by a confeſſion of my paſſion, I languiſhed in ſecret; and the conſtraint I laid upon myſelf, gave me ſuch torments, that I fell into a profound melancholy, and looked ſo pale and dejected, that the baron was ſenſible of the alteration, and conjured me, in the moſt preſſing terms, to acquaint him with the cauſe of my uneaſineſs: but though I continued obſtinately ſilent with my tongue, yet my eyes ſpoke intelligibly enough; and the bluſhes which appeared in the fair cheeks of Philonice, whenever ſhe ſpoke to me on the ſubject of my grief, convinced me ſhe was not ignorant of my paſſion.

'At length the agitation of my mind throwing me into a fever, the baron, who was firmly perſuaded that my illneſs proceeded from ſome concealed vexation, preſſed me continually to declare myſelf; and, finding all his entreaties ineffectual, he commanded his daughter to endeavour to find out the cauſe of that grief which had put me into ſuch a condition.

'For that purpoſe, therefore, having brought the fair Philonice into my chamber, he ſtaid a few minutes; and leaving the room, under pretence of buſineſs, Philonice remained alone by my bed-ſide, her women, out of reſpect, ſtaying at the other end of the chamber.

'This divine perſon ſeeing herſelf alone with me, and remembering her father's commands, bluſhed, and caſt down her eyes in ſuch apparent confuſion, that I could not help obſerving it: and interpreting it to the diſpleaſure ſhe took in being ſo near me—

"Whatever joy I take in the honour your viſit does me, Madam," ſaid I, in a weak voice; "yet ſince "nothing is ſo dear to me as your "ſatisfaction, I would rather diſpenſe "with this mark of your goodneſs to "an unfortunate wretch, than ſee you "in the leaſt conſtraint."

"And why," replied ſhe, with a tone full of ſweetneſs, "do you ſuppoſe "that I am here by conſtraint, "when it would be more juſt to believe, that in viſiting the valiant defender of my honour, and the life "of my father, I only follow my own "inclinations?"

"Ah, Madam!" ſaid I, tranſported with joy at ſo favourable a ſpeech, "the little ſervice I had the happineſs "to do you, does not merit ſo infinite "a favour; and though I had loſt the "beſt part of my blood in your defence, I ſhould have been well rewarded with your ſafety."

"Since you do not repent of what "you have done," replied ſhe, "I am "willing to be obliged to you for another favour; and aſk it with the "greater hope of obtaining it, as I "muſt acquaint you, it is by my father's command I take that liberty, "who is much intereſted in my ſucceſs."

"There is no occaſion, Madam," returned I, "to make uſe of any in"tereſt but your own, to engage me "to obey you, ſince that is, and ever "will be, all-powerful with me: ſpeak "then, Madam, and let me know "what it is you deſire of me, that I "may, once in my life, have the glory "of obeying you."

"It is," ſaid ſhe, bluſhing ſtill more than before, "that you will acquaint "us with the cauſe of that melan"choly, which has, as we imagine, "occaſioned your preſent illneſs."

'At theſe words I trembled, turned pale; and, not daring to diſcover the true cauſe of my affliction, I remained in a profound ſilence.

"I ſee," ſaid the beautiful Philonice, "that you have no inclination "to obey me; and ſince my requeſt "has, as I perceive, given you ſome

"disturbance, I will prevail upon my "father to press you no farther upon "this subject."

"No, Madam," said I, eagerly; "the baron shall be satisfied, and you "shall be obeyed; though, after the "knowledge of my crime, you doom "me to that death I so justly merit.

"Yes, Madam, this unfortunate "man, who has had the glory to ac-"quire your esteem by the little ser-"vice he did you, has cancelled the "merit of that service by daring to "adore you.

"I love you, divine Philonice; and "not being able either to repent, or "cease to be guilty of loving you, I "am resolved to die, and spare you "the trouble of pronouncing my sen-"tence. I beseech you therefore to "believe, that I would have died in "silence, but for your command to "declare myself; and you should never "have known the excess of my love "and despair, had not my obedience "to your will obliged me to confess it."

'I finished these words with so much 'fear and confusion, that I durst not 'lift my eyes up to the fair face of 'Philonice, to observe how she re-'ceived this discourse: I waited there-'fore, trembling, for her answer; but 'finding that in several minutes she 'spoke not a word, I ventured at last 'to cast a languishing glance upon the 'visage I adored, and saw so many 'marks of disorder upon it, that I was 'almost dead with the apprehensions 'of having offended her beyond even 'the hope of procuring her pardon by 'my death.'

CHAP. X.

WHEREIN SIR GEORGE CONCLUDES HIS HISTORY; WHICH PRODUCES AN UNEXPECTED EFFECT.

'THE silence of Philonice,' continued Sir George, 'pierced 'me to the heart; and when I saw her 'rise from her seat, and prepare to go 'away without speaking, grief took 'such possession of my spirits, that, 'uttering a cry, I fell into a swoon, 'which, as I afterwards was inform-'ed, greatly alarmed the beautiful 'Philonice; who, resuming her seat, 'had the goodness to assist her women 'in bringing me to myself; and, when 'I opened my eyes, I had the satisfac-'tion to behold her still by me, and 'all the signs of compassion in her 'face.

'This sight a little re-assuring me, "I ask your pardon, Madam," said I, "for the condition in which I have "appeared before you, and also for "that I am not yet dead, as is doubt-"less your wish. But I will make "haste," pursued I, sighing, "to ful-"fil your desires; and you shall soon "be freed from the sight of a miserable "wretch, who to his last moment will "not cease to adore you."

"It is not your death that I desire," 'said the fair Philonice; "and, after "having preserved both my father and "me from death, it is not reasonable "that we should suffer you to die if "we can help it.

"Live, therefore, Bellmour," pursued 'she, blushing; "and live, if possible, "without continuing in that weakness "I cannot chuse but condemn: yet, "whatever are your thoughts for the "future, remember that your death "will be a fault I cannot resolve to "pardon."

'Speaking these words without giv-'ing me time to answer, she left my 'chamber; and I found something so 'sweet and favourable in them, that I 'resolved to obey her, and forward my 'cure as much as I was able: how-'ever, the agitation of spirits increased 'my fever so much, that my life was 'despaired of.

'The baron hardly ever left my bed-'side. Philonice came every day to see 'me, and seemed extremely moved at 'the danger I was in. One day, when 'I was worse than usual, she came 'close to the bed-side, and, opening 'the curtain—

"What, Bellmour!" said she, "do "you pay so little obedience to my "commands that you resolve to die?"

"Heaven is my witness, Madam," 'said I, faintly, "that nothing is so "dear and sacred to me as your com-"mands! and since, out of your super-"lative goodness, you are pleased to "have some care for my life, I would "preserve it to obey you, were it in my "power; but, alas! Madam, I strive "in vain to repel the violence of my "distemper."

'In a few days more I was reduced

'to

'to the last extremity: it was then 'that the fair Philonice discovered that 'she did not hate me; for she made no 'scruple to weep before me; and those 'tears she so liberally shed had so pow-'erful an effect upon my mind, that 'the contentment I felt communicated 'itself to my body, and gave such a 'turn to my distemper, that my reco-'very was not only hoped, but ex-'pected.

'The baron expressed his satisfac-'tion at this alteration, by the most 'affectionate expressions; and though 'the fair Philonice said very little, yet 'I perceived by the joy that appeared 'in her fair eyes, that she was not less 'interested in my recovery than her 'father.

'The physicians having declared me 'out of danger, the baron, who had 'taken his resolutions long before, 'came one day into my chamber, and 'ordering those who attended me to 'leave us alone—

"Prince," said he, (for in recount-'ing my history to him I had disclosed 'my true quality) "I am not ignorant "of that affection you bear my daugh-"ter, and am sensible it has occasioned "the extremity to which we have seen "you reduced: had you been pleased "to acquaint me with your sentiments, "you would have avoided those dis-"pleasures you have suffered; for "though your birth were not so illus-"trious as it is, yet, preferring virtue "to all other advantages, I should "have esteemed my daughter honoured "by your love, and have freely be-"stowed her on you; but since to "those rare qualities wherewith Hea-"ven has so liberally endowed you, "you add also that of a birth so "noble, doubt not but I shall think "myself highly favoured by your al-"liance. If, therefore, your thoughts "of my daughter be not changed, and "you esteem her worthy to be your "bride, I here solemnly promise you "to bestow her upon you as soon as "you are perfectly recovered."

'I leave you to guess, Madam, the 'joy which I felt at this discourse; 'it was so great, that it would not per-'mit me to thank him, as I should have 'done, for the inestimable blessing he 'bestowed on me.

'I saw Philonice a few minutes af-'ter; and, being commanded by her 'father to give me her hand, she did 'so without any marks of reluctance; 'and, having respectfully kissed it, I 'vowed to be her slave for ever.

'Who would have imagined,' con-tinued Sir George, with a profound sigh, 'that fortune, while she thus 'seemed to flatter me, was preparing 'to make me suffer the severest tor-'ments? I began now to leave my 'bed, and was able to walk about my 'chamber. The baron was making 'great preparations for our nuptials; 'when one night I was alarmed with 'the cries of Philonice's women, and 'a few moments after the baron came 'into my chamber with a distracted 'air.

"O son!" cried he, for so he always 'called me, "now Philonice is lost "both to you and me: she is carried "off by force, and I am preparing to "follow and rescue her, if possible; "but I fear my endeavours will be "fruitless, since I know not which "way her ravishers have taken."

"Oh, Sir!" cried I, transported 'both with grief and rage, "you shall "not go alone: her rescue belongs to "me; and I will effect it, or perish in "the attempt!"

'The baron having earnestly con-'jured me not to expose myself to the 'danger of a relapse by so imprudent 'a resolution, was obliged to quit me, 'word being brought him that his 'horse was ready; and as soon as he 'was gone out of the room, in spite 'of all that could be said to prevent 'me, by my attendants, I made them 'put on my armour; and, mounting a 'horse I had caused to be made ready, 'sallied furiously out of the castle, 'breathing out vows of vengeance 'against the wretch who had robbed 'me of Philonice.

'I rode the whole night without 'stopping. Day appeared, when I found 'myself near a small village. I entered 'it, and made strict enquiry after the 'ravisher of Philonice, describing that 'fair creature, and offering vast re-'wards to any who could bring me the 'least intelligence of her: but all was 'in vain; I could make no discovery.

'After travelling several days, to 'no purpose, I returned to the castle, 'in order to know if the baron had 'been more successful in his pursuit 'than myself; but I found him op-

'preſſed with grief: he had heard no 'tidings of his daughter, and had ſuf- 'fered no ſmall apprehenſions upon my 'account. Having aſſured him I found 'myſelf very able to travel, I took an 'affectionate leave of him, promiſing 'him never to give over my ſearch, till 'I had found the divine Philonice; 'but Heaven has not permitted me that 'happineſs; and though I have ſpent 'ſeveral years in ſearching for her, I 'have never been able to diſcover 'where ſhe is: time has not cured me 'of my grief for her loſs; and, though 'by an effect of my deſtiny, another 'object poſſeſſes my ſoul, yet I do not 'ceaſe to deplore her misfortune, and 'to offer up vows for her happineſs.'

'And is this all you have to ſay?' ſaid Arabella, whom the latter part of his hiſtory had extremely ſurprized; 'or are we to expect a continuance of 'your adventures?'

'I have faithfully related all my ad- 'ventures, that are worthy your hear- 'ing, Madam,' returned Sir George; 'and I flatter myſelf, you will do me 'the juſtice to own, that I have been 'rather unfortunate than faithleſs; 'and that Mr. Glanville had little rea- 'ſon to tax me with inconſtancy.'

'In my opinion,' reſumed Arabella, 'Mr. Glanville ſpoke too favourably 'of you, when he called you only in- 'conſtant; and if he had added the 'epithet of ungrateful and unjuſt, he 'would have marked your character 'better.

'For, in fine, Sir,' purſued ſhe, 'you will never perſuade any reaſon- 'able perſon, that your being able to 'loſe the remembrance of the fair and 'generous Sydimiris, in your new 'paſſion for Philonice, was not an ex- 'ceſs of levity; but your ſuffering ſo 'tamely the loſs of this laſt beauty, 'and allowing her to remain in the 'hands of her raviſher, while you per- 'mit another affection to take poſſeſſion 'of your ſoul, is ſuch an outrage to all 'truth and conſtancy, that you deſerve 'to be ranked among the falſeſt of 'mankind.'

'Alas! Madam,' replied Sir George, (who had not foreſeen the inference Arabella would draw from this laſt ad- venture) 'what would you have an 'unfortunate man, whoſe hopes have 'been ſo often, and ſo cruelly, diſap- 'pointed, do? I have bewailed the 'loſs of Philonice, with a deluge of 'tears; I have taken infinite pains to 'find her, but to no purpoſe; and 'when Heaven, compaſſionating my 'ſufferings, preſented to my eyes an 'object to whom the whole world 'ought to pay adoration, how could I 'reſiſt that powerful impulſe, which 'forced me to love what appeared ſo 'worthy of my affection?'

'Call not,' interrupted Arabella, 'that an irreſiſtible impulſe, which was 'only the effect of thy own changing 'humour: the ſame excuſe might be 'pleaded for all the faults we ſee com- 'mitted in the world; and men would 'no longer be anſwerable for their own 'crimes. Had you imitated the illuſ- 'trious heroes of antiquity, as well in 'the conſtancy of their affections, as, 'it muſt be confeſſed, you have done 'in their admirable valour, you would 'now be either ſighing in your cave 'for the loſs of the generous Sydimiris, 'or wandering through the world in 'ſearch of the beautiful Philonice. 'Had you perſevered in your affection, 'and continued your purſuit of that 'fair-one, you would, perhaps, ere 'this, have found her ſleeping under 'the ſhade of a tree in ſome lone foreſt, 'as Philodaſpes did his admirable 'Delia, or diſguiſed in a ſlave's habit, 'as Ariobarſanes ſaw his divine 'Olympia; or bound haply in a cha- 'riot, and have had the glory of free- 'ing her, as Ambriomer did the beau- 'teous Agione; or in a ſhip in the 'hands of pirates, like the incompara- 'ble Eliza; or—'

'Enough, dear niece,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'you have quoted exam- 'ples ſufficient, if this inconſtant man 'would have the grace to follow them.'

'True, Sir,' replied Arabella; 'and I would recommend to his con- 'ſideration the conduct of thoſe illuſ- 'trious perſons I have named, to the 'end that, purſuing their ſteps, he may 'arrive at their glory and happineſs, 'that is the reputation of being per- 'fectly conſtant, and the poſſeſſion of 'his miſtreſs—and be aſſured, Sir,' purſued Arabella, looking at Sir George, 'that Heaven will never re- 'ſtore you the crown of your anceſtors, 'and place you upon the throne to 'which you pretend, while you make 'yourſelf unworthy of it's protection, 'by ſo ſhameful an inconſtancy.

'I perhaps

'I perhaps ſpeak with too much 'freedom to a great prince; whom 'though fortune has deſpoiled of his 'dominions, is entitled to a certain de'gree of reſpect: but, I conceive, it be'longs to me, in a particular manner, 'to reſent the baſeneſs of that crime to 'which you are pleaſed to make me 'the excuſe; and, looking upon my'ſelf as diſhonoured by thoſe often 'proſtituted vows you have offered 'me, I am to tell you, that I am high'ly diſobliged; and forbid you to ap'pear in my preſence again, till you 'have reſumed thoſe thoughts, which 'are worthy your noble extraction; 'and are capable of treating me with 'that reſpect which is my due.'

Saying this, ſhe roſe from her ſeat, and walked very majeſtically out of the room, leaving Sir George overwhelmed with ſhame and vexation at having conducted the latter part of his narration ſo ill; and drawn upon himſelf a ſentence which deprived him of all his hopes.

CHAP. XI.

CONTAINING ONLY A FEW INFERENCES, DRAWN FROM THE FOREGOING CHAPTERS.

MR. Glanville, exceſſively delighted with this event, could not help laughing at the unfortunate baronet; who ſeemed, by his ſilence, and down-caſt looks, to expect it.

'Who would have imagined,' ſaid he, 'that ſo renowned a hero would 'have tarniſhed the glory of his lau'rels, as my couſin ſays, by ſo baſe an 'ingratitude? Indeed, prince,' purſued he, laughing, 'you muſt reſolve to re'cover your reputation, either by retir'ing again to your cave, and living 'upon bitter herbs, for the generous 'Sydimiris; or elſe wander through 'the world in ſearch of the divine 'Philonice.'

'Don't triumph, dear Charles,' replied Sir George, laughing in his turn; 'have a little compaſſion upon me, and 'confeſs, that nothing could be more 'unfortunate than that damn'd ſlip I 'made at the latter end of my hiſtory: 'but for that, my reputation for cou'rage and conſtancy had been as high 'as the great Oroondates, or Juba.'

'Since you have ſo fertile an inven'tion,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'you may 'eaſily repair this miſtake. Ods-heart! 'it is pity you are not poor enough to 'be an author; you would occupy a 'garret in Grub Street, with great 'fame to yourſelf, and diverſion to the 'publick.'

'Oh! Sir,' cried Sir George, 'I 'have ſtock enough by me to ſet up 'for an author to-morrow, if I pleaſe: 'I have no leſs than five tragedies, 'ſome quite, others almoſt finiſhed; 'three or four eſſays on virtue, 'happineſs, &c. three thouſand lines 'of an epick poem; half a dozen epi'taphs; a few acroſticks; and a long 'ſtring of puns, that would ſerve to 'embelliſh a daily paper, if I was diſ'poſed to write one.'

'Nay, then,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'you are qualified for a critick at 'the Bedford Coffee Houſe; where, 'with the reſt of your brothers, demi'wits, you may ſit in judgment upon 'the productions of a Young, a Rich'ardſon, or a Johnſon; rail with pre'meditated malice at the Rambler; 'and, for the want of faults, turn even 'it's inimitable beauties into ridicule: 'the language, becauſe it reaches to 'perfection, may be called ſtiff, labour'ed, and pedantick; the criticiſms, 'when they let in more light than your 'weak judgment can bear, ſuperficial 'and oſtentatious glitter; and becauſe 'thoſe papers contain the fineſt ſyſtem 'of ethicks yet extant, damn the queer 'fellow, for over-propping virtue; an 'excellent new phraſe! which thoſe 'who can find no meaning in, may ac'commodate with one of their own; 'then give ſhrewd hints, that ſome 'perſons, though they do not publiſh 'their performances, may have more 'merit than thoſe that do.'

'Upon my ſoul, Charles,' ſaid Sir George, 'thou art ſuch an ill-natured 'fellow, that I am afraid thou wilt 'be ſneering at me when I am gone; 'and wilt endeavour to perſuade Lady 'Bella, that not a ſyllable of my ſtory 'is true. Speak,' purſued he, 'wilt 'thou have the cruelty to deprive me 'of my lawful claim to the great king'dom of Kent; and rob me of the 'glory of fighting ſingly againſt five 'hundred men?'

'I do not know,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'whether my niece be really impoſed

'upon,

'upon, by the gravity with which you 'told your ſurprizing hiſtory; but I 'proteſt, I thought you were in ear-'neſt at firſt, and that you meant to 'make us believe it all to be fact.'

'You are ſo fitly puniſhed,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'for that ill-judged 'adventure you related laſt, by the bad 'opinion Lady Bella entertains of you, 'that I need not add to your misfor-'tune: and, therefore, you ſhall be 'Prince Veridomer, if you pleaſe; 'ſince, under that character, you are 'obliged not to pretend to any lady, 'but the incomparable Philonice.'

Sir George, who underſtood his meaning, went home to think of ſome means by which he might draw himſelf out of the embarraſſment he was in; and Mr. Glanville, as he had promiſed, did not endeavour to undeceive Lady Bella with regard to the hiſtory he had feigned, being very well ſatisfied with his having put it out of his power to make his addreſſes to her, ſince ſhe now looked upon him as the lover of Philonice.

As for Sir Charles, he did not penetrate into the meaning of Sir George's ſtory; and only imagined, that, by relating ſuch a heap of adventures, he had a deſign to entertain the company, and give a proof of the facility of his invention; and Miſs Glanville, who ſuppoſed he had been ridiculing her couſin's ſtrange notions, was better pleaſed with him than ever.

Arabella, however, was leſs ſatisfied than any of them; ſhe could not endure to ſee ſo brave a knight, who drew his birth from a race of kings, tarniſh the glory of his gallant actions by ſo baſe a perfidy.

'Alas!' ſaid ſhe to herſelf, 'how 'much reaſon has the beautiful Phi-'lonice to accuſe me for all the an-'guiſh ſhe ſuffers! ſince I am the cauſe 'that the ungrateful prince, on whom 'ſhe beſtows her affections, ſuffers her 'to remain quietly in the hands of her 'raviſher, without endeavouring to 'reſcue her.—But, oh! too lovely and 'unfortunate fair-one,' ſaid ſhe, as if ſhe had been preſent, and liſtening to her, 'diſtinguiſh, I beſeech you, be-'tween thoſe faults which the will 'and thoſe which neceſſity makes us 'commit. I am the cauſe, it is true, 'of thy lover's infidelity; but I am 'the innocent cauſe, and would repair 'the evils my fatal beauty gives riſe 'to, by any ſacrifice in my power to 'make.'

While Arabella, by her romantick generoſity, bewailed the imaginary afflictions of the full as imaginary Philonice, Mr. Glanville, who thought the ſolitude ſhe lived in, confirmed her in her abſurd and ridiculous notions, deſired his father to preſs her to go to London.

Sir Charles complied with his requeſt, and earneſtly entreated her to leave the caſtle, and ſpend a few months in town. Her year of mourning being now expired, ſhe conſented to go; but Sir Charles, who did not think his ſon's health abſolutely confirmed, propoſed to ſpend a few weeks at Bath; which was readily complied with by Arabella.

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

FOR THE SHORTNESS OF WHICH THE LENGTH OF THE NEXT SHALL MAKE SOME AMENDS.

SIR George, to gratify Arabella's humour, had not presumed to come to the castle for several days; but, hearing that they were preparing to leave the country, he wrote a short billet to her; and in the stile of romance most humbly intreated her to grant him a moment's audience.

Arabella being informed by Lucy, to whom Sir George's gentleman had addressed himself, that he had brought a letter from his master, she ordered her to bring him to her apartment, and as soon as he appeared—

'How comes it,' said she, 'that the 'prince your master, has had the pre-'sumption to importune me again, af-'ter my absolute commands to the con-'trary?'

'The prince my master, Madam!' said the man, excessively surprized.

'Aye!' said Arabella, 'are you not 'Sir George's 'squire? And does he 'not trust you with his most secret 'thoughts?'

'I belong to Sir George Bellmour, 'Madam,' replied the man, who did not understand what she meant, 'I 'have not the honour to be a 'squire.'

'No!' interrupted Arabella; 'it is 'strange then that he should have ho-'noured you with his commission.—'Pray, what is it you come to request 'for him?'

'My master, Madam,' said he, 'or-'dered me to get this letter delivered 'to your ladyship, and to stay for your 'commands.'

'You would perswade me,' said she, sternly, being provoked that he did not deliver the letter upon his knees, as was the custom in romances, 'that you 'are not acquainted with the purport 'of this audacious billet, since you 'express so little fear of my displea-'sure; but know, presumptuous, that 'I am mortally offended with your 'master, for his daring to suppose I 'would read this proof at once of his 'insolence and infidelity; and was you 'worth my resentment, I would haply 'make you suffer for your want of re-'spect to me.'

The poor man, surprized and confounded at her anger, and puzzled extremely to understand what she meant, was opening his mouth to say something, it is probable, in his own defence, when Arabella preventing him—

'I know what thou wouldst say,' said she: 'thou wouldst abuse my pa-'tience by a false detail of thy master's 'sighs, tears, exclamations, and des-'pair.'

'Indeed, Madam, I don't intend to 'say any such thing,' replied the man.

'No!' repeated Arabella, a little disappointed.

disappointed. 'Bear back this pre-
'sumptuous billet, then, which I sup-
'pose contains the melancholy account;
'and tell him, he that could so soon
'forget the generous Sydimiris for
'Philonice, and could afterwards be
'false to that incomparable beauty, is
'not a person worthy to adore Ara-
'bella.'

The man, who could not tell what to make of this message, and feared he should forget these two hard names, humbly intreated her to be pleased to acquaint his master by a line with her intentions. Arabella, supposing he meant to importune her still more, made a sign with her hand, very majestically, for him to be gone; but he, not able to comprehend her meaning, stood still with an air of perplexity, not daring to beg her to explain herself, supposing she, by that sign, required something of him.

'Why dost thou not obey my com-
'mands?' said Arabella, finding he did not go.

'I will, to be sure, Madam,' replied he; wishing at the same time secretly she would let him know what they were.

'And yet,' said she, hastily, 'thou
'art disobeying me this moment: did
'I not bid you get out of my presence,
'and to speak no more of your incon-
'stant master, whose crimes have ren-
'dered him the detestation of all ge-
'nerous persons whatever?'

Sir George's messenger, extremely surprized at so harsh a character of his master, and the rage with which the lady seemed to be actuated, made haste to get out of her apartment; and, at his return, informed his master, very exactly, of the reception he had met with, repeating all Lady Bella's words; which, notwithstanding the blunders he made in the names of Sydimiris and Philonice, Sir George understood well enough; and found new occasion of wondering at the excess of Arabella's extravagance, who he never imagined would have explained herself in that manner to his servant.

Without endeavouring, therefore, to see Arabella, he went to pay his compliments to Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and Miss Glanville; to the last of whom he said some soft things, that made her extremely regret his staying behind them in the country.

CHAP. II.

NOT SO LONG AS WAS FIRST INTENDED; BUT CONTAINS, HOWEVER, A SURPRIZING ADVENTURE ON THE ROAD.

THE day of their departure being come, they set out in a coach and six, attended by several servants on horseback. The first day's journey passed off without any accident worthy relating; but, towards the close of the second, they were alarmed by the appearance of three highwaymen, well mounted, at a small distance.

One of the servants, who had first spied them, immediately rode up to the coach; and, for fear of alarming the ladies, whispered Mr. Glanville in the ear.

Sir Charles, who was sitting next his son, and had heard it, cried out, with too little caution, 'How's this?
'Are we in any danger of being at-
'tacked, say you?'

Mr. Glanville, without replying, jumped out of the coach; at which Miss Glanville screamed out; and, lest her father should follow, sprung into her brother's seat, and held him fast by the coat.

Arabella, being in a strange consternation at all this, put her head out of the coach, to see what was the matter; and, observing three or four men of a genteel appearance, on horseback, who seemed to halt, and gaze on them, without offering to advance—

'Sir,' said she to her uncle, 'are
'yonder knights the persons whom
'you suppose will attack us?'

'Aye, aye,' said Sir Charles, 'they
'are knights of the road indeed: I
'suppose we shall have a bout with
'them; for it will be scandalous to
'deliver, since we have the odds of
'our side, and are more than a match
'for them.'

Arabella, interpreting these words in her own way, looked out again; and, seeing the robbers, who had by this time taken their resolution, galloping towards them, her cousin and the servants ranging themselves of each side of the coach, as if to defend them—

'Hold, hold, valiant men,' said she, as loud as she could speak, addressing herself to the highwaymen; 'do not,
'by

'by a miſtaken generoſity, hazard your 'lives in a combat, to which the laws 'of honour do not oblige you: we are 'not violently carried away, as you 'falſely ſuppoſe; we go willingly 'along with theſe perſons, who are 'our friends and relations.'

'Hey-day!' cried Sir Charles, ſtaring at her with great ſurprize; 'what's 'the meaning of all this? Do you 'think theſe fellows will mind your 'fine ſpeeches, niece?'

'I hope they will, Sir,' ſaid ſhe: then, pulling her couſin—'Shew your-'ſelf, for Heaven's ſake, Miſs,' purſued ſhe, 'and ſecond my aſſurances, 'that we are not forced away: theſe 'generous men come to fight for our 'deliverance.'

The highwaymen, who were near enough to hear Arabella's voice, though they could not diſtinguiſh her words, gazed on her with great ſurprize; and, finding they would be very well received, thought fit to abandon their enterprize, and galloped away as faſt as they were able. Some of the ſervants made a motion to purſue them; but Mr. Glanville forbade it; and, entering again into the coach, congratulated the ladies upon the eſcape they had had.

'Since theſe men,' ſaid Arabella, 'did not come to deliver us, out of a 'miſtaken notion, that we were car-'ried away by force, it muſt neceſſa-'rily follow, they had ſome bad 'deſign; and I proteſt I know not 'who to ſuſpect is the author of it, 'unleſs the perſon you vanquiſhed,' ſaid ſhe to Mr. Glanville, 'the other 'day in a ſingle combat; for the diſ-'guiſed Edward, you aſſured me, was 'dead. But, perhaps,' continued ſhe, 'it was ſome lover of Miſs Glanville's 'who deſigned to make an attempt to 'carry her away: methinks he was 'too ſlenderly attended for ſuch an ha-'zardous undertaking.'

'I'll aſſure you, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'I have no lovers among 'highwaymen.'

'Highwaymen!' repeated Arabella.

'Why, aye, to be ſure, Madam,' rejoined Sir Charles: 'what do you 'take them for?'

'For perſons of quality, Sir,' reſumed Arabella; 'and though they 'came, queſtionleſs, either upon a good 'or bad deſign, yet it cannot be doubt-'ed, but that their birth is illuſtrious; 'otherwiſe they would never pretend 'either to fight in our defence, or to 'carry us away.'

'I vow, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'I can't poſſibly underſtand you.'

'My couſin, Sir,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'has been miſtaken in theſe 'perſons; and has not yet, poſſibly, 'believed them to be highwaymen who 'came to rob us.'

'There is no queſtion, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling, 'that if they did 'not come to defend us, they came to 'rob you: but it is hard to gueſs, 'which of us it was of whom they de-'ſigned to deprive you; for it may very 'poſſibly be for my couſin's ſake, as 'well as mine, that this enterprize 'was undertaken.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, who was willing to prevent his father from anſwering her abſurdities; 'theſe men had no other 'deſign than to rob us of our money.'

'How!' ſaid Arabella: 'were theſe 'cavaliers, who appeared to be in ſo 'handſome a garb, that I took them 'for perſons of prime quality, were 'they robbers? I have been ſtrangely 'miſtaken, it ſeems: however, I ap-'prehend there is no certainty that 'your ſuſpicions are true; and it may 'ſtill be as I ſay, that they either came 'to reſcue or carry us away.'

Mr. Glanville, to avoid a longer diſpute, changed the diſcourſe; having obſerved with confuſion, that Sir Charles, and his ſiſter, ſeemed to look upon his beloved couſin as one that was out of her ſenſes.

CHAP. III.

WHICH CONCLUDES WITH AN AUTHENTICK PIECE OF HISTORY.

ARABELLA, during the reſt of this journey, was ſo wholly taken up in contemplating upon the laſt adventure, that ſhe mixed but little in the converſation. Upon their drawing near Bath, the ſituation of that city afforded her the means of making a compariſon between the valley in which it was placed, (with the amphitheatrical view of the hills around it) and the valley of Tempe.

'It was in ſuch a place as this,' ſaid ſhe, purſuing her compariſon,

'that the fair Andronice delivered the 'valiant Hortenſius: and really I could 'wiſh our entrance into that city 'might be preceded by an act of equal 'humanity with that of that fair prin-'ceſs.'

'For the gratification of that wiſh, 'Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'it is 'neceſſary ſome perſon ſhould meet 'with a misfortune, out of which you 'might be able to relieve him; but I 'ſuppoſe the benevolence of your diſ-'poſition may be equally ſatisfied with 'not finding any occaſion, as of exer-'ciſing it when it is found.'

'Though it be not my fortune to 'meet with thoſe occaſions,' replied Arabella, 'there is no reaſon to doubt 'but others do, who poſſibly have leſs 'inclination to afford their aſſiſtance 'than myſelf: and it is poſſible, if any 'other than the princeſs of Meſſina 'had happened to paſs by when Hor-'tenſius was in the hands of the Theſ-'ſalians, he would not have been re-'ſcued from the ignominious death he 'was deſtined to, merely for killing a 'ſtork.'

'How!' interrupted Sir Charles, 'put a man to death for killing a ſtork! 'Ridiculous! Pray, in what part of 'the world did that happen? Among 'the Indians of America, I ſuppoſe.'

'No, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'in Theſ-'ſaly; the faireſt part in all Macedo-'nia, famous for the beautiful valley 'of Tempe, which excited the cu-'rioſity of all travellers whatever.'

'No, not all, Madam,' returned Sir Charles; 'for I am acquainted with 'ſeveral travellers, who never ſaw it, 'nor even mentioned it; and if it is 'ſo famous as you ſay, I am ſurprized 'I never heard of it before.'

'I don't know,' ſaid Arabella, 'what thoſe travellers thought worthy 'of their notice; but I am certain, 'that if any chance ſhould conduct 'me into Macedonia, I would not 'leave it till I ſaw the valley of Tempe, 'ſo celebrated by all the poets and 'hiſtorians.'

'Dear couſin,' cried Glanville, who could hardly forbear ſmiling, 'what 'chance, in the name of wonder, 'ſhould take you into Turky, at ſo 'great a diſtance from your own coun-'try?'

'And ſo,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'this 'famous valley of Tempe is in Turky.

'—Why, you muſt be very fond of tra-'velling, indeed, Lady Bella, if you 'would go into the Great Mogul's 'country, where the people are all 'Pagans, they ſay, and worſhip the 'devil.'

'The country my couſin ſpeaks of,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'is in the Grand 'Siginor's dominions: the Great 'Mogul, you know, Sir—'

'Well,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'the Great Mogul, or the Grand Sig-'nior, I know not what you call him: 'but I hope my niece does not propoſe 'to go thither.'

'Not unleſs I am forcibly carried 'thither,' ſaid Arabella; 'but I do 'determine, if that misfortune ſhould 'ever happen to me, that I would, if 'poſſible, viſit the valley of Tempe, 'which is in that part of Greece they 'call Macedonia.'

'Then I am perſuaded,' replied Sir Charles, 'you'll never ſee that famous 'vale you talk of; for it is not very 'likely you ſhould be forcibly carried 'away into Turky.'

'And why do you think it unlike-'ly that I ſhould be carried thither?' interrupted Arabella. 'Do not the 'ſame things happen now, that did 'formerly? And is any thing more 'common, than ladies being carried, 'by their raviſhers, into countries far 'diſtant from their own? May not the 'ſame accidents happen to me, that 'have happened to ſo many illuſtrious 'ladies before me? And may I not be 'carried into Macedonia by a ſimili-'tude of deſtiny with that of a great 'many beautiful princeſſes, who, 'though born in the moſt diſtant quar-'ters of the world, chanced to meet 'at one time in the city of Alexandria, 'and related their miraculous adven-'tures to each other?'

'And it was for that very purpoſe 'they met, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glan-ville, ſmiling.

'Why, truly,' ſaid Arabella, 'it 'happened very luckily for each of 'them, that they were brought into a 'place where they found ſo many il-'luſtrious companions in misfortune, to 'whom they might freely communicate 'their adventures, which otherwiſe 'might, haply, have been concealed, 'or, at leaſt, have been imperfectly 'delivered down to us: however,' added ſhe, ſmiling, 'if I am carried

'into

'into Macedonia, and by that means 'have an opportunity of viſiting the 'famous vale of Tempe, I ſhall take 'care not to draw the reſentment of 'the Theſſalians upon me, by an in-'diſcretion like that of Hortenſius.

'For be pleaſed to know, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, addreſſing herſelf to her uncle, 'that his killing a ſtork, however in-'conſiderable a matter it may appear 'to us, was yet looked upon as a 'crime of a very atrocious nature 'among the Theſſalians; for they 'have a law, which forbids, upon 'pain of death, the killing of ſtorks; 'the reaſon for which is, that Theſſaly 'being ſubject to be infeſted with a 'prodigious multitude of ſerpents, 'which are a delightful food to theſe 'ſort of fowls, they look upon them 'as ſacred birds ſent by the gods to 'deliver them from theſe ſerpents and 'vipers: and though Hortenſius, being 'a ſtranger, was pardoned through the 'interceſſion of the princeſs Andro-'nice, they made him promiſe to ſend 'another ſtork into Theſſaly, to the 'end that he might be reputed inno-'cent.'

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH ONE OF OUR HEROINE'S WHIMS IS JUSTIFIED, BY SOME OTHERS FULL AS WHIMSICAL.

THIS piece of hiſtory, with Sir Charles's remarks upon it, brought them into Bath. Their lodgings being provided before-hand, the ladies retired to their different chambers, to repoſe themſelves after the fatigue of their journey, and did not meet again till ſupper was on table; when Miſs Glanville, who had eagerly enquired what company was then in the place, and heard there were a great many perſons of faſhion juſt arrived, preſt Arabella to go to the Pump-room the next morning, aſſuring her ſhe would find a very agreeable amuſement.

Arabella accordingly conſented to accompany her; and being told the ladies went in an undreſs of a morning, ſhe accommodated herſelf to the cuſtom, and went in a negligent dreſs; but inſtead of a capuchin, ſhe wore ſomething like a veil, of black gauze, which covered almoſt all her face, and part of her waiſt, and gave her a very ſingular appearance.

Miſs Glanville was too envious of her couſin's ſuperiority in point of beauty, to inform her of any oddity in her dreſs, which ſhe thought might expoſe her to the ridicule of thoſe that ſaw her; and Mr. Glanville was too little a critick in ladies apparel, to be ſenſible that Arabella was not in the faſhion; and ſince every thing ſhe wore became her extremely, he could not chuſe but think ſhe dreſt admirably well: he handed her, therefore, with a great deal of ſatisfaction, into the Pump-room, which happened to be greatly crouded that morning.

The attention of moſt part of the company was immediately engaged by the appearance Lady Bella made. Strangers are here moſt ſtrictly criticiſed, and every new object affords a delicious feaſt of raillery and ſcandal.

The ladies, alarmed at the ſingularity of her dreſs, crouded together in parties; and the words, 'Who can ſhe 'be? Strange creature! Ridiculous!' and other exclamations of the ſame kind, were whiſpered very intelligibly.

The men were ſtruck with her figure, veiled as ſhe was. Her fine ſtature, the beautiful turn of her perſon, the grace and elegance of her motion, attracted all their notice: the phænomena of the veil, however, gave them great diſturbance. So lovely a perſon ſeemed to promiſe the owner had a face not unworthy of it; but that was totally hid from their view: for Arabella, at her entrance into the room, had pulled the gauze quite over her face, following therein the cuſtom of the ladies in Clelia, and the Grand Cyrus, who, in mixed companies, always hid their faces with great care.

The wits and pretty fellows, railed at the envious covering, and compared her to the ſun obſcured by a cloud; while the beaux *dem'd* the horrid innovation, and expreſſed a fear, leſt it ſhould grow into a faſhion.

Some of the wiſer ſort took her for a foreigner; others, of ſtill more ſagacity, ſuppoſed her a Scotch lady, covered with her plaid; and a third ſort, infinitely wiſer than either, concluded ſhe was a Spaniſh nun, that had eſcaped from a convent, and had not yet quitted her veil.

Arabella, ignorant of the diverſity

of opinions to which her appearance gave riſe, was taken up in diſcourſing with Mr. Glanville upon the medicinal virtue of the ſprings, the œconomy of the baths, the nature of the diverſions, and ſuch other topicks as the objects around them furniſhed her with.

In the mean time, Miſs Glanville was got amidſt a crowd of her acquaintance, who had hardly paid the civilities of a firſt meeting, before they eagerly enquired, who that lady ſhe brought with her was.

Miſs Glanville informed them, that ſhe was her couſin, and daughter to the deceaſed Marquis of ——; adding, with a ſneer, that ſhe had been brought up in the country; knew nothing of the world; and had ſome very peculiar notions, 'As you may ſee,' ſaid ſhe, 'by that odd kind of covering 'ſhe wears.'

Her name and quality were preſently whiſpered all over the room: the men, hearing ſhe was a great heireſs, found greater beauties to admire in her perſon; the ladies, awed by the ſanction of quality, dropt their ridicule on her dreſs, and began to quote examples of whims full as inexcuſable.

One remembered that Lady J— F— always wore her ruffles reverſed; that the Counteſs of —— went to court in a farthingale; that the Dutcheſs of —— ſat aſtride upon a horſe; and a certain lady of great fortune, and nearly allied to quality, becauſe ſhe was not dignified with a title, invented a new one for herſelf; and directed her ſervants to ſay, in ſpeaking to her, '*Your* '*honoureſs*;' which afterwards became a cuſtom among all her acquaintance; who mortally offended her if they omitted that inſtance of reſpect.

CHAP. V.

CONTAINING SOME HISTORICAL ANECDOTES, THE TRUTH OF WHICH MAY POSSIBLY BE DOUBTED, AS THEY ARE NOT TO BE FOUND IN ANY OF THE HISTORIANS.

AFTER a ſhort ſtay in the room, Arabella expreſſing a deſire to return home, Mr. Glanville conducted her out. Two gentlemen of his acquaintance attending Miſs Glanville, Sir Charles detained them to breakfaſt; by which means they had an opportunity of ſatisfying their curioſity; and beheld Arabella, diveſted of that veil, which had, as they ſaid, (and it is probable they ſaid no more than they thought) concealed one of the fineſt faces in the world.

Miſs Glanville had the mortification to ſee both the gentlemen ſo charmed with the ſight of her couſin's face, that for a long time ſhe ſat wholly neglected; but the ſerioufneſs of her behaviour giving ſome little diſguſt to the youngeſt of them, who was what the ladies call a pretty fellow, a dear creature, and the moſt diverting man in the world; he applied himſelf wholly to Miſs Glanville, and ſoon engaged her in a particular converſation.

Mr. Selvin, ſo was the other gentleman called, was of a much graver caſt; he affected to be thought deep-read in hiſtory, and never failed to take all opportunities of diſplaying his knowledge of antiquity, which was indeed but very ſuperficial; but having ſome few anecdotes by heart, which he would take occaſion to introduce as often as he could, he paſſed among many perſons for one who, by application and ſtudy, had acquired an univerſal knowledge of ancient hiſtory.

Speaking of any particular circumſtance, he would fix the time, by computing the year with the number of the Olympiads.

'It happened,' he would ſay, 'in the '141ſt Olympiad.'

Such an amazing exactneſs had a ſuitable effect on his audience, and always procured him a great degree of attention.

This gentleman hitherto had no opportunity of diſplaying his knowledge of hiſtory, the diſcourſe having wholly turned upon news, and other trifles; when Arabella, after ſome more enquiries concerning the place, remarked, that there was a very great difference between the medicinal waters at Bath, and the fine ſprings at the foot of the mountain Thermopylæ, in Greece, as well in their qualities, as manner of uſing them: 'And I am of 'opinion,' added ſhe, 'that Bath, fa-'mous as it is for reſtoring health, 'is leſs frequented by infirm perſons, 'than the famous ſprings of Thermo-'pylæ

'pylæ were by the beauties of Greece, 'to whom those waters have the repu-'tation of giving new lustre.'

Mr. Selvin, who, with all his read-ing, had never met with any account of these celebrated Grecian springs, was extremely disconcerted at not being able to continue a conversation, which the silence of the rest of the company made him imagine was directed wholly to him.

The shame he conceived at seeing himself posed by a girl, in a matter which so immediately belonged to him, made him resolve to draw himself out of this dilemma at any rate; and, though he was far from being convinced that there were no such springs at Ther-mopylæ as Arabella mentioned, yet he resolutely maintained that she must be mistaken in their situation; for, to his certain knowledge, there were no medicinal waters at the foot of that mountain.

Arabella, who could not endure to be contradicted in what she took to be so incontestable a fact, reddened with vexation at his unexpected denial.

'It should seem,' said she, 'by your 'discourse, that you are unacquainted 'with many material passages that 'passed among very illustrious persons 'there; and if you knew any thing of 'Pisistratus the Athenian, you would 'know, that an adventure he had at 'those baths, laid the foundation of 'all those great designs, which he af-'terwards effected, to the total sub-'version of the Athenian government.'

Mr. Selvin, surprized that this piece of history had likewise escaped his ob-servation, resolved, however, not to give up his point.

'I think, Madam,' replied he, with great self-sufficiency, 'that I am pretty 'well acquainted with every thing 'which relates to the affairs of the 'Athenian commonwealth; and know 'by what steps Pisistratus advanced 'himself to the sovereignty.—It was, 'indeed, a great stroke of policy in 'him,' said he, turning to Mr. Glan-ville, 'to wound himself, in order to 'get a guard assigned him.'

'You are mistaken, Sir,' said Ara-bella, 'if you believe there was any 'truth in the report of his having 'wounded himself; it was done either 'by his rival Lycurgus, or Theocrites; 'who believing him still to be in love 'with the fair Cerinthe, whom he 'courted, took that way to get rid of 'him: neither is it true, that ambi-'tion alone inspired Pisistratus with a 'design of enslaving his country; those 'authors who say so, must know little 'of the springs and motives of his 'conduct. It was neither ambition 'nor revenge that made him act as he 'did; it was the violent affection he 'conceived for the beautiful Cleorante, 'whom he first saw at the famous baths 'of Thermopylæ, which put him upon 'those designs; for, seeing that Ly-'curgus, who was not his rival in 'ambition, but love, would certainly 'become the possessor of Cleorante, 'unless he made himself tyrant of 'Athens, he had recourse to that vio-'lent method, in order to preserve her 'for himself.'

'I protest, Madam,' said Mr. Sel-vin, casting down his eyes in great confusion at her superior knowledge in history, 'these particulars have all 'escaped my notice; and this is the 'first time I ever understood that Pi-'sistratus was violently in love; and 'that it was not ambition which made 'him aspire to sovereignty.

'I do not remember any mention of 'this in Plutarch,' continued he, rub-bing his forehead, 'or any of the au-'thors who have treated on the affairs 'of Greece.'

'Very likely, Sir,' replied Arabel-la; 'but you will see the whole story 'of Pisistratus's love for Cleorante, 'with the effects it produced, related 'at large in Scudery.'

'Scudery, Madam!' said the sage Mr. Selvin, 'I never read that his-'torian.'

'No, Sir!' replied Arabella; 'then 'your reading has been very confined.'

'I know, Madam,' said he, 'that 'Herodotus, Thucydides, and Plu-'tarch, have indeed quoted him fre-'quently.'

'I am surprized, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, who was excessively divert-ed at this discovery of his great igno-rance and affectation, 'that you have 'not read that famous historian; es-'pecially as the writers you have men-'tioned quote him so often.'

'Why, to tell you the truth, Sir,' said he, 'though he was a Roman,

'yet

'yet it is objected to him, that he 'wrote but indifferent Latin; with no 'purity or elegance; and——'

'You are quite miſtaken, Sir,' interrupted Arabella; 'the great Scudery was a Frenchman; and both 'his Clelia and Artamanes were written in French.'

'A Frenchman was he?' ſaid Mr. Selvin, with a lofty air: 'Oh! then, it 'is not ſurprizing that I have not read 'him; I read no authors but the ancients, Madam,' added he, with a look of ſelf-applauſe; 'I cannot reliſh 'the moderns at all; I have no taſte 'for their way of writing.'

'But Scudery muſt needs be more 'ancient than Thucydides, and the 'reſt of thoſe Greek hiſtorians you 'mentioned,' ſaid Mr. Glanville: 'how elſe could they quote him?'

Mr. Selvin was here ſo utterly at a loſs, that he could not conceal his confuſion; he held down his head, and continued ſilent; while the beau, who had liſtened to the latter part of their diſcourſe, exerted his ſuppoſed talent of raillery againſt the unhappy admirer of the ancient authors; and increaſed his confuſion by a thouſand ſarcaſms, which gave more diverſion to himſelf than any body elſe.

CHAP. VI.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME EXCELLENT RULES FOR RAILLERY.

MR. Glanville, who had too much politeneſs and good-nature to inſiſt too long upon the ridicule in the character of his acquaintance, changed the diſcourſe; and Arabella, who had obſerved, with ſome concern, the ill-judged raillery of the young beau, took occaſion to decry that ſpecies of wit; and gave it as her opinion, that it was very dangerous and unpleaſing.

'For, truly,' ſaid ſhe, 'it is almoſt 'impoſſible to uſe it without being 'hated or feared; and whoever gets a 'habit of it, is in danger of wronging all the laws of friendſhip and 'humanity.

'Certainly,' purſued ſhe, looking at the beau, 'it is extremely unjuſt to 'rally one's friends and particular 'acquaintance: firſt, chuſe them well, 'and be as nice as you pleaſe in the 'choice; but when you have choſen 'them, by no means play upon them; 'it is cruel and malicious to divert 'one's ſelf at the expence of one's 'friend.'

'However, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, who was charmed to hear her talk ſo rationally, 'you may give peo'ple leave to rally their enemies.'

'Truly,' reſumed Arabella, 'I cannot allow that, any more than upon 'friends; for raillery is the pooreſt 'kind of revenge that can be taken: 'methinks it is mean to rally perſons 'who have a ſmall ſhare of merit; 'ſince, haply, their defects were born 'with them, and not of their own acquiring; and it is great injuſtice to 'deſcant upon one ſlight fault in men 'of parts, to the prejudice of a thouſand good qualities.'

'For aught I ſee, Madam,' ſaid the beau, 'you will not allow one to rally 'any body.'

'I am of opinion, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'that there are very few proper 'objects for raillery; and ſtill fewer 'who can rally well: the talent of 'raillery ought to be born with a perſon; no art can infuſe it; and thoſe 'who endeavour to rally in ſpite of 'nature, will be ſo far from diverting 'others, that they will become the objects of ridicule themſelves.

'Many other pleaſing qualities of 'wit may be acquired by pains and 'ſtudy, but raillery muſt be the gift 'of nature: it is not enough to have 'many lively and agreeable thoughts; 'but there muſt be ſuch an expreſſion, 'as muſt convey their full force and 'meaning; the air, the aſpect, the 'tone of the voice, and every part in 'general, muſt contribute to it's perfection.

'There ought alſo to be a great diſtance between raillery and ſatire, ſo 'that one may never be miſtaken for 'the other: raillery ought indeed to 'ſurprize, and ſenſibly touch, thoſe 'to whom it is directed; but I would 'not have the wounds it makes either 'deep or laſting; let thoſe who feel 'it, be hurt like perſons who, gathering roſes, are pricked by the thorns, 'and find a ſweet ſmell to make 'amends.

'I would have raillery raiſe the 'fancy, and quicken the imagination; 'the fire of it's wit ſhould only enable

'us

'us to trace it's original, and ſhine as 'the ſtars do, but not burn. Yet, 'after all, I cannot greatly approve of 'raillery, or ceaſe to think it dange-'rous; and, to purſue my compari-'ſon,' ſaid ſhe, with an enchanting ſmile, 'perſons who poſſeſs the true 'talent of raillery, are like comets; 'they are ſeldom ſeen, and are at once 'admired and feared.'

'I proteſt, Lady Bella,' ſaid Sir Charles, who had liſtened to her with many ſigns of admiration, 'you ſpeak 'like an orator.'

'One would not imagine,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, who ſaw Arabella in ſome confuſion at the coarſe praiſe her uncle gave her, 'that my 'couſin could ſpeak ſo accurately of a 'quality ſhe never practiſes: and it is 'eaſy to judge, by what ſhe has ſaid, 'that no body can rally finer than 'herſelf, if ſhe pleaſes.'

Mr. Selvin, though he bore her a grudge for knowing more hiſtory than he did, yet aſſured her that ſhe had given the beſt rules imaginable for rallying well. But the beau, whom ſhe had ſilenced by her reproof, was extremely angry; and, ſuppoſing it would mortify her to ſee him pay court to her couſin, he redoubled his aſſiduities to Miſs Glanville, who was highly delighted at ſeeing Arabella leſs taken notice of by this gay gentleman than herſelf.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH THE AUTHOR CONDESCENDS TO BE VERY MINUTE IN THE DESCRIPTION OF OUR HEROINE'S DRESS.

THE indifference of Mr. Tinſel convincing Miſs Glanville that Arabella was leſs to be dreaded than ſhe imagined, ſhe had no reluctance at ſeeing her prepare for her publick appearance the next ball-night.

Having conſulted her fancy in a rich ſilver ſtuff ſhe had bought for that purpoſe, a perſon was ſent for to make it; and Arabella, who followed no faſhion but her own taſte, which was formed on the manners of the heroines, ordered the woman to make her a robe after the ſame model as the princeſs Julia's.

The mantua-maker, who thought it might do her great prejudice with her new cuſtomer to acknowledge ſhe knew nothing of the princeſs Julia, or the faſhion of her gown, replied at random, and with great pertneſs—

That that taſte was quite out, and ſhe would adviſe her ladyſhip to have her cloaths made in the preſent mode, which was far more becoming.

'You can never perſuade me,' ſaid Arabella, 'that any faſhion can be 'more becoming than that of the 'princeſs Julia's, who was the moſt 'gallant princeſs upon earth, and 'knew better than any other how to 'ſet off her charms. It may indeed 'be a little obſolete now,' purſued ſhe; 'for the faſhion could not but alter a 'little in the compaſs of near two 'thouſand years.'

'Two thouſand years, Madam!' ſaid the woman, in a great ſurprize; 'Lord help us trades-people, if they 'did not alter a thouſand times in as 'many days! I thought your ladyſhip 'was ſpeaking of the laſt month's taſte, 'which, as I ſaid before, is quite out 'now.'

'Well,' replied Arabella, 'let the 'preſent mode be what it will, I inſiſt 'upon having my cloaths made after 'the pattern of the beautiful daughter 'of Auguſtus; being convinced that 'none other can be half ſo becoming.'

'What faſhion was that, pray, Madam?' ſaid the woman. 'I never 'ſaw it.'

'How!' replied Arabella, 'have you 'already forgot the faſhion of the prin-'ceſs Julia's robe, which you ſaid was 'wore but laſt month? Or, are you 'ignorant that the princeſs Julia and 'the daughter of Auguſtus is the ſame 'perſon?'

'I proteſt, Madam,' ſaid the woman, extremely confuſed, 'I had forgot that 'till you called it to my mind.'

'Well,' ſaid Arabella, 'make me 'a robe in the ſame taſte.'

The mantua-maker was now wholly at a loſs in what manner to behave; for, being conſcious that ſhe knew nothing of the princeſs Julia's faſhion, ſhe could not undertake to make it without directions, and ſhe was afraid of diſcovering her ignorance by aſking for any; ſo that her ſilence and embarraſſment perſuading Arabella ſhe knew nothing of the matter, ſhe diſmiſſed her with

with a ſmall preſent for the trouble ſhe had given her, and had recourſe to her uſual expedient, which was to make one of her women, who underſtood a little of the mantua-making buſineſs, make a robe for her after her own directions.

Miſs Glanville, who imagined ſhe had ſent for work-women in order to have cloaths made in the modern taſte, was ſurprized, at her entrance into her chamber, to ſee her dreſſing for the ball in a habit ſingular to the laſt degree.

She wore no hoop, and the blue and ſilver ſtuff of her robe was only kept by it's own richneſs from hanging cloſe about her. It was quite open round her breaſt, which was ſhaded with a rich border of lace; and, claſping cloſe to her waiſt by ſmall knots of diamonds, deſcended in a ſweeping train on the ground.

The ſleeves were ſhort, wide, and ſlaſhed, faſtened in different places with diamonds, and her arms were partly hid by half a dozen falls of ruffles. Her hair, which fell in very eaſy ringlets on her neck, was placed with great care and exactneſs round her lovely face; and the jewels and ribbands, which were all her head-dreſs, diſpoſed to the greateſt advantage.

Upon the whole, nothing could be more ſingularly becoming than her dreſs; or ſet off with greater advantage the ſtriking beauties of her perſon.

Miſs Glanville, though ſhe was not diſpleaſed to ſee her perſiſt in her ſingularity of dreſs, yet could not behold her look ſo lovely in it, without feeling a ſecret uneaſineſs; but conſoling herſelf with the hopes of the ridicule ſhe would occaſion, ſhe aſſumed a chearful air, approved her taſte in the choice of her colours, and went with her at the uſual hour to the rooms, attended by Mr. Glanville, Mr. Selvin, and the young beau we have formerly mentioned.

The ſurprize Arabella's unuſual appearance gave to the whole company, was very viſible to every one but herſelf.

The moment ſhe entered the room, every one whiſpered the perſon next to them; and for ſome moments nothing was heard but the words, 'The Prin-'ceſs Julia;' which was echoed at every corner, and at laſt attracted her obſervation.

Mr. Glanville, and the reſt of the company with her, were in ſome confuſion at the univerſal exclamation, which they imagined was occaſioned by the ſingularity of her habit; though they could not conceive why they gave her that title. Had they known the adventure of the mantua-maker, it would doubtleſs have eaſily occurred to them; for the woman had no ſooner left Arabella, than ſhe related the conference ſhe had with a lady newly arrived, who had required her to make a robe in the manner of the princeſs Julia's, and diſmiſſed her becauſe ſhe did not underſtand the faſhions that prevailed two thouſand years ago.

This ſtory was quickly diſperſed, and, for it's novelty, afforded a great deal of diverſion; every one longed to ſee a faſhion of ſuch antiquity, and expected the appearance of the princeſs Julia with great impatience.

It is not to be doubted but much mirth was treaſured up for her appearance; and the occaſional humouriſt had already prepared his accuſtomed jeſt, when the ſight of the devoted fair-one repelled his vivacity, and the deſigned ridicule of the whole aſſembly.

Scarce had the tumultuous whiſper eſcaped the lips of each individual, when they found themſelves awed to reſpect by that irreſiſtible charm in the perſon of Arabella, which commanded reverence and love from all who beheld her.

Her noble air, the native dignity in her looks, the inexpreſſible grace which accompanied all her motions, and the conſummate lovelineſs of her form, drew the admiration of the whole aſſembly.

A reſpectful ſilence ſucceeded; and the aſtoniſhment her beauty occaſioned, left them no room to deſcant on the abſurdity of her dreſs.

Miſs Glanville, who felt a malicious joy at the ſneers ſhe expected would be caſt on her couſin, was greatly diſappointed at the deference which ſeemed to be paid her; and, to vent ſome part of her ſpleen, took occaſion to mention her ſurprize at the behaviour of the company on their entrance, wondering what they could mean by whiſpering 'The Princeſs Julia,' to one another.

'I aſſure you,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling, 'I am not leſs ſurprized than 'you at it; and ſince they directed

'their

'their looks to me at the same time, I 'fancy they either took me for some 'princess of the name of Julia, who is 'expected here to-night, or else flatter 'me with some resemblance to the 'beautiful daughter of Augustus.'

'The comparison, Madam,' said Mr. Selvin, who took all occasions to shew his reading, 'is too injurious to 'you; for I am of opinion you as much 'excel that licentious lady in the beau-'ties of your person, as you do in the 'qualities of your mind.'

'I never heard licentiousness im-'puted to the daughter of Augustus 'Cæsar,' said Arabella; 'and the 'most her enemies can say of her, is, 'that she loved admiration, and would 'permit herself to be beloved, and to 'be told so, without shewing any signs 'of displeasure.'

'Bless me, Madam!' interrupted Mr. Selvin, 'how strangely do you mis-'take the character of Julia: though 'the daughter of an emperor, she was '(pardon the expression) the most 'abandoned prostitute in Rome; many 'of her intrigues are recorded in his-'tory; but, to mention only one, was 'not her infamous commerce with Ovid 'the cause of his banishment?'

CHAP. VIII.

SOME REFLECTIONS VERY FIT, AND OTHERS VERY UNFIT, FOR AN ASSEMBLY-ROOM.

'YOU speak in strange terms,' replied Arabella, blushing, 'of 'a princess, who, if she was not the 'most reserved and severe person in the 'world, was yet, nevertheless, abso-'lutely chaste.

'I know there were people who re-'presented her partiality for Ovid in a 'very unfavourable light; but that in-'genious poet, when he related his 'history to the great Agrippa, told 'him in confidence all that had passed 'between him and the princess Julia, 'than which nothing could be more 'innocent, though a little indiscreet. 'For it is certain that she permitted 'him to love her, and did not condemn 'him to any rigorous punishment for 'daring to tell her so; yet, for all 'this, as I said before, though she was 'not altogether so austere as she ought 'to have been, yet she was, neverthe-'less, a most virtuous princess.'

Mr. Selvin, not daring to contradict a lady, whose extensive reading had furnished her with anecdotes unknown almost to any body else, by his silence confessed her superiority: but Mr. Glanville, who knew all these anec-dotes were drawn from romances, which he found contradicted the known facts in history, and assigned the most ridiculous causes for things of the greatest importance, could not help smiling at the facility with which Mr. Selvin gave into those idle absurdities. For notwithstanding his affectation of great reading, his superficial know-ledge of history made it extremely easy to deceive him; and as it was his cus-tom to mark in his pocket-book all the scraps of history he heard introduced into conversation, and retail them again in other company, he did not doubt but he would make a figure with the curious circumstances Arabella had furnished him with.

Arabella observing Mr. Tinsel, by his familiar bows, significant smiles, and easy salutations, was acquainted with the greatest part of the assembly, told him, that she did not doubt but he knew the adventures of many persons whom they were viewing; and that he would do her a pleasure, if he would relate some of them.

Mr. Tinsel was charmed with a re-quest which afforded him an opportu-nity of gratifying a favourite inclina-tion; and seating himself near her im-mediately, was beginning to obey her injunctions, when she gracefully in-treated him to stay a moment; and call-ing to Mr. Glanville, and his sister, who were talking to Mr. Selvin, asked them if they chused to partake of a more rational amusement than dancing, and listen to the adventures of some illus-trious persons, which Mr. Tinsel had promised to relate.

'I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, smiling, 'you will find that 'a less innocent amusement than dan-'cing.'

'Why so, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'since it is not an indiscreet curiosity 'which prompts me to a desire of 'hearing the histories Mr. Tinsel has 'promised to entertain me with; but 'rather a hope of hearing something 'which may at once improve and de-

'light me; something which may excite my admiration, engage my esteem, or influence my practice?

'It was, doubtless, with such motives as these, that we find princesses and ladies of the most illustrious rank, in Clelia and the Grand Cyrus, listening to the adventures of persons, in whom they were probably as little interested, as we are in these around us. Kings, princes, and commanders of armies, thought it was no waste of their time, in the midst of the hurry and clamour of a camp, to listen many hours to the relation of one single history, and not filled with any extraordinary events, but haply a simple recital of common occurrences: the great Cyrus, while he was busy in reducing all Asia to his yoke, heard, nevertheless, the histories of all the considerable persons in the camp, besides those of strangers, and even his enemies. If there was therefore any thing either criminal or mean in hearing the adventures of others, do you imagine so many great and illustrious persons would have given in to such an amusement?'

After this Arabella turned gravely about to Mr. Tinsel, and told him, he was at liberty to begin his recital.

The beau, a little disconcerted by the solemnity with which she requested his information, knew not how to begin with the formality that he saw was required of him; and therefore sat silent for a few moments; which Arabella supposed was to recal to his memory all the passages he proposed to relate.

His perplexity would probably have increased instead of lessening by the profound silence which she observed, had not Miss Glanville seated herself with a sprightly air on the other side of him, and directing his eyes to a tall handsome woman that had just entered, asked him pleasantly, to tell her history, if he knew it.

Mr. Tinsel, brought into his usual track by this question, answered, smiling, that the history of that lady was yet a secret, or known but to a very few; 'But my intelligence,' added he, 'is generally the earliest, and may always be depended on.'

'Perhaps,' said Arabella, 'the lady 'is one of your acquaintances, and favoured you with the recital of her 'adventures from her own mouth.'

'No, really, Madam,' answered Mr. Tinsel, surprized at the great simplicity of Arabella, for so he understood it; 'the lady, I believe, is not so communicative: and to say the truth, I should 'not chuse to hear her adventures 'from herself, since she certainly 'would suppress the most material circumstances.

'In a word,' said he, lowering his voice, 'that lady was for many years 'the mistress of a young military 'nobleman, whom she was so complaisant to follow in all his campaigns, marches, sieges, and every 'inconveniency of war: he married 'her in Gibraltar, from whence he is 'lately arrived, and introduced his 'new lady to his noble brother, by 'whom she was not unfavourably received. It is worth remarking, that 'this same haughty peer thought fit to 'resent with implacable obstinacy the 'marriage of another of his brothers, 'with the widow of a brave officer, 'of considerable rank in the army. 'It is true, she was several years 'older than the young lord, and had 'no fortune; but the duke assigned 'other reasons for his displeasure: he 'complained loudly, that his brother 'had dishonoured the nobility of his 'birth by this alliance, and continued 'his resentment till the death of the 'young hero, who gave many remarkable proofs of his courage and fortitude upon several occasions, and 'died gloriously before the walls of 'Carthagena; leaving his disconsolate 'lady a widow a second time, with the 'acquisition of a title indeed, but a 'very small addition to her fortune.

'Observe that gay, splendid lady, I 'beseech you, Madam,' pursued he, turning to Arabella; 'how affectedly 'she looks and talks, and throws her 'eyes around the room, with a haughty self-sufficiency in her aspect, and 'insolent contempt for every thing but 'herself. Her habit, her speech, her 'motions, are all French; nothing in 'England is able to please her; the people so dull, so aukwardly polite; the 'manners so gross; no delicacy, no elegance, no magnificence in their persons, houses, or diversions; every 'thing is so distasteful, there is no living in such a place. "One may "crawl about, indeed," she says, "and "make a shift to breathe in the odious "country, but one cannot be said to "live;

" live; and with all the requiſites to " render life delightful, here, one can " only ſuffer, not enjoy it."

'Would one not imagine,' purſued he, 'this fine lady was a perſon of 'very exalted rank, who has the ſanc- 'tion of birth, riches, and grandeur, 'for her extraordinary pride? and yet 'ſhe is no other than the daughter of 'an innkeeper at Spa, and had the 'exalted poſt aſſigned her of attending 'new lodgers to their apartments, ac- 'quainting them with all the conve- 'niences of the place, anſwering an 'humble queſtion or two concerning 'what company was in the town, what 'ſcandal was ſtirring, and the like.

'One of our great ſea-commanders 'going thither for his health, happened 'to lodge at this inn; and was ſo 'ſtruck with her charms, that he mar- 'ried her in a few weeks, and ſoon 'after brought her to England.

'Such was the origin of this fantaſ- 'tick lady; whoſe inſupportable pride 'and ridiculous affectation draws con- 'tempt and averſion wherever ſhe ap- 'pears.'

'Did I not tell you, Madam,' inter- rupted Mr. Glanville, 'that the amuſe- 'ment you had choſe was not ſo inno- 'cent as dancing? What a deal of 'ſcandal has Mr. Tinſel uttered in the 'compaſs of a few minutes?'

'I aſſure you,' replied Arabella, 'I know not what to make of the hiſ- 'tories he has been relating. I think 'they do not deſerve that name, and 'are rather detached pieces of ſatire 'on particular perſons, than a ſerious 'relation of facts. I confeſs my ex- 'pectations from this gentleman have 'not been anſwered.'

'I think, however, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'we may allow that 'there is a negative merit in the rela- 'tions Mr. Tinſel has made; for, if 'he has not ſhewn us any thing to ap- 'prove, he has at leaſt ſhewn us what 'to condemn.'

'The uglineſs of vice,' replied Ara- bella, 'ought only to be repreſented to 'the vicious; to whom ſatire, like a 'magnifying glaſs, may aggravate 'every defect, in order to make it's de- 'formity appear more hideous; but 'ſince it's end is only to reprove and 'amend, it ſhould never be addreſſed 'to any but thoſe who come within it's 'correction, and may be the better for 'it: a virtuous mind need not be 'ſhewn the deformity of vice, to make 'it be hated and avoided; the more 'pure and uncorrupted our ideas are, 'the leſs ſhall we be influenced by ex- 'ample. A natural propenſity to vir- 'tue or vice often determines the 'choice: it is ſufficient, therefore, to 'ſhew a good mind what it ought to 'purſue, though a bad one muſt be 'told what to avoid. In a word, one 'ought to be always incited, the other 'always reſtrained.'

'I vow, Lady Bella,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'you'd make one think one 'came here to hear a ſermon; you are 'ſo very grave, and talk upon ſuch 'high-flown ſubjects. What harm was 'there in what Mr. Tinſel was telling 'us? It would be hard indeed, if one 'might not divert one's ſelf with other 'peoples faults.'

'I am afraid, Miſs,' ſaid Arabella, 'thoſe who can divert themſelves with 'the faults of others, are not behind 'hand in affording diverſion. And 'that very inclination,' added ſhe, ſmil- ingly, 'to hear other peoples faults, 'may, by thoſe very people, be con- 'demned as one, and afford them the 'ſame kind of ill-natured pleaſure you 'are ſo deſirous of.'

'Nay, Madam,' returned Miſs Glan- ville, 'your ladyſhip was the firſt who 'introduced the diſcourſe you condemn 'ſo much. Did not you deſire Mr. 'Tinſel to tell you hiſtories about the 'company; and aſk my brother and 'me, to come and hear them?'

'It is true,' replied Arabella, 'that 'I did deſire you to partake with me 'of a pleaſing and rational amuſement, 'for ſuch I imagined Mr. Tinſel's 'hiſtories might afford; far from a 'detail of vices, follies, and irregu- 'larities, I expected to have heard the 'adventures of ſome illuſtrious per- 'ſonages related; between whoſe ac- 'tions, and thoſe of the heroes and he- 'roines of antiquity, I might have 'found ſome reſemblance.

'For inſtance, I hoped to have 'heard imitated the ſublime courage 'of a Clelia; who, to ſave her honour 'from the attempts of the impious 'Tarquin, leapt into the river Tyber, 'and ſwam to the other ſide; or the 'noble reſolution of the incompatable 'Candace, who, to eſcape out of the 'hands of her raviſher, the pirate Ze-

'nadorus, ſet fire to his veſſel with her 'own hands, and committed herſelf 'to the mercy of the waves: or, the 'conſtancy and affection of a Man-'dana, who, for the ſake of a Cyrus, 'refuſed the richeſt crowns in the 'world, and braved the terrors of 'death to preſerve herſelf for him.

'As for the men, I hoped to have 'heard of ſome who might have almoſt 'equalled the great Oroondates, the 'invincible Artaban, the valiant Juba, 'the renowned Alcamenes, and many 'thouſand heroes of antiquity; whoſe 'glorious exploits in war, and un-'ſhaken conſtancy in love, have given 'them immortal fame.'

While Arabella was uttering this long ſpeech, with great emotion, Miſs Glanville, with a ſly look at the beau, gave him to underſtand, that was her couſin's foible.

Mr. Tinſel, however, not able to comprehend the meaning of what ſhe ſaid, liſtened to her with many ſigns of perplexity and wonder.

Mr. Selvin in ſecret repined at her prodigious knowledge of hiſtory; and Mr. Glanville, with his eyes fixed on the ground, bit his lips almoſt through with madneſs.

In the mean time, ſeveral among the company, deſirous of hearing what the ſtrange lady was ſaying ſo loud, and with ſo much eagerneſs and emotion, gathered round them; which Mr. Glanville obſerving, and fearing Arabella would expoſe herſelf ſtill farther, whiſpered his ſiſter to get her away, if poſſible.

Miſs Glanville, though very unwilling, obeyed his injunctions; and complaining of a ſudden head-ache, Arabella immediately propoſed retiring, which was joyfully complied with by Mr. Glanville, who with the other gentlemen attended them home.

CHAP. IX.

BEING A CHAPTER OF THE SATIRICAL KIND.

AT their return, Sir Charles told his niece, that ſhe had now had a ſpecimen of the world, and ſome of the faſhionable amuſements; and aſked her, how ſhe had been entertained.

'Why, truly, Sir,' replied ſhe, ſmiling, 'I have brought away no 'great reliſh for a renewal of the 'amuſement I have partaken of to-'night. If the world, in which you 'ſeem to think I am but new initiated, 'affords only theſe kinds of pleaſures, 'I ſhall very ſoon regret the ſolitude 'and books I have quitted.'

'Why, pray?' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'what kind of amuſements did your 'ladyſhip expect to find in the world? 'And what was there diſagreeable in 'your entertainment to-night? I am 'ſure there is no place in England, 'except London, where there is ſo 'much good company to be met with 'as here. The aſſembly was very nu-'merous and brilliant, and one can 'be at no loſs for amuſements: the 'pump-room in the morning, the pa-'rade, and the rooms, in the evening, 'with little occaſional parties of plea-'ſure, will find one ſufficient employ-'ment, and leave none of one's time 'to lie uſeleſs upon one's hand.'

'I am of opinion,' replied Arabella, 'that one's time is far from being 'well employed in the manner you 'portion it out: and people who ſpend 'theirs in ſuch trifling amuſements, 'muſt certainly live to very little pur-'poſe.

'What room, I pray you, does a 'lady give for high and noble adven-'tures, who conſumes her days in 'dreſſing, dancing, liſtening to ſongs, 'and ranging the walks with people as 'thoughtleſs as herſelf? How mean 'and contemptible a figure muſt a life 'ſpent in ſuch idle amuſements make 'in hiſtory? Or rather, are not ſuch 'perſons always buried in oblivion; 'and can any pen be found who would 'condeſcend to record ſuch inconſide-'rable actions?

'Nor can I perſuade myſelf,' added ſhe, 'that any of thoſe men whom I 'ſaw at the aſſembly, with figures ſo 'feminine, voices ſo ſoft, ſuch trip-'ping ſteps, and unmeaning geſtures, 'have ever ſignalized either their cou-'rage or conſtancy; but might be 'overcome by their enemy in battle, 'or be falſe to their miſtreſs in love.'

'Lau! couſin,' replied Miſs Glan-ville, 'you are always talking of bat-'tles and fighting. Do you expect 'that perſons of quality, and fine gen-'tlemen, will go to the wars? What 'buſineſs have they to fight? That 'belongs to the officers.'

'Then

'Then every fine gentleman is an 'officer,' ſaid Arabella; 'and ſome 'other title ought to be found out for 'men who do nothing but dance and 'dreſs.'

'I could never have imagined,' interrupted Mr. Tinſel, ſurveying Arabella, 'that a lady ſo elegant and gay 'in her own appearance, ſhould have 'an averſion to pleaſure and magnificence.'

'I aſſure you, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'I have an averſion to neither: on the 'contrary, I am a great admirer of 'both. But my ideas of amuſements 'and grandeur are probably different 'from yours.

'I will allow the ladies to be ſolicitous about their habits, and dreſs 'with all the care and elegance they 'are capable of; but ſuch trifles are 'below the conſideration of a man, 'who ought not to owe the dignity of 'his appearance to the embroidery on 'his coat, but to his high and noble 'air, the grandeur of his courage, 'the elevation of his ſentiments, and 'the many heroick actions he has performed.

'Such a man will dreſs his perſon 'with a graceful ſimplicity, and laviſh all his gold and embroidery upon 'his armour, to render him conſpicuous in the day of battle. The 'plumes in his helmet will look more 'graceful in the field, than the feather in his hat at a ball; and jewels 'blaze with more propriety on his 'ſhield and cuiraſs in battle, than 'glittering on his finger in a dance.

'Do not imagine, however,' purſued ſhe, 'that I abſolutely condemn 'dancing, and think it a diverſion 'wholly unworthy of a hero.

'Hiſtory has recorded ſome very famous balls, at which the moſt illuſtrious perſons in the world have 'appeared.

'Cyrus the Great, we are informed, 'opened a ball with the divine Mandana at Sardis. The renowned King 'of Scythia danced with the Princeſs 'Cleopatra at Alexandria. The brave 'Cleomedon with the fair Candace at 'Ethiopia: but theſe diverſions were 'taken but ſeldom, and conſidered indeed as an amuſement, not as a part 'of the buſineſs of life.

'How would ſo many glorious battles have been fought, cities taken, 'ladies reſcued, and other great and 'noble adventures been atchieved, if 'the men, ſunk in ſloth and effeminacy, 'had continually followed the ſound 'of a fiddle, ſauntered in publick 'walks, or tattled over a tea-table?'

'I vow, couſin,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'you are infinitely more ſevere 'in your cenſures than Mr. Tinſel was 'at the aſſembly. You had little reaſon, methinks, to be angry with him.'

'All I have ſaid,' replied Arabella, 'was the natural inference from your 'own account of the manner in which 'people live here. When actions 'are a cenſure upon themſelves, the 'reciter will always be conſidered as 'a ſatiriſt.'

CHAP. X.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE JUSTIFIES HER OWN NOTIONS BY SOME VERY ILLUSTRIOUS EXAMPLES.

MR. Selvin and Mr. Tinſel, who had liſtened attentively to this diſcourſe of Arabella, took leave as ſoon as it was ended, and went away with very different opinions of her.

Mr. Tinſel declaring ſhe was a fool, and had no knowledge of the world; and Mr. Selvin convinced ſhe was a wit, and very learned in antiquity.

'Certainly,' ſaid Mr. Selvin, in ſupport of his opinion, 'the lady has 'great judgment; has been capable of 'prodigious application, as is apparent 'by her extenſive reading: then her 'memory is quite miraculous. I proteſt, 'I am quite charmed with her; I never 'met with ſuch a woman in all my life.'

'Her couſin, in my opinion,' replied Mr. Tinſel, 'is infinitely be'yond her in every merit, but beauty. 'How ſprightly and free her converſation? What a thorough knowledge 'of the world? So true a taſte for polite amuſements, and a fund of ſpirits that ſets vapours and ſpleen at 'defiance.'

This ſpeech bringing on a compariſon between the ladies, the champions for each grew ſo warm in the diſpute, that they had like to have quarrelled. However, by the interpoſition of ſome other gentlemen who were with them, they parted tolerable friends that night, and renewed their viſits to Sir Charles in the morning.

They

They found only Miſs Glanville with her father and brother. Arabella generally ſpent the mornings in her own chamber, where reading and the labours of the toilet employed her time till dinner: though it muſt be confeſſed, to her honour, that the latter engroſſed but a very ſmall part of it.

Miſs Glanville, with whom the beau had a long converſation at one of the windows, in which he recounted his diſpute with Mr. Selvin, and the danger he ran of being pinked in a duel, (that was his phraſe) for her ſake, at laſt propoſed a walk; to which ſhe conſented, and engaged to prevail upon Arabella to accompany them.

That lady at firſt poſitively refuſed, alledging in excuſe, that ſhe was ſo extremely intereſted in the fate of the princeſs Meliſintha, whoſe ſtory ſhe was reading, that ſhe could not ſtir till ſhe had finiſhed it.

'That poor princeſs,' continued ſhe, 'is at preſent in a moſt terrible ſituation. She has juſt ſet fire to the palace, in order to avoid the embraces of a king who forced her to marry him. I am in pain to know how ſhe eſcapes the flames.'

'Pſhaw,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'let her periſh there, if ſhe will: don't let her hinder our walk.'

'Who is it you doom with ſo much cruelty to periſh?' ſaid Arabella, cloſing the book, and looking ſtedfaſtly on her couſin. 'Is it the beautiful Meliſintha? That princeſs, whoſe fortitude and patience have juſtly rendered her the admiration of the whole world? That princeſs, deſcended from a race of heroes, whoſe heroick virtues all glowed in her own beauteous breaſt? That princeſs, who, when taken captive with the king her father, bore her impriſonment and chains with a marvellous conſtancy; and who, when ſhe had enſlaved her conqueror, and given fetters to the prince who held her father and herſelf in bonds, nobly refuſed the diadem he profered her, and devoted herſelf to deſtruction, in order to puniſh the enemy of her houſe? I am not able to relate the reſt of her hiſtory, ſeeing I have read no farther myſelf; but if you will be pleaſed to ſit down and liſten to me while I read what remains, I am perſuaded you will find new cauſe to love and admire this amiable princeſs.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'I have heard enough; and I could have been very well ſatisfied not to have heard ſo much. I think we waſte a great deal of time talking about people we know nothing of. The morning will be quite loſt, if we don't make haſte. Come,' added ſhe, 'you muſt go; you have a new lover below, who waits to go with us; he'll die if I don't bring you.'

'A new lover!' returned Arabella, ſurprized.

'Aye, aye,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'the learned Mr. Selvin; I aſſure you, he had almoſt quarrelled with Mr. Tinſel laſt night about your ladyſhip.'

Arabella, at this intelligence, caſting down her eyes, diſcovered many ſigns of anger and confuſion; and after a ſilence of ſome moments, during which Miſs Glanville had been employed in adjuſting her dreſs at the glaſs, addreſſing herſelf to her couſin with an accent ſomewhat leſs ſweet than before—

'Had any other than yourſelf, Miſs,' ſaid ſhe, 'acquainted me with the preſumption of that unfortunate perſon, I ſhould haply have diſcovered my reſentment in other terms: but, as it is, muſt inform you, that I take it extremely ill you ſhould be acceſſary to giving me this offence.'

'Hey-day!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, turning about haſtily, 'how have I offended your ladyſhip, pray?'

'I am willing to hope, couſin,' replied Arabella, 'that it was only to divert yourſelf with the trouble and confuſion in which you ſee me, that you have indiſcreetly told things which ought to have been buried in ſilence.'

'And what is all this mighty trouble and confuſion about, then, Madam?' ſaid Miſs Glanville, ſmiling. 'Is it becauſe I told you Mr. Selvin was a lover of your ladyſhip?'

'Certainly,' ſaid Arabella, 'ſuch an information is ſufficient to give one a great deal of perplexity. Is it ſuch a little matter, think you, to be told that a man has the preſumption to love one?'

'A mere trifle,' replied Miſs Glanville,

ville, laughing; 'a hundred lovers 'are not worth a moment's thought, 'when one's ſure of them; for then 'the trouble is all over: and as for 'this unfortunate perſon, as your la-'dyſhip called him, let him die at his 'leiſure, while we go to the parade.'

'Your levity, couſin,' ſaid Arabella, 'forces me to ſmile, notwith-'ſtanding the cauſe I have to be in-'cenſed; however, I have charity 'enough to make me not deſire the 'death of Mr. Selvin, who may re-'pair the crime he has been guilty of 'by repentance and diſcontinuation.'

'Well, then,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'you are reſolved to go to the parade: 'ſhall I reach you your odd kind of 'capuchin?'

'How,' ſaid Arabella, 'can I with 'any propriety ſee a man who has 'diſcovered himſelf to have a paſſion 'for me? Will he not conſtrue ſuch a 'favour into a permiſſion for him to 'hope?'

'Oh, no!' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'he does not imagine I have told 'your ladyſhip he loves you; for in-'deed he don't know that I am ac-'quainted with his paſſion.'

'Then he is leſs culpable than I 'thought him,' replied Arabella; 'and 'if you think I am in no danger of 'hearing a confeſſion of his fault from 'his own mouth, I'll comply with 'your requeſt, and go with you to 'the parade. But,' added ſhe, 'I 'muſt firſt engage you to promiſe not 'to leave me alone a moment, leſt 'he ſhould take advantage of ſuch an 'opportunity, to give ſome hint of his 'paſſion, that would force me to treat 'him very rigorouſly.'

Miſs Glanville anſwered, laughing, that ſhe would be ſure to mind her directions. 'However,' ſaid ſhe, 'your 'ladyſhip need not be apprehenſive he 'will ſay any fine things to you; for 'I knew a young lady he was formerly 'in love with, and the odious creature 'viſited her a twelve-month before he 'found courage enough to tell her ſhe 'was handſome.'

'Doubtleſs,' replied Arabella, 'he 'was much to be commended for his 'reſpect. A lover ſhould never have 'the preſumption to declare his paſ-'ſion to his miſtreſs, unleſs in certain 'circumſtances, which may at the 'ſame time in part diſarm her anger. 'For inſtance, he muſt ſtruggle with 'the violence of his paſſion, till it has 'caſt him into a fever. His phyſicians 'muſt give him over, pronouncing his 'diſtemper incurable, ſince the cauſe 'of it being in his mind, all their art 'is incapable of removing it. Thus 'he muſt ſuffer, rejoicing at the ap-'proach of death, which will free him 'from all his torments, without vio-'lating the reſpect he owes to the di-'vine object of his flame. At length, 'when he has but a few hours to live, 'his miſtreſs, with many ſigns of com-'paſſion, conjures him to tell her the 'cauſe of his deſpair. The lover, con-'ſcious of his crime, evades all her 'enquiries; but the lady laying at laſt 'a peremptory command upon him to 'diſcloſe the ſecret, he dares not diſ-'obey her, and acknowledges his paſ-'ſion with the utmoſt contrition for 'having offended her; bidding her 'take the ſmall remainder of his life 'to expiate his crime; and finiſhes his 'diſcourſe by falling into a ſwoon.

'The lady is touched at his con-'dition, commands him to live, and, 'if neceſſary, permits him to hope.

'This is the moſt common way in 'which ſuch declarations are, and 'ought to be, brought about. How-'ever, there are others, which are as 'well calculated for ſparing a lady's 'confuſion, and deprecating her wrath.

'The lover, for example, like the 'prince of the Maſſagetes, after hav-'ing buried his paſſion in ſilence for 'many years, may chance to be walk-'ing with his confidant in a retired 'place; to whom, with a deluge of 'tears, he relates the exceſs of his 'paſſion and deſpair. And while he 'is thus unboſoming his griefs, not 'in the leaſt ſuſpecting he is over-'heard, his princeſs, who had been 'liſtening to him in much trouble and 'confuſion, by ſome little ruſtling ſhe 'makes, unawares diſcovers herſelf.

'The ſurprized lover throws himſelf 'at her feet, begs pardon for his raſh-'neſs, obſerves that he had never pre-'ſumed to diſcover his paſſion to her; 'and implores her leave to die before 'her, as a puniſhment for his unde-'ſigned offence.

'The method which the great Ar-'tamenes took to let the princeſs of 'Media know he adored her, was not 'leſs reſpectful. This valiant prince,

'who

'who had long loved her, being to 'fight a great battle, in which he had 'ſome ſecret preſages he ſhould fall, 'which however deceived him, wrote 'a long letter to the divine Mandana, 'wherein he diſcovered his paſſion, and 'the reſolution his reſpect had inſpired 'him with, to conſume in ſilence, and 'never preſume to diſcloſe his love 'while he lived; acquainted her, that 'he had ordered that letter not to be 'delivered to her, till it was certainly 'known that he was dead.

'Accordingly, he received ſeveral 'wounds in the fight, which brought 'him to the ground; and his body not 'being found, they concluded it was 'in the enemy's poſſeſſion.

'His faithful 'ſquire, who had re-'ceived his inſtructions before the 'battle, haſtens to the princeſs, who, 'with all the court, is mightily af-'fected at his death.

'He preſents her the letter, which 'ſhe makes no ſcruple to receive, ſince 'the writer is no more. She reads it, 'and her whole ſoul is melted with 'compaſſion; ſhe bewails his fate with 'the moſt tender and affectionate marks 'of grief.

'Her confidant aſks why ſhe is ſo 'much affected, ſince, in all probabi-'lity, ſhe would not have pardoned him 'for loving her, had he been alive?

'She acknowledges the truth of her 'obſervation, takes notice that his 'death having cancelled his crime, his 'reſpectful paſſion alone employs her 'thoughts; ſhe is reſolved to bewail, 'as innocent and worthy of compaſſion 'when dead, him whom living ſhe 'would treat as a criminal; and in-'ſinuates, that her heart had enter-'tained an affection for him.

'Her confidant treaſures up this 'hint, and endeavours to conſole her, 'but in vain, till news is brought, 'that Artamenes, who had been car-'ried for dead out of the field, and by 'a very ſurprizing adventure conceal-'ed all this time, is returned.

'The princeſs is covered with con-'fuſion; and, though glad he is alive, 'reſolves to baniſh him for his crime.

'Her confidant pleads his cauſe ſo 'well, that ſhe conſents to ſee him; 'and, ſince he can no longer conceal 'his paſſion, he confirms the confeſſion 'in his letter, humbly begging par-'don for being ſtill alive.

'The princeſs, who cannot plead 'ignorance of his paſſion, nor deny 'the ſorrow ſhe teſtified for his death, 'condeſcends to pardon him, and he 'is alſo permitted to hope. In like 'manner the great prince of Perſia——'

'Does your ladyſhip conſider how 'late it is?' interrupted Miſs Glan-ville, who had hitherto very impatient-ly liſtened to her. 'Don't let us keep 'the gentlemen waiting any longer 'for us.'

'I muſt inform you how the prince 'of Perſia declared his love for the 'incomparable Berenice,' ſaid Ara-bella.

'Another time, dear couſin,' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'methinks we have 'talked long enough upon this ſubject.'

'I am ſorry the time has ſeemed ſo 'tedious to you,' ſaid Arabella, ſmil-ing; 'and therefore I'll treſpaſs no 'longer upon your patience.' Then ordering Lucy to bring her hat and gloves, ſhe went down ſtairs, follow-ed by Miſs Glanville, who was great-ly diſappointed at her not putting on her veil.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE BEING MISTAKEN HERSELF, GIVES OCCASION FOR A GREAT MANY OTHER MISTAKES.

As ſoon as the ladies entered the room, Mr. Selvin, with more gaiety than uſual, advanced towards Arabella, who put on ſo cold and ſe-vere a countenance at his approach, that the poor man, extremely confuſed, drew back, and remained in great per-plexity, fearing he had offended her.

Mr. Tinſel, ſeeing Mr. Selvin's reception, and awed by the becoming majeſty in her perſon, notwithſtanding all his aſſurance, accoſted her with leſs confidence than was his cuſtom; but Arabella ſoftening her looks with the moſt engaging ſmiles, made an apolo-gy for detaining them ſo long from the parade, gave her hand to the beau, as being not a ſuſpected perſon, and per-mitted him to lead her out, Mr. Glan-ville, to whom ſhe always allowed the preference on thoſe occaſions, being a little indiſpoſed, and not able to at-tend her.

Mr.

Mr. Tinſel, whoſe vanity was greatly flattered by the preference Arabella gave him to his companion, proceeded, according to his uſual cuſtom, to examine her looks and behaviour with more care; conceiving ſuch a preference muſt proceed from a latent motive which was not unfavourable for him. His diſcernment on theſe occaſions being very ſurprizing, he ſoon diſcovered in the bright eyes of Arabella a ſecret approbation of his perſon, which he endeavoured to increaſe by diſplaying it with all the addreſs he was maſter of, and did not fail to talk her into an opinion of his wit, by ridiculing every body that paſſed them, and directing ſeveral ſtudied compliments to herſelf.

Miſs Glanville, who was not ſo agreeably entertained by the grave Mr. Selvin, ſaw theſe advances to a gallantry with her couſin with great diſturbance: ſhe was reſolved to interrupt it, if poſſible; and being convinced Mr. Selvin preferred Arabella's converſation to hers, ſhe plotted how to pair them together, and have the beau to herſelf.

As they walked a few paces behind her couſin and Mr. Tinſel, ſhe was in no danger of being over-heard; and taking occaſion to put Mr. Selvin in mind of Arabella's behaviour to him, when he accoſted her, ſhe aſked him if he was conſcious of having done any thing to offend her.

'I proteſt, Madam,' replied Mr. Selvin, 'I know not of any thing I 'have done to diſpleaſe her. I never 'failed, to my knowledge, in my re'ſpects towards her ladyſhip, for 'whom indeed I have a moſt profound 'veneration.'

'I know ſo much of her temper,' reſumed Miſs Glanville, 'as to be 'certain, if ſhe has taken it into her 'head to be angry with you, ſhe will 'be ten times more ſo at your indif'ference; and if you hope for her 'favour, you muſt aſk her pardon 'with the moſt earneſt ſubmiſſion ima'ginable.'

'If I knew I had offended her,' replied Mr. Selvin, 'I would very will'ingly aſk her pardon; but really, 'ſince I have not been guilty of any 'fault towards her ladyſhip, I don't 'know how to acknowledge it.'

'Well,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, coldly, 'I only took the liberty to give you 'ſome friendly advice, which you may 'follow, or not, as you pleaſe. I 'know my couſin is angry at ſome'thing, and I wiſh you were friends 'again, that's all.'

'I am mightily obliged to you, Ma'dam,' ſaid Mr. Selvin; 'and ſince 'you aſſure me her ladyſhip is angry, 'I'll aſk her pardon, though, really, 'as I ſaid before, I don't know for 'what.'

'Well,' interrupted Miſs Glanville, 'we'll join them at the end of the Pa'rade; and to give you an opportunity 'of ſpeaking to my couſin, I'll engage 'Mr. Tinſel myſelf.'

Mr. Selvin, who thought himſelf greatly obliged to Miſs Glanville for her good intentions, though in reality ſhe had a view of expoſing of her couſin, as well as an inclination to engage Mr. Tinſel, took courage, as they turned, to get on the other ſide of Arabella, whom he had not dared before to approach; while Miſs Glanville, addreſſing a whiſper of no great importance to her couſin, parted her from the beau, and ſlackening her pace a little, fell into a particular diſcourſe with him, which Arabella being too polite to interrupt, remained in a very perplexing ſituation, dreading every moment that Mr. Selvin would explain himſelf; alarmed at his ſilence, yet reſolved to interrupt him if he began to ſpeak, and afraid of beginning a converſation firſt, leſt he ſhould conſtrue it to his advantage.

Mr. Selvin being naturally timid in the company of ladies, the circumſtance of diſgrace which he was in with Arabella, her ſilence and reſerve ſo added to his accuſtomed diffidence, that though he endeavoured ſeveral times to ſpeak, he was not able to bring out any thing but a preluding hem; which he obſerved, to his extreme confuſion, ſeemed always to increaſe Arabella's conſtraint.

Indeed, that lady, upon any ſuſpicion that he was going to break his myſterious ſilence, always contracted her brow into a frown, caſt down her eyes with an air of perplexity, endeavoured to hide her bluſhes with her fan; and to ſhew her inattention, directed her looks to the contrary ſide.

The lady and gentleman being in equal confuſion, no advances were made on either ſide towards a converſation;

and they had reached almoſt the end of the Parade in an uninterrupted ſilence, when Mr. Selvin, fearing he ſhould never again have ſo good an opportunity of making his peace, collected all his reſolution, and with an accent trembling under the importance of the ſpeech he was going to make, began—

'Madam, ſince I have had the honour 'of walking with your ladyſhip, I 'have obſerved ſo many ſigns of con- 'ſtraint in your manner, that I hardly 'dare intreat you to grant me a mo- 'ment's hearing while I——'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'be- 'fore you go any farther, I muſt in- 'form you, that what you are going 'to ſay will mortally offend me. Take 'heed then how you commit an indiſ- 'cretion which will force me to treat 'you very rigorouſly.'

'If your ladyſhip will not allow me 'to ſpeak in my own juſtification,' ſaid Mr. Selvin, 'yet I hope you will not re- 'fuſe to tell me my offence, ſince I——'

'You are very confident, indeed,' interrupted Arabella again, 'to ſup- 'poſe I will repeat what would be in- 'finitely grievous for me to hear. 'Againſt my will,' purſued ſhe, 'I 'muſt give you the ſatisfaction to 'know, that I am not ignorant of your 'crime, but I alſo aſſure you that I 'am highly incenſed; and that not 'only with the thoughts you have dared 'to entertain of me, but likewiſe with 'your preſumption in going about to 'diſcloſe them.'

Mr. Selvin, whom the ſeeming contradictions in this ſpeech aſtoniſhed, yet imagined in general it hinted at the diſpute between him and Mr. Tinſel; and ſuppoſing the ſtory had been told to his diſadvantage, which was the cauſe of her anger, replied in great emotion at the injuſtice done him—

'Since ſomebody has been ſo of- 'ficious to acquaint your ladyſhip 'with an affair which ought to have 'been kept from your knowledge; it 'is a pity they did not inform you, 'that Mr. Tinſel was the perſon that 'had the leaſt reſpect for your lady- 'ſhip, and is more worthy of your re- 'ſentment.'

'If Mr. Tinſel,' replied Arabella, 'is guilty of an offence like yours, 'yet ſince he has concealed it better, 'he is leſs culpable than you; and you 'have done that for him, which haply 'he would never have had courage 'enough to do for himſelf as long as 'he lived.'

Poor Selvin, quite confounded at theſe intricate words, would have begged her to explain herſelf, had ſhe not ſilenced him with a dreadful frown; and making a ſtop till Miſs Glanville and Mr. Tinſel came up to them, ſhe told her couſin with a peeviſh accent, that ſhe had performed her promiſe very ill; and whiſpered her, that ſhe was to blame for all the mortifications ſhe had ſuffered.

Mr. Tinſel, ſuppoſing the alteration in Arabella's humour proceeded from being ſo long deprived of his company, endeavoured to make her amends by a profuſion of compliments; which ſhe received with ſuch an air of diſpleaſure, that the beau, vexed at the ill ſucceſs of his gallantry, told her, he was afraid Mr. Selvin's gravity had infected her ladyſhip.

'Say rather,' replied Arabella, 'that his indiſcretion has offended me.'

Mr. Tinſel, charmed with this beginning confidence, which confirmed his hopes of having made ſome impreſſion on her heart, conjured her very earneſtly to tell him how Mr. Selvin had offended her.

'It is ſufficient,' reſumed ſhe, 'that 'I tell you he has offended me, with- 'out declaring the nature of his crime, 'ſince, doubtleſs, it has not eſcaped 'your obſervation, which, if I may 'believe him, is not wholly diſinte- 'reſted. To confeſs yet more, it is 'true that he hath told me ſomething 'concerning you, which—'

'Let me periſh, Madam,' interrupted the beau, 'if one ſyllable he has 'ſaid be true.'

'How,' ſaid Arabella, a little diſconcerted, 'will you always perſiſt in 'a denial, then?'

'Deny it, Madam,' returned Mr. Tinſel, 'I'll deny what he has ſaid 'with my laſt breath; it is all a ſcan- 'dalous forgery; no man living is leſs 'likely to think of your ladyſhip in 'that manner. If you knew my 'thoughts, Madam, you would be 'convinced nothing is more impoſſible, 'and——'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, extremely mortified, 'methinks you are 'very eager in your juſtification. I 'promiſe you, I do not think you

'guilty

'guilty of the offence he charged you 'with; if I did, you would haply ex- 'perience my reſentment in ſuch a man- 'ner as would make you repent of 'your preſumption.'

Arabella, in finiſhing theſe words, interrupted Miſs Glanville's diſcourſe with Mr. Selvin, to tell her ſhe deſired to return home; to which that young lady, who had not been at all pleaſed with the morning's walk, conſented.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE RECONCILES HERSELF TO A MORTIFYING INCIDENT, BY RECOLLECTING AN ADVENTURE IN A ROMANCE, SIMILAR TO HER OWN.

AS ſoon as the ladies were come to their lodgings, Arabella went up to her own apartment to meditate upon what had paſſed, and Miſs Glanville retired to dreſs for dinner; while the two gentlemen, who thought they had great reaſon to be diſſatisfied with each other, on account of Lady Bella's behaviour, went to a coffee-houſe, in order to come to ſome explanation about it.

'Well, Sir,' ſaid the beau, with a ſarcaſtick air, 'I am greatly obliged to 'you for the endeavours you have uſed 'to ruin me in Lady Bella's opinion. 'Rat me, if it is not the greateſt miſ- 'fortune in the world to give occaſion 'for envy.'

'Envy, Sir!' interrupted Mr. Selvin; 'I proteſt I do really admire your 'great ſkill in ſtratagems, but I do not 'envy you the poſſeſſion of it. You 'have, indeed, very wittily contrived 'to put your own ſentiments of that 'lady, which you delivered ſo freely 'the other night, into my mouth. It 'was a maſter-piece of cunning, in- 'deed; and, as I ſaid before, I admire 'your ſkill prodigiouſly.'

'I don't know what you mean,' replied Tinſel; 'you talk in riddles.— 'Did you not yourſelf acquaint Lady 'Bella with the preference I gave Miſs 'Glanville to her? What would you 'propoſe by ſuch a piece of treachery? 'You have ruined all my hopes by it: 'the lady reſents it exceſſively; and it 'is no wonder, 'faith; it muſt certainly 'mortify her. Upon my ſoul, I can 'never forgive thee for ſo *mal a propos* 'a diſcovery.'

'Forgive me, Sir!' replied Selvin, in a rage, 'I don't want your forgive- 'neſs. I have done nothing unbecom- 'ing a man of honour. The lady was 'ſo prejudiced by your inſinuations, 'that ſhe would not give me leave to 'ſpeak; otherwiſe I would have fully 'informed her of her miſtake, that ſhe 'might have known how much ſhe 'was obliged to you.'

'So ſhe would not hear thee?' interrupted Tinſel, laughing; 'dear ſoul! 'how very kind was that!—'Faith, I 'don't know how it is, but I am very 'lucky without deſerving to be ſo.— 'Thou art a witneſs for me, Frank, I 'took no great pains to gain this fine 'creature's heart; but it was damn'd 'malicious though to attempt to make 'diſcoveries. I ſee ſhe is a little pi- 'qued; but I'll ſet all to rights again 'with a *billet-doux*. I've an excellent 'hand, though I ſay it, at a *billet-doux*. 'I never knew one of mine fail in my 'life.'

'Harkee, Sir,' ſaid Selvin, whiſper- ing; 'any more attempts to ſhift your 'ſentiments upon me, and you ſhall 'hear of it. In the mean time, be 'aſſured, I'll clear myſelf, and put the 'ſaddle upon the right horſe.'

'Demme, if thou art not a queer 'fellow,' ſaid Tinſel, endeavouring to hide his diſcompoſure at this threat under a forced laugh.

Selvin, without making any reply, retired to write to Arabella; which Tinſel ſuſpecting, reſolved to be before- hand with him; and, without leaving the coffee-houſe, called for paper, and wrote a billet to her, which he diſ- patched away immediately.

The meſſenger had juſt got admit- tance to Lucy, when another arrived from Selvin.

They both preſented their letters; but Lucy refuſed them, ſaying, her lady would turn her away if ſhe re- ceived ſuch ſort of letters.

'Such ſort of letters!' returned Tin- ſel's man. 'Why, do you know what 'they contain, then?'

'To be ſure I do,' replied Lucy: 'they are love-letters; and my lady 'has charged me never to receive any 'more.'

'Well,' replied Selvin's ſervant, 'you may take my letter; for my

'maſter deſired me to tell you it was 'about buſineſs of conſequence, which 'your lady muſt be acquainted with.'

'Since you aſſure me it is not a love-'letter, I'll take it,' ſaid Lucy.

'And pray take mine too,' ſaid Tinſel's Mercury; 'for, I aſſure you, it is 'not a love-letter neither; it is only a '*billet-doux*.'

'Are you ſure of that?' replied Lucy: 'becauſe I may venture to take 'it, I fancy, if it is what you ſay.'

'I'll ſwear it,' ſaid the man, delivering it to her.—'Well,' ſaid ſhe, receiving it, 'I'll take them both up.—'But what did you call this?' purſued ſhe. 'I muſt not forget it, or elſe my 'lady will think it a love-letter.'

'A *billet-doux*,' ſaid the man.

Lucy, for fear ſhe ſhould forget it, repeated the words *billet-doux* ſeveral times as ſhe went up ſtairs; but entering her lady's apartment, ſhe perceiving the letters in her hand, aſked her ſo ſternly how ſhe durſt preſume to bring them into her preſence, that the poor girl in her fright forgot the leſſon ſhe had been conning; and endeavouring to recal it into her memory, took no notice of her lady's queſtion, which ſhe repeated ſeveral times, but to no purpoſe.

Arabella, ſurprized at her inattention, reiterated her commands in a tone ſomewhat louder than uſual; aſking her, at the ſame time, why ſhe did not obey her immediately.

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'your ladyſhip would not order me to 'take back the letters, if you knew 'what they were: they are not love-'letters; I was reſolved to be ſure of 'that before I took them.—This, Ma-'dam, is a letter about buſineſs of 'conſequence; and the other——Oh 'dear! I can't think what the man 'called it: but it is not a love-letter, 'indeed, Madam.'

'You are a ſimple wench,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling. 'You may depend upon 'it, all letters directed to me muſt con-'tain matters of love and gallantry; 'and thoſe I am not permitted to re-'ceive. Take them away then imme-'diately.—But ſtay,' purſued ſhe, ſeeing ſhe was about to obey her, 'one 'of them, you ſay, was delivered to 'you as a letter of conſequence; per-'haps it is ſo: indeed it may contain 'an advertiſement of ſome deſign to 'carry me away. How do I know but 'Mr. Selvin, incited by his love and 'deſpair, may intend to make ſuch an 'attempt?—Give me that letter, Lucy; 'I am reſolved to open it. As for the 'other——yet, who knows but the 'other may alſo bring me warning of 'the ſame danger from another quar-'ter? The pains Mr. Tinſel took to 'conceal his paſſion, nay, almoſt, as I 'think, to deny it, amounts to a proof 'that he is meditating ſome way to 'make ſure of me. 'Tis certainly ſo. 'Give me that letter, Lucy: I ſhould 'be acceſſary to their intended violence, 'if I neglected this timely diſcovery.

'Well,' cried ſhe, taking one of the letters, 'this is exactly like what hap-'pened to the beautiful princeſs of 'Cappadocia, who, like me, in one 'and the ſame day, received advice that 'two of her lovers intended to carry 'her off.'

As ſhe pronounced theſe words, Miſs Glanville entered the room, to whom Arabella immediately recounted the adventure of the letters; telling her ſhe did not doubt but they contained a diſcovery of ſome conſpiracy to carry her away.

'And whom does your ladyſhip ſu-'ſpect of ſuch a ſtrange deſign, pray?' ſaid Miſs Glanville, ſmiling.

'At preſent,' replied Arabella, 'the 'two cavaliers who walked with us 'to-day, are the perſons who ſeem the 'moſt likely to attempt that violence.'

'I dare anſwer for Mr. Tinſel,' replied Miſs Glanville; 'he thinks of 'no ſuch thing.'

'Well,' ſaid Arabella, 'to convince 'you of your miſtake, I muſt inform 'you that Mr. Selvin, having the pre-'ſumption to begin a declaration of 'love to me on the Parade this morn-'ing, I reproved him ſeverely for his 'want of reſpect, and threatened him 'with my diſpleaſure. In the rage of 'his jealouſy, at ſeeing me treat Mr. 'Tinſel well, he diſcovered to me that 'he alſo was as criminal as himſelf, 'in order to oblige me to a ſeverer 'uſage of him.'

'So he told you Mr. Tinſel was in 'love with you?' interrupted Miſs Glanville.

'He told it me in other words,' replied Arabella; 'for he ſaid Mr. Tin-'ſel was guilty of that offence which 'I reſented ſo ſeverely to him.'

Miſs

Miſs Glanville beginning to comprehend the myſtery, with great difficulty forbore laughing at her couſin's miſtake; for ſhe well knew the offence Mr. Selvin hinted at, and deſirous of knowing what thoſe letters contained, ſhe begged her to delay opening them no longer.

Arabella, pleaſed at her ſolicitude, opened one of the letters; but glancing her eye to the bottom, and ſeeing the name of Selvin, ſhe threw it haſtily upon the table, and averting her eyes, 'What a mortification have I avoided!' ſaid ſhe; 'that letter is from Selvin, 'and, queſtionleſs, contains an avowal 'of his crime.'

'Nay, you muſt read it,' cried Miſs Glanville, taking it up: 'ſince you 'have opened it, it is the ſame thing. 'You can never perſuade him but you 'have ſeen it. However, to ſpare your 'nicety, I'll read it to you.' Which accordingly ſhe did, and found it as follows—

'MADAM,

'I Know not what inſinuations have 'been made uſe of to perſuade 'you I was guilty of the offence which, 'with juſtice, occaſioned your reſent-'ment this morning; but I aſſure you, 'nothing was ever more falſe. My 'thoughts of your ladyſhip are very 'different, and full of the profoundeſt 'reſpect and veneration. I have rea-'ſon to ſuſpect Mr. Tinſel is the per-'ſon who has thus endeavoured to pre-'judice me with your ladyſhip; there-'fore I am excuſable if I tell you, 'that thoſe very ſentiments, too diſre-'ſpectful to be named, which he would 'perſuade you are mine, he diſcovered 'himſelf. He then, Madam, is the 'perſon guilty of that offence he ſo 'falſely lays to the charge of him, who 'is, with the utmoſt reſpect and eſteem, 'Madam, your ladyſhip's moſt obe-'dient, and moſt humble ſervant,

'F. SELVIN.'

'How's this?' cried Miſs Glanville. 'Why, Madam, you are certainly mi-'taken. You ſee Mr. Selvin utterly 'denies the crime of loving you. He 'has ſuffered very innocently in your 'opinion. Indeed, your ladyſhip was 'too haſty in condemning him.'

'If what he ſays be true,' replied Arabella, who had been in extreme confuſion while a letter ſo different from what ſhe expected was reading, 'I have 'indeed unjuſtly condemned him. Ne-'vertheleſs, I am ſtill inclined to be-'lieve this is all artifice; and that he 'is really guilty of entertaining a paſ-'ſion for me.'

'But why ſhould he take ſo much 'pains to deny it, Madam?' ſaid Miſs Glanville. 'Methinks that looks very 'odd.'

'Not at all,' interrupted Arabella, whoſe ſpirits were raiſed by recollecting an adventure in her romance ſimilar to this; 'Mr. Selvin has fallen upon the 'ſame ſtratagem with Seramenes, who, 'being in love with the beautiful Cleo-'buline, princeſs of Corinth, took all 'imaginable pains to conceal his paſ-'ſion, in order to be near that fair 'princeſs, who would have baniſhed 'him from her preſence, had ſhe known 'he was in love with her. Nay, he 'went ſo far in his diſſimulation, as 'to pretend love to one of the ladies 'of her court, that his paſſion for the 'princeſs might be the leſs taken no-'tice of. In theſe caſes, therefore, the 'more reſolutely a man denies his 'paſſion, the more pure and violent 'it is.'

'Then Mr. Selvin's paſſion is cer-'tainly very violent,' replied Miſs Glanville, 'for he denies it very reſo-'lutely; and I believe none but your 'ladyſhip would have diſcovered his 'artifice. But ſhall we not open the 'other letter? I have a ſtrong notion 'it comes from Tinſel.'

'For that very reaſon I would not 'be acquainted with the contents,' replied Arabella. 'You ſee Mr. Selvin 'accuſes him of being guilty of that 'offence which he denies. I ſhall 'doubtleſs meet with a confirmation 'of his love in that letter.—Do not, I 'beſeech you,' added ſhe, ſeeing her couſin preparing to open the letter, 'expoſe me to the pain of hearing a 'preſumptuous declaration of love.—'Nay,' purſued ſhe, riſing in great emotion, 'if you are reſolved to perſe-'cute me by reading it, I'll endeavour 'to get out of the hearing of it.'

'You ſhan't, I declare,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, laughing, and holding her; 'I'll oblige you to hear it.'

'I vow, couſin,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling, 'you uſe me juſt as the princeſs

'Cleopatra

'Cleopatra did the fair and wife Antonia. However, if by this you mean to do any kindneſs to the unfortunate perſon who wrote that billet, you are greatly miſtaken; ſince, if you oblige me to liſten to a declaration of his crime, you will lay me under a neceſſity to baniſh him. A ſentence he would have avoided, while I remained ignorant of it.'

To this Miſs Glanville made no other reply than by opening the billet, the contents of which may be found in the following chapter.

CHAP XIII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE'S EXTRAVAGANCE WILL BE THOUGHT, PERHAPS, TO BE CARRIED TO AN EXTRAVAGANT LENGTH.

'MADAM,

'I Had the honour to aſſure you this morning on the Parade, that the inſinuations Mr. Selvin made uſe of to rob me of the ſuperlative happineſs of your eſteem, were entirely falſe and groundleſs. May the beams of your bright eyes never ſhine on me more, if there is any truth in what he ſaid to prejudice me with your ladyſhip! If I am permitted to attend you to the Rooms this evening, I hope to convince you, that it was abſolutely impoſſible I could have been capable of ſuch a crime, who am, with the moſt profound reſpect, your ladyſhip's moſt devoted, &c.

'D. TINSEL.'

'Well, Madam,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, when ſhe had read this epiſtle, 'I fancy you need not pronounce a ſentence of baniſhment upon poor Mr. Tinſel; he ſeems to be quite innocent of the offence your ladyſhip ſuſpects him of.'

'Why, really,' returned Arabella, bluſhing with extreme confuſion at this ſecond diſappointment, 'I am greatly perplexed to know how I ought to act on this occaſion; I am much in the ſame ſituation with the princeſs Serena. For you muſt know, this princeſs—' Here Lucy entering, informed the ladies dinner was ſerved. '—I ſhall defer till another opportunity,' ſaid Arabella, upon this interruption, 'the relation of the princeſs Serena's adventures; which you will find,' added ſhe, in a low voice, 'bears a very great reſemblance to mine.'

Miſs Glanville replied, ſhe would hear it whenever ſhe pleaſed; and then followed Arabella to the dining-room.

The cloth was ſcarce removed, when Mr. Selvin came in. Arabella bluſhed at his appearance, and diſcovered ſo much perplexity in her behaviour, that Mr. Selvin was apprehenſive he had not yet ſufficiently juſtified himſelf; and therefore took the firſt opportunity to approach her.

'I ſhall think myſelf very unhappy, Madam,' ſaid he, bowing, 'if the letter I did myſelf the honour to write to you this morning——'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'I perceive you are going to forget the contents of that letter, and preparing again to offend me by a preſumptuous declaration of love.'

'Who I, Madam!' replied he, in great aſtoniſhment and confuſion, 'I-I-I proteſt—though I--I have a very great reſpect for your ladyſhip, yet—yet I never preſumed to—to—to—'

'You have preſumed too much,' replied Arabella; 'and I ſhould forget what I owed to my own glory, if I furniſhed you with any more occaſions of offending me.—Know then, I abſolutely forbid you to appear before me again, at leaſt, till I am convinced you have changed your ſentiments.'

Saying this ſhe roſe from her ſeat, and making a ſign to him not to follow her, which indeed he had no intention to do, ſhe quitted the room, highly ſatisfied with her own conduct upon this occaſion, which was exactly conformable to the laws of romance.

Mr. Tinſel, who had juſt alighted from his chair, having a glimpſe of her, as ſhe paſſed to her own apartment, reſolved, if poſſible, to procure a private interview; for he did not doubt but his billet had done wonders in his favour.

For that purpoſe he ventured up to her anti-chamber, where he found Lucy in waiting, whom he deſired to acquaint her lady, that he intreated a moment's ſpeech with her.

Lucy, after heſitating a moment, and looking earneſtly at him, replied, 'Sir, if

'if you'll promiſe me faithfully you 'are not in love with my lady, I'll go 'and deliver your meſſage.'

'Deuce take me,' ſaid Tinſel, 'if 'that is not a very whimſical condition 'truly——Pray, my dear, how came 'it into thy little brain, to ſuſpect I 'was in love with thy lady? but, ſup-'poſe I ſhould be in love with her, 'what then?'

'Why, then, it is likely you would 'die, that's all,' ſaid Lucy; 'without 'my lady would be ſo kind to com-'mand you to live.'

'I vow thou haſt pretty notions, 'child,' ſaid Tinſel, ſmiling: 'haſt 'thou been reading any play-book 'lately? But pray, doſt think thy 'lady would have compaſſion on me, 'if I was in love with her? Come, I 'know thou art in her confidence? 'Haſt thou ever heard her talk of me? 'Does ſhe not tell thee all her ſecrets?'

Here Arabella's bell ringing, the beau ſlipped half a guinea into her hand, which Lucy not willing to refuſe, went immediately to her lady; to whom, with a trembling accent, ſhe repeated Mr. Tinſel's requeſt.

'Imprudent girl!' cried Arabella, '(for I am loth to ſuſpect thee of diſ-'loyalty to thy miſtreſs) doſt thou 'know the nature and extent of the re-'queſt thou haſt delivered? Art thou 'ignorant that the preſumptuous man 'whom thou ſoliciteſt this favour for, 'has mortally offended me?'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, frighted out of her wits, 'I don't ſolicit for 'him. I ſcorn to do any ſuch thing. 'I would not offend your ladyſhip for 'the world; for, before I would de-'liver his meſſage to your ladyſhip, I 'made him aſſure me, that he was not 'in love with your ladyſhip.'

'That was very wiſely done, indeed,' replied Arabella, ſmiling: 'and do you 'believe he ſpoke the truth?'

'Yes, indeed, I am ſure of it,' ſaid Lucy, eagerly. 'If your ladyſhip will but 'be pleaſed to ſee him, he is only in 'the next room; I dare promiſe——'

'How!' interrupted Arabella. 'What 'have you done? Have you brought 'him into my apartment, then? I pro-'teſt this adventure is exactly like 'what befel the beautiful Statira, 'when, by a ſtratagem of the ſame kind, 'Oroondates was introduced into her 'preſence. Lucy, thou art another 'Barſina, I think; but I hope thy in-'tentions are not leſs innocent than 'hers was.'

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Lucy, almoſt weeping, 'I am very innocent. 'I am no Barſina, as your ladyſhip 'calls me.'

'I dare anſwer for thee,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling at the turn ſhe gave to her words, 'thou art no Barſina; and I 'ſhould wrong thee very much to com-'pare thee with that wiſe princeſs; for 'thou art certainly one of the moſt 'ſimple wenches in the world. But 'ſince thou haſt gone ſo far, let me 'know what the unfortunate perſon 'deſires of me; for, ſince I am neither 'more rigid, nor pretend to more vir-'tue than Statira, I may do at leaſt as 'much for him as that great queen did 'for Oroondates.'

'He deſires, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'that your ladyſhip would be pleaſed 'to let him ſpeak with you.'

'Or, in his words, I ſuppoſe,' replied Arabella, 'he humbly implored 'a moment's audience.'

'I told your ladyſhip his very words, 'indeed, Madam,' ſaid Lucy.

'I tell thee, girl, thou art miſtaken,' ſaid Arabella; 'it is impoſſible he 'ſhould ſue for ſuch a favour in terms 'like thoſe: therefore, go back, and 'let him know that I conſent to grant 'him a ſhort audience upon theſe con-'ditions.

'Firſt, Provided he does not abuſe 'my indulgence by offending me with 'any proteſtations of his paſſion.

'Secondly, That he engages to ful-'fil the injunctions I ſhall lay upon 'him, however cruel and terrible they 'may appear.

'Laſtly, That his deſpair muſt not 'prompt him to any act of deſperation 'againſt himſelf.'

Lucy having received this meſſage, quitted the room haſtily, for fear ſhe ſhould forget it.

'Well, my pretty ambaſſadreſs,' ſaid Tinſel, when he ſaw her enter the anti-chamber, 'will your lady ſee 'me?'

'No, Sir,' replied Lucy.

'No!' interrupted Tinſel, 'that's 'kind, 'faith, after waiting ſo long.'

'Pray, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, 'don't put 'me out ſo; I ſhall forget what my 'lady ordered me to tell you.'

'Oh! I aſk your pardon, child,' ſaid

ſaid Tinſel; 'come, let me hear your 'meſſage.'

'Sir,' ſaid Lucy, adopting the ſolemnity of her lady's accent, 'my la- 'dy bade me ſay, that ſhe will grant— '—No, that ſhe conſents to grant you 'a ſhort dience.'

'Audience, you would ſay, child,' ſaid Tinſel: 'but how came you to 'tell me before ſhe would not ſee 'me?'

'I vow and proteſt, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, 'you have put all my lady's words 'clean out of my head—I don't know 'what comes next.'

'Oh, no matter,' ſaid Tinſel, 'you 'have told me enough: I'll wait upon 'her directly.'

Lucy, who ſaw him making towards the door, preſſed between it and him; and having all her lady's whims in her head, ſuppoſed he was going to carry her away. Poſſeſſed with this thought, ſhe ſcreamed out, 'Help! help! for 'Heaven's ſake! my lady will be car- 'ried away!'

Arabella hearing this exclamation of her woman's, echoed her ſcreams, though with a voice infinitely more delicate; and ſeeing Tinſel, who, confounded to the laſt degree at the cries of both the lady and her woman, had got into her chamber he knew not how, ſhe gave herſelf over for loſt, and fell back in her chair in a ſwoon, or ſomething ſhe took for a ſwoon, for ſhe was perſuaded it could happen no otherwiſe, ſince all ladies in the ſame circumſtances are terrified into a fainting fit, and ſeldom recover till they are conveniently carried away; and when they awake, find themſelves many miles off in the power of their raviſher.

Arabella's other women, alarmed by her cries, came running into the room; and ſeeing Mr. Tinſel there, and their lady in a ſwoon, concluded ſome very extraordinary accident had happened.

'What is your buſineſs here?' cried they all at a time. 'Is it you that has 'frighted her ladyſhip?'

'Devil take me,' ſaid Tinſel, amazed, 'if I can tell what all this means!'

By this time Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and his ſiſter, came running aſtoniſhed up ſtairs. Arabella ſtill continued motionleſs in her chair, her eyes cloſed, and her head reclined upon Lucy, who, with her other women, was endeavouring to recover her.

Mr. Glanville eagerly ran to her aſſiſtance, while Sir Charles and his daughter as eagerly interrogated Mr. Tinſel, who ſtood motionleſs with ſurprize, concerning the cauſe of her diſorder.

Arabella then firſt diſcovering ſome ſigns of life, half opened her eyes.

'Inhuman wretch!' cried ſhe, with a faint voice, ſuppoſing herſelf in the hands of her raviſher, 'think not thy 'cruel violence ſhall procure thee what 'thy ſubmiſſions could not obtain; and 'if when thou hadſt only my indiffe- 'rence to ſurmount, thou didſt find 'it ſo difficult to overcome my reſolu- 'tion, now that, by this unjuſt attempt, 'thou haſt added averſion to that indif- 'ference, never hope for any thing 'but the moſt bitter reproaches from 'me.'

'Why, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, approaching her 'what is the matter? 'Look up, I beſeech you, nobody is 'attempting to do you any hurt; 'here's none but friends about you.'

Arabella, raiſing her head at the ſound of her uncle's voice, and caſting a confuſed look on the perſons about her—

'May I believe my ſenſes? Am I 'reſcued, and in my own chamber? 'To whoſe valour is my deliverance 'owing? Without doubt, it is to my 'couſin's: but where is he? Let me 'aſſure him of my gratitude.'

Mr. Glanville, who had retired to a window in great confuſion, as ſoon as he heard her call for him, came towards her, and in a whiſper begged her to be compoſed; that ſhe was in no danger.

'And pray, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'now you are a little recovered, be ſo 'good to inform us of the cauſe of 'your fright. What has happened to 'occaſion all this confuſion?'

'How, Sir!' ſaid Arabella, 'don't 'you know then what has happened?— 'Pray, how was I brought again into 'my chamber, and by what means 'was I reſcued?'

'I proteſt,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'I 'don't know that you have been out 'of it.'

'Alas!' replied Arabella, 'I per- 'ceive you are quite ignorant of what 'has befallen me; nor am I able to 'give you any information: all I can 'tell you is, that, alarmed by my wo- 'men's

'men's cries, and the ſight of my ra-
'viſher, who came into my chamber,
'I fainted away, and ſo facilitated his
'enterprize; ſince, doubtleſs, it was
'very eaſy for him to carry me away
'while I remained in that ſenſeleſs
'condition. How I was reſcued, or
'by whom, one of my women can
'haply inform you; ſince, it is proba-
'ble, one of them was alſo forced
'away with me—Oh, heavens!' cried
ſhe, ſeeing Tinſel, who all this while
ſtood gazing like one diſtracted; 'what
'makes that impious man in my pre-
'ſence! What am I to think of this?
'Am I really delivered, or no?'

'What can this mean?' cried Sir Charles, turning to Tinſel.—'Have
'you, Sir, had any hand in frighting
'my niece?'

'I, Sir!' ſaid Tinſel. 'Let me
'periſh if ever I was ſo confounded in
'my life! the lady's brain is diſor-
'dered, I believe.'

Mr. Glanville, who was convinced all this confuſion was cauſed by ſome of Arabella's uſual whims, dreaded leſt an explanation would the more expoſe her; and therefore told his father that it would be beſt to retire, and leave his couſin to the care of his ſiſter and her women; adding, that ſhe was not yet quite recovered, and their preſence did but diſcompoſe her.

Then addreſſing himſelf to Tinſel, told him he would wait upon him down ſtairs.

Arabella, ſeeing them going away together, and ſuppoſing they intended to diſpute the poſſeſſion of her with their ſwords, called out to them to ſtay.

Mr. Glanville, however, without minding her, preſſed Mr. Tinſel to walk down.

'Nay, pray, Sir,' ſaid the beau, 'let us go in again; ſhe may grow
'outrageous if we diſoblige her.'

'Outrageous, Sir!' ſaid Glanville; 'do you ſuppoſe my couſin is mad?'

'Upon my ſoul, Sir,' replied Tinſel, 'if ſhe is not mad, ſhe is certainly
'a little out of her ſenſes, or ſo.'—

Arabella, having reiterated her commands for her lovers to return, and finding they did not obey her, ran to her chamber-door, where they were holding a ſurly ſort of conference, eſpecially on Glanville's ſide, who was horridly out of humour.

'I perceive by your looks,' ſaid Arabella to her couſin, 'the deſign you
'are meditating; but know, that I ab-
'ſolutely forbid you, by all the power
'I have over you, not to engage in
'combat with my raviſher here.'

'Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'I
'beſeech you do not——'

'I know,' ſaid ſhe, 'you will ob-
'ject to me the examples of Arta-
'menes, Aronces, and many others,
'who were ſo generous as to promiſe
'their rivals not to refuſe them that
'ſatisfaction whenever they demanded
'it—but conſider, you have not the
'ſame obligations to Mr. Tinſel that
'Artamenes had to the king of Aſ-
'ſyria, or that Aronces had to——'

'For God's ſake, couſin,' ſaid Glanville, 'what's all this to the pur-
'poſe? Curſe on Aronces and the
'king of Aſſyria, I ſay!'

The aſtoniſhment of Arabella at this intemperate ſpeech of her couſin, kept her for a moment immoveable; when Sir Charles, who, during this diſcourſe, had been collecting all the information he could from Lucy concerning this perplexed affair, came towards Tinſel, and giving him an angry look, told him, he ſhould take it well if he forbore viſiting any of his family for the future.

'Oh! your moſt obedient ſervant,
'Sir,' ſaid Tinſel: 'you expect, I
'ſuppoſe, I ſhould be exceſſively cha-
'grined at this prohibition; but up-
'on my ſoul I am greatly obliged to
'you. Agad! I have no great mind
'to a halter: and ſince this lady is ſo
'apt to think people have a deſign to
'raviſh her, the wiſeſt thing a man
'can do, is to keep out of her way.'

'Sir,' replied Glanville, who had followed him to the door, 'I believe
'there has been ſome little miſtake in
'what has happened to-day—How-
'ever, I'll expect you'll take no un-
'becoming liberties with the character
'of Lady Bella.'

'Oh, Sir!' ſaid Tinſel, 'I give
'you my honour I ſhall always ſpeak
'of the lady with the moſt profound
'veneration. She is a moſt accom-
'pliſhed, incomprehenſible lady: and
'the devil take me, if I think there is
'her fellow in the world—And ſo, Sir,
'I am your moſt obedient——'

'A word with you before you go,' ſaid Glanville, ſtopping him. 'No

'more of theſe ſneers, as you value that 'ſmooth face of yours, or I'll deſpoil 'it of a noſe.'

'Oh! your humble ſervant,' ſaid the beau, retiring in great confuſion, with ſomething betwixt a ſmile and a grin upon his countenance, which he took care, however, Mr. Glanville ſhould not ſee; who, as ſoon as he quitted him, went again to Arabella's apartment, in order to prevail upon his father and ſiſter to leave her a little to herſelf; for he dreaded leſt ſome more inſtances of her extravagance would put it into his father's head that ſhe was really out of her ſenſes.

'Well, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, upon his entrance, 'you have, I ſuppoſe, 'given your rival his liberty. I aſſure 'you this generoſity is highly agreeable to me—And herein you imitate 'the noble Artamenes, who, upon a 'like occaſion, acted as you have done. 'For when fortune had put the raviſher 'of Mandana in his power, and he 'became the vanquiſher of his rival, 'who endeavoured by violence to poſſeſs that divine princeſs, this truly 'generous hero relinquiſhed the right 'he had of diſpoſing of his priſoner, 'and, inſtead of ſacrificing his life to 'his juſt and reaſonable vengeance, he 'gave a proof of his admirable virtue 'and clemency by diſmiſſing him in 'ſafety, as you have done.—However,' added ſhe, 'I hope you have made him 'ſwear upon your ſword that he will 'never make a ſecond attempt upon 'my liberty.—I perceive,' purſued ſhe, ſeeing Mr. Glanville continued ſilent, with his eyes bent on the ground, for indeed he was aſhamed to look up, 'that you would willingly avoid the 'praiſe due to the heroick action you 'have juſt performed—Nay, I ſuppoſe 'you are reſolved to keep it ſecret, if 'poſſible; yet I muſt tell you, that 'you will not eſcape the glory due to 'it. Glory is as neceſſarily the reſult 'of a virtuous action, as light is an 'effect of the ſun which cauſeth it, 'and has no dependance on any other 'cauſe; ſince a virtuous action continues ſtill the ſame, though it be 'done without teſtimony; and glory, 'which is, as one may ſay, born with 'it, conſtantly attends it, though the 'action be not known.'

'I proteſt, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'that's very prettily ſaid.'

'In my opinion, Sir,' purſued Arabella, 'if any thing can weaken the 'glory of a good action, it is the care 'a perſon takes to make it known; as 'if one did not do good for the ſake 'of good, but for the praiſe that generally follows it. Thoſe, then, that 'are governed by ſo intereſted a motive, ought to be conſidered as ſordid 'rather than generous perſons; who, 'making a kind of traffick between 'virtue and glory, barter juſt ſo much 'of the one for the other, and expect, 'like other merchants, to make advantage by the exchange.'

Mr. Glanville, who was charmed into an extaſy at this ſenſible ſpeech of Arabella's, forgot in an inſtant all her abſurdities. He did not fail to expreſs his admiration of her underſtanding in terms that brought a bluſh into her fair face, and obliged her to lay her commands upon him to ceaſe his exceſſive commendations. Then making a ſign to them to leave her alone, Mr. Glanville, who underſtood her, took his father and ſiſter down ſtairs, leaving Arabella with her faithful Lucy, whom ſhe immediately commanded to give her a relation of what had happened to her from the time of her ſwooning till ſhe recovered.

CHAP. XIV.

A DIALOGUE BETWEEN ARABELLA AND LUCY, IN WHICH THE LATTER SEEMS TO HAVE THE ADVANTAGE.

'WHY, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'all I can tell your ladyſhip 'is, that we were all exceſſively frighted, to be ſure, when you fainted, eſpecially myſelf; and that we did what 'we could to recover you—And ſo accordingly your ladyſhip did recover.'

'What's this to the purpoſe?' ſaid Arabella, perceiving ſhe ſtopped here. 'I know that I fainted; and it is alſo 'very plain that I recovered again—I 'aſk you what happened to me in the 'intermediate time between my fainting and recovery? Give me a faithful 'relation of all the accidents to which 'by my fainting I am quite a ſtranger, 'and which, no doubt, are very conſiderable.'

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'I have-

'I have given your ladyſhip a faithful 'relation of all I can remember.'

'When!' reſumed Arabella, ſurprized.

'This moment, Madam,' ſaid Lucy.

'Why, ſure thou dreameſt, wench!' replied ſhe. 'Haſt thou told me how 'I was ſeized and carried off! How I 'was reſcued again! And—'

'No, indeed, Madam,' interrupted Lucy, 'I don't dream; I never told 'your ladyſhip that you was carried 'off.'

'Well,' ſaid Arabella, 'and why 'doſt thou not ſatisfy my curioſity? 'Is it not fit I ſhould be acquainted 'with ſuch a momentous part of my 'hiſtory?'

'I can't, indeed, and pleaſe your ladyſhip,' ſaid Lucy.

'What, can'ſt thou not?' ſaid Arabella, enraged at her ſtupidity.

'Why, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, ſobbing, 'I can't make a hiſtory of no-'thing!'

'Of nothing, wench!' reſumed Arabella, in a greater rage than before. 'Doſt thou call an adventure to which 'thou waſt a witneſs, and boreſt haply 'ſo great a ſhare in, nothing?—An 'adventure which hereafter will make 'a conſiderable figure in the relation 'of my life, doſt thou look upon as 'trifling and of no conſequence?'

'No, indeed I don't, Madam,' ſaid Lucy.

'Why, then,' purſued Arabella, 'doſt thou wilfully neglect to relate 'it? Suppoſe, as there is nothing more 'likely, thou wert commanded by ſome 'perſons of conſiderable quality, or 'haply ſome great princes and prin-'ceſſes, to recount the adventures of 'my life, wouldeſt thou omit a cir-'cumſtance of ſo much moment?'

'No, indeed, Madam!' ſaid Lucy.

'I am glad to hear thou art ſo diſ-'creet,' ſaid Arabella; 'and pray do 'me the favour to relate this adven-'ture to me, as thou wouldeſt do to 'thoſe princes and princeſſes, if thou 'wert commanded.'

Here Arabella, making a full ſtop, fixed her eyes upon her woman, expecting every moment ſhe would begin the deſired narrative; but finding ſhe continued ſilent longer than ſhe thought was neceſſary for recalling the ſeveral circumſtances of the ſtory into her mind—

'I find,' ſaid ſhe, 'it will be ne-'ceſſary to caution you againſt making 'your audience wait too long for your 'relation; it looks as if you was to 'make a ſtudied ſpeech, not a ſimple 'relation of facts, which ought to be 'free from all affectation of labour 'and art; and be told with that grace-'ful negligence which is ſo becoming 'to truth.

'This I thought proper to tell you,' added ſhe, 'that you may not fall into 'that miſtake when you are called 'upon to relate my adventures—Well, 'now if you pleaſe to begin.'

'What, pray, Madam?' ſaid Lucy.

'What!' repeated Arabella. 'Why, 'the adventures which happened to me 'ſo lately. Relate to me every cir-'cumſtance of my being carried away, 'and how my deliverance was effected 'by my couſin.'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Lucy, 'I 'know nothing about your ladyſhip's 'being carried away.'

'Be gone!' cried Arabella, loſing all patience at her obſtinacy; 'get 'out of my preſence this moment.—'Wretch! unworthy of my confidence 'and favour; thy treaſon is too mani-'feſt; thou art bribed by that pre-'ſumptuous man to conceal all the 'circumſtances of his attempt from 'my knowledge, to the end that I 'may not have a full conviction of his 'guilt.'

Lucy, who never ſaw her lady ſo much offended before, and knew not the occaſion of it, burſt into tears; which ſo affected the tender heart of Arabella, that, loſing inſenſibly all her anger, ſhe told her, with a voice ſoftened to a tone of the utmoſt ſweetneſs and condeſcenſion, that provided ſhe would confeſs how far ſhe had been prevailed upon by his rich preſents to forget her duty, ſhe would pardon and receive her again into favour—

'Speak,' added ſhe, 'and be not 'afraid, after this promiſe, to let me 'know what Mr. Tinſel required of 'thee, and what were the gifts with 'which he purchaſed thy ſervices: 'doubtleſs, he preſented thee with 'jewels of a conſiderable value.'

'Since your ladyſhip,' ſaid Lucy, ſobbing, 'has promiſed not to be an-'gry, I don't care if I do tell your 'ladyſhip what he gave me. He gave

'me this half-guinea, Madam, indeed he did; but, for all that, when he would come into your chamber, I ſtruggled with him, and cried out, for fear he ſhould carry your ladyſhip away.'

Arabella, loſt in aſtoniſhment and ſhame at hearing of ſo inconſiderable a preſent made to her woman, the like of which not one of her romances could furniſh her, ordered her immediately to withdraw, not being willing ſhe ſhould obſerve the confuſion this ſtrange bribe had given her.

After ſhe had been gone ſome time, ſhe endeavoured to compoſe her looks, and went down to the dining-room, where Sir Charles and his ſon and daughter had been engaged in a converſation concerning her, the particulars of which may be found in the firſt chapter of the next book.

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.

THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINS THE CONVERSATION REFERRED TO IN THE LAST CHAPTER OF THE PRECEDING BOOK.

MISS Glanville, who with a malicious pleaſure had ſecretly triumphed in the extravagances her beautiful couſin had been guilty of, was now ſenſibly diſappointed to find they had had ſo little effect on her father and brother; for inſtead of reflecting upon the abſurdities to which they had been a witneſs, Mr. Glanville artfully purſued the ſubject Arabella had juſt before been expatiating upon, taking notice frequently of ſome obſervations of hers, and by a well-contrived repetition of her words, obliged his father a ſecond time to declare that his niece had ſpoken extremely well.

Mr. Glanville taking the word, hunched out into ſuch praiſes of her wit, that Miſs Glanville, no longer able to liſten patiently, replied—

'It was true Lady Bella ſometimes 'ſaid very ſenſible things; that it was 'a great pity ſhe was not always in a 'reaſonable way of thinking, or that 'her intervals were not longer.'

"Her intervals," Miſs!' ſaid Glanville; 'pray what do you mean by that 'expreſſion?'

'Why, pray,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'don't you think my couſin is ſometimes a little wrong in the head?'

Mr. Glanville at theſe words ſtarting from his chair, took a turn acroſs the room in great diſcompoſure; then ſtopping all of a ſudden, and giving his ſiſter a furious look—'Charlotte,' ſaid he, 'don't give me cauſe to think you 'are envious of your couſin's ſuperior 'excellences.'

"Envious!" repeated Miſs Glanville; 'I envious of my couſin—I vow 'I ſhould never have thought of that—'Indeed, brother, you are much miſtaken: my couſin's ſuperior excellences never gave me a moment's diſturbance—Though I muſt confeſs 'her unaccountable whims have often 'excited my pity.'

'No more of this, Charlotte,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'as you value 'my friendſhip—No more of it.'

'Why, really, ſon,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'my niece has very ſtrange whimſies 'ſometimes. How it came into her 'head to think Mr. Tinſel would attempt to carry her away, I can't imagine! For, after all, he only preſſed 'rather too rudely into her chamber; 'for which, as you ſee, I have forbidden his viſits.'

'That was of a piece,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, ſneeringly to her brother, 'with her aſking you if you had made 'Mr. Tinſel ſwear upon your ſword 'that he would never again attempt to 'carry her away; and applauding you 'for having given him his liberty, as 'the generous Ateumens did on the 'ſame occaſion.'

'I would adviſe you, Charlotte,' ſaid Mr. Glanville, 'not to aim at re-

'peating

'peating your couſin's words, till you 'know how to pronounce them pro-'perly.'

'Oh! that's one of her ſuperior ex-'cellences,' ſaid Miſs Glanville.

'Indeed, Miſs,' ſaid Glanville, very provokingly, 'ſhe is ſuperior to you 'in many things; and as much ſo in 'the goodneſs of her heart, as in the 'beauty of her perſon!'

'Come, come, Charles,' ſaid the baronet, who obſerved his daughter ſat ſwelling and biting her lip at this reproach, 'perſonal reflections are better 'avoided. Your ſiſter is very well, and 'not to be diſparaged; though, to be 'ſure, Lady Bella is the fineſt woman 'I ever ſaw in my life.'

Miſs Glanville was, if poſſible, more diſguſted at her father's palliation than her brother's reproaches; and, in order to give a looſe to her paſſion, accuſed Mr. Glanville of a decreaſe in his affection for her, ſince he had been in love with her couſin; and having found this excuſe for her tears, very freely gave vent to them.

Mr. Glanville being ſoftened by this ſight, ſacrificed a few compliments to her vanity, which ſoon reſtored her to her uſual tranquillity; then turning the diſcourſe on his beloved Arabella, pronounced a panegyrick on her virtues and accompliſhments of an hour long; which, if it did not abſolutely perſuade his ſiſter to change her opinion, it certainly convinced his father that his niece was not only perfectly well in her underſtanding, but even better than moſt others of her ſex.

Mr. Glanville had juſt finiſhed her eulogium when Arabella appeared: joy danced in his eyes at her approach; he gazed upon her with a kind of conſcious triumph in his looks; her conſummate lovelineſs juſtifying his paſſion, and being in his opinion more than an excuſe for all her extravagances.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE, AS WE PRESUME, SHEWS HERSELF IN TWO VERY DIFFERENT LIGHTS.

ARABELLA, who at her entrance had perceived ſome traces of uneaſineſs upon Miſs Glanville's countenance, tenderly aſked her the cauſe; to which that young lady anſwering in a cold and reſerved manner, Mr. Glanville, to divert her reflections on it, very freely accuſed himſelf of having given his ſiſter ſome offence.—'To be ſure, brother,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'you are very vehement in your 'temper, and are as violently carried 'away about things of little impor-'tance as of the greateſt; and then, 'whatever you have a fancy for, you 'love ſo obſtinately.'

'I am obliged to you, Miſs,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'for endea-'vouring to give Lady Bella ſo un-'favourable an opinion of me.'

'I aſſure you,' ſaid Arabella, 'Miſs 'Glanville has ſaid nothing to your 'diſadvantage: for, in my opinion, 'the temperament of great minds ought 'to be ſuch as ſhe repreſents yours to 'be. For there is nothing at ſo great 'a diſtance from true and heroick vir-'tue, as that indifference which obliges 'ſome people to be pleaſed with all 'things or nothing: whence it comes 'to paſs, that they neither entertain 'great deſires of glory, nor fear of in-'famy; that they neither love nor 'hate; that they are wholly influenced 'by cuſtom, and are ſenſible only of 'the afflictions of the body, their minds 'being in a manner inſenſible.

'To ſay the truth, I am inclined 'to conceive a greater hope of a man, 'who in the beginning of his life is 'hurried away by ſome evil habit, 'than one that faſtens on nothing; the 'mind that cannot be brought to deteſt 'vice, will never be perſuaded to love 'virtue; but one who is capable of 'loving or hating irreconcileably, by 'having, when young, his paſſions 'directed to proper objects, will re-'main fixed in his choice of what is 'good. But with him who is inca-'pable of any violent attraction, and 'whoſe heart is chilled by a general 'indifference, precept or example will 'have no force—And philoſophy it-'ſelf, which boaſts it hath remedies 'for all indiſpoſitions of the ſoul, never 'had any that can cure an indifferent 'mind—Nay,' added ſhe, 'I am per-'ſuaded that indifference is generally 'the inſeparable companion of a weak 'and imperfect judgment; for it is 'ſo natural to a perſon to be carried 'towards that which he believes to be

'good,

'good, that if indifferent people were 'able to judge of things, they would 'faſten on ſomething. But certain it 'is, that this lukewarmneſs of ſoul, 'which ſends forth but feeble deſires, 'ſends alſo but feeble lights; ſo that 'thoſe who are guilty of it, not know-'ing any thing clearly, cannot faſten 'on any thing with perſeverance.'

Mr. Glanville, when Arabella had finiſhed this ſpeech, caſt a triumphing glance at his ſiſter, who had affected great inattention all the while ſhe had been ſpeaking. Sir Charles, in his way, expreſſed much admiration of her wit, telling her, if ſhe had been a man, ſhe would have made a great figure in parliament, and that her ſpeeches might have come perhaps to be printed in time.

This compliment, odd as it was, gave great joy to Glanville; when the converſation was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Selvin, who had ſlipt away unobſerved at the time that Arabella's indiſpoſition had alarmed them, and now came to enquire after her health; and alſo, if an opportunity offered, to ſet her right with regard to the ſuſpicions ſhe had entertained of his deſigning to pay his addreſſes to her.

Arabella, as ſoon as he had ſent in his name, appeared to be in great diſturbance; and upon his entrance, offered immediately to withdraw, telling Mr. Glanville, who would have detained her, that ſhe found no place was likely to ſecure her from the perſecutions of that gentleman.

Glanville ſtared, and looked ſtrangely perplexed at this ſpeech; Miſs Glanville ſmiled; and poor Selvin, with a very ſilly look, hemm'd two or three times, and then with a faltering accent ſaid, 'Madam, I am very much 'concerned to find your ladyſhip re-'ſolved to perſiſt in——'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'my 'reſolutions are unalterable. I told 'you ſo before, and am ſurprized, 'after the knowledge of my inten-'tions, you preſume to appear in my 'preſence again, from whence I had 'ſo poſitively baniſhed you.'

'Pray, niece,' ſaid Sir Charles, 'what has Mr. Selvin done to diſ-'oblige you?'

'Sir,' replied Arabella, 'Mr. Sel-'vin's offence can admit of no other 'reparation than that which I required 'of him, which was a voluntary ba-'niſhment from my preſence; and in 'this,' purſued ſhe, 'I am guilty of 'no more ſeverity to you, than the 'princeſs Udoſia was to the unfortu-'nate Thraſimedes. For the paſſion 'of this prince having come to her 'knowledge, notwithſtanding the pains 'he took to conceal it, this fair and 'wiſe princeſs thought it not enough 'to forbid his ſpeaking to her, but 'alſo baniſhed him from her preſence; 'laying a peremptory command upon 'him, never to appear before her again 'till he was perfectly cured of that 'unhappy love he had entertained for 'her—Imitate, therefore, the merito-'rious obedience of this poor prince, 'and if that paſſion you profeſs for 'me—'

'How, Sir,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'Do you make love to my niece, 'then?'

'Sir,' replied Mr. Selvin, who was ſtrangely confounded at Arabella's ſpeech, 'though I really admire the 'perfections this lady is poſſeſſed of, 'yet I aſſure you, upon my honour, 'I never had a thought of making any 'addreſſes to her; and I cannot ima-'gine why her ladyſhip perſiſts in ac-'cuſing me of ſuch preſumption.'

So formal a denial, after what Arabella had ſaid, extremely perplexed Sir Charles, and filled Mr. Glanville with inconceivable ſhame.

Miſs Glanville enjoyed their diſturbance, and, full of an ill-natured triumph, endeavoured to look Arabella into confuſion; but that lady not being at all diſcompoſed by this declaration of Mr. Selvin's, having accounted for it already, replied with great calmneſs—

'Sir, it is eaſy to ſee through the 'artifice of your diſclaiming any paſſion 'for me—Upon any other occaſion, 'queſtionleſs, you would rather ſacri-'fice your life, than conſent to diſ-'avow theſe ſentiments which, un-'happily for your peace, you have en-'tertained. At preſent the deſire of 'continuing near me, obliges you to 'lay this conſtraint upon yourſelf; 'however, you know Thraſimedes fell 'upon the ſame ſtratagem to no pur-'poſe. The rigid Udoſia ſaw through 'the diſguiſe, and would not diſ-'penſe with herſelf from baniſhing him 'from Rome, as I do you from Eng-'land,'—

'How,

'How, Madam!' interrupted Selvin, amazed—

'Yes, Sir,' replied Arabella haſtily, 'nothing leſs can ſatisfy what I owe 'to the conſideration of my own glory.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' ſaid Selvin, half angry, and yet ſtrongly inclined to laugh, 'I don't ſee the ne-'ceſſity of my quitting my native 'country, to ſatisfy what you owe to 'the conſideration of your own glory. 'Pray, how does my ſtaying in Eng-'land affect your ladyſhip's glory?'

'To anſwer your queſtion with 'another,' ſaid Arabella, 'pray how 'did the ſtay of Thraſimedes in Rome 'affect the glory of the empreſs 'Udoſia?'

Mr. Selvin was ſtruck dumb with this ſpeech, for he was not willing to be thought ſo deficient in the knowledge of hiſtory, as not to be acquainted with the reaſons why Thraſimedes ſhould not ſtay in Rome.

His ſilence therefore ſeeming to Arabella to be a tacit confeſſion of the juſtice of her commands, a ſentiment of compaſſion for this unfortunate lover intruded itſelf into her mind, and turning her bright eyes, full of a ſoft complacency, upon Selvin, who ſtared at her as if he had loſt his wits—

'I will not,' ſaid ſhe, 'wrong the 'ſublimity of your paſſion for me ſo 'much, as to doubt your being ready 'to ſacrifice the repoſe of your own 'life to the ſatisfaction of mine: nor 'will I do ſo much injuſtice to your 'generoſity, as to ſuppoſe the glory 'of obeying my commands, will not 'in ſome meaſure ſoften the rigour of 'your deſtiny.—I know not whether it 'may be lawful for me to tell you, 'that your misfortune does really cauſe 'me ſome affliction; but I am willing 'to give you this conſolation, and 'alſo to aſſure you, that to whatever 'part of the world your deſpair will 'carry you, the good wiſhes and 'compaſſion of Arabella ſhall follow 'you.'

Having ſaid this, with one of her fair hands ſhe covered her face, to hide the bluſhes which ſo compaſſionate a ſpeech had cauſed—Holding the other extended with a careleſs air, ſuppoſing he would kneel to kiſs it, and bathe it with his tears, as was the cuſtom on ſuch melancholy occaſions, her head at the ſame time turned another way, as if reluctantly and with confuſion ſhe granted this favour.—But after ſtanding a moment in this poſture, and finding her hand untouched, ſhe concluded grief had deprived him of his ſenſes, and that he would ſhortly fall into a ſwoon as Thraſimedes did; and to prevent being a witneſs of ſo doleful a ſight, ſhe hurried out of the room without once turning about; and having reached her own apartment, ſunk into a chair, not a little affected with the deplorable condition in which ſhe had left her ſuppoſed miſerable lover.

CHAP. III.

THE CONTRAST CONTINUED.

THE company ſhe had left behind her being all, except Mr. Glanville, to the laſt degree ſurprized at her ſtrange words and actions, continued mute for ſeveral minutes after ſhe was gone, ſtaring upon one another, as if each wiſhed to know the other's opinion of ſuch an unaccountable behaviour. At laſt Miſs Glanville, who obſerved her brother's back was towards her, told Mr. Selvin in a low voice, that ſhe hoped he would call and take his leave of them before he ſet out for the place where his deſpair would carry him.

Mr. Selvin, in ſpite of his natural gravity, could not forbear laughing at this ſpeech of Miſs Glanville's, which ſhocked her brother; and not being able to ſtay where Arabella was ridiculed, nor entitled to reſent it, which would have been a manifeſt injuſtice on that occaſion, he retired to his own apartment to give vent to that ſpleen which in thoſe moments made him out of humour with all the world.

Sir Charles, when he was gone, indulged himſelf in a little mirth on his niece's extravagance, proteſting he did not know what to do with her. Upon which Miſs Glanville obſerved, that it was a pity there were not ſuch things as proteſtant nunneries; giving it as her opinion, that her couſin ought to be confined in one of thoſe places, and never ſuffered to ſee any company, by which means ſhe would avoid expoſing herſelf in the manner ſhe did now.

Mr. Selvin, who poſſibly thought this a reaſonable ſcheme of Miſs Glanville's,

ville's, ſeemed by his ſilence to aſſent to her opinion; but Sir Charles was greatly diſpleaſed with his daughter for expreſſing herſelf ſo freely; alledging that Arabella, when ſhe was out of thoſe whims, was a very ſenſible young lady, and ſometimes talked as learnedly as a divine. To which Mr. Selvin alſo added, that ſhe had a great knowledge of hiſtory, and had a moſt ſurprizing memory; and after ſome more diſcourſe to the ſame purpoſe, he took his leave, earneſtly entreating Sir Charles to believe that he never entertained any deſign of making his addreſſes to Lady Bella.

In the mean time, that lady, after having given near half an hour to thoſe reflections which occur to heroines in the ſame ſituation with herſelf, called for Lucy, and ordered her to go to the dining-room, and ſee in what condition Mr. Selvin was, telling her ſhe had certainly left him in a ſwoon, as alſo the occaſion of it; and bid her give him all the conſolation in her power.

Lucy, with tears in her eyes at this recital, went down as ſhe was ordered; and entering the room without any ceremony, her thoughts being wholly fixed on the melancholy circumſtance her lady had been telling her, ſhe looked eagerly round the room without ſpeaking a word, till Sir Charles and Miſs Glanville, who thought ſhe had been ſent with ſome meſſage from Arabella, aſked her both at the ſame inſtant, what ſhe wanted.

'I came, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, repeating her lady's words, 'to ſee in what con-'dition Mr. Selvin is in, and to give 'him all the ſolation in my power.'

Sir Charles, laughing heartily at this ſpeech, aſked her what ſhe could do for Mr. Selvin? To which ſhe replied, ſhe did not know, but her lady had told her to give him all the ſolation in her power.

'Conſolation thou would'ſt ſay, I 'ſuppoſe,' ſaid Sir Charles.

'Yes, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, curtſeying. 'Well, child,' added he, 'go up and 'tell your lady, Mr. Selvin does not 'need any conſolation.'

Lucy accordingly returned with this meſſage, and was met at the chamber-door by Arabella, who haſtily aſked her if Mr. Selvin was recovered from his ſwoon: to which Lucy replied, that ſhe did not know; but that Sir Charles bid her tell her ladyſhip, Mr. Selvin did not need any conſolation.

'Oh, heavens!' cried Arabella, throwing herſelf into a chair as pale as death—'He is dead, he has fallen 'upon his ſword, and put an end to 'his life and miſeries at once—Oh! 'how unhappy am I,' cried ſhe, burſting into tears, 'to be the cauſe of ſo 'cruel an accident—Was ever any fate 'ſo terrible as mine—Was ever beauty 'ſo fatal—Was ever rigour ſo unfortunate—How will the quiet of my 'future days be diſturbed by the ſad 'remembrance of a man whoſe death 'was cauſed by my diſdain—But why,' reſumed ſhe, after a little pauſe—'why do I thus afflict myſelf for 'what has happened by an unavoidable neceſſity? Nor am I ſingular in 'the misfortune which has befallen 'me—Did not the ſad Perinthus die 'for the beautiful Panthea—Did not 'the rigour of Barſina bring the miſerable Oxyatres to the grave—And 'the ſeverity of Statira make Oroondates fall upon his ſword in her preſence, though happily he eſcaped 'being killed by it—Let us, then, not 'afflict ourſelves unreaſonably at this 'ſad accident—Let us lament as we 'ought the fatal effects of our charms '—But let us comfort ourſelves with 'the thought that we have only acted 'conformable to our duty.'

Arabella having pronounced theſe laſt words with a ſolemn and lofty accent, ordered Lucy, who liſtened to her with eyes drowned in tears, to go down and aſk if the body was removed.—'For,' added ſhe, 'all my con-'ſtancy will not be ſufficient to ſup-'port me againſt that pitiful ſight.'

Lucy accordingly delivered her meſſage to Sir Charles and Miſs Glanville, who were ſtill together, diſcourſing on the fantaſtical turn of Arabella; when the knight, who could not poſſibly comprehend what ſhe meant by aſking if the body was removed, bid her tell her lady he deſired to ſpeak with her.

Arabella, upon receiving this ſummons, ſet herſelf to conſider what could be the intent of it. 'If Mr. Selvin be 'dead,' ſaid ſhe, 'what good can my 'preſence do among them? Surely it 'cannot be to upbraid me with my ſe-'verity, that my uncle deſires to ſee 'me—No, it would be unjuſt to ſup-

'pose it. Questionless, my unhappy 'lover is still struggling with the pangs 'of death, and, for a consolation in his 'last moments, implores the favour of 'resigning up his life in my sight.' Pausing a little at these words, she rose from her seat with a resolution to give the unhappy Selvin her pardon before he died. Meeting Mr. Glanville as he was returning from his chamber to the dining-room, she told him, she hoped the charity she was going to discover towards his rival, would not give him any uneasiness; and preventing his reply by going hastily into the room, he followed her, dreading some new extravagance, yet not able to prevent it, endeavoured to conceal his confusion from her observation. Arabella, after breathing a gentle sigh, told Sir Charles, that she was come to grant Mr. Selvin her pardon for the offence he had been guilty of, that he might depart in peace.

'Well, well,' said Sir Charles, 'he 'is departed in peace without it.'

'How, Sir!' interrupted Arabella, 'is he dead then already? Alas! why 'had he not the satisfaction of seeing 'me before he expired, that his soul 'might have departed in peace? He 'would have been assured not only of 'my pardon, but pity also; and that 'assurance would have made him happy in his last moments.'

'Why, niece,' interrupted Sir Charles, staring, 'you surprize me 'prodigiously: are you in earnest?'

'Questionless I am, Sir,' said she; 'nor ought you to be surprized at the 'concern I express for the fate of this 'unhappy man, nor at the pardon I 'proposed to have granted him; since 'herein I am justified by the example 'of many great and virtuous princesses, who have done as much, nay, 'haply more than I intended to have 'done, for persons whose offences 'were greater than Mr. Selvin's.'

'I am very sorry, Madam,' said Sir Charles, 'to hear you talk in this 'manner; it is really enough to make 'one suspect you are——'

'You do me great injustice, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'if you suspect 'me to be guilty of any unbecoming 'weakness for this man; if barely 'expressing my compassion for his 'misfortunes be esteemed so great a 'favour, what would you have thought 'if I had supported his head on my 'knees while he was dying, shed tears 'over him, and discovered all the tokens of a sincere affliction for him?'

'Good God!' said Sir Charles, lifting up his eyes, 'did any body 'ever hear of any thing like this?'

'What, Sir!' said Arabella, with as great an appearance of surprize in her countenance as his had discovered, 'do you say you never heard of any 'thing like this? Then you never 'heard of the princess of Media, I 'suppose?'

'No, not I, Madam,' said Sir Charles, peevishly.

'Then, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'permit me to tell you, that this fair 'and virtuous princess condescended to 'do all I have mentioned for the fierce 'Labynet, prince of Assyria; who, 'though he had mortally offended her 'by stealing her away out of the court 'of the king her father, nevertheless, 'when he was wounded to death in 'her presence, and humbly implored 'her pardon before he died, she condescended, as I have said, to support 'him on her knees, and shed tears for 'his disaster. I could produce many 'more instances of the like compassion 'in ladies almost as highly born as 'herself, though, perhaps, their quality was not quite so illustrious, she 'being the heiress of two powerful 'kingdoms. Yet to mention only 'these——'

'Good heavens!' cried Mr. Glanville here, being quite out of patience, 'I shall go distracted!'

Arabella, surprized at this exclamation, looked earnestly at him for a moment, and then asked him, whether any thing she had said had given him uneasiness.

'Yes, upon my soul, Madam!' said Glanville, so vexed and confused that he hardly knew what he said.

'I am sorry for it,' replied Arabella, gravely; 'and also am greatly con'cerned to find that in generosity you 'are so much exceeded by the illus'trious Cyrus; who was so far from 'taking umbrage at Mandana's beha'viour to the dying prince, that he 'commended her for the compassion 'she had shewn him. So also did the 'brave and generous Oroondates, when 'the fair Statira——'

'By heavens!' cried Glanville, rising

rising in a passion, 'there's no hearing 'this.—Pardon me, Madam, but upon my soul, you'll make me hang 'myself!'

'Hang yourself!' repeated Arabella, 'sure you know not what you say! you meant, I suppose, that you'll fall upon your sword. What hero ever threatened to give himself so vulgar a death? But pray, let me know the cause of your despair, so sudden and so violent.'

Mr. Glanville, continuing in a sort of sullen silence, Arabella, raising her voice, went on—

'Though I do not conceive myself obliged to give you an account of my conduct, seeing that I have only permitted you yet to hope for my favour; yet I owe to myself, and my own honour, the justification I am going to make. Know then, that however suspicious my compassion for Mr. Selvin may appear to your mistaken judgment, yet it has it's foundation only in the generosity of my disposition, which inclines me to pardon the fault when the unhappy criminal repents; and to afford him my pity when his circumstances require it. Let not, therefore, the charity I have discovered towards your rival, be the cause of your despair, since my sentiments for him, were he living, would be what they were before; that is, full of indifference, nay, haply, disdain. And suffer not yourself to be so carried away by a violent and unjust jealousy, as to threaten your own death, which, if you really had any ground for your suspicions, and truly loved me, would come unsought for, though not undesired—for, indeed, was your despair reasonable, death would necessarily follow it; for what lover can live under so desperate a misfortune? In that case you may meet death undauntedly when it comes, nay, embrace it with joy; but truly the killing one's self is but a false picture of true courage, proceeding rather from fear of a farther evil, than contempt of that you fly to: for if it were a contempt of pain, the same principle would make you resolve to bear patiently and fearlessly all kinds of pains; and hope being, of all other, the most contrary thing to fear, this being an utter banishment of hope, seems to have it's ground in fear.'

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH MR. GLANVILLE MAKES AN UNSUCCESSFUL ATTEMPT UPON ARABELLA.

ARABELLA, when she had finished these words, which banished in part Mr. Glanville's confusion, went to her own apartment, followed by Miss Glanville, to whom she had made a sign for that purpose; and throwing herself into a chair, burst into tears, which greatly surprizing Miss Glanville, she pressed her to tell her the cause.

'Alas!' replied Arabella, 'have I 'not cause to think myself extremely 'unhappy? The deplorable death of 'Mr. Selvin, the despair to which I 'see your brother reduced, with the 'fatal consequences which may attend 'it, fills me with a mortal uneasiness.'

'Well,' said Miss Glanville, 'your 'ladyship may make yourself quite 'easy as to both these matters; for 'Mr. Selvin is not dead, nor is my 'brother in despair, that I know of.'

'What do you say, Miss?' interrupted Arabella; 'is not Mr. Selvin 'dead? Was the wound he gave him'self not mortal, then?'

'I know of no wound that he gave 'himself, not I,' said Miss Glanville: 'what makes your ladyship suppose he 'gave himself a wound? Lord bless 'me, what strange thoughts come into 'your head!'

'Truly I am rejoiced to hear it,' replied Arabella; 'and in order to 'prevent the effects of his despair, 'I'll instantly dispatch my commands 'to him to live.'

'I dare answer for his obedience, 'Madam,' said Miss Glanville, smiling.

Arabella then gave orders for paper and pens to be brought her; and seeing Mr. Glanville enter the room, very formally acquainted him with her intention, telling him, that he ought to be satisfied with the banishment to which she had doomed his unhappy rival, and not require his death, since he had nothing to fear from his pretensions.

'I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, 'I am perfectly easy upon 'that account: and in order to spare 'you the trouble of sending to Mr. 'Selvin, I may venture to assure you 'that he is in no danger of dying.'

'It is impossible, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'according to the nature of 'things, it is impossible but he must 'already be very near death—you 'know the rigour of my sentence, you 'know——'

'I know, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, 'that Mr. Selvin does not think 'himself under a necessity of obeying 'your sentence; and has the impudence to question your authority for 'banishing him from his native country.'

'My authority, Sir,' said Arabella, strangely surprized, 'is founded 'upon the absolute power he has given 'me over him.'

'He denies that, Madam,' said Glanville, 'and says that he neither 'can give, nor you exercise, an absolute power over him; since you are 'both accountable to the king, whose 'subjects you are, and both restrained 'by the laws under whose sanction 'you live.'

Arabella's apparent confusion at these words giving Mr. Glanville hopes that he had fallen upon a proper method to cure her of some of her strange notions, he was going to pursue his arguments, when Arabella, looking a little sternly upon him—

'The empire of love,' said she, 'like the empire of honour, is governed by laws of it's own, which 'have no dependence upon, or relation 'to, any other.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Glanville, 'if I presume to differ from 'you. Our laws have fixed the boundaries of honour as well as those of 'love.'

'How is that possible,' replied Arabella, 'when they differ so widely, 'that a man may be justified by the 'one, and yet condemned by the 'other? For instance,' pursued she, 'you are not permitted by the laws of 'the land to take away the life of any 'person whatever; yet the laws of honour oblige you to hunt your enemy through the world, in order to 'sacrifice him to your vengeance. 'Since it is impossible then for the 'same actions to be at once just and 'unjust, it must necessarily follow, 'that the law which condemns it, and 'that which justifies it, is not the same, 'but directly opposite: and now,' added she, after a little pause, 'I hope 'I have entirely cleared up that point 'to you.'

'You have indeed, Madam,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'proved to a demonstration, that what is called honour is something distinct from just'tice, since they command things absolutely opposite to each other.'

Arabella, without reflecting on this inference, went on to prove the independent sovereignty of love, 'Which,' said she, 'may be collected from all 'the words and actions of those heroes who were inspired by this pas'sion. We see it in them,' pursued she, 'triumphing not only over all 'natural and avowed allegiance, but 'superior even to friendship, duty, 'and honour itself. This the actions 'of Oroondates, Artaxerxes, Spitridates, and many other illustrious 'princes, sufficiently testify.

'Love requires a more unlimited 'obedience from it's slaves, than any 'other monarch can expect from his 'subjects; an obedience which is circumscribed by no laws whatever, and 'dependent upon nothing but itself.

"I shall live, Madam," says the 'renowned prince of Scythia to the 'divine Statira, "I shall live, since it "is your command I should do so; "and death can have no power over a "life which you are pleased to take "care off."

"Say only that you wish I should "conquer," said the great Juba to the 'incomparable Cleopatra, "and my "enemies will be already vanquished "—victory will come over to the side "you favour—and an army of a hundred thousand men will not be able "to overcome the man who has your "commands to conquer."

'How mean and insignificant,' pursued she, 'are the titles bestowed on 'other monarchs compared with those 'which dignify the sovereigns of hearts, 'such as Divine Arbitress of my fate, 'Visible Divinity, Earthly Goddess, 'and many others equally sublime.'

Mr. Glanville losing all patience at her obstinate folly, interrupted her here with a question quite foreign to the

the ſubject ſhe was diſcuſſing; and ſoon after quitting her chamber, retired to his own, more than ever deſpairing of her recovery.

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH IS INTRODUCED A VERY SINGULAR CHARACTER.

MISS Glanville, whoſe envy and diſlike of her lovely couſin was heightened by her ſuſpicions that ſhe diſputed with her the poſſeſſion of Sir George's heart, ſhe having been long in reality a great admirer of that gay gentleman, was extremely delighted with the ridicule her abſurd behaviour had drawn upon her at Bath, which ſhe found by enquiry was through Mr. Tinſel's repreſentation grown almoſt general.

In order, therefore, to be at liberty to go to the publick places uneclipſed by the ſuperior beauty of Arabella, ſhe acquainted her father and brother with part of what ſhe had heard, which determined them to prevent that young lady's appearance in publick while they ſtaid at Bath; this being no difficult matter to bring about, ſince Arabella only went to the rooms or Parade in compliance with the invitation of her couſins.

Miſs Glanville being by theſe means rid of a rival too powerful even to contend with, went with more than uſual gaiety to the aſſembly, where the extravagances of Arabella afforded a perpetual fund for diverſion. Her more than paſſive behaviour upon this occaſion, baniſhing all reſtraint among thoſe ſhe converſed with, the jeſt circulated very freely at Arabella's expence. Nor did Miſs Glanville fail to give new poignancy to their ſarcaſms, by artfully deploring the bent of her couſin's ſtudies, and enumerating the many abſurdities they had made her guilty of.

Arabella's uncommon beauty had gained her ſo many enemies among the ladies that compoſed this aſſembly, that they ſeemed to contend with each other who ſhould ridicule her moſt. The celebrated Counteſs of ——, being then at Bath, approached a circle of theſe fair defamers, and liſtening a few moments to the contemptuous jeſts they threw out againſt the abſent beauty, declared herſelf in her favour; which in a moment (ſuch was the force of her univerſally acknowledged merit, and the deference always paid to her opinion) ſilenced every pretty impertinent around her.

This lady, who among her own ſex had no ſuperior in wit, elegance, and eaſe, was inferior to very few of the other in ſenſe, learning, and judgment. Her ſkill in poetry, painting, and muſick, though inconteſtably great, was numbered among the leaſt of her accompliſhments. Her candour, her ſweetneſs, her modeſty, and benevolence, while they ſecured her from the darts of envy, rendered her ſuperior to praiſe, and made the one as unneceſſary as the other ineffectual.

She had been a witneſs of the ſurprize Arabella's extraordinary appearance had occaſioned; and ſtruck with that as well as the uncommon charms of her perſon, had preſſed near her with ſeveral others of the company, when ſhe was diſcourſing in the manner we have related.

A perſon of the counteſs's nice diſcernment could not fail of obſerving the wit and ſpirit, which, though obſcured, was not abſolutely hid under the abſurdity of her notions; and this diſcovery adding eſteem to the compaſſion ſhe felt for the fair viſionary, ſhe reſolved to reſcue her from the ill-natured raillery of her ſex; praiſing therefore her underſtanding, and the beauty of her perſon, with a ſweetneſs and generoſity peculiar to herſelf, ſhe accounted in the moſt delicate manner imaginable for the ſingularity of her notions, from her ſtudies, her retirement, her ignorance of the world, and her lively imagination. And to abate the keenneſs of their ſarcaſms, acknowledged that ſhe herſelf had, when very young, been deep read in romances; and but for an early acquaintance with the world, and being directed to other ſtudies, was likely to have been as much a heroine as Lady Bella.

Miſs Glanville, though ſhe was ſecretly vexed at this defence of her couſin, was however under a neceſſity of ſeeming obliged to the counteſs for it; and that lady expreſſing a deſire to be acquainted with Lady Bella, Miſs Glanville reſpectfully offered to attend her couſin to her lodgings; which the

counteſs

countess as respectfully declined, saying, as Lady Bella was a stranger, she would make her the first visit.

Miss Glanville, at her return, gave her brother an account of what had happened at the assembly, and filled him with an inconceivable joy at the countess's intention. He had always been a zealous admirer of that lady's character, and flattered himself that the conversation of so admirable a woman would be of the utmost use to Arabella.

That very night he mentioned her to his beloved cousin; and after enumerating all her fine qualities, declared that he had already conceived a friendship for her, and was solicitous of her acquaintance.

'I think myself extremely fortunate,' replied Arabella, 'in that I 'have (though questionless undeservedly) acquired the amity of this 'lovely person—and I beg you,' pursued she, to Miss Glanville, 'to tell 'her, that I long with impatience to 'embrace her, and to give her that 'share in my heart which her transcendent merit deserves.'

Miss Glanville only bowed her head in answer to this request, giving her brother at the same time a significant leer; who, though used to Arabella's particularities, could not help being a little confounded at the heroick speech she had made.

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING SOMETHING WHICH AT FIRST SIGHT MAY POSSIBLY PUZZLE THE READER.

THE countess was as good as her word, and two days after sent a card to Arabella, importing her design to wait on her that afternoon.

Our heroine expected her with great impatience, and the moment she entered the room flew towards her with a graceful eagerness, and straining her in her arms, embraced her with all the fervour of a long absent friend.

Sir Charles and Mr. Glanville were equally embarrassed at the familiarity of this address; but observing that the countess seemed not to be surprized at it, but rather to receive it with pleasure, they were soon composed.

'You cannot imagine, lovely stranger,' said Arabella to the countess, as soon as they were seated, 'with 'what impatience I have longed to behold you, since the knowledge I have 'received of your rare qualities, and 'the friendship you have been pleased 'to honour me with—And I may truly 'protest to you, that such is my admiration of your virtues, that I 'would have gone to the farthest part 'of the world to render you that which 'you with so much generosity have 'condescended to bestow upon me.'

Sir Charles stared at this extraordinary speech, and not being able to comprehend a word of it, was concerned to think how the lady to whom it was addressed would understand it.

Mr. Glanville looked down, and bit his nails in extreme confusion; but the countess, who had not forgot the language of romance, returned the compliment in a strain as heroick as hers.

'The favour I have received from 'fortune,' said she, 'in bringing me 'to the happiness of your acquaintance, charming Arabella, is so great, 'that I may rationally expect some 'terrible misfortune will befal me; 'seeing that in this life our pleasures 'are so constantly succeeded by pains, 'that we hardly ever enjoy the one 'without suffering the other soon after.'

Arabella was quite transported to hear the countess express herself in language so conformable to her own; but Mr. Glanville was greatly confounded, and began to suspect she was diverting herself with his cousin's singularities: and Sir Charles was within a little of thinking her as much out of the way as his niece.

'Misfortunes, Madam,' said Arabella, 'are too often the lot of excellent persons like yourself. The sublimest among mortals both for beauty and virtue have experienced the 'frowns of fate. The sufferings of 'the divine Statira or Cassandra, for 'she bore both names, the persecutions of the incomparable Cleopatra, 'the distresses of the beautiful Candace, and the afflictions of the fair 'and generous Mandana, are proofs 'that the most illustrious persons in 'the world have felt the rage of calamity.'

'It must be confessed,' said the countess,

countess, 'that all those fair princesses 'you have named, were for a while 'extremely unfortunate: yet in the 'catalogue of these lovely and afflict-'ed persons, you have forgot one who 'might with justice dispute the priority 'of sufferings with them all—I mean 'the beautiful Elisa, princess of Par-'thia.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' replied Arabella, 'I cannot be of your opinion. 'The princess of Parthia may indeed 'justly be ranked among the number 'of unfortunate persons, but she can 'by no means dispute the melancholy 'precedence with the divine Cleopatra '—For, in fine, Madam, what evils 'did the princess of Parthia suffer 'which the fair Cleopatra did not 'likewise endure, and some of them 'haply in a greater degree? If Elisa, 'by the tyrannical authority of the 'king her father, saw herself upon the 'point of becoming the wife of a 'prince she detested, was not the beau-'tiful daughter of Antony, by the 'more unjustifiable tyranny of Au-'gustus, likely to be forced into the 'arms of Tyberius, a proud and 'cruel prince, who was odious to the 'whole world as well as to her? If 'Elisa was for some time in the power 'of pirates, was not Cleopatra cap-'tive to an inhuman king, who pre-'sented his sword to the fair breast of 'that divine princess worthy the ado-'ration of the whole earth? And in 'fine, if Elisa had the grief to see her 'dear Artaban imprisoned by the or-'der of Augustus, Cleopatra beheld 'with mortal agonies her beloved 'Coriolanus inclosed amidst the guards 'of that enraged prince, and doomed 'to a cruel death.'

'It is certain, Madam,' replied the countess, 'that the misfortunes of both 'these princesses were very great, 'though, as you have shewed me, with 'some inequality: and when one re-'flects upon the dangerous adventures 'to which persons of their quality 'were exposed in those times, one 'cannot help rejoicing that we live in 'an age in which the customs, man-'ners, habits, and inclinations, differ 'so widely from theirs, that it is im-'possible such adventures should even 'happen.

'Such is the strange alteration of 'things, that some people, I dare say, 'at present cannot be persuaded to be-'lieve there ever were princesses wan-'dering through the world by land 'and sea in mean disguises, carried 'away violently out of their father's 'dominions by insolent lovers—Some 'discovered sleeping in forests, others 'shipwrecked on desolate islands, con-'fined in castles, bound in chariots, 'and even struggling amidst the tem-'pestuous waves of the sea, into which 'they had cast themselves to avoid the 'brutal force of their ravishers. Not 'one of these things having happened 'within the compass of several thou-'sand years, people unlearned in an-'tiquity would be apt to deem them 'idle tales, so improbable do they ap-'pear at present.'

Arabella, though greatly surprized at this discourse, did not think proper to express her thoughts of it. She was unwilling to appear absolutely ignorant of the present customs of the world before a lady, whose good opinion she was ardently desirous of improving. Her prepossessions in favour of the countess made her receive the new lights she held out to her with respect, though not without doubt and irresolution. Her blushes, her silence, and down-cast eyes, gave the countess to understand part of her thoughts; who, for fear of alarming her too much for that time, dropped the subject, and, turning the conversation on others more general, gave Arabella an opportunity of mingling in it with that wit and vivacity which was natural to her when romances were out of the question.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH, IF THE READER HAS NOT ANTICIPATED IT, HE WILL FIND AN EXPLANATION OF SOME SEEMING INCONSISTENCES IN THE FOREGOING CHAPTER.

THE countess, charmed with the wit and good sense of Arabella, could not conceal her admiration, but expressed it in terms the most obliging imaginable: and Arabella, who was excessively delighted with her, returned the compliments she made her with the most respectful tenderness.

In the midst of these mutual civilities, Arabella, in the stile of romance, intreated

intreated the counteſs to favour her with the recital of her adventures.

At the mention of this requeſt, that lady conveyed ſo much confuſion into her countenance, that Arabella, extremely embarraſſed by it, though ſhe knew not why, thought it neceſſary to apologize for the diſturbance ſhe ſeemed to have occaſioned in her.

'Pardon me, Madam,' replied the counteſs, recovering herſelf, 'if the 'uncommonneſs of your requeſt made 'a moment's reflection neceſſary to 'convince me that a young lady of 'your ſenſe and delicacy could mean 'no offence to decorum by making it. 'The word Adventures carries in it 'ſo free and licentious a ſound in the 'apprehenſions of people at this pe'riod of time, that it can hardly with 'propriety be applied to thoſe few and 'natural incidents which compoſe the 'hiſtory of a woman of honour.—And 'when I tell you,' purſued ſhe, with a ſmile, 'that I was born and chriſ'tened, had a uſeful and proper edu'cation, received the addreſſes of my 'Lord ——, through the recommend'ation of my parents, and married him 'with their conſents and my own in'clination, and that ſince we have 'lived in great harmony together, I 'have told you all the material paſ'ſages of my life, which upon enquiry 'you will find differ very little from 'thoſe of other women of the ſame 'rank, who have a moderate ſhare of 'ſenſe, prudence, and virtue.'

'Since you have already, Madam,' replied Arabella, bluſhing, 'excuſed 'me for the liberty I took with you, 'it will be unneceſſary to tell you it 'was grounded upon the cuſtoms of 'ancient times, when ladies of the 'higheſt rank and ſublimeſt virtue 'were often expoſed to a variety of 'cruel adventures, which they impart'ed in confidence to each other when 'chance brought them together.'

'Cuſtom,' ſaid the counteſs, ſmiling, 'changes the very nature of 'things; and what was honourable a 'thouſand years ago, may probably 'be looked upon as infamous now.— 'A lady in the heroick age you ſpeak 'of, would not be thought to poſſeſs 'any great ſhare of merit, if ſhe had 'not been many times carried away 'by one or other of her inſolent lovers: 'whereas a beauty in this could not 'paſs through the hands of ſeveral 'different raviſhers, without bringing 'an imputation on her chaſtity.

'The ſame actions which made a 'man a hero in thoſe times, would 'conſtitute him a murderer in theſe.— 'And the ſame ſteps which led him to 'a throne then, would infallibly con'duct him to a ſcaffold now.'

'But cuſtom, Madam,' ſaid Arabella, 'cannot poſſibly change the 'nature of virtue or vice: and ſince 'virtue is the chief characteriſtick of 'a hero, a hero in the laſt age will be 'a hero in this.'—'Though the na'tures of virtue or vice cannot be 'changed,' replied the counteſs, 'yet 'they may be miſtaken; and different 'principles, cuſtoms, and education, 'may probably change their names, if 'not their natures.'

'Sure, Madam,' ſaid Arabella, a little moved, 'you do not intend by 'this inference to prove Oroondates, 'Artaxerxes, Juba, Artaban, and 'the other heroes of antiquity, bad 'men?'

'Judging them by the rules of chriſ'tianity, and our preſent notions of 'honour, juſtice, and humanity, they 'certainly are,' replied the counteſs.

'Did they not poſſeſs all the ne'ceſſary qualifications of heroes, Ma'dam,' ſaid Arabella, 'and each in 'a ſuperlative degree?—Was not their 'valour invincible, their generoſity 'unbounded, and their fidelity invio'lable?'

'It cannot be denied,' ſaid the counteſs, 'but that their valour was invin'cible; and many thouſand men leſs 'courageous than themſelves, felt the 'fatal effects of that invincible valour, 'which was perpetually ſeeking after 'occaſions to exert itſelf. Oroondates 'gave many extraordinary proofs of 'that unbounded generoſity ſo natural 'to the heroes of his time. This 'prince being ſent by the king his 'father, at the head of an army, to 'oppoſe the Perſian monarch, who had 'unjuſtly invaded his dominions, and 'was deſtroying the lives and pro'perties of his ſubjects, having taken 'the wives and daughters of his ene'my priſoners, had by theſe means an 'opportunity to put a period to a war 'ſo deſtructive to his country; yet, 'out of a generoſity truly heroick, he releaſed them immediately without

'any

'any conditions; and falling in love 'with one of thoſe princeſſes, ſecretly 'quitted his father's court, reſided ſe-'veral years in that of the enemy of 'his father and country, engaged him-'ſelf to his daughter, and, when the 'war broke out again between the two 'kings, fought furiouſly againſt an 'army in which the king his father 'was in perſon, and ſhed the blood of 'his future ſubjects without remorſe; 'though each of thoſe ſubjects, we 'are told, would have ſacrificed his 'life to ſave that of their prince, ſo 'much was he beloved. Such are the 'actions which immortalize the heroes 'of romance, and are by the authors 'of thoſe books ſtiled glorious, god-'like, and divine: yet, judging of them 'as Chriſtians, we ſhall find them im-'pious and baſe, and directly oppoſite 'to our preſent notions of moral and 'relative duties.

'It is certain, therefore, Madam,' added the counteſs, with a ſmile, 'that 'what was virtue in thoſe days, is 'vice in ours: and to form a hero ac-'cording to our notions of them at 'preſent, it is neceſſary to give him 'qualities very different from Oroon-'dates.'

The ſecret charm in the countenance, voice, and manner of the counteſs, joined to the force of her reaſoning, could not fail of making ſome impreſſion on the mind of Arabella; but it was ſuch an impreſſion as came far ſhort of conviction. She was ſurprized, embarraſſed, perplexed, but not convinced. Heroiſm, romantick heroiſm, was deeply rooted in her heart; it was her habit of thinking, a principle imbibed from education. She could not ſeparate her ideas of glory, virtue, courage, generoſity, and honour, from the falſe repreſentations of them in the actions of Oroondates, Juba, Artaxerxes, and the reſt of the imaginary heroes. The counteſs's diſcourſe had raiſed a kind of tumult in her thoughts, which gave an air of perplexity to her lovely face, and made that lady apprehenſive ſhe had gone too far, and loſt that ground in her eſteem, which ſhe had endeavoured to acquire by a conformity to ſome of her notions and language. In this, however, ſhe was miſtaken; Arabella felt a tenderneſs for her that had already the force of a long-contracted friendſhip, and an eſteem little leſs than veneration.

When the counteſs took leave, the profeſſions of Arabella, though delivered in the language of romance, were very ſincere and affecting, and were returned with an equal degree of tenderneſs by the counteſs, who had conceived a more than ordinary affection for her.

Mr. Glanville, who could have almoſt worſhipped the counteſs for the generous deſign he ſaw ſhe had entertained, took an opportunity, as he handed her to her chair, to intreat, in a manner as earneſtly as polite, that ſhe would continue the happineſs of her acquaintance to his couſin; which, with a ſmile of mingled dignity and ſweetneſs, ſhe aſſured him of.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONCLUDES BOOK THE EIGHTH.

MR. Glanville, at his return to the dining-room, finding Arabella retired, told his father, in a rapture of joy, that the charming counteſs would certainly make a convert of Lady Bella.

'Methinks,' ſaid the baronet, 'ſhe 'has as ſtrange whims in her head as 'my niece. Ad's-heart, what a deal 'of ſtuff did ſhe talk about! A par-'cel of heroes, as ſhe calls them, with 'confounded hard names—In my 'mind, ſhe is more likely to make Lady 'Bella worſe than better.'

Mr. Glanville, a little vexed at his father's miſapprehenſion, endeavoured, with as much delicacy as he could, to ſet him right with regard to the counteſs; ſo that he brought him at laſt to confeſs ſhe managed the thing very well.

The counteſs, who had reſolved to take Arabella openly into her protection, was thinking on means to engage her to appear at the aſſembly, whither ſhe propoſed to accompany her in a modern dreſs. But her good intentions towards our lovely heroine were ſuſpended by the account ſhe received of her mother's indiſpoſition, which commanded her immediate attendance on her at her ſeat in ——.

Her ſudden departure gave Arabella an extreme uneaſineſs, and proved a cruel diſappointment to Mr. Glanville, who had founded all his hopes of her recovery on the converſation of that lady.

Sir Charles having affairs that required his preſence in London, propoſed to his niece the leaving Bath in a few days, to which ſhe conſented; and accordingly they ſet out for London in Arabella's coach and ſix, attended by ſeveral ſervants on horſeback, her women having been ſent away before in the ſtage.

Nothing very remarkable happened during this journey; ſo we ſhall not trouble our readers with ſeveral ſmall miſtakes of Arabella's, ſuch as her ſuppoſing a neat country-girl, who was riding behind a man, to be ſome lady or princeſs in diſguiſe, forced away by a lover ſhe hated, and intreating Mr. Glanville to attempt her reſcue; which occaſioned ſome little debate between her and Sir Charles, who could not be perſuaded to believe it was as ſhe ſaid, and forbid his ſon to meddle in other people's affairs. Several of theſe ſort of miſtakes, as we ſaid before, we omit; and will therefore, if our reader pleaſes, bring our heroine, without farther delay, to London.

END OF THE EIGHTH BOOK.

THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH IS RELATED AN ADMIRABLE ADVENTURE.

MISS Glanville, whoſe ſpirits were greatly exhilarated at their entrance into London, that ſeat of magnificence and pleaſure, congratulated her couſin upon the entertainment ſhe would receive from the new and ſurprizing objects which every day for a conſiderable time would furniſh her with; and ran over the catalogue of diverſions with ſuch a volubility of tongue, as drew a gentle reprimand from her father, and made her keep a ſullen ſilence till they were ſet down in St. James's Square, the place of their reſidence in town.

Sir Charles having ordered his late lady's apartment to be prepared for the accommodation of his niece, as ſoon as the firſt civilities were over, ſhe retired to her chamber, where ſhe employed herſelf in giving her women directions for placing her books, of which ſhe had brought a moderate quantity to London, in her cloſet.

Miſs Glanville, as ſoon as ſhe had diſpatched away ſome hundred cards to her acquaintance, to give them notice ſhe was in town, attended Arabella in her own apartment; and as they ſat at the tea, ſhe began to regulate the diverſions of the week, naming the Drawing Room, Park, Concert, Ranelagh, Lady ——'s Aſſembly, the Dutcheſs of ——'s Rout, Vauxhall, and a long &c. of viſits; at which Arabella, with an accent that expreſſed her ſurprize, aſked her, if ſhe ſuppoſed ſhe intended to ſtay in town three or four years.

'Lau, couſin,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'all this is but the amuſement 'of a few days.'

'Amuſement, do you ſay?' replied Arabella; 'methinks it ſeems to be 'the ſole employment of thoſe days: 'and what you call the amuſement, 'muſt of neceſſity be the buſineſs of 'life.'

'You are always ſo grave, couſin,' ſaid Miſs Glanville, 'one does not 'know what to ſay to you. However, 'I ſhan't preſs you to go to publick 'places againſt your inclination; yet 'you'll condeſcend to receive a few 'viſits, I ſuppoſe?'

'Yes,' replied Arabella; 'and if, 'among the ladies whom I ſhall ſee, I 'find any like the amiable Counteſs 'of ——, I ſhall not ſcruple to enter 'into the moſt tender amity with 'them.'

'The Counteſs of —— is very well, 'to be ſure,' ſaid Miſs Glanville; 'yet, I don't know how it is, ſhe does 'not ſuit my taſte—She is very particular in a great many things, and 'knows too much for a lady, as I 'heard my Lord Trifle ſay one day; 'then ſhe is quite unfaſhionable; ſhe 'hates cards, keeps no aſſembly, is 'ſeen but ſeldom at publick places; 'and, in my opinion, as well as in a 'great many others, is the dulleſt

'company in the world. I'm ſure I 'met her at a viſit a little before I 'went down to your ſeat, and ſhe had 'not been a quarter of an hour in the 'room, before ſhe ſet a whole circle 'of ladies a yawning.'

Arabella, though ſhe had a ſincere contempt for her couſin's manner of thinking, yet always politely concealed it; and, vexed as ſhe was at her ſneers upon the counteſs, ſhe contented herſelf with gently defending her, telling her at the ſame time, that till ſhe met with a lady who had more merit than the counteſs, ſhe ſhould always poſſeſs the firſt place in her eſteem.

Arabella, who had from her youth adopted the reſentments of her father, refuſed to make her appearance at court, which Sir Charles gently intimated to her; yet being not wholly diveſted of the curioſity natural to her ſex, ſhe condeſcended to go *incog.* to the gallery on a ball-night, accompanied by Mr. Glanville and his ſiſter, in order to behold the ſplendor of the Britiſh court.

As her romances had long familiarized her thoughts to objects of grandeur and magnificence, ſhe was not ſo much ſtruck as might have been expected with thoſe that now preſented themſelves to her view. Nor was ſhe a little diſappointed to find, that among the men ſhe ſaw none whoſe appearance came up to her ideas of the air and port of an Artaban, Oroondates, or Juba; or any of the ladies, who did not, in her opinion, fall ſhort of the perfections of Eliſa, Mandana, Statira, &c. It was remarkable, too, that ſhe never enquired how often the princeſſes had been carried away by love-captivated monarchs, or how many victories the king's ſons had gained; but ſeemed the whole time ſhe was there to have ſuſpended all her romantick ideas of glory, beauty, gallantry, and love.

Mr. Glanville was highly pleaſed with her compoſed behaviour, and a day or two after intreated her to allow him the honour of ſhewing her what was remarkable and worthy of her obſervation in this great metropolis. To this ſhe alſo conſented, and, for the greater privacy, began their travels in a hired coach.

Part of ſeveral days was taken up in this employment; but Mr. Glanville had the mortification to find ſhe was full of alluſions to her romances upon every occaſion, ſuch as her aſking the perſon who ſhews the armoury at the Tower, the names of the knights to whom each ſuit belonged, and wondering there were no devices on the ſhields or plumes of feathers in the helmets; ſhe obſerved that the lion Lyſimachus killed, was, according to the hiſtory of that prince, much larger than any of thoſe ſhe was ſhewed in the Tower, and alſo much fiercer: took notice that St. Paul's was leſs magnificent in the inſide than the temple in which Cyrus, when he went to Mandana, heard her return thanks for his ſuppoſed death; enquired if it was not cuſtomary for the king and his whole court to ſail in barges upon the Thames, as Auguſtus uſed to do upon the Tyber; whether they had not muſick and collations in the Park; and where they celebrated the juſts and tournaments.

The ſeaſon for Vauxhall being not yet over, ſhe was deſirous of once ſeeing a place, which, by the deſcription ſhe had heard of it, greatly reſembled the Gardens of Lucullus at Rome, in which the emperor, with all the princes and princeſſes of his court, were ſo nobly entertained, and where ſo many gallant converſations had paſſed among thoſe admirable perſons.

The ſingularity of her dreſs (for ſhe was covered with her veil) drew a number of gazers after her, who preſſed round her with ſo little reſpect, that ſhe was greatly embarraſſed, and had thoughts of quitting the place, delightful as ſhe owned it, immediately, when her attention was wholly engroſſed by an adventure in which ſhe ſoon intereſted herſelf very deeply.

An officer of rank in the ſea-ſervice had brought his miſtreſs, diſguiſed in a ſuit of man's or rather boy's cloaths, and a hat and feather, into the gardens. The young creature being a little intoxicated with the wine ſhe had taken too freely, was thrown ſo much off her guard as to give occaſion to ſome of the company to ſuſpect her ſex; and a gay fellow, in order to give them ſome diverſion at her expence, pretending to be affronted at ſomething ſhe ſaid, drew his ſword upon the diſguiſed fair-one, which ſo alarmed her, that ſhe ſhrieked out ſhe was a woman, and ran for protection to her lover,

who

who was ſo diſordered with liquor, that he was not able to defend her.

Miſs Glanville, ever curious and inquiſitive, demanded the cauſe why the company ran in crouds to that particular ſpot; and received for anſwer, that a gentleman had drawn his ſword upon a lady diſguiſed in a man's habit.

'Oh, heavens!' cried Arabella, 'this muſt certainly be a very notable 'adventure. The lady has doubtleſs 'ſome extraordinary circumſtances in 'her ſtory, and haply, upon enquiry, 'her misfortunes will be found to re'ſemble thoſe which obliged the beau'tiful Aſpaſia to put on the ſame diſ'guiſe, who was by that means mur'dered by the cruel Zenodorus in a fit 'of jealouſy at the amity his wife ex'preſſed for her. But can I not ſee 'this unfortunate fair-one?' added ſhe, preſſing, in ſpite of Mr. Glanville's intreaties, through the crowd—'I may 'haply be able to afford her ſome con'ſolation.'

Mr. Glanville finding his perſuaſions were not regarded, followed her with very little difficulty; for her veil falling back in her hurry, ſhe did not mind to replace it, and the charms of her face, joined to the majeſty of her perſon, and ſingularity of her dreſs, attracting every perſon's attention and reſpect, they made way for her to paſs, not a little ſurprized at the extreme earneſtneſs and ſolemnity that appeared in her countenance upon an event ſo diverting to every one elſe.

The diſguiſed lady, whom ſhe was endeavouring to approach, had thrown herſelf upon a bench in one of the boxes, trembling ſtill with the apprehenſion of the ſword, though her antagoniſt was kneeling at her feet, making love to her in mock-heroicks, for the diverſion of the company.

Her hat and peruke had fallen off in her fright; and her hair, which had been turned up under it, hung now looſely about her neck, and gave ſuch an appearance of woe to a face, which notwithſtanding the paleneſs that terror had overſpread it with, was really extremely pretty, that Arabella was equally ſtruck with compaſſion and admiration of her.

'Lovely unknown,' ſaid ſhe to her, with an air of extreme tenderneſs, 'though I am a ſtranger both to your 'name and hiſtory, yet your aſpect 'perſuadeth me your quality is not 'mean, and the condition and diſguiſe 'in which I behold you, ſhewing 'that you are unfortunate, permit me 'to offer you all the aſſiſtances in my 'power, ſeeing that I am moved there'to by my compaſſion for your diſtreſs, 'and that eſteem which the ſight of 'you moſt neceſſarily inſpire.'

Mr. Glanville was ſtruck dumb with confuſion at this ſtrange ſpeech, and at the whiſpers and ſcoffs it occaſioned among the ſpectators. He attempted to take hold of her hand, in order to lead her away, but ſhe diſengaged herſelf from him with a frown of diſpleaſure; and taking no notice of Miſs Glanville, who whiſpered with great emotion, 'Lord, couſin, how you ex'poſe yourſelf!' preſſed nearer to the beautiful diſguiſed, and again repeated her offers of ſervice.

The girl being perfectly recovered from her intoxication by the fright ſhe had been in, gazed upon Arabella with a look of extreme ſurprize: yet being moved to reſpect by the dignity of her appearance, and, ſtrange as her words ſeemed, to be by the obliging purport of them, and the affecting earneſtneſs with which they were delivered, ſhe roſe from her ſeat, and thanked her with an accent full of regard and ſubmiſſion.

'Fair maid,' ſaid Arabella, taking her hand, 'let us quit this place, where 'your diſcovery may probably ſubject 'you to more dangers: if you will be 'pleaſed to put yourſelf into my pro'tection, and acquaint me with the 'hiſtory of your misfortunes, I have 'intereſt enough with a valiant perſon 'who ſhall undertake to free you from 'your perſecutions, and re-eſtabliſh 'the repoſe of your life.'

The kneeling hero, who, as well as every one elſe that were preſent, had gazed with aſtoniſhment at Arabella during all this paſſage, perceiving ſhe was about to rob him of the diſguiſed fair, ſeized hold of the hand ſhe had at liberty, and ſwore he would not part with her.

Mr. Glanville, almoſt mad with vexation, endeavoured to get Arabella away.

'Are you mad, Madam,' ſaid he, in a whiſper, 'to make all this rout 'about a proſtitute? Do you ſee how 'every body ſtares at you? What will

'they

'they think—For Heaven's ſake, let us 'be gone!'

'What, Sir!' replied Arabella, in a rage, 'are you baſe enough to leave 'this admirable creature in the power 'of that man, who is, queſtionleſs, her 'raviſher? And will you not draw 'your ſword in her defence?'

'Hey-day!' cried the ſea-officer, waked out of his ſtupid doſe by the clamour about him; 'what's the mat-'ter here!—What are you doing?—'Where's my Lucy?—Zoons, Sir!' ſaid he to the young fellow who held her, 'what buſineſs have you with my 'Lucy?'—And, uttering a dreadful oath, drew out his ſword, and ſtaggered towards his gay rival, who obſerving the weakneſs of his antagoniſt, flouriſhed with his ſword to ſhew his courage and frighten the ladies, who all ran away ſcreaming. Arabella, taking Miſs Glanville under the arm, cried out to Mr. Glanville, as ſhe left the place, to take care of the diſtreſſed lady, and, while the two combatants were diſputing for her, to carry her away in ſafety.

But Mr. Glanville, without regarding this injunction, haſtened after her; and to pacify her, told her the lady was reſcued by her favourite lover, and carried off in triumph.

'But are you ſure,' ſaid Arabella, 'it was not ſome other of her raviſhers 'who carried her away, and not the 'perſon whom ſhe has haply favoured 'with her affection? May not the ſame 'thing have happened to her, as did 'to the beautiful Candace, queen of 'Ethiopia, who, while two of her ra-'viſhers were fighting for her, a third, 'whom ſhe took for her deliverer, 'came and carried her away?'

'But ſhe went away willingly, I 'aſſure you, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Glanville. 'Pray, don't be in any concern 'about her.'

'If ſhe went away willingly with 'him,' replied Arabella, 'it is pro-'bable it may not be another raviſher; 'and yet if this perſon that reſcued 'her happened to be in armour, and 'the vizor of his helmet down, ſhe 'might be miſtaken as well as Queen 'Candace.'

'Well, well, he was not in armour, 'Madam,' ſaid Glanville, almoſt beſide himſelf with vexation at her folly.

'You ſeem to be diſturbed, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, a little ſurprized at his peeviſh tone. 'Is there any thing in 'this adventure which concerns you? 'Nay, now I remember, you did not 'offer to defend the beautiful un-'known. I am not willing to impute 'your inaction upon ſuch an occa-'ſion to want of courage or generoſity; 'perhaps you are acquainted with her 'hiſtory, and from this knowledge re-'fuſed to engage in her defence.'

Mr. Glanville perceiving the company gather from all parts to the walk they were in, told her he would acquaint her with all he knew concerning the diſguiſed lady when they were in the coach on their return home; and Arabella, impatient for the promiſed ſtory, propoſed to leave the Gardens immediately, which was gladly complied with by Mr. Glanville, who heartily repented his having carried her thither.

CHAP. II.

WHICH ENDS WITH A VERY UNFAVOURABLE PREDICTION FOR OUR HEROINE.

AS ſoon as they were ſeated in the coach, ſhe did not fail to call upon him to perform his promiſe; but Mr. Glanville, exceſſively out of humour at her expoſing herſelf in the Gardens, replied, without conſidering whether he ſhould not offend her, that he knew no more of the diſguiſed lady than any body elſe in the place.

'How, Sir!' replied Arabella, 'did 'you not promiſe to relate her adven-'tures to me? And would you have 'me believe you knew no more of them 'than the reſt of the cavaliers and la-'dies in the place?'

'Upon my ſoul, I don't, Madam!' ſaid Glanville; 'yet what I know of 'her is ſufficient to let me underſtand 'ſhe was not worth the conſideration 'you ſeemed to have for her.'

'She cannot, ſure, be more indiſcreet 'than the fair and unfortunate Her-'mione,' replied Arabella; 'who, like 'her, put on man's apparel, through 'deſpair at the ill ſucceſs of her paſ-'ſion for Alexander—And certain it 'is, that though the beautiful Her-'mione was guilty of one great error 'which loſt her the eſteem of Alexan-'der, yet ſhe had a high and noble

'ſoul,

'ſoul, as was manifeſt by her beha-
'viour and words when ſhe was mur-
'dered by the ſword of Demetrius.—
"Oh, Death!" cried ſhe, as ſhe was
'falling, "how ſweet do I find thee,
"and how much and how earneſtly
"have I deſired thee!"

'O Lord! O Lord!' cried Mr. Glanville, hardly ſenſible of what he ſaid. 'Was there ever any thing ſo intole-
'rable?'

'You pity the unhappy Hermione,
'Sir?' ſaid Arabella, interpreting his exclamation her own way. 'Indeed,
'ſhe is well worthy of your compaſſion;
'and if the bare recital of the words
'ſhe uttered at receiving her death's
'wound, affects you ſo much, you may
'gueſs what would have been your
'agonies, had you been Demetrius
'that gave it her!'

Here Mr. Glanville groaning aloud through impatience at her abſurdities—

'This ſubject affects you deeply, I
'perceive,' ſaid Arabella. 'There is
'no queſtion but you would have acted
'in the ſame circumſtance as Deme-
'trius did: yet, let me tell you, the
'extravagancy of his rage and deſpair
'for what he had innocently commit-
'ted, was imputed to him as a great
'imbecillity, as was alſo the violent
'paſſion he conceived ſoon after for the
'fair Deidamia. You know the ac-
'cident which brought that fair prin-
'ceſs into his way.'

'Indeed I do not, Madam,' ſaid Glanville, peeviſhly.

'Well, then, I'll tell you,' ſaid Arabella; but, pauſing a little—

'The recital I have engaged myſelf
'to make,' added ſhe, 'will neceſſarily
'take up ſome hours time, as upon
'reflection I have found: ſo if you
'will diſpenſe with my beginning it
'at preſent, I will ſatisfy your curi-
'oſity to-morrow, when I may be able
'to purſue it without interruption.'

To this Mr. Glanville made no other anſwer than a bow with his head; and the coach a few moments after arriving at their own houſe, he led her to her apartment, firmly reſolved never to attend her to any more publick places while ſhe continued in the ſame ridiculous folly.

Sir Charles, who had ſeveral times been in doubt whether Arabella was not really diſordered in her ſenſes, upon Miſs Glanville's account of her behaviour at the Gardens, concluded ſhe was abſolutely mad, and held a ſhort debate with himſelf, whether he ought not to bring a commiſſion of lunacy againſt her, rather than marry her to his ſon, who he was perſuaded could never be happy with a wife ſo unaccountably abſurd. Though he only hinted at this to Mr. Glanville, in a converſation he had with him while his diſſatisfaction was at it's height, concerning Arabella, yet the bare ſuppoſition that his father ever thought of ſuch a thing threw the young gentleman into ſuch agonies, that Sir Charles, to compoſe him, proteſted he would do nothing in relation to his niece that he would not approve of. Yet he expoſtulated with him on the abſurdity of her behaviour, and the ridicule to which ſhe expoſed herſelf wherever ſhe went; appealing to him, whether in a wife he could think thoſe follies ſupportable, which in a miſtreſs occaſioned him ſo much confuſion.

Mr. Glanville, as much in love as he was, felt all the force of this inference, and acknowledged to his father that he could not think of marrying Arabella, till the whims her romances had put into her head, were eraſed by a better knowledge of life and manners. But he added, with a ſigh, that he knew not how this reformation would be effected; for ſhe had ſuch a ſtrange facility in reconciling every incident to her own fantaſtick ideas, that every new object added ſtrength to the fatal deception ſhe laboured under.

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH ARABELLA MEETS WITH ANOTHER ADMIRABLE ADVENTURE.

OUR lovely heroine had not been above a fortnight in London, before the groſs air of that ſmoaky town affected her health ſo much, that Sir Charles propoſed to her to go for a few weeks to Richmond, where he hired a houſe elegantly furniſhed for her reception.

Miſs Glanville had been too long out of that darling city to pay her the compliment of attending her conſtantly at Richmond; yet ſhe promiſed to be

as

as often as poſſible with her: and Sir Charles, having affairs that could not diſpenſe with his abſence from town, placed his ſteward in her houſe, being a perſon whoſe prudence and fidelity he could rely upon; and he, with her women, and ſome other menial ſervants, made up her equipage.

As it was not conſiſtent with decorum for Mr. Glanville to reſide in her houſe, he contented himſelf with riding to Richmond generally every day; and as long as Arabella was pleaſed with that retirement, he reſolved not to preſs her return to town till the Counteſs of —— arrived, in whoſe converſation he grounded all his hopes of her cure.

At that ſeaſon of the year, Richmond not being quite deſerted by company, Arabella was viſited by ſeveral ladies of faſhion; who, charmed with her affability, politeneſs, and good ſenſe, were ſtrangely perplexed how to account for ſome peculiarities in her dreſs and manner of thinking.

Some of the younger ſort, from whom Arabella's extraordinary beauty took away all pretenſions to equality on that ſcore, made themſelves extremely merry with her oddneſſes, as they called them, and gave broad intimations that her head was not right.

As for Arabella, whoſe taſte was as delicate, ſentiments as refined, and judgment as clear as any perſon's could be who believed the authenticity of Scudery's romances, ſhe was ſtrangely diſappointed to find no lady with whom ſhe could converſe with any tolerable pleaſure: and that inſtead of Clelias, Statiras, Mandanas, &c. ſhe found only Miſs Glanvilles among all ſhe knew.

The compariſon ſhe drew between ſuch as theſe and the charming Counteſs of ——, whom ſhe had juſt begun to be acquainted with at Bath, increaſed her regret for the interruption that was given to ſo agreeable a friendſhip: and it was with infinite pleaſure Mr. Glanville heard her repeatedly wiſh for the arrival of that admirable lady (as ſhe always called her) in town.

Not being able to reliſh the inſipid converſation of the young ladies that viſited her at Richmond, her chief amuſement was to walk in the park there; which, becauſe of it's rural privacy, was extremely agreeable to her inclinations.

Here ſhe indulged contemplation, leaning on the arm of her faithful Lucy, while her other women walked at ſome diſtance behind her, and two men-ſervants kept her always in ſight.

One evening when ſhe was returning from her uſual walk, ſhe heard the ſound of a woman's voice, which ſeemed to proceed from a tuft of trees that hid her from her view; and ſtopping a moment, diſtinguiſhed ſome plaintive accents, which increaſing her curioſity, ſhe advanced towards the place, telling Lucy ſhe was reſolved, if poſſible, to diſcover who the diſtreſſed lady was, and what was the ſubject of her affliction.

As ſhe drew nearer with ſoftly-treading ſteps, ſhe could diſtinguiſh through the branches of the trees, now deſpoiled of great part of their leaves, two women ſeated on the ground, their backs towards her, and one of them, with her head gently reclined on the other's ſhoulder, ſeemed by her mournful action to be weeping; for ſhe often put her handkerchief to her eyes, breathing every time a ſigh, which, as Arabella phraſed it, ſeemed to proceed from the deepeſt receſſes of her heart.

This adventure, more worthy indeed to be ſtiled an adventure than all our fair heroine had ever yet met with, and ſo conformable to what ſhe had read in romances, filled her heart with eager expectation. She made a ſign to Lucy to make no noiſe, and creeping ſtill cloſer towards the place where this afflicted perſon ſat, ſhe heard her diſtinctly utter theſe words, which, however, were often interrupted with her ſighs—

'Ah, Ariamenes! whom I, to my 'misfortune, have too much loved, 'and whom, to my misfortune, I fear 'I ſhall never ſufficiently hate, ſince 'that Heaven, and thy cruel ingrati-'tude, have ordained that thou ſhalt 'never be mine, and that ſo many 'ſweet and dear hopes are for ever 'taken from me, return me at leaſt, 'ungrateful man! return me thoſe teſ-'timonies of my innocent affection, 'which were ſometimes ſo dear and 'precious to thee. Return me thoſe 'favours, which, all innocent as they 'were, are become criminal by thy

'crime,

'crime. Return me, cruel man, re-
'turn me thoſe relicks of my heart
'which thou detaineſt in deſpight of
'me, and which, notwithſtanding thy
'infidelity, I cannot recover.'

Here, her tears interrupting her ſpeech, Arabella, being impatient to know the hiſtory of this afflicted perſon, came ſoftly round to the other ſide, and ſhewing herſelf, occaſioned ſome diſturbance to the ſad unknown; who, riſing from her ſeat, with her face averted, as if aſhamed of having ſo far diſcloſed her ſorrows in a ſtranger's hearing, endeavoured to paſs by her unnoticed.

Arabella, perceiving her deſign, ſtopped her with a very graceful action, and with a voice all compoſed of ſweetneſs, earneſtly conjured her to relate her hiſtory.

'Think not, lovely unknown,' ſaid ſhe, (for ſhe was really very pretty) 'that my endeavours to detain you 'proceed from an indiſcreet curioſity. 'It is true, ſome complaints which 'have fallen from your fair mouth, 'have raiſed in me a deſire to be ac-'quainted with your adventures; but 'this deſire has it's foundation in that 'compaſſion your complaints have fill-'ed me with: and if I wiſh to know 'your misfortunes, it is only with a 'view of affording you ſome conſola-'tion.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' ſaid the fair afflicted, gazing on Arabella with many ſigns of admiration, 'if my 'confuſion at being over-heard in a 'place I had choſen to bewail my mis-'fortunes, made me be guilty of ſome 'appearance of rudeneſs, not ſeeing 'the admirable perſon I wanted to 'avoid. But,' purſued ſhe, heſitating a little, 'thoſe characters of beauty I 'behold in your face, and the grace-'fulneſs of your deportment, convin-'cing me you can be of no ordinary 'rank, I will the leſs ſcruple to ac-'quaint you with my adventures, and 'the cauſe of thoſe complaints you 'have heard proceed from my mouth.'

Arabella aſſuring her, that whatever her misfortunes were, ſhe might depend upon all the aſſiſtance in her power, ſeated herſelf near her at the foot of the tree where ſhe had been ſitting; and giving Lucy orders to join the reſt of her women, and ſtay at a diſtance till ſhe made a ſign to them to advance, ſhe prepared to liſten to the adventures of the fair unknown; who, after ſome little pauſe, began to relate them in this manner.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH IS RELATED THE HISTORY OF THE PRINCESS OF GAUL.

'MY name, Madam, is Cyne-
'cia; my birth illuſtrious 'enough, ſeeing that I am the daugh-'ter of a ſovereign prince, who poſ-'ſeſſes a large and ſpacious territory 'in what is now called Ancient Gaul.'

'What, Madam!' interrupted Arabella, 'are you a princeſs, then?'

'Queſtionleſs I am, Madam,' replied the lady; 'and a princeſs happy 'and proſperous, till the felicity of 'my life was interrupted by the perfi-'dious Ariamenes.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' interrupted Arabella again, 'that my ignorance of 'your quality made me be deficient in 'thoſe reſpects which are due to your 'high birth, and which, notwith-'ſtanding thoſe characters of greatneſs 'I might read in the lineaments of 'your viſage, I yet neglected to 'pay.'

'Alas, Madam!' ſaid the ſtranger, 'that little beauty which the Heavens 'beſtowed on me only to make me 'wretched, as by the event it has 'proved, has long ſince taken it's 'flight, and, together with my happi-'neſs, I have loſt that which made me 'unhappy. And certain it is, grief 'has made ſuch ravages among what 'might once have been thought tole-'rable in my face, that I ſhould not 'be ſurprized if my being no longer 'fair, ſhould make you, with diffi-'culty, believe I ever was ſo.'

Arabella, after a proper compliment in anſwer to this ſpeech, intreated the princeſs to go on with her hiſtory; who, heſitating a little, complied with her requeſt.

'Be pleaſed to know then, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'that being bred up with all 'imaginable tenderneſs in my father's 'court, I had no ſooner arrived to 'my ſixteenth year, than I ſaw myſelf 'ſurrounded with lovers; who, ne-'verthleſs, ſuch was the ſeverity with

'which I behaved myſelf, concealed 'their paſſions under a reſpectful ſi-'lence, well knowing baniſhment 'from my preſence was the leaſt pu-'niſhment they had to expect, if they 'preſumed to declare their ſentiments 'to me.

'I lived in this faſhion, Madam, 'for two years longer, rejoicing in 'the inſenſibility of my own heart, 'and triumphing in the ſufferings of 'others, when my tranquillity was all 'at once interrupted by an accident 'which I am going to relate to you.'

The princeſs ſtopped here to give vent to ſome ſighs which a cruel remembrance forced from her; and continuing in a deep muſe for five or ſix minutes, reſumed her ſtory in this manner—

'It being my cuſtom to walk in a 'foreſt adjoining to one of my fa-'ther's ſummer reſidences, attended 'only by my women, one day when I 'was taking this amuſement, I per-'ceived at ſome diſtance a man lying 'on the ground; and impelled by a 'ſudden curioſity, I advanced towards 'this perſon, whom, upon a nearer 'view, I perceived to have been 'wounded very much, and fainted 'away through loſs of blood. His 'habit being very rich, I concluded 'by that he was of no mean quality: 'but when I had looked upon his 'countenance, pale and languiſhing 'as it was, methought there appeared 'ſo many marks of greatneſs, ac-'companied with a ſweetneſs ſo hap-'pily blended, that my attention was 'engaged in an extraordinary manner, 'and intereſted me ſo powerfully in 'his ſafety, that I commanded ſome 'of my women to run immediately 'for proper aſſiſtance, and convey him 'to the caſtle, while I directed others 'to throw ſome water in his face, and 'to apply ſome linen to his wounds, 'to ſtop the bleeding.

'Theſe charitable cares reſtored the 'wounded ſtranger to his ſenſes; he 'opened his eyes, and turning them 'ſlowly to the objects around him, 'fixed at laſt their languiſhing looks 'on me: when moved, as it ſhould 'ſeem, to ſome reſpect by what he ſaw 'in my countenance, he roſe with 'ſome difficulty from the ground, and 'bowing almoſt down to it again, by 'that action ſeemed to pay me his ac-'knowledgments for what he ſup-'poſed I had done for his preſervation.

'His extreme weakneſs having 'obliged him to creep towards a tree, 'againſt the back of which he ſup-'ported himſelf, I went nearer to him, 'and having told him the condition in 'which I found him, and the orders I 'had diſpatched for aſſiſtance, requeſt-'ed him to acquaint me with his name 'and quality, and the adventure which 'had brought him into that condition.

"My name, Madam," anſwered he, "is Ariamenes; my birth is noble "enough; I have ſpent ſome years in "my travels, and was returning to "my native country; when paſſing "through this foreſt I was ſeized with "an inclination to ſleep. I had tied "my horſe to a tree, and retiring ſome "few paces off, ſtretched myſelf at the "foot of a large oak, whoſe branches "promiſed me an agreeable ſhade. I "had not yet cloſed my eyes, when the "ſlumber I invited was diſſipated by "the ſound of ſome voices near me.

"A curioſity, not natural to me, "made me liſten to the diſcourſe of "theſe perſons, whom, by the tone of "their voices, though I could not ſee "them, I knew to be men.

"In ſhort, Madam, I was a wit-"neſs to a moſt horrible ſcheme which "they concerted together; my weak-"neſs will not permit me to enter into "an exact detail of all I heard: the "reſult of their conference was, to "ſeize the princeſs of this country, "and carry her off."

'Here,' purſued Cynecia, 'I in-'terrupted the ſtranger with a loud 'cry, which giving him to underſtand 'who I was, he apologized in the moſt 'graceful manner imaginable for the 'little reſpect he had hitherto paid me.

'I then intreated him to tell me, if 'he had any opportunity of hearing 'the name of my deſigned raviſher; 'to which he replied, that he under-'ſtood it to be Taxander.

'This man, Madam, was one of 'my father's favourites, and had been 'long ſecretly in love with me.

'Ariamenes then informed me, that 'being enflamed with rage againſt 'theſe impious villains, he roſe from 'the ground, re-mounted his horſe, 'and defied the two traitors aloud,

'threatening

'threatening them with death, unleſs 'they abandoned their impious de-'ſign.

'Taxander made no anſwer, but 'ruſhed furiouſly upon him, and had 'the baſeneſs to ſuffer his wicked aſ-'ſociate to aſſiſt him: but the valiant 'Ariamenes, though he ſpoke mo-'deſtly of his victory, yet gave me to 'underſtand that he had made both 'the villains abandon their wicked 'enterprize, with their lives; and that 'diſmounting, in order to ſee if they 'were quite dead, he found himſelf ſo 'faint with the wounds he had re-'ceived from them both, that he had 'not ſtrength to re-mount his horſe; 'but crawling on, in hopes of meet-'ing with ſome aſſiſtance, fainted away 'at laſt through wearineſs and loſs of 'blood.

'While he was giving me this ac-'count, the chariot I had ſent for ar-'rived, and having made him ſuch ac-'knowledgments as the obligation I 'had received from him demanded, I 'cauſed him to get into the chariot; 'and ſending one with him to acquaint 'the prince, my father, with all that 'had happened, and the merit of the 'valiant ſtranger, I returned the ſame 'way I came with my women, my 'thoughts being wholly engroſſed by 'this unknown.

'The ſervice he had done me filled 'me with a gratitude and eſteem for 'him, which prepared my heart for 'thoſe tender ſentiments I afterwards 'entertained, to the ruin of my re-'poſe.

'I will not tire your patience, Ma-'dam, with a minute detail of all the 'ſucceeding paſſages of my ſtory; it 'ſhall ſuffice to tell you, that Aria-'menes was received with extraordi-'nary marks of eſteem by my father; 'that his cure was ſoon compleated; 'and that having vowed himſelf to my 'ſervice, and declared an unalterable 'paſſion for me, I permitted him to 'love me, and gave him that ſhare in 'my heart, which, I fear, not all his 'infidelities will ever deprive him of.

'His attachment to me was ſoon 'ſuſpected by Taxander's relations, 'who having ſecretly vowed his ruin, 'endeavoured to diſcover if I had ad-'mitted his addreſſes; and having 'made themſelves maſters of our ſe-'crets, by means of the treachery of 'one of my women, procured infor-'mation to be given to my father of 'our mutual paſſion.

'Alas! what miſchiefs did not this 'fatal diſcovery produce! my father, 'enraged to the laſt degree at this in-'telligence, confined me to my apart-'ments, and ordered Ariamenes to 'leave his dominions within three 'days.

'Spare me, Madam, the repetition 'of what paſſed at our laſt ſad inter-'view, which, by large bribes to my 'guards, he obtained.

'His tears, his agonies, his vows 'of everlaſting fidelity, ſo ſoothed my 'melancholy at parting with him, and 'perſuaded me of his conſtancy, that 'I waited for ſeveral months, with 'perfect tranquillity, for the perform-'ance of the promiſe he made me, to 'do my father ſuch conſiderable ſer-'vices in the war he was engaged in 'with one of his neighbours, as 'ſhould oblige him to give me to him 'for his reward.

'But, alas! two years rolled on 'without bringing back the unfaith-'ful Ariamenes. My father died, 'and my brother, who ſucceeded him, 'being about to force me to marry a 'prince whom I deteſted, I ſecretly 'quitted the court, and, attended only 'by this faithful confidant whom you 'behold with me, and ſome few of my 'truſty domeſticks, I came hither in 'ſearch of Ariamenes, he having told 'me this country was the place of his 'birth.

'Polenor, the moſt prudent and 'faithful of my ſervants, undertook 'to find out the ungrateful Aria-'menes, whom yet I was willing to 'find excuſes for; but all his enqui-'ries were to no effect; the name of 'Ariamenes was not known in this 'part of the world.

'Tired out with unſucceſsful en-'quiries, I reſolved to ſeek out ſome 'obſcure place, where I might in ſe-'cret lament my misfortunes, and ex-'pect the end of them in death. My 'attendants found me out ſuch a re-'treat as I wanted, in a neighbouring 'village, which they call Twicken-'ham, I think; from whence I often 'make excurſions to this park, at-'tended only as you ſee, and here in-

'dulge myſelf in complaints upon the 'cruelty of my deſtiny.'

The ſorrowful Cynecia here ended her ſtory, to which, in the courſe of her relation, ſhe had given a great many interruptions through the violence of her grief: and Arabella, after having ſaid every thing ſhe could think on to alleviate her affliction, earneſtly entreated her to accept of an aſylum at her houſe; where ſhe ſhould be treated with all the reſpect due to her illuſtrious birth.

The afflicted lady, though ſhe reſpectfully declined this offer, yet expreſſed a great deſire of commencing a ſtrict amity with our fair heroine, who, on her part, made her the moſt tender proteſtations of friendſhip.

The evening being almoſt cloſed, they parted with great reluctancy on both ſides; mutually promiſing to meet in the ſame place the next day.

Cynecia, having enjoined her new friend to abſolute ſecrecy, Arabella was under a neceſſity of keeping this adventure to herſelf. And though ſhe longed to tell Mr. Glanville, who came to viſit her the next day, that the counteſs was extremely miſtaken, when ſhe maintained there were no more wandering princeſſes in the world, yet the engagement ſhe had ſubmitted to kept her ſilent.

CHAP. V.

A VERY MYSTERIOUS CHAPTER.

ARABELLA, who impatiently longed for the hour of meeting the fair princeſs, with whom ſhe was extremely delighted, conſulted her watch ſo often, and diſcovered ſo much reſtleſſneſs and anxiety, that Mr. Glanville began to be ſurprized; and the more, as ſhe peremptorily commanded him not to attend her in her evening walk. This prohibition, which, though he durſt not diſpute, he ſecretly reſolved to diſobey; and as ſoon as ſhe ſet out for the park with her uſual attendants, he ſlipped out by a back-door, and keeping her in his ſight, himſelf unſeen, he ventured to watch her motions.

As he had expected to unravel ſome great myſtery, he was agreeably diſappointed to find ſhe continued her walk in the park with great compoſure; and though ſhe was ſoon joined by the imaginary princeſs, yet conceiving her to be ſome young lady, with whom ſhe had commenced an acquaintance at Richmond, his heart was at reſt; and for fear of diſpleaſing her, he took a contrary path from that ſhe was in, that he might not meet her, yet reſolved to ſtay till he thought ſhe would be inclined to return, and then ſhew himſelf, and conduct her home. A ſolicitude for which he did not imagine ſhe need be offended.

The two ladies being met, after reciprocal compliments, the princeſs intreated Arabella to relate her adventures; who not being willing to violate the laws of romance, which require an unbounded confidence upon theſe occaſions, began very ſuccinctly to recount the hiſtory of her life; which, as ſhe managed it, contained events almoſt as romantick and incredible as any in her romances; winding them up with a confeſſion that ſhe did not hate Mr. Glanville, whom ſhe acknowledged to be one of the moſt faithful and zealous of lovers.

Cynecia, with a ſigh, congratulated her upon the fidelity of a lover, who, by her deſcription, was worthy the place he poſſeſſed in her eſteem; and expreſſing a wiſh, that ſhe could ſee, unobſerved by him, this gallant and generous perſon. Arabella, who that moment eſpied him at a diſtance, yet advancing towards them, told her, with a bluſh that overſpread all her face, that her curioſity might be ſatisfied in the manner ſhe wiſhed, 'For 'yonder,' added ſhe, 'is the perſon 'we have been talking of.'

Cynecia, at theſe words, looking towards the place where her fair friend had directed, no ſooner caſt her eyes upon Mr. Glanville, than giving a loud cry, ſhe ſunk into the arms of Arabella, who, aſtoniſhed and perplexed as ſhe was, eagerly held them out to ſupport her.

Finding her in a ſwoon, ſhe diſpatched Lucy, who was near her, to look for ſome water to throw in her face; but that lady, breathing a deep ſigh, opened her languiſhing eyes, and fixing a melancholy look upon Arabella—

'Ah! Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'wonder 'not

'not at my affliction and ſurprize, 'ſince in the perſon of your lover I 'behold the ungrateful Ariamenes.'

'Oh, heavens! my fair princeſs,' replied Arabella, 'what is it you ſay? 'Is it poſſible Glanville can be Aria-'menes?'

'He,' cried the afflicted princeſs, with a diſordered accent, 'he whom I 'now behold, and whom you call 'Glanville, was once Ariamenes, the 'perjured, the ungrateful Ariamenes. 'Adieu, Madam, I cannot bear his 'ſight; I will hide myſelf from the 'world for ever; nor need you fear a 'rival or an enemy in the unfortunate 'Cynecia, who, if poſſible, will ceaſe 'to love the unfaithful Ariamenes, 'and will never hate the beautiful 'Arabella.'

Saying this, without giving her time to anſwer, ſhe took hold of her confidant by the arm, and went away with ſo much ſwiftneſs, that ſhe was out of ſight before Arabella was enough recovered from her aſtoniſhment to be able to intreat her ſtay.

Our charming heroine, ignorant till now of the true ſtate of her heart, was ſurprized to find it aſſaulted at once by all the paſſions which attend diſappointed love. Grief, rage, jealouſy, and deſpair, made ſo cruel a war in her gentle boſom, that, unable either to expreſs or to conceal the ſtrong emotions with which ſhe was agitated, ſhe gave way to a violent burſt of tears, leaning her head upon Lucy's ſhoulder, who wept as heartily as her lady, though ignorant of the cauſe of her affliction.

Mr. Glanville, who was now near enough to take notice of her poſture, came running with eager haſte to ſee what was the matter; when Arabella, rouzed from her extaſy of grief by the ſound of his ſteps, lifted up her head, and ſeeing him approach—

'Lucy,' cried ſhe, trembling with the violence of her reſentment, 'tell 'that traitor to keep out of my ſight. 'Tell him, I forbid him ever to ap-'pear before me again. And, tell 'him,' added ſhe, with a ſigh that ſhook her whole tender frame, 'all 'the blood in his body is too little to 'waſh away his guilt, or to pacify my 'indignation.'

Then haſtily turning away, ſhe ran towards her other attendants, who were at ſome diſtance; and joining her women, proceeded directly home.

Mr. Glanville, amazed at this action, was making after her as faſt as he could, when Lucy croſſing in his way, cried out to him to ſtop.

'My lady,' ſaid ſhe, 'bid me tell 'you, traitor——'

'Hey-day!' interrupted Glanville, 'what the devil does the girl mean?'

'Pray, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'let me de-'liver my meſſage; I ſhall forget if 'you ſpeak to me till I have ſaid it 'all—Stay, let me ſee, what comes 'next?'

'No more traitor, I hope,' ſaid Glanville.

'No, Sir,' ſaid Lucy; 'but there 'was ſomething about waſhing in 'blood, and you muſt keep out of her 'ſight, and not appear before the na-'tion—Oh, dear! I have forgot it 'half: my lady was in ſuch a piteous 'taking, I forgot it, I believe, as 'ſoon as ſhe ſaid it. What ſhall I 'do?'

'No matter,' ſaid Glanville, 'I'll 'overtake her, and aſk——'

'No, no, Sir,' ſaid Lucy, 'pray 'don't do that, Sir! my lady will be 'very angry; I'll venture to aſk her 'to tell me over again, and come back 'and let you know it.'

'But tell me,' replied Glanville, 'was any thing the matter with your 'lady? She was in a piteous taking, 'you ſay?'

'Oh, dear! yes, Sir,' ſaid Lucy; 'but I was not bid to ſay any thing 'about that. To be ſure, my lady 'did cry ſadly, and ſighed as if her 'heart would break; but I don't know 'what was the matter with her.'

'Well,' ſaid Glanville, exceſſively ſhocked at this intelligence, 'go to 'your lady; I am going home—You 'may bring me her meſſage to my own 'apartment.'

Lucy did as ſhe was deſired; and Mr. Glanville, impatient as he was to unravel the myſtery, yet dreading leſt his preſence ſhould make Arabella be guilty of ſome extravagance before the ſervants who were with her, he followed ſlowly after her, reſolving, if poſſible, to procure a private interview with the lovely viſionary, for whoſe ſorrow, though he ſuſpected it was owing to ſome ridiculous cauſe, he could not help being affected.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

NOT MUCH PLAINER THAN THE FORMER.

ARABELLA, who had walked as faſt as her legs would carry her, got home before Lucy could overtake her, and retiring to her chamber, gave way to a freſh burſt of grief, and bewailed the infidelity of Glanville in terms befitting a Clelia or Mandana.

As ſoon as ſhe ſaw Lucy enter, ſhe ſtarted from her chair with great emotion—

'Thou comeſt,' ſaid ſhe, 'I know, 'to intercede for that ungrateful man, 'whoſe infidelity I am weak enough 'to lament: but open not thy mouth, 'I charge thee, in his defence.'

'No, indeed, Madam!' ſaid Lucy.

'Nor bring me any account of his 'tears, his deſperation, or his deſpair,' ſaid Arabella; 'ſince, queſtionleſs, he 'will feign them all to deceive me.'

Here Glanville, who had watched Lucy's coming, and had followed her into Arabella's apartment, appeared at the door.

'Oh, heavens!' cried Arabella, lifting up her fine eyes, 'can it be that 'this diſloyal man, unawed by the 'diſcovery of his guilt, again preſumes 'to approach me!'

'Deareſt couſin,' ſaid Glanville, 'what is the meaning of all this?—'How have I diſobliged you?—What 'is my offence? I beſeech you, tell me.'

'Aſk * the inconſtant Ariamenes,' replied Arabella, 'the offence of the 'ungrateful Glanville. The betray-'er of Cynecia can beſt anſwer that 'queſtion to the deceiver of Arabella: 'and the guilt of the one can only 'be compared to the crimes of the 'other.'

'Good God!' interrupted Mr. Glanville, fretting exceſſively, 'what am I 'to underſtand by all this? On my 'ſoul, Madam, I don't know the 'meaning of one word you ſay!'

'Oh, diſſembler!' ſaid Arabella, 'is it thus that thou wouldeſt impoſe 'upon my incredulity? Does not the 'name of Ariamenes make thee trem-'ble, then? And canſt thou hear that 'of Cynecia without confuſion?'

'Dear Lady Bella,' ſaid Glanville, ſmiling, 'what are theſe names to me?'

'Falſe man,' interrupted Arabella, 'doſt thou preſume to ſport with thy 'crimes, then? Are not the treacheries 'of Ariamenes the crimes of Glan-'ville? Could Ariamenes be falſe to 'the princeſs of Gaul, and can Glan-'ville be innocent towards Arabella?'

Mr. Glanville, who had never heard her in his opinion talk ſo ridiculouſly before, was ſo amazed at the incomprehenſible ſtuff ſhe uttered with ſo much emotion, that he began to fear her intellects were really touched. This thought gave him a concern that ſpread itſelf in a moment over his countenance. He gazed on her with a fixed attention, dreading, yet wiſhing ſhe would ſpeak again; equally divided between his hopes that her next ſpeech would remove his ſuſpicion, and his fears, that it might more confirm them.

Arabella taking notice of his penſive poſture, turned away her head, leſt, by beholding him, ſhe ſhould relent, and treat him with leſs ſeverity than ſhe had intended, making at the ſame time a ſign to him to be gone.

'Indeed, Lady Bella,' ſaid Glanville, who underſtood her perfectly well, 'I cannot leave you in this tem-'per. I muſt know how I have been 'ſo unfortunate as to offend you.'

Arabella, no longer able to contain herſelf, burſt into tears at this queſtion: with one hand ſhe made repeated ſigns to him to be gone; with the other ſhe held her handkerchief to her eyes, vexed and aſhamed of her weakneſs.

But Mr. Glanville, exceſſively ſhocked at this ſight, inſtead of leaving her, threw himſelf on his knees before her, and taking her hand, which he tenderly preſſed to his lips—

'Good God! my deareſt couſin,' ſaid he, 'how you diſtract me by this 'behaviour! Sure ſomething extraor-'dinary muſt be the matter. What 'can it be that thus afflicts you?—Am 'I the cauſe of theſe tears?—Can I 'have offended you ſo much?—Speak,

* This enigmatical way of ſpeaking upon ſuch occaſions, is of great uſe in the voluminous French romances; ſince the doubt and confuſion it is the cauſe of, both to the accuſed and accuſer, gives riſe to a great number of ſucceeding miſtakes, and conſequently adventures.

'dear

'dear Madam—Let me know my 'crime. Yet, may I periſh if I am 'conſcious of any towards you!'

'Diſloyal man!' ſaid Arabella, diſengaging her hand from his, 'does 'then the crime of Ariamenes ſeem ſo 'light in thy apprehenſion, that thou 'canſt hope to be thought innocent 'by Arabella? No, no, ungrateful 'man! the unfortunate Cynecia ſhall 'have no cauſe to ſay that I will tri'umph in her ſpoils. I myſelf will 'be the miniſter of her revenge; and 'Glanville ſhall ſuffer for the crime 'of Ariamenes.'

'Who the devil is this Ariamenes?' cried Glanville, riſing in a paſſion; 'and why am I to ſuffer for his crime, 'pray? For Heaven's ſake, dear couſin, 'don't let your imagination wander 'thus. Upon my ſoul, I don't be'lieve there is any ſuch perſon as Ari'amenes in the world!'

'Vile equivocator!' ſaid Arabella; 'Ariamenes, though dead to Cynecia, 'is alive to the deluded Arabella. 'The crimes of Ariamenes are the 'guilt of Glanville: and if the one 'has made himſelf unworthy of the 'princeſs of Gaul by his perfidy and 'ingratitude, the other, by his baſe'neſs and deceit, merits nothing but 'contempt and deteſtation from Ara'bella.'

'Frenzy, by my ſoul!' cried Glanville, mutteringly between his teeth: 'this is downright frenzy. What 'ſhall I do?'

'Hence, from my preſence,' reſumed Arabella, 'falſe and ungrateful 'man! Perſecute me no more with the 'hateful offers of thy love. From 'this moment I baniſh thee from my 'thoughts for ever; and neither as 'Glanville, or as Ariamenes, will I 'ever behold thee more.'

'Stay, dear couſin,' ſaid Glanville, holding her, (for ſhe was endeavouring to ruſh by him, unwilling he ſhould ſee the tears that had overſpread her face as ſhe pronounced thoſe words) 'hear me, I beg you, but one word. 'Who is it you mean by Ariamenes? '—Is it me?—Tell me, Madam, I 'beſeech you—This is ſome horrid 'miſtake—You have beeen impoſed 'upon by ſome villainous artifice—'Speak, dear Lady Bella—Is it me 'you mean by Ariamenes? For ſo 'your laſt words ſeemed to hint.'

Arabella, without regarding what he ſaid, ſtruggled violently to force her hand from his; and finding him ſtill earneſt to detain her, told him, with an enraged voice, that ſhe would call for help, if he did not unhand her directly.

Poor Glanville, at this menace, ſubmiſſively dropt her hand; and the moment ſhe was free, ſhe flew out of the room, and locking herſelf up in her cloſet, ſent her commands to him by one of her women, whom ſhe called to her, to leave her apartment immediately.

CHAP. VII.

CONTAINING INDEED NO GREAT MATTERS, BUT BEING A PRELUDE TO GREATER.

MR. Glanville, who ſtood fixed like a ſtatue in the place where Arabella had left him, was rouzed by this meſſage, which, though palliated a little by the girl that delivered it, who was not quite ſo punctual as Lucy, nevertheleſs filled him with extreme confuſion. He obeyed however immediately, and retiring to his own apartment, endeavoured to recal to his memory all Lady Bella had ſaid.

The ambiguity of her ſtile, which had led him into a ſuſpicion he had never entertained before, her laſt words had partly explained, if, as he underſtood ſhe did, ſhe meant him by Ariamenes. Taking this for granted, he eaſily conceived ſome plot, grounded on her romantick notions, had been laid, to prepoſſeſs her againſt him.

Sir George's behaviour to her ruſhed that moment into his thoughts; he inſtantly recollected all his fooleries, his hiſtory, his letter, his converſation, all apparently copied from thoſe books ſhe was ſo fond of, and probably done with a view to ſome other deſign upon her.

Theſe reflections, joined to his new-awaked ſuſpicions that he was in love with her, convinced him he was the author of their preſent miſunderſtanding; and that he had impoſed ſome new fallacy upon Arabella, in order to promote a quarrel between them.

Fired almoſt to madneſs at this thought, he ſtamped about his room, vowing

vowing revenge upon Sir George, execrating romances, and curſing his own ſtupidity, for not diſcovering Sir George was his rival, and, knowing his plotting talent, not providing againſt his artifices.

His firſt reſolutions were, to ſet out immediately for Sir George's ſeat, and force him to confeſs the part he had acted againſt him: but a moment's conſideration convinced him, that was not the moſt probable place to find him in, ſince it was much more likely he was waiting the ſucceſs of his ſchemes in London, or perhaps at Richmond.

Next to ſatiating his vengeance, the pleaſure of detecting him in ſuch a manner, that he could not poſſibly deny or palliate his guilt, was next his heart.

He reſolved therefore to give it out, that he was gone to London, to make Lady Bella believe it was in obedience to her commands that he had left her, with a purpoſe not to return till he had cleared his innocence; but, in reality, to conceal himſelf in his own apartment, and ſee what effects his reputed abſence would produce.

Having thus taken his reſolution, he ſent for Mr. Roberts, his father's ſteward, to whoſe care he had entruſted Lady Bella in her retirement, and acquainting him with part of his apprehenſions with regard to Sir George's attempts upon his couſin, he imparted to him his deſign of ſtaying concealed there, in order to diſcover more effectually thoſe attempts, and to preſerve Lady Bella from any conſequence of them.

Mr. Roberts approved of his deſign; and aſſured him of his vigilance and care, both in concealing his ſtay, and alſo in giving him notice of every thing that paſſed.

Mr. Glanville then wrote a ſhort billet to Arabella, expreſſing his grief for her diſpleaſure, his departure in obedience to her orders, and his reſolution not to appear in her preſence, till he could give her convincing proofs of his innocence.

This letter he ſent by Roberts, which Arabella condeſcended to read, but would return no anſwer.

Mr. Glanville then mounting his horſe, which Roberts had ordered to be got ready, rode away, and leaving him at a houſe he ſometimes put up at, returned on foot, and was let in by Mr. Roberts at the garden-door, and conducted unſeen to his chamber.

While he paſſed that night, and great part of the next day, meditating on the treachery of Sir George, and ſoothing his uneaſineſs with the hopes of revenge, Arabella, no leſs diſquieted, muſed on the infidelity of her lover, the deſpair of Cynecia, and the impoſſibility of her ever being happy. Then ranſacking her memory for inſtances in her romances of ladies equally unfortunate with herſelf, ſhe would ſometimes compare herſelf to one lady, ſometimes to another, adapting their ſentiments, and making uſe of their language in her complaints.

Great part of the day being ſpent in this manner, the uneaſy reſtleſſneſs of her mind made her wiſh to ſee Cynecia again. She longed to aſk her a hundred queſtions about the unfaithful Ariamenes, which the ſuddenneſs of her departure, and her own aſtoniſhment, prevented her from doing, when ſhe made that fatal diſcovery, which had coſt her ſo much uneaſineſs.

Sometimes a faint hope would ariſe in her mind that Cynecia might be miſtaken, through the great reſemblance that poſſibly was between Ariamenes and Glanville.

She remembered that Mandana had been deceived by the likeneſs of Cyrus to Spitridates; and concluded that illuſtrious prince inconſtant, becauſe Spitridates, whom ſhe took for Cyrus, ſaw her carried away, without offering to reſcue her.

Dwelling with eagerneſs upon this thought, becauſe it afforded her a temporary relief from others more tormenting, ſhe reſolved to go to the park, though ſhe had but little hopes of finding Cynecia there; ſuppoſing it but too probable that the diſturbance which the ſight, or fancied ſight of Ariamenes had given her, would confine her for ſome days to her chamber. Yet, however ſmall the probability was of meeting with her, ſhe could not reſiſt the impatient deſire ſhe felt of going to ſeek her.

Diſpenſing, therefore, with the attendance of any other ſervant but Lucy, ſhe left her apartment, with a deſign of reſuming her uſual walk, when ſhe was met, at her ſtepping out of the door,

Plate III. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & C.° May 31.1783.

door, by Lady L—'s three daughters, (who had viſited her during her reſidence at Richmond) and another young lady.

Theſe ladies, who, to vary the ſcene of their rural diverſions, were going to croſs over to Twickenham, and walk there, preſſed Lady Bella to accompany them. Our melancholy heroine refuſed them at firſt, but upon their repeated importunity, recollecting that the princeſs of Gaul had informed her ſhe reſided there, ſhe conſented to go, in hopes ſome favourable chance might bring her in their way, or diſcover the place of her retreat, when ſhe could eaſily find ſome excuſe for leaving her companions, and going to her.

Mr. Roberts, who, according to his inſtructions, narrowly watched Arabella's motions, finding ſhe did not command his attendance as uſual, reſolved however to be privately of this party. He had but juſt time to run up and acquaint Mr. Glanville, and then followed the ladies at a diſtance, who taking boat, paſſed over to Twickenham, which he alſo did as ſoon as he ſaw them landed.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH ACQUAINTS THE READER WITH TWO VERY EXTRAORDINARY ACCIDENTS.

MR. Glanville, who did not doubt but Roberts would bring him ſome intelligence, ſat waiting with anxious impatience for his return. The evening drew on apace, he numbered the hours, and began to grow uneaſy at Arabella's long ſtay. His chamber-window looking into the garden, he thought he ſaw his couſin, covered with her veil as uſual, haſten down one of the walks; his heart leaped at this tranſient view, he threw up the ſaſh, and looking out, ſaw her very plainly ſtrike into a croſs-walk, and a moment after ſaw Sir George, who came out of a little ſummer-houſe, at her feet. Tranſported with rage at this ſight, he ſnatched up his ſword, flew down the ſtairs into the garden, and came running like a madman up the walk in which the lovers were. The lady obſerving him firſt, for Sir George's back was towards him, ſhrieked aloud and not knowing what ſhe did, ran towards the houſe, crying for help, and came back as faſt, yet not time enough to prevent miſchief: for Mr. Glanville, actuated by an irreſiſtible fury, cried out to Sir George to defend himſelf, who had but juſt time to draw his ſword, and make an ineffectual paſs at Mr. Glanville, when he received his into his body, and fell to the ground.

Mr. Glanville loſing his reſentment, inſenſibly, at the ſight of his rival's blood, threw down his ſword, and endeavoured to ſupport him; while the lady, who had loſt her veil in her running, and to the great aſtoniſhment of Mr. Glanville, proved to be his ſiſter, came up to them with tears and exclamations, blaming herſelf for all that had happened. Mr. Glanville, with a heart throbbing with remorſe for what he had done, gazed on his ſiſter with an accuſing look, as ſhe hung over the wounded baronet with ſtreaming eyes, ſometimes wringing her hands, then claſping them together in an agony of grief.

Sir George having ſtrength enough left to obſerve her diſorder, and the generous concern of Glanville, who holding him in his arms, intreated his ſiſter to ſend for proper aſſiſtance, 'Dear Charles,' ſaid he, 'you are too 'kind; I have uſed you very ill, I 'have deſerved my death from your 'hand—You know not what I have 'been baſe enough to practiſe againſt 'you—If I can but live to clear your 'innocence to Lady Bella, and free 'you from the conſequences of this 'action, I ſhall die ſatisfied.'

His ſtrength failing him at theſe words, he fainted away in Mr. Glanville's arms; who, though now convinced of his treachery, was extremely ſhocked at the condition he ſaw him in.

Miſs Glanville renewing her tears and exclamations at this ſight, he was obliged to lay Sir George gently upon the ground, and ran to find out ſomebody to ſend for a ſurgeon, and to help him to convey him into the houſe.

In his way he was met by Mr. Roberts, who was coming to ſeek him; and with a look of terror and confuſion told him, Lady Bella was brought home extremely ill—that her life had

been in danger, and that ſhe was but juſt recovered from a terrible fainting fit.

Mr. Glanville, though greatly alarmed at this news, forgot not to take all poſſible care of Sir George; directing Roberts to get ſome perſon to carry him into the houſe, and giving him orders to procure proper aſſiſtance, flew to Lady Bella's apartment.

Her women had juſt put her to bed, raving as in a ſtrong delirium. Mr. Glanville approached her, and finding ſhe was in a violent fever, diſpatched a man and horſe immediately to town, to get phyſicians, and to acquaint his father with what had happened.

Mr. Roberts, upon the ſurgeon's report that Sir George was not mortally wounded, came to inform him of this good news; but he found him incapable of liſtening to him, and in agonies not to be expreſſed. It was with difficulty they forced him out of Arabella's chamber into his own; where, throwing himſelf upon his bed, he refuſed to ſee or ſpeak to any body, till he was told Sir Charles and the phyſicians were arrived.

He then ran eagerly to hear their opinions of his beloved couſin, which he ſoon diſcovered, by their ſignificant geſtures and half-pronounced words, to be very bad. They comforted him, however, with hopes that ſhe might recover, and inſiſting upon her being kept very quiet, obliged him to quit the room. While all the neceſſary methods were taken to abate the violence of the diſeaſe, Sir Charles, who had been informed by his ſteward of his ſon's duel with Sir George, was amazed to the laſt degree at two ſuch terrible accidents.

Having ſeen his ſon to his chamber, and recommended him to be patient and compoſed, he went to viſit the young baronet; and was not a little ſurprized to find his daughter ſitting at his bed's head, with all the appearance of a violent affliction.

Indeed, Miſs Glanville's cares were ſo wholly engroſſed by Sir George, that ſhe hardly ever thought of her couſin Arabella, and had juſt ſtept into her chamber while the ſurgeons were dreſſing Sir George's wound, and renewed her attendance upon him as ſoon as that was over.

Miſs Glanville, however, thought proper to make ſome triflíng excuſes to her father for her ſolicitude about Sir George. And the young baronet, on whom the fear of death produced it's uſual effects, and made him extremely concerned for the errors of his paſt life, and very deſirous of atoning for them, if poſſible, aſſured Sir Charles, that if he lived he would offer himſelf to his acceptance for a ſon-in-law; declaring that he had baſely triſled with the eſteem of his daughter, but that ſhe had wholly ſubdued him to herſelf by her forgiving tenderneſs.

Sir Charles was very deſirous of knowing the occaſion of his quarrel with his ſon; but Sir George was too weak to hold any farther converſation; upon which Sir Charles, after a ſhort viſit, retired, taking Miſs Glanville along with him.

That the reader, whoſe imagination is no doubt upon the ſtretch to conceive the meaning of theſe two extraordinary incidents, may be left no longer in ſuſpence, we think proper to explain them both in the following chapter, that we may in the next purſue our hiſtory without interruption.

CHAP. IX.

WHICH WILL BE FOUND TO CONTAIN INFORMATION ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY FOR THE RIGHT UNDERSTANDING OF THIS HISTORY.

OUR fair and afflicted heroine, accompanied by the ladies we have mentioned, having croſſed the river, purſued their walk upon it's winding banks, entertaining themſelves with the uſual topicks of converſation among young ladies, ſuch as their winnings and loſings at Brag, the prices of ſilks, the neweſt faſhions, the beſt hair-cutter, the ſcandal at the laſt aſſembly, &c.

Arabella was ſo diſguſted with this (as ſhe thought) inſipid diſcourſe, which gave no relief to the anxiety of her mind, but added a kind of fretfulneſs and impatience to her grief, that ſhe reſolved to quit them, and with Lucy go in queſt of the princeſs of Gaul's retreat.

The ladies, however, inſiſted upon her not leaving them; and her excuſe that ſhe was going in ſearch of an unfortunate unknown, for whom ſhe had

vowed

vowed a friendſhip, made them all immediately reſolve to accompany her, extremely diverted with the oddity of the deſign, and ſacrificing her to their mirth by ſly leers, whiſpers, ſtifled laughs, and a thouſand little ſprightly ſallies, which the diſconſolate Arabella took no notice of, ſo deeply were her thoughts engaged.

Though ſhe knew not which way to direct her ſteps, yet, concluding the melancholy Cynecia would certainly chuſe ſome very ſolitary place for her reſidence, ſhe rambled about among the leaſt frequented paths, followed by the young ladies, who ardently deſired to ſee this unfortunate unknown; though, at Arabella's earneſt requeſt, they promiſed not to ſhew themſelves to the lady, who, ſhe informed them, for very urgent reaſons, was obliged to keep herſelf concealed.

Fatiguing as this ramble was to the delicate ſpirits of Arabella's companions, they were enabled to ſupport it by the diverſion her behaviour afforded them.

Every peaſant ſhe met, ſhe enquired if a beautiful lady, diſguiſed, did not dwell ſomewhere thereabout.

To ſome ſhe gave a deſcription of her perſon, to others an account of the domeſticks that were with her; not forgetting her dreſs, her melancholy, and the great care ſhe took to keep herſelf concealed.

Theſe ſtrange enquiries, with the ſtrange language in which they were made, not a little ſurprized the good people to whom ſhe addreſſed herſelf; yet, moved to reſpect by the majeſtick lovelineſs of her perſon, they anſwered her in the negative, without any mixture of ſcoff and impertinence.

'How unfavourable is chance,' ſaid Arabella, fretting at the diſappointment, 'to perſons who have any reli-'ance upon it! This lady that I have 'been in ſearch of ſo long without 'ſucceſs, may probably be found by 'others who do not ſeek her, whoſe 'preſence ſhe may wiſh to avoid, yet 'not be able.'

The young ladies finding it grew late, expreſſed their apprehenſions at being without any attendants, and deſired Arabella to give over her ſearch for that day. Arabella, at this hint of danger, enquired very earneſtly if they apprehended any attempts to carry them away; and, without ſtaying for an anſwer, urged them to walk home as faſt as poſſible, apologizing for the danger into which ſhe had ſo indiſcreetly drawn both them and herſelf; yet added her hopes, that, if any attempt ſhould be made upon their liberty, ſome generous cavalier would paſs by who would reſcue them: a thing ſo common, that they had no reaſon to deſpair of it.

Arabella, conſtruing the ſilence with which her companions heard theſe aſſurances into a doubt of their being ſo favoured by fortune, proceeded to inform them of ſeveral inſtances wherein ladies met with unexpected relief and deliverance from raviſhers.

She mentioned particularly the reſcue of Statira by her own brother, whom ſhe imagined for many years dead; that of the princeſs Berenice by an abſolute ſtranger; and many others, whoſe names, characters, and adventures, ſhe occaſionally ran over; all which the young ladies heard with inconceivable aſtoniſhment: and the detail had ſuch an effect upon Arabella's imagination, bewildered as it was in the follies of romances, that, eſpying three or four horſemen riding along the road towards them, ſhe immediately concluded they would be all ſeized and carried off.

Poſſeſſed with this belief, ſhe uttered a loud cry, and flew to the water-ſide; which alarming the ladies, who could not imagine what was the matter, they ran after her as faſt as poſſible.

Arabella ſtopped when ſhe came to the water-ſide, and looking round about, and not perceiving any boat to waft them over to Richmond, a thought ſuddenly darted into her mind, worthy thoſe ingenious books which gave it birth.

Turning therefore to the ladies, who all at once were enquiring the cauſe of her fright—

'It is now, my fair companions,' ſaid ſhe, with a ſolemn accent, 'that 'the Deſtinies have furniſhed you with 'an opportunity of diſplaying, in a 'manner truly heroick, the ſublimity 'of your virtue, and the grandeur of 'your courage, to the world.

'The action we have it in our power 'to perform, will immortalize our fame,

'and raiſe us to a pitch of glory equal 'to that of the renowned Clelia her-'ſelf.

'Like her, we may expect ſtatues 'erected to our honour; like her, be 'propoſed as patterns to heroines in 'enſuing ages; and like her, perhaps, 'meet with ſceptres and crowns for our 'reward.

'What that beauteous Roman lady 'performed to preſerve herſelf from 'violation by the impious Sextus, let 'us imitate, to avoid the violence our 'intended raviſhers yonder come to 'offer us.

'Fortune, which has thrown us into 'this exigence, preſents us the means 'of glorioufly eſcaping; and the ad-'miration and eſteem of all ages to 'come will be the recompence of our 'noble daring.

'Once more, my fair companions, 'if your honour be dear to you, if 'an immortal glory be worth your 'ſeeking, follow the example I ſhall 'ſet you, and equal, with me, the Ro-'man Clelia.'

Saying this, ſhe plunged into the Thames, intending to ſwim over it, as Clelia did the Tyber.

The young ladies, who had liſtened with ſilent aſtoniſhment at the long ſpeech ſhe had made them, the purport of which not one of them underſtood, ſcreamed out aloud at this horrid ſpectacle, and wringing their hands, ran backwards and forwards, like diſtracted perſons, crying for help. Lucy tore her hair, and was in the utmoſt agony of grief; when Mr. Roberts, who, as we have ſaid before, kept them always in ſight, having obſerved Arabella running towards the water-ſide, followed them as faſt as he could, and came up time enough to ſee her frantick action. Jumping into the river immediately after her, he caught hold of her gown, and drew her after him to the ſhore. A boat that inſtant appearing, he put her into it, ſenſeleſs, and to all appearance dead. He and Lucy ſupporting her, they were wafted over in a few moments to the other ſide: her houſe being near the river, Mr. Roberts carried her in his arms to it; and as ſoon as he ſaw her ſhew ſigns of returning life, left her to the care of the women, who made haſte to put her into a warm bed, and ran to find out Mr. Glanville, as we have related.

There remains now only to account for Sir George and Miſs Glanville's ſudden appearance, which happened, gentle reader, exactly as follows.

Miſs Glanville having ſet out pretty late in the afternoon, with a deſign of ſtaying all night at Richmond, as her chaiſe drove up Kew Lane, ſaw one of her couſin's women, Deborah by name, talking to a gentleman, whom, notwithſtanding the diſguiſe of a horſeman's coat, and a hat ſlouched over his face, ſhe knew to be Sir George Bellmour.

This ſight alarming her jealouſy, and renewing all her former ſuſpicions that her couſin's charms rivalled her's in his heart, as ſoon as ſhe alighted, finding Arabella was not at home, ſhe retired in great anguiſh of mind to her chamber, revolving in her mind every particular of Sir George's behaviour to her couſin in the country, and finding new cauſe for ſuſpicion in every thing ſhe recollected, and reflecting upon the diſguiſe in which ſhe ſaw him, and his conference with her woman, ſhe concluded that herſelf had all along been the dupe of his artifice, and her couſin the real object of his love.

This thought throwing her into an extremity of rage, all her tendereſt emotions were loſt in the deſire of revenge. She imagined to herſelf ſo much pleaſure from expoſing his treachery, and putting it out of his power to deny it, that ſhe reſolved, whatever it coſt her, to have that ſatisfaction.

Suppoſing, therefore, Deborah was now returned, ſhe rung her bell, and commanded her attendance on her in her chamber.

The ſtern brow with which ſhe received her, frightened the girl, conſcious of her guilt, into a diſpoſition to confeſs all, even before ſhe was taxed with any thing.

Miſs Glanville ſaw her terror, and endeavoured to heighten it, by entering at once into complaints and exclamations againſt her, threatening to acquaint her father with her plots to betray her lady, and aſſuring her of a very ſevere puniſhment for her treachery.

The girl, terrified extremely at theſe menaces, begged Miſs Glanville, with tears, to forgive her, and not to acquaint Sir Charles or her lady with her fault; adding, that ſhe would confeſs

all,

all, and never while ſhe lived do ſuch a thing again.

Miſs Glanville would make her no promiſes, but urged her to confeſs: upon which Deborah, ſobbing, owned, that for the ſake of the preſent Sir George had made her, ſhe conſented to meet him privately, from time to time, and give him an account of every thing that paſſed with regard to her lady, not thinking there was any harm in it. That according to his deſires, ſhe had conſtantly acquainted him with all her lady's motions, when and where ſhe went, how ſhe and Mr. Glanville agreed, and a hundred other things which he enquired about. That that day in particular, he had intreated her to procure him the means of an interview with her lady, if poſſible; and underſtanding Mr. Glanville was not at Richmond, ſhe had let him privately into the garden, where ſhe hoped to prevail upon her lady to go.

'What!' ſaid Miſs Glanville, ſurprized, 'is Sir George waiting for my 'couſin in the garden, then?'

'Yes, indeed, Madam,' ſaid Deborah; 'but I'll go and tell him to wait 'no longer; and never ſpeak to him 'again, if your ladyſhip will but be 'pleaſed to forgive me.'

Miſs Glanville having taken her reſolution, not only promiſed Deborah her pardon, but alſo a reward, provided ſhe would contrive it ſo, that ſhe might meet Sir George inſtead of her couſin.

The girl, having the true chamber-maid ſpirit of intrigue in her, immediately propoſed her putting on one of her lady's veils; which, as it was now the cloſe of the evening, would diſguiſe her ſufficiently: to which Miſs Glanville, tranſported with the thoughts of thus having an opportunity of convincing Sir George of his perfidy, and reproaching him for it, conſented, and bid her bring it without being obſerved into her chamber.

Deborah informing her that Sir George was concealed in the ſummer-houſe, as ſoon as ſhe had equipped herſelf with Arabella's veil, ſhe went into the walk that led to it; and Sir George, believing her to be that lady, haſtened to throw himſelf at her feet, and had ſcarce got through half a ſpeech he had ſtudied for his preſent purpoſe, when Mr. Glanville gave a fatal interruption to his heroicks, in the manner we have already related.

CHAP. X.

A SHORT CHAPTER INDEED, BUT FULL OF MATTER.

RICHMOND was now a ſcene of the utmoſt confuſion and diſtreſs. Arabella's fever was riſen to ſuch a height, that ſhe was given over by the phyſicians; and Sir George's wounds, though not judged mortal at firſt, yet, by the great effuſion of blood, had left him in ſo weak a condition, that he was thought to be in great danger.

Sir Charles, almoſt diſtracted with the fears of the conſequences of Sir George's death, intreated his ſon to quit the kingdom; but Mr. Glanville, proteſting he would rather die than leave Arabella in that illneſs, he was obliged to give bail for his appearance, in caſe Sir George died; this affair, notwithſtanding all endeavours to prevent it, having made a great noiſe.

Poor Sir Charles, oppreſſed as he was with the weight of all theſe calamities, was yet obliged to labour inceſſantly to keep up the ſpirits of his ſon and daughter. The ſettled deſpair of the one, and the ſilent ſwelling grief of the other, cut him to the heart. He omitted no arguments his paternal affection ſuggeſted to him, to moderate their affliction. Mr. Glanville often endeavoured to aſſume a compoſure he was very far from feeling, in order to ſatisfy his father. But Miſs Glanville, looking upon herſelf to be the cauſe of Sir George's misfortune, declared ſhe ſhould be miſerable all her life, if he died.

Arabella, in her lucid intervals, being ſenſible of her danger, prepared for death with great piety and conſtancy of mind, having ſolemnly aſſured Mr. Glanville of her forgiveneſs, who would not at that time enter into an explanation of the affair which had given her offence, for fear of perplexing her. She permitted his preſence often in her chamber, and deſired, with great earneſtneſs, the aſſiſtance of ſome worthy divine in her preparations for death. The pious and learned Doc-

tor

tor ——, at Sir Charles's intimation of his niece's deſire, came conſtantly twice a day to attend her. Her fever, by a favourable criſis, and the great ſkill of her phyſicians, left her in a fortnight; but this violent diſtemper had made ſuch a ravage in her delicate conſtitution, and reduced her ſo low, that there ſeemed very little probability of her recovery. Doctor ——, in whom her unfeigned piety, her uncommon firmneſs of mind, had created a great eſteem and tenderneſs for her, took all opportunities of comforting, exhorting, and praying by her. The occaſion of her illneſs being the ſubject of every body's converſation at Richmond, he gently hinted it to her, and urged her to explain her reaſons for ſo extravagant an action.

In the divine frame Arabella was then in, this action appeared to her raſh and vain-glorious, and ſhe acknowledged it to be ſo to her pious monitor; yet ſhe related the motives which induced her to it, the danger ſhe was in of being carried away, the parity of her circumſtances then with Clelia, and her emulous deſire of doing as much to preſerve her honour as that renowned Roman lady did for hers.

The good doctor was extremely ſurprized at this diſcourſe: he was beginning to think her again delirious; but Arabella added to this account ſuch ſenſible reaſoning on the nature of that fondneſs for fame which prompted her to ſo raſh an undertaking, that the doctor left her in ſtrange embarraſſment, not knowing how to account for a mind at once ſo enlightened, and ſo ridiculous.

Mr. Glanville meeting him as he came out of her chamber, the doctor took this opportunity to acknowledge the difficulties Arabella's inconſiſtent diſcourſe had thrown him into. Mr. Glanville taking him into his own apartment, explained the nature of that ſeeming inconſiſtency, and expatiated at large upon the diſorders romances had occaſioned in her imagination; ſeveral inſtances of which he recounted, and filled the doctor with the greateſt aſtoniſhment and concern. He lamented pathetically the ruin ſuch a ridiculous ſtudy had brought on ſo noble a mind; and aſſured Mr. Glanville he would ſpare no endeavours to reſcue it from ſo ſhocking a deluſion.

Mr. Glanville thanked him for his good deſign with a tranſport which his fears of his couſin's danger almoſt mingled with tears; and the doctor and he agreed to expect for ſome few days longer an alteration for the better in the health of her body, before he attempted the cure of her mind. Mr. Glanville's extreme anxiety had made him in appearance neglect the repentant Sir George, contenting himſelf with conſtantly ſending twice a day to enquire after his health, but had not yet viſited him.

No ſooner had the phyſicians declared that Arabella was no longer in danger, than his mind being freed from that tormenting load of ſuſpence under which it had laboured while her recovery was yet doubtful, he went to Sir George's chamber, who, by reaſon of his weakneſs, though he was alſo upon the recovery, ſtill kept his bed.

Sir George, though he ardently wiſhed to ſee him, yet, conſcious of the injuries he had both done and deſigned him, could not receive his viſit without extreme confuſion: but entering into the cauſe of their quarrel, as ſoon as he was able to ſpeak, he freely acknowledged his fault, and all the ſteps he had taken to ſupplant him in Arabella's affection.

Mr. Glanville underſtanding by this means that he had bribed a young actreſs to perſonate a princeſs, forſaken by him, and had taught her all that heap of abſurdity with which ſhe had impoſed upon Arabella, as has been related, deſired, only by way of reparation, that when his couſin was in a condition to be ſpoken to upon that ſubject, he would condeſcend to own the fraud to her; which Sir George faithfully promiſing, an act of oblivion paſſed on Mr. Glanville's ſide for all former injuries, and a ſolemn aſſurance from Sir George of inviolable friendſhip for the future. An aſſurance, however, which Mr. Glanville would willingly have diſpenſed with: for though not of a vindictive temper, it was one of his maxims, that a man who had once betrayed him, it would be an error in policy ever to truſt again.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

BEING IN THE AUTHOR'S OPINION, THE BEST CHAPTER IN THIS HISTORY.

THE good divine, who had the cure of Arabella's mind greatly at heart, no ſooner perceived that the health of her body was almoſt reſtored, and that he might talk to her without the fear of any inconvenience, than he introduced the ſubject of her throwing herſelf into the river, which he had before lightly touched upon, and ſtill declared himſelf diſſatisfied with.

Arabella, now more diſpoſed to defend this point than when languiſhing under the preſſure of pain and dejection of mind, endeavoured by arguments founded upon romantick heroiſm, to prove, that it was not only reaſonable and juſt, but alſo great and glorious, and exactly conformable to the rules of heroick virtue.

The doctor liſtened to her with a mixed emotion, between pity, reverence, and amazement: and though in the performance of his office he had been accuſtomed to accommodate his notions to every underſtanding, and had therefore accumulated a great variety of topicks and illuſtrations; yet he found himſelf now engaged in a controverſy for which he was not ſo well prepared as he imagined, and was at a loſs for ſome leading principle, by which he might introduce his reaſonings, and begin his confutation.

Though he ſaw much to praiſe in her diſcourſe, he was afraid of confirming her obſtinacy by commendation: and though he alſo found much to blame, he dreaded to give pain to a delicacy he revered.

Perceiving, however, that Arabella was ſilent, as if expecting his reply, he reſolved not to bring upon himſelf the guilt of abandoning her to her miſtake, and the neceſſity of ſpeaking forced him to find ſomething to ſay.

'Though it is not eaſy, Madam,' ſaid he, 'for any one that has the honour of converſing with your ladyſhip, to preſerve his attention free to any other idea, than ſuch as your diſcourſe tends immediately to impreſs, yet I have not been able, while you was ſpeaking, to refrain from ſome very mortifying reflections on the imperfection of all human happineſs, and the uncertain conſequences of all thoſe advantages which we think ourſelves not only at liberty to deſire, but obliged to cultivate.'

'Though I have known ſome dangers and diſtreſſes,' replied Arabella, gravely, 'yet I did not imagine myſelf ſuch a mirror of calamity as could not be ſeen without concern. If my life has not been eminently fortunate, it has yet eſcaped the great evils of perſecution, captivity, ſhipwrecks, and dangers, to which many ladies far more illuſtrious both by birth and merit than myſelf have been expoſed. And, indeed, though I have ſometimes raiſed envy, or poſſibly incurred hatred, yet I have no reaſon to believe I was ever beheld with pity before.'

The doctor ſaw he had not introduced his diſcourſe in the moſt acceptable manner; but it was too late to repent.

'Let me not, Madam,' ſaid he, 'be cenſured before I have fully explained my ſentiments.

'That you have been envied I can readily believe; for who that gives way to natural paſſions, has not reaſon to envy the Lady Arabella? But that you have been hated, I am indeed leſs willing to think, though I know how eaſily the greater part of mankind hate thoſe by whom they are excelled.'

'If the miſery of my condition,' replied Arabella, 'has been able to excite that melancholy your firſt words ſeemed to imply, flattery will contribute very little towards the improvement of it. Nor do I expect from the ſeverity of the ſacerdotal character, any of thoſe praiſes, which I hear, perhaps with too much pleaſure, from the reſt of the world.

'Having been ſo lately on the brink of that ſtate, in which all diſtinctions but that of goodneſs are deſtroyed, I have not recovered ſo much levity, but that I would yet rather hear inſtructions than compliments.

'If, therefore, you have obſerved in me any dangerous tenets, corrupt paſſions, or criminal deſires, I conjure you to diſcover me to myſelf. Let no falſe civility reſtrain your admonitions. Let me know this evil which can ſtrike a good man with

'horror,

'horror, and which I dread the more, 'as I do not feel it.

'I cannot ſuppoſe that a man of 'your order would be alarmed at any 'other miſery than guilt: nor will I 'think ſo meanly of him whoſe di-'rection I have intreated, as to ima-'gine he can think virtue unhappy, 'however overwhelmed by diſaſters or 'oppreſſion.

'Keep me therefore no longer in 'ſuſpenſe: I expect you will exert the 'authority of your function, and I 'promiſe you, on my part, ſincerity 'and ſubmiſſion.'

The good man was now compleatly embarraſſed; he ſaw his meaning miſ-taken, but was afraid to explain it, leſt he ſhould ſeem to pay court by a cowardly retraction: he therefore pauſ-ed a little, and Arabella ſuppoſed he was ſtudying for ſuch expreſſions as might convey cenſure without offence.

'Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'if you are not yet 'ſatisfied of my willingneſs to hear 'your reproofs, let me evince my do-'cility, by intreating you to conſider 'yourſelf as diſpenſed from all cere-'mony upon this occaſion.'

'Your imaginations, Madam,' re-plied the doctor, 'are too quick for 'language; you conjecture too ſoon, 'what you do not wait to hear; and 'reaſon upon ſuppoſitions which can-'not be allowed you.

'When I mentioned my reflections 'upon human miſery, I was far from 'concluding your ladyſhip miſerable, 'compared with the reſt of mankind; 'and though contemplating the ab-'ſtracted idea of poſſible felicity, I 'thought that even you might be pro-'duced as an inſtance that it is not at-'tainable in this world, I did not im-'pute the imperfection of your ſtate to 'wickedneſs, but intended to obſerve, 'that though even virtue be added to 'external advantages, there will yet be 'ſomething wanting to happineſs.

'Whoever ſees you, Madam, will 'immediately ſay, that nothing can 'hinder you from being the happieſt 'of mortals, but want of power to 'underſtand your own advantages. 'And whoever is admitted to your 'converſation, will be convinced that 'you enjoy all that intellectual ex-'cellence can confer; yet I ſee you 'harraſſed with innumerable terrors 'and perplexities, which never diſturb 'the peace of poverty or ignorance.'

'I cannot diſcover,' ſaid Arabella, 'how poverty or ignorance can be pri-'vileged from caſualty or violence, 'from the raviſher, the robber, or the 'enemy. I ſhould hope rather, that if 'wealth and knowledge can give no-'thing elſe, they at leaſt confer judg-'ment to foreſee danger, and power to 'oppoſe it.'

'They are not, indeed,' returned the doctor, 'ſecured againſt real misfor-'tunes, but they are happily defended 'from wild imaginations: they do not 'ſuſpect what cannot happen, nor fi-'gure raviſhers at a diſtance, and leap 'into rivers to eſcape them.'

'Do you ſuppoſe, then,' ſaid Ara-bella, 'that I was frighted without 'cauſe.'

'It is certain, Madam,' replied he, 'that no injury was intended you.'

'Diſingenuity, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'does not become a clergyman—I 'think too well of your underſtand-'ing to imagine your fallacy deceives 'yourſelf: why, then, ſhould you hope 'that it will deceive me?

'The laws of conference require 'that the terms of the queſtion and 'anſwer be the ſame.

'I aſk, if I had not cauſe to be 'frighted? Why then am I anſwered 'that no injury was intended?

'Human beings cannot penetrate 'intentions, nor regulate their con-'duct but by exterior appearances. 'And ſurely there was ſufficient ap-'pearance of intended injury, and 'that the greateſt which my ſex can 'ſuffer.'

'Why, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'ſhould you ſtill perſiſt in ſo wild an 'aſſertion?'

'A coarſe epithet,' ſaid Arabella, 'is no confutation. It reſts upon you 'to ſhew, that in giving way to my 'fears, even ſuppoſing them ground-'leſs, I departed from the character of 'a reaſonable perſon.'

'I am afraid,' replied the doctor, 'of a diſpute with your ladyſhip; not 'becauſe I think myſelf in danger of 'defeat, but becauſe, being accuſtomed 'to ſpeak to ſcholars with ſcholaſtick 'ruggedneſs, I may perhaps depart, in 'the heat of argument, from that re-'ſpect to which you have ſo great a 'right, and give offence to a perſon I 'am really afraid to diſpleaſe.

'But, if you will promiſe to excuſe 'my ardour, I will endeavour to prove

'that

'that you have been frighted without 'reaſon.'

'I ſhould be content,' replied Arabella, 'to obtain truth upon harder 'terms, and therefore intreat you to 'begin.'

'The apprehenſion of any future 'evil, Madam,' ſaid the divine, 'which 'is called terror, when the danger is 'from natural cauſes, and ſuſpicion, 'when it proceeds from a moral agent, 'muſt always ariſe from comparíſon.

'We can judge of the future only 'by the paſt, and have therefore only 'reaſon to fear or ſuſpect, when we 'ſee the ſame cauſes in motion which 'have formerly produced miſchief, 'or the ſame meaſures taken as have 'before been preparatory to a crime.

'Thus, when the ſailor in certain 'latitudes ſees the clouds riſe, expe-'rience bids him expect a ſtorm. When 'any monarch levies armies, his neigh-'bours prepare to repel an invaſion.

'This power of prognoſtication 'may, by reading and converſation, 'be extended beyond our own know-'ledge: and the great uſe of books 'is, that of participating, without la-'bour or hazard, the experience of 'others.

'But upon this principle how can 'you find any reaſon for your late 'fright?

'Has it ever been known, that a 'lady of your rank was attacked with 'ſuch intentions in a place ſo publick, 'without any preparations made by 'the violator for defence or eſcape?

'Can it be imagined that any man 'would ſo raſhly expoſe himſelf to 'infamy by failure, and to the gibbet 'by ſucceſs?

'Does there in the records of the 'world appear a ſingle inſtance of ſuch 'hopeleſs villainy?'

'It is now time, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'to anſwer your queſtions, be-'fore they are too many to be remem-'bered.

'The dignity of my birth can very 'little defend me againſt an inſult to 'which the heireſſes of great and 'powerful empires, the daughters of 'valiant princes, and the wives of re-'nowned monarchs, have been a thou-'ſand times expoſed.

'The danger which you think ſo 'great, would hardly repel a deter-'mined mind; for, in effect, who would 'have attempted my reſcue, ſeeing that 'no knight or valiant cavalier was 'within view?

'What then ſhould have hindered 'him from placing me in a chariot, 'driving it into the pathleſs deſart, 'and immuring me in a caſtle among 'woods and mountains? or hiding me 'perhaps in the caverns of a rock? 'or confining me in ſome iſland of an 'immenſe lake?'

'From all this, Madam,' interrupted the clergyman, 'he is hindered by 'impoſſibility.

'He cannot carry you to any of 'theſe dreadful places, becauſe there 'is no ſuch caſtle, deſart, cavern, or 'lake.'

'You will pardon me, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'if I recur to your own 'principles.

'You allow that experience may be 'gained by books; and certainly there 'is no part of knowledge in which we 'are obliged to truſt them more than 'in deſcriptive geography.

'The moſt reſtleſs activity in the 'longeſt life, can ſurvey but a ſmall 'part of the habitable globe: and the 'reſt can only be known from the re-'port of others.

'Univerſal negatives are ſeldom ſafe, 'and are leaſt to be allowed when 'the diſputes are about objects of 'ſenſe; where one poſition cannot be 'inferred from another.

'That there is a caſtle, any man 'who has ſeen it may ſafely affirm. 'But you cannot, with equal reaſon, 'maintain that there is no caſtle, be-'cauſe you have not ſeen it.

'Why ſhould I imagine that the 'face of the earth is altered ſince the 'time of thoſe heroines, who expe-'rienced ſo many changes of uncouth 'captivity?

'Caſtles, indeed, are the works of art; 'and are therefore ſubject to decay. 'But lakes, and caverns, and deſarts, 'muſt always remain.

'And why, ſince you call for in-'ſtances, ſhould I not dread the miſ-'fortunes which happened to the divine 'Clelia, who was carried to one of the 'iſles of the Thraſymenian lake?

'Or thoſe which befel the beauti-'ful Candace, Queen of Ethiopia, 'whom the pirate Zenedorus wan-'dered with on the ſeas?

'Or the accidents which imbittered

'the life of the incomparable Cleopatra?

'Or the perſecutions which made that of the fair Eliſa miſerable?

'Or, in fine, the various diſtreſſes of many other fair and virtuous princeſſes; ſuch as thoſe which happened to Olympia, Bellamira, Paniſatis, Berenice, Amalazantha, Agione, Albyſinda, Placidia, Arſinoe, Deidamia, and a thouſand others I could mention.'

'To the names of many of theſe illuſtrious ſufferers I am an abſolute ſtranger,' replied the doctor.

'The reſt I faintly remember ſome mention of in thoſe contemptible volumes, with which children are ſometimes injudiciouſly ſuffered to amuſe their imaginations; but which I little expected to hear quoted by your ladyſhip in a ſerious diſcourſe.

'And though I am very far from catching occaſions of reſentment, yet I think myſelf at liberty to obſerve, that if I merited your cenſure for one indelicate epithet, we have engaged on very unequal terms, if I may not likewiſe complain of ſuch contemptuous ridicule as you are pleaſed to exerciſe upon my opinions, by oppoſing them with the authority of ſcribblers, not only of fictions, but of ſenſeleſs fictions; which at once vitiate the mind, and pervert the underſtanding; and which, if they are at any time read with ſafety, owe their innocence only to their abſurdity.'

'From theſe books, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, 'which you condemn with ſo much ardour, though you acknowledge yourſelf little acquainted with them, I have learnt not to recede from the conditions I have granted, and ſhall not therefore cenſure the licenſe of your language, which glances from the books upon the readers.

'Theſe books, Sir, thus corrupt, thus abſurd, thus dangerous alike to the intellect and morals, I have read; and that, I hope, without injury to my judgment, or my virtue.'

The doctor, whoſe vehemence had hindered him from diſcovering all the conſequences of his poſition, now found himſelf entangled, and replied in a ſubmiſſive tone—

'I confeſs, Madam, my words imply an accuſation very remote from my intention.

'It has always been the rule of my life, not to juſtify any words or actions becauſe they are mine.

'I am aſhamed of my negligence; I am ſorry for my warmth; and intreat your ladyſhip to pardon a fault which I hope never to repeat.'

'The reparation, Sir,' ſaid Arabella, ſmiling, 'over-balances the offence, and by thus daring to own you have been in the wrong, you have raiſed in me a much higher eſteem for you.

'Yet I will not pardon you,' added ſhe, 'without enjoining you a penance for the fault you own you have committed; and this penance ſhall be to prove—

'Firſt, That theſe hiſtories you condemn, are fictions.

'Next, That they are abſurd.

'And laſtly, That they are criminal.'

The doctor was pleaſed to find a reconciliation offered upon ſo very eaſy terms, with a perſon whom he beheld at once with reverence and affection, and could not offend without extreme regret.

He therefore anſwered with a very chearful compoſure—

'To prove thoſe narratives to be fictions, Madam, is only difficult, becauſe the poſition is almoſt too evident for proof.

'Your ladyſhip knows, I ſuppoſe, to what authors theſe writings are aſcribed?'

'To the French wits of the laſt century,' ſaid Arabella.

'And at what diſtance, Madam, are the facts related in them from the age of the writer?'

'I was never exact in my computation,' replied Arabella; 'but I think moſt of the events happened about two thouſand years ago.'

'How then, Madam,' reſumed the doctor, 'could theſe events be ſo minutely known to writers ſo far remote from the time in which they happened?'

'By records, monuments, memoirs, and hiſtories,' anſwered the lady.

'But by what accident, then,' ſaid the doctor, ſmiling, 'did it happen theſe records and monuments were kept

kept univerſally ſecret to mankind till the laſt century?

'What brought all the memoirs of the remoteſt nations and earlieſt ages only to France?

'Where were they hidden that none could conſult them but a few obſcure authors?

'And whither are they now vaniſhed again, that they can be found no more?'

Arabella having ſat ſilent a while, told him, that ſhe found his queſtions very difficult to be anſwered; and that, though perhaps the authors themſelves could have told whence they borrowed their materials, ſhe ſhould not at preſent require any other evidence of the firſt aſſertion—

But allowed him to ſuppoſe them fictions, and required now that he ſhould ſhew them to be abſurd.

'Your ladyſhip,' returned he, 'has, I find, too much underſtanding to ſtruggle againſt demonſtration, and too much veracity to deny your convictions; therefore ſome of the arguments by which I intended to ſhew the falſhood of theſe narratives, may be now uſed to prove their abſurdity.

'You grant them, Madam, to be fictions?'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, eagerly, 'you are again infringing the laws of diſputation.

'You are not to confound a ſuppoſition of which I allow you only the preſent uſe, with an unlimited and irrevocable conceſſion.

'I am too well acquainted with my own weakneſs to conclude an opinion falſe, merely becauſe I find myſelf unable to defend it.

'But I am in haſte to hear the proof of the other poſitions, not only becauſe they may perhaps ſupply what is deficient in your evidence of the firſt, but becauſe I think it of more importance to detect corruption than fiction.

'Though, indeed, falſhood is a ſpecies of corruption, and what falſhood is more hateful than the falſhood of hiſtory.'

'Since you have drawn me back, Madam, to the firſt queſtion,' returned the doctor, 'let me know what arguments your ladyſhip can produce for the veracity of theſe books.

'That there are many objections againſt it, you yourſelf have allowed, and the higheſt moral evidence of falſhood appears when there are many arguments againſt an aſſertion, and none for it.'

'Sir,' replied Arabella, 'I ſhall never think that any narrative, which is not confuted by it's own abſurdity, is without one argument at leaſt on it's ſide; there is a love of truth in the human mind, if not naturally implanted, ſo eaſily obtained from reaſon and experience, that I ſhould expect it univerſally to prevail where there is no ſtrong temptation to deceit; we hate to be deceived, we therefore hate thoſe that deceive us; we deſire not to be hated, and therefore know that we are not to deceive. Shew me an equal motive to falſhood, or confeſs that every relation has ſome right to credit.'

'This may be allowed, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'when we claim to be credited; but that ſeems not to be the hope or intention of theſe writers.'

'Surely, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'you muſt miſtake their deſign; he that writes without intention to be credited, muſt write to little purpoſe; for what pleaſure or advantage can ariſe from facts that never happened? What examples can be afforded by the patience of thoſe who never ſuffered, or the chaſtity of thoſe who were never ſolicited? The great end of hiſtory is to ſhew how much human nature can endure or perform. When we hear a ſtory in common life that raiſes our wonder or compaſſion, the firſt confutation ſtills our emotions, and however we were touched before, we then chaſe it from the memory with contempt as a trifle, or with indignation as an impoſture. Prove, therefore, that the books which I have hitherto read as copies of life, and models of conduct, are empty fictions, and from this hour I deliver them to moths and mould; and from this time forward conſider their authors as wretches who cheated me of thoſe hours I ought to have dedicated to application and improvement, and betrayed me to a waſte of thoſe years in which I might have laid up knowledge for my future life.'

'Shakeſpeare,' ſaid the doctor, 'calls juſt reſentment the child of integrity; and therefore I do not wonder, that

'what vehemence the gentleneſs of your ladyſhip's temper allows, ſhould be exerted upon this occaſion. Yet though I cannot forgive theſe authors for having deſtroyed ſo much valuable time, yet I cannot think them intentionally culpable, becauſe I cannot believe they expected to be credited. Truth is not always injured by fiction. An admirable writer * of our own time, has found the way to convey the moſt ſolid inſtructions, the nobleſt ſentiments, and the moſt exalted piety, in the pleaſing dreſs of a novel †, and, to uſe the words of the greateſt genius ‡ in the preſent age, "Has taught the "paſſions to move at the command "of virtue." The fables of Æſop, though never I ſuppoſe believed, yet have been long conſidered as lectures of moral and domeſtick wiſdom, ſo well adapted to the faculties of man, that they have been received by all civilized nations; and the Arabs themſelves have honoured his tranſlator with the appellation of Locman the Wiſe.'

'The fables of Æſop,' ſaid Arabella, 'are among thoſe of which the abſurdity diſcovers itſelf, and the truth is comprized in the application; but what can be ſaid of thoſe tales which are told with the ſolemn air of hiſtorical truth, and, if falſe, convey no inſtruction?'

'That they cannot be defended, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'it is my purpoſe to prove; and if to evince their falſhood be ſufficient to procure their baniſhment from your ladyſhip's cloſet, their day of grace is near an end. How is any oral, or written teſtimony, confuted or confirmed?'

'By comparing it,' ſays the lady, 'with the teſtimony of others, or with the natural effects and ſtanding evidence of the facts related, and ſometimes by comparing it with itſelf.'

'If then your ladyſhip will abide by this laſt,' returned he, 'and compare theſe books with ancient hiſtories, you will not only find innumerable names, of which no mention was ever made before, but perſons who lived in different ages, engaged as the friends or rivals of each other. You will perceive that your authors have parcelled out the world at diſcretion, erected palaces, and eſtabliſhed monarchies wherever the conveniency of their narrative required them, and ſet kings and queens over imaginary nations. Nor have they conſidered themſelves as inveſted with leſs authority over the works of nature, than the inſtitutions of men; for they have diſtributed mountains and deſarts, gulphs and rocks, wherever they wanted them; and whenever the courſe of their ſtory required an expedient, raiſed a gloomy foreſt, or overflowed the regions with a rapid ſtream.'

'I ſuppoſe,' ſaid Arabella, 'you have no intention to deceive me; and ſince, if what you have aſſerted be true, the cauſe is undefenſible, I ſhall trouble you no longer to argue on this topick, but deſire now to hear why, ſuppoſing them fictions, and intended to be received as fictions, you cenſure them as abſurd?'

'The only excellence of falſhood,' anſwered he, 'is it's reſemblance to truth; as therefore any narrative is more liable to be confuted by it's inconſiſtency with known facts, it is at a greater diſtance from the perfection of fiction; for there can be no difficulty in framing a tale, if we are left at liberty to invert all hiſtory and nature for our own conveniency. When a crime is to be concealed, it is eaſy to cover it with an imaginary wood. When Virtue is to be rewarded, a nation with a new name may, without any expence of invention, raiſe her to the throne. When Arioſto was told of the magnificence of his palaces, he anſwered, that the coſt of poetical architecture was very little; and ſtill leſs is the coſt of building without art, than without materials.' But their hiſtorical failures may be eaſily paſſed over, when we conſider their phyſical or philoſophical abſurdities; to bring men together from different countries does not ſhock with every inherent or demonſtrable abſurdity, and therefore when we read only for amuſement,

* Richardſon.
† Clariſſa.
‡ The Author of the Rambler.

ſuch

'such improprieties may be borne; but 'who can forbear to throw away the 'story that gives to one man the 'strength of thousands; that puts life 'or death in a smile or a frown; that 'recounts labours and sufferings to 'which the powers of humanity are 'utterly unequal; that disfigures the 'whole appearance of the world, and 'represents every thing in a form dif-'ferent from that which experience has 'shewn? It is the fault of the best 'fictions, that they teach young minds 'to expect strange adventures and sud-'den vicissitudes, and therefore en-'courage them often to trust to chance. 'A long life may be passed without a 'single occurrence that can cause much 'surprize, or produce any unexpected 'consequence of great importance; 'the order of the world is so establish-'ed, that all human affairs proceed in 'a regular method, and very little op-'portunity is left for sallies or ha-'zards, for assault or rescue; but the 'brave and the coward, the sprightly 'and the dull, suffer themselves to be 'carried alike down the stream of 'custom.'

Arabella, who had for some time listened with a wish to interrupt him, now took advantage of a short pause. 'I cannot imagine, Sir,' said she, 'that you intend to deceive me, and 'therefore I am inclined to believe that 'you are yourself mistaken, and that 'your application to learning has hin-'dered you from that acquaintance 'with the world, in which these au-'thors excelled. I have not long con-'versed in public, yet I have found 'that life is subject to many accidents. 'Do you count my late escape for no-'thing? Is it to be numbered among 'daily and cursory transactions, that 'a woman flies from a ravisher into a 'rapid stream?'

'You must not, Madam,' said the doctor, 'urge as an argument the fact 'which is at present the subject of dis-'pute.'

Arabella, blushing at the absurdity she had been guilty of, and not at-tempting any subterfuge or excuse, the doctor found himself at liberty to pro-ceed.

'You must not imagine, Madam,' continued he, 'that I intend to arro-'gate any superiority, when I observe 'that your ladyship must suffer me to 'decide, in some measure authorita-'tively, whether life is truly described 'in those books; the likeness of a pic-'ture can only be determined by a 'knowledge of the original. You 'have yet had little opportunity of 'knowing the ways of mankind, 'which cannot be learned but from 'experience, and of which the highest 'understanding, and the lowest, must 'enter the world in equal ignorance. 'I have lived long in a public charac-'ter, and have thought it my duty to 'study those whom I have undertaken 'to admonish or instruct. I have 'never been so rich as to affright men 'into disguise and concealment, nor so 'poor as to be kept at a distance too 'great for accurate observation. I 'therefore presume to tell your lady-'ship, with great confidence, that 'your writers have instituted a world 'of their own, and that nothing is 'more different from a human being, 'than heroes or heroines.'

'I am afraid, Sir,' said Arabella, 'that the difference is not in favour of 'the present world.'

'That, Madam,' answered he, 'your own penetration will enable 'you to judge when it shall have made 'you equally acquainted with both; 'I have no desire to determine a ques-'tion, the solution of which will give 'so little pleasure to purity and bene-'volence.'

'The silence of a man who loves to 'praise is a censure sufficiently severe,' said the lady. 'May it never happen 'that you should be unwilling to men-'tion the name of Arabella! I hope 'wherever corruption prevails in the 'world, to live in it with virtue; or, if 'I find myself too much endangered, 'to retire from it with innocence. But 'if you can say so little in commenda-'tion of mankind, how will you prove 'these histories to be vicious, which, 'if they do not describe real life, 'gives us an idea of a better race of 'beings than now inhabit the world.'

'It is of little importance, Ma-'dam,' replied the doctor, 'to decide 'whether in the real or fictitious life 'most wickedness is to be found. 'Books ought to supply an antidote to 'example; and if we retire to a con-'templation of crimes, and continue 'in our closets to inflame our passions, 'at what time must we rectify our

'words,

'words, or purify our hearts? The immediate tendency of these books, which your ladyship must allow me to mention with some severity, is to give new fire to the passions of revenge and love; two passions which, even without such powerful auxiliaries, it is one of the severest labours of reason and piety to suppress, and which yet must be suppressed if we hope to be approved in the sight of the only Being whose approbation can make us happy. I am afraid your ladyship will think me too serious.'—'I have already learned too much from you,' said Arabella, 'to presume to instruct you; yet suffer me to caution you never to dishonour your sacred office by the lowliness of apologies.'—'Then let me again observe,' resumed he, 'that these books soften the heart to love, and harden it to murder. That they teach women to exact vengeance, and men to execute it; teach women to expect not only worship, but the dreadful worship of human sacrifices. Every page of these volumes is filled with such extravagance of praise, and expressions of obedience, as one human being ought not to hear from another; or with accounts of battles, in which thousands are slaughtered for no other purpose than to gain a smile from the haughty beauty, who sits a calm spectatress of the ruin and desolation, bloodshed and misery, incited by herself.

'It is impossible to read these tales without lessening part of that humility, which, by preserving in us a sense of our alliance with all human nature, keeps us awake to tenderness and sympathy, or without impairing that compassion which is implanted in us as an incentive to acts of kindness. If there be any preserved by natural softness, or early education, from learning pride and cruelty, they are yet in danger of being betrayed to the vanity of beauty, and taught the arts of intrigue.

'Love, Madam, is, you know, the business, the sole business of ladies in romances.' Arabella's blushes now hindered him from proceeding as he had intended. 'I perceive,' continued he, 'that my arguments begin to be less agreeable to your ladyship's delicacy; I shall therefore insist no longer upon false tenderness of sentiment, but proceed to those outrages of the violent passions, which, though not more dangerous, are more generally hateful.'

'It is not necessary, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'that you strengthen by any new proof a position which, when calmly considered, cannot be denied; my heart yields to the force of truth, and I now wonder how the blaze of enthusiastick bravery could hinder me from remarking, with abhorrence, the crime of deliberate unnecessary bloodshed.

'I begin to perceive that I have hitherto at least trifled away my time, and fear that I have already made some approaches to the crime of encouraging violence and revenge.'—'I hope, Madam,' said the good man, with horror in his looks, 'that no life was ever lost by your incitement!' Arabella, seeing him thus moved, burst into tears, and could not immediately answer. 'Is it possible,' cried the doctor, 'that such gentleness and elegance should be stained with blood?'—'Be not too hasty in your censure,' said Arabella, recovering herself; 'I tremble, indeed, to think how nearly I have appproached the brink of murder, when I thought myself only consulting my own glory; but, whatever I suffer, I will never more demand or instigate vengeance, nor consider my punctilios as important enough to be balanced against life.'

The doctor confirmed her in her new resolutions, and thinking solitude was necessary to compose her spirits, after the fatigue of so long a conversation, he retired, to acquaint Mr. Glanville with his success; who, in the transport of his joy, was almost ready to throw himself at his feet, to thank him for the miracle, as he called it, that he had performed.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH THE HISTORY IS CONCLUDED.

MR. Glanville, who fancied to himself the most ravishing delight from conversing with his lovely cousin, now recovered to the free use of

of all her noble powers of reaſon, would have paid her a viſit that afternoon, had not a moment's reflection convinced him that now was the time, when her mind was labouring under the force of conviction, to introduce the repentant Sir George to her; who, by confeſſing the ridiculous farce he had invented to deceive her, might reſtore him to her good opinion, and add to the doctor's ſolid arguments, the poignant ſting of ridicule which ſhe would then perceive ſhe had incurred.

Sir George being now able to leave his chamber, and Arabella well enough recovered to admit a viſit in hers, Mr. Glanville intreated his father to wait on her, and get permiſſion for Sir George to attend her upon a buſineſs of ſome conſequence. Sir Charles no ſooner mentioned this requeſt, than Arabella, after a little heſitation, complied with it. As ſhe had been kept a ſtranger to all the particulars of Mr. Glanville's quarrels with the young baronet, her thoughts were a little perplexed concerning the occaſion of this viſit, and her embarraſſment was conſiderably increaſed by the confuſion which ſhe perceived in the countenance of Sir George. It was not without ſome tokens of a painfully-ſuppreſſed reluctance, that Sir George conſented to perform his promiſe, when Mr. Glanville claimed it; but the diſadvantages that would attend his breach of it, dejected and humbled as he now was, preſenting themſelves in a forcible manner to his imagination, confirmed his wavering reſolutions. And ſince he found himſelf obliged to be his own accuſer, he endeavoured to do it with the beſt grace he could. Acknowledging, therefore, to Lady Bella all the artifices her deception by romances had given him encouragement to uſe upon her, and explaining, very explicitly, the laſt with relation to the pretended princeſs of Gaul, he ſubmiſſively aſked her pardon for the offence it would now give her, as well as for the trouble it had formerly.

Arabella, ſtruck with inconceivable confuſion, having only bowed her head to his apology, deſired to be left alone, and continued, for near two hours afterwards, wholly abſorbed in the moſt diſagreeable reflections on the abſurdity of her paſt behaviour, and the contempt and ridicule to which ſhe now ſaw plainly ſhe had expoſed herſelf. The violence of theſe firſt emotions having at length ſubſided, ſhe ſent for Sir Charles, and Mr. Glanville; and having, with a noble ingenuity, expatiated upon the follies her vitiated judgment had led her into, ſhe apologized to the firſt, for the frequent cauſes ſhe had given him of uneaſineſs; and, turning to Mr. Glanville, whom ſhe beheld with a look of mingled tenderneſs and modeſty, 'To give you 'myſelf,' ſaid ſhe, 'with all my re'maining imperfections, is making 'you but a poor preſent in return for 'the obligations your generous affec'tion has laid me under to you; yet, 'ſince I am ſo happy as to be deſired 'for a partner for life by a man of 'your ſenſe and honour, I will en'deavour to make myſelf as worthy 'as I am able of ſuch a favourable 'diſtinction.'

Mr. Glanville kiſſed the hand ſhe gave him with an emphatick ſilence; while Sir Charles, in the moſt obliging manner imaginable, thanked her for the honour ſhe conferred both on himſelf and ſon by this alliance.

Sir George, entangled in his own artifices, ſaw himſelf under a neceſſity of confirming the promiſes he had made to Miſs Glanville, during his fit of penitence; and was accordingly married to that young lady, at the ſame time that Mr. Glanville and Arabella were united.

We chuſe, reader, to expreſs this circumſtance, though the ſame, in different words, as well to avoid repetition, as to intimate that the firſt-mentioned pair were indeed only married in the common acceptation of the word; that is, they were privileged to join fortunes, equipages, titles, and expence; while Mr. Glanville and Arabella were united, as well in theſe, as in every virtue, and laudable affection of the mind.

FINIS.

A

JOURNEY

FROM

THIS WORLD

TO

THE NEXT.

BY HENRY FIELDING, ESQ.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoſter-Row.
M DCC LXXXIII.

A

JOURNEY

FROM

THIS WORLD

TO

THE NEXT.

INTRODUCTION.

WHETHER the enſuing pages were really the dream or viſion of ſome very pious and holy perſon; or whether they were really written in the other world and ſent back to this, which is the opinion of many, (though I think too much inclining to ſuperſtition;) or, laſtly, whether, as infinitely the greateſt part imagine, they were really the production of ſome choice inhabitant of New Bethlehem, is not neceſſary nor eaſy to determine. It will be abundantly ſufficient, if I give the reader an account by what means they came into my poſſeſſion.

Mr. Robert Powney, ſtationer, who dwells oppoſite to Catharine Street in the Strand, a very honeſt man, and of great gravity of countenance; who, among other excellent ſtationary commodities, is particularly eminent for his pens, which I am abundantly bound to acknowledge, as I owe to their peculiar goodneſs that my manuſcripts have by any means been legible: this gentleman, I ſay, furniſhed me ſome time ſince with a bundle of thoſe pens, wrapt up, with great care and caution, in a very large ſheet of paper full of characters, written as it ſeemed in a very bad hand. Now, I have a ſurprizing curioſity to read every thing which is almoſt illegible; partly, perhaps, from the ſweet remembrance of the dear *ſcrawls*, *ſkrawls*, or *ſkrales*, (for the word is variouſly ſpelt) which I have in my youth received from that lovely part of the creation for which I have the tendereſt regard; and partly from that temper of mind which makes men ſet an immenſe value on old manuſcripts ſo effaced, buſtos ſo maimed, and pictures ſo black, that no one can tell what to make of them. I therefore peruſed this ſheet with wonderful application, and in about a day's time diſcovered that I could not underſtand it. I immediately repaired to Mr. Powney, and inquired very eagerly, whether he had not more of the ſame manuſcript. He produced about one hundred pages, acquainting me that he had ſaved no more: but that the book, which was originally a huge folio, had been left in his garret by a gentleman who lodged there, and who had left him no other ſatisfaction for nine months lodging. He proceeded to inform me, that the manuſcript had been hawked about (as he phraſed it) among all the bookſellers, who refuſed to meddle; ſome alledged that they could not read, others that they could not underſtand it. Some would have it to be an atheiſtical book, and ſome that it was a libel on the government; for one or other of which reaſons, they all refuſed to print it. That it had been likewiſe ſhewn to the R—— Society, but they ſhook their heads, ſaying, there was nothing in it wonderful enough for them. That hearing the gentleman was gone to the Weſt Indies, and believing it to be good for nothing elſe, he had uſed it as waſte paper. He ſaid, I was welcome to what remained, and he was heartily ſorry for what was miſſing, as I ſeemed to ſet ſome value on it.

I desired him much to name a price: but he would receive no consideration farther than the payment of a small bill I owed him, which at that time he said he looked on as so much money given him.

I presently communicated this manuscript to my friend Parson Abraham Adams; who, after a long and careful perusal, returned it me, with his opinion, that there was more in it than at first appeared; that the author seemed not entirely unacquainted with the writings of Plato; but he wished he had quoted him sometimes in his margin, 'That I might be sure,' said he 'he had read him in the original: 'for nothing,' continued the parson, 'is commoner, than for men, 'now-a-days, to pretend to have read Greek authors, who have met 'with them only in translations, and cannot conjugate a verb in '*mi*.'

To deliver my own sentiments on the occasion, I think the author discovers a philosophical turn of thinking, with some little knowledge of the world, and no very inadequate value of it. There are some, indeed, who, from the vivacity of their temper and the happiness of their station, are willing to consider it's blessings as more substantial, and the whole to be a scene of more consequence than it is here represented: but without controverting their opinions at present, the number of wise and good men, who have thought with our author, are sufficient to keep him in countenance; nor can this be attended with any ill inference, since he every where teaches this moral, That the greatest and truest happiness which this world affords, is to be found only in the possession of goodness and virtue; a doctrine which, as it is undoubtedly true, so hath it so noble and practical a tendency, that it can never be too often or too strongly inculcated on the minds of men.

A JOURNEY

A

JOURNEY

FROM

THIS WORLD TO THE NEXT.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

THE AUTHOR DIES, MEETS WITH MERCURY, AND IS BY HIM CONDUCTED TO THE STAGE WHICH SETS OUT FOR THE OTHER WORLD.

ON the firſt of December 1741*, I departed this life, at my lodgings in Cheapſide. My body had been ſome time dead before I was at liberty to quit it, leſt it ſhould by any accident return to life; this is an injunction impoſed on all ſouls by the eternal law of fate, to prevent the inconveniences which would follow. As ſoon as the deſtined period was expired, (being no longer than till the body is become perfectly cold and ſtiff) I began to move; but found myſelf under a difficulty of making my eſcape, for the mouth, or door, was ſhut; ſo that it was impoſſible for me to go out at it, and the windows, vulgarly called the eyes, were ſo cloſely pulled down by the fingers of a nurſe, that I could by no means open them. At laſt, I perceived a beam of light glimmering at the top of the houſe, (for ſuch I may call the body I had been incloſed in) whither aſcending, I gently let myſelf down through a kind of chimney, and iſſued out at the noſtrils.

No priſoner diſcharged from a long confinement ever taſted the ſweets of liberty with a more exquiſite reliſh, than I enjoyed in this delivery from a dungeon wherein I had been detained upwards of forty years, and with much the ſame kind of regard I caſt my eyes backwards upon it†.

My friends and relations had all quitted the room, being all (as I plainly overheard) very loudly quarrelling below ſtairs about my will, there was only an old woman left above, to guard the body, as I apprehend. She was in a faſt ſleep, occaſioned, as

* Some doubt whether this ſhould not be rather 1641, which is a date more agreeable to the account given of it in the Introduction; but then there are ſome paſſages which ſeem to relate to tranſactions infinitely later, even within this year or two.—To ſay the truth, there are difficulties attend either conjecture; ſo the reader may take which he pleaſes.

† Eyes are not perhaps ſo properly adapted to a ſpiritual ſubſtance; but we are here, as in many other places, obliged to uſe corporeal terms, to make ourſelves the better underſtood.

from

from her ſavour it ſeemed, by a comfortable doſe of gin. I had no pleaſure in this company, and therefore, as the window was wide open, I ſallied forth into the open air; but to my great aſtoniſhment found myſelf unable to fly, which I had always during my habitation in the body conceived of ſpirits; however, I came ſo lightly to the ground, that I did not hurt myſelf; and though I had not the gift of flying, (owing probably to my having neither feathers nor wings) I was capable of hopping ſuch a prodigious way at once, that it ſerved my turn almoſt as well.

I had not hopped far, before I perceived a tall young gentleman in a ſilk waiſtcoat, with a wing on his left-heel, a garland on his head, and a caduceus in his right-hand*. I thought I had ſeen this perſon before, but had not time to recollect where, when he called out to me, and aſked me how long I had been departed. I anſwered, I was juſt come forth. 'You muſt not 'ſtay here,' replied he, 'unleſs you 'had been murdered; in which caſe, 'indeed, you might have been ſuffered 'to walk ſome time; but if you died 'a natural death, you muſt ſet out for 'the other world immediately.' I deſired to know the way. 'O,' cried the gentleman, 'I will ſhew you to 'the inn whence the ſtage proceeds; 'for I am the porter. Perhaps you 'never heard of me, my name is Mercury.'—'Sure, Sir,' ſaid I, 'I have 'ſeen you at the play-houſe.' Upon which he ſmiled; and, without ſatisfying me as to that point, walked directly forward, bidding me hop after him. I obeyed him, and ſoon found myſelf in Warwick Lane; where Mercury making a full ſtop, pointed at a particular houſe, where he bade me enquire for the ſtage; and wiſhing me a good journey, took his leave, ſaying, he muſt go ſeek after other cuſtomers.

I arrived juſt as the coach was ſetting out, and found I had no occaſion for enquiry, for every perſon ſeemed to know my buſineſs the moment I appeared at the door; the coachman told me his horſes were to, but that he had no place left; however, though there were already ſix, the paſſengers offered to make room for me. I thanked them, and aſcended without much ceremony. We immediately begin our journey, being ſeven in number; for as the women wore no hoops, three of them were but equal to two men.

Perhaps, reader, thou mayeſt be pleaſed with an account of this whole equipage, as peradventure thou wilt not, while alive, ſee any ſuch. The coach was made by an eminent toyman, who is well known to deal in immaterial ſubſtance, that being the matter of which it was compounded. The work was ſo extremely fine, that it was entirely inviſible to the human eye. The horſes which drew this extraordinary vehicle were all ſpiritual, as well as the paſſengers. They had, indeed, all died in the ſervice of a certain poſt-maſter; and as for the coachman, who was a very thin piece of immaterial ſubſtance, he had the honour, while alive, of driving the Great Peter, or Peter the Great, in whoſe ſervice his ſoul, as well as body, was almoſt ſtarved to death.

Such was the vehicle in which I ſet out: and now thoſe who are not willing to travel on with me, may, if they pleaſe, ſtop here; thoſe who are, muſt proceed to the ſubſequent chapters, in which this journey is continued.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH THE AUTHOR FIRST REFUTES SOME IDLE OPINIONS CONCERNING SPIRITS, AND THEN THE PASSENGERS RELATE THEIR SEVERAL DEATHS.

IT is the common opinion, that ſpirits, like owls, can ſee in the dark; nay, and can then moſt eaſily be perceived by others. For which reaſon, many perſons of good underſtanding, to prevent being terrified with ſuch objects, uſually keep a candle burning by them, that the light may prevent their ſeeing. Mr. Locke, in direct oppoſition to this, hath not doubted to aſſert,

* This is the dreſs in which the god appears to mortals at the theatres. One of the offices attributed to this god by the ancients, was to collect the ghoſts as a ſhepherd doth a flock of ſheep, and drive them with his wand into the other world.

that

that you may ſee a ſpirit in open day-light full as well as in the darkeſt night.

It was very dark when we ſet out from the inn, nor could we ſee any more than if every ſoul of us had been alive. We had travelled a good way, before any one offered to open his mouth; indeed, moſt of the company were faſt aſleep*; but as I could not cloſe my own eyes, and perceived the ſpirit, who ſat oppoſite me, to be likewiſe awake, I began to make overtures of converſation, by complaining *how dark it was*. 'And extremely cold, 'too,' anſwered my fellow-traveller; 'though, I thank God, as I have no 'body, I feel no inconvenience from 'it: but you will believe, Sir, that 'this froſty air muſt ſeem very ſharp 'to one juſt iſſued forth out of an 'oven; for ſuch was the inflamed ha-'bitation I am lately departed from.' —'How did you come to your end, 'Sir?' ſaid I. 'I was murdered, 'Sir,' anſwered the gentleman. 'I 'am ſurprized, then,' replied I, 'that 'you did not divert yourſelf by walk-'ing up and down, and playing ſome 'merry tricks with the murderer.'— 'Oh, Sir!' returned he, 'I had not 'that privilege, I was lawfully put to 'death. In ſhort, a phyſician ſet me 'on fire, by giving me medicines to 'throw out my diſtemper. I died of 'a hot regimen, as they call it, in the 'ſmall-pox.'

One of the ſpirits at that word ſtarted up, and cried out, 'The ſmall-'pox! Bleſs me! I hope I am not in 'company with that diſtemper, which 'I have all my life with ſuch caution 'avoided, and have ſo happily eſcaped 'hitherto!' This fright ſet all the paſſengers who were awake into a loud laughter; and the gentleman recollecting himſelf, with ſome confuſion, and not without bluſhing, aſked pardon, crying, 'I proteſt I dreamt that I was 'alive.'—'Perhaps, Sir,' ſaid I, 'you 'died of that diſtemper, which there-'fore made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on 'you.'—'No, Sir,' anſwered he, 'I 'never had it in my life; but the con-'tinual and dreadful apprehenſion it 'kept me ſo long under, cannot, I ſee, 'be ſo immediately eradicated. You 'muſt know, Sir, I avoided coming 'to London for thirty years together, 'for fear of the ſmall-pox, till the 'moſt urgent buſineſs brought me 'thither about five days ago. I was 'ſo dreadfully afraid of this diſeaſe, 'that I refuſed the ſecond night of my 'arrival to ſup with a friend, whoſe 'wife had recovered of it ſeveral 'months before, and the ſame evening 'got a ſurfeit by eating too many 'muſcles, which brought me into this 'good company.'

'I will lay a wager,' cried the ſpirit who ſat next him, 'there is not one in 'the coach able to gueſs my diſtem-'per.'—I deſired the favour of him to acquaint us with it, if it was ſo uncommon. 'Why, Sir,' ſaid he, 'I 'died of honour.'—'Of honour, Sir!' repeated I, with ſome ſurprize.—'Yes, 'Sir,' anſwered the ſpirit, 'of honour! 'for I was killed in a duel.'

'For my part,' ſaid a fair ſpirit, 'I 'was inoculated laſt ſummer, and had 'the good fortune to eſcape with a very 'few marks in my face. I eſteemed 'myſelf now perfectly happy, as I 'imagined I had no reſtraint to a full 'enjoyment of the diverſions of the 'town; but within a few days after 'my coming up, I caught cold by 'over-dancing myſelf at a ball, and 'laſt night died of a violent fever.'

After a ſhort ſilence, which now enſued, the fair ſpirit who ſpoke laſt, it being now day-light, addreſſed herſelf to a female who ſat next her, and aſked her to what chance they owed the happineſs of her company. She anſwered, ſhe apprehended to a conſumption; but the phyſicians were not agreed concerning her diſtemper, for ſhe left two of them in a very hot diſpute about it when ſhe came out of her body. 'And 'pray, Madam,' ſaid the ſame ſpirit to the ſixth paſſenger, 'how came you 'to leave the other world?' But that female ſpirit, ſcrewing up her mouth, anſwered, ſhe wondered at the curioſity of ſome people; that, perhaps, perſons had already heard ſome reports of her death, which were far from being true: that, whatever was the occaſion of it, ſhe was glad at being delivered from a world in which ſhe had no pleaſure, and where there was nothing but nonſenſe and impertinence; particularly

* Thoſe who have read of the gods ſleeping in Homer, will not be ſurprized at this happening to ſpirits.

among

among her own ſex, whoſe looſe conduct ſhe had long been entirely aſhamed of.

The beauteous ſpirit perceiving her queſtion gave offence, purſued it no farther. She had indeed all the ſweetneſs and good-humour, which are ſo extremely amiable (when found) in that ſex, which tenderneſs moſt exquiſitely becomes. Her countenance diſplayed all the chearfulneſs, the goodnature, and the modeſty, which diffuſe ſuch brightneſs round the beauty of Seraphina*, awing every beholder with reſpect, and at the ſame time raviſhing him with admiration. Had it not been, indeed, for our converſation on the ſmall-pox, I ſhould have imagined we had been honoured with her identical preſence. This opinion might have been heightened by the good-ſenſe ſhe uttered whenever ſhe ſpoke, by the delicacy of her ſentiments, and the complacence of her behaviour; together with a certain dignity which attended every look, word, and geſture: qualities which could not fail making an impreſſion on a heart ſo capable of receiving it as mine†; nor was ſhe long in raiſing in me a very violent degree of ſeraphick love. I do not intend by this that ſort of love which men are very properly ſaid to *make* to women in the lower world, and which ſeldom laſts any longer than while it is *making*. I mean, by ſeraphick love, an extreme delicacy and tenderneſs of friendſhip; of which, my worthy reader, if thou haſt no conception, as it is probable thou mayeſt not, my endeavour to inſtruct thee would be as fruitleſs, as it would be to explain the moſt difficult problems of Sir Iſaac Newton to one ignorant of vulgar arithmetick.

To return, therefore, to matters comprehenſible by all underſtandings: the diſcourſe now turned on the vanity, folly, and miſery of the lower world, from which every paſſenger in the coach expreſſed the higheſt ſatisfaction in being delivered; though it was very remarkable, that, notwithſtanding the joy we declared at our death, there was not one of us who did not mention the accident which occaſioned it as a thing we would have avoided if we could. Nay, the very grave lady herſelf, who was the forwardeſt in teſtifying her delight, confeſſed, inadvertently, that ſhe left a phyſician by her bed-ſide; and the gentleman, who died of honour, very liberally curſed both his folly and his fencing. While we were entertaining ourſelves with theſe matters, on a ſudden a moſt offenſive ſmell began to invade our noſtrils. This very much reſembled the ſavour which travellers, in ſummer, perceive at their approach to that beautiful village of the Hague, ariſing from thoſe delicious canals, which, as they conſiſt of ſtanding water, do at that time emit odours greatly agreeable to a Dutch taſte, but not ſo pleaſant to any other. Thoſe perfumes, with the aſſiſtance of a fair wind, begin to affect perſons of quick olfactory nerves at a league's diſtance, and increaſe gradually as you approach. In the ſame manner did the ſmell I have juſt mentioned more and more invade us, till one of the ſpirits looking out of the coach-window, declared we were juſt arrived at a very large city; and indeed he had ſcarce ſaid ſo, before we found ourſelves in the ſuburbs; and at the ſame time the coachman, being aſked by another, informed us that the name of this place was *the City of Diſeaſes*. The road to it was extremely ſmooth, and, excepting the above-mentioned ſavour, delightfully pleaſant. The ſtreets of the ſuburbs were lined with bagnios, taverns, and cooks-ſhops: in the firſt we ſaw ſeveral beautiful women, but in tawdry dreſſes, looking out at the windows; and in the latter were viſibly expoſed all kinds of the richeſt dainties; but, on our entering the city, we found, contrary to all we had ſeen in the other world, that the ſuburbs were infinitely pleaſanter than the city itſelf. It was, indeed, a very dull, dark, and melancholy place. Few people appeared in the ſtreets, and theſe, for the moſt part, were old women, and here and there a formal grave gentleman, who ſeemed to be thinking, with large tie-wigs on,

* A particular lady of quality is meant here; but every lady of quality, or no quality, are welcome to apply the character to themſelves.

† We have before made an apology for this language, which we here repeat for the laſt time; though the heart may, we hope, be metaphorically uſed here with more propriety than when we apply thoſe paſſions to the body which belong to the ſoul.

and

and amber-headed canes in their hands. We were all in hopes that our vehicle would not ſtop here; but, to our ſorrow, the coach ſoon drove into an inn, and we were obliged to alight.

CHAP. III.

THE ADVENTURES WE MET WITH IN THE CITY OF DISEASES.

WE had not been long arrived in our inn, where it ſeems we were to ſpend the remainder of the day, before our hoſt acquainted us that it was cuſtomary for all ſpirits, in their paſſage through that city, to pay their reſpects to that Lady Diſeaſe to whoſe aſſiſtance they had owed their deliverance from the lower world. We anſwered, we ſhould not fail in any complaiſance which was uſual to others; upon which our hoſt replied, he would immediately ſend porters to conduct us. He had not long quitted the room, before we were attended by ſome of thoſe grave perſons, whom I have before deſcribed, in large tie-wigs, with amber-headed canes. Theſe gentlemen are the ticket-porters in this city, and their canes are the *inſignia*, or tickets denoting their office. We informed them of the ſeveral ladies to whom we were obliged, and were preparing to follow them, when on a ſudden they all ſtared at one another, and left us in a hurry, with a frown on every countenance. We were ſurprized at this behaviour, and preſently ſummoned the hoſt, who was no ſooner acquainted with it, than he burſt into a hearty laugh, and told us the reaſon was, becauſe we did not fee the gentlemen the moment they came in, according to the cuſtom of the place. We anſwered, with ſome confuſion, we had brought nothing with us from the other world, which we had been all our lives informed was not lawful to do.—'No, no, maſter!' replied the hoſt, 'I am apprized of that, and indeed 'it was my fault. I ſhould have 'firſt ſent you to my Lord Scrape*; 'who would have ſupplied you with 'what you want.'—'My Lord Scrape 'ſupply us!' ſaid I, with aſtoniſhment. 'Sure you muſt know we cannot give 'him ſecurity; and I am convinced he 'never lent a ſhilling without it in his 'life.'—'No, Sir!' anſwered the hoſt; 'and for that reaſon he is obliged to 'do it here, where he is ſentenced to 'keep a bank, and to diſtribute money '*gratis* to all paſſengers. This bank 'originally conſiſted of juſt that ſum 'which he had miſerably hoarded up 'in the other world, and he is to perceive it decreaſe viſibly one ſhilling a 'day, till it is totally exhauſted; after 'which he is to return to the other 'world, and perform the part of a 'miſer for ſeventy years; then being 'purified in the body of a hog, he is 'to enter the human ſpecies again, and 'take a ſecond trial.'—'Sir,' ſaid I, 'you tell me wonders: but, if his 'bank be to decreaſe only a ſhilling a 'day, how can he furniſh all paſſengers?'—'The reſt,' anſwered the hoſt, 'is ſupplied again; but in a manner which I cannot eaſily explain 'to you.'—'I apprehend,' ſaid I, 'this diſtribution of his money is inflicted on him as a puniſhment; but 'I do not ſee how it can anſwer that 'end, when he knows it is to be reſtored him again. Would it not 'ſerve the purpoſe as well, if he parted only with the ſingle ſhilling, which 'it ſeems is all he is really to loſe?'—'Sir,' cries the hoſt, 'when you obſerve the agonies with which he parts 'with every guinea, you will be of 'another opinion. No priſoner condemned to death ever begged ſo 'heartily for tranſportation, as he, 'when he received his ſentence, did to 'go to hell, provided he might carry 'his money with him. But you will 'know more of theſe things when 'you arrive at the upper world; and 'now, if you pleaſe, I will attend 'you to my lord's, who is obliged to 'ſupply you with whatever you deſire.'

We found his lordſhip ſitting at the upper end of a table, on which was an immenſe ſum of money, diſpoſed in ſeveral heaps, every one of which would have purchaſed the honour of ſome patriots, and the chaſtity of ſome prudes. The moment he ſaw us, he turned pale, and ſighed, as well apprehending our buſineſs. Mine hoſt accoſted

* That we may mention it once for all, in the panegyrical part of this work, ſome particular perſon is always meant; but in the ſatyrical, no body.

him with a familiar air, which at first ſurprized me, who ſo well remembered the reſpect I had formerly ſeen paid this lord, by men infinitely ſuperior in quality to the perſon who now ſaluted him in the following manner—'Here you, lord, and be dam—d to 'your little ſneaking ſoul, tell out 'your money, and ſupply your betters 'with what they want. Be quick, 'ſirrah, or I'll fetch the beadle to you. 'Don't fancy yourſelf in the lower 'world again, with your privilege at 'your a—.' He then ſhook a cane at his lordſhip, who immediately began to tell out his money with the ſame miſerable air and face, which the miſer on our ſtage wears, while he delivers his bank-bills. This affected ſome of us ſo much, that we had certainly returned with no more than what would have been ſufficient to fee the porters, had not our hoſt, perceiving our compaſſion, begged us not to ſpare a fellow who, in the midſt of immenſe wealth, had always refuſed the leaſt contribution to charity. Our hearts were hardened with this reflection, and we all filled our pockets with his money. I remarked a poetical ſpirit in particular, who ſwore he would have a hearty gripe at him: 'For,' ſays he, 'the 'raſcal not only refuſed to ſubſcribe to 'my works, but ſent back my letter 'unanſwered, though I am a better 'gentleman than himſelf.'

We now returned from this miſerable object, greatly admiring the propriety, as well as juſtice of his puniſhment, which conſiſted, as our hoſt informed us, merely in the delivering forth his money; and he obſerved we could not wonder at the pain this gave him, ſince it was as reaſonable that the bare parting with money ſhould make him miſerable, as that the bare having money without uſing it ſhould have made him happy.

Other tie-wig porters, (for thoſe we had ſummoned before refuſed to *viſit* us again) now attended us; and we having feed them the inſtant they entered the room, according to the inſtructions of our hoſt, they bowed and ſmiled, and offered to introduce us to whatever diſeaſe we pleaſed.

We ſet out ſeveral ways, as we were all to pay our reſpects to different ladies. I directed my porter to ſhew me to the Fever on the Spirits, being the diſeaſe which had delivered me from the fleſh. My guide and I traverſed many ſtreets, and knocked at ſeveral doors, but to no purpoſe. At one we were told, lived the Conſumption; at another the Maladie Alamode, a French lady; at the third, the Dropſy; at the fourth, the Rheumatiſm; at the fifth, Intemperance; at the ſixth, Misfortune. I was tired, and had exhauſted my patience, and almoſt my purſe; for I gave my porter a new fee at every blunder he made: when my guide, with a ſolemn countenance, told me, *he could do no more*; and marched off without any farther ceremony.

He was no ſooner gone, than I met another gentleman with a ticket, *i. e.* an amber-headed cane in his hand. I firſt feed him, and then acquainted him with the name of the diſeaſe. He caſt himſelf for two or three minutes into a thoughtful poſture, then pulled a piece of paper out of his pocket, on which he writ ſomething in one of the Oriental languages, I believe, for I could not read a ſyllable: he bade me carry it to ſuch a particular ſhop, and telling me *it would do my buſineſs*, he took his leave.

Secure as I now thought myſelf of my direction, I went to the ſhop, which very much reſembled an apothecary's. The perſon who officiated, having read the paper, took down about twenty different jars, and pouring ſomething out of every one of them, made a mixture, which he delivered to me in a bottle, having firſt tied a paper round the neck of it, on which were written three or four words, the laſt containing eleven ſyllables. I mentioned the name of the diſeaſe I wanted to find out; but received no other anſwer, than that he had done as he was ordered, and the drugs were excellent.

I began now to be enraged, and quitting the ſhop with ſome anger in my countenance, I intended to find out my inn; but meeting in the way a porter, whoſe countenance had in it ſomething more pleaſing than ordinary, I reſolved to try once more, and clapt a fee into his hand. As ſoon as I mentioned the diſeaſe to him, he laughed heartily, and told me I had been impoſed on; for, in reality, no ſuch diſeaſe was to be found in that city. He then enquired into the particulars of my caſe, and was no ſooner acquainted with

with them, than he informed me that the Maladie Alamode was the lady to whom I was obliged. I thanked him, and immediately went to pay my reſpects to her.

The houſe, or rather palace, of this lady, was one of the moſt beautiful and magnificent in the city. The avenue to it was planted with ſycamore trees, with beds of flowers on each ſide; it was extremely pleaſant, but ſhort. I was conducted through a magnificent hall, adorned with ſeveral ſtatues and buſtoes, moſt of them maimed, whence I concluded them all to be true antiques; but was informed they were the figures of ſeveral modern heroes, who had died martyrs to her ladyſhip's cauſe. I next mounted through a large painted ſtair-caſe, where ſeveral perſons were depictured in caracatura; and, upon enquiry, was told they were the portraits of thoſe who had diſtinguiſhed themſelves againſt the lady in the lower world. I ſuppoſe I ſhould have known the faces of many phyſicians and ſurgeons, had they not been ſo violently diſtorted by the painter. Indeed, he had exerted ſo much malice in his work, that I believe he had himſelf received ſome particular favours from the lady of this manſion: it is difficult to conceive a groupe of ſtranger figures. I then entered a long room hung round with the pictures of women of ſuch exact ſhapes and features, that I ſhould have thought myſelf in a gallery of beauties, had not a certain ſallow paleneſs in their complexions given me a more diſtaſteful idea. Through this I proceeded to a ſecond apartment, adorned, if I may ſo call it, with the figures of old ladies. Upon my ſeeming to admire at this furniture, the ſervant told me with a ſmile, that theſe had been very good friends of his lady, and had done her eminent ſervice in the lower world. I immediately recollected the faces of one or two of my acquaintance, who had formerly kept bagnios; but was very much ſurprized to ſee the reſemblance of a lady of great diſtinction in ſuch company. The ſervant, upon my mentioning this, made no other anſwer than that his lady had pictures of all degrees.

I was now introduced into the preſence of the lady herſelf. She was a thin, or rather meagre perſon, very wan in the countenance, had no noſe, and many pimples in her face. She offered to riſe at my entrance, but could not ſtand. After many compliments, much congratulation on her ſide, and the moſt fervent expreſſions of gratitude on mine, ſhe aſked me many queſtions concerning the ſituation of her affairs in the lower world; moſt of which I anſwered to her entire ſatisfaction. At laſt, with a kind of forced ſmile, ſhe ſaid, 'I ſuppoſe the 'Pill and Drop go on ſwimmingly.' I told her they were reported to have done great cures. She replied, ſhe could apprehend no danger from any perſon, who was not of regular practice; 'For however ſimple mankind 'are,' ſaid ſhe, 'or however afraid 'they are of death, they prefer dying 'in a regular manner to being cured 'by a noſtrum.' She then expreſſed great pleaſure at the account I gave her of the beau-monde. She ſaid ſhe had herſelf removed the hundreds of Drury, to the hundreds of Charing Croſs, and was very much delighted to find they had ſpread into St. James's; that ſhe imputed this chiefly to ſeveral of her dear and worthy friends, who had lately publiſhed their excellent works, endeavouring to extirpate all notions of religion and virtue; and particularly to the deſerving author of the Batchelor's Eſtimate; 'To whom,' ſaid ſhe, 'if I had not 'reaſon to think he was a ſurgeon, 'and had therefore written from mer'cenary views, I could never ſuffi'ciently own my obligations.' She ſpoke likewiſe greatly in approbation of the method ſo generally uſed by parents, of marrying children very young, and without the leaſt affection between the parties; and concluded by ſaying, that if theſe faſhions continued to ſpread, ſhe doubted not but ſhe ſhould ſhortly be the only diſeaſe who would ever receive a viſit from any perſon of conſiderable rank.

While we were diſcourſing, her three daughters entered the room. They were all called *by hard names*, the eldeſt was named Lepra, the ſecond Chœras, and the third Scorbutia *. They were all genteel, but ugly. I could not

* Theſe ladies, I believe, by their names, preſided over the leproſy, king's evil, and ſcurvy.

help obſerving the little reſpect they paid their parent; which the old lady remarking in my countenance as ſoon as they quitted the room, which ſoon happened, acquainted me with her unhappineſs in her offſpring, every one of which had the confidence to deny themſelves to be her children, though ſhe ſaid ſhe had been a very indulgent mother, and had plentifully provided for them all. As family complaints generally as much tire the hearer as they relieve him who makes them, when I found her launching farther into this ſubject, I reſolved to put an end to my viſit; and taking my leave, with many thanks for the favour ſhe had done me, I returned to the inn, where I found my fellow-travellers juſt mounting into their vehicle. I ſhook hands with my hoſt, and accompanied them into the coach, which immediately after proceeded on it's journey.

CHAP. IV.

DISCOURSES ON THE ROAD, AND A DESCRIPTION OF THE PALACE OF DEATH.

WE were all ſilent for ſome minutes, till being well ſhaken into our ſeveral ſeats, I opened my mouth firſt, and related what had happened to me after our ſeparation in the city we had juſt left. The reſt of the company, except the grave female ſpirit, whom our reader may remember to have refuſed giving an account of the diſtemper which occaſioned her diſſolution, did the ſame. It might be tedious to relate theſe at large; we ſhall therefore only mention a very remarkable inveteracy which the Surfeit declared to all the other diſeaſes, eſpecially to the Fever, who, ſhe ſaid, by the roguery of the porters, received acknowledgments from numberleſs paſſengers, which were due to herſelf. 'Indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'thoſe *cane-headed* fellows,' (for ſo ſhe called them, alluding, I ſuppoſe, to their ticket) 'are conſtantly making ſuch miſtakes; 'there is no gratitude in thoſe fellows; 'for I am ſure they have greater obli'gations to me, than to any other diſ'eaſe, except the Vapours.' Theſe relations were no ſooner over, than one of the company informed us, we were approaching to the moſt noble building he had ever beheld, and which we learned from our coachman, was the Palace of Death. It's outſide, indeed, appeared extremely magnificent; it's ſtructure was of the gothick order; vaſt beyond imagination, the whole pile conſiſting of black marble. Rows of immenſe yews form an amphitheatre round it of ſuch height and thickneſs, that no ray of the ſun ever perforates this grove; where black eternal darkneſs would reign, was it not excluded by innumerable lamps, which are placed in pyramids round the grove; ſo that the diſtant reflection they caſt on the palace, which is plentifully gilt with gold on the outſide, is inconceivably ſolemn. To this I may add, the hollow murmur of winds conſtantly heard from the grove, and the very remote ſound of roaring waters. Indeed, every circumſtance ſeems to conſpire to fill the mind with horror and conſternation as we approach to this palace; which we had ſcarce time to admire, before our vehicle ſtopped at the gate, and we were deſired to alight in order to pay our reſpects to his moſt mortal majeſty, (this being the title which it ſeems he aſſumes.) The outward court was all full of ſoldiers; and, indeed, the whole very much reſembled the ſtate of an earthly monarch, only more magnificent. We paſſed through ſeveral courts, into a vaſt hall, which led to a ſpacious ſtaircaſe, at the bottom of which ſtood two pages with very grave countenances, whom I recollected afterwards to have formerly been very eminent undertakers, and were in reality the only diſmal faces I ſaw here; for this palace, ſo awful and tremendous without, is all gay and ſprightly within, ſo that we ſoon loſt all thoſe diſmal and gloomy ideas we had contracted in approaching it. Indeed the ſtill ſilence, maintained among the guards and attendants, reſembled rather the ſtately pomp of eaſtern courts; but there was on every face ſuch ſymptoms of content and happineſs, that diffuſed an air of chearfulneſs all round. We aſcended the ſtaircaſe, and paſſed through many noble apartments, whoſe walls were adorned with various battle-pieces in tapeſtry, and which we ſpent ſome time in obſerving. Theſe brought to my mind thoſe beautiful ones I had in my life-

time

Plate I. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co June 14, 1783.

time seen at Blenheim; nor could I prevent my curiosity from enquiring where the Duke of Marlborough's victories were placed; (for I think they were almost the only battles of any eminence I had read of, which I did not meet with) when the skeleton of a beef-eater, shaking his head, told me, a certain gentleman, one Lewis the XIVth, who had great interest with his most mortal majesty, had prevented any such from being hung up there; 'Besides,' says he, 'his majesty hath no great respect for that duke, for he never sent 'him a subject he could keep from 'him, nor did he ever get a single subject by his means, but he lost a thou'sand others for him.' We found the presence-chamber, at our entrance, very full, and a buz ran through it, as in all assemblies, before the principal figure enters; for his majesty was not yet come out. At the bottom of the room were two persons in close conference, one with a square black cap on his head, and the other with a robe embroidered with flames of fire: these, I was informed, were a judge long since dead, and an inquisitor-general. I overheard them disputing with great eagerness, whether the one had hanged, or the other burnt, the most. While I was listening to this dispute, which seemed to be in no likelihood of a speedy decision, the emperor entered the room, and placed himself between two figures, one of which was remarkable for the roughness, and the other for the beauty of his appearance. These were, it seems, Charles the XIIth of Sweden, and Alexander of Macedon. I was at too great a distance to hear any of the conversation, so could only satisfy my curiosity by contemplating the several personages present, of whose names I informed myself by a page, who looked as pale and meagre as any court-page in the other world, but was somewhat more modest. He shewed me here two or three Turkish emperors, to whom his most mortal majesty seemed to express much civility. Here were likewise several of the Roman emperors, among whom none seemed so much caressed as Caligula, on account, as the page told me, of his *pious* wish, that he could send all the Romans hither at one blow. The reader may be perhaps surprized that I saw no physicians here; as, indeed, I was myself, till informed that they were all departed to the city of Diseases, where they were busy in an experiment to purge away the immortality of the soul.

It would be tedious to recollect the many individuals I saw here; but I cannot omit a fat figure well dressed in the French fashion, who was received with extraordinary complaisance by the emperor, and whom I imagined to be Lewis the XIVth himself, but the page acquainted me he was a celebrated French cook.

We were at length introduced to the royal presence, and had the honour to kiss hands. His majesty asked us a few questions, not very material to relate, and soon after retired.

When we returned into the yard, we found our caravan ready to set out, at which we all declared ourselves well pleased; for we were sufficiently tired with the formality of a court, notwithstanding it's outward splendor and magnificence.

CHAP. V.

THE TRAVELLERS PROCEED ON THEIR JOURNEY, AND MEET SEVERAL SPIRITS WHO ARE COMING INTO THE FLESH.

WE now came to the banks of the great river Cocytus, where we quitted our vehicle, and passed the water in a boat, after which we were obliged to travel on foot the rest of our journey; and now we met, for the first time, several passengers travelling to the world we had left, who informed us they were souls going into the flesh.

The two first we met were walking arm in arm in very close and friendly conference; they informed us, that one of them was intended for a duke, and the other for a hackney-coachman. As we had not yet arrived at the place where we were to deposit our passions, we were all surprized at the familiarity which subsisted between persons of such different degrees; nor could the grave lady help expressing her astonishment at it. The future coachman then replied with a laugh, that they had exchanged lots; for that the duke had, with his dukedom, drawn a shrew of a wife, and the coachman only a single state.

As

As we proceeded on our journey, we met a ſolemn ſpirit walking alone with great gravity in his countenance; our curioſity invited us, notwithſtanding his reſerve, to aſk what lot he had drawn: he anſwered, with a ſmile, he was to have the reputation of a wiſe man, with 100,000*l.* in his pocket, and that he was practiſing the ſolemnity which he was to act in the other world.

A little farther we met a company of very merry ſpirits, whom we imagined, by their mirth, to have drawn ſome mighty lot; but, on enquiry, they informed us they were to be beggars.

The farther we advanced, the greater numbers we met, and now we diſcovered two large roads leading different ways, and of very different appearance; the one all craggy with rocks, full as it ſeemed of boggy grounds, and every where beſet with briars, ſo that it was impoſſible to paſs through it without the utmoſt danger and difficulty; the other, the moſt delightful imaginable, leading through the moſt verdant meadows, painted and perfumed with all kinds of beautiful flowers; in ſhort, the moſt wanton imagination could imagine nothing more lovely. Notwithſtanding which, we were ſurprized to ſee great numbers crouding into the former, and only one or two ſolitary ſpirits chuſing the latter. On enquiry, we were acquainted that the bad road was the way to Greatneſs, and the other to Goodneſs. When we expreſſed our ſurprize at the preference given to the former, we were acquainted that it was choſen for the ſake of the muſick of drums and trumpets, and the perpetual acclamations of the mob; with which thoſe who travelled this way were conſtantly ſaluted. We were told likewiſe, that there were ſeveral noble palaces to be ſeen, and lodged in on this road, by thoſe who had paſſed through the difficulties of it, (which, indeed, many were not able to ſurmount) and great quantities of all ſorts of treaſure to be found in it; whereas the other had little inviting more than the beauty of the way, ſcarce a handſome building, ſave one greatly reſembling a certain houſe by the Bath, to be ſeen during that whole journey; and laſtly, that it was thought very ſcandalous and mean-ſpirited to travel through this, and as highly honourable and noble to paſs by the other.

We now heard a violent noiſe, when caſting our eyes forwards, we perceived a vaſt number of ſpirits advancing in purſuit of one whom they mocked and inſulted with all kinds of ſcorn. I cannot give my reader a more adequate idea of this ſcene, than by comparing it to an Engliſh mob conducting a pick-pocket to the water; or by ſuppoſing that an incenſed audience at a play-houſe had, unhappily, poſſeſſed themſelves of the miſerable damned poet. Some laughed, ſome hiſſed, ſome ſqualled, ſome groaned, ſome bawled, ſome ſpit at him, ſome threw dirt at him. It was impoſſible not to aſk who or what the wretched ſpirit was whom they treated in this barbarous manner; when, to our great ſurprize, we were informed that it was a king: we were likewiſe told, that this manner of behaviour was uſual among the ſpirits, to thoſe who drew the lots of emperors, kings, and other great men, not from envy or anger, but mere deriſion and contempt of earthly grandeur: that nothing was more common, than for thoſe who had drawn theſe great prizes, (as to us they ſeemed) to exchange them with taylors and coblers; and that Alexander the Great, and Diogenes, had formerly done ſo; he that was afterwards Diogenes having originally fallen on the lot of Alexander.

And now, on a ſudden, the mockery ceaſed; and the king-ſpirit having obtained a hearing, began to ſpeak as follows; for we were now near enough to hear him diſtinctly.

'Gentlemen, I am juſtly ſurprized at 'your treating me in this manner; ſince 'whatever lot I have drawn, I did not 'chuſe: if, therefore, it be worthy of de'riſion, you ſhould compaſſionate me, 'for it might have fallen to any of your 'ſhares. I know in how low a light 'the ſtation to which Fate hath aſſigned 'me is conſidered here, and that, when 'ambition doth not ſupport it, it be'comes generally ſo intolerable, that 'there is ſcarce any other condition for 'which it is not gladly exchanged: 'for what portion in the world to which 'we are going, is ſo miſerable as that 'of care? Should I therefore conſider 'myſelf as become by this lot eſſenti-

'ally

'ally your ſuperior, and of a higher 'order of being than the reſt of my 'fellow-creatures; ſhould I fooliſhly 'imagine myſelf without wiſdom ſu-'perior to the wiſe, without knowledge 'to the learned, without courage to the 'brave, and without goodneſs and vir-'tue to the good and virtuous; ſurely 'ſo preposterous, ſo abſurd a pride, 'would juſtly render me the object of 'ridicule. But far be it from me to 'entertain it. And yet, gentlemen, I 'prize the lot I have drawn; nor would 'I exchange it with any of yours, 'ſeeing it is in my eye ſo much greater 'than the reſt. Ambition, which I 'own myſelf poſſeſſed of, teaches me 'this. Ambition, which makes me 'covet praiſe, aſſures me that I ſhall 'enjoy a much larger proportion of it 'than can fall within your power either 'to deſerve or obtain. I am then ſu-'perior to you all, when I am able to 'do more good, and when I execute 'that power. What the father is to 'the ſon, the guardian to the orphan, 'or the patron to his client, that am I 'to you. You are my children, to 'whom I will be a father, a guardian, 'and a patron. Not one evening in 'my long reign, (for ſo it is to be) will 'I repoſe myſelf to reſt, without the 'glorious, the heart-warming con-'ſideration, that thouſands that night 'owe their ſweeteſt reſt to me. What 'a delicious fortune is it to him, whoſe 'ſtrongeſt appetite is doing good, to 'have every day the opportunity and 'the power of ſatisfying it! If ſuch a 'man hath ambition, how happy is it 'for him to be ſeated ſo on high, that 'every act blazes abroad, and attracts 'to him praiſes tainted with neither 'ſarcaſm nor adulation; but ſuch as 'the niceſt and moſt delicate mind may 'reliſh? Thus, therefore, while you 'derive your good from me, I am your 'ſuperior. If to my ſtrict diſtribution 'of juſtice you owe the ſafety of your 'property from domeſtick enemies; 'if by my vigilance and valour you 'are protected from foreign foes; if 'by my encouragement of genuine in-'duſtry, every ſcience, every art which 'can embelliſh or ſweeten life, is pro-'duced and flouriſhes among you; will 'any of you be ſo inſenſible or un-'grateful as to deny praiſe and reſpect 'to him by whoſe care and conduct you 'enjoy theſe bleſſings? I wonder not 'at the cenſure which ſo frequently 'falls on thoſe in my ſtation; but I 'wonder that thoſe in my ſtation ſo 'frequently deſerve it. What ſtrange 'perverſeneſs of nature! What wan-'ton delight in miſchief muſt taint his 'compoſition, who prefers danger, 'difficulty, and diſgrace, by doing 'evil, to ſafety, eaſe, and honour, 'by doing good? who refuſes happi-'neſs in the other world, and Heaven 'in this, for miſery there, and hell 'here? But, be aſſured, my intentions 'are different. I ſhall always endea-'vour the eaſe, the happineſs, and the 'glory of my people, being confident 'that by ſo doing, I take the moſt 'certain method of procuring them all 'to myſelf.'—He then ſtruck directly into the road of Goodneſs, and received ſuch a ſhout of applauſe as I never remember to have heard equalled.

He was gone a little way, when a ſpirit limped after him, ſwearing he would fetch him back. This ſpirit, I was preſently informed, was one who had drawn the lot of his prime-miniſter.

CHAP. VI.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE WHEEL OF FORTUNE, WITH A METHOD OF PREPARING A SPIRIT FOR THIS WORLD.

WE now proceeded on our jour-ney, without ſtaying to ſee whether he fulfilled his word or no; and, without encountering any thing worth mentioning, came to the place where the ſpirits on their paſſage to the other world were obliged to decide by lot the ſtation in which every one was to act there. Here was a monſtrous wheel, infinitely larger than thoſe in which I had formerly ſeen lottery-tickets depoſited. This was called the WHEEL OF FORTUNE. The goddeſs herſelf was preſent. She was one of the moſt deformed females I ever beheld; nor could I help obſerving the frowns ſhe expreſſed when any beautiful ſpi-rit of her own ſex paſſed by her, nor the affability which ſmiled in her counte-nance on the approach of any hand-ſome male ſpirits. Hence I accounted for the truth of an obſervation I had often made on earth, that nothing is more

fortunate

fortunate than handsome men, nor more unfortunate than handsome women.—The reader may be, perhaps, pleased with an account of the whole method of equipping a spirit for his entrance into the flesh.

First, then, he receives from a very sage person, whose look much resembled that of an apothecary, (his warehouse likewise bearing an affinity to an apothecary's shop) a small phial, inscribed, THE PATHETICK POTION, *to be taken just before you are born.* This potion is a mixture of all the passions, but in no exact proportion, so that sometimes one predominates and sometimes another; nay, often in the hurry of making up, one particular ingredient is, as we were informed, left out. The spirit receiveth at the same time another medicine, called the NOUSPHORICK DECOCTION, of which he is to drink *ad libitum.* This decoction is an extract from the faculties of the mind, sometimes extremely strong and spirituous, and sometimes altogether as weak; for very little care is taken in the preparation. This decoction is so extremely bitter and unpleasant, that, notwithstanding it's wholesomeness, several spirits will not be persuaded to swallow a drop of it, but throw it away, or give it to any other who will receive it; by which means some who were not disgusted by the nauseousness, drank double and treble portions. I observed a beautiful young female, who, tasting it immediately from curiosity, screwed up her face, and cast it from her with great disdain, whence advancing presently to the wheel, she drew a coronet, which she clapped up so eagerly, that I could not distinguish the degree; and, indeed, I observed several of the same sex, after a very small sip, throw the bottles away.

As soon as the spirit is dismissed by the operator, or apothecary, he is at liberty to approach the wheel, where he hath a right to extract a single lot; but those whom Fortune favours, she permits sometimes secretly to draw three or four. I observed a comical kind of figure who drew forth a handful, which when he opened, were a bishop, a general, a privy-counsellor, a player, and a poet-laureate, and returning the three first, he walked off singing with the two last.

Every single lot contained two or more articles, which were generally disposed so as to render the lots as equal as possible to each other.

On one was written *Earl,*
Riches,
Health,
Disquietude.

On another, *Cobler,*
Sickness,
Good-humour.

On a third, *Poet,*
Contempt,
Self-satisfaction.

On a fourth, *General,*
Honour,
Discontent.

On a fifth, *Cottage,*
Happy love.

On a sixth, *Coach and six,*
Impotent jealous husband.

On a seventh, *Prime-minister,*
Disgrace.

On an eighth, *Patriot,*
Glory.

On a ninth, *Philosopher,*
Poverty,
Ease.

On a tenth, *Merchant,*
Riches,
Care.

And, indeed, the whole seemed to contain such a mixture of good and evil, that it would have puzzled me which to chuse. I must not omit here, that in every lot was directed, whether the drawer should marry or remain in celibacy, the married lots being all marked with a large pair of horns.

We were obliged, before we quitted this place, to take each of us an emetick from the apothecary, which immediately purged us of all our earthly passions, and presently the cloud forsook our eyes, as it doth those of Æneas in Virgil when removed by Venus, and we discerned things in a much clearer light than before. We began to compassionate those spirits who were making their entry into the flesh, whom we had, till then, secretly envied, and to long eagerly for those delightful plains which now opened themselves to our eyes, and to which we now hastened with the utmost eagerness. On our way, we met with several

veral ſpirits with very dejected countenances; but our expedition would not ſuffer us to aſk any queſtions.

At length, we arrived at the gate of Elyſium. Here was a prodigious crowd of ſpirits waiting for admittance, ſome of whom were admitted and ſome were rejected; for all were ſtrictly examined by the porter, whom I ſoon diſcovered to be the celebrated Judge Minos.

CHAP. VII.

THE PROCEEDINGS OF JUDGE MINOS, AT THE GATE OE ELYSIUM.

I Now got near enough to the gate, to hear the ſeveral claims of thoſe who endeavoured to paſs. The firſt, among other pretenſions, ſet forth, that he had been very liberal to an hoſpital; but Minos anſwered, 'Oſtentation!' and repulſed him. The ſecond exhibited, that he had conſtantly frequented his church, being a rigid obſerver of faſt-days. He likewiſe repreſented the great animoſity he had ſhewn to vice in others, which never eſcaped his ſevereſt cenſure; and as to his own behaviour, he had never been once guilty of whoring, drinking, gluttony, or any other exceſs. He ſaid, he had diſinherited his ſon for getting a baſtard. 'Have you ſo?' ſaid Minos; 'then pray return into the other world 'and beget another; for ſuch an un-'natural raſcal ſhall never paſs this 'gate.' A dozen others, who had advanced with very confident countenances, ſeeing him rejected, turned about of their own accord, declaring, if he could not paſs, they had no expectation, and accordingly they followed him back to earth; which was the fate of all who were repulſed, they being obliged to take a farther purification, unleſs thoſe who were guilty of ſome very henious crimes, who were huſtled in at a little back-gate, whence they tumbled immediately into the bottomleſs-pit.

The next ſpirit that came up, declared he had done neither good nor evil in the world; for that ſince his arrival at man's eſtate, he had ſpent his whole time in ſearch of curioſities; and particularly in the ſtudy of butterflies, of which he had collected an immenſe number: Minos made him no anſwer, but, with great ſcorn, puſhed him back.

There now advanced a very beautiful ſpirit indeed. She began to ogle Minos the moment ſhe ſaw him. She ſaid, ſhe hoped there was ſome merit in refuſing a great number of lovers and dying a maid, though ſhe had had the choice of a hundred. Minos told her ſhe had not refuſed enough yet, and turned her back.

She was ſucceeded by a ſpirit, who told the judge he believed his works would ſpeak for him. 'What works?' anſwered Minos. 'My dramatick 'works,' replied the other; 'which 'have done ſo much good in recom-'mending virtue, and puniſhing vice.' —'Very well,' ſaid the judge, 'if 'you pleaſe to ſtand by; the firſt per-'ſon who paſſes the gate by your 'means ſhall carry you in with him: 'but if you will take my advice, I 'think, for expedition-ſake, you had 'better return and live another life 'upon earth.' The bard grumbled at this, and replied, that beſides his poetical works, he had done ſome other good things; for that he had once lent the whole profits of a benefit-night to a friend, and by that means had ſaved him and his family from deſtruction; upon this, the gate flew open, and Minos deſired him to walk in, telling him, if he had mentioned this at firſt, he might have ſpared the remembrance of his plays. The poet anſwered, he believed if Minos had read his works he would ſet a higher value on them. He was then beginning to repeat, but Minos puſhed him forward, and turning his back to him, applied himſelf to the next paſſenger, a very genteel ſpirit, who made a very low bow to Minos, and then threw himſelf into an erect attitude, and imitated the motion of taking ſnuff with his right-hand. Minos aſked him what he had to ſay for himſelf. He anſwered, he would dance a minuet with any ſpirit in Elyſium: that he could likewiſe perform all his other exerciſes very well, and hoped he had in his life deſerved the character of a perfect *fine gentleman*. Minos replied, it would be great pity to rob the world of ſo *fine a gentleman*, and therefore deſired him to take the other trip. The beau bowed, thanked

the judge, and ſaid he deſired no better. Several ſpirits expreſſed much aſtoniſhment at this his ſatisfaction; but we were afterwards informed, he had not taken the emetick above-mentioned.

A miſerable old ſpirit now crawled forwards, whoſe face I thought I had formerly ſeen near Weſtminſter Abbey. He entertained Minos with a long harangue of what he had done *when in the Houſe*; and then proceeded to inform him how much he was worth, without attempting to produce a ſingle inſtance of any one good action. Minos ſtopped the career of his diſcourſe, and acquainted him, he muſt take a trip back again. 'What to 'S——— Houſe?' ſaid the ſpirit, in an extaſy. But the judge, without making him any anſwer, turned to another, who, with a very ſolemn air and great dignity, acquainted him he was a duke. 'To the right about, 'Mr. Duke!' cried Minos; 'you 'are infinitely too great a man for 'Elyſium:' and then giving him a kick on the b—ch, he addreſſed himſelf to a ſpirit, who, with fear and trembling, begged he might not go to the bottomleſs-pit. He ſaid, he hoped Minos would conſider, that though he had gone aſtray, he had ſuffered for it; that it was neceſſity which drove him to the robbery of eighteen pence, which he had committed, and for which he was hanged: that he had done ſome good actions in his life, that he had ſupported an aged parent with his labour, that he had been a very tender huſband and a kind father, and that he had ruined himſelf by being bail for his friend. At which words the gate opened, and Minos bid him enter, giving him a ſlap on the back as he paſſed by him.

A great number of ſpirits now came forwards, who all declared they had the ſame claim, and that the captain ſhould ſpeak for them. He acquainted the judge that they had been all ſlain in the ſervice of their country. Minos was going to admit them, but had the curioſity to aſk who had been the invader, in order, as he ſaid, to prepare the back-gate for him. The captain anſwered, they had been the invaders themſelves; that they had entered the enemy's country, and burnt and plundered ſeveral cities. 'And for what 'reaſon?' ſaid Minos. 'By the 'command of him who paid us,' ſaid the captain; 'that is the reaſon of a 'ſoldier. We are to execute whatever 'we are commanded, or we ſhould be 'a diſgrace to the army, and very little deſerve our pay.'—'You are 'brave fellows, indeed,' ſaid Minos; 'but be pleaſed to face about, and 'obey my command for once, in returning back to the other world; 'for what ſhould ſuch fellows as you 'do, where there are no cities to be 'burnt, nor people to be deſtroyed? 'But let me adviſe you to have a ſtricter regard to truth for the future, and 'not call the depopulating other countries the ſervice of your own.' The captain anſwered, in a rage, 'D—n 'me! do you give me the lye?' and was going to take Minos by the noſe, had not his guards prevented him, and immediately turned him and all his followers back the ſame road they came.

Four ſpirits informed the judge that they had been ſtarved to death through poverty; being the father, mother, and two children. That they had been honeſt, and as induſtrious as poſſible, till ſickneſs had prevented the man from labour. 'All that is very true,' cried a grave ſpirit who ſtood by, 'I 'know the fact; for theſe poor people 'were under my cure.'—'You was, 'I ſuppoſe, the parſon of the pariſh,' cries Minos; 'I hope you had a good 'living, Sir.'—'That was but a ſmall 'one,' replied the ſpirit; 'but I had 'another a little better.'—'Very 'well,' ſaid Minos, 'let the poor 'people paſs.' At which the parſon was ſtepping forwards with a ſtately gait before them; but Minos caught hold of him, and pulled him back, ſaying, 'Not ſo faſt, doctor; you muſt 'take one ſtep more into the other 'world firſt; for no man enters that 'gate without charity.'

A very ſtately figure now preſented himſelf, and informing Minos he was a patriot, began a very florid harangue on publick virtue, and the liberties of his country: upon which, Minos ſhewed him the utmoſt reſpect, and ordered the gate to be opened. The patriot was not contented with this applauſe; he ſaid he had behaved as well in place as he had done in the oppoſition; and that, though he was now obliged to embrace the court-meaſures, yet he had behaved very honeſtly to his friends, and brought as many in as was poſſible.

ble. 'Hold a moment,' says Minos; 'on second consideration, Mr. Patriot, I think a man of your great 'virtue and abilities will be so much 'missed by your country, that, if I 'might advise you, you should take a 'journey back again. I am sure you 'will not decline it, for I am certain 'you will with great readiness sacri-'fice your own happiness to the pub-'lick good.' The patriot smiled, and told Minos he believed he was in jest; and was offering to enter the gate, but the judge laid fast hold of him, and insisted on his return, which the patriot still declining, he at last ordered his guards to seize him, and conduct him back.

A spirit now advanced, and the gate was immediately thrown open to him, before he had spoken a word. I heard some whisper—'*That is our last lord-mayor.*'

It now came to our company's turn. The fair spirit, which I mentioned with so much applause in the beginning of my journey, passed through very easily; but the grave lady was rejected on her first appearance, Minos declaring there was not a single prude in Elysium.

The judge then addressed himself to me, who little expected to pass this fiery trial. I confessed I had indulged myself very freely with wine and women in my youth, but had never done an injury to any man living, nor avoided an opportunity of doing good; that I pretended to very little virtue more than general philanthropy and private friendship.—I was proceeding, when Minos bid me enter the gate, and not indulge myself with trumpeting forth my virtues. I accordingly past forward with my lovely companion, and embracing her with vast eagerness, but spiritual innocence, she returned my embrace in the same manner, and we both congratulated ourselves on our arrival in this happy region, whose beauty no painting of the imagination can describe.

CHAP. VIII.

THE ADVENTURES WHICH THE AUTHOR MET ON HIS FIRST ENTRANCE INTO ELYSIUM.

WE pursued our way through a delicious grove of orange-trees, where I saw infinite numbers of spirits, every one of whom I knew, and was known by them; (for spirits here know one another by intuition.) I presently met a little daughter, whom I had lost several years before. Good Gods! what words can describe the raptures, the melting, passionate tenderness, with which we kissed each other, continuing in our embrace, with the most extatick joy; a space which, if time had been measured here as on earth, could not be less than half a year.

The first spirit, with whom I entered into discourse, was the famous Leonidas of Sparta. I acquainted him with the honours which had been done him by a celebrated poet of our nation; to which he answered, he was very much obliged to him.

We were presently afterwards entertained with the most delicious voice I had ever heard, accompanied by a violin, equal to Signior Piantanida. I presently discovered the musician and songster to be Orpheus and Sappho.

Old Homer was present at this consort, (if I may so call it) and Madam Dacier sat in his lap. He asked much after Mr. Pope, and said he was very desirous of seeing him; for that he had read his Iliad in his translation with almost as much delight as he believed he had given others in the original. I had the curiosity to enquire whether he had really writ that poem in detached pieces, and sung it about as ballads all over Greece, according to the report which went of him. He smiled at my question, and asked me whether there appeared any connection in the poem; for, if there did, he thought I might answer myself. I then importuned him to acquaint me in which of the cities, which contended for the honour of his birth, he was really born. To which he answered—'Upon my soul I can-'not tell!'

Virgil then came up to me, with Mr. Addison under his arm. 'Well, Sir,' said he, 'how many translations have 'these few last years produced of my 'Æneid?' I told him, I believed several, but I could not possibly remember; for that I had never read any but Dr. Trapp's.—'Aye!' said he, 'that 'is a curious piece indeed!' I then acquainted him with the discovery made by Mr. Warburton of the Eleusinian mysteries couched in his sixth book.—'What mysteries?' said Mr. Addison.

—'The Eleusinian,' answered Virgil, 'which I have disclosed in my sixth 'book.'—'How!' replied Addison, 'you never mentioned a word of any 'such mysteries to me in all our ac-'quaintance.'—'I thought it was un-'necessary,' cried the other, 'to a 'man of your infinite learning; be-'sides, you always told me, you per-'fectly understood my meaning.'—Upon this I thought the critick looked a little out of countenance, and turned aside to a very merry spirit, one Dick Steele, who embraced him, and told him, he had been the greatest man upon earth; that he readily resigned up all the merit of his own works to him. Upon which Addison gave him a gracious smile, and, clapping him on the back with much solemnity, cried out—'*Well said, Dick!*'

I then observed Shakespeare standing between Betterton and Booth, and deciding a difference between those two great actors concerning the placing an accent in one of his lines: this was disputed on both sides with a warmth which surprized me in Elysium, till I discovered, by intuition, that every soul retained it's principal characteristick, being, indeed, it's very essence. The line was that celebrated one in Othello—

'Put out the light, and then put out the light,'

according to Betterton. Mr. Booth contended to have it thus—

'Put out the light, and then put out *the* light.'

I could not help offering my conjecture on this occasion, and suggested it might perhaps be—

'Put out the light, and then put out *thy* light.'

Another hinted a reading very *sophisticated*, in my opinion—

'Put out the light, and then put out *thee*, 'light;'

making light to be the vocative case. Another would have altered the last word, and read—

'Put out thy light, and then put out thy sight.'

But Betterton said, if the text was to be *disturbed*, he saw no reason why a word might not be changed as well as a letter; and instead of *put out thy* light, you might read *put out thy* eyes. At last it was agreed on all sides to refer the matter to the decision of Shakespeare himself, who delivered his sentiments as follows.—'Faith, gentlemen, 'it is so long since I wrote the line, 'I have forgot my meaning. This I 'know, could I have dreamt so much 'nonsense would have been talked and 'writ about it, I would have blotted 'it out of my works; for I am sure, 'if any of these be my meaning, it 'doth me very little honour.'

He was then interrogated concerning some other ambiguous passages in his works; but he declined any satisfactory answer, saying, if Mr. Theobald had not *writ about it* sufficiently, there were three or four more new editions of his plays coming out, which he hoped would satisfy every one: concluding, 'I marvel nothing so much as that 'men will gird themselves at discover-'ing obscure beauties in an author. 'Certes the greatest and most pregnant 'beauties are ever the plainest and most 'evidently striking; and when two 'meanings of a passage can in the least 'balance our judgments which to pre-'fer, I hold it matter of unquestion-'able certainty that neither of them 'are worth a farthing.'

From his works our conversation turned on his monument; upon which Shakespeare, shaking his sides, and addressing himself to Milton, cried out, 'On my word, brother Milton, they 'have brought a noble set of poets to-'gether; they would have been hanged 'erst have convened such a company at 'their tables when alive.'—'True, 'brother,' answered Milton, 'unless 'we had been as incapable of eating 'then as we are now.'

CHAP. IX.

MORE ADVENTURES IN ELYSIUM.

A Croud of spirits now joined us, whom I soon perceived to be the heroes, who here frequently pay their respects to the several bards, the recorders of their actions. I now saw Achilles and Ulysses addressing themselves to Homer, and Æneas and Julius Cæsar to Virgil. Adam went up to Milton, upon which I whispered Mr. Dryden, that I thought the Devil should have paid his compliments there, according

cording to his opinion. Dryden only anſwered, 'I believe the Devil was in 'me when I ſaid ſo.' Several applied themſelves to Shakeſpeare, amongſt whom Henry V. made a very diſtinguiſhing appearance. While my eyes were fixed on that monarch, a very ſmall ſpirit came up to me, ſhook me heartily by the hand, and told me his name was THOMAS THUMB. I expreſſed great ſatisfaction in ſeeing him; nor could I help ſpeaking my reſentment againſt the hiſtorian who had done ſuch injuſtice to the ſtature of this great little man, which he repreſented to be no bigger than a ſpan; whereas I plainly perceived, at firſt ſight, he was a full foot and a half, (and the thirty-ſeventh part of an inch more, as he himſelf informed me) being indeed little ſhorter than ſome conſiderable beaus of the preſent age.

I aſked this little hero concerning the truth of thoſe ſtories related of him, viz. of the pudding, and the cow's belly. As to the former, he ſaid, it was a ridiculous legend, worthy to be laughed at; but as to the latter, he could not help owning there was ſome truth in it: nor had he any reaſon to be aſhamed of it, as he was ſwallowed by ſurprize; adding, with great fierceneſs, that if he had had any weapon in his hand, the cow ſhould have as ſoon ſwallowed the Devil.

He ſpoke the laſt word with ſo much fury, and ſeemed ſo confounded, that, perceiving the effect it had on him, I immediately waved the ſtory, and, paſſing to other matters, we had much converſation touching giants. He ſaid, ſo far from killing any, he had never ſeen one alive; that he believed thoſe actions were by miſtake recorded of him, inſtead of Jack the Giant-killer, whom he knew very well, and who had, he fancied, extirpated the race. I aſſured him to the contrary, and told him I had myſelf ſeen a huge tame giant, who very complacently ſtaid in London a whole winter, at the ſpecial requeſt of ſeveral gentlemen and ladies, though the affairs of his family called him home to Sweden.

I now beheld a ſtern-looking ſpirit leaning on the ſhoulder of another ſpirit, and preſently diſcerned the former to be Oliver Cromwell, and the latter Charles Martel. I own I was a little ſurprized at ſeeing Cromwell here; for I had been taught by my grandmother that he was carried away by the Devil himſelf in a tempeſt: but he aſſured me, on his honour, there was not the leaſt truth in that ſtory. However, he confeſſed he had narrowly eſcaped the bottomleſs pit; and, if the former part of his conduct had not been more to his honour than the latter, he had been certainly ſouſed into it. He was, nevertheleſs, ſent back to the upper world with this lot—

Army.—Cavalier.—Diſtreſs.

He was born, for the ſecond time, the day of Charles II.'s Reſtoration, into a family which had loſt a very conſiderable fortune in the ſervice of that prince and his father, for which they received the reward very often conferred by princes on real merit, viz. —oool. At ſixteen, his father bought a ſmall commiſſion for him in the army, in which he ſerved without any promotion all the reigns of Charles II. and of his brother. At the Revolution he quitted his regiment, and followed the fortunes of his former maſter, and was in his ſervice dangerouſly wounded at the famous battle of the Boyne, where he fought in the capacity of a private ſoldier. He recovered of this wound, and retired after the unfortunate king to Paris; where he was reduced to ſupport a wife and ſeven children (for his lot had horns in it) by cleaning ſhoes, and ſnuffing candles at the opera: in which ſituation, after he had ſpent a few miſerable years, he died half-ſtarved and broken-hearted. He then reviſited Minos, who, compaſſionating his ſufferings by means of that family, to whom he had been in his former capacity ſo bitter an enemy, ſuffered him to enter here.

My curioſity could not refrain aſking him one queſtion, i. e. whether in reality he had any deſire to obtain the crown. He ſmiled, and ſaid, 'No more 'than an eccleſiaſtick hath to the mitre, 'when he cries *nolo epiſcopari*.' Indeed, he ſeemed to expreſs ſome contempt at the queſtion, and preſently turned away.

A venerable ſpirit appeared next, whom I found to be the great hiſtorian Livy. Alexander the Great, who was juſt arrived from the palace of Death, paſt by him with a frown. The hiſtorian obſerving it, ſaid, 'Aye, you

'may

'may frown; but those troops which 'conquered the base Asiatick slaves, 'would have made no figure against 'the Romans.' We then privately lamented the loss of the most valuable part of his history, after which he took occasion to commend the judicious collection made by Mr. Hooke, which he said was infinitely preferable to all others; and at my mentioning Echard's, he gave a bounce, not unlike the going off of a squib, and was departing from me, when I begged him to satisfy my curiosity in one point, whether he was really superstitious or no; for I had always believed he was, till Mr. Leibnitz had assured me to the contrary. He answered sullenly—'Doth 'Mr. Leibnitz know my mind better 'than myself?' and then walked away.

CHAP. X.

THE AUTHOR IS SURPRIZED AT MEETING JULIAN THE APOSTATE IN ELYSIUM; BUT IS SATISFIED BY HIM, BY WHAT MEANS HE PROCURED HIS ENTRANCE THERE. JULIAN RELATES HIS ADVENTURES IN THE CHARACTER OF A SLAVE.

AS he was departing, I heard him salute a spirit by the name of Mr. Julian the apostate. This exceedingly amazed me; for I had concluded, that no man ever had a better title to the bottomless-pit than he. But I soon found, that this same Julian the apostate was also the very individual archbishop Latimer. He told me, that several lies had been raised on him in his former capacity, nor was he so bad a man as he had been represented. However, he had been denied admittance, and forced to undergo several subsequent pilgrimages on earth, and to act in the different characters of a slave, a Jew, a general, an heir, a carpenter, a beau, a monk, a fiddler, a wise man, a king, a fool, a beggar, a prince, a statesman, a soldier, a taylor, an alderman, a poet, a knight, a dancing-master, and three times a bishop before his martyrdom, together with his other behaviour in this last character, satisfied the judge, and procured him a passage to the blessed regions.

I told him, such various characters must have produced incidents extremely entertaining; and if he remembered all, as I suppose he did, and had leisure, I should be obliged to him for the recital. He answered, he perfectly recollected every circumstance; and as to leisure, the only business of that happy place was to contribute to the happiness of each other. He therefore thanked me for increasing his, in proposing to him a method of pleasing mine. I then took my little darling in one hand, and my favourite fellow-traveller in the other, and going with him to a sunny bank of flowers, we all sat down, and he began as follows—

'I suppose you are sufficiently acquainted with my story, during the 'time I acted the part of the Emperor 'Julian; though, I assure you, all 'which hath been related of me is not 'true, particularly with regard to the 'many prodigies forerunning my death. 'However, they are now very little 'worth disputing; and if they can 'serve any purpose of the historian, 'they are extremely at his service.

'My next entrance into the world, 'was at Laodicea in Syria, in a Roman family of no great note; and 'being of a roving disposition, I came 'at the age of seventeen to Constantinople, where after about a year's 'stay, I set out for Thrace at the time 'when the emperor Valens admitted 'the Goths into that country. I was 'there so captivated with the beauty 'of a Gothick lady, the wife of one 'Rodoric, a captain, whose name, out 'of the most delicate tenderness for 'her lovely sex, I shall even at this 'distance conceal; since her behaviour 'to me was more consistent with good 'nature, than with that virtue which 'women are obliged to preserve against 'every assailant. In order to procure 'an intimacy with this woman, I sold 'myself a slave to her husband, who 'being of a nation not over-inclined 'to jealousy, presented me to his wife, 'for those very reasons which would 'have induced one of a jealous complexion to have witheld me from 'her, namely, for that I was young 'and handsome.

'Matters succeeded so far according 'to my wish, and the sequel answered 'those hopes which this beginning had 'raised. I soon perceived my service

'was

'was very acceptable to her, I often 'met her eyes, nor did she withdraw 'them without a confusion which is 'scarce consistent with entire purity 'of heart. Indeed, she gave me every 'day fresh encouragement; but the 'unhappy distance which circumstances 'had placed between us, deterred me 'long from making any direct attack; 'and she was too strict an observer of 'decorum, to violate the severe rules 'of modesty by advancing first; but 'passion, at last, got the better of my 'respect, and I resolved to make one 'bold attempt, whatever was the con-'sequence. Accordingly, laying hold 'of the first kind opportunity, when 'she was alone, and my master abroad, 'I stoutly assailed the citadel, and 'carried it by storm. Well may I 'say by storm; for the resistance I met 'was extremely resolute, and indeed, 'as much as the most perfect decency 'would require. She swore often she 'would cry out for help; but I an-'swered, it was in vain, seeing there 'was no person near to assist her; and 'probably she believed me, for she did 'not once actually cry out; which if 'she had, I might very likely have 'been prevented.

'When she found her virtue thus 'subdued against her will, she pa-'tiently submitted to her fate, and 'quietly suffered me a long time to 'enjoy the most delicious fruits of my 'victory; but envious fortune resolved 'to make me pay a dear price for my 'pleasure. One day, in the midst of 'our happiness, we were suddenly 'surprized by the unexpected return 'of her husband, who coming direct-'ly into his wife's apartment, just al-'lowed me time to creep under the 'bed. The disorder in which he 'found his wife, might have surprized 'a jealous temper; but his was so far 'otherwise, that possibly no mischief 'might have happened, had he not by 'a cross accident discovered my legs, 'which were not well hid. He im-'mediately drew me out by them, and 'then turning to his wife with a stern 'countenance, began to handle a 'weapon he wore by his side, with 'which I am persuaded he would have 'instantly dispatched her, had I not 'very gallantly and with many im-'precations asserted her innocence and 'my own guilt; which, however, I 'protested had hitherto gone no farther 'than design. She so well seconded 'my plea, (for she was a woman of 'wonderful art) that he was at length 'imposed upon; and now all his rage 'was directed against me, threatening 'all manner of tortures which the poor 'lady was in too great a fright and 'confusion to dissuade him from exe-'cuting; and perhaps, if her con-'cern for me had made her attempt it, 'it would have raised a jealousy in 'him not afterwards to be removed.

'After some hesitation, Roderic 'cried out, he had luckily hit on the 'most proper punishment for me in 'the world, by a method which would 'at once do severe justice on me for 'my criminal intention, and, at the 'same time, prevent me from any 'danger of executing my wicked pur-'pose hereafter. This cruel resolu-'tion was immediately executed, and 'I was no longer worthy the name of 'a man.

'Having thus disqualified me from 'doing him any future injury, he still 'retained me in his family; but the 'lady, very probably repenting of what 'she had done, and looking on me as 'the author of her guilt, would never, 'for the future, give me either a kind 'word or look; and shortly after, a 'great exchange being made between 'the Romans and the Goths, of dogs 'for men, my lady exchanged me with 'a Roman widow for a small lap-dog, 'giving a considerable sum of money 'to boot.

'In this widow's service I remained 'seven years, during all which time 'I was very barbarously treated. I 'was worked without the least mercy, 'and often severely beat by a swing-'ing maid-servant, who never called 'me by any other names than those of '*the thing*, and *the animal*. Though 'I used my utmost industry to please, 'it never was in my power. Neither 'the lady nor her woman would eat 'any thing I touched, saying, they 'did not believe me wholesome. It 'is unnecessary to repeat particulars; 'in a word, you can imagine no kind 'of ill usage which I did not suffer in 'this family.

'At last, a Heathen priest, an ac-'quaintance of my lady's, obtained 'me of her for a present. The scene 'was now totally changed, and I had

'as

'as much reaſon to be ſatisfied with 'my preſent ſituation, as I had to la- 'ment my former. I was ſo abſolute- 'ly my maſter's favourite, that the 'reſt of the ſlaves paid me almoſt as 'much regard as they ſhewed to him, 'well knowing, that it was entirely 'in my power to command and treat 'them as I pleaſed. I was intruſted 'with all my maſter's ſecrets, and uſed 'to aſſiſt him in privately conveying 'away by night the ſacrifices from the 'altars, which the people believed the 'deities themſelves devoured. Upon 'theſe we feaſted very elegantly, nor 'could invention ſuggeſt a rarity which 'we did not pamper ourſelves with. 'Perhaps you may admire at the cloſe 'union between this prieſt and his 'ſlave; but we lived in an intimacy 'which the Chriſtians thought crimi- 'nal: but my maſter, who knew the will 'of the gods, with whom he told me 'he often converſed, aſſured me it was 'perfectly innocent.

'This happy life continued about 'four years, when my maſter's death, 'occaſioned by a ſurfeit got by over- 'feeding on ſeveral exquiſite dainties, 'put an end to it.

'I now fell into the hands of one of a 'very different diſpoſition, and this was 'no other than the celebrated St. Chry- 'ſoſtome, who dieted me with ſer- 'mons inſtead of ſacrifices, and filled 'my ears with good things, but not 'my belly. Inſtead of high food to 'fatten and pamper my fleſh, I had 'receipts to mortify and reduce it. 'With theſe I edified ſo well, that 'within a few months I became a ſke- 'leton. However, as he had converted 'me to his faith, I was well enough 'ſatisfied with this new manner of 'living, by which he taught me I 'might inſure myſelf an eternal re- 'ward in a future ſtate. The ſaint 'was a good-natured man, and never 'gave me an ill word but once, which 'was occaſioned by my neglecting to 'place Ariſtophanes, which was his 'conſtant bed-fellow, on his pillow. 'He was, indeed, extremely fond of 'that Greek poet, and frequently 'made me read his comedies to him: 'when I came to any of the looſe paſ- 'ſages, he would ſmile, and ſay, it 'was pity his matter was not as pure 'as his ſtyle; of which latter he was 'ſo immoderately fond, that notwith- 'ſtanding the deteſtation he expreſſed 'for obſcenity, he hath made me re- 'peat thoſe paſſages ten times over. 'The character of this good man hath 'been very unjuſtly attacked by his 'Heathen cotemporaries, particularly 'with regard to women; but his ſe- 'vere invectives againſt that ſex, are 'his ſufficient juſtification.

'From the ſervice of this ſaint, 'from whom I received manumiſſion, 'I entered into the family of Tima- 'ſius, a leader of great eminence in 'the Imperial army, into whoſe favour 'I ſo far inſinuated myſelf, that he 'preferred me to a good command, 'and ſoon made me partaker of both 'his company and his ſecrets. I ſoon 'grew intoxicated with this prefer- 'ment, and the more he loaded me 'with benefits, the more he raiſed my 'opinion of my own merit; which 'ſtill outſtripping the rewards he con- 'ferred on me, inſpired me rather with 'diſſatisfaction than gratitude. And 'thus, by preferring me beyond my 'merit or firſt expectation, he made 'me an envious aſpiring enemy, whom; 'perhaps, a more moderate bounty 'would have preſerved a dutiful ſer- 'vant.

'I fell now acquainted with one 'Lucilius, a creature of the prime- 'miniſter Eutropius, who had by his 'favour been raiſed to the poſt of a 'tribune; a man of low morals, and 'eminent only in that meaneſt of all 'qualities, cunning. This gentleman 'imagining me a fit tool for the mini- 'ſter's purpoſe, having often ſounded 'my principles of honour and ho- 'neſty; both which he declared to me 'were words without meaning: and 'finding my ready concurrence in his 'ſentiments, recommended me to Eu- 'tropius, as very proper to execute 'ſome wicked purpoſes he had con- 'trived againſt my friend Timaſius. 'The miniſter embraced this recom- 'mendation, and I was accordingly 'acquainted by Lucilius, after ſome 'previous accounts of the great eſteem 'Eutropius entertained of me, from 'the teſtimony he had borne of my 'parts) that he would introduce me 'to him; adding, that he was a great 'encourager of merit, and that I might 'depend upon his favour.

'I was with little difficulty prevail- 'ed on to accept this invitation. A

'late

'late hour therefore the next evening 'being appointed, I attended my friend 'Lucilius to the minister's house. He 'received me with the utmost civility 'and chearfulness, and affected so 'much regard to me, that I, who 'who knew nothing of these high 'scenes of life, concluded I had in 'him a most disinterested friend, owing 'to the favourable report which Lu'cilius had made of me. I was, how'ever, soon cured of this opinion; for 'immediately after supper, our dis'course turned on the injustice which 'the generality of the world were 'guilty of in their conduct to great 'men, expecting that they should re'ward their private merit, without 'ever endeavouring to apply it to their 'use. "What avail," said Eutro'pius, "the learning, wit, courage, "or any virtue which a man may be "possessed of, to me, unless I receive "some benefit from them? Hath he "not more merit to me, who doth my "business, and obeys my commands, "without any of these qualities?" I 'gave such entire satisfaction in my 'answers on this head, that both the 'minister and his creature grew bolder, 'and after some preface, began to ac'cuse Timasius. At last, finding I 'did not attempt to defend him, Lu'cilius swore a great oath, that he was 'not fit to live, and that he would de'stroy him. Eutropius answered, that 'it would be too dangerous a task: "Indeed," says he, "his crimes are "of so black a dye, and so well "known to the emperor, that his "death must be a very acceptable ser"vice, and could not fail meeting a "proper reward; but I question whe"ther you are capable of executing "it."—"If he is not," cried I, "I "am; and, surely, no man can have "greater motives to destroy him than "myself: for, besides his disloyalty "to my prince, for whom I have so "perfect a duty, I have private dis"obligations to him. I have had fel"lows put over my head, to the great "scandal of the service in general, "and to my own prejudice and dis"appointment in particular."—I will 'not repeat you my whole speech; but, 'to be as concise as possible, when we 'parted that evening, the minister 'squeezed me heartily by the hand, 'and with great commendation of my 'honesty, and assurances of his favour, 'he appointed me, the next evening, 'to come to him alone; when finding 'me, after a little more scrutiny, ready 'for his purpose, he proposed to me, to 'accuse Timasius of high treason; 'promising me the highest rewards, if 'I would undertake it. The conse'quence to him, I suppose you know, 'was ruin: but what was it to me? 'Why, truly, when I waited on Eu'tropius, for the fulfilling his pro'mises, he received me with great dis'tance and coldness; and on my drop'ping some hints of my expectations 'from him, he affected not to under'stand me; saying, he thought impu'nity was the utmost I could hope for, 'on discovering my accomplice, whose 'offence was only greater than mine, 'as he was in a higher station; and 'telling me, he had great difficulty to 'obtain a pardon for me from the em'peror, which he said he had strug'gled very hardly for, as he had 'worked the discovery out of me, he 'turned away, and addressed himself 'to another person.

'I was so incensed at this treatment, 'that I resolved revenge, and should 'certainly have pursued it, had he 'not cautiously prevented me, by tak'ing effectual means to dispatch me 'soon after out of the world.

'You will, I believe, now think I 'had a second good chance for the bot'tomless-pit, and indeed Minos seem'ed inclined to tumble me in, till he 'was informed of the revenge taken 'on me by Roderic, and my seven 'years subsequent servitude to the wi'dow; which he said he thought suf'ficient to make atonement for all the 'crimes a single life could admit of, 'and so sent me back to try my for'tune a third time.'

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH JULIAN RELATES HIS ADVENTURES IN THE CHARACTER OF AN AVARICIOUS JEW.

'THE next character in which I 'was destined to appear in the 'flesh, was that of an avaricious Jew. 'I was born in Alexandria in Egypt. 'My name was Balthazar. Nothing 'very remarkable happened to me, till

'the year of the memorable tumult, 'in which the Jews of that city are 'reported in history to have massa-'cred more Christians than at that 'time dwelt in it. Indeed, the truth 'is, they did maul the dogs pretty 'handsomely; but I myself was not 'present: for as all our people were 'ordered to be armed, I took that op-'portunity of selling two swords, 'which probably I might otherwise 'never have disposed of, they being 'extremely old and rusty; so that hav-'ing no weapon left, I did not care 'to venture abroad. Besides, though 'I really thought it an act meriting 'salvation to murder the Nazarenes, 'as the fact was to be committed at 'midnight, at which time, to avoid 'suspicion, we were all to sally from 'our own houses; I could not per-'suade myself to consume so much 'oil in sitting up till that hour: for 'these reasons, therefore, I remained 'at home that evening.

'I was at this time greatly ena-'moured with one Hypatia, the daugh-'ter of a philosopher, a young lady 'of the greatest beauty and merit; 'indeed, she had every imaginable or-'nament both of mind and body. She 'seemed not to dislike my person; but 'there were two obstructions to our 'marriage, viz. my religion and her 'poverty; both which might probably 'have been got over, had not those 'dogs the Christians murdered her; 'and, what is worse, afterwards burnt 'her body: worse, I say, because I 'lost by that means a jewel of some 'value, which I had presented to her, 'designing, if our nuptials did not 'take place, to demand it of her back 'again.

'Being thus disappointed in my 'love, I soon after left Alexandria, 'and went to the Imperial city, where 'I apprehended I should find a good 'market for jewels on the approaching 'marriage of the emperor with Athe-'nais. I disguised myself as a beg-'gar on this journey, for these reasons; 'first, as I imagined I should thus 'carry my jewels with greater safety; 'and, secondly, to lessen my expences; 'which latter expedient succeeded so 'well, that I begged two oboli on my 'way more than my travelling cost 'me, my diet being chiefly roots, and 'my drink water.

'But, perhaps, it had been better 'for me if I had been more lavish, and 'more expeditious; for the ceremony 'was over before I reached Constan-'tinople; so that I lost that glorious 'opportunity of disposing of my jew-'els, with which many of our people 'were greatly enriched.

'The life of a miser is very little 'worth relating, as it is one constant 'scheme of getting or saving money. 'I shall therefore repeat to you some 'few only of my adventures, without 'regard to any order.

'A Roman Jew, who was a great 'lover of Falernian wine, and who 'indulged himself very freely with it, 'came to dine at my house; when 'knowing he should meet with little 'wine, and that of the cheaper sort, 'he sent me in half a dozen jars of Fa-'lernian. Can you believe I would 'not give this man his own wine? 'Sir, I adulterated it so, that I made six 'jars of them; three of which he and 'his friend drank; the other three I 'afterwards sold to the very person 'who originally sent them me, know-'ing he would give a better price than 'any other.

'A noble Roman came one day to 'my house in the country, which I 'had purchased, for half the value, 'of a distressed person. My neigh-'bours paid him the compliment of 'some musick; on which account, 'when he departed, he left a piece of 'gold with me, to be distributed among 'them. I pocketed this money, and 'ordered them a small vessel of sour 'wine, which I could not have sold 'for above two drachmas, and after-'wards made them pay in work three 'times the value of it.

'As I was not entirely void of re-'ligion, though I pretended to infi-'nitely more than I had, so I endea-'voured to reconcile my transactions 'to my conscience as well as possible. 'Thus I never invited any one to eat 'with me, but those on whose pockets 'I had some design. After our col-'lation, it was constantly my method 'to set down in a book I kept for that 'purpose, what I thought they owed 'me for their meal. Indeed, this was 'generally a hundred times as much 'as they could have dined elsewhere 'for: but, however, it was *quid pro* '*quo*, if not *ad valorem*. Now, when-

'ever

'ever the opportunity offered of im-
'posing on them, I considered it only
'as paying myself what they owed
'me: indeed, I did not always con-
'fine myself strictly to what I had
'set down, however extravagant that
'was; but I reconciled taking the
'overplus to myself as usance.

'But I was not only too cunning
'for others, I sometimes over-reached
'myself. I have contracted distempers
'for want of food and warmth, which
'have put me to the expence of a phy-
'sician: nay, I once very narrowly
'escaped death by taking bad drugs,
'only to save one seven eighths per
'cent. in the price.

'By these and such like means, in
'the midst of poverty and every kind
'of distress, I saw myself master of
'an immense fortune; the casting up
'and ruminating on which was my
'daily and only pleasure. This was
'however obstructed and embittered
'by two considerations, which, against
'my will, often invaded my thoughts.
'One would have been intolerable,
'(but that indeed seldom troubled me)
'was, that I must one day leave my
'darling treasure. The other haunt-
'ed me continually, viz. that my
'riches were no greater. However, I
'comforted myself against this reflec-
'tion, by an assurance that they would
'increase daily: on which head, my
'hopes were so extensive, that I may
'say with Virgil—

"*His ego nec metas rerum nec tempora pono.*"

'Indeed, I am convinced, that had I
'possessed the whole globe of earth,
'save one single drachma, which I had
'been certain never to be master of; I
'am convinced, I say, that single
'drachma, would have given me more
'uneasiness than all the rest could af-
'ford me pleasure.

'To say the truth, between my so-
'licitude in contriving schemes to pro-
'cure money, and my extreme anxiety
'in preserving it, I never had one mo-
'ment of ease while awake, nor of
'quiet when in my sleep. In all the
'characters through which I have
'passed, I have never undergone half
'the misery I suffered in this, and in-
'deed Minos seemed to be of the same
'opinion: for while I stood trembling
'and shaking in expectation of my
'sentence, he bid me go back about
'my business; for that nobody was
'to be d—ned in more worlds than
'one. And, indeed, I have since learnt
'that the devil will not receive a miser.'

CHAP. XII.

WHAT HAPPENED TO JULIAN IN THE CHARACTERS OF A GENERAL, AN HEIR, A CARPENTER, AND A BEAU.

'THE next step I took into the
'world, was at Apollonia in
'Thrace; where I was born of a beau-
'tiful Greek slave, who was the mis-
'tress of Eutyches, a great favourite
'of the Emperor Zeno. That prince,
'at his restoration, gave me the com-
'mand of a cohort, I being then but
'fifteen years of age; and a little af-
'terwards, before I had ever seen an
'army, preferred me over the heads of
'all the old officers, to be a tribune.

'As I found an easy access to the
'emperor, by means of my father's
'intimacy with him, he being a very
'good courtier, or, in other words, a
'most prostitute flatterer; so I soon in-
'gratiated myself with Zeno, and so
'well imitated my father in flattering
'him, that he would never part with
'me from about his person. So that
'the first armed force I ever beheld,
'was that with which Martian sur-
'rounded the palace, where I was
'then shut up with the rest of the
'court.

'I was afterwards put at the head of
'a legion, and ordered to march into
'Syria, with Theodorick the Goth:
'that is, I mean, my legion was so
'ordered; for as to myself, I remained
'at court, with the name and pay of
'a general, without the labour or the
'danger.

'As nothing could be more gay,
'i. e. debauched, than Zeno's court,
'so the ladies of gay disposition had
'great sway in it; particularly one,
'whose name was Fausta, who, though
'not extremely handsome, was by her
'wit and sprightliness very agreeable
'to the emperor. With her I lived
'in good correspondence, and we to-
'gether disposed of all kinds of com-
'missions in the army, not to those
'who had most merit, but who would

'purchaſe at the higheſt rate. My levee was now prodigiouſly thronged by officers, who returned from the campaigns; who, though they might have been convinced, by daily example, how ineffectual a recommendation their ſervices were, ſtill continued indefatigable in attendance, and behaved to me with as much obſervance and reſpect, as I ſhould have been entitled to for making their fortunes, while I ſuffered them and their families to ſtarve.

'Several poets, likewiſe, addreſſed verſes to me, in which they celebrated my military atchievements; and what, perhaps, may ſeem ſtrange to us at preſent, I received all this incenſe with moſt greedy vanity, without once reflecting, that as I did not deſerve theſe compliments, they ſhould rather put me in mind of my defects.

'My father was now dead, and I became ſo abſolute in the emperor's grace, that one unacquainted with courts would ſcarce believe the ſervility with which all kinds of perſons, who entered the walls of the palace, behaved towards me. A bow, a ſmile, a nod from me, as I paſt through cringing crouds, were eſteemed as ſignal favours, but a gracious word made any one happy; and, indeed, had this real benefit attending it, that it drew on the perſon, on whom it was beſtowed, a very great degree of reſpect from all others; for theſe are of current value in courts, and, like notes in trading communities, are aſſignable from one to the other. The ſmile of a court-favourite immediately raiſes the perſon who receives it, and gives a value to his ſmile when conferred on an inferior; thus the ſmile is transferred from one to the other, and the great man at laſt is the perſon to diſcount it. For inſtance, a very low fellow hath a deſire for a place. To whom is he to apply? Not to the great man; for to him he hath no acceſs. He therefore applies to A, who is the creature of B, who is the tool of C, who is the flatterer of D, who is the catamite of E, who is the pimp of F, who is the bully of G, who is the buffoon of I, who is the huſband of K, who is the whore of L, who is the baſtard of M, who is the inſtrument of the great man. Thus the ſmile deſcending regularly from the great man to A, is diſcounted back again, and at laſt paid by the great man.

'It is manifeſt, that a court would ſubſiſt as difficultly without this kind of coin, as a trading city without paper credit. Indeed, they differ in this, that their value is not quite ſo certain, and a favourite may proteſt his ſmile without the danger of bankruptcy.

'In the midſt of all this glory, the emperor died, and Anaſtaſius was preferred to the crown. As it was yet uncertain whether I ſhould not continue in favour, I was received as uſual at my entrance into the palace, to pay my reſpects to the new emperor; but I was no ſooner rumped by him, than I received the ſame compliment from all the reſt; the whole room, like a regiment of ſoldiers, turning their backs to me all at once, my ſmile now was become of equal value with the note of a broken banker, and every one was as cautious not to receive it.

'I made as much haſte as poſſible from the court, and ſhortly after from the city, retreating to the place of my nativity, where I ſpent the remainder of my days in a retired life in huſbandry, the only amuſement for which I was qualified, having neither learning nor virtue.

'When I came to the gate, Minos again ſeemed at firſt doubtful, but at length diſmiſſed me; ſaying, though I had been guilty of many heinous crimes, in as much as I had, though a general, never been concerned in ſpilling human blood, I might return again to earth.

'I was now again born in Alexandria, and, by great accident, entering into the womb of my daughter-in-law, came forth my own grandſon, inheriting that fortune which I had before amaſſed.

'Extravagance was now as notoriouſly my vice, as avarice had been formerly; and I ſpent, in a very ſhort life, what had coſt me the labour of a very long one to rake together. Perhaps you will think my preſent condition was more to be en-

'vied

'vied than my former; but upon my 'word it was very little ſo; for by 'poſſeſſing every thing almoſt before I 'deſired it, I could hardly ever ſay, 'I enjoyed my wiſh; I ſcarce ever 'knew the delight of ſatisfying a 'craving appetite. Beſides, as I ne-'ver once thought, my mind was 'uſeleſs to me, and I was an abſolute 'ſtranger to all the pleaſures ariſing 'from it. Nor, indeed, did my edu-'cation qualify me for any delicacy 'in other enjoyments; ſo that in the 'midſt of plenty I loathed every thing. 'Taſte for elegance, I had none; and 'the greateſt of corporeal bliſſes I felt 'no more from, than the loweſt ani-'mal. In a word, as while a miſer I 'had plenty without daring to uſe it, 'ſo now I had it without appetite.

'But if I was not very happy in the 'height of my enjoyment, ſo I after-'ward became perfectly miſerable; 'being ſoon overtaken by diſeaſe, and 'reduced to diſtreſs, till at length, with 'a broken conſtitution, and broken 'heart, I ended my wretched days in 'a gaol; nor can I think the ſentence 'of Minos too mild, who condemned 'me, after having taken a large doſe 'of avarice, to wander three years on 'the banks of Cocytus, with the know-'ledge of having ſpent the fortune in 'the perſon of the grandſon, which 'I had raiſed in that of the grand-'father.

'The place of my birth, on my re-'turn to the world, was Conſtantino-'ple, where my father was a carpen-'ter. The firſt thing I remembered 'was, the triumph of Beliſarius; 'which was, indeed, a moſt noble 'ſhew; but nothing pleaſed me ſo 'much as the figure of Gelimer, king 'of the African Vandals, who being 'led captive on this occaſion, reflect-'ing with diſdain on the mutation of 'his own fortune, and on the ridicu-'lous empty pomp of the conqueror, 'cried out, "VANITY, VANITY! "ALL IS MERE VANITY!"

'I was bred up to my father's trade, 'and you may eaſily believe ſo low a 'ſphere could produce no adventures 'worth your notice. However, I 'married a woman I liked, and who 'proved a very tolerable wife. My 'days were paſt in hard labour; but 'this procured me health, and I en-'joyed a homely ſupper at night with 'my wife, with more pleaſure than I 'apprehend greater perſons find at 'their luxurious meals. My life had 'ſcarce any variety in it, and at my 'death, I advanced to Minos with 'great confidence of entering the gate; 'but I was unhappily obliged to diſ-'cover ſome frauds I had been guilty 'of in the meaſure of my work, when 'I worked by the foot, as well as my 'lazineſs when I was employed by 'the day. On which account, when 'I attempted to paſs, the angry judge 'laid hold on me by the ſhoulders, 'and turned me back ſo violently, 'that had I had a neck of fleſh and 'bone, I believe he would have broke 'it.'

CHAP. XIII.

JULIAN PASSES INTO A FOP.

'MY next ſcene of action was 'Rome; I was born into a 'noble family, and heir to a conſider-'able fortune; on which my parents, 'thinking I ſhould not want any ta-'lents, reſolved very kindly and wiſe-'ly to throw none away upon me. 'The only inſtructors of my youth 'were therefore one Saltator, who 'taught me ſeveral motions for my 'legs; and one Ficus, whoſe buſineſs 'was to ſhew me the cleaneſt way (as 'he called it) of cutting off a man's 'head. When I was well accompliſh-'ed in theſe ſciences, I thought no-'thing more wanting, but what was 'to be furniſhed by the ſeveral me-'chanicks in Rome, who dealt in 'dreſſing and adorning the Pope. 'Being therefore well equipped with 'all which their art could produce, I 'became, at the age of twenty, a com-'pleat finiſhed beau. And now, dur-'ing forty-five years, I dreſſed, I ſung 'and danced, and danced and ſung, 'I bowed and ogled, and ogled and 'bowed, till, in the ſixty-ſixth year 'of my age, I got cold by over-heating 'myſelf with dancing, and died.

'Minos told me, as I was unworthy 'of Elyſium, ſo I was too inſignifi-'cant to be damned, and therefore 'bade me walk back again.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

ADVENTURES IN THE PERSON OF A MONK.

'FORTUNE now placed me in 'the character of a younger 'brother of a good houſe, and I was 'in my youth ſent to ſchool; but 'learning was now at ſo low an ebb, 'that my maſter himſelf could hardly 'conſtrue a ſentence of Latin; and 'as for Greek, he could not read it. 'With very little knowledge, therefore, 'and with altogether as little virtue, 'I was ſet apart for the church, and 'at the proper age commenced monk. 'I lived many years retired in a cell, 'a life very agreeable to the gloomi-'neſs of my temper, which was much 'inclined to deſpiſe the world; that 'is, in other words, to envy all men 'of ſuperior fortune and qualifications, 'and in general, to hate and deteſt 'the human ſpecies. Notwithſtand-'ing which, I could, on proper occa-'ſions, ſubmit to flatter the vileſt fel-'low in nature, which I did one Ste-'phen an eunuch, a favourite of the 'Emperor Juſtinian II. one of the 'wickedeſt wretches whom perhaps the 'world ever ſaw. I not only wrote a 'panegyrick on this man, but I com-'mended him as a pattern to all others 'in my ſermons, by which means I 'ſo greatly ingratiated myſelf with 'him, that he introduced me to the 'emperor's preſence, where I prevailed 'ſo far by the ſame methods, that I 'was ſhortly taken from my cell, and 'preferred to a place at court. I was 'no ſooner eſtabliſhed in the favour of 'Juſtinian, than I prompted him to 'all kind of cruelty. As I was of a 'ſour moroſe temper, and hated no-'thing more than the ſymptoms of 'happineſs appearing in any counte-'nance, I repreſented all kind of di-'verſion and amuſement as the moſt 'horrid ſins. I inveighed againſt 'chearfulneſs as levity, and encou-'raged nothing but gravity, or, to 'confeſs the truth to you, hypocriſy. 'The unhappy emperor followed my 'advice, and incenſed the people by 'ſuch repeated barbarities, that he 'was at laſt depoſed by them and 'baniſhed.

'I now retired again to my cell, '(for hiſtorians miſtake in ſaying I 'was put to death) where I remained 'ſafe from the danger of the irritated 'mob, whom I curſed in my own 'heart, as much as they could curſe 'me.

'Juſtinian, after three years of his 'baniſhment, returned to Conſtanti-'nople in diſguiſe, and paid me a viſit. 'I at firſt affected not to know him, 'and without the leaſt compunction 'of gratitude for his former favours, 'intended not to receive him, till a 'thought immediately ſuggeſting itſelf 'to me, how I might convert him to 'my advantage, I pretended to recol-'lect him; and blaming the ſhortneſs 'of my memory, and badneſs of my 'eyes, I ſprung forward and embraced 'him with great affection.

'My deſign was to betray him to 'Apſimar, who, I doubted not, would 'generouſly reward ſuch a ſervice. I 'therefore very earneſtly requeſted him 'to ſpend the whole evening with me; 'to which he conſented. I formed an 'excuſe for leaving him a few mi-'nutes, and ran away to the palace to 'acquaint Apſimar with the gueſt 'whom I then had in my cell. He 'preſently ordered a guard to go with 'me and ſeize him; but whether the 'length of my ſtay gave him any ſu-'ſpicion, or whether he changed his 'purpoſe after my departure, I know 'not; for at my return, we found he 'had given us the ſlip; nor could we 'with the moſt diligent ſearch diſ-'cover him.

'Apſimar, being diſappointed of 'his prey, now raged at me; at firſt 'denouncing the moſt dreadful ven-'geance, if I did not produce the de-'poſed monarch: however, by ſooth-'ing his paſſion when at the higheſt, 'and afterwards by canting and flat-'tery, I made a ſhift to eſcape his 'fury.

'When Juſtinian was reſtored, I 'very confidently went to wiſh him 'joy of his reſtoration; but it ſeems 'he had unfortunately heard of my 'treachery, ſo that he at firſt received 'me coldly, and afterwards upbraided 'me openly with what I had done. 'I perſevered ſtoutly in denying it, as 'I knew no evidence could be pro-'duced againſt me; till finding him 'irreconcileable, I betook myſelf to 'reviling him in my ſermons, and on

'every

'every other occaſion, as an enemy to 'the church and good men, and as an 'infidel, an heretick, an atheiſt, a 'heathen, and an Arian. This I did 'immediately on his return, and be'fore he gave thoſe flagrant proofs of 'his inhumanity, which afterwards 'ſufficiently verified all I had ſaid.

'Luckily I died on the ſame day 'when a great number of thoſe forces 'which Juſtinian had ſent againſt the 'Thracian Boſphorus, and who had 'executed ſuch unheard of cruelties 'there, periſhed. As every one of 'theſe was caſt into the bottomleſs-pit, 'Minos was ſo tired with condemna'tion, that he proclaimed that all pre'ſent, who h'd not been concerned in 'that bloody expedition, might, if 'they pleaſed, return to the other 'world. I took him at his word, and 'preſently turning about, began my 'journey.'

CHAP. XV.

JULIAN PASSES INTO THE CHARACTER OF A FIDDLER.

'ROME was now the ſeat of my 'nativity. My mother was 'an African, a woman of no great 'beauty, but a favourite, I ſuppoſe 'from her piety, to Pope Gregory II. 'Who was my father I know not; but 'I believe no very conſiderable man; 'for after the death of that Pope, who 'was, out of his religion, a very good 'friend of my mother, we fell into 'great diſtreſs, and were at length re'duced to walk the ſtreets of Rome; 'nor had either of us any other ſup'port but a fiddle, on which I played 'with pretty tolerable ſkill: for as 'my genius turned naturally to mu'ſick, ſo I had been in my youth very 'early inſtructed at the expence of the 'good Pope. This afforded us but a 'very poor livelihood; for though I 'had often a numerous crowd of hear'ers, few ever thought themſelves 'obliged to contribute the ſmalleſt 'pittance to the poor ſtarving wretch 'who had given them pleaſure. Nay, 'ſome of the graver ſort, after an 'hour's attention to my muſick, have 'gone away ſhaking their heads, and 'crying, it was a ſhame ſuch vaga'bonds were ſuffered to ſtay in the 'city.

'To ſay the truth, I am confident 'the fiddle would not have kept us 'alive, had we entirely depended on 'the generoſity of my hearers. My 'mother, therefore, was forced to uſe 'her own induſtry; and while I was 'ſoothing the ears of the crowd, ſhe 'applied to their pockets, and that ge'nerally with ſuch good ſucceſs, that 'we now began to enjoy a very com'fortable ſubſiſtence; and, indeed, had 'we had the leaſt prudence or forecaſt, 'might have ſoon acquired enough to 'enable us to quit this dangerous and 'diſhonourable way of life: but I 'know not what is the reaſon, that 'money got with labour and ſafety is 'conſtantly preſerved, while the pro'duce of danger and eaſe is common'ly ſpent as eaſily, and often as wick'edly, as acquired. Thus we pro'portioned our expences rather by 'what we had, than what we wanted, 'or even deſired; and on obtaining a 'conſiderable booty, we have even 'forced nature into the moſt profligate 'extravagance, and have been wicked 'without inclination.

'We carried on this method of thie'very for a long time without detec'tion; but as fortune generally leaves 'perſons of extraordinary ingenuity 'in the lurch at laſt, ſo did ſhe us; 'for my poor mother was taken in the 'fact, and, together with myſelf, as 'her accomplice, hurried before a 'magiſtrate.

'Luckily for us, the perſon who 'was to be our judge was the greateſt 'lover of muſick in the whole city, and 'had often ſent for me to play to him, 'for which, as he had given me very 'ſmall rewards, perhaps his gratitude 'now moved him: but, whatever was 'his motive, he brow-beat the infor'mers againſt us, and treated their 'evidence with ſo little favour, that 'their mouths were ſoon ſtopped, and 'we diſmiſſed with honour; acquit'ted, I ſhould rather have ſaid, for 'we were not ſuffered to depart, till I 'had given the judge ſeveral tunes on 'the fiddle.

'We eſcaped the better on this oc'caſion, becauſe the perſon robbed 'happened to be a poet, which gave 'the judge, who was a facetious per'ſon,

ſon, many opportunities of jeſting. He ſaid, poets and muſicians ſhould agree together, ſeeing they had married ſiſters, which he afterwards explained to be the ſiſter arts. And when the piece of gold was produced, he burſt into a loud laugh, and ſaid it muſt be the golden age when poets had gold in their pockets, and in that age there could be no robbers. He made many more jeſts of the ſame kind, but a ſmall taſte will ſuffice.

'It is a common ſaying, that men ſhould take warning by any ſignal delivery, but I cannot approve the juſtice of it; for to me it ſeems that the acquittal of a guilty perſon ſhould rather inſpire him with confidence, and it had this effect on us; for we now laughed at the law, and deſpiſed it's puniſhments, which we found were to be eſcaped even againſt poſitive evidence. We imagined the late example was rather a warning to the accuſer than the criminal, and accordingly proceeded in the moſt impudent and flagitious manner.

'Among other robberies, one night, being admitted by the ſervants into the houſe of an opulent prieſt, my mother took an opportunity, whilſt the ſervants were dancing to my tunes, to convey away a ſilver veſſel; this ſhe did without the leaſt ſacrilegious intention: but it ſeems the cup, which was a pretty large one, was dedicated to holy uſes, and only borrowed by the prieſt on an entertainment which he made for ſome of his brethren. We were immediately purſued upon this robbery, (the cup being taken in our poſſeſſion) and carried before the ſame magiſtrate who had before behaved to us with ſo much gentleneſs: but his countenance was now changed; for the moment the prieſt appeared againſt us, his ſeverity was as remarkable as his candour had been before, and we were both ordered to be ſtripped and whipped through the ſtreets.

'This ſentence was executed with great ſeverity, the prieſt himſelf attending, and encouraging the executioner, which he ſaid he did for the good of our ſouls: but though our backs were both flayed, neither my mother's torments nor my own afflicted me ſo much as the indignity offered to my poor fiddle, which was carried in triumph before me, and treated with a contempt by the multitude, intimating a great ſcorn for the ſcience I had the honour to profeſs; which, as it is one of the nobleſt inventions of men, and as I had been always in the higheſt degree proud of my excellence in it, I ſuffered ſo much from the ill-treatment my fiddle received, that I would have given all my remainder of ſkin to have preſerved it from this affront.

'My mother ſurvived the whipping a very ſhort time, and I was now reduced to great diſtreſs and miſery; till a young Roman of conſiderable rank took a fancy to me, received me into his family, and converſed with me in the utmoſt familiarity. He had a violent attachment to muſick, and would learn to play on the fiddle; but through want of genius for the ſcience, he never made any conſiderable progreſs: however, I flattered his performance, and he grew extravagantly fond of me for ſo doing. Had I continued this behaviour, I might poſſibly have reaped the greateſt advantages from his kindneſs; but I had raiſed his own opinion of his muſical abilities ſo high, that he now began to prefer his ſkill to mine, a preſumption I could not bear. One day, as we were playing in concert, he was horribly out; nor was it poſſible, as he deſtroyed the harmony, to avoid telling him of it. Inſtead of receiving my correction, he anſwered, it was my blunder, and not his, and that I had miſtaken the key. Such an affront from my own ſcholar was beyond human patience; I flew into a violent paſſion; I flung down my inſtrument in a rage, and ſwore I was not to be taught muſick at my age. He anſwered with as much warmth, nor was he to be inſtructed by a ſtrolling fiddler. The diſpute ended in a challenge to play a prize before judges: this wager was determined in my favour; but the purchaſe was a dear one, for I loſt my friend by it, who now twitting me with all his kindneſs, with my former ignominious puniſhment, and

'the

'the deſtitute condition from which I 'had been by his bounty relieved, 'diſcarded me for ever.

'While I lived with this gentleman, 'I became known, among others, to 'Sabina, a lady of diſtinction, and 'who valued herſelf much on her 'taſte for muſick. She no ſooner 'heard of my being diſcarded, than 'ſhe took me into her houſe, where I 'was extremely well cloathed and 'fed. Notwithſtanding which, my 'ſituation was far from agreeable; 'for I was obliged to ſubmit to her 'conſtant reprehenſions before com-'pany, which gave me the greater un-'eaſineſs becauſe they were always 'wrong; nor am I certain that ſhe 'did not by theſe provocations contri-'bute to my death: for as experience 'had taught me to give up my reſent-'ment to my bread, ſo my paſſions, 'for want of outward vent, preyed 'inwardly on my vitals, and, perhaps, 'occaſioned the diſtemper of which I 'ſickened.

'The lady who, amidſt all the faults 'ſhe found, was very fond of me, 'nay, probably was the fonder of me 'the more faults ſhe found, immedi-'ately called in the aid of three cele-'brated phyſicians. The doctors (be-'ing well feed) made me ſeven viſits in 'three days; and two of them were at 'the door to viſit me the eighth time, 'when being acquainted that I was 'juſt dead, they ſhook their heads, and 'departed.

'When I came to Minos, he aſked 'me with a ſmile, whether I had 'brought my fiddle with me; and 'receiving an anſwer in the negative, 'he bid me get about my buſineſs, 'ſaying, it was well for me that the 'devil was no lover of muſick.'

CHAP. XVI.

THE HISTORY OF THE WISE MAN.

'I Now returned to Rome, but in a 'very different character. For-'tune had now allotted me a ſerious 'part to act. I had even in my in-'fancy a grave diſpoſition, nor was I 'ever ſeen to ſmile; which infuſed an 'opinion into all about me, that I was 'a child of great ſolidity: ſome fore-'ſeeing that I ſhould be a judge, and 'others a biſhop. At two years old 'my father preſented me with a rat-'tle, which I broke to pieces with 'great indignation. This the good 'parent, being extremely wiſe, re-'garded as an eminent ſymptom of 'my wiſdom, and cried out in a kind 'of extaſy, "Well ſaid, boy! I war-"rant thou makeſt a great man."

'At ſchool, I could never be per-'ſuaded to play with my mates; not 'that I ſpent my hours in learning, to 'which I was not in the leaſt addicted, 'nor indeed had I any talents for it. 'However, the ſolemnity of my car-'riage won ſo much on my maſter, 'who was a moſt ſagacious perſon, 'that I was his chief favourite, and 'my example on all occaſions was re-'commended to the other boys, which 'filled them with envy, and me with 'pleaſure; but though they envied 'me, they all paid me that involuntary 'reſpect, which it is the curſe attend-'ing this paſſion to bear towards it's 'object.

'I had now obtained univerſally the 'character of a very wiſe young man, 'which I did not altogether purchaſe 'without pains; for the reſtraint I 'laid on myſelf in abſtaining from 'the ſeveral diverſions adapted to my 'years, coſt me many a yearning: but 'the pride which I inwardly enjoyed 'in the fancied dignity of my charac-'ter, made me ſome amends.

'Thus I paſſed on, without any thing 'very memorable happening to me, 'till I arrived at the age of twenty-'three; when, unfortunately, I fell 'acquainted with a young Neapolitan 'lady, whoſe name was Ariadne. Her 'beauty was ſo exquiſite, that her firſt 'ſight made a violent impreſſion on 'me; this was again improved by her 'behaviour, which was moſt genteel, 'eaſy, and affable: laſtly, her conver-'ſation compleated the conqueſt. In 'this ſhe diſcovered a ſtrong and lively 'underſtanding, with the ſweeteſt and 'moſt benign temper. This lovely 'creature was about eighteen when I 'firſt unhappily beheld her at Rome, 'in a viſit to a relation, with whom I 'had great intimacy. As our inter-'views at firſt were extremely fre-'quent, my paſſions were captivated 'before I apprehended the leaſt dan-'ger; and the ſooner, probably, as 'the young lady herſelf, to whom I

'consulted every method of recommendation, was not displeased with my being her admirer.

'Ariadne having spent three months at Rome, now returned to Naples, bearing my heart with her; on the other hand, I had all the assurances, consistent with the constraint under which the most perfect modesty lays a young woman, that her own heart was not entirely unaffected. I soon found her absence gave me an uneasiness not easy to be borne, or to remove. I now first applied to diversions, (of the graver sort, particularly to musick) but in vain; they rather raised my desires, and heightened my anguish. My passion at length grew so violent, that I began to think of satisfying it. As the first step to this, I cautiously enquired into the circumstances of Ariadne's parents, with which I was hitherto unacquainted; though, indeed, I did not apprehend they were extremely great, notwithstanding the handsome appearance of their daughter at Rome. Upon examination, her fortune exceeded my expectation; but was not sufficient to justify my marriage with her in the opinion of the wise and prudent. I had now a violent struggle between Wisdom and Happiness; in which, after several grievous pangs, Wisdom got the better. I could by no means prevail with myself to sacrifice that character of profound wisdom, which I had with such uniform conduct obtained, and with such caution hitherto preserved. I therefore resolved to conquer my affection, whatever it cost me; and, indeed, it did not cost me a little.

'While I was engaged in this conflict, (for it lasted a long time) Ariadne returned to Rome: her presence was a terrible enemy to my wisdom, which even in her absence had with great difficulty stood it's ground. It seems (as she hath since told me in Elysium, with much merriment) I had made the same impressions on her which she had made on me. Indeed, I believe my wisdom would have been totally subdued by this surprize, had it not cunningly suggested to me a method of satisfying my passion without doing any injury to my reputation. This was by engaging her privately as a mistress, which was at that time reputable enough at Rome, provided the affair was managed with an air of slyness and gravity, though the secret was known to the whole city.

'I immediately set about this project, and employed every art and engine to effect it. I had particularly bribed her priest, and an old female acquaintance and distant relation of hers, into my interest: but all was in vain; her virtue opposed the passion in her breast as strongly as wisdom had opposed it in mine. She received my proposals with the utmost disdain, and presently refused to see or hear from me any more.

'She returned again to Naples, and left me in a worse condition than before. My days I now passed with the most irksome uneasiness, and my nights were restless and sleepless. The story of our amour was now pretty publick, and the ladies talked of our match as certain; but my acquaintance denied their assent, saying, "No, no; he is too wise to marry so "imprudently." This, their opinion, gave me, I own, very great pleasure; but, to say the truth, scarce compensated the pangs I suffered to preserve it.

'One day, while I was balancing with myself, and had almost resolved to enjoy my happiness at the price of my character, a friend brought me word that Ariadne was married. This news struck me to the soul; and, though I had resolution enough to maintain my gravity before him, (for which I suffered not a little the more) the moment I was alone, I threw myself into the most violent fit of despair, and would willingly have parted with wisdom, fortune, and every thing else, to have retrieved her; but that was impossible, and I had now nothing but time to hope a cure from. This was very tedious in performing; and the longer as Ariadne had married a Roman cavalier, was now become my near neighbour, and I had the mortification of seeing her make the best of wives, and of having the happiness, which I had lost, every day before my eyes.

'If I suffered so much on account of my wisdom in having refused Ariadne, I was not much more obliged

'to

'to it for procuring me a rich widow, 'who was recommended to me by an 'old friend, as a very prudent match; 'and, indeed, ſo it was, her fortune 'being ſuperior to mine, in the ſame 'proportion as that of Ariadne had 'been inferior. I therefore embraced 'this propoſal, and my character of 'wiſdom ſoon pleaded ſo effectually 'for me with the widow, who was her-'ſelf a woman of great gravity and 'diſcretion, that I ſoon ſucceeded; 'and as ſoon as decency would per-'mit, (of which this lady was the 'ſtricteſt obſerver) we were married, 'being the ſecond day of the ſecond 'week, of the ſecond year, after her 'huſband's death; for ſhe ſaid ſhe 'thought ſome period of time above 'the year had a great air of decorum.

'But, prudent as this lady was, ſhe 'made me miſerable. Her perſon was 'far from being lovely; but her tem-'per was intolerable. During fifteen 'years habitation, I never paſſed a 'ſingle day without heartily curſing 'her, and the hour in which we came 'together. The only comfort I re-'ceived in the midſt of the higheſt tor-'ments, was from continually hearing 'the prudence of my match commend-'ed by all my acquaintance.

'Thus, you ſee, in the affairs of 'love, I bought the reputation of wiſ-'dom pretty dear. In other matters I 'had it ſomewhat cheaper; not that 'hypocriſy, which was the price I 'gave for it, gives one no pain. I have 'refuſed myſelf a thouſand little amuſe-'ments with a feigned contempt, while 'I have really had an inclination to 'them. I have often almoſt choaked 'myſelf to reſtrain from laughing at a 'jeſt, and (which was, perhaps, to 'myſelf the leaſt hurtful of all my 'hypocriſy) have heartily enjoyed a 'book in my cloſet, which I have ſpoke 'with deteſtation of in publick. To 'ſum up my hiſtory in ſhort, as I had 'few adventures worth remembering, 'my whole life was one conſtant lye; 'and happy would it have been for me, 'if I could as thoroughly have im-'poſed on myſelf as I did on others; 'for reflection, at every turn, would 'often remind me I was not ſo wiſe as 'people thought me; and this con-'ſiderably embittered the pleaſure I 'received from the publick commenda-'tion of my wiſdom. This ſelf-ad-'monition, like a *memento mori*, or '*mortalis es*, muſt be, in my opinion, 'a very dangerous enemy to flattery: 'indeed, a weight ſufficient to counter-'balance all the falſe praiſe of the 'world. But whether it be that the 'generality of wiſe men do not reflect 'at all, or whether they have, from a 'conſtant impoſition on others, con-'tracted ſuch a habit of deceit as to 'deceive themſelves, I will not deter-'mine: it is, I believe, moſt certain, 'that very few wiſe men know them-'ſelves what fools they are, more than 'the world doth. Good Gods! could 'one but ſee what paſſes in the cloſet 'of Wiſdom! how ridiculous a ſight 'muſt it be to behold the wiſe man, 'who deſpiſes gratifying his palate, 'devouring cuſtard; the ſober wiſe 'man with his dram-bottle; or the 'anti-carnaliſt (if I may be allowed 'the expreſſion) chuckling over a 'b—y-book or picture, and, perhaps, 'careſſing his houſe-maid!

'But to conclude a character, in 'which I apprehend I made as abſurd 'a figure as in any in which I trod the 'ſtage of earth, my wiſdom at laſt put 'an end to itſelf; that is, occaſioned 'my diſſolution.

'A relation of mine, in the eaſtern 'part of the empire, diſinherited his 'ſon, and left me his heir. This hap-'pened in the depth of winter, when 'I was in my grand climacterick, and 'had juſt recovered of a dangerous 'diſeaſe. As I had all the reaſon ima-'ginable to apprehend the family of 'the deceaſed would conſpire againſt 'me, and embezzle as much as they 'could, I adviſed with a grave and 'wiſe friend, what was proper to be 'done; whether I ſhould go myſelf, 'or employ a notary on this occaſion, 'and defer my journey to the ſpring. 'To ſay the truth, I was moſt inclined 'to the latter; the rather, as my cir-'cumſtances were extremely flouriſh-'ing, as I was advanced in years, and 'had not one perſon in the world to 'whom I ſhould with pleaſure be-'queath any fortune at my death.

'My friend told me, he thought my 'queſtion admitted no manner of doubt 'or debate; that common prudence 'abſolutely required my immediate 'departure; adding, that if the ſame 'good luck had happened to him, he 'would have been already on his jour-

'ney: "For," continued he, "a man "who knows the world so well as "you, would be inexcusable to give "persons such an opportunity of cheat-"ing you, who, you must be assured, "will be too well inclined; and as for "employing a notary, remember that "excellent maxim, *Ne facias per ali-"um, quod fieri potest per te.* I own "the badness of the season, and your "very late recovery, are unlucky cir-"cumstances; but a wise man must "get over difficulties, when necessity "obliges him to encounter them."

'I was immediately determined by 'this opinion. The duty of a wise 'man made an irresistible impression, 'and I took the necessity for granted, 'without examination. I accordingly 'set forward the next morning; very 'tempestuous weather soon overtook 'me; I had not travelled three days 'before I relapsed into my fever, and 'died.

'I was now as cruelly disappointed 'by Minos, as I had formerly been 'happily so. I advanced with the ut-'most confidence to the gate, and 'really imagined I should have been 'admitted by the wisdom of my counte-'nance, even without any questions 'asked: but this was not my case; 'and, to my great surprize, Minos, 'with a menacing voice, called out to 'me—"You, Mr. there, with the "grave countenance, whither so fast, "pray? Will you please, before you "move any farther forwards, to give "me a short account of your transac-"tions below?"—I then began, and 'recounted to him my whole history, 'still expecting, at the end of every 'period, that the gate would be or-'dered to fly open: but I was obliged 'to go quite through with it, and then 'Minos, after some little consideration, 'spoke to me as follows—

"You, Mr. Wise man, stand forth, "if you please. Believe me, Sir, a "trip back again to earth will be one "of the wisest steps you ever took, "and really more to the honour of "your wisdom than any you have "hitherto taken. On the other side, "nothing could be simpler than to en-"deavour at Elysium; for who, but "a fool, would carry a commodity "which is of such infinite value in "one place, into another where it is "of none. But, without attempting "to offend your gravity with a jest, "you must return to the place from "whence you came; for Elysium was "never designed for those who are too "wise to be happy."

'This sentence confounded me 'greatly, especially as it seemed to 'threaten me with carrying my wis-'dom back again to earth. I told the 'judge, though he would not admit 'me at the gate, I hoped I had com-'mitted no crime, while alive, which 'merited my being wise any longer. 'He answered me, I must take my 'chance as to that matter; and imme-'diately we turned our backs to each 'other.'

CHAP. XVII.

JULIAN ENTERS INTO THE PERSON OF A KING.

'I Was now born at Oviedo in Spain; 'my father's name was Vere-'mond, and I was adopted by my 'uncle, King Alphonso the Chaste. 'I don't recollect in all the pilgri-'mages I have made on earth, that I 'ever passed a more miserable infancy 'than now, being under the utmost 'confinement and restraint, and sur-'rounded with physicians, who were 'ever dosing me, and tutors, who 'were continually plaguing me with 'their instructions; even those hours 'of leisure, which my inclination 'would have spent in play, were al-'lotted to tedious pomp and ceremo-'ny, which at an age wherein I had 'no ambition to enjoy the servility of 'courtiers, enslaved me more than it 'could the meanest of them. How-'ever, as I advanced towards man-'hood, my condition made me some 'amends; for the most beautiful wo-'men of their own accord threw out 'lures for me, and I had the happi-'ness, which no man in an inferior 'degree can arrive at, of enjoying the 'most delicious creatures, without the 'previous and tiresome ceremonies of 'of courtship, unless with the most 'simple, young, and unexperienced. 'As for the court ladies, they regarded 'me rather as men do the most lovely 'of the other sex; and though they 'outwardly retained some appearance 'of modesty, they in reality rather

'considered

'considered themſelves as receiving 'than conferring favours.

'Another happineſs I enjoyed was, 'in conferring favours of another ſort; 'for as I was extremely good-natured 'and generous, ſo I had daily opportunities of ſatisfying thoſe paſſions. 'Beſides my own princely allowance, 'which was very bountiful, and with 'which I did many liberal and good 'actions, I recommended numberleſs 'perſons of merit in diſtreſs to the 'king's notice, moſt of whom were 'provided for.

'Indeed, had I ſufficiently known 'my bleſſed ſituation at this time, I 'ſhould have grieved at nothing more 'than the death of Alphonſo, by 'which the burden of government devolved upon me: but ſo blindly fond 'is ambition, and ſuch charms doth it 'fancy in the power, and pomp, and 'ſplendor of a crown, that though I 'vehemently loved that king, and had 'the greateſt obligations to him, the 'thoughts of ſucceeding him obliterated my regret at his loſs, and the wiſh 'for my approaching coronation dried 'my eyes at his funeral.

'But my fondneſs for the name of 'king, did not make me forgetful of 'thoſe over whom I was to reign. I 'conſidered them in the light in which 'a tender father regards his children, 'as perſons whoſe well-being God had 'intruſted to my care; and again, in 'that in which a prudent lord reſpects 'his tenants, as thoſe on whoſe wealth 'and grandeur he is to build his own. 'Both theſe conſiderations inſpired me 'with the greateſt care for their welfare, and their good was my firſt and 'ultimate concern.

'The uſurper Mauregas had impiouſly obliged himſelf, and his ſucceſſors, to pay to the Moors every 'year an infamous tribute of a hundred young virgins: from this cruel 'and ſcandalous impoſition, I reſolved 'to relieve my country. Accordingly, when their Emperor Abderames 'the Second, had the audaciouſneſs to 'make this demand of me, inſtead of 'complying with it, I ordered his ambaſſadors to be driven away with all 'imaginable ignominy, and would 'have condemned them to death, could 'I have done it without a manifeſt 'violation of the law of nations.

'I now raiſed an immenſe army; 'at the levying of which I made a 'ſpeech from my throne, acquainting 'my ſubjects with the neceſſity and 'the reaſons of the war in which I 'was going to engage; which I convinced them I had undertaken for 'their eaſe and ſafety, and not for ſatisfying any wanton ambition, or 'revenging any private pique of my 'own. They all declared unanimouſly, that they would venture 'their lives, and every thing dear to 'them, in my defence, and in the ſupport of the honour of my crown. 'Accordingly my levies were inſtantly 'compleat, ſufficient numbers being 'only left to till the land; churchmen, even biſhops themſelves, enliſting themſelves under my banners.

'The armies met at Alvelda, where 'we were diſcomfited with immenſe 'loſs, and nothing but the lucky intervention of the night could have 'ſaved our whole army.

'I retreated to the ſummit of a hill, 'where I abandoned myſelf to the higheſt agonies of grief, not ſo much 'for the danger in which I then ſaw 'my crown, as for the loſs of thoſe 'miſerable wretches who had expoſed 'their lives at my command. I could 'not then avoid this reflection, that 'if the deaths of theſe people in a war, 'undertaken abſolutely for their protection, could give me ſuch concern; 'what horror muſt I have felt, if, like 'princes greedy of dominion, I had 'ſacrificed ſuch numbers to my own 'pride, vanity, and ridiculous luſt of 'power.

'After having vented my ſorrows 'for ſome time in this manner, I began to conſider by what means I 'might poſſibly endeavour to retrieve 'this misfortune; when reflecting on 'the great number of prieſts I had in 'my army, and on the prodigious 'force of ſuperſtition, a thought luckily ſuggeſted itſelf to me, to counterfeit that St. James had appeared 'to me in a viſion, and had promiſed 'me the victory. While I was ruminating on this, the Biſhop of Najara came opportunely to me. As I 'did not intend to communicate the 'ſecret to him, I took another method, 'and inſtead of anſwering any thing 'the biſhop ſaid to me, I pretended 'to talk to St. James, as if he had 'been really preſent; till at length,

'after

'after having ſpoke thoſe things 'which I thought ſufficient, and thank-'ed the ſaint aloud for his promiſe of 'the victory, I turned about to the 'biſhop, and embracing him with a 'pleaſed countenance, proteſted I did 'not know he was preſent; and then 'informing him of this ſuppoſed viſion, 'I aſked him, if he had not himſelf ſeen 'the ſaint. He anſwered me, he had; 'and afterwards proceeded to aſſure 'me, that this appearance of St. James 'was entirely owing to his prayers; 'for that he was his tutelar ſaint. He 'added, he had a viſion of him a few 'hours before, when he promiſed him 'a victory over the Infidels, and ac-'quainted him at the ſame time of the 'vacancy of the ſee of Toledo. Now 'this news being really true, though 'it had happened ſo lately that I had 'not heard of it, (nor, indeed, was 'it well poſſible I ſhould, conſidering 'the great diſtance of the way) when 'I was afterwards acquainted with it, 'a little ſtaggered me, though far 'from being ſuperſtitious; till being 'informed that the biſhop had loſt 'three horſes on a late expedition, I 'was ſatisfied.

'The next morning, the biſhop, at 'my deſire, mounted the roſtrum, and 'trumpeted forth this viſion ſo effectu-'ally, which he ſaid he had that even-'ing twice ſeen with his own eyes, 'that a ſpirit began to be infuſed 'through the whole army, which ren-'dered them ſuperior to almoſt any 'force: the biſhop inſiſted, that the 'leaſt doubt of ſucceſs was giving the 'lye to the ſaint, and a damnable ſin; 'and he took upon him in his name to 'promiſe them victory.

'The army being drawn out, I ſoon 'experienced the effect of enthuſiaſm, 'for having contrived another * ſtra-'tagem to ſtrengthen what the biſhop 'had ſaid, the ſoldiers fought more 'like furies than men. My ſtratagem 'was this: I had about me a dextrous 'fellow, who had been formerly a 'pimp in my amours; him I dreſſed 'up in a ſtrange antick dreſs, with a 'pair of white colours in his right 'hand, a red croſs in his left, and 'having diſguiſed him ſo, that no one 'could know him, I placed him on a 'white horſe, and ordered him to ride 'to the head of the army, and cry out, "Follow St. James!" Theſe words 'were reiterated by all the troops, who 'attacked the enemy with ſuch intre-'pidity, that, notwithſtanding our in-'feriority of numbers, we ſoon ob-'tained a compleat victory.

'The biſhop was come up by the 'time that the enemy was routed, and 'acquainting us, that he had met St. 'James by the way, and that he had in-'formed him of what had paſſed; he 'added, that he had expreſs orders from 'the ſaint to receive a conſiderable ſum 'for his uſe, and that a certain tax on 'corn and wine ſhould be ſettled on 'his church for ever; and laſtly, that a 'horſeman's pay ſhould be allowed for 'the future to the ſaint himſelf, of 'which he and his ſucceſſors were ap-'pointed receivers. The army receiv-'ed theſe demands with ſuch acclama-'tions, that I was obliged to comply 'with them, as I could by no means 'diſcover the impoſition; nor do I be-'lieve I ſhould have gained any credit 'if I had.

'I had now done with the ſaint, but 'the biſhop had not; for about a week 'afterwards, lights were ſeen in a 'wood near where the battle was 'fought; and in a ſhort time after-'wards, they diſcovered his tomb at 'the ſame place. Upon this, the 'biſhop made me a viſit, and forced 'me to go thither to build a church to 'him, and largely endow it. In a 'word, the good man ſo plagued me 'with miracle after miracle, that I was 'forced to make intereſt with the Pope 'to convey him to Toledo, to get rid 'of him.

'But to proceed to other matters.— 'There was an inferior officer, who 'had behaved very bravely in the 'battle againſt the Moors, and had 'received ſeveral wounds, who ſoli-'cited me for preferment; which I 'was about to confer on him, when 'one of my miniſters came to me in a 'fright, and told me, that he had pro-'miſed the poſt I deſigned for this man 'to the ſon of Count Alderedo; and 'that the count, who was a powerful 'perſon, would be greatly diſobliged 'at the refuſal, as he had ſent for his

* This ſilly ſtory is told as a ſolemn truth, (i.e. that St. James really appeared in the manner this fellow is deſcribed) by Mariana, L. 7. § 18.

'ſon

'ſon from ſchool to take poſſeſſion of it. 'I was obliged to agree with my mini-'ſter's reaſons, and at the ſame time 'recommended the wounded ſoldier to 'be preferred by him, which he faith-'fully promiſed he would: but I met 'the poor wretch ſince in Elyſium, who 'informed me he was afterwards ſtarv-'ed to death.

'None, who hath not been himſelf a 'prince, nor any prince, till his death, 'can conceive the impoſitions daily put 'on them by their favourites and mini-'ſters; ſo that princes are often blamed 'for the faults of others. The Count 'of Saldagne had been long confined 'in priſon, when his ſon D. Bernard 'del Carpio, who had performed the 'greateſt actions againſt the Moors, 'entreated me, as a reward for his ſer-'vice, to grant him his father's liberty. 'The old man's puniſhment had been 'ſo tedious, and the ſervices of the 'young one ſo ſingularly eminent, that 'I was very inclinable to grant the re-'queſt; but my miniſters ſtrongly op-'poſed it. They told me, my glory 'demanded revenge for the diſhonour 'offered to my family; that ſo poſitive 'a demand carried with it rather the 'air of menace than entreaty; that 'the vain detail of his ſervices, and 'the recompence due to them, was an 'injurious reproach; that to grant 'what had been ſo haughtily demand-'ed, would argue in the monarch both 'weakneſs and timidity; in a word, 'that to remit the puniſhment in-'flicted by my predeceſſors, would be 'to condemn their judgment. Laſtly, 'one told me in a whiſper, "His whole "family are enemies to your houſe." 'By theſe means the miniſters prevail-'ed. The young lord took the re-'fuſal ſo ill, that he retired from 'court, and abandoned himſelf to de-'ſpair, whilſt the old one languiſhed 'in priſon. By which means, as I have 'ſince diſcovered, I loſt the uſe of 'two of my beſt ſubjects.

'To confeſs the truth, I had by 'means of my miniſters conceived a very 'unjuſt opinion of my whole people, 'whom I fancied to be daily conſpir-'ing againſt me, and to entertain the 'moſt diſloyal thoughts; when in 'reality (as I have known ſince my 'death) they held me in univerſal re-'ſpect and eſteem. This is a trick, 'I believe, too often played with ſo-'vereigns, who by ſuch means are pre-'vented from that open intercourſe 'with their ſubjects, which as it would 'greatly endear the perſon of the 'prince to the people, ſo might it often 'prove dangerous to a miniſter, who 'was conſulting his own intereſt only 'at the expence of both. I believe I 'have now recounted to you the moſt 'material paſſages of my life; for I 'aſſure you, there are ſome incidents 'in the lives of kings not extremely 'worth relating. Every thing which 'paſſes in their minds and families, 'is not attended with the ſplendor 'which ſurrounds their throne: in-'deed, there are ſome hours wherein 'the naked king and the naked cobler 'can ſcarce be diſtinguiſhed from each 'other.

'Had it not been, however, for my 'ingratitude to Bernard del Carpio, 'I believe this would have been my 'laſt pilgrimage on earth; for as to 'the ſtory of St. James, I thought 'Minos would have burſt his ſides at 'it: but he was ſo diſpleaſed with 'me on the other account, that with 'a frown, he cried out, "Get thee "back again, king!" Nor would he 'ſuffer me to ſay another word.'

CHAP. XVIII.

JULIAN PASSES INTO A FOOL.

'THE next viſit I made to the 'world, was performed in 'France, where I was born in the 'court of Lewis III. and had after-'wards the honour to be preferred to 'be fool to the prince, who was ſur-'named Charles the Simple. But in 'reality, I know not whether I might 'ſo properly be ſaid to have acted the 'fool in his court, as to have made 'fools of all others in it. Certain it 'is, I was very far from being what is 'generally underſtood by that word, 'being a moſt cunning, deſigning, 'arch knave. I knew very well the 'folly of my maſter and of many others, 'and how to make my advantage of 'this knowledge. I was as dear to 'Charles the Simple, as the player 'Paris was to Domitian, and, like 'him, beſtowed all manner of offices 'and honours on whom I pleaſed. 'This drew me a great number of fol-

'lowers

'lowers among the courtiers, who 'really miſtook me for a fool, and yet 'flattered my underſtanding. There 'was, particularly, in the court a fel-'low, who had neither honour, ho-'neſty, ſenſe, wit, courage, beauty, 'nor indeed any one good quality, 'either of mind or body, to recom-'mend him; but was at the ſame time, 'perhaps, as cunning a monſter as 'ever lived. This gentleman took it 'into his head to liſt under my banner, 'and purſued me ſo very aſſiduouſly 'with flattery, conſtantly reminding 'me of my good ſenſe, that I grew 'immoderately fond of him; for though 'flattery is not moſt judiciouſly ap-'plied to qualities which the perſons 'flattered poſſeſs, yet, as notwith-'ſtanding my being well aſſured of 'my own parts, I paſt in the whole 'court for a fool, this flattery was a 'very ſweet morſel to me. I therefore 'got this fellow preferred to a biſhop-'rick; but I loſt my flatterer by it, 'for he never afterwards ſaid a civil 'thing to me.

'I never baulked my imagination 'for the groſſneſs of the reflection on 'the character of the greateſt noble, 'nay, even the king himſelf; of which 'I will give you a very bold inſtance. 'One day, his ſimple majeſty told me, 'he believed I had ſo much power, 'that his people looked on me as the 'king, and himſelf as my fool. At 'this I pretended to be angry as with 'an affront. "Why, how now," 'ſays the king; "are you aſhamed "of being a king?"—"No, Sir," ſays 'I, "but I am deviliſhly aſhamed of "my fool."

'Hebert, Earl of Vermandois, had 'by my means been reſtored to the 'favour of the Simple, (for ſo I uſed 'always to call Charles.) He after-'wards prevailed with the king to take 'the city of Arras from Earl Bald-'win, by which means Hebert, in ex-'change for this city, had Peronne re-'ſtored to him by Count Altmar. 'Baldwin came to court, in order to 'procure the reſtoration of his city; 'but, either through pride or igno-'rance, neglected to apply to me. 'As I met him at court during his ſo-'licitation, I told him he did not ap-'ply the right way; he anſwered 'roughly, he ſhould not aſk a fool's 'advice. I replied, I did not wonder 'at his prejudice, ſince he had miſ-'carried already by following a fool's 'advice; but I told him, there were 'fools who had more intereſt than 'that he had brought with him to 'court. He anſwered me ſurlily, he 'had no fool with him, for that he 'travelled alone.—"Aye, my lord," 'ſays I, "I often travel alone, and "yet they will have it I always carry "a fool with me." This raiſed a 'laugh among the bye-ſtanders, on 'which he gave me a blow. I imme-'diately complained of this uſage to 'the Simple, who diſmiſſed the earl 'from court with very hard words; 'inſtead of granting him the favour he 'ſolicited.

'I give you theſe rather as a ſpeci-'men of my intereſt and impudence 'than of my wit; indeed, my jeſts were 'commonly more admired than they 'ought to be; for perhaps I was not 'in reality much more a wit than a 'fool. But with the latitude of un-'bounded ſcurrility, it is eaſy enough 'to attain the character of wit, eſpe-'cially in a court, where, as all per-'ſons hate and envy one another heart-'ily, and are at the ſame time obliged 'by the conſtrained behaviour of ci-'vility to profeſs the greateſt liking, 'ſo it is, and muſt be, wonderfully 'pleaſant to them to ſee the follies of 'their acquaintance expoſed by a third 'perſon. Beſides, the opinion of the 'court is as uniform as the faſhion; 'and is always guided by the will of 'the prince or of the favourite. I 'doubt not that Caligula's horſe was 'univerſally held in his court to be a 'good and able conſul. In the ſame 'manner was I univerſally acknow-'ledged to be the wittieſt fool in the 'world. Every word I ſaid raiſed 'laughter, and was held to be a jeſt, 'eſpecially by the ladies; who ſome-'times laughed before I had diſcover-'ed my ſentiment, and often repeated 'that as a jeſt which I did not even in-'tend as one.

'I was as ſevere on the ladies as on 'the men, and with the ſame impu-'nity; but this at laſt coſt me dear; 'for once having joked the beauty of 'a lady, whoſe name was Adelaide, 'a favourite of the Simple's, ſhe pre-'tended to ſmile and be pleaſed at my 'wit, with the reſt of the company; 'but, in reality, ſhe highly reſented it,

'and

'and endeavoured to undermine me 'with the king; in which she so 'greatly succeeded, (for what cannot 'a favourite woman do with one who 'deserves the surname of Simple?) 'that the king grew every day more 'reserved to me, and when I attempt-'ed any freedom, gave me such marks 'of his displeasure, that the courtiers '(who have all hawk's eyes at a slight 'from the sovereign) soon discerned 'it; and, indeed, had I been blind 'enough not to have discovered that I 'had lost ground in the Simple's fa-'vour, by his own change in his car-'riage towards me, I must have found 'it, nay even felt it, in the behaviour 'of the courtiers; for as my company 'was two days before solicited with 'the utmost eagerness, it was now re-'jected with as much scorn. I was 'now the jest of the ushers and pages; 'and an officer of the guards, on whom 'I was a little jocose, gave me a box 'on the ear, bidding me make free 'with my equals. This very fel-'low had been my butt for many years, 'without daring to lift his hand a-'gainst me.

'But though I visibly perceived the 'alteration in the Simple, I was ut-'terly unable to make any guess at the 'occasion. I had not the least suspi-'cion of Adelaide; for besides her 'being a very good-humoured woman, 'I had often made severe jests on her 'reputation, which I had all the reason 'imaginable to believe had given her 'no offence. But I soon perceived, 'that a woman will bear the most bit-'ter censures on her morals, easier 'than the smallest reflection on her 'beauty; for she now declared pub-'lickly, that I ought to be dismissed 'from court, as the stupidest of fools, 'and one in whom there was no di-'version; and that she wondered how 'any person could have so little taste, 'as to imagine I had any wit. This 'speech was echoed through the draw-'ing-room, and agreed to by all pre-'sent. Every one now put on an un-'usual gravity on their countenance 'whenever I spoke; and it was as 'much out of my power to raise a 'laugh, as formerly it had been for 'me to open my mouth without one.

'While my affairs were in this 'posture, I went one day into the cir-'cle, without my fool's dress. The 'Simple, who would still speak to 'me, cried out, "So, fool, what's "the matter now?"—"Sir," answer-'ed I, "fools are like to be so com-"mon a commodity at court, that I "am weary of my coat."—"How "dost thou mean?" answered the Sim-'ple; "What can make them com-"moner now than usual?"—"O "Sir," said I, "there are ladies here "make your majesty a fool every day "of their lives." The Simple took 'no notice of my jest, and several 'present said my bones ought to be 'broke for my impudence; but it 'pleased the queen, who knowing 'Adelaide, whom she hated, to be the 'cause of my disgrace, obtained me 'of the king, and took me into her 'service; so that I was henceforth call-'ed the queen's fool, and in her court 'received the same honour, and had 'as much wit as I had formerly had 'in the king's. But as the queen had 'really no power unless over her own 'domesticks, I was not treated in ge-'neral with that complaisance, nor did 'I receive those bribes and presents, 'which had once fallen to my share.

'Nor did this confined respect con-'tinue long; for the queen, who had 'in fact no taste for humour, soon 'grew sick of my foolery, and forget-'ting the cause for which she had taken 'me, neglected me so much, that 'her court grew intolerable to my 'temper, and I broke my heart, and 'died.

'Minos laughed heartily at several 'things in my story; and then telling 'me, no one played the fool in Ely-'sium, bid me go back again.'

CHAP. XIX.

JULIAN APPEARS IN THE CHARACTER OF A BEGGAR.

'I Now returned to Rome, and was 'born into a very poor and nu-'merous family, which, to be honest 'with you, procured it's livelihood 'by begging. This, if you was 'never yourself of the calling, you do 'not know, I suppose, to be as regu-'lar a trade as any other; to have it's 'several rules and secrets, or mysteries,

'which to learn, require perhaps as 'tedious an apprenticeship as those of 'any craft whatever.

'The first thing we are taught, is 'the *countenance miserable*. This in-'deed nature makes much easier to 'some than others; but there are none 'who cannot accomplish it, if they 'begin early enough in youth, and 'before the muscles are grown too 'stubborn.

'The second thing is, *the voice la-'mentable*. In this qualification, too, 'nature must have her share in pro-'ducing the most consummate excel-'lence; however, art will here, as in 'every other instance, go a great way 'with industry and application, even 'without the assistance of genius; es-'pecially if the student begins young.

'There are many other instructions; 'but these are the most considerable. 'The women are taught one practice 'more than the men; for they are in-'structed in the art of crying, that is, 'to have their tears ready on all occa-'sions; but this is attained very easily 'by most. Some, indeed, arrive at the 'utmost perfection in this art with in-'credible facility.

'No profession requires a deeper in-'sight into human nature, than the 'beggar's. Their knowledge of the 'passions of men is so extensive, that 'I have often thought, it would be of 'no little service to a politician to have 'his education among them. Nay, 'there is a much greater analogy be-'tween these two characters than is 'imagined; for both concur in their 'first and grand principle, it being 'equally their business to delude and 'impose on mankind. It must be con-'fessed, that they differ widely in the 'degree of advantage which they 'make by their deceit; for, whereas 'the beggar is contented with a lit-'tle, the politician leaves but a little 'behind.

'A very great English philosopher 'hath remarked our policy in taking 'care never to address any one with a 'title inferior to what he really claims. 'My father was of the same opinion; 'for I remember when I was a boy, 'the Pope happening to pass by, I at-'tended him with—"Pray, Sir! for "God's sake, Sir! for the Lord's "sake, Sir!"—To which he answered, 'gravely, "Sirrah, sirrah! you ought "to be whipt, for taking the Lord's "name in vain." And in vain it was, 'indeed; for he gave me nothing. My 'father over-hearing this, took his 'advice, and whipped me very severe-'ly. While I was under correction, I 'promised often never to take the 'Lord's name in vain any more. My 'father then said—"Child, I do not "whip you for taking his name in "vain; I whip you for not calling the "Pope *His Holiness*."

'If all men were so wise and good 'to follow the clergy's example, the 'nuisance of beggars would soon be 'removed. I do not remember to have 'been above twice relieved by them 'during my whole state of beggary. 'Once was by a very well-looking 'man, who gave me a small piece of 'silver, and declared he had given me 'more than he had left himself; the 'other was by a spruce young fellow, 'who had that very day first put on 'his robes, whom I attended with—"Pray, reverend Sir; good reverend "Sir, consider your cloth!"—He an-'swered, "I do, child, consider my "office; and I hope all of our cloth "do the same." He then threw down 'some money, and strutted off with 'great dignity.

'With the women I had one gene-'ral formulary—"Sweet pretty lady! "God bless your ladyship! God bless "your handsome face!" This gene-'rally succeeded; but I observed, the 'uglier the woman was, the surer I 'was of success.

'It was a constant maxim among 'us, that the greater retinue any one 'travelled with, the less expectation 'we might promise ourselves from 'them; but whenever we saw a vehicle 'with a single or no servant, we ima-'gined our booty sure, and were sel-'dom deceived.

'We observed great difference in-'troduced by time and circumstance 'in the same person: for instance, a 'losing gamester is sometimes gene-'rous; but from a winner you will as 'easily obtain his soul, as a single 'groat. A lawyer travelling from 'his country-seat to his clients at 'Rome, and a physician going to visit 'a patient, were always worth asking; 'but the same on their return were '(according to our cant phrase) *un-'touchable*.

'The

'The moſt general, and indeed, the 'trueſt maxim among us, was, that 'thoſe who poſſeſſed the leaſt were al-'ways the readieſt to give. The chief 'art of a beggarman is therefore to 'diſcern the rich from the poor, which, 'though it be only diſtinguiſhing ſub-'ſtance from ſhadow, is by no means 'attainable without a pretty good ca-'pacity, and a vaſt degree of attention; 'for theſe two are eternally induſtri-'ous in endeavouring to counterfeit 'each other. In this deceit, the poor 'man is more heartily in earneſt to de-'ceive you than the rich; who amidſt 'all the emblems of poverty which he 'puts on, ſtill permits ſome mark of 'his wealth to ſtrike the eye. Thus, 'while his apparel is not worth a groat, 'his finger wears a ring of value, or 'his pocket a gold watch: in a word, 'he ſeems rather to affect poverty to 'inſult, than impoſe on you. Now 'the poor man, on the contrary, is 'very ſincere in his deſire of paſſing 'for rich; but the eagerneſs of this 'deſire hurries him to over-act his 'part, and he betrays himſelf, as one 'who is drunk by his over-acted ſo-'briety. Thus, inſtead of being at-'tended by one ſervant well mounted, 'he will have two; and not being able 'to purchaſe or maintain a ſecond 'horſe of value, one of his ſervants 'at leaſt is mounted on a hired raſcal-'lion. He is not contented to go 'plain and neat in his cloaths; he 'therefore claps on ſome tawdry or-'nament, and what he adds to the 'fineneſs of his veſtment he detracts 'from the fineneſs of his linen. With-'out deſcending into more minute par-'ticulars, I believe I may aſſert it is 'an axiom of indubitable truth, that 'whoever ſhews you he is either in 'himſelf, or his equipage, as gaudy 'as he can, convinces you he is more 'ſo than he can afford. Now when-'ever a man's expence exceeds his in-'come he is indifferent in the degree; 'we had therefore nothing more to do 'with ſuch, than to flatter them with 'their wealth and ſplendor, and were 'always certain of ſucceſs.

'There is, indeed, one kind of rich 'man, who is commonly more liberal, 'namely, where riches ſurprize him, 'as it were, in the midſt of poverty 'and diſtreſs; the conſequence of 'which is, I own, ſometimes exceſſive 'avarice, but oftener extreme prodi-'gality. I remember one of theſe, 'who having received a pretty large 'ſum of money, gave me, when I 'begged an obolus, a whole talent; on 'which his friend having reproved 'him, he anſwered, with an oath, "Why not? have I not fifty left?"

'The life of a beggar, if men eſti-'mated things by their real eſſence, 'and not by their outward falſe ap-'pearance, would be, perhaps, a more 'deſirable ſituation than any of thoſe 'which ambition perſuades us with 'ſuch difficulty, danger, and often vil-'lainy, to aſpire to. The wants of a 'beggar are commonly as chimerical 'as the abundance of a nobleman; 'for beſides vanity, which a judicious 'beggar will always apply to with 'wonderful efficacy, there are in real-'ity very few natures ſo hardened as 'not to compaſſionate poverty and diſ-'treſs when the predominancy of 'ſome other paſſion doth not prevent 'them.

'There is one happineſs which at-'tends money got with eaſe, namely, 'that it is never hoarded; otherwiſe, 'as we have frequent opportunities of 'growing rich, that canker care might 'prey on our quiet, as it doth on 'others: but our money-ſtock we 'ſpend as faſt as we acquire it; uſually 'at leaſt, for I ſpeak not without ex-'ception; thus it gives us mirth only, 'and no trouble. Indeed, the luxury 'of our lives might introduce diſeaſes, 'did not our daily exerciſe prevent 'them: this gives us appetite and re-'liſh for our dainties, and at the ſame 'time an antidote againſt the evil ef-'fects which ſloth, united with luxu-'ry, induces on the habit of a human 'body. Our women we enjoy with 'extaſies, at leaſt equal to what the 'greateſt men feel in their embraces. 'I can, I am aſſured, ſay of myſelf, 'that no mortal could reap more per-'fect happineſs from the tender paſſion 'than my fortune had decreed me. I 'married a charming young woman 'for love; ſhe was the daughter of a 'neighbouring beggar, who, with an 'improvidence too often ſeen, ſpent a 'very large income, which he pro-'cured by his profeſſion, ſo that he 'was able to give her no fortune 'down; however, at his death, he left 'her a very well-accuſtomed begging-

'hut, ſituated on the ſide of a ſteep 'hill, where travellers could not im-'mediately eſcape from us, and a gar-'den adjoining, being the twenty-'eighth part of an acre, well planted. 'She made the beſt of wives, bore me 'nineteen children, and never failed, 'unleſs on her lying-in, which gene-'rally laſted three days, to get my 'ſupper ready againſt my return home 'in an evening; this being my favou-'rite meal, and at which I, as well 'as my whole family, greatly enjoyed 'ourſelves; the principal ſubject of 'our diſcourſe being generally the 'boons we had that day obtained, on 'which occaſions laughing at the folly 'of the donors made no inconſidera-'ble part of the entertainment; for 'whatever might be their motive for 'giving, we conſtantly imputed our 'ſucceſs to our having flattered their 'vanity, or over-reached their under-'ſtanding.

'But, perhaps, I have dwelt too 'long on this character; I ſhall con-'clude, therefore, with telling you, 'that after a life of a hundred and two 'years continuance, during all which 'I had never known any ſickneſs or 'infirmity but that which old age ne-'ceſſarily induced, I at laſt, without 'the leaſt pain, went out like the ſnuff 'of a candle.

'Minos, having heard my hiſtory, 'bid me compute, if I could, how 'many lyes I had told in my life. As 'we are here, by a certain fated neceſ-'ſity, obliged to confine ourſelves to 'truth, I anſwered, I believed about 'fifty million; he then replied, with a 'frown, "Can ſuch a wretch conceive "any hopes of entering Elyſium?" I 'immediately turned about; and, up-'on the whole, was rejoiced at his not 'calling me back.'

CHAP. XX.

JULIAN PERFORMS THE PART OF A STATESMAN.

'IT was now my fortune to be born 'of a German princeſs; but a 'man-midwife pulling my head off 'in delivering my mother, put a ſpeedy 'end to my princely life.

'Spirits, who end their lives before 'they are at the age of five years, are 'immediately ordered into other bo-'dies; and it was now my fortune to 'perform ſeveral infancies, before I 'could again entitle myſelf to an ex-'amination of Minos.

'At length I was deſtined once more 'to play a conſiderable part on the 'ſtage. I was born in England, in 'the reign of Etheldred II. My fa-'ther's name was Ulnoth. He was 'Earl or Thane of Suſſex: I was af-'terwards known by the name of Earl 'Goodwin, and began to make a con-'ſiderable figure in the world in the 'time of Harold Harefoot, whom I 'procured to be made king of Weſ-'ſex, or the Weſt Saxons, in prejudice 'of Hardicanute, whoſe mother, Em-'ma, endeavoured afterwards to ſet 'another of her ſons on the throne; 'but I circumvented her, and com-'municating her deſign to the king, at 'the ſame time acquainted him with a 'project which I had formed for the 'murder of theſe two young princes. 'Emma had ſent for theſe her ſons 'from Normandy, with the king's 'leave, whom ſhe had deceived by her 'religious behaviour and pretended 'neglect of all worldly affairs; but I 'prevailed with Harold to invite theſe 'princes to his court and put them to 'death. The prudent mother ſent 'only Alfred, retaining Edward to 'herſelf, as ſhe ſuſpected my ill de-'ſigns, and thought I ſhould not ven-'ture to execute them on one of her 'ſons while ſhe ſecured the other; but 'ſhe was deceived, for I had no ſooner 'Alfred in my poſſeſſion than I cauſed 'him to be conducted to Ely, where I 'ordered his eyes to be put out, and 'afterwards to be confined in a mo-'naſtery.

'This was one of thoſe cruel expe-'dients which great men ſatisfy them-'ſelves well in executing, by conclud-'ing them to be neceſſary to the ſer-'vice of their prince, who is the ſup-'port of their ambition.

'Edward, the other ſon of Emma, 'eſcaped again to Normandy; whence, 'after the death of Harold and Har-'dicanute, he made no ſcruple of ap-'plying to my protection and favour, 'though he had before proſecuted me 'with all the vengeance he was able 'for the murder of his brother: but 'in all great affairs, private relation 'muſt yield to publick intereſt. Hav-'ing

'ing, therefore, concluded very advan-
'tageous terms for myſelf with him,
'I made no ſcruple of patronizing his
'cauſe, and ſoon placed him on the
'throne: nor did I conceive the leaſt
'apprehenſion from his reſentment, as
'I knew my power was too great for
'him to encounter.

'Among other ſtipulated condi-
'tions, one was to marry my daugh-
'ter Editha. This Edward conſented
'to with great reluctance, and I had
'afterwards no reaſon to be pleaſed
'with it; for it raiſed her, who had
'been my favourite child, to ſuch an
'opinion of greatneſs, that inſtead of
'paying me the uſual reſpect, ſhe fre-
'quently threw in my teeth, (as often
'at leaſt as I gave her any admoni-
'tion) that ſhe was now a queen, and
'that the character and title of father
'merged in that of ſubject. This
'behaviour, however, did not cure me
'of my affection towards her, nor leſ-
'ſen the uneaſineſs which I afterwards
'bore on Edward's diſmiſſing her from
'his bed.

'One thing, which principally in-
'duced me to labour the promotion of
'Edward, was the ſimplicity or weak-
'neſs of that prince under whom I
'promiſed myſelf abſolute dominion,
'under another name. Nor did this
'opinion deceive me; for during his
'whole reign, my adminiſtration was
'in the higheſt degree deſpotick; I had
'every thing of royalty but the out-
'ward enſigns, no man ever applying
'for a place, or any kind of preferr-
'ment, but to me only; a circum-
'ſtance, which as it greatly enriched
'my coffers, ſo it no leſs pampered
'my ambition, and ſatisfied my vanity
'with a numerous attendance; and I
'had the pleaſure of ſeeing thoſe who
'only bowed to the king, proſtrating
'themſelves before me.

'Edward the Confeſſor, or St. Ed-
'ward, as ſome have called him in de-
'riſion, I ſuppoſe, being a very ſilly
'fellow, had all the faults incident,
'and almoſt inſeparable, to fools. He
'married my daughter Editha, from
'his fear of diſobling me; and after-
'wards, out of hatred to me, refuſed
'even to conſummate his marriage,
'though ſhe was one of the moſt beau-
'tiful women of her age: he was
'likewiſe guilty of the baſeſt ingrati-
'tude to his mother, (a vice to which
'fools are chiefly, if not only, liable)
'and, in return for her endeavours to
'procure him a throne in his youth,
'confined her in a loathſome priſon in
'her old age. This, it is true, he did
'by my advice; but as to her walking
'over nine plough-ſhares red hot, and
'giving nine manors, when ſhe had
'not one in her poſſeſſion, there is not
'a ſyllable of veracity in it.

'The firſt great perplexity I fell
'into, was on the account of my ſon
'Swane, who had deflowered the ab-
'beſs of Leon, ſince called Leominſter
'in Herefordſhire. After this fact he
'retired into Denmark, whence he ſent
'to me to obtain his pardon. The
'king at firſt refuſed it, being moved
'thereto, as I afterwards found, by
'ſome churchmen, particularly by one
'of his chaplains, whom I had pre-
'vented from obtaining a biſhoprick.
'Upon this, my ſon Swane invaded the
'coaſts with ſeveral ſhips, and com-
'mitted many outrageous cruelties,
'which, indeed, did his buſineſs, as
'they ſerved me to apply to the fear
'of this king, which I had long ſince
'diſcovered to be his predominant paſ-
'ſion. And at laſt, he who had re-
'fuſed pardon to his firſt offence, ſub-
'mitted to give it him, after he had
'committed many other more mon-
'ſtrous crimes, by which his pardon
'loſt all grace to the offended, and re-
'ceived double cenſure from all others.

'The king was greatly inclined to
'the Normans, had created a Norman
'archbiſhop of Canterbury, and had
'heaped extraordinary favours on him.
'I had no other objection to this man
'than that he roſe without my aſſiſt-
'ance; a cauſe of diſlike, which in
'the reign of great and powerful fa-
'vourites, hath often proved fatal to
'the perſons who have given it, as the
'perſons thus raiſed inſpire us con-
'ſtantly with jealouſies and apprehen-
'ſions: for when we promote any one
'ourſelves, we take effectual care to
'preſerve ſuch an aſcendant over him,
'that we can at any time reduce him
'to his former degree, ſhould he dare
'to act in oppoſition to our wills; for
'which reaſon we never ſuffer any to
'come near the prince but ſuch as we
'are aſſured it is impoſſible ſhould be
'capable of engaging or improving
'his affection; no prime-miniſter, as
'I apprehend, eſteeming himſelf to be

'ſafe

'ſafe while any other ſhares the ear of 'his prince, of whom we are as jea-'lous as the fondeſt huſband can be 'of his wife. Whoever, therefore, 'can approach him by any other chan-'nel than that of ourſelves, is in our 'opinion a declared enemy, and one 'whom the firſt principles of policy 'oblige us to demoliſh with the utmoſt 'expedition; for the affection of kings 'is as precarious as that of women, 'and the only way to ſecure either to 'ourſelves is to keep all others from 'them.

'But the archbiſhop did not let mat-'ters reſt on ſuſpicion; he ſoon gave 'open proofs of his intereſt with the 'confeſſor, in procuring an office of 'ſome importance for one Rollo, a 'Roman of mean extraction and very 'deſpicable parts. When I repreſent-'ed to the king the indecency of con-'ferring ſuch an honour on ſuch a 'fellow, he anſwered me, that he was 'the archbiſhop's relation. "Then, "Sir," replied I, "he is related to "your enemy." Nothing more paſ-'ſed at that time; but I ſoon per-'ceived by the archbiſhop's behaviour 'that the king had acquainted him 'with our private diſcourſe, a ſuffi-'cient aſſurance of his confidence in 'him, and neglect of me.

'The favour of princes, when once 'loſt, is recoverable only by the gain-'ing a ſituation which may make you 'terrible to them. As I had no doubt 'of having loſt all credit with this 'king, which, indeed, had been ori-'ginally founded and conſtantly ſup-'ported by his fear, ſo I took the 'method of terror to regain it.

'The Earl of Boulogne coming over 'to viſit the king, gave me an oppor-'tunity of breaking out into open op-'poſition; for as the earl was on his 'return to France, one of his ſervants, 'who was ſent before to procure lodg-'ings at Dover, and inſiſted on having 'them in the houſe of a private man 'in ſpite of the owner's teeth, was, in 'a fray which enſued, killed on the 'ſpot; and the earl himſelf arriving 'there ſoon after, very narrowly eſcap-'ed with his life. The earl, enraged 'at this affront, returned to the king 'at Glouceſter, with loud complaints 'and demands of ſatisfaction. Ed-'ward conſented to his demands, and 'ordered me to chaſtiſe the rioters, who 'were under my government as Earl 'of Kent; but, inſtead of obeying 'theſe orders, I anſwered, with ſome 'warmth, that the Engliſh were not 'uſed to puniſh people unheard; nor 'ought their rights and privileges to 'be violated: that the accuſed ſhould 'be firſt ſummoned; if guilty, ſhould 'make ſatisfaction both with body 'and eſtate; but if innocent, ſhould 'be diſcharged; adding, with great 'ferocity, that, as Earl of Kent, it 'was my duty to protect thoſe under 'my government againſt the inſults of 'foreigners.

'This accident was extremely lucky, 'as it gave my quarrel with the king 'a popular colour; and ſo ingratiated 'me with the people, that when I ſet 'up my ſtandard, which I ſoon after 'did, they readily and chearfully liſted 'under my banners, and embraced 'my cauſe, which I perſuaded them 'was their own; for that it was to 'protect them againſt foreigners that 'I had drawn my ſword. The word 'foreigners, with an Engliſhman, hath 'a kind of magical effect, they having 'the utmoſt hatred and averſion to 'them, ariſing from the cruelties they 'ſuffered from the Danes and ſome 'other foreign nations. No wonder, 'therefore, they eſpouſed my cauſe 'in a quarrel which had ſuch a be-'ginning.

'But what may be ſomewhat more 'remarkable, is, that when I after-'wards returned to England from 'baniſhment, and was at the head of 'an army of the Flemiſh, who were 'preparing to plunder the city of Lon-'don, I ſtill perſiſted that I was come 'to defend the Engliſh from the dan-'ger of foreigners, and gained their 'credit. Indeed, there is no lye ſo 'groſs but it may be impoſed on the 'people by thoſe whom they eſteem 'their patrons and defenders.

'The king ſaved his city by being 'reconciled to me, and taking again 'my daughter whom he had put away 'from him; and thus, having frighten-'ed the king into what conceſſions I 'thought proper, I diſmiſſed my army 'and fleet, with which I intended, 'could I not have ſucceeded otherwiſe, 'to have ſacked the city of London, 'and ravaged the whole country.

'I was no ſooner re-eſtabliſhed in the 'king's favour, or, what was as well

'for

'for me, the appearance of it, than I 'fell violently on the archbiſhop. He 'had of himſelf retired to his mona-'ſtery in Normandy; but that did not 'content me; I had him formally 'baniſhed, the ſee declared vacant, 'and then filled up by another.

'I enjoyed my grandeur a very ſhort 'time after my reſtoration to it; for 'the king hating and fearing me to a 'very great degree, and finding no 'means of openly deſtroying me, at 'laſt effected his purpoſe by poiſon; 'and then ſpread abroad a ridiculous 'ſtory of my wiſhing the next morſel 'might choak me, if I had had any 'hand in the death of Alfred; and 'accordingly that the next morſel, by 'a divine judgment, ſtuck in my throat, 'and performed that office.

'This of a ſtateſman was one of 'my worſt ſtages in the other world. 'It is a poſt ſubjected daily to the 'greateſt danger and inquietude, and 'attended with little pleaſure, and leſs 'eaſe. In a word, it is a pill, which, 'was it not gilded over by ambition, 'would appear nauſeous and deteſtable 'in the eye of every one; and perhaps 'that is one reaſon why Minos ſo 'greatly compaſſionates the caſe of thoſe 'who ſwallow it; for that juſt judge 'told me, he always acquitted a prime-'miniſter who could produce one ſingle 'good action in his whole life, let him 'have committed ever ſo many crimes. 'Indeed, I underſtood him a little too 'largely, and was ſtepping towards 'the gate; but he pulled me by the 'ſleeve, and, telling me no prime-'miniſter ever entered there, bid me 'go back again; ſaying, he thought 'I had ſufficient reaſon to rejoice in 'eſcaping the bottomleſs-pit, which 'half my crimes committed in any 'other capacity would have entitled 'me to.'

CHAP. XXI.

JULIAN'S ADVENTURES IN THE POST OF A SOLDIER.

'I Was born at Caen in Normandy; 'my mother's name was Matil-'da; as for my father, I am not ſo 'certain; for the good woman, on her 'death-bed, aſſured me ſhe herſelf 'could bring her gueſs to no greater 'certainty than to five of Duke Wil-'liam's captains. When I was no 'more than thirteen, (being, indeed, 'a ſurprizing ſtout boy of my age) I 'enliſted into the army of Duke Wil-'liam, afterwards known by the name 'of William the Conqueror; landed 'with him at Pemeſey, or Pemſey, in 'Suſſex, and was preſent at the famous 'battle of Haſtings.

'At the firſt onſet it was impoſſible 'to deſcribe my conſternation, which 'was heightened by the fall of two 'ſoldiers who ſtood by me; but this 'ſoon abated, and by degrees, as my 'blood grew warm, I thought no more 'of my own ſafety, but fell on the 'enemy with great fury, and did a 'good deal of execution; till, un-'happily, I received a wound in my 'thigh, which rendered me unable to 'ſtand any longer, ſo that I now lay 'among the dead, and was conſtantly 'expoſed to the danger of being tramp-'led to death, as well by my fellow-'ſoldiers as by the enemy. However, 'I had the fortune to eſcape it, and 'continued the remaining part of the 'day, and the night following, on the 'ground.

'The next morning, the duke ſend-'ing out parties to bring off the 'wounded, I was found almoſt ex-'piring with loſs of blood; notwith-'ſtanding which, as immediate care 'was taken to dreſs my wounds, youth 'and a robuſt conſtitution ſtood my 'friends, and I recovered, after a long 'and tedious indiſpoſition, and was 'again able to uſe my limbs, and do 'my duty.

'As ſoon as Dover was taken, I 'was conveyed thither with all the reſt 'of the ſick and wounded. Here I 'recovered of my wound; but fell 'afterwards into a violent flux, which, 'when it departed, left me ſo weak, 'that it was long before I could regain 'my ſtrength: and what moſt afflicted 'me was, that, during my whole ill-'neſs, when I languiſhed under want 'as well as ſickneſs, I had daily the 'mortification to ſee and hear the riots 'and exceſſes of my fellow-ſoldiers, 'who had happily eſcaped ſafe from 'the battle.

'I was no ſooner well, than I was 'ordered into garriſon at Dover caſtle. 'The officers here fared very indiffe-'rently; but the private men much 'worſe.

'worſe. We had great ſcarcity of 'proviſions, and, what was yet more 'intolerable, were ſo cloſely confined 'for want of room, (four of us being 'obliged to lie on the ſame bundle of 'ſtraw) that many died, and moſt 'ſickened.

'Here I had remained about four 'months, when one night we were 'alarmed with the arrival of the Earl 'of Boulogne, who had come over 'privily from France, and endeavour-'ed to ſurprize the caſtle. The de-'ſign proved ineffectual; for the gar-'riſon making a briſk ſally, moſt of 'his men were tumbled down the pre-'cipice, and he returned with a very 'few back to France. In this action, 'however, I had the misfortune to 'come off with a broken arm; it was 'ſo ſhattered, that, beſides a great deal 'of pain and miſery which I endured 'in my cure, I was diſabled for up-'wards of three months.

'Soon after my recovery, I had 'contracted an amour with a young 'woman, whoſe parents lived near the 'garriſon, and were in much better 'circumſtances than I had reaſon to 'expect ſhould give their conſent to 'the match. However, as ſhe was 'extremely fond of me, (as I was, 'indeed, diſtractedly enamoured of 'her) they were prevailed on to com-'ply with her deſires, and the day was 'fixed for our marriage.

'On the evening preceding, while I 'was exulting with the eager expecta-'tion of the happineſs I was the next 'day to enjoy, we received orders to 'march early in the morning towards 'Windſor, where a large army was to 'be formed, at the head of which the 'king intended to march into the 'Weſt. Any perſon who hath ever 'been in love, may eaſily imagine 'what I felt in my mind on receiving 'thoſe orders; and what ſtill height-'ened my torments, was, that the 'commanding officer would not per-'mit any one to go out of the garriſon 'that evening; ſo that I had not even 'an opportunity of taking leave of my 'beloved.

'The morning came which was to 'have put me in the poſſeſſion of my 'wiſhes; but, alas! the ſcene was now 'changed, and all the hopes which 'I had raiſed, were now ſo many 'ghoſts to haunt and furies to torment 'me.

'It was now the midſt of winter, 'and very ſevere weather for the ſea-'ſon, when we were obliged to make 'very long and fatiguing marches, in 'which we ſuffered all the inconve-'niences of cold and hunger. The 'night in which I expected to riot in 'the arms of my beloved miſtreſs, I 'was obliged to take up with a lodg-'ing on the ground, expoſed to the 'inclemences of a rigid froſt: nor 'could I obtain the leaſt comfort of 'ſleep, which ſhunned me as it's ene-'my. In ſhort, the horrors of that 'night are not to be deſcribed, or per-'haps imagined. They made ſuch an 'impreſſion on my ſoul, that I was 'forced to be dipped three times in the 'river Lethe, to prevent my remem-'bering it in the characters which I 'afterwards performed in the fleſh.'

Here I interrupted Julian for the firſt time, and told him no ſuch dipping had happened to me in my voyage from one world to the other; but he ſatisfied me by ſaying, that this only happened to thoſe ſpirits which returned into the fleſh, in order to prevent that reminiſcence which Plato mentions, and which would otherwiſe cauſe great confuſion in the other world.

He then proceeded as follows—'We 'continued a very laborious march to 'Exeter, which we were ordered to be-'ſiege. The town ſoon ſurrendered, 'and his majeſty built a caſtle there, 'which he garriſoned with his Nor-'mans, and, unhappily, I had the miſ-'fortune to be one of the number.

'Here we were confined cloſer than 'I had been at Dover; for as the citi-'zens were extremely diſaffected, we 'were never ſuffered to go without the 'walls of the caſtle; nor indeed could 'we, unleſs in large bodies, without 'the utmoſt danger. We were like-'wiſe kept to continual duty; nor 'could any ſolicitations prevail with 'the commanding officer to give me a 'month's abſence to viſit my love, 'from whom I had no opportunity of 'hearing in all my long abſence.

'However, in the ſpring, the people 'being more quiet, and another officer, 'of a gentler temper, ſucceeding to 'the principal command, I obtained 'leave to go to Dover; but, alas! 'what

'what comfort did my long journey 'bring me? I found the parents of my 'darling in the utmoſt miſery at her 'loſs; for ſhe had died about a week 'before my arrival of a conſumption, 'which they imputed to her pining at 'my ſudden departure.

'I now fell into the moſt violent 'and almoſt raving fit of deſpair. I 'curſed myſelf, the king, and the 'whole world, which no longer ſeemed 'to have any delight for me. I threw 'myſelf on the grave of my deceaſed 'love, and lay there, without any kind 'of ſuſtenance, for two whole days. 'At laſt hunger, together with the 'perſuaſions of ſome people who took 'pity on me, prevailed with me to 'quit that ſituation, and refreſh my-'ſelf with food. They then perſuaded 'me to return to my poſt, and aban-'don a place where almoſt every object 'I ſaw recalled ideas to my mind, 'which, as they ſaid, I ſhould endea-'vour with my utmoſt force to expel 'from it. This advice at length ſuc-'ceeded; the rather, as the father and 'mother of my beloved refuſed to ſee 'me, looking on me as the innocent 'but certain cauſe of the death of 'their only child.

'The loſs of one we tenderly love, 'as it is one of the moſt bitter and 'biting evils which attends human 'life, ſo it wants the lenitive which 'palliates and ſoftens every other ca-'lamity; I mean, that great reliever, 'Hope. No man can be ſo totally un-'done, but that he may ſtill cheriſh 'expectation: but this deprives us of 'all ſuch comfort; nor can any thing 'but time alone leſſen it. This how-'ever, in moſt minds, is ſure to work 'a ſlow but effectual remedy; ſo did 'it in mine; for within a twelve-'month I was entirely reconciled to 'my fortune, and ſoon after abſolute-'ly forgot the object of a paſſion from 'which I had promiſed myſelf ſuch ex-'treme happineſs, and in the diſap-'pointment of which I had experi-'enced ſuch inconceivable miſery.

'At the expiration of the month, I 'returned to my garriſon at Exeter; 'where I was no ſooner arrived, than 'I was ordered to march into the 'north, to oppoſe a force there levied 'by the Earls of Cheſter and Northum-'berland. We came to York, where 'his majeſty pardoned the heads of 'the rebels, and very ſeverely puniſh-'ed ſome who were leſs guilty. It 'was particularly my lot to be ordered 'to ſeize a poor man, who had never 'been out of his houſe, and convey 'him to priſon. I deteſted this bar-'barity, yet was obliged to execute 'it; nay, though no reward would 'have bribed me in a private capacity 'to have acted ſuch a part, yet ſo 'much ſanctity is there in the com-'mands of a monarch, or general to 'a ſoldier, that I performed it with-'out reluctance; nor had the tears of 'his wife and family any prevalence 'with me.

'But this, which was a very ſmall 'piece of miſchief in compariſon with 'many of my barbarities afterwards, 'was, however, the only one which 'ever gave me any uneaſineſs; for 'when the king led us afterward into 'Northumberland to revenge thoſe 'people's having joined with Oſborn 'the Dane in his invaſion, and orders 'were given us to commit what ra-'vages we could, I was forward in 'fulfilling them; and, among ſome 'leſſer cruelties, (I remember it yet 'with ſorrow) I raviſhed a woman, 'murdered a little infant playing in 'her lap, and then burnt her houſe. 'In ſhort, (for I have no pleaſure in 'this part of my relation) I had my 'ſhare in all the cruelties exerciſed on 'thoſe poor wretches; which were ſo 'grievous, that for ſixty miles toge-'ther, between York and Durham, 'not a ſingle houſe, church, or any 'other publick or private edifice was 'left ſtanding.

'We had pretty well devoured the 'country, when we were ordered to 'march to the Iſle of Ely, to oppoſe 'Hereward, a bold and ſtout ſoldier, 'who had under him a very large body 'of rebels, who had the impudence 'to riſe againſt their king and con-'queror (I talk now in the ſame ſtyle 'I did then) in defence of their liber-'ties, as they called them. Theſe 'were ſoon ſubdued: but as I hap-'pened (more to my glory than my 'comfort) to be poſted in that part 'through which Hereward cut his 'way, I received a dreadful cut on 'the forehead, a ſecond on the ſhoul-'der, and was run through the body 'with a pike.

'I languiſhed a long time with theſe

'wounds, which made me incapable 'of attending the king into Scotland. 'However, I was able to go over with 'him afterwards into Normandy, in 'his expedition againſt Philip, who 'had taken the opportunity of the 'troubles in England, to invade that 'province. Thoſe few Normans who 'had ſurvived their wounds, and had 'remained in the Iſle of Ely, were all 'of our nation who went, the reſt of 'his army being all compoſed of Eng-'liſh. In a ſkirmiſh near the town of 'Mans, my leg was broke, and ſo 'ſhattered that it was forced to be cut 'off.

'I was now diſabled for ſerving 'longer in the army, and accordingly 'being diſcharged from the ſervice, I re-'tired to the place of my nativity, where 'in extreme poverty, and frequent bad 'health from the many wounds I had 'received, I dragged on a miſerable 'life to the age of ſixty-three; my 'only pleaſure being to recount the 'feats of my youth, in which narra-'tives I generally exceeded the truth.

'It would be tedious and unpleaſant 'to recount to you the ſeveral miſeries I 'ſuffered after my return to Caen; let 'it ſuffice, they were ſo terrible, that 'they induced Minos to compaſſionate 'me, and, notwithſtanding the barba-'rities I had been guilty of in Nor-'thumberland, to ſuffer me to go once 'more back to earth.'

CHAP. XXII.

WHAT HAPPENED TO JULIAN IN THE PERSON OF A TAYLOR.

'FORTUNE now ſtationed me 'in a character, which the in-'gratitude of mankind hath put them 'on ridiculing, though they owe to it 'not only a relief from the inclemen-'cies of cold, to which they would 'otherwiſe be expoſed, but likewiſe 'a conſiderable ſatisfaction of their 'vanity. The character I mean, was 'that of a taylor; which, if we con-'ſider it with due attention, muſt be 'confeſſed to have in it great dignity 'and importance. For, in reality, who 'conſtitutes the different degrees be-'tween men but the taylor? The 'prince, indeed, gives the title, but *it is 'the taylor who makes the man.* To 'his labours are owing the reſpect of 'crowds, and the awe which great 'men inſpire into their beholders; 'though theſe are too often unjuſtly 'attributed to other motives. Laſtly, 'the admiration of the fair is moſt 'commonly to be placed to his ac-'count.

'I was juſt ſet up in my trade, when 'I made three ſuits of fine cloaths for 'King Stephen's coronation. I queſ-'tion whether the perſon who wears 'the rich coat, hath ſo much pleaſure 'and vanity in being admired in it, as 'we taylors have from that admiration; 'and perhaps a philoſopher would ſay, 'he is not ſo well entitled to it. I 'buſtled on the day of the ceremony 'through the crowd, and it was with 'incredible delight, I heard ſeveral 'ſay, as my cloaths walked by, "Bleſs 'me, was ever any thing ſo fine as 'the Earl of Devonſhire! Sure he 'and Sir Hugh Bigot are the two beſt 'dreſſed men I ever ſaw." Now 'both thoſe ſuits were of my making.

'There would, indeed, be infinite 'pleaſure in working for the courtiers, 'as they are generally genteel men, 'and ſhew one's cloaths to the beſt ad-'vantage, was it not for one ſmall 'diſcouragement; this is, that they 'never pay. I ſolemnly proteſt, though 'I loſt almoſt as much by the court in 'my life as I got by the city, I never 'carried a ſuit into the latter with 'half the ſatisfaction which I have 'done to the former; though from 'that I was certain of ready-money, 'and from this almoſt as certain of 'no money at all.

'Courtiers may, however, be di-'vided into two ſorts, very eſſentially 'different from each other; into thoſe 'who never intend to pay for their 'cloaths; and thoſe who do intend 'to pay for them, but never hap-'pen to be able. Of the latter ſort, 'are many of thoſe young gentlemen 'whom we equip out for the army, 'and who are, unhappily for us, cut 'off before they arrive at preferment. 'This is the reaſon that taylors in time 'of war are miſtaken for politicians, 'by their inquiſitiveneſs into the event 'of battles, one campaign very often 'proving the ruin of half a dozen of 'us. I am ſure I had frequent reaſon 'to curſe that fatal battle of Cardi-'gan, where the Welch defeated ſome

'of

of King Stephen's beſt troops, and where many a good ſuit of mine, unpaid for, fell to the ground.

'The gentlemen of this honourable calling have fared much better in later ages than when I was of it; for now it ſeems the faſhion is, when they apprehend their cuſtomer is not in the beſt circumſtances, if they are not paid as ſoon as they carry home the ſuit, they charge him in their book as much again as it is worth, and then ſend a gentleman with a ſmall ſcrip of parchment to demand the money. If this be not immediately paid, the gentleman takes the beau with him to his houſe, where he locks him up till the taylor is contented: but in my time, theſe ſcrips of parchment were not in uſe; and if the beau diſliked paying for his cloaths, as very often happened, we had no method of compelling him.

'In ſeveral of the characters which I have related to you, I apprehend I have ſometimes forgot myſelf, and conſidered myſelf as really intereſted, as I was when I perſonated them on earth. I have juſt now caught myſelf in the fact; for I have complained to you as bitterly of my cuſtomers as I formerly uſed to do when I was the taylor: but, in reality, though there were ſome few perſons of very great quality, and ſome others, who never paid their debts, yet thoſe were but a few, and I had a method of repairing this loſs. My cuſtomers I divided under three heads; thoſe who paid ready-money, thoſe who paid ſlow, and thoſe who never paid at all. The firſt of theſe I conſidered apart by themſelves, as perſons by whom I got a certain but ſmall profit; the two laſt I lumped together, making thoſe who paid ſlow, contribute to repair my loſſes by thoſe who did not pay at all. Thus, upon the whole, I was a very inconſiderable loſer, and might have left a fortune to my family, had I not launched forth into expences which ſwallowed up all my gains. I had a wife and two children: theſe, indeed, I kept frugally enough, for I half ſtarved them; but I kept a miſtreſs in a finer way, for whom I had a country-houſe, pleaſantly ſituated on the Thames, elegantly fitted up, and neatly furniſhed. This woman might, very properly, be called my miſtreſs, for ſhe was moſt abſolutely ſo; and though her tenure was no higher than by my will, ſhe domineered as tyrannically as if my chains had been rivetted in the ſtrongeſt manner. To all this I ſubmitted, not through any adoration of her beauty, which was, indeed, but indifferent. Her charms conſiſted in little wantoneſſes, which ſhe knew admirably well to uſe in hours of dalliance, and which, I believe, are, of all things, the moſt delightful to a lover.

'She was ſo profuſely extravagant, that it ſeemed as if ſhe had an actual intent to ruin me. This I am ſure of, if ſuch had been her real intention, ſhe could have taken no properer way to accompliſh it; nay, I myſelf might appear to have had the ſame view; for, beſides this extravagant miſtreſs, and my country-houſe, I kept likewiſe a brace of hunters, rather for that it was faſhionable ſo to do, than for any great delight I took in the ſport, which I very little attended; not for want of leiſure, for few noblemen had ſo much: all the work I ever did was taking meaſure, and that only of my greateſt and beſt cuſtomers. I ſcarce ever cut a piece of cloth in my life, nor was, indeed, much more able to faſhion a coat than any gentleman in the kingdom: this made a ſkilful ſervant too neceſſary to me; he knew I muſt ſubmit to any terms with, or any treatment from him; he knew it was eaſier for him to find another ſuch a taylor as me, than for me to procure ſuch another workman as him; for this reaſon, he exerted the moſt notorious and cruel tyranny, ſeldom giving me a civil word; nor could the utmoſt condeſcenſion on my ſide, though attended with continual preſents and rewards, and raiſing his wages, content or pleaſe him. In a word, he was as abſolutely my maſter, as was ever an ambitious, induſtrious prime-miniſter over an indolent and voluptuous king: all my other journeymen paid more reſpect to him than to me; for they conſidered my favour as a neceſſary conſequence of obtaining his.

'Theſe were the moſt remarkable

'occurrences while I acted this part. Minos hesitated a few moments, and then bid me get back again, without assigning any reason.'

CHAP. XXIII.

THE LIFE OF ALDERMAN JULIAN.

'I Now revisited England, and was born at London; my father was one of the magistrates of that city: he had eleven children, of whom I was the eldest. He had great success in trade, and grew extremely rich; but the largeness of his family rendered it impossible for him to leave me a fortune sufficient to live well on, independent of business. I was accordingly brought up to be a fishmonger; in which capacity I myself afterwards acquired very considerable wealth.

'The same disposition of mind, which in princes is called ambition, is in subjects named faction. To this temper I was greatly addicted from my youth. I was, while a boy, a great partizan of Prince John's against his brother Richard, during the latter's absence in the Holy War, and in his captivity. I was no more than one and twenty when I first began to make political speeches in publick, and to endeavour to foment disquietude and discontent in the city. As I was pretty well qualified for this office by a great fluency of words, an harmonious accent, a graceful delivery, and, above all, an invincible assurance, I had soon acquired some reputation among the younger citizens, and some of the weaker and more inconsiderate of a riper age. This co-operating with my own natural vanity, made me extravagantly proud and supercilious; I soon began to esteem myself a man of some consequence, and to overlook persons every way my superiors.

'The famous Robin Hood, and his companion Little John, at this time made a considerable figure in Yorkshire. I took upon me to write a letter to the former, in the name of the city, inviting him to come to London, where I assured him of very good reception, signifying to him my own great weight and consequence, and how much I had disposed the citizens in his favour. Whether he received this letter or no, I am not certain; but he never gave me any answer to it.

'A little afterwards, one William Fitz-Osborn, or, as he was nicknamed, William Long-Beard, began to make a figure in the city. He was a bold and an impudent fellow, and had raised himself to great popularity with the rabble, by pretending to espouse their cause against the rich. I took this man's part, and made a publick oration in his favour, setting him forth as a patriot, and one who had embarked in the cause of liberty; for which service he did not receive me with the acknowledgments I expected. However, as I thought I should easily gain the ascendant over this fellow, I continued still firm on his side, till the Archbishop of Canterbury, with an armed force, put an end to his progress; for he was seized in Bow church, where he had taken refuge, and, with nine of his accomplices, hanged in chains.

'I escaped narrowly myself; for I was seized in the same church with the rest, and as I had been very considerably engaged in the enterprize, the archbishop was inclined to make me an example; but my father's merit, who had advanced a considerable sum to Queen Eleanor towards the king's ransom, preserved me.

'The consternation my danger had occasioned, kept me some time quiet, and I applied myself very assiduously to my trade. I invented all manner of methods to enhance the price of fish, and made use of my utmost endeavours to engross as much of the business as possible in my own hands. By these means I acquired a substance, which raised me to some little consequence in the city; but, far from elevating me to that degree which I had formerly flattered myself with possessing, at a time when I was totally insignificant; for in a trading society, money must at least lay the foundation of all power and interest.

'But, as it hath been remarked, that the same ambition which sent Alexander into Asia, brings the wrestler on the Green; and as this same ambition is as incapable as quicksilver of lying still,

'ſtill, ſo I, who was poſſeſſed, perhaps, of a ſhare equal to what hath fired the blood of any of the heroes of antiquity, was no leſs reſtleſs, and diſcontented with eaſe and quiet. My firſt endeavours were to make myſelf head of my company, which Richard I. had juſt eſtabliſhed, and ſoon afterwards I procured myſelf to be choſen alderman.

'Oppoſition is the only ſtate which can give a ſubject an opportunity of exerting the diſpoſition I was poſſeſſed of. Accordingly, King John was no ſooner ſeated on his throne, than I began to oppoſe his meaſures, whether right or wrong. It is true, that monarch had faults enough. He was ſo abandoned to luſt and luxury, that he addicted himſelf to the moſt extravagant exceſſes in both, while he indolently ſuffered the King of France to rob him of almoſt all his foreign dominions: my oppoſition, therefore, was juſtifiable enough; and if my motive from within had been as good as the occaſion from without, I ſhould have had little to excuſe; but, in truth, I ſought nothing but my own preferment, by making myſelf formidable to the king, and then ſelling to him the intereſt of that party by whoſe means I had become ſo. Indeed, had the publick good been my care, however zealouſly I might have oppoſed the beginning of his reign, I ſhould not have ſcrupled to lend him my utmoſt aſſiſtance in the ſtruggle between him and Pope Innocent the Third, in which he was ſo manifeſtly in the right; nor have ſuffered the inſolence of that Pope, and the power of the King of France, to have compelled him, in the iſſue, baſely to reſign his crown into the hands of the former, and receive it again as a vaſſal; by means of which acknowledgment the Pope afterwards claimed this kingdom as a tributary fief to be held of the Papal chair; a claim which occaſioned great uneaſineſs to many ſubſequent princes, and brought numberleſs calamities on the nation.

'As the king had, among other conceſſions, ſtipulated to pay an immediate ſum of money to Pandulph, which he had great difficulty to raiſe, it was abſolutely neceſſary for him to apply to the city, where my intereſt 'and popularity were ſo high, that he 'had no hopes without any aſſiſtance. 'As I knew this, I took care to ſell 'myſelf and country as high as poſſible. The terms I demanded, therefore, were a place, a penſion, and a 'knighthood. All thoſe were immediately conſented to. I was forthwith 'knighted, and promiſed the other 'two.

'I now mounted the huſtings, and, 'without any regard to decency or 'modeſty, made as emphatical a ſpeech 'in favour of the king as before I had 'done againſt him. In this ſpeech I 'juſtified all thoſe meaſures which I 'had before condemned, and pleaded 'as earneſtly with my fellow-citizens 'to open their purſes, as I had formerly done to prevail with them to 'keep them ſhut. But, alas! my 'rhetorick had not the effect I propoſed. The conſequence of my arguments was only contempt to myſelf. The people at firſt ſtared on 'one another, and afterwards began 'unanimouſly to expreſs their diſlike. 'An impudent fellow among them, 'reflecting on my trade, cried out— "*Stinking fiſh!*" which was immediately reiterated through the whole 'crowd. I was then forced to ſlink 'away home; but I was not able to 'accompliſh my retreat without being 'attended by the mob, who huzzaed 'me along the ſtreet with the repeated 'cries of "*Stinking fiſh!*"

'I now proceeded to court, to inform his majeſty of my faithful ſervice, and how much I had ſuffered 'in his cauſe. I found, by my firſt 'reception, he had already heard of 'my ſucceſs. Inſtead of thanking me 'for my ſpeech, he ſaid the city ſhould 'repent of their obſtinacy, for that he 'would ſhew them who he was; and, 'ſo ſaying, he immediately turned 'that part to me to which the toe of 'man hath ſo wonderful an affection, 'that it is very difficult, whenever it 'preſents itſelf conveniently, to keep 'our toes from the moſt violent and 'ardent ſalutation of it.

'I was a little nettled at this behaviour, and with ſome earneſtneſs 'claimed the king's fulfilling his promiſe; but he retired without anſwering me. I then applied to ſome of 'the courtiers, who had lately profeſſed great friendſhip to me, had eat

'at

'at my houſe, and invited me to theirs; 'but not one would return me any 'anſwer, all running away from me, 'as if I had been ſeized with ſome 'contagious diſtemper. I now found 'by experience, that, as none can be 'ſo civil, ſo none can be ruder, than 'a courtier.

'A few moment's after the king's 'retiring, I was left alone in the room 'to conſider what I ſhould do, or 'whither I ſhould turn myſelf. My 'reception in the city promiſed itſelf 'to be equal at leaſt with what I found 'at court. However, there was my 'home, and thither it was neceſſary I 'ſhould retreat for the preſent.

'But, indeed, bad as I apprehended 'my treatment in the city would be, 'it exceeded my expectation. I rode 'home on an ambling pad through 'crowds, who expreſſed every kind of 'diſregard and contempt; pelting me 'not only with the moſt abuſive lan-'guage, but with dirt. However, 'with much difficulty, I arrived at laſt 'at my own houſe, with my bones 'whole, but covered over with filth.

'When I was got within my doors, 'and had ſhut them againſt the mob, 'who had pretty well vented their 'ſpleen, and ſeemed now contented to 'retire, my wife, whom I found cry-'ing over her children, and from whom 'I hoped ſome comfort in my afflic-'tions, fell upon me in the moſt out-'rageous manner: ſhe aſked me why 'I would venture on ſuch a ſtep, with-'out conſulting her; ſhe ſaid her ad-'vice might have been civilly aſked, 'if I was reſolved not to have been 'guided by it; that whatever opi-'nion I might have conceived of her 'underſtanding, the reſt of the world 'thought better of it; that I had 'never failed when I had aſked her 'counſel, nor ever ſucceeded without 'it; with much more of the ſame 'kind, too tedious to mention: con-'cluding, that it was a monſtrous be-'haviour to deſert my party and come 'over to the court. An abuſe which 'I took worſe than all the reſt, as ſhe 'had been conſtantly for ſeveral years 'aſſiduous in railing at the Oppoſition, 'in ſiding with the court-party, and 'begging me to come over to it; and 'eſpecially after my mentioning the 'offer of knighthood to her, ſince 'which time ſhe had continually in-'terrupted my repoſe, with dinning 'in my ears the folly of refuſing ho-'nours, and of adhering to a party 'and to principles, by which I was 'certain of procuring no advantage 'to myſelf and my family.

'I had now entirely loſt my trade, 'ſo that I had not the leaſt temptation 'to ſtay longer in a city where I was 'certain of receiving daily affronts 'and rebukes: I therefore made up 'my affairs with the utmoſt expedi-'tion, and ſcraping together all I 'could, retired into the country, where 'I ſpent the remainder of my days in 'univerſal contempt, being ſhunned 'by every body, perpetually abuſed 'by my wife, and not much reſpected 'by my children.

'Minos told me, though I had been 'a very vile fellow, he thought my 'ſufferings made ſome atonement, and 'ſo bid me take the other trial.'

CHAP. XXIV.

JULIAN RECOUNTS WHAT HAPPENED TO HIM WHILE HE WAS A POET.

'ROME was now the ſeat of my 'nativity, where I was born of 'a family more remarkable for honour 'than riches. I was intended for the 'church, and had a pretty good edu-'cation: but my father dying while I 'was young, and leaving me nothing, '(for he had waſted his whole patri-'mony) I was forced to enter myſelf 'in the order of mendicants.

'When I was at ſchool I had a 'knack of rhiming, which I unhap-'pily miſtook for genius, and in-'dulged to my coſt; for my verſes 'drew on me only ridicule, and I was 'in contempt called *The poet*.

'This humour purſued me through 'my life. My firſt compoſition after 'I left ſchool, was a panegyrick on 'Pope Alexander IV. who then pre-'tended a project of dethroning the 'King of Sicily. On this ſubject I 'compoſed a poem of about fifteen 'thouſand lines, which, with much 'difficulty, I got to be preſented to 'his holineſs, of whom I expected 'great preferment as my reward; but 'I was cruelly diſappointed; for when 'I had waited a year without hearing

'any

'any of the commendations I had flattered myself with receiving, and being now able to contain no longer, I applied to a Jesuit who was my relation, and had the Pope's ear, to know what his holiness's opinion was of my work, he coldly answered me, that he was at that time busied in concerns of too much importance to attend the reading of poems.

'However dissatisfied I might be, and really was, with this reception, and however angry I was with the Pope, for whose understanding I entertained an immoderate contempt, I was not yet discouraged from a second attempt: accordingly, I soon after produced another work, intituled, The Trojan Horse. This was an allegorical work, in which the church was introduced into the world, in the same manner as that machine had been into Troy. The priests were the soldiers in it's belly, and the Heathen superstition the city to be destroyed by them. This poem was written in Latin. I remember some of the lines.

"*Mundanos scandit fatalis machina muros,*
"*Farta sacerdotum turmis: exinde per al-*
"*vum*
"*Visi exire omnes, magno cum murmure*
"*clientes.*
"*Non aliter quam cum humanis furibundus*
"*ab antris*
"*It sonus, & nares simul aura invadit bi-*
"*antes.*
"*Mille scatent et mille alii; trepidare ti-*
"*more*
"*Ethnica gens cœpit: falsi per inane vo-*
"*lantes*
"*Effugere dei—desertaque templa relin-*
"*quunt.*
"*Jam magnum crepituit equus, mox orbis*
"*& ahi*
"*Ingemuere poli: tunc tu pater, ultimus*
"*omnium*
"*Maxime Alexander, ventrem maturus*
"*equinum*
"*Deseris, heu prolis meliori digne parente.*"

I believe Julian, had I not stopped him, would have gone through the whole poem; (for, as I observed, in most of the characters he related the affections he had enjoyed while he personated them on earth, still made some impression on him) but I begged him to omit the sequel of the poem, and proceed with his history. He then recollected himself, and smiling at the observation, which by intuition he perceived I had made, continued his narration as follows.

'I confess to you,' says he, 'that 'the delight in repeating our own 'works is so predominant in a poet, 'that I find nothing can totally root it 'out of the soul. Happy would it be 'for those persons, if their hearers 'could be delighted in the same manner: but, alas! hence that *ingens solitudo* complained of by Horace; for 'the vanity of mankind is so much 'greedier and more general than their 'avarice, that no beggar is so ill received by them as he who solicits 'their praise.

'This I sufficiently experienced in 'the character of a poet; for my company was shunned (I believe on this 'account chiefly) by my whole house; 'nay, there were few who would submit to hearing me read my poetry, 'even at the price of sharing in my provisions. The only person who 'gave me audience was a brother poet; 'he, indeed, fed me with commendation very liberally: but as I was 'forced to hear and commend in my 'turn, I perhaps bought his attention 'dear enough.

'Well, Sir, if my expectations of 'the reward I hoped from my first 'poem had baulked me, I had now still 'greater reason to complain; for, instead of being preferred or commended for the second, I was enjoined a 'very severe penance by my superior, 'for ludicrously comparing the Pope 'to a fart. My poetry was now the 'jest of every company, except some 'few, who spoke of it with detestation; and I found that, instead of 'recommending me to preferment, it 'had effectually barred me from all 'probability of attaining it.

'These discouragements had now 'induced me to lay down my pen and 'write no more. But, as Juvenal 'says—

"*—— Si discedas, laquèo tenet ambitiosi*
"*Consuetudo mali.*"

'I was an example of the truth of 'this assertion; for I soon betook myself again to my muse: indeed, a 'poet hath the same happiness with a 'man who is deservingly fond of an

'ugly

'ugly woman; the one enjoys his 'muſe, and the other his miſtreſs, with 'a pleaſure very little abated by the 'eſteem of the world, and only under-'values their taſte for not correſpond-'ing with his own.

'It is unneceſſary to mention any 'more of my poems, they had all the 'ſame fate; and though in reality 'ſome of my latter pieces deſerved (I 'may now ſpeak it without the impu-'tation of vanity) a better ſucceſs, 'as I had the character of a bad wri-'ter, I found it impoſſible ever to ob-'tain the reputation of a good one. 'Had I poſſeſſed the merit of Homer, 'I could have hoped for no applauſe, 'ſince it muſt have been a profound 'ſecret; for no one would now read a 'ſyllable of my writings.

'The poets of my age were, as I 'believe you know, not very famous: 'however, there was one in ſome cre-'dit at that time, though I have the 'conſolation to know his works are all 'periſhed long ago. The malice, en-'vy, and hatred, I bore this man, are 'inconceivable to any but an author, 'and an unſucceſsful one; I never 'could bear to hear him well ſpoken 'of, and writ anonymous ſatires 'againſt him, though I had received 'obligations from him; indeed, I be-'lieve it would have been an abſolute 'impoſſibility for him at any rate to 'have made me ſincerely his friend.

'I have heard an obſervation which 'was made by ſome one of later days, 'that there are no worſe men than bad 'authors. A remark of the ſame 'kind hath been made on ugly wo-'men, and the truth of both ſtands 'on one and the ſame reaſon, viz. that 'they are both tainted with that curſed 'and deteſtable vice of envy; which, 'as it is the greateſt torment to the 'mind it inhabits, ſo is it capable of 'introducing into it a total corruption, 'and of inſpiring it to the commiſſion 'of the moſt horrid crimes imagi-'nable.

'My life was but ſhort; for I ſoon 'pined myſelf to death with the vice I 'juſt now mentioned. Minos told 'me I was infinitely too bad for Ely-'ſium; and as for the other place, the 'devil had ſworn he would never en-'tertain a poet for Orpheus's ſake: ſo 'I was forced to return again to the 'place from whence I came.'

CHAP. XXV.

JULIAN PERFORMS THE PARTS OF A KNIGHT AND A DANCING-MASTER.

'I Now mounted the ſtage in Sicily, 'and became a knight-templar; 'but as my adventures differ ſo little 'from thoſe I have recounted you in 'the character of a common ſoldier, I 'ſhall not tire you with repetition. 'The ſoldier and the captain differ in 'reality ſo little from one another, 'that it requires an accurate judgment 'to diſtinguiſh them; the latter wears 'finer cloaths, and in time of ſucceſs 'lives ſomewhat more delicately; but, 'as to every thing elſe, they very nearly 'reſemble one another.

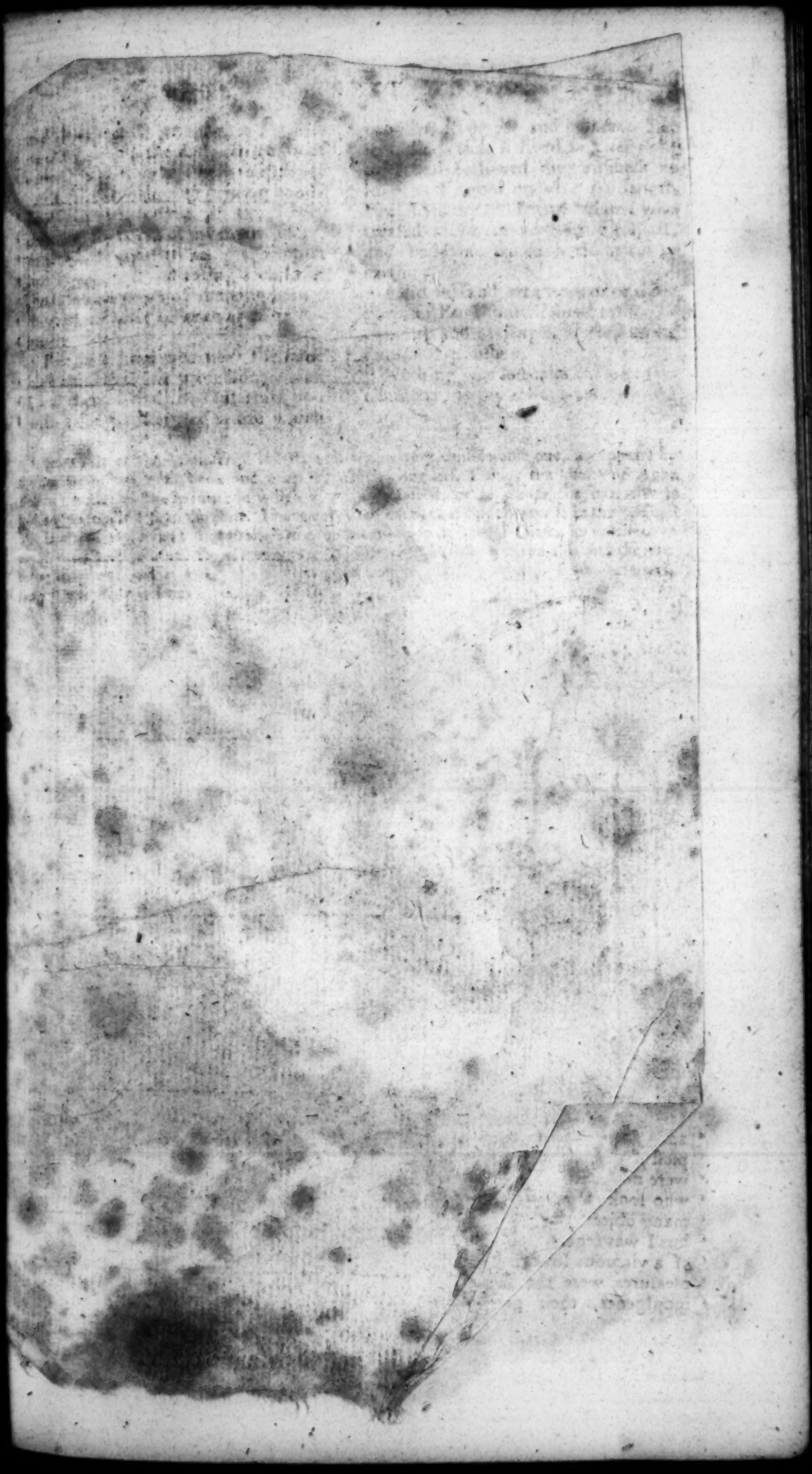
'My next ſtep was into France, 'where fortune aſſigned me the part 'of a dancing-maſter. I was ſo ex-'pert in my profeſſion, that I was 'brought to court in my youth, and 'had the heels of Philip de Valois, 'who afterwards ſucceeded Charles 'the Fair, committed to my direc-'tion.

'I do not remember, that in any of 'the characters in which I appeared 'on earth, I ever aſſumed to myſelf a 'greater dignity, or thought myſelf 'of more real importance than now. 'I looked on dancing as the greateſt 'excellence of human nature, and on 'myſelf as the greateſt proficient in it; 'and, indeed, this ſeemed to be the 'general opinion of the whole court; 'for I was the chief inſtructor of the 'youth of both ſexes, whoſe merit 'was almoſt entirely defined by the 'advances they made in that ſcience 'which I had the honour to profeſs. 'As to myſelf, I was ſo fully per-'ſuaded of this truth, that I not only 'ſlighted and deſpiſed thoſe who were 'ignorant of dancing, but I thought 'the higheſt character I could give of 'any man, was, that he made a grace-'ful bow; for want of which accom-'pliſhment, I had a ſovereign con-'tempt for many perſons of learning; 'nay, for ſome officers of the army, 'and a few even of the courtiers them-'ſelves.

'Though ſo little of my youth had 'been thrown away in what they call 'literature, that I could hardly write

'and

Plate II. Published as the Act directs by Harrison & C.° June 21.1783.



'and read, yet I compoſed a Treatiſe 'on Education; the firſt rudiments of 'which, as I taught, were to inſtruct 'a child in the ſcience of coming hand-'ſomely into a room. In this I cor-'rected many faults of my predeceſſors, 'particularly that of being too much 'in a hurry, and inſtituting a child in 'the ſublimer parts of dancing before 'they are capable of *making their ho-'nours*.

'But as I have not now the ſame 'high opinion of my profeſſion, which 'I had then, I ſhall not entertain you 'with a long hiſtory of a life which 'conſiſted of *borées* and *coupées*. Let 'it ſuffice, that I lived to a very old 'age, and followed my buſineſs as 'long as I could crawl. At length 'I reviſited my old friend Minos, who 'treated me with very little reſpect, 'and bade me dance back again to 'earth.

'I did ſo, and was now once more 'born an Engliſhman, bred up to the 'church, and at length arrived at the 'ſtation of a biſhop.

'Nothing was ſo remarkable in this 'character, as my always voting —*.'

* Here part of the Manuſcript is loſt, and that a very conſiderable one, as appears by the number of the next book and chapter, which contains, I find, the hiſtory of Anna Boleyn; but as to the manner in which it was introduced, or to whom the narrative is told, we are totally left in the dark. I have only to remark, that this chapter is in the original writ in a woman's hand; and though the obſervations in it are, I think, as excellent as any in the whole volume, there ſeems to be a difference in ſtile between this and the preceding chapters; and as it is the character of a woman which is related, I am inclined to fancy it was really written by one of that ſex.

A

JOURNEY

FROM

THIS WORLD TO THE NEXT.

BOOK XIX.

CHAP. VII.

WHEREIN ANNA BOLEYN RELATES THE HISTORY OF HER LIFE.

'I Am going now truly to 'recount a life, which, 'from the time of it's 'ceaſing, has been, in the 'other world, the con-'tinual ſubject of the 'cavils of contending parties; the one 'making me as black as hell, the other 'as pure and innocent as the inhabi-'tants of this bleſſed place; the miſt 'of prejudice blinding their eyes, and 'zeal for what they themſelves profeſs 'making every thing appear in that 'light which they think moſt conduces 'to it's honour.

'My infancy was ſpent in my fa-'ther's houſe, in thoſe childiſh plays 'which are moſt ſuitable to that ſtate, 'and I think this was one of the hap-'pieſt parts of my life; for my parents 'were not among the number of thoſe 'who look upon their children as ſo 'many objects of a tyrannick power; 'but I was regarded as the dear pledge 'of a virtuous love, and all my little 'pleaſures were thought, from their 'indulgence, their greateſt delight.

'At ſeven years old, I was carried 'into France with the king's ſiſter, 'who was married to the French king, 'where I lived with a perſon of quality, 'who was an acquaintance of my fa-'ther's. I ſpent my time in learning 'thoſe things neceſſary to give young 'perſons of faſhion a polite education, 'and did neither good nor evil, but day 'paſſed after day in the ſame eaſy way, 'till I was fourteen; then began my 'anxiety, my vanity grew ſtrong, and 'my heart fluttered with joy at every 'compliment paid to my beauty; and 'as the lady with whom I lived was 'of a gay chearful diſpoſition, ſhe 'kept a great deal of company, and 'my youth and charms made me the 'continual object of their admiration. 'I paſſed ſome little time in thoſe ex-'ulting raptures which are felt by 'every woman perfectly ſatisfied with 'herſelf, and with the behaviour of 'others towards her: I was, when 'very young, promoted to be maid of 'honour to her majeſty. The court 'was frequented by a young noble-'man, whoſe beauty was the chief 'ſubject of converſation in all aſſem-'blies of ladies. The delicacy of his 'perſon, added to a great ſoftneſs in 'his manner, gave every thing he ſaid 'and did ſuch an air of tenderneſs,

'that

'that every woman he ſpoke to flat-
'tered herſelf with being the object of
'his love. I was one of thoſe who
'was vain enough of my own charms
'to hope to make a conqueſt of him
'whom the whole court ſighed for; I
'now thought every other object be-
'low my notice: yet the only pleaſure
'I propoſed to myſelf in this deſign,
'was the triumphing over that heart
'which I plainly ſaw all the ladies of
'the higheſt quality and the greateſt
'beauty would have been proud of
'poſſeſſing. I was yet too young to
'be very artful, but nature, without
'any aſſiſtance, ſoon diſcovers to a
'man, who is uſed to gallantry, a
'woman's deſire to be liked by him,
'whether that deſire ariſes from any
'particular choice ſhe makes of him,
'or only from vanity. He ſoon per-
'ceived my thoughts, and gratified my
'utmoſt wiſhes, by conſtantly prefer-
'ring me before all other women, and
'exerting his utmoſt gallantry and ad-
'dreſs to engage my affections. This
'ſudden happineſs, which I then
'thought the greateſt I could have
'had, appeared viſible in all my ac-
'tions; I grew ſo gay, and ſo full of
'vivacity, that it made my perſon ap-
'pear ſtill to a better advantage; all
'my acquaintance pretended to be
'fonder of me than ever, though,
'young as I was, I plainly ſaw it was
'but pretence, for through all their
'endeavours to the contrary, envy
'would often break forth in ſly inſi-
'nuations and malicious ſneers, which
'gave me freſh matter of triumph,
'and frequent opportunities of in-
'ſulting them, which I never let ſlip,
'for now firſt my female heart grew
'ſenſible of the ſpiteful pleaſure of
'ſeeing another languiſh for what I
'enjoyed. Whilſt I was in the height
'of my happineſs, her majeſty fell ill
'of a languiſhing diſtemper, which
'obliged her to go into the country
'for the change of air; my place made
'it neceſſary for me to attend her, and
'which way he brought it about I
'cannot imagine, but my young hero
'found means to be one of that ſmall
'train that waited on my royal miſ-
'treſs, although ſhe went as privately
'as poſſible. Hitherto all the inter-
'views I had ever had with him were
'in publick, and I only looked on
'him as the fitter object to feed that
'pride which had no other view but
'to ſhew it's power; but now the
'ſcene was quite changed: my rivals
'were all at a diſtance; the place we
'went to was as charming as the moſt
'agreeable natural ſituation, aſſiſted by
'the greateſt art, could make it; the
'pleaſant ſolitary walks, the ſinging
'of birds, the thouſand pretty roman-
'tick ſcenes this delightful place afford-
'ed, gave a ſudden turn to my mind,
'my whole ſoul was melted into ſoft-
'neſs, and all my vanity was fled.
'My ſpark was too much uſed to af-
'fairs of this nature, not to perceive
'this change; at firſt the profuſe
'tranſports of his joy made me be-
'lieve him wholly mine, and this be-
'lief gave me ſuch happineſs, that no
'language affords words to expreſs it,
'and can be only known to thoſe who
'have felt it: but this was of a very
'ſhort duration, for I ſoon found I
'had to do with one of thoſe men
'whoſe only end in the purſuit of a
'woman is to make her fall a victim
'to an inſatiable deſire to be admired.
'His deſigns had ſucceeded, and now
'he every day grew colder, and, as if
'by infatuation, my paſſion every day
'increaſed; and notwithſtanding all
'my reſolutions and endeavours to
'the contrary, my rage at the diſap-
'pointment at once both of my love
'and pride, and at the finding a paſ-
'ſion fixed in my breaſt I knew not
'how to conquer, broke out into that
'inconſiſtent behaviour which muſt
'always be the conſequence of violent
'paſſions: one moment I reproached
'him, the next I grew to tenderneſs,
'and blamed myſelf, and thought I
'fancied what was not true; he ſaw
'my ſtruggle, and triumphed in it;
'but as he had not witneſſes enough
'there of his victory, to give him the
'full enjoyment of it, he grew weary
'of the country, and returned to Pa-
'ris, and left me in a condition it is
'utterly impoſſible to deſcribe. My
'mind was like a city up in arms, all
'confuſion; and every new thought
'was a freſh diſturber of my peace.
'Sleep quite forſook me, and the
'anxiety I ſuffered threw me into a
'fever, which had like to have coſt
'me my life. With great care I
'recovered; but the violence of the
'diſtemper left ſuch a weakneſs on my
'body, that the diſturbance of my

'mind was greatly aſſuaged; and now 'I began to comfort myſelf in the re-'flection, that this gentleman's being 'a finiſhed coquet, was very likely 'the only thing could have preſerved 'me; for he was the only man from 'whom I was ever in any danger. 'By that time I was got tolerable well, 'we returned to Paris; and, I con-'feſs, I both wiſhed and feared to ſee 'this cauſe of all my pain; however, 'I hoped, by the help of my reſent-'ment, to be able to meet him with 'indifference. This employed my 'thoughts till our arrival. The next 'day, there was a very full court to 'congratulate the queen on her re-'covery; and amongſt the reſt, my 'love appeared dreſſed and adorned, as 'if he deſigned ſome new conqueſt. 'Inſtead of ſeeing a woman he deſpiſed 'and ſlighted, he approached me with 'that aſſured air which is common to 'ſucceſsful coxcombs. At the ſame 'time, I perceived I was ſurrounded 'by all thoſe ladies who were on his 'account my greateſt enemies; and in 'revenge, wiſhed for nothing more 'than to ſee me make a ridiculous fi-'gure. This ſituation ſo perplexed 'my thoughts, that when he came near 'enough to ſpeak to me, I fainted 'away in his arms. (Had I ſtudied 'which way I could gratify him moſt, 'it was impoſſible to have done any-'thing to have pleaſed him more.) 'Some that ſtood by, brought ſmell-'ing bottles, and uſed means for my 'recovery; and I was welcomed to re-'turning life, by all thoſe ill-natured 'repartees, which women, enraged by 'envy, are capable of venting. One 'cried, "Well, I never thought my "lord had any thing ſo frightful in "his perſon, or ſo fierce in his man-"ner, as to ſtrike a young lady dead "at the ſight of him."—"No, no," 'ſays another, "ſome ladies ſenſes are "more apt to be hurried by agreeable, "than diſagreeable objects." With 'many more ſuch ſort of ſpeeches, 'which ſhewed more malice than wit. 'This not being able to bear, trem-'bling, and with but juſt ſtrength 'enough to move, I crawled to my 'coach, and hurried home. When I 'was alone, and thought on what had 'happened to me in a publick court, 'I was at firſt driven to the utmoſt de-'ſpair; but afterwards, when I came 'to reflect, I believe this accident con-'tributed more to my being cured of 'my paſſion, than any other could 'have done. I began to think the 'only method to pique the man, who 'had uſed me ſo barbarouſly, and to 'be revenged on my ſpiteful rivals, 'was to recover that beauty, which 'was then languid, and had loſt it's 'luſtre, to let them ſee I had ſtill 'charms enough to engage as many 'lovers as I could deſire, and that I 'could yet rival them, who had thus 'cruelly inſulted me. Theſe pleaſing 'hopes revived my ſinking ſpirits, and 'worked a more effectual cure on me, 'than all the philoſophy and advice of 'the wiſeſt men could have done. I 'now employed all my time and care 'in adorning my perſon, and ſtudying 'the ſureſt means of engaging the af-'fections of others, while I myſelf 'continued quite indifferent; for I re-'ſolved for the future, if ever one ſoft 'thought made it's way to my heart, 'to fly the object of it, and by new 'lovers to drive the image from my 'breaſt. I conſulted my glaſs every 'morning, and got ſuch a command 'of my countenance, that I could ſuit 'it to the different taſtes of variety of 'lovers; and though I was young, for 'I was not yet above ſeventeen, yet 'my publick way of life gave me ſuch 'continual opportunities of converſing 'with men, and the ſtrong deſire I now 'had of pleaſing them, led me to make 'ſuch conſtant obſervations on every 'thing they ſaid or did, that I ſoon 'found out the different methods of 'dealing with them. I obſerved that 'moſt men generally liked in women 'what was moſt oppoſite to their own 'characters; therefore to the grave 'ſolid man of ſenſe, I endeavoured to 'appear ſprightly, and full of ſpirit; 'to the witty and gay, ſoft and lan-'guiſhing; to the amorous (for they 'want no increaſe of their paſſions) 'cold and reſerved; to the fearful and 'backward, warm and full of fire, 'and ſo of all the reſt. As to beaux, 'and all thoſe ſort of men, whoſe de-'ſires are centred in the ſatisfaction 'of their vanity, I had learned, by 'ſad experience, the only way to deal 'with them was to laugh at them, and 'let their own good opinion of them-'ſelves be the only ſupport of their 'hopes. I knew, while I could get

'other

'other followers, I was ſure of them; 'for the only ſign of modeſty they 'ever give, is that of not depending 'on their own judgments, but fol-'lowing the opinions of the greateſt 'number. Thus furniſhed with max-'ims, and grown wiſe by paſt errors, 'I in a manner begun the world again: 'I appeared in all publick places 'handſomer and more lively than ever, 'to the amazement of every one who 'ſaw me, and had heard of the affair 'between me and my lord. He him-'ſelf was much ſurprized, and vexed 'at this ſudden change, nor could he 'account how it was poſſible for me 'ſo ſoon to ſhake off thoſe chains he 'thought he had fixed on me for life, 'nor was he willing to loſe his con-'queſt in this manner. He endea-'voured by all means poſſible to talk 'to me again of love, but I ſtood fixed 'to my reſolution, (in which I was 'greatly aſſiſted by the crowd of ad-'mirers that daily ſurrounded me) 'never to let him explain himſelf: for, 'notwithſtanding all my pride, I found 'the firſt impreſſion the heart receives 'of love is ſo ſtrong, that it requires 'the moſt vigilant care to prevent a re-'lapſe. Now I lived three years in a 'conſtant round of diverſions, and 'was made the perfect idol of all the 'men that came to court of all ages, 'and all characters. I had ſeveral 'good matches offered me, but I 'thought none of them equal to my 'merit; and one of my greateſt plea-'ſures was to ſee thoſe women, who 'had pretended to rival me, often glad 'to marry thoſe whom I had refuſed. 'Yet notwithſtanding this great ſuc-'ceſs of my ſchemes, I cannot ſay I 'was perfectly happy; for every wo-'man that was taken the leaſt notice 'of, and every man that was inſenſible 'to my arts, gave me as much pain 'as all the reſt gave me pleaſure; and 'ſometimes little underhand plots, 'which were laid againſt my deſigns, 'would ſucceed in ſpite of my care; 'ſo that I really begun to grow weary 'of this manner of life, when my 'father returning from his embaſſy in 'France, took me home with him, 'and carried me to a little pleaſant 'country-houſe, where there was no-'thing grand or ſuperfluous, but every 'thing neat and agreeable; there I led 'a life perfectly ſolitary. At firſt, 'the time hung very heavy on my 'hands, and I wanted all kind of em-'ployment, and I had very like to have 'fallen into the height of the vapours, 'from no other reaſon but from want 'of knowing what to do with myſelf. 'But when I had lived here a little 'time, I found ſuch a calmneſs in my 'mind, and ſuch a difference between 'this and the reſtleſs anxieties I had 'experienced in a court, that I began 'to ſhare the tranquillity that viſibly 'appeared in every thing around me. 'I ſet myſelf to do works of fancy, 'and to raiſe little flower gardens, 'with many ſuch innocent rural amuſe-'ments; which, although they are not 'capable of affording any great plea-'ſure, yet they give that ſerene turn 'to the mind, which I think much 'preferable to any thing elſe human 'nature is made ſuſceptible of. I now 'reſolved to ſpend the reſt of my days 'here, and that nothing ſhould allure 'me from this ſweet retirement, to be 'again toſſed about with tempeſtuous 'paſſions of any kind. Whilſt I was 'in this ſituation, my Lord Peircy, 'the Earl of Northumberland's eldeſt 'ſon, by an accident of loſing his way 'after a fox-chace, was met by my 'father, about a mile from our houſe; 'he came home with him, only with 'a deſign of dining with us, but was 'ſo taken with me, that he ſtaid three 'days. I had too much experience in 'all affairs of this kind, not to ſee 'preſently the influence I had on him; 'but I was at that time ſo entirely 'free from all ambition, that even the 'proſpect of being a counteſs had no 'effect on me; and I then thought 'nothing in the world could have 'bribed me to have changed my way 'of life. This young lord, who was 'juſt in his bloom, found his paſſion 'ſo ſtrong, he could not endure a long 'abſence, but returned again in a 'week, and endeavoured by all the 'means he could think of, to engage 'me to return his affection. He ad-'dreſſed me with that tenderneſs and 'reſpect, which women on earth think 'can flow from nothing but real love; 'and very often told me, that unleſs 'he could be ſo happy, as by his aſſi-'duity and care to make himſelf agree-'able to me, although he knew my 'father would eagerly embrace any 'propoſal from him, yet he would

'ſuffer

'ſuffer that laſt of miſeries, of never 'ſeeing me more, rather than owe his 'own happineſs to any thing that 'might be the leaſt contradiction to 'my inclinations. This manner of 'proceeding had ſomething in it ſo 'noble and generous, that by degrees 'it raiſed a ſenſation in me, which I 'know not how to deſcribe, nor by 'what name to call it; it was nothing 'like my former paſſion, for there was 'no turbulence, no uneaſy waking 'nights attended it, but all I could 'with honour grant to oblige him, 'appeared to me to be juſtly due to 'his truth and love, and more the ef-'fect of gratitude, than of any deſire 'of my own. The character I had 'heard of him from my father, at my 'firſt returning to England, in diſ-'courſing of the young nobility, con-'vinced me, that if I was his wife, I 'ſhould have the perpetual ſatisfaction 'of knowing every action of his muſt 'be approved by all the ſenſible part 'of mankind; ſo that very ſoon I be-'gan to have no ſcruple left, but that 'of leaving my little ſcene of quiet-'neſs, and venturing again into the 'world. But this by his continual 'application, and ſubmiſſive beha-'viour, by degrees entirely vaniſhed, 'and I agreed he ſhould take his own 'time to break it to my father, whoſe 'conſent he was not long in obtain-'ing; for ſuch a match was by no 'means to be refuſed. There remain-'ed nothing now to be done, but to 'prevail with the Earl of Northum-'berland to comply with what his ſon 'ſo ardently deſired; for which pur-'poſe, he ſet out immediately for Lon-'don, and begged it as the greateſt 'favour, that I would accompany my 'father, who was alſo to go thither 'the week following. I could not re-'fuſe his requeſt, and as ſoon as we 'arrived in town, he flew to me with 'the greateſt raptures, to inform me 'his father was ſo good, that, finding 'his happineſs depended on his an-'ſwer, he had given him free leave to 'act in this affair as would beſt pleaſe 'himſelf, and that he had now no ob-'ſtacle to prevent his wiſhes. It was 'then the beginning of the winter, and 'the time for our marriage was fixed 'for the latter end of March; the con-'ſent of all parties made his acceſs to 'me very eaſy, and we converſed to-'gether both with innocence and plea-'ſure. As his fondneſs was ſo great, 'that he contrived all the methods 'poſſible to keep me continually in his 'ſight, he told me one morning, he 'was commanded by his father to at-'tend him to court that evening, and 'begged I would be ſo good as to 'meet him there. I was now ſo uſed 'to act as he would have me, that I 'made no difficulty of complying with 'his deſire. Two days after this, I 'was very much ſurprized at perceiving 'ſuch a melancholy in his counte-'nance, and alteration in his beha-'viour, as I could no way account 'for; but by importunity, at laſt, I 'got from him, that Cardinal Wolſey, 'for what reaſon he knew not, had 'peremptorily forbid him to think any 'more of me; and when he urged that 'his father was not diſpleaſed with it, 'the cardinal in his imperious manner 'anſwered him, he ſhould give his 'father ſuch convincing reaſons, why 'it would be attended with great in-'conveniences, that he was ſure he 'could bring him to be of his opinion. 'On which he turned from him, and 'gave him no opportunity of replying. 'I could not imagine what deſign the 'cardinal could have in intermeddling 'in this match, and I was ſtill more 'perplexed to find that my father 'treated my Lord Peircy with much 'more coldneſs than uſual; he too ſaw 'it, and we both wondered what could 'poſſibly be the cauſe of all this. But 'it was not long before the myſtery 'was all made clear by my father, 'who ſending for me one day into his 'chamber, let me into a ſecret which 'was as little wiſhed for as expected. 'He began with the ſurprizing effects 'of youth and beauty, and the mad-'neſs of letting go thoſe advantages 'they might procure us, till it was 'too late, when we might wiſh in vain 'to bring them back again. I ſtood 'amazed at this beginning; he ſaw 'my confuſion, and bid me ſit down 'and attend to what he was going to 'tell me, which was of the greateſt 'conſequence; and he hoped I would 'be wiſe enough to take his advice, 'and act as he ſhould think beſt for 'my future welfare. He then aſked 'me, if I ſhould not be much pleaſed 'to be a queen? I anſwered with the 'greateſt earneſtneſs, that ſo far from

'it,

'it, I would not live in a court again 'to be the greateſt queen in the world; 'that I had a lover who was both de-'ſirous and able to raiſe my ſtation, 'even beyond my wiſhes. I found 'this diſcourſe was very diſpleaſing; 'my father frowned, and called me a 'romantick fool, and ſaid, if I would 'hearken to him he could make me a 'queen; for the cardinal had told him, 'that the king, from the time he ſaw 'me at court the other night, liked me; 'and intended to get a divorce from his 'wife, and to put me in her place, and 'ordered him to find ſome method to 'make me a maid of honour to her pre-'ſent majeſty, that in the mean time he 'might have an opportunity of ſeeing 'me. It is impoſſible to expreſs the aſto-'niſhment theſe words threw me into; 'and notwithſtanding that the moment 'before, when it appeared at ſo great 'a diſtance, I was very ſincere in my 'declaration, how much it was againſt 'my will to be raiſed ſo high; yet now 'the proſpect came nearer, I confeſs 'my heart fluttered, and my eyes were 'dazzled with the view of being ſeated 'on a throne. My imagination pre-'ſented before me all the pomp, power, 'and greatneſs that attend a crown; 'and I was ſo perplexed, I knew not 'what to anſwer, but remained as 'ſilent, as if I had loſt the uſe of my 'ſpeech. My father, who gueſſed 'what it was that made me in this con-'dition, proceeded to bring all the ar-'guments he thought moſt likely to 'bend me to his will; at laſt I reco-'vered from this dream of grandeur, 'and begged him by all the moſt en-'dearing names I could think of, not 'to urge me diſhonourably to forſake 'the man, whom I was convinced 'would raiſe me to an empire, if in 'his power, and who had enough in 'his power to give me all I deſired. 'But he was deaf to all I could ſay, 'and inſiſted that by next week I 'ſhould prepare myſelf to go to court: 'he bid me conſider of it, and not pre-'fer a ridiculous notion of honour to 'the real intereſt of my whole family, 'but above all things not to diſcloſe 'what he had truſted me with. On 'which, he left me to my own thoughts. 'When I was alone, I reflected how 'little real tenderneſs this behaviour 'ſhewed to me, whoſe happineſs he 'did not at all conſult; but only 'looked on me as a ladder, on which 'he could climb to the height of his 'own ambitious deſires: and when I 'thought on his fondneſs for me in 'my infancy, I could impute it to no-'thing but either the liking me as a 'plaything, or the gratification of his 'vanity in my beauty. But I was 'too much divided between a crown 'and my engagement to Lord Peircy, 'to ſpend much time in thinking of 'any thing elſe; and although my fa-'ther had poſitively forbid me, yet 'when he came next, I could not help ac-'quainting him with all that had paſſed, 'with the reſerve only of the ſtruggle 'in my own mind on the firſt mention 'of being a queen. I expected he 'would have received the news with 'the greateſt agonies; but he ſhewed 'no vaſt emotion: however, he could 'not help turning pale; and taking 'me by the hand, looked at me with 'an air of tenderneſs, and ſaid, "If "being a queen will make you happy, "and it's in your power to be ſo, I "would not for the world prevent it, "let me ſuffer what I will." This 'amazing greatneſs of mind had on 'me quite the contrary effect from 'what it ought to have had; for in-'ſtead of increaſing my love for him, 'it almoſt put an end to it; and I be-'gan to think if he could part with me 'the matter was not much: and I am 'convinced, when any man gives up 'the poſſeſſion of a woman, whoſe 'conſent he has once obtained, let his 'motive be ever ſo generous, he will 'diſoblige her. I could not help 'ſhewing my diſſatisfaction, and told 'him, I was very glad this affair ſat 'ſo eaſily on him. He had not 'power to anſwer, but was ſo ſud-'denly ſtruck with this unexpected 'ill-natured turn I gave his behaviour, 'that he ſtood amazed for ſome time, 'and then bowed and left me. Now 'I was again left to my own refleć-'tions; but to make any thing intel-'ligible out of them is quite impoſſi-'ble; I wiſhed to be a queen, and 'wiſhed I might not be one; I would 'have my Lord Peircy happy without 'me; and yet I would not have the 'power of my charms be ſo weak that 'he could bear the thought of life 'after being diſappointed in my love. 'But the reſult of all theſe confuſed 'thoughts was a reſolution to obey

'my

'my father. I am afraid there was 'not much duty in the caſe, though 'at that time I was glad to take hold 'of that ſmall ſhadow, to ſave me 'from looking on my own actions in 'the true light. When my lover 'came again, I looked on him with 'that coldneſs that he could not bear, 'on purpoſe to rid myſelf of all im-'portunity; for, ſince I had reſolved 'to uſe him ill, I regarded him as the 'monument of my ſhame, and his 'every look appeared to me to upbraid 'me. My father ſoon carried me to 'court; there I had no very hard part 'to act, for with the experience I had 'had of mankind, I could find no 'great difficulty in managing a man 'who liked me, and for whom I not 'only did not care, but had an utter 'averſion to: but this averſion he be-'lieved to be virtue; for how credu-'lous is a man who has an inclination 'to believe! And I took care ſome-'times to drop words of cottages and 'love, and how happy the woman was 'who fixed her affections on a man in 'ſuch a ſtation of life, that ſhe might 'ſhew her love, without being ſu-'ſpected of hypocriſy or mercenary 'views! All this was ſwallowed very 'eaſily by the amorous king, who 'puſhed on the divorce with the ut-'moſt impetuoſity, although the af-'fair laſted a good while, and I re-'mained moſt part of the time behind 'the curtain. Whenever the king 'mentioned it to me, I uſed ſuch ar-'guments againſt it as I thought the 'moſt likely to make him the more 'eager for it; begging, that unleſs 'his conſcience was really touched, he 'would not, on my account, give any 'grief to his virtuous queen; for in 'being her handmaid, I thought my-'ſelf highly honoured; and that I 'would not only forego a crown, but 'even give up the pleaſure of ever ſee-'ing him more, rather than wrong my 'royal miſtreſs. This way of talk-'ing, joined to his eager deſire to poſ-'ſeſs my perſon, convinced the king ſo 'ſtrongly of my exalted merit, that he 'thought it a meritorious act to diſ-'place the woman, (whom he could 'not have ſo good an opinion of, be-'cauſe he was tired of her) and to 'put me in her place. After about a 'year's ſtay at court, as the king's 'love to me began to be talked of, it 'was thought proper to remove me, 'that there might be no umbrage given 'to the queen's party; I was forced 'to comply with this, though greatly 'againſt my will; for I was very jea-'lous that abſence might change the 'king's mind. I retired again with 'my father to his country-ſeat; but it 'had no longer thoſe charms for me 'which I once enjoyed there, for my 'mind was now too much taken up 'with ambition to make room for any 'other thoughts. During my ſtay 'here, my royal lover often ſent gentle-'men to me with meſſages and letters, 'which I always anſwered in the man-'ner I thought would beſt bring about 'my deſigns, which were to come 'back again to court. In all the let-'ters that paſſed between us, there 'was ſomething ſo kingly and com-'manding in his, and ſo deceitful and 'ſubmiſſive in mine, that I ſometimes 'could not help reflecting on the dif-'ference betwixt this correſpondence, 'and that with Lord Peircy; yet I was 'ſo preſſed forward by the deſire of a 'crown, I could not think of turning 'back. In all I wrote, I continually 'praiſed his reſolution of letting me be 'at a diſtance from him, ſince at this time 'it conduced indeed to my honour; but 'what was of ten times more weight 'with me, I thought it was neceſſary 'for his; and I would ſooner ſuffer 'any thing in the world than be any 'means of hurt to him, either in his 'intereſt, or reputation. I always 'gave ſome hints of ill health, with 'ſome reflections how neceſſary the 'peace of the mind was to that of the 'body. By theſe means, I brought 'him to recal me again by the moſt 'abſolute command, which I for a lit-'tle time artfully delayed, (for I knew 'the impatience of his temper would 'not bear any contradiction;) till he 'made my father in a manner force 'me to what I moſt wiſhed, with the 'utmoſt appearance of reluctance on 'my ſide. When I had gained this 'point, I began to think which way I 'could ſeparate the king from the 'queen, for hitherto they lived in the 'ſame houſe. The Lady Mary, the 'queen's daughter, being then about 'ſixteen, I ſought for emiſſaries of 'her own age, that I could confide in, 'to inſtil into her mind diſreſpectful 'thoughts of her father, and make a

'jeſt

'jeſt of the tenderneſs of his conſcience 'about the divorce. I knew ſhe had 'naturally ſtrong paſſions, and that 'young people of that age are apt to 'think thoſe that pretend to be their 'friends are really ſo, and only ſpeak 'their minds freely; I afterwards con-'trived to have every word ſhe ſpoke 'of him carried to the king; who took 'it all as I could wiſh, and fancied 'thoſe things did not come at firſt 'from the young lady, but from her 'mother. He would often talk of it 'to me, and I agreed with him in his 'ſentiments; but then, as a great proof 'of my goodneſs, I always endea-'voured to excuſe her, by ſaying, a 'lady ſo long time uſed to be a royal 'queen, might naturally be a little 'exaſperated with thoſe ſhe fancied 'would throw her from that ſtation 'ſhe ſo juſtly deſerved. By theſe ſort 'of plots, I found the way to make 'the king angry with the queen; for 'nothing is eaſier than to make a man 'angry with a woman he wants to be 'rid of, and who ſtands in the way 'between him and his pleaſures: ſo 'that now the king, on the pretence 'of the queen's obſtinacy, in a point 'where his conſcience was ſo tenderly 'concerned, parted with her. Every 'thing was now plain before me; I 'had nothing farther to do but to let 'the king alone to his own deſires; 'and I had no reaſon to fear, ſince 'they had carried him ſo far, but that 'they would urge him on to do every 'thing I aimed at. I was created 'Marchioneſs of Pembroke. This 'dignity ſat very eaſy on me; for the 'thoughts of a much higher title took 'from me all feeling of this; and I 'looked upon being a marchioneſs as 'a trifle, not that I ſaw the bauble in 'it's true light, but becauſe it fell 'ſhort of what I had figured to myſelf 'I ſhould ſoon obtain. The king's 'deſires grew very impatient, and it 'was not long before I was privately 'married to him. I was no ſooner 'his wife, than I found all the queen 'come upon me; I felt myſelf con-'ſcious of royalty, and even the faces 'of my moſt intimate acquaintance 'ſeemed to me to be quite ſtrange. I 'hardly knew them, height had turned 'my head, and I was like a man 'placed on a monument, to whoſe 'ſight all creatures at a great diſtance 'below him, appear like ſo many little 'pigmies crawling about on the earth; 'and the proſpect ſo greatly delighted 'me, that I did not preſently conſider, 'that, in both caſes, deſcending a few 'ſteps erected by human hands would 'place us in the number of thoſe very 'pigmies who appeared ſo deſpicable. 'Our marriage was kept private for 'ſome time; for it was not thought 'proper to make it publick (the affair 'of the divorce not being finiſhed) till 'the birth of my daughter Elizabeth 'made it neceſſary. But all who ſaw 'me knew it; for my manner of ſpeak-'ing and acting was ſo much changed 'with my ſtation, that all around me 'plainly perceived I was ſure I was a 'queen. While it was a ſecret, I had 'yet ſomething to wiſh for; I could 'not be perfectly ſatisfied till all the 'world was acquainted with my for-'tune; but when my coronation was 'over, and I was raiſed to the height 'of my ambition, inſtead of finding 'myſelf happy, I was in reality more 'miſerable than ever; for, beſides that, 'the averſion I had naturally to the 'king was much more difficult to 'diſſemble after marriage than be-'fore, and grew into a perfect deteſta-'tion; my imagination, which had 'thus warmly purſued a crown, grew 'cool when I was in the poſſeſſion 'of it, and gave me time to reflect 'what mighty matter I had gained 'by all this buſtle; and I often uſed 'to think myſelf in the caſe of the 'fox-hunter, who, when he has toiled 'and ſweated all day in the chace, as 'if ſome unheard-of bleſſing was to 'crown his ſucceſs, finds, at laſt, all 'he has got by his labour is a ſtinking, 'nauſeous animal. But my condition 'was yet worſe than his; for he leaves 'the loathſome wretch to be torn by 'his hounds, whilſt I was obliged to 'fondle mine, and meanly pretend him 'to be the object of my love: for the 'whole time I was in this envied, this 'exalted ſtate, I led a continual life 'of hypocriſy, which I now know 'nothing on earth can compenſate. 'I had no companion but the man I 'hated. I dared not diſcloſe my ſenti-'ments to any perſon about me; nor 'did any one preſume to enter into 'any freedom of converſation with 'me; but all who ſpoke to me, talked 'to the queen, and not to me; for they

'would have ſaid juſt the ſame things
'to a dreſſed-up puppet, if the king
'had taken a fancy to call it his wife;
'and as I knew every woman in the
'court was my enemy, from thinking
'ſhe had much more right than I had
'to the place I filled, I thought my-
'ſelf as unhappy as if I had been
'placed in a wild wood, where there
'was no human creature for me to
'ſpeak to, in a continual fear of leav-
'ing any traces of my footſteps, leſt I
'ſhould be found by ſome dreadful
'monſter, or ſtung by ſnakes and ad-
'ders; for ſuch are ſpiteful women to
'the objects of their envy. In this
'worſt of all ſituations, I was obliged
'to hide my melancholy, and appear
'chearful. This threw me into an
'error the other way, and I ſometimes
'fell into a levity in my behaviour
'that was afterwards made uſe of to
'my diſadvantage. I had a ſon dead-
'born, which I perceived abated ſome-
'thing of the king's ardour; for his
'temper could not brook the leaſt
'diſappointment. This gave me no
'uneaſineſs; for, not conſidering the
'conſequences, I could not help be-
'ing beſt pleaſed when I had leaſt of
'his company. Afterwards, I found
'he had caſt his eyes on one of my
'maids of honour; and whether it was
'owing to any arts of hers, or only
'to the king's violent paſſions, I was
'in the end uſed even worſe than my
'former miſtreſs had been by my
'means. The decay of the king's
'affection was preſently ſeen by all
'thoſe court-ſycophants, who con-
'tinually watch the motions of royal
'eyes; and, the moment they found
'they could be heard againſt me, they
'turned my moſt innocent actions and
'words, nay, even my very looks,
'into proofs of the blackeſt crimes.
'The king, who was impatient to en-
'joy his new love, lent a willing ear
'to all my accuſers, who found ways
'of making him jealous that I was
'falſe to his bed. He would not ſo
'eaſily have believed any thing againſt
'me before; but he was now glad to
'flatter himſelf that he had found a
'reaſon to do juſt what he had reſolved
'upon without a reaſon; and on ſome
'ſlight pretences, and hear-ſay evi-
'dence, I was ſent to the Tower,
'where the lady, who was my greateſt
'enemy, was appointed to watch me,
'and lie in the ſame chamber with
'me. This was really as bad a pu-
'niſhment as my death; for ſhe in-
'ſulted me with thoſe keen reproaches,
'and ſpiteful witticiſms, which threw
'me into ſuch vapours and violent fits,
'that I knew not what I uttered in
'this condition. She pretended I had
'confeſſed talking ridiculous ſtuff with
'a ſet of low fellows, whom I had
'hardly ever taken notice of, as could
'have impoſed on none but ſuch as
'were reſolved to believe. I was
'brought to my trial, and, to blacken
'me the more, accuſed of converſing
'criminally with my own brother,
'whom, indeed, I loved extremely
'well, but never looked on him in any
'other light than as my friend. How-
'ever, I was condemned to be behead-
'ed, or burnt, as the king pleaſed;
'and he was graciouſly pleaſed, from
'the great remains of his love, to
'chuſe the mildeſt ſentence. I was
'much leſs ſhocked at this manner of
'ending my life than I ſhould have
'been in any other ſtation; but I had
'had ſo little enjoyment from the time
'I had been a queen, that death was
'the leſs dreadful to me. The chief
'things that lay on my conſcience,
'were the arts I made uſe of to in-
'duce the king to part with the queen,
'my ill uſage of Lady Mary, and my
'jilting Lord Peircy. However, I
'endeavoured to calm my mind as
'well as I could, and hoped theſe
'crimes would be forgiven me; for
'in other reſpects I had led a very in-
'nocent life, and always did all the
'good-natured actions I found any
'opportunity of doing. From the
'time I had it in my power, I gave a
'great deal of money amongſt the
'poor, I prayed very devoutly, and
'went to my execution very com-
'poſedly. Thus I loſt my life at the
'age of twenty-nine, in which ſhort
'time, I believe, I went through more
'variety of ſcenes than many people
'who live to be very old. I had
'lived in a court, where I ſpent my
'time in coquetry and gaiety; I had
'experienced what it was to have one
'of thoſe violent paſſions which makes
'the mind all turbulence and anxiety.
'I had had a lover whom I eſteemed and
'valued; and at the latter part of my
'life I was raiſed to a ſtation as high
'as the vaineſt woman could wiſh:
'but,

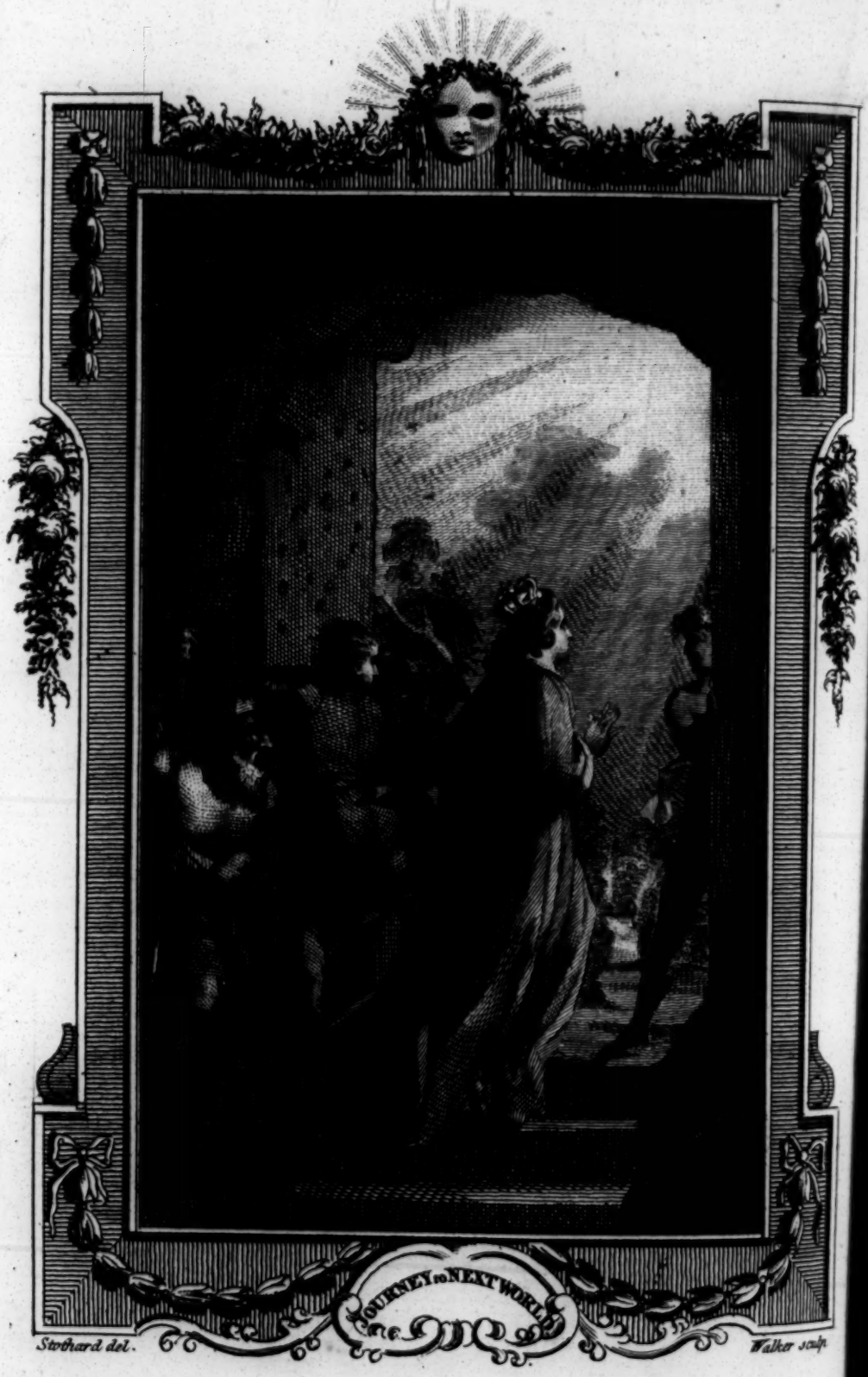


Plate III. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. June 28, 1783.

'but, in all theſe various changes, I 'never enjoyed any real ſatisfaction, 'unleſs in the little time I lived re- 'tired in the country free from all 'noiſe and hurry; and while I was 'conſcious I was the object of the 'love and eſteem of a man of ſenſe 'and honour.'

On the concluſion of this hiſtory, Minos pauſed for a ſmall time, and then ordered the gate to be thrown open for Anne Bullen's admittance; on the conſideration, that whoever had ſuffered being a queen for four years, and been ſenſible during all that time of the real miſery which attends that exalted ſtation, ought to be forgiven whatever ſhe had done to obtain it*.

* Here ends this curious manuſcript; the reſt being deſtroyed in rolling up pens, tobacco, &c. It is to be hoped heedleſs people will henceforth be more cautious what they burn or uſe to other vile purpoſes, eſpecially when they conſider the fate which had likely to have befallen the divine Milton; and that the works of Homer were probably diſcovered in ſome chandler's ſhop in Greece.

FINIS.

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

JOE THOMPSON.

A NARRATIVE FOUNDED ON FACT.

BY MR. KIMBER.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

TO WAKE THE SOUL, BY TENDER STROKES OF ART;
TO RAISE THE GENIUS, AND TO MEND THE HEART;
TO MAKE MANKIND IN CONSCIOUS VIRTUE BOLD,
LIVE O'ER EACH SCENE, AND BE WHAT THEY BEHOLD;
FOR THIS ———

POPE.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoſter-Row.
M DCC LXXXIII.


BRITISH MUSEUM

The Editor's Preface.

IT may, perhaps, be expected by the reader, that ſome account ſhould be prefixed to this work, more than he will find in the work itſelf, of the motives for publiſhing it, and ſuch other matters as cuſtom has made the ſubject of a preface; and in order to comply with the natural curioſity of this country, which is ſtill exploring farther and farther into the reaſons of things, and is hardly ever to be ſatisfied, till it has ſifted an affair to the very bottom, I am going to acquaint him, that, though Mr. Thompſon has been ſome years in England, the eager deſire his numerous friends and acquaintance ſtill expreſſed to hear him relate his adventures, grew quite troubleſome to him; and, in his own defence, he yielded to my preſſing ſolicitations to digeſt the various and uncommon accidents that have chequered his life, into a narrative that ſhould at once eaſe him of that trouble of anſwering ſuch numbers of queſtions, as were every day put to him; and, at the ſame time I made uſe of the aforeſaid reaſon to induce him to write, I urged the benefit it might be of to mankind, to behold a picture of human nature, as it really is, ſtruggling amidſt the war of the paſſions, that inſpire the breaſt, and, at length, through a ſeries of temptations, getting the better of vice, and adding to the triumphs of virtue and the virtuous. Indeed, he began, upon this diſcourſe, to think it his duty to publiſh his adventures, for which he has well given his other reaſons in the beginning of his hiſtory. Was my author known as much to the publick in general, as he is by his particular friends, the veracity of all he has related of himſelf would never fall into doubt. Perhaps the kingdom cannot boaſt a man of more worth or more honour; and he lives a bleſſing to the world, and the joy and comfort of his relations and friends: but need I enlarge on his character here, when he has ſo well portrayed himſelf in the book before me, and has given us a thorough repreſentation of an honeſt, upright heart? I know his father, and have the greateſt veneration for the ſon, who is a gentleman of excellent endowments; and has joined, to a finiſhed education, all the experience that falls to a man's lot, who has ſeen the world, and inſpected it's principles of action on ſo many various occaſions. I promiſed him to reviſe and publiſh his performance; and he inſiſted I ſhould model it as I thought proper; but, I muſt own, I found it far ſuperior to correction, and exceeding all my moſt ſanguine expectations; and I ventured only upon two alterations: he had wrote it as one continued narrative; but for the reader's greater pleaſure, and the benefit of his memory, I have divided it into chapters, and added contents to each; which, I think, though a modern way, is a manner that is uſeful and pleaſing; and, as a celebrated author ſays, is like erecting ſo many baiting-places, or inns, for the traveller's refreſhment in his peregrinations through our work. The other

liberty

liberty I took was this; that though he had made uſe of real names, I, knowing moſt of the perſons mentioned, thought it was not ſo eligible to ſuffer it to come abroad in that manner, and have changed many of the moſt remarkable, or beſt known names, into fictitious ones, that are as expreſſive, as any I could pitch upon, of the characters of the perſons they repreſent; and I have uſed the ſame freedom with the names of places in England, willing, as much as poſſible, to prevent any bad effects that might ariſe from the openneſs and ſincerity of my author; and I have had the pleaſure to receive a letter of thanks from him for my prudent caution. Names ſignify nothing, they are facts that my reader requires; and the reflections that naturally ariſe from certain combinations of accidents of good and bad fortune, by which inſtruction and improvement is conveyed to the mind. And now I am naturally led to ſay ſomewhat of the conſtruction and moral of the piece before me. The Life and Adventures of Joe Thompſon is a delineation of the condition of unhappy mortals, who are ſubject to misfortune, and the aſſaults of vice; and, to attain any deſirable end, muſt wade through a ſea of troubles from without, and of ſtruggles and combats from within; and my author, not content with relating things ſimply, has deduced them from firſt principles; and has endeavoured to make it appear, that man is not born with any natural turpitude inherent in him; and that it requires a long habit of vice and bad company entirely to root out thoſe ideas of religion and virtue he is ſupplied with by nature, and a good and careful education; nor, that once done, can an ingenuous mind thus; for ever, be debaſed, but will riſe again from the rubbiſh that ſurrounds it on every ſide, again become ſound and reaſonable. The ſeveral epiſodes that are interſperſed, here and there, as the adventures of Mrs. Goodwill, Mr. Prim, Mr. Saris, &c. have all of them ſo viſible a good tendency, that the moral need not be pointed out; and the whole work may be ſaid to exhibit the triumphs of virtue, all benign, ſerene, and amiable; and the defeats of vice baneful, obnoxious, and ruinous to mankind, both in ſoul and body. I muſt look upon my author a little in another light alſo, with regard to the reflections, maxims, and inſtructive leſſons, ſcattered through every page of his adventures. And here I muſt own his manner and ſpirit charms me; and gives me ſo high an opinion of his ſagacity and good ſenſe, that, though I ever had the greateſt affection for him, yet, methinks, whenever I read thoſe breathings, let me call them, of a generous and noble ſoul, my affection is heightened, to a prodigious degree, more than ever; and I believe our reader will admit, with me, that they make the work a ſyſtem of ethicks and morality, as much as it is an hiſtory or ſeries of adventures.

The French, who are noted for their numerous lives and memoirs, have introduced the moſt trifling and *jejune* circumſtances, that happen to a man, therein, by which they have made that kind of writing the ſubject of ridicule and ſatire; but, ſure, if, with proper dignity and decorum, the tranſactions of a buſy life are given to the world, it may be ſaid to become as uſeful, or more ſo than the moſt ſhining examples exhibited in perſon, as it makes a greater impreſſion upon the heart, and ſinks more deeply into the mind: and I muſt ſay this for our countrymen, that they have given the world works of this nature, that far ſurpaſs the productions of our neighbours, and have in

in them all the eaſy flow and politeneſs of the French, together with the nervous ſtrength and fire of the Engliſh. And I believe it will be admitted, without diſpute, that this brave nation diſplay, in their *hiſtories* and *biography*, a manner and ſentiment peculiar to a free people, which can never be imitated by the ſlaves of *deſpotick governments*.

The language of my author is beautiful, and applicable to the ſubject he treats of; common events are related in familiar words, but, when it is required, no one can riſe into more apt and proper ſtrains; and in thoſe you diſcover the man, and the genuine caſt and diſpoſition of his ſoul. You have no uncouth and unnatural flights of the falſe ſublime; no diſtorted images are introduced; nor is the fancy bewildered with far-fetched figures and crude ideas, which never exiſted any where but in the brain of the writer. The whole production is one even *champaign* country; and the verdant hills and leafy thickets, that are here and there interſperſed, are ſo many beauties that add to the delightful proſpect of the fruitful plain, without tiring or ſickening the ſight. The very ſubject of love is treated of with a delicacy that muſt pleaſe and charm; and, though all the juſtice due to the delightful ſex is done them, yet, in the moſt warm and paſſionate flights, nothing is ſaid or implied that can ſhock the niceſt ear, or kindle a bluſh even in the face of innocence herſelf.

In a word, I look upon it as a book of the utmoſt merit, and, I will ſay, importance, particularly to the youth of both ſexes, as inculcating juſt notions of things, wiping the prejudices of education from the mind, inſpiring generous and worthy ſentiments, encouraging benevolence, love to mankind, and all the ſocial virtues and duties that ought to reſide in the boſom of rational creatures: I might ſay alſo, in the words of my motto, it ſerves—

> 'To wake the ſoul by tender ſtrokes of art;
> 'To raiſe the genius, and to mend the heart.'

Hiſtory and *lives* have been agreed, on all hands, and by the conſent of all ages, to be of the greateſt value to the world, if they relate the actions of the writer or hero with fidelity and impartiality. *Hiſtory* may be ſaid to be the general fountain, *biography* a ſtream that runs from it. As the fountain is not ſo acceſſible to the generality of the world, it cannot be of ſuch univerſal uſe as the ſtream which every one can come to, to ſlake his thirſt at after knowledge; and there, in that tranſparent mirror, may behold himſelf, and learn how to form his future behaviour in life; beſides, *hiſtory* uſually treats of the actions of ſuch beings as are beyond the common ken, the great and the exalted; who, as they ſeldom act by rule themſelves, are very improper patterns for other people beneath them.

The life of a man, faithfully related, if crouded, like that of Mr. Thompſon, with a variety of intereſting events, by the entertainment it muſt of courſe afford, captivates the mind, and carries one on to read, whether one will or no. It is drawn by theſe captivating ſtrains that we purſue the thread of the moſt crabbed truths with pleaſure; and the moſt ſublime dictates, which had elſe, perhaps, never employed our thoughts, become taking and familiar. Virtue, as repreſented by certain four *philoſophers* and *divines*, wears ſo many diſ-

couraging airs about her, that the ſoul, young and pliant to the baits of pleaſure, looks on her with averſion, and denies harbour to the troubleſome gueſt, who ſeems to frown upon him with too much auſterity. Thence aroſe the ancient method of inſtructing by fable, from which it would be no hard matter to prove that every other is derived, though I own it to be a bold aſſertion. Wiſe men and tutors to the riſing generation began to ſee their error in telling home truths, and forcing dogmatical maxims on the young mind; they therefore gilt the pill, and, under theſe little tales, brought by degrees, to perfection, what too much precipitancy and ſeverity would have rendered for ever diſtaſteful.

Works of the biographical ſort, as they have employed the pains of the authors, ſo have they gained the applauſe of all countries; and, from a view of the uſefulneſs of them and the emolument ariſing from thence, ſome *Genii* have endeavoured to improve upon the matter, and have publiſhed great numbers of fictitious *lives* and *hiſtories* of perſons that never have exiſted; and a ſwarm of *romances* have overſpread and deluged the world; ſome of them execrably planned, rather to corrupt unwary youth, by repreſenting all ſober and regular behaviour as ridiculous, and proſtituting the moſt ſacred characters to reproach. We have bad men of all ranks, no doubt; but there are ſome orders of men, that, in a peculiar manner, ought rather to have their vices concealed, than expoſed, as the ignorant are apt to make very odd conſtructions, and to recur from the perſon, and charge that on his profeſſion, which ought only to be charged upon the man: others, to excite mirth, and entertain the reader's vicious taſte, have repreſented ſuch ſtrange and ludicrous characters, as ſure never exiſted, but in imagination; uncouth as the characters of the famed Rabelais, which no one can liken to any thing but thoſe ſhadowy, fantaſtick repreſentations of the *baſeleſs fabrick of a viſion*, that ſport in our fancies, when laid in the arms of ſleep. Others there are, who, indeed, may boaſt of great beauties, and their authors of great merit; in which virtue is inculcated in a moſt amiable manner, and the heart is, ſtep by ſtep, led on to generous and noble ſentiments; but ſtill, whilſt they have the characters of *romances*, people will not give themſelves the needful trouble to inſpect the moral; or, if they do, imagining it the product of mere imagination, it paſſes off as a fine fangled tale, and makes no deep or laſting impreſſion. In a real life founded on facts, like this, of a perſon now in being, where every thing may be depended upon, and goes upon the ſtandard of truth; where it wears thoſe indelible marks of fidelity that diſtinguiſh it from all fiction and invention; where one fact or circumſtance naturally flows from another, and you ſee nothing either impoſſible or improbable in the narration; real ſervice is done to mankind; and we cannot forbear comparing the character of the author with our own, and endeavouring to imitate the bright and ſhining parts of his conduct and behaviour, and to eſchew thoſe parts which appear to us abſurd, immoral, and ridiculous: and I think, where the life, ſo written, proceeds from the pen of the hero himſelf, things are ſo intimately deſcribed, and the motions of the heart are ſo anatomized and diſſected, and he relates what he feels, or has felt, ſo ſenſibly, that it adds freſh force and vigour to every thing the writer would inculcate; and we alternately, with him, feel the ſtarts of joy, and the move-

ments

ments and burſts of ſorrow, upon every reviving or mortifying occurrence that happens.

My author, I think, is all over new, and has followed the track of no former writer; his ſtyle and manner is peculiar to himſelf; nor has he borrowed any thing from others, ſave here and there a beautiful paſſage his memory ſuggeſted to him, from our beſt and fineſt poets: this our reader will rather account, I dare ſay, a perfection than a blemiſh, and thank him for it, as they are not brought in incongruouſly and improperly.

Thus I commend Joe Thompſon to the peruſal of all ranks of people. The fair of this happy land will riſe improved from their reading, as well as the generous youth, who pants after inſtruction. In *families* it ſhould become a kind of Monitor, and in *ſchools* a Vade Mecum; and that it may be as much admired by others, as it is by me, and may be of univerſal ſervice to mankind, is the ſincere and hearty prayer of

THE EDITOR.

THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF JOE THOMPSON.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

THE AUTHOR'S MOTIVES FOR WRITING HIS ADVENTURES—HIS BIRTH—ACCOUNT OF HIS PARENTS—MANAGEMENT OF HIM TILL HE ARRIVES TO AN AGE SUFFICIENT FOR SCHOOL—IS PUT UNDER THE TUITION OF MR. PROSODY.

WHEN a man's life has been one continued ſcene of misfortunes and diſtreſs, and when theſe ills have been brought upon him principally by his own bad conduct, his prevailing vices, and repeated crimes, he cannot poſſibly be ſuſpected to be acted upon by vanity, or a luſt of applauſe, to relate his adventures: ſuch a relation muſt then be dictated by other and better motives, for it would be abſurd to ſuppoſe that the writer could reap any ſelf-ſatisfaction, by making the humbling and mortifying diſcovery of ſuch actions as muſt incur the cenſure, and be deſpiſed by the bulk of mankind, and can never engage their approbation.

The recapitulation of a life, even of the moſt ſhining events, ſhould propoſe ſome ſuperior gratification to the mind than the deſire of praiſe, or an inclination to perpetuate a name; theſe are mean and low ſpurs to ſuch an attempt; and believe me, gentle reader, was I not thoroughly convinced from reaſon, as well as an higher authority, that every aim, every action of our lives, ſhould as well be directed to the good of our fellow-creatures as to our own purpoſes, and that I am ſilently accuſed by my own conſcience for not having been of ſo much uſe, by ſetting a proper example, which is the great work of life, as I am aſſured is the deſign of Providence, that every individual ſhould do, but have perverted the ends of my exiſtence in the groſſeſt manner, in the former part of my time, I ſhould have had no inclination to have ſubmitted this hiſtory to thy inſpection. It is as much as lies in my power to atone for my former neglect, which ſits heavily upon my ſoul, that I venture to appear thus upon the ſtage, and to act over again thoſe ſcenes which plunged me into the moſt torturing miſeries. If my pains anſwer the end I ſincerely propoſe; if, whilſt the entertaining and the amuſing captivates the reader, I may be the means to caution the giddy and thoughtleſs part of the world from the purſuit of folly

folly and extravagance, by a lively repreſentation of the ſufferings they never fail to produce; if by repreſenting lovely virtue in all her flow of genuine native charms, with all her train of inſpiring encouraging rewards, I ſubdue and melt the heart to a love and veneration for her precepts; if by diſplaying vice, all baneful and odious, ſtripped of thoſe artful enſnaring diſguiſes that ſo bewitch our depraved appetites, I make ſome of her votaries ſicken at the nauſeous ſight, and abandon her guilty triumphs over the reaſon and over the good ſenſe of our race; great will be my reward, and I ſhall applaud myſelf for my labour.

A pleaſant and well ſituated village in the Weſt Riding of Yorkſhire was the place of my nativity; my father was a clergyman, and deſcended from a family of conſiderable repute in that country; he enjoyed the vicarage where I was born, of which he had been the incumbent for near ten years before: from a fond and tender affection he married my mother, without the leaſt conſideration of adding to his fortune; but, though they had been wedded for five years, they had had no child, to their great concern and diſquiet; ſo that I was received with the utmoſt feſtivity and rejoicing, as a boon from Providence, like the Child of the Promiſe. Our neighbourhood was ſurrounded by gentlemen's ſeats, and the pariſh in general had a moſt high eſteem for my father: he was then in the full vigour of his age. An education of the moſt generous and liberal caſt had humanized his mind, without giving him that uncouth ſtiffneſs, that unſociable behaviour, very often the diſagreeable attendants of learning and ſtudy. To a perfect knowledge of books, in almoſt every language, he had joined a knowledge of mankind, and a politeneſs of addreſs; which, without taking from the dignity of his function, diſcovered, in every thing he ſaid or did, the fine gentleman. Though he was a thorough ſon of the Church of England, he never, either in his ſermons or common diſcourſe, betrayed the leaſt animoſity or prejudice againſt the many ſects and parties into which religion is divided; but prayed for, and wiſhed well to, every honeſt upright man, let his manner of thinking, as to the ſpeculative part of religion, be what it would. He was, at once, the paſtor, the phyſician, and the umpire of every diſpute that aroſe amongſt his flock: and, as his living was a very good one, he never exacted his dues with ſeverity, but exerciſed, on every occaſion, the moſt diffuſive benevolence, charity, and hoſpitality. He had married my mother whilſt he was at the univerſity, and had ever preſerved the tendereſt regard and affection for her, the ſole and only object of his fondeſt wiſhes. Nature ſeemed in her to have formed a recompence for ſo much virtue and goodneſs as exiſted in my father: her perſon was agreeable; but ſuch a mind ſhone through that perſon as wonderfully dignified every action of her life. The little levities and frailties of the ſex ſhe was an utter ſtranger to; her very love to her huſband was conducted with an air of ſo much real good ſenſe and diſcretion, that every body was charmed that approached her. He had furniſhed her ſoul with every uſeful knowledge that renders a woman amiable and uſeful; which rather was improved by the œconomy and domeſtick management of her family affairs, in which ſhe took great delight, and where a regularity and decorum is ſo much the ornament of a good woman. They lived together in a real harmony and friendſhip which trifles never had the power to diſturb; and then were ſo happy as to have had very few conſiderable diſquiets.

Such was the pair to whom I had the happineſs to be born; and I the more particularly have deſcribed them to let the world know that I had no excuſe to plead for my ſubſequent follies, from the bad qualities or examples of my parents, which have generally ſo viſible an effect on the actions of their children.

When I arrived at about three years of age, my father, who doated upon me, took me under the ſhadow of his own wings, and began to teach me the uſe of my letters; his maxim being, that even that infantile branch of education ſhould be conducted with propriety, and not truſted to old women, who can ſcarcely ſee the letters they pretend to teach. Under his endearing care, at five I read every thing with

with a proper emphaſis; and had imbibed from him ſuch precepts of morality as ſuited with my years. At ſix I could write a tolerable good hand, and was eſteemed a very ſharp and promiſing child: my proficiency ſurprized every body; and the quick progreſs I made, induced the country-women to ſay, that it was impoſſible I ſhould live, I was ſo ſharp and ſo witty.

My father, who very much approved of the way of education in publick ſchools, in my ninth year, by which time I had made ſome progreſs in the Latin tongue, determined to ſend me from home, for my farther inſtruction in the languages. He uſed to ſay, that a number of youths together generally ſpurred and excited each other to an emulation in their purſuit of learning, and laid the foundation of a knowledge of the world, and of friendſhips with one another of the utmoſt uſe in the future courſe of life.

As I had been ſo tenderly treated at home, the thoughts of being ſent from my parents gave me ſome childiſh concern, which was ſoon diſſipated when I was informed how many ſports I ſhould partake of with my ſchool-fellows; for I had yet had no other companions than my father's family, he himſelf having condeſcended to divert himſelf with joining in my moſt puerile amuſements.

After ſome difficulty, my father fixed upon a gentleman of his own order, near a town about twenty miles from us, who kept a boarding-ſchool, whom he knew to be a man of conſiderable learning, and who had alſo the reputation of treating his ſcholars with humanity and kindneſs: accordingly, after every thing was provided, my father and mother ſet out with me for the houſe of Mr. Proſody, for that was the name of my intended tutor.

At our arrival we were received by this gentleman with great civility. Every thing ſettled, and dinner over, they took their leaves of me, whilſt I could not refrain from tears, which I ſhed in abundance at this firſt ſeparation from them; my mother not forgetting to leave me a token of her love in my pocket, which was of great importance to gain the good-will of my ſchool-fellows.

CHAP. II.

DIGRESSION ON SCHOOLMASTERS—CHARACTER OF MR. PROSODY AND HIS WIFE, AND THEIR DAUGHTER URSULA—MISERABLE TEMPER OF HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS—AVARICE THOUGHT TO BE CONSTITUTIONAL—MISS URSULA IN LOVE, WHICH IS OPPOSED BY HER FATHER—HE MAKES GREAT PROGRESS IN HIS LEARNING—ALMOST STARVED—ROBS ORCHARDS—IS SEVERELY PUNISHED.

SINCE I have been capable of reflection, I have often been puzzled to find a reaſon, not only why parents were ſo miſtaken in providing proper inſtructors for their children, but alſo how ſo many improper perſons were to be found in ſo very intereſting a profeſſion as that of the education of youth. The ſolution of the firſt difficulty is pretty hard, and various reaſons, I think, may be aſſigned; but I believe the principal ones are want of attention, and that the generality of parents fondly view the deſired end, but are not ſo anxious, nor take ſo much pains, about the means to procure it. This, indeed, is the misfortune of moſt of us in every thing we undertake; and mankind, in the groſs, may be ſaid to purſue laudable views, but are woefully deficient in the means to attain them; and thus, for want of a proper forethought, and ſagacious deliberation, what ſhould redound to our great benefit often proves the reverſe. That we have ſo many queer and improper tutors is not ſo hard to account for; many men are deſtined to learning whoſe ſouls never were formed to *taſte* the Pierian *ſpring*; and after waſting a number of years in acquiring a knowledge of the dead languages, without any thing elſe to recommend them, they launch into the world; but their ſmall abilities not affording opportunities to riſe, having little other knowledge to recommend them, they, per force, retreat for ſhelter from want to the buſineſs of a ſchool-maſter, where alone they can be important, and retaliate

taliate the bad conduct of their parents on the morals and breeches of our children.

I ſoon diſcerned the difference between being under the tender eyes of my parents and the harſh and crabbed documents of my maſter, and ſubject to the humours of his family. Mr. Proſody was now in the down-hill part of his life, the aſcent of which had been turmoiled with care and anxiety, partly flowing from the hardſhips he had undergone in a pitiful curacy, and partly from his own want of genius, and the ſordid diſpoſition of his heart, which influenced, and ſtill continued to influence, all his motions. He had thus contracted ſuch an habitual moroſeneſs of countenance, that, whenever you looked at him, you muſt conceive the moſt unfavourable idea of a mind that could ſo uncouthly paint a viſage with lines of ill nature and ſourneſs. He was, indeed, a good claſſical ſcholar; and, in ſaying that, you exhauſted the whole ſcope of praiſe that was juſtly due to him. To his family and pupils he was a compleat tyrant; and, in the exerciſe of the birchin diſcipline, Buſby of old was but a mere type of him. He had the moſt profound regard to orthodoxy in opinion, and did not ſcruple to damn all thoſe that differed from him in ſentiment, either as to religion or politicks; and his neighbours in general ſtigmatized him with the name of a Jacobite; and, indeed, he really was a concealed Nonjuror: however, the complaiſance of the world agreed to look upon him as a good pedagogue, and in that capacity he had exiſted all the latter days of his life, and had raiſed a pretty conſiderable ſum of money in that employment. His wife, Mrs. Deborah Proſody, was as odd a figure as can poſſibly be imagined; ſhe was ſomewhat protuberant behind, which has robbed her of her fulneſs before; and her face was a moſt diſagreeable aſſortment of forbidding features; ſmall light-coloured eyes ſhe had, but ſo buried in their ſockets, that they could be compared only to thoſe of an owl; and the motion of her eye-lids reſembled ſomewhat that of the nictating membrane of birds; her mouth was ſcrewed up, and betrayed her deficiency of teeth; and the pointed extremities of her chin and noſe were in ſuch approximation with each other, that the former generally plentifully bedewed the latter with it's trickling diſtillations; her ſkin appeared like a parchment that has been ſhrivelled up by the heat of the fire; and this worthy perſonage had been very aſſiduous to aſſiſt her huſband's accumulating temper, by pinching the guts of the boys in equal proportion to the food he beſtowed upon their brains. Her avarice was unbounded, and ſhe betrayed her diſpoſition in every action ſhe performed; ſhe uſed to harangue plentifully on the ſalutiferous and grateful nature of ſoups, and the excellent properties of mutton-dripping, which was, from it's healing and baiſamick qualities, given to us in lieu of butter; and, as to water, ſhe had diſcovered more virtues in the uſe of it than ever Hancock did. Her ſtature was low, and a conſtant habit of fretfulneſs kept her as lean as the picture of Famine could be ſuppoſed to be. I cannot help obſerving, by the bye, that avarice generally lurks under ſuch appearances: and I queſtion if that vice is not in ſome meaſure conſtitutional; for where nature has denied that flow of generous juices that warm and invigorate the human frame, and has beſtowed them in a ſpare and niggard manner, the heart diſtends not to generous and kind ſentiments, feels not the warmth of benevolence and charity; but, being buried and confined in an aduſt or frigid breaſt, dies away into the ſtarveling ideas of jealouſy, ſuſpicion, and covetouſneſs; moſt of the ſubjects of their ſordid reign being of this meagre frame and habit of body.

Miſs Urſula, the daughter and heireſs of this mighty pedagogue, was turned of thirty, and had been a ſlave to the humours of her parents from her cradle; whoſe authority love had now made her demur to, ſhe having conceived an affection for Mr. Job Harrow, the ſon of a neighbouring farmer, who firſt taught her to own the ſway of that powerful deity. She was not diſagreeable in her perſon, which was, however, of the largeſt ſize, and her features were regular; and, had Miſs not been a little too much given to pride, ſhe would have been a tolerable companion for life, for him or any other

farmer

farmer in Yorkſhire. Young Harrow was as arch a *tike* as any in the county, and was more enamoured, it was ſuppoſed, with the old man's bags than with his daughter; but Old Surly was abſolutely againſt his Urſula's diſpoſing of herſelf; and the reaſon was, that he knew he muſt lug out his purſe upon the occaſion; and that was a reflection that included too much horror for him to indulge. He uſed to declaim then greatly againſt children's leaving their parents for an huſband, and inſiſted upon it as a duty incumbent on them to cloſe their eyes before they entered into wedlock. Urſula, however, little reliſhed this doctrine, and was over head and ears in love, which occaſioned much bickering between her and her father and mother.

As I had made ſome proficiency at home, I was immediately put into the third form, where they were reading Virgil; and, in about a year's time, I was foremoſt of the ſecond claſs, and began to reliſh the elegancy of the politeſt and beſt Roman authors; but, whilſt I thus improved in my learning, I grew in condition as ſleek and thin as a running-horſe, from the ſhort-commons that were generally my portion. We had about thirty boarders; and our miſtreſs ſo managed matters, that what would ſcarcely have kept life and ſoul together in half that number, ſufficed us all.

She had an excellent talent of making a great deal out of a little; and a ſmall quantity of meat generally reliſhed a tremendous vaſe of ſoup or broth, which had little other reliſh than that of the ingredients of the root or herb kind; and as to our bread and our cheeſe, ſhe contrived to have them ſo ſtale and hard, that our jaws were tired before we could ſatisfy our hunger. My caſe, indeed, was better than that of moſt of my comrades, as my father ſeldom let me want money; and I had preſents frequently ſent me by other relations; but which, as I was ſwayed by great generoſity of temper, I was pretty free in diffuſing the benefits of to my particular favourites. No wonder if we laid the orchards and gardens of the vicinity under frequent contributions, as our boyiſh love of fruit was thus ſtimulated by hunger; and, indeed, our depredations were ſo notorious, that we were frequently found out, and our ſmarting poſteriors commonly paid for the devaſtations we made. The ſeverity this diſcipline was practiſed with by our maſter, raiſed a down-right hatred and contempt in moſt of us towards him; but we made a point of it never to complain to our parents, being aſhamed of ſuch a poverty of ſpirit and weakneſs, enduring the ſmart, without much fear or compunction, by a long courſe of habit. I, for my part, being naturally of a high mettle, and given much to unluckineſs and waggery of all ſorts, ſoon became chief and leader of the reſt in all our pranks, and generally came off with the greateſt ſhare of puniſhment, which I bore with the reſolution of a martyr; and had ſo often gone through a courſe of flogging, that my breech was become perfectly hardened and callous. My ambition, however, which exceeded all the reſt of my paſſions, made me very aſſiduous at my book; ſo that, at the end of three years, I became the admiration of my maſter himſelf, and the envy of my ſchool-mates.

CHAP. III.

HE ROBS HIS MASTER'S FAVOURITE PEAR-TREE—IS DISCOVERED, AND SEVERELY SCOURGED—SOOTHED BY HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS—RESOLVES TO BE REVENGED—CATASTROPHE OF AN EXTRAVAGANT GENTLEMAN, WHOSE GHOST HAUNTS HIS MASTER'S HOUSE—HE TERRIFIES HIS MASTER AND THE FAMILY—ACCOUNT OF THE CONFUSION THEY ARE IN.

HITHERTO our ravages had been carried on at ſome diſtance from home; but our maſter having a very fine pear-tree in a garden which was kept under lock and key, I propoſed to two or three of thoſe boys who formed our council, that we ſhould make an attack upon thoſe tempting cates. I urged the abſurdity of keeping us from the enjoyment of ſuch a banquet; ſaying, as we were part of his family, we ought to have an unlimited licence to rove at large in that garden as well as any other part of his houſe; intimating, beſides, that it was

very hard that Mrs. Proſody ſhould make money of thoſe pears, which ſhe really did; when our parents were told, when we firſt came, that all the fruit about the place was intended for our uſe and refreſhment. My arguments prevailed, and we ſet immediately to execute our ſcheme. This tree, which bore ſeveral buſhels of fruit, ſtood ſo cloſe to the wall, that ſeveral of it's branches projected over it; therefore I propoſed they ſhould hoiſt me up on their ſhoulders, and wait below, whilſt I gathered the pears, and flung them into their hats. No ſooner ſaid but done, and over I went; and was very buſy in my occupation, when I perceived, at ſome diſtance, my maſter weeding a flower-pot. As the whole ſpot was thick ſet with trees, he could not poſſibly diſcover me, though, by the elevation of my ſituation, I had a full view of him. Being tempted by ſuch a lucky opportunity to gratify a little of that reſentment his whippings had inſpired, I took full aim at him with a pear, and happened to hit him juſt upon the corner of his hat, which immediately, with his wig, fell off; and I was going to ſecond my blow, but, unfortunately for poor Pill-Garlick, the ſpring I gave myſelf ſnapped the branch I ſtood upon, and down I came on the inſide of the wall, bringing along with me, and the ruins, whole loads of this forbidden fruit. The noiſe rouzed the old-gentleman from the contemplation of what had juſt happened, and he came upon me, before I could diſentangle myſelf, and ſeized me, with the utmoſt fury painted in his face. In the firſt motions of his rage he felled me with one blow at his feet; and when I recovered, which was not for ſome minutes, he dragged me by the collar in the ſchool-room, where binding me to his deſk, I underwent a more ſevere flogging than ever was exerciſed upon a wretch at the cart's-tail. His paſſion was too violent to admit him to utter any expreſſions, and when he unbound me, which he did not till he was quite out of breath, he left me, ſurlily crying, 'There, I believe this 'will make you remember me!' wallowing in the blood that plentifully flowed from me upon the floor. It was near two hours before I was able to ſtand, and then I crept up to bed in the utmoſt agony and torture; where I had not been long before his wife came up, and, pretending to caution me againſt ſuch tricks for the future, adminiſtered ſome unguent or other, which eaſed the ſmart of my back, which was before almoſt intolerable. After ſome reflections upon my roguery, ſhe ſoothed me, (for, indeed, the old man had imagined he had carried matters too far, and ſent her up for that purpoſe) and told me ſhe would intercede with my maſter to forgive me. Accordingly, in an hour afterwards, Proſody himſelf came into my room; and, after ſome very ſevere expoſtulations, told me he ſhould paſs by any farther correction for this offence, and once more try if I would leave off ſuch vicious practices; and, ſo ſaying, put a ſmall piece of money into my hand, and bid me lie in bed till next day, where I had great care taken of me. This was an unparalleled piece of generoſity, conſidering his temper; but did not in the leaſt extinguiſh my deſire and thorough reſolution to revenge myſelf upon him the very firſt opportunity.

Mr. Proſody's houſe, which was an antique Gothick ſtructure, very large, and, by the thickneſs and ſtrength of it's walls, an inſtance of that regard our anceſtors ſhewed to poſterity even in their buildings, had many years, according to the report of the country, been haunted by the ghoſt of a young gentleman, whoſe manſion-houſe it had been, and who, after running out his eſtate, had ended his life and extravagances together by ſhooting himſelf through the head. A murder generally, in theſe parts, is the forerunner of an apparition, and there were not wanting many witneſſes to his having been ſeen, over and over, walking through the garden at the mid of night without his head; ſo far the credulous country-people had impoſed upon themſelves by their ſuperſtition; nay, a certain old dame, who lived at two or three fields diſtance, frequently ſaw gleaming lights through the windows, which, with very great ſtate, progreſſively went from room to room, and then diſappeared all on a ſudden. Squire Such-an-one, they would tell you, very gravely, who lived in the houſe at ſuch a time, was obliged to remove, after having with his family been ſcared out of his wits by uncommon knockings and unboltings of the win-

dows

dows and doors, ſo that they could get no reſt or quiet: ſometimes, to be ſure, large flames of fire were ſeen to iſſue from chimnies, which had conveyed no ſmoke through them for many years; and ſuch dreadful apprehenſions theſe ſtories had raiſed, that none of the country-folks thereabout would come within a furlong or two of the houſe after dark; Farmer Barley having had his horſe frightened ſo much, that he flung him over his head; and Gammer Wilſon had been, by ſome *unſeen perſon*, thrown into a ditch, and hardly knew if ſhe got home on her head or her feet. Our maſter, who was a great enthuſiaſt, did not pretend to diſbelieve theſe relations; but the low rent, and the commodiouſneſs of the houſe for his buſineſs, had induced him to defy Satan and all his black guard, and to become the tenant, though, many a time and often, he and his wife and family had heard very ſtrange buſtling in the room where the gentleman murdered himſelf, which, therefore, with three or four more of the moſt obnoxious, were conſtantly locked and bolted, and no one ſuffered to go into them. Whether the apparition was pleaſed with this civility or no, I cannot tell; but of late the family had not been much diſturbed, which raiſed a great opinion of the pedant's ſanctity in all the adjacent villages. As to my part, my knowledge acquired from my father, and the method and manner of my bringing up, together with my natural temper, defended me from fear; but the reſt of my ſchool-fellows were under terrible notions of this ſpirit or ſpirits which had committed ſuch havock. With the aſſiſtance of this apparition, I was reſolved to retaliate my late puniſhment on the head of old Proſody; and, after having communicated my ſcheme to my two principal cronies, both about the ſame age with myſelf, reſolutely ſet about the execution of it.

We procured two cats of the boar kind, and, having provided a quantity of old red cloth, we ſewed up a couple of very antick dreſſes for them; and then, cutting off their claws, put walnut ſhells, filled with pitch, upon their feet: all this we had opportunity to perform unobſerved in a garret which nobody ever entered, ſituated at the fartheſt part of the houſe, and where we kept our familiars confined till the moment they were to come to action. It was on a Sunday in the evening, when the whole family were congregated in a large hall, and our maſter was reading and expounding the Scriptures, that we, on various pretences, left the room, and went up into our conſultation-chamber; where, having fixed our inſtruments, and opened all the chamber-doors we could come at, one of us diſcharged a ſmall pocket-piſtol, at which ſignal the cats were ſet looſe in all their groteſque attire, with a ſufficient quantity of pepper rubbed under their tails; and then we all ran down in a ſeeming hurry and precipitation, acquainting our tyrant that there were certainly ſtrange doings above ſtairs, for that we could hear violent ſtampings to and fro in every room in the houſe. They were ſufficiently alarmed before at the report of the piſtol, and preſently heard a violent ſtamping and clattering in the ſtory over our heads and the entry. In ſhort, the cats, unuſed to ſuch confinement, frighted with the noiſe of their own feet, and at the ſame time irritated with the fire in their tails, made a moſt helliſh uproar, and, flying from place to place with lamentable cries and ſquallings, one would have imagined the whole militia of hell had broken looſe. The old woman fell upon her knees, Miſs Urſula fainted away, and the pedant, after pronouncing, with great emotion and emphaſis, 'Lord have mercy upon us!' followed the example of his wife. The terrible ſcreams of the boys, the barking of two or three dogs, and a quantity of brimſtone which I had ſlily thrown into the fire, whilſt in the confuſion my comrades had beat out the candles, preſented ſuch a ſcene of terror and uproar as can ſcarcely be deſcribed; but how was it increaſed when the two ſpectres flew into the kitchen, and, after overturning a whole tier of pewter, and demoliſhing a ſhelf of crockery-ware, entered with wild ſcreams into into the hall! and, one of them ſettling for ſome time on the back of our maſter, he juſt gave one hideous groan, and fell proſtrate, without ſenſe, on the floor. Our ſatisfaction was compleat, when, by the unſavoury ſmell that iſſued from all parties, we could gather the violent convulſions fear had put

them into; and, taking advantage of the preſent moment, we pinched old Surly with pins, and tweaked him by the ears; ſo that he roared out in a moſt lamentable manner, ever and anon, crying, 'Avant, Satan! In the 'name of the Father, Son, and Holy 'Ghoſt, what art!' All this while we pretended alſo to be in the utmoſt agony, and exclaimed louder than all the reſt together; not forgetting, however, to ſeize our feline accomplices in time, which we did unperceived of any one, and ſtripping them of their habits, turned them out of doors, flinging, at the ſame time, a quantity of large crackers ſlily into the fire, which made a loud exploſion, and ſhook the whole room.

CHAP. IV.

MISS URSULA RUNS AWAY WITH HER SWEETHEART—THEY EXAMINE THE HOUSE—THE DAUGHTER RETURNS—SHE DISCOVERS THE PRANK, AND THE AUTHORS OF IT—THEY ARE SEIZED AND CONFINED—MAKE THEIR ESCAPE—HE GETS TO HIS FATHER'S WITH HIS COMRADES.

YOUNG Farmer Harrow, whoſe friendſhip we had gained, by carrying letters and ſerving him in his amour, having been informed of our device, had furniſhed us with what materials we were deficient in; and, as the old man had prohibited him the ſight of his daughter for ſome time, he thought this a good opportunity to get her away from him, and therefore was waiting at ſome diſtance to ſee the event. It was a long time before any one dared hold up his head; but at length I cried out, with great trepidation of voice, 'I believe—they are 'gone!' upon which the pedagogue, raiſing his head up, and ſeeing the coaſt clear, with a great many exclamations of—'Lord have mercy upon 'me! what dreadful appearances are 'theſe!'—went to the aſſiſtance of his wife, who, with ſome difficulty, was perſuaded to ariſe. As to Miſs Urſula, as ſoon as ſhe recovered, ſhe run out of doors with the utmoſt expedition, and was immediately accoſted by her paramour, to whom ſhe fled for ſuccour; who, after endeavouring to abate her apprehenſions, perſuaded her to take ſhelter at his father's, and not return to a ſpot which the Devil, or ſome of his imps, had rendered ſo dreadful; ſhe was ſoon perſuaded to this, and ſo, mounting behind him, he rode off with her, not without her ſhewing the utmoſt horror at the ſight of every buſh and tree ſhe paſſed in the way. Various were the judgments of all parties upon the late adventure. Mrs. Proſody, who, by the way, never had looked up, was certain ſhe ſaw ſeveral very horrid ſhapes, belching flames out of their mouths and noſtrils; one of the boys had ſeen a thing as tall as the room was long, all over covered with brimſtone and fire; as to our maſter, he not in the leaſt doubted that they were imported from the infernal regions; and, to ſtrengthen his opinion, remarked the ſulphureous ſcent they had left behind them. It was a long time before they were ſomewhat compoſed, and then we went in proceſſion, each ſtriving to be laſt, to inſpect the rooms over head; and divers comments were made upon every thing there, particularly at the doors being all flung wide open, which, Mr. Proſody well obſerved, was not very neceſſary to ſuch aërial beings, ſeeing the key-hole might as well have ſerved for their paſſage: he complained greatly at their perſonal ill uſage of him, and his imagination had magnified the pricking of pins into the fixing claws and talons into all parts of his body. His daughter's abſence, who could not be found high nor low, gave him great apprehenſions, and he was fearful, as he had not obſerved when ſhe withdrew, that they had taken her away when they had vaniſhed; which he conjectured muſt be, when the dreadful peal of thunder, as he called it, growled in his ears. He concluded his diſcourſe with repeating, in a mournful tone, accompanied with a profound ſigh, thoſe lines of Milton—

'Spirits, in whatſoever ſhape they chuſe,
'Dilated or condenſe, bright or obſcure,
'Can execute their airy purpoſes,
'And works of love or enmity produce!'

He gave all, moreover, a ſtrict charge not to divulge the occurrence to any of the neighbours; fearing, mayhap, that it might be prejudicial to his intereſt with the parents of his boarders.

As to myſelf and my fellow-conſpirators,

ſpirators, we got apart, as ſoon as we could, and then gave vent to our mirth, and applauded each other for the conduct we had ſhewn in the execution of our project, and bound one another by ſolemn promiſes to the keeping of the ſecret.

The next morning my maſter was releaſed from one part of his anxiety by the arrival of old Mr. Harrow, who came to let him know that his daughter was married to his ſon, and to make the matter eaſy, which he found leſs difficult, as the father was much mortified and creſt-fallen at what had happened the night before, and the new married couple were introduced and pardoned immediately; but, as the bridegroom had very injudiciouſly truſted the ſecret to his wife the night before, ſhe, like a true woman, was too big with it, and too much mortified to ſee her father and mother, with herſelf, ſo much duped by three ſtripplings, to conceal it long, and that very evening betrayed the whole affair. Words cannot expreſs the rage of the old pedagogue; like a furious maſtiff, who, in the midſt of an hungry fit, has been robbed of his favourite bone by ſome puny whiffling cur, and ſeizes him by the neck, and worries and tears him without mercy, deaf to all the yelpings and moans he makes; ſo, ſeizing us all, three, he hauled us in the utmoſt conſternation, into the ſchool-room, where he locked us in, telling us, with great fierceneſs, he would return to us ſoon, when he had thought of a puniſhment ſevere enough for our demerits. As ſoon as we had recovered ourſelves a little from our ſurprize and diſmay, we began to conſult how we ſhould avoid the impending ſtorm that threatened us; and, at laſt, came all to a reſolution to endeavour an eſcape, and return to our fathers, and let them honeſtly into the whole of the affair, and truſt to their mercy, as we had numberleſs allegations againſt our maſter and miſtreſs, which would counterbalance their accuſations. We had all exhauſted the meaſure of inſtruction and learning he had the capacity to beſtow on us; and as we apprehended we had not thrown away their money, or our time, it gave us the utmoſt confidence of getting well over the matter.

The ſchool-room was one ſtory high, and underneath one of the back windows was an out-houſe, that ſerved for a brew-houſe, which was quite cloſe to the wall, and but a ſmall deſcent from the window: this we pitched upon as the readieſt way to get from durance, as we could drop from the window upon the tiling, and from thence, for lads of our agility, it was but a moderate jump to the ground. The names of my two fellow-ſufferers were Jack Sharpley and Tom Archer, both pretty near my own age; and the former was the firſt to try the experiment, which we could not delay a moment, for already an hour and an half had been ſpent in the foregoing deliberations. He made his eſſay, and got down very ſucceſsfully, and ſo did Tom Archer; but I, not practiſing the ſame ſleight, or being heavier, broke the tiling, and fell through the rafters into the brew-houſe. I was almoſt ſtunned by the fall; but recovered myſelf in a few minutes, and examining the door, found it, to my great terror, locked faſt, ſo that I was fairly caught in Lob's pound. I could ſee no way to deliver myſelf from this unexpected priſon; and, whilſt I was ruminating, heard the key turn in the door, on which I hid myſelf behind a large back, trembling and ſhaking with apprehenſion from head to foot. As ſoon as the door opened, I ſaw it was my maſter that entered; who, perceiving the damage done over-head, for he had not heard the noiſe I made in my fall, immediately gueſſed at the caſe, and cried to himſelf: 'O ho! 'my gentlemen were making their 'eſcape, I find; but I dare ſay one of 'them has fallen into this trap, if not 'all the three.' And then, calling to his wife, he bid her ſend one of the boys with a light, for the farther part of the place was very dark. I cannot ſay I ever was in a more doleful ſituation in my life, and was ſo confuſed with dread and fear, that not one ſcheme preſented itſelf for my deliverance, and I thought I muſt infallibly fall a prey to this fierce enemy. The candle came, and he bid the boy place a ſtool, on which he got up, firſt to inſpect a large copper, which was almoſt underneath the fracture I had made in the cieling, but which luckily

I had

I had eſcaped falling into: as he was ſomewhat purblind, he ſtooped over, that he might have the more commodious view, and to reach farther ſtood on one leg; 'Now,' ſays I to myſelf, 'is 'the time to eſcape, or never;' and, running ſwiftly from my hiding-place, took hold of his ſupporting leg, and at one heaving toſſed him head foremoſt into the copper, which, by the report of his fall, ſeemed not to be quite void of water; then at one bound ſprung through the door-way, and without one reverted look, ſwift as a frighted hare before the purſuing greedy hounds, I gained the bottom of the garden, and ſoon meaſured the adjacent meadow, where I found my two aſſociates, who were trembling and apprehenſive for my ſafety. They could ſcarce believe their eyes; but it was no time to talk, and, hallooing to them to follow me, we neither ſtopped nor pauſed till we got near two miles from the territories of our perſecutor: we then abated our ſpeed, and heartily congratulated one another, that we had thus ſaved our bacon, and diſappointed the vengeance of this cruel pedagogue. Upon examining our ſtock of money, we found three or four ſhillings amongſt us all, which was more than ſufficient to defray our expences to my father's, where, through my perſuaſions, my companions agreed to accompany me, before they went to their reſpective homes, as their parents both lived within five or ſix miles of our houſe, and I had promiſed to engage him to become the mediator with them for their pardon. We arrived at about ſix o'clock in the following evening in our village; but I did not chuſe to enter my father's abruptly, and therefore got Mr. Solfa, the clerk, to go firſt to him, with an account of our arrival, and to beg leave we might wait upon him, with a relation of the reaſons for our elopement. He readily undertook the taſk, having been always very fond of me; and, my father not being at home, imparted the news to my mother, who eagerly ordered us to come to her; which accordingly we performed, and I was received with the utmoſt tenderneſs and affection, and my companions with great civility, and were ordered to be refreſhed before ſhe would hear our ſtory.

CHAP. V.

HIS RECEPTION AT HOME WITH HIS COMRADES—THEY ARE REPROVED BY HIS FATHER—SEVERAL EXCELLENT OBSERVATIONS—HIS FATHER, WITH THOSE OF HIS COMPANIONS, PAY A VISIT TO MR. PROSODY—HIS BEHAVIOUR THEREON.

A Galley ſlave that has been long chained to the oar, and ſubjected to the remorſeleſs rage and cruel ſtripes of his overſeer, could not more rejoice at being reſtored to freedom, than we did at our deliverance from the brutality of our incenſed maſter; and my mother, who indulged the utmoſt fondneſs at my unexpected arrival, not having ſeen me above once ſince I firſt went to ſchool, undertook to break the matter to my father, and to make my peace, when ſhe underſtood in what a manner we had been uſed, at which ſhe expreſſed the utmoſt indignation. He had been to pay a viſit to a neighbouring gentleman, and did not return till pretty late, when my mother let him into the ſtory, which very much ſurprized him, and he deſired her to call us to him. I ran to him, as ſoon as I ſaw him, and he very affectionately embraced me: 'So, Joey!—So young 'gentlemen!—I find you have fled from 'puniſhment; let me have a ſincere 'and true account of what has hap-'pened, and by that I ſhall be able to 'judge whether I ſhall entertain you, 'or ſend you back to your maſter.' I was ſpokeſman, and therefore related to him, which he never had any idea of before, the tyrannical behaviour, the terrible ſcourgings of Mr. Proſody, and the hardſhips we had undergone from the miſerable and covetous temper of him and his wife; the ſtory of the pear-tree, the adventure of the cats, and every thing elſe, without diſguiſe; concluding, that, as I had attained to every thing that he was capable to teach me, and had been far from neglecting my book, I hoped he would not ſo far mortify me, as to ſend me there again; but would either undertake the farther care of me himſelf, or procure me another maſter, and intercede with the parents of my friends,

friends, to take them alſo into favour. He was greatly incenſed at the treatment we had met with, and could ſcarcely keep the gravity of his countenance, whilſt I related the little pranks we had played our tutor; but conſtraining himſelf as much as poſſible, he gave us the following lecture—

'I am charmed, my dear, that you 'have not miſpent your ſchool-hours, 'but have made ſuch a proficiency in 'the languages, which indeed I have 'heard before from your maſter him-'ſelf—who was alſo tempted, young 'gentlemen, to give me the ſame ac-'count of you too, the laſt time I 'was at his houſe; which I commu-'nicated to your fathers, and which 'gave them great ſatisfaction. We 'had intended to take you away from 'thence, at the expiration of the next 'quarter, but you have anticipated 'our deſign. I blame myſelf for not 'having more minutely enquired into 'matters of ſuch importance, as the 'temper and diſpoſition of a perſon 'whom I entruſted with the govern-'ment of you, at ſuch a critical part 'of life; the right management of ſuch 'young minds, at that time, laying 'the foundation of every future good, 'or, on the contrary, every future 'error and misfortune: I own, I was 'deceived in the account I received, 'both of him and his family, ſo falſe-'ly tender perſons are of giving a true 'character of a man in ſuch an em-'ployment. From my knowledge of 'your natural temper, I muſt imagine 'you would never have been guilty of 'ſome things you have mentioned, 'had not the contemptible behaviour 'of your maſter, and the little care 'he took to form your minds, which, 'by the bye, is one principal buſineſs 'of a ſchoolmaſter, laid you open to 'ſuch puerile temptations as lay in 'your way. If I forgive you, and re-'ceive you into favour, it is on this 'condition, that you are ſorry for any 'diſregard, though ever ſo trifling, 'you have paid to other people's pro-'perty, and the low and baſe princi-'ples of revenge, (which, indeed, your 'maſter ſet you an example of) that 'you have indulged; though now 'they may be imputed to boyiſh inat-'tention and folly, if not checked, 'they may grow too ſtrong for all the 'good ſenſe you may ever be maſters of 'to eradicate.—You, Sir, for the fu-'ture part of your education, ſhall be 'indebted to my care; I begin to ſee 'the folly of publick ſchools, merely 'becauſe we can never be ſure of the 'good qualities of thoſe we confide you 'to.—As to you, young gentlemen, 'you'll ſtay with Joe, till I have ſeen 'your fathers, and reconciled them to 'my way of thinking.' When he had thus finiſhed this reaſonable and tender ſpeech, he took me in his arms, and embraced me with great emotion, and alſo ſaluted my ſchool-fellows; and then proceeded to examine us in the ſeveral authors we had read, and applauded us greatly for the ready knowledge we ſhewed in them, and the taſte we ſeemed to have for their elegances. I was now in my fourteenth year; and, without vanity, may ſay, that nature had ſtamped on my ſoul the moſt virtuous and generous affections; no wonder, then, if the kind reception I met with at home, and the reaſonable and prudent manner of my treatment, gave me the higheſt ſentiments of reſpect and veneration for this good father; a contrary treatment, and ſending me back again, would have had the worſt effects upon ſuch a temper, which argument and perſuaſion will work upon, with proper force, but fourneſs, ill-nature, and harſhneſs, drive to the laſt extremities: the more boys are uſed like rational, thinking creatures, the more they are applied to by gentle methods, the better they behave; and the contrary maxims, I am perſuaded, are the cauſes of much of that degeneracy we every day have ſuch melancholy proofs of in the riſing generation. By being thus treated, they learn a habit of reaſoning, and ſo ſtrongly imbibe it, that they practiſe it all their lives after; and let the ſallies of their boiling paſſions carry them to ever ſuch extravagant lengths, you fix a monitor in their breaſts, which ſooner or later draws them off from and corrects their wild purſuits.

My father waited, the next day, on Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Archer; who, as they were both men of good ſenſe, eaſily came into his notions, and agreed to take their ſons away from Proſody, determining to ſend them to another ſchool at York; but, as my father recollected there were no proper compa-

nions,

nions for me in his neighbourhood, he generouſly told them he would undertake the farther care of them, together with me, at which they were highly delighted, and returned him many acknowledgments; and, as they were all ſomewhat in arrear with Proſody, they agreed to ride over together to his houſe, and finally diſcharge their obligations to him.

When they arrived there, the old pedant, not knowing we had been before-hand with him, told ſo many falſhoods of us, and inveighed againſt us with ſo much apparent malice and reſentment, that if they had not been prepoſſeſſed againſt him before, it would have given them the ſame ideas we had laboured to inſpire them with. They made little reply to what he ſaid, and when he came to underſtand their errand, and that we had got home, he was quite thunder-ſtruck, and began to ſoften his manner of expreſſion, laying the tricks we had been guilty of upon levity and puerility, which before he had aſcribed to a natural turpitude and wickedneſs of heart: but his attempts to reclaim us were all in vain, and they parted with him, leaving him in the higheſt diſguſt and ill-humour, which was ſenſibly increaſed by a very grave lecture which was read him by my father, upon the right conduct of the office of a ſchoolmaſter, and the baſeneſs of avarice and revenge. A ſervant that attended them brought us our books, and what wearing-apparel we had left behind us in our precipitate retreat.

CHAP. VI.

HIS FATHER'S MANNER OF EDUCATION — SHARPLEY IS SENT TO SEA, AND ARCHER TO OPORTO—PROPER REFLECTIONS —TAKES GREAT DELIGHT IN HUNTING, AND GAINS THE FRIENDSHIP OF SIR WALTER RICH, BY A GENEROUS ACTION —HIS FATHER DETERMINES TO SEND HIM TO LONDON.

AFTER we had been indulged ſome days in ſuch amuſements as were ſuitable to our years, my father applied himſelf to the farther cultivation of our underſtandings. We had all made pretty near the ſame progreſs, and were, at ſo green an age, tolerable maſters of Greek and Latin; and, as we were intended for the world, he endeavoured to give us the moſt ſtrong ideas of religion and morality; which, being conveyed in the moſt captivating manner to our minds, ſunk deep into our ſouls, and were the more ſtrengthened by the excellent pattern we ſaw daily before us in my father and mother, who uſed my companions as well as myſelf, like their own children. We ſoon became proficients in the moſt uſeful branches of the mathematicks, and natural philoſophy was rendered ſo entertaining to us, and diſcovered ſuch a field of wonders, that we forgot all our trifling ſports, and that alone conſtituted the employment of our leiſure hours. He taught us the French language, which is ſo generally ſpoken all over the world; and, my mother talking it very well, we converſed hardly in any other tongue. To preſerve our healths we were permitted to have a fencing-maſter twice a week, who alſo was directed to form us to a polite addreſs, without making dancing ſo important a part of education, as it generally ſeems to be reckoned. We had the happineſs to make great improvement in every thing we were put to; and my father, forſaking almoſt all other company, became our conſtant companion; and his honied precepts met with ſuch eager attention, that we became the wonder, and, at the ſame time, the delight of the adjacent country. Happy period of life, when the boiling paſſions, the attendants of human nature, are kept under the reſtraints of reaſon and authority! when care and anxiety is never taſted, and the genuine chearfulneſs of the heart is undepreſſed by the hurrying toils and torturing viciſſitudes of life! With what regret I look back and ſurvey the engaging ſcenes which riches and ſplendor can never recompence the loſs of! Ye hours of golden inſtruction! ye moments of pure content, and untainted pleaſure! how dearly ought we to prize you! and how little are we acquainted with your true value and eſtimation! Hurrying into the tempeſtuous ocean of buſy advancing years, we ſoon are loſt to your ineffable ſweets; the mind grows foul and muddy with croſſes and vexations, and over-

over-bearing folly, and growing vices, turmoil the reſt of our mortal pilgrimage. Well has Providence allotted a few years of youth and innocence to our ſhare: had we been doomed to ſurvey and feel at once the load of ills we are born to, without this bliſsful pauſe of misfortune and anguiſh, who could ſupport the ſhocking ſtate of exiſtence? And yet, how wiſely does Providence ſtimulate and excite us to launch out into maturer action, and all the fancied joys and real ſorrows, that at every advancing ſtep ſurround us; but by the inſtability and vanity of the former, and the conſtant attendance of the latter, ſpur us ſtill to explore new regions of extatick calm and eternal content, which it has reſerved for thoſe who worthily attain to the period of their race, the goal of their purſuits.

We had paſſed near two years in this ſituation at my father's, when Mr. Sharpley, who had other children, and but a ſmall eſtate, determined to ſend his ſon to ſea, under a brother who commanded a man of war, and accordingly procured him the king's letter; and, to rob me of both my dear companions, Mr. Archer, about the ſame time, ſent his ſon to Oporto, to a diſtant relation, who was a conſiderable merchant there, to be placed in his compting-houſe. As we had lived in the greateſt harmony, we could not part without the higheſt tokens of ſorrow, and took our leave of each other, after proteſtations of eternal friendſhip, and reſolutions of renewing our familiarity whenever it ſhould be in our power. My father and mother were affected with the loſs of them, and he could not be prevailed on to accept of the leaſt conſideration for the agreeable pains he had beſtowed upon them; the fruits of which were very viſible in their converſation and behaviour, and gave the utmoſt ſatisfaction to their parents. To ſhew their gratitude, they begged my father to let me ſpend ſome months at their houſe, which they deſired ſo preſſingly, that he could not refuſe them; and accordingly I went home with them, both living in the ſame part of the country, between five and ſix miles from our houſe. I was now in my ſixteenth year, and was flattered with the appellation of a polite and intelligent young gentleman; my ſtature was ſuperior to moſt of my age, and nature had beſtowed on me a great ſhare of health and ſpirits, and a very agreeable perſon; ſo that my company was very much prized by the fathers of my friends, and I made one in all their parties of hunting, of which they were both very fond, and became a very keen ſportſman, deſpiſing every danger and difficulty in the chace; by which I acquired the applauſe of a baronet, whoſe ſeat was in that neighbourhood, who had the higheſt regard for talents of that ſort, and thought no man worth a ruſh that could not ſurmount every obſtacle in purſuit of the fox or the hare. He had a very large eſtate, which, as he was a widower, and ſhewed no inclination to a ſecond marriage, muſt, of courſe, deſcend to an only daughter, then in the thirteenth year of her age; ſo that Miſs Louiſa Rich was reckoned the richeſt heireſs in all thoſe parts. Sir Walter was one of thoſe Roman Catholick gentry, who are contented to receive their opinions becauſe their fathers had poſſeſſed them before, but was far from indulging a perſecuting ſpirit, or maxims deſtructive of the conſtitution; and was, in general, much eſteemed by his neighbours, and loved by his tenants of every perſuaſion.

This gentleman was never eaſy when I was not with him, and expreſſed, on every occaſion, the greateſt regard for me; introduced me to his daughter, and to a nephew who lived with him, about my own age, and who was ſaid, by moſt people, to be intended as an huſband for Miſs by her father. If I was charmed with the converſation of this innocent young lady, who already diſcovered the beauties of an angelick mind in a lovely perſon, I was no leſs diſguſted with the ſurly brutal behaviour of her couſin, who was a mere country booby. I enjoyed my time in this friendly excurſion, very deliciouſly; and every now and then went over and paid a viſit at home, the tenderneſs of my mother ſcarce brooking ſuch an abſence from her without it.

We were pretty late engaged in a converſation one evening at Mr. Archer's, when a ſervant came in with the melancholy tidings, that Sir Walter's houſe was on fire, which alarmed the company, and immediately put an end to our argument; and we ran

with great haſte, to ſee if our aſſiſtance might be of any ſervice in ſuch a dreadful calamity. The lower part of the building was enveloped in flames, which were aſcending very ſwiftly, and ſpreading with dreadful fury; Sir Walter was lying on the ground, having ſprained his foot by jumping from his chamber-window; and the diſtracted domeſticks were buſy in removing ſuch goods as their ſurprize would permit them to take away at the firſt alarm: but the moſt ſhocking ſight of all was, the young lady calling out of the window of her apartment for aſſiſtance, in the utmoſt diſtraction, having only a looſe gown caſt over her. Her father was unable to move: the clodpoles about him were too fearful, or ſtupid, to adventure to her relief; and the nephew had ſecured himſelf in an adjoining alehouſe, where he was drinking with ſome country folks, and telling them with what difficulty he eſcaped the flames. In this confuſion the poor young lady would, no doubt, have undergone the fate of the building, had not Mr. Archer and myſelf, thought of a long ladder, which ſtood at a farmer's hard by, which, with ſome aſſiſtance, we reared againſt the ſide of the houſe: this no ſooner was done, than I mounted valiantly up it, having totally forgot my own ſafety in the contemplation of Miſs's danger. After being ſomewhat ſcorched in my aſcent, I gained the window, and directly jumped in, when immediately taking her in my arms, and charging her to hold faſt, I reſolutely deſcended the way I came up, and delivered her into the hands of her father, where ſhe immediately fainted away; and the hurry of my ſpirits, and the fright I had undergone, ſo weakened me, that I alſo fell down ſenſeleſs at his feet. I ſoon recovered myſelf, and, after drinking a cordial, which was brought me, enquired how my charge did; and was anſwered, that ſhe was carried away very ill, to Mr. Sharpley's. The baronet took me into his arms, called me his preſerver and ſaviour, and vowed he would never forget my bravery the longeſt day he had to live: in ſhort, I received ſuch a profuſion of compliments on every ſide, that I could not conceal my bluſhes. I went afterwards to pay a viſit to Miſs, and found her better; and though my heart was too young ever to have known or felt the ſoft impreſſions of love, I perceived a wondrous ſatisfaction in her thanks, and thought myſelf happy in having thus rendered her this trifling ſervice. The houſe was reduced to aſhes; and we underſtood the fire had been occaſioned by the careleſſneſs of a drunken cook, who went to ſleep with a candle burning upon the dreſſer, which unhappily having caught hold of ſome linen, had ſpread the flames before the family had been alarmed, or any help could be procured. After this accident, the attachment of Sir Walter to me, and the civilities I received from his daughter, were unbounded; he ſtudied, on every occaſion, to ſhew me the utmoſt reſpect, and was ſcarce ever a minute eaſy, unleſs I made one of his company; directing Miſs, in token of gratitude, to inſiſt upon my accepting a diamond ring, which ſhe took off her own finger to place upon mine. I could not refuſe ſo genteel and ſo valuable a preſent, which, in an involuntary rapture, which I then was far from underſtanding the motives of, I ſolemnly vowed never to part with.

In two months after this incident, I received orders from my father to return home; and he told me in the letter, that he had determined to ſend me to London, if it was not contrary to my inclinations; and wanted to talk with me about it. I took leave of all my friends, after returning thanks for the great honours and civilities I had received; and was accompanied by Mr. Archer to my father's.

CHAP. VII.

EXCELLENT DISCOURSE OF HIS FATHER TO HIM—HE RECEIVES LETTERS FROM SHARPLEY AND ARCHER—SETS OUT WITH HIS FATHER AND MOTHER FOR LONDON—ARRIVES THERE—REFLECTIONS ON THE FIRST VIEWS OF THAT PLACE—HE IS BOUND APPRENTICE TO MR. DIAPER, A WHOLESALE LINEN-DRAPER.

WHEN our kind viſitor was gone, and the firſt two or three days after my arrival were paſſed, my

my father took me with him into the garden, and then unboſomed himſelf to me in the following manner. 'I 'ſent for you, my dear ſon, to hear a 'ſcheme I have to propoſe for your 'welfare, as you are now arrived at 'an age in which we ſhould begin to 'conſider of ſome profeſſion or em-'ployment that may make you happy, 'and a benefit to the community. 'You may perceive, by my not having 'ſent you to the univerſity, that I did 'not intend you for the church: no, 'my dear, believe me, the diſcourage-'ments that attend the ſacred order, 'and the general contempt, which 'many of them have given too much 'ground for, that they labour under, 'are a ſufficient bar to any ſuch de-'ſign. Your diſpoſition might in-'duce me to prefer the army to any 'other deſignation; but without friends 'in power, or an independent fortune, 'the greateſt merit makes a very poor 'figure in ſcarlet, and affords very 'little happineſs to a family if ever a 'man's ſofter moments ſhould render 'marriage deſirable. The law I can-'not approve, as it is now circum-'ſtanced, and as the generality of 'the practitioners carry it on; and as 'to phyſick, I think it labours under 'the ſame, or greater diſadvantages, 'than either. As you know me to 'be a great friend to my country, and 'willing, as much as I can, that you 'ſhould become as uſeful as poſſible to 'it, you will not be ſurprized that I 'have the utmoſt veneration for mer-'chants and traders, who diffuſe the 'bleſſings of commerce and traffick 'to every individual, and are the up-'holders and ſupports of the intereſt 'and independency of this nation. 'In all the other callings I have men-'tioned, there is a degree of ſervility 'and meanneſs, neceſſary to a man 'who would be eminent, that I, by 'no means, would make neceſſary to 'you. By trade, you will preſerve a 'generous independency, if you act 'wiſely and prudently; and will be-'come a uſeful and valuable member 'of the common-wealth, and an ad-'vantage to your friends and rela-'tions; you will be enabled to pro-'vide for your family with honour, 'and in a manner ſuitable to that lau-'dable ambition and tenderneſs that 'ought to inſpire the boſom of a huſ-'band and a father. I am not going 'to propoſe a branch of trade that ſhall 'diſgrace your endowments, but one 'wherein you may preſerve the gen-'tleman in the man of buſineſs. You 'know your mother has a diſtant re-'lation in London, Mr. Diaper, the 'wholeſale linen-draper, who is a 'man of great honour, ſtrict integri-'ty, and a large fortune, which he 'has principally raiſed by induſtry 'and diligence in his buſineſs. It is 'to him, if you are not averſe, for I 'would never force your inclinations, 'fancy what you will, that I would 'put you apprentice; and therefore 'conſider by to morrow, that I may 'write him word of my reſolution; 'for he was here ſome days ſince, on 'his return from a journey into Scot-'land, and I made him the offer of 'you, at which he was very well 'pleaſed.' I returned him my moſt grateful thanks, told him I had a hint of it before from my mother, and that, as well from the view of the advan-tages of ſuch a deſtination, as from a knowledge that it was agreeable to his ſentiments, I very readily obeyed him, in giving my aſſent to go to Mr. Dia-per. He was entirely ſatisfied to find me ſo ready to cloſe with him in it; and wrote to that gentleman, that he would ſet out with me in a fortnight's time. Mr. Sharpley paid me a viſit the next day, and brought me two let-ters, one from his ſon, and another from young Mr. Archer, which came each in a packet to their father's. Sharpley's was to this effect.

'LOO, OFF CAPE HENRY, VIR-'GINIA, JULY 7, 1712.

'MY DEAR FRIEND,

'I Should be inexcuſable, if, whilſt 'I was writing to England, I 'did not think of teſtifying thus, that 'you are ever in my mind, and that 'the friendſhip we ſo early contracted 'is rather ſtronger now, than when I 'had the pleaſure to be ſo near you. 'All the difficulties and dangers of a 'long and tedious voyage, nor a va-'riety of new objects, have been able 'to baniſh my regret at our ſeparation. 'I hope you are in health, and my 'worthy tutor, and your, I was going

'to ſay mine, dear mother. Pray, 'my dear Joey, let me hear from you 'every opportunity, and believe me to 'be *your moſt affectionate and ſincere 'friend,*

'JOHN SHARPLEY.'

The other was to this purport.

'OPORTO, AUGUST 20, 1712.

'DEAREST JOE,

'I Take the firſt opportunity I have 'to convince you that I am ſtill 'as much actuated by friendſhip, as 'ever I was, and that I ſhall ever re-'tain the moſt lively reſpect and value 'for a perſon, who, for my life, I 'can look upon in no other light than 'that of a brother. I hope you have 'heard before now from Sharpley, 'who I underſtood was bound to Vir-'ginia, where he is likely to have a 'long ſtation. My duty attends your 'dear father and mother; pray let 'them know I have not forgot, nor 'ever ſhall, their goodneſs and bene-'volence to me. I am well, and can 'already expreſs myſelf in the Portu-'gueſe language, well enough to be 'underſtood in common matters. I 'am immerſed in a great deal of buſi-'neſs, but ſhall always, I hope, find 'time to prove myſelf, *dear Joe, your 'affectionate and faithful friend,*

'THOMAS ARCHER.'

Words will too faintly expreſs the warmth and zeal of friendſhip that theſe letters inſpired; for, indeed, my affection was rather increaſed, than diminiſhed, by our ſeparation; and as they were to ſend a packet to London, to be forwarded both to Virginia and Portugal, the next day, I immediately wrote anſwers to them.

The fortnight was expired, when my father and mother determined to go to London with me; and accordingly, after I had taken my leave of all my friends and acquaintance, particularly of Sir Walter and his amiable daughter, who both expreſſed great concern at loſing my company, we ſet out, and arrived at that great metropolis, after a very eaſy and pleaſant journey, which, as my father called on ſeveral friends in the road, and endeavoured to make the travelling as agreeable as poſſible to my mother and me, by ſhewing us every thing remarkable in our way, took us up near a fortnight.

If I was ſurprized at the great number of carriages of all ſorts, and the multitude of travellers and paſſengers that crouded the roads, as we approached near London, how was I aſtoniſhed at the prodigious concourſe of people I diſcovered at my entrance into town? All the ideas I had formed from my knowledge of York, and other places in the country, came far ſhort of what I beheld. My wonder increaſed in proportion as I advanced into the heart of the city, and ſurveyed the buſy herds that thronged continually through every ſtreet and avenue, all with the marks of buſineſs and attention painted in their faces. The ſight gave me a ſtrong notion of the laudable importance of trade, which thus directs and obliges every one in his ſtation to be ever vigilant, ever ſtudious to employ his time, in ſomewhat or other, tending to the ſervice of individuals, and conſequently beneficial to the community in general. I could ſee no ſuch abſent, unmeaning viſages, as the country is filled with, and began to entertain a very contemptible opinion of a life of idleneſs, ſports and pleaſures, where ſelf is the object that engroſſes all our cares and all our ſolicitudes: not ſo the induſtrious citizen, whoſe endeavours to benefit himſelf neceſſarily produce employment for, and conduce to the emolument of artificers in every branch of work, and he may be ſaid to be one of thoſe who contribute to the ſupport of millions. Such reflections as theſe ſtill encouraged me in the reſolutions I had taken of becoming one of this uſeful body of people.

Mr. Diaper, being a diſtant relation of my mother's, had inſiſted on their making uſe of the convenience of his houſe, during their ſtay in town; ſo that this was the place we went firſt to, where himſelf and his whole family vied with each other in the civility of our reception.

My father, before the buſineſs he came upon was concluded, carried us to all the publick places, and ſhewed us every thing remarkable in and about London; for he told me, he could not bear to leave the edge of my curioſity too keen, leſt I might fall into improper company, in purſuit of my gratifying

fying myself with the ſight of theſe novelties, after his departure, and thereby neglect my buſineſs.

Every thing being agreed upon between my parents and my maſter, as I muſt now begin to call him, I was bound apprentice at ——— Hall, of which Company he was a liveryman, my father paying him a conſideration of three hundred pounds with me; and ſoon after, as he had now been abſent five weeks from home, reſolved to return; but firſt agreed with a friend of his to remit to him thirty pounds every year for my uſe, which I was to conſider as pocket-money, that, as my dear father and mother ſaid, I might be above temptation to any mean or diſhoneſt action; to this friend he alſo recommended me very ſtrongly for his advice and inſtructions in any thing that might occur, during my apprenticeſhip; and, after beſtowing upon me a number of excellent rules and leſſons for my better conduct in this tickliſh part of life, and giving me their cordial bleſſing, they ſet out for Yorkſhire, leaving me in a tenderly mournful ſituation; which, as it was the firſt, ſo it was one of the ſincereſt griefs I ever felt in my life.

CHAP. VIII.

CHARACTER OF MR. DIAPER, HIS WIFE, AND SON—VERY ASSIDUOUS IN HIS BUSINESS—CONTRACTS A FRIENDSHIP WITH YOUNG DIAPER—GAINS THE ESTEEM OF HIS MASTER—MANNER OF SPENDING THEIR VACANT HOURS—REFLECTIONS ON TRADE AND COMMERCE.

AS ſoon as I was initiated into the method of our buſineſs, I was reſolved not to be an unprofitable ſervant, and applied myſelf with the utmoſt attention to make myſelf maſter of what I imagined muſt be my future dependence; and I found all the kind inſtruction from Mr. Diaper, that I was taught to expect. He was turned of forty years of age, and having been in trade all his life, ſucceeding his father in the ſame ſet of cuſtomers, he had, by a thorough indefatigability, application, and induſtry, got, as it is expreſſed by the citizens, *the fore-horſe by the head*; and not only ſo, but, excluſive of his buſineſs and ready-money, was poſſeſſed of a pretty eſtate in right of his wife. His table was plentifully, not luxuriouſly or extravagantly ſupplied, and a friend was ſure of always finding a welcome there. His œconomy in the expences of his family was remarkable; but bordered not in the leaſt on that ſpecies of parſimony, which, however praiſe-worthy, is never agreeable to ſervants. His temper was mild and ſociable, and his underſtanding clear and ſtrong; to his ſuperiors he behaved with a reſpectful regard; to his equals with a generous and manly freedom; to his inferiors and ſervants with humanity, conſideration, and good-nature: his uprightneſs, integrity, and honour in his dealings, gained him the confidence of every body he dealt with, and the good ſenſe and knowledge he was endowed with, rendered him a deſirable and improving companion. Mrs. Diaper was a woman of virtue, prudence, and capacity, and the utmoſt harmony was viſible in their behaviour to each other; nor was his value leſſened, but rather increaſed, by a bad and declining ſtate of health, which obliged her to be pretty much at their country-houſe, where himſelf generally ſpent half the week. They had only one child, who had now ſerved three years of his apprenticeſhip to his father, and on whom, as he was a ſober, faithful, and careful youth, the weight of the buſineſs was devolved, though at the early age of nineteen. Notwithſtanding this young gentleman had been early familiarized to the management of ſuch important concerns, he had made a very pretty advance in letters; and, having read and digeſted ſome of the beſt authors, he ſurpaſſed, in the faculties of his mind, moſt of his age. Though he had none of the irregular flights and ſallies of youth, and his whole ſoul ſeemed to be bent to the exerciſe of the neceſſary duties of his buſineſs, in which he was very expert; yet he was quite polite and agreeable in his converſation, nor did the orderly management of his conduct take off from the taſte of innocent and laudable amuſements, which he was a great friend to. His honeſt, undeſigning, and generous heart, was capable of a warm and diſintereſted friendſhip,

and

and his behaviour and addreſs made him the deſire and delight of every company. My education and manner of thinking made this worthy family very pleaſing to me, and I had all the reaſon in the world to be ſatisfied with my ſituation. My maſter treated me like another ſon, and the young gentleman and myſelf becoming bed-fellows, entered into ſtrict friendſhip, which was increaſed daily by a conformity of ſentiments and actions—

'Twas ſympathy of honeſt minds:
Like ſtrings wound up in muſick,
Where, at one touch, both utter the ſame harmony.'

In our buſineſs we went hand in hand; he ever ſtudied therein to make his ſuperiority eaſy to me, and I to make my reſpect and diligence agreeable to him. In our diverſions, we were conſtant aſſociates; and, in ſhort, a more ſuitable pair were never directed to ſet out in life together.

Our dealings, which were very extenſive, were carried on in a truly mercantile manner, and, Mr. Diaper having a very faithful journeyman, his ſon and myſelf were principally employed in the compting-houſe. However, as my whole ſtudy was to pleaſe my maſter, I pretended to no exemption from any pains or labour in the other parts of his affairs, being thoroughly ſenſible that every thing that tended to the promotion of his intereſt or advantage, ought to be conſidered by me as my duty, in the ſtation I was at preſent placed in. Therefore I never waited to receive orders or inſtructions, when any thing was on the carpet that required my aſſiſtance; but ſtudied, in every thing, to be beforehand with either his deſires or expectations. By this method of acting, and preſerving an obliging and even deportment to every body in the family, I procured ſo much the eſteem and confidence of my maſter, that he was extraordinarily ready to impart to me every ſecret of his traffick and concerns; to puſh me forward in the acquirement of my occupation, and, in any point of indulgence, even prevented my wiſhes. When the hurry of the day was over, we ſpent the evening at home, in converſation or reading, and now and then had a ſelect company of friends with us; or elſe we ſought out ſome amuſement abroad, that would at the ſame time divert and improve us; and in all things young Mr. Diaper and myſelf were inſeparable.

At the cloſe of the week, we generally rode down to my maſter's houſe in the country, and ſtaid till Monday morning, where Mrs. Diaper made no manner of diſtinction between us, and on every occaſion expreſſed her liking to me, and her approbation of the ſtrict union between myſelf and her ſon. My maſter kept a coach and pair, and a brace of geldings, one of which was always at my ſervice; ſo that I experienced very little difference between my happy ſervitude and the indulgences I had been uſed to receive from my father and mother at home.

Our various correſpondences and large dealings ſtill opened more clearly the importance and dignity of trade to me, which not only bound together, and ſo mutually united the intereſts of mankind, as to individuals, but became the cement between country and country, and introduced a dependence upon the principles of honour, juſtice, uprightneſs, and punctuality, all over the world; thoſe principles being the very foundation of ſuch an intercourſe, and without which no man can poſſibly carry on a correſpondence in any kind of traffick. All wiſe princes, who have had the good of their ſubjects at heart, have conſtantly nouriſhed and given the greateſt encouragement to the arts of commerce; they have not only conſidered them, as they were ſure means to increaſe the riches of their ſubjects and their own revenues, but as they made their people wiſer and better, and conſequently more worthy of and faithful to their governors. An idle and debauched people will ever be the averſion and the plague of a diſcerning, and generous, and good prince.

I paſſed in this manner the firſt two years of my time with much ſatisfaction and improvement to myſelf, and engaged the kindneſs and applauſe of my maſter, (who took opportunities to give my father and mother great pleaſure in the knowledge of my behaviour) the love of my friend, and the reſpect of my fellow-ſervants. Happy ſhould I have been, if the ſucceeding years of my life had all been paſſed over with

the

the same innocence, virtue, and prudence, which would have secured me from the miseries and distresses I afterwards suffered.

CHAP. IX.

HE IS SURPRIZED BY THE CARRIAGE OF A MAID-SERVANT—HER EXTRAORDINARY ASSIDUITY TO OBLIGE HIM—SHE BETRAYS HER LOVE FOR HIM—HIS EFFORTS TO CURE HER—HE IS SEDUCED BY HER—HIS UNEASINESS THEREON—SHE BECOMES TROUBLESOME TO HIM, AND JEALOUS—CAUTIONS TO YOUTH—HE GROWS COLD TO HIS FRIEND—SEEKS COMPANY—BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH PRIM THE MERCER, AND PRIG THE ATTORNEY.

THUS happily I spent my time, practising all the excellent precepts of my father, and never deviating from the principles of virtue and honour; easy and contented, caressed and esteemed by every body. I generally wrote once a month to my father or mother, and had with great pleasure kept up a correspondence with my two old friends, Sharpley and Archer, the former of whom, I understood by the last letter I received, had been rated already as a midshipman by his uncle.

At our town-house, Mr. Diaper kept two maid-servants, one of whom was a young girl, the daughter of a farmer in Cambridgeshire, who was an agreeable creature, and possessed a good share of spirit and vivacity. The light I was considered in by the family, made the servants very assiduous in doing every thing they imagined would oblige me; but I had perceived, for a considerable time, that this young woman was more studious than ordinary, in doing such little matters for me as were necessary to one in my station; I had therefore been very generous to her on several occasions, to reward her for her obliging temper, not apprehending it to be from any other motive than that of her natural inclination, and from a sense of the good-nature I always shewed to the inferior servants; but I was soon forced to change my way of thinking. I had frequently caught her gazing at me with more than ordinary earnestness, and, if I happened to look suddenly that way, she would cast her eyes downward, blush, and I heard a sigh now and then escape her; if I went into my chamber on any occasion, I generally found her sitting there, whence she would retire on my approach, dropping a low curtsey; I thought I now and then could perceive tears in her eyes, and the whole family took notice her temper was very much altered, from that briskness usual to her, into a settled heaviness and melancholy. As I had conversed hitherto very little with the sex, I was not at all apprehensive of the true motives of this change, and therefore out of compassion, as imagining she had heard of some misfortunes from home, endeavoured by pleasantry and good-humour to set her to rights again; and, as she was a favourite of Mrs. Diaper's, her young master took the same pains, and often raillied her upon the little absence of mind she was guilty of. One day, in particular, having caught her all tears in our chamber, where I accidentally went for something or other, I asked her seriously, if any ill had happened to her, or, in short, if I could any ways be of service to her: 'Perhaps,' says I, jocosely, 'you have 'received some bad news of your 'sweetheart; but pr'ythee, Nanny, don't 'fret thyself to death about it; what, 'I suppose he is false, is not he?' She immediately got up; and, casting a tender look at me, passed suddenly out at the door, saying, 'Ah! Mr. Thomp-'son, if I have any sweetheart, he is 'not far from this spot, so much the 'worse luck for me.' I was immediately struck with the true state of the case; and, though very artless and stupid in such matters, perceived that I had been the cause of all this sudden alteration. In the first emotions of my heart, I felt some pleasure in the thought of this conquest, I must freely own; the girl was young and handsome, and that was a dangerous temptation to a young fellow of my sanguine and warm constitution; but soon the checks of reason and morality got the better in my mind, and I was resolved to behave to her in a more distant and cautious manner; for as it was impossible, and contrary to the ambition of my temper,

and

and the maxims of prudence and duty, to indulge a fancy for her in a laudable way, the expoſing myſelf to diſgrace, and her to ruin, was a thought too horrid to harbour in a ſoul that had been nurtured in a deteſtation of the ſordid and baſe gratifications of the paſſions. I ſeldom went into the houſe but at meal-times, after this, or when my young maſter accompanied me; and I forbore either to ſpeak to, or look upon her, hoping that this might induce her to come to a proper way of thinking; but I ſoon found this was a diſtemper that was not to be cured ſo ſuddenly: in proportion as I retreated, ſhe grew more and more inflamed, and put herſelf in my way wherever I went; would make twenty excuſes in a day to aſk for ſomewhat, or ſome queſtion in the ſhop or compting-houſe; and, as an example of the dangerous and faſcinating wiles of women, I myſelf grew uneaſy, was reſtleſs, new and unuſual deſires agitated my breaſt, I began to burn for I knew not what, and it was with the utmoſt force I reſtrained myſelf, when an unlucky opportunity ſoon betrayed all my reſolves. The other maid was one day ordered with a meſſage in the country, and unfortunately my friend was engaged to dine abroad, which he ſeldom did; ſo that I was forced to eat by myſelf, and nobody was there to wait on me but Mrs. Anne: the journeyman was alſo at my maſter's country-houſe, where he had been invited to ſpend a day or two. When I went up to dinner, I perceived at once that ſhe was dreſſed with more than ordinary care, and ſhe behaved with ſo much ready obligingneſs, that it was impoſſible for me not to fall into ſome diſcourſe with her; in ſhort, temptation and opportunity were ſuch forceable batteries againſt my better reſolutions, that a thouſand wanton ideas ruſhed into my brain, and ſpread their baneful influence over my whole frame. She perceived my ſituation, and improved it by all the arts ſhe was miſtreſs of: nature, too weak to aſſiſt my reaſon, ſhe triumphed in the ſpoils of my innocence; and, emboldened by the firſt treſpaſs, the guilty bliſs was too often repeated, before I could perſuade myſelf to retire. When I got by myſelf, I ſoon was tempted to deplore my change of condition; I accuſed myſelf of what I had been guilty of, with the utmoſt ſhame and confuſion; I now found myſelf ruffled, uneaſy, and reſtleſs; before, the goodneſs and the untaintedneſs of my heart ſhewed itſelf in all my actions, now I could ſcarce bear the pain of reflection, and dreaded to look even my virtuous friend in the face; the crime itſelf, the apprehenſion of the conſequences, the fear of my own reputation, the injury I had done to an innocent creature, as I thought her, by thus being ſeduced to indulge her weakneſs, all together, made my boſom a perfect hell; I began to form ſchemes of concealing the fatal intercourſe, and found, alas! for the firſt time, that I muſt learn to be a hypocrite, to pretend that innocence, which was now no more: the thought of thus *living a lye**, gave me ſtill more inexpreſſible torture. I reſolved to renew the guilt no more, and then immediately forfeited my reſolution. Nor was my anxiety confined to my own reflections; I met with reproaches from her, and bewailings of what would become of her. I was obliged to truckle to her temper, to keep things eaſy: ſhe perceives herſelf with child, renews her complaints, I promiſe fidelity; ſhe grows jealous, watches my actions, upbraids me, weeps, ſwoons away; I gratify her with money, ſoothe her, and, in ſhort, become a very wretch and mere ſlave.

Ye youths, beware how ye yield to the firſt attacks of vice! How cautious ought you to be to guard againſt the firſt allurement, the beginning witchcraft! Let it attack you in what ſhape it will, it is equally deſtructive, equally perverſive of your future good, equally conducive to extirpate the reliſh of virtue from your minds! But, above all, beware of it, when it approaches you under the ſoft, the too enchanting, too captivating charms, of female deluſive arts! It is then ye ought to *put forth your utmoſt ſtrength; work every nerve*, to reſiſt the ſubtle invader! Peace and ſerenity of mind once deſtroyed, the conſequence is dreadful; ſeldom we have the power to retreat, but hurry on to bury, in a wild of folly and in-

* Woollaſton.

temperance,

temperance, the little reflection, and the woeful regrets, that will ſtill continue to haunt our ſouls.

The reliſh I uſed to have for the company of young Mr. Diaper was palled; I had a ſecret kind of envy of his ſuperior virtue: he perceived my alteration; but I aſcribed it to the head-ache, lowneſs of ſpirits, and other cauſes: buſineſs languiſhed with me, home was uneaſy to me, where I met with nothing but reproaches from myſelf, and upbraidings from the authoreſs of my miſery. The delicate and fine ſentiments I had imbibed, and the turn of my mind, which was of a genuine pure caſt, now gave me repeated vexations, never-ending reproaches. I ſought to bury my diſquiets in company: the minute the hours of buſineſs were over, I was no more to be ſeen; but, aſſociating myſelf with ſome of the neighbouring apprentices of my own age, whoſe company I before had deſpiſed, endeavoured by wine and mirth to drown and ſilence my regrets. The two whom I was moſt frequently engaged with were Will Prim, a mercer's apprentice, who had ſerved half his time, and Dick Prig, an attorney's clerk, whoſe ſervitude was juſt expired: as theſe young fellows were of a lively, gay, thoughtleſs diſpoſition, and their converſation was full of humour, I ſuffered myſelf to ſpend whole evenings in their company, in a ſort of club or ſociety, which met at thoſe times to unbend themſelves after the fatigues of the day.

CHAP. X.

ACCOUNT OF HIS NEW ASSOCIATES—HE IS DISGUSTED WITH THEIR MANNERS AND BEHAVIOUR—BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH MR. SPECULIST—HE IMBIBES HIS PRINCIPLES—TURNS RAKE—REMOVES HIS MISTRESS TO READY-FURNISHED LODGINGS, WHERE SHE IS BROUGHT TO BED.

MR. Prim was a young man of a good ſhare of natural ſenſe, which he had woefully perverted, and a tolerable education, by practiſing all the reigning follies; but he retained an unuſual flow of expreſſion, which was very engaging. Prig was of a more reſerved diſpoſition, and had preſerved hitherto the appearance of virtue by the deepeſt hypocriſy and diſſimulation; he had been bred up to learning, in which he had made conſiderable improvement, and manifeſted his talents at diſputation and controverſy with great applauſe.

The reſt of our company conſiſted of journeymen and apprentices, all in the ſame neighbourhood, whoſe characters and capacities were as various as their profeſſions. Nothing could better evidence the beginning depravity of my mind than the pleaſure I took in theſe meetings; and what I at firſt had recourſe to, to chace away diſagreeable reflections on my late miſcarriage, was almoſt become ſo habitual, that I longed till buſineſs was finiſhed, that I might fly to my new companions. The converſation, however, ſoon grew diſtaſteful to me, generally rolling upon the ſecrets of their maſters, the tricks practiſed in trade, ſarcaſms upon the behaviour of the perſons they lived with, and deſcriptions of ſcenes of madneſs and debauchery; and, when the diſcourſe grew dull, it was the cuſtom to ſing a ſong round. I had never been uſed to any but ſuch converſe as improved and left a pleaſing reliſh upon the mind; and I was not yet ſo loſt to myſelf, as not to perceive the groſs folly of ſpending time in ſo empty and frothy a manner; beſides, I perceived by the run of the diſcourſe, that moſt of my companions were the worſt of men, and that they were not aſhamed to boaſt and vaunt of ſuch actions as I could not, even now, reflect on without horror. I became, conſequently, very dull and melancholy, which was ſoon perceived, and the cauſe gueſſed at by Prig, who often propoſed to advance ſome ſerious topick of diſcourſe; and blamed the reſt for employing their time, and the time of the company, ſo much in talking of trifles, or wickedneſs, which he ſaid was worſe. I was too good a bait to be loſt ſo ſoon; I had money enough, and was very generous, and my two new friends had ſupplied their wants two or three times at my expence, which they did with the moſt careleſs and janty air imaginable, always promiſing an immediate return; which, however, was never again thought of. I was juſt in the humour of leaving

them one night for ever, when a young gentleman came into the room, at whoſe appearance they all expreſſed the utmoſt ſatisfaction, and ſaluted him familiarly by the name of Harry Speculiſt: his deportment ſpoke ſomewhat ſo modeſt and ſo genteel, that I conſtrained myſelf, and ſat down again in my place. After the uſual ſalutations, I was preſented to him as a gentleman deſerving his acquaintance; and I could over-hear Prig telling him that I was a clever young fellow, a ſcholar, and a man of ſenſe. The converſation then became general, till the new-comer reproved one of the company for ſwearing, which gave me a great deal of pleaſure: he then harangued upon the odious, unprofitable, and vulgar nature of that uſeleſs vice in ſo pretty and ſo polite a manner, that I was quite enamoured with him, and parted that evening, after we had mutually requeſted the pleaſure of each other's company the next night; when, according to agreement, we met, and happened to be near half an hour together before the reſt came. After ſome curſory compliments, he told me that he obſerved laſt night that I did not ſeem much pleaſed with the company: 'And really,' ſays he, 'I muſt 'agree with you, that the converſation 'amongſt them is much beneath the 'dignity of a man of ſenſe and re-'flection, or a rational creature: I 'have abſented myſelf frequently on 'that account; but, as I know my 'company is eſteemed by them, my 'benevolence to my fellow-creatures 'will not ſuffer me to abſtain from my 'viſits altogether; and I the rather 'come now and then, as perhaps I 'may be lucky enough to drop ſome-'what or other that may benefit them, 'and engage them to forſake ſome fol-'lies that I fear they are not a little 'guilty of.' I commended his diſpoſition, which appeared to me perfectly amiable; and we were entering into a very entertaining converſation, when Mr. Prig and two or three more entered the room. The converſation then became general, and at length produced a diſpute between Mr. Speculiſt and Prig, upon the moral fitneſs of things; in which I diſcovered either of them was far from being an advocate for Revealed Religion. However, what Speculiſt ſaid was modeſt, and ſpoke with candour and a ſhew of impartiality. I ſoon became very intimate with this perſon, who ſeemed to behave irreproachably, and underſtood he had been deſigned for the church; but a fortune of 200l. per annum coming to him by the death of an uncle, he choſe to live unincumbered by the duties of any particular profeſſion. In proportion as this intimacy increaſed, I diſcovered new matter for reſpect in my new acquaintance, who now engroſſed rather too much of my time; he had a large ſhare of knowledge, and the moſt taking manner of expreſſion and addreſs that I ever met with; but it would have been happy for me, had I never known him: his principles were deteſtable; and though he covered his failings with great art, yet I found, in ſome time, that he was much addicted to very coarſe gratifications of his ſenſes, and that his devotion to women was exceſſive. In ſhort, the unſettled and anxious ſtate of my already-tainted mind gave me up a prey to his maxims and principles, and I ſoon began to ſee difficulties in the ſacred writings, and abſurdities, as I fooliſhly imagined, that tottered my faith to the very foundation. I began to think our paſſions were given us to be gratified, and ſo long as ſcandal could be avoided, which was the whole that conſtituted the crime, I might indulge in the moſt guilty exceſſes: actions, we agreed mutually, were no otherwiſe good or bad than as they promoted or interfered with the happineſs of the community, and that all ceremonies or modes of worſhip were empty and ridiculous; and thus, in a few months, I was involved in guilty courſes, and a few fallacious arguments, that too much flattered my preſent temper, overturned what the wiſdom and goodneſs of my father had been erecting in my ſoul for years. This, however, is certain, that I had been ſecure from all the arts of Speculiſt, whoſe arguments, in my more ſober moments, appeared very cobwebs to me, had I not been previouſly guilty of a crime that had unhinged and unſettled my temper, and untuned my mind for the practice of any good precepts.

By this time Nanny began to ſhew her pregnancy; and, as ſhe had preſerved a tolerable appearance of reſpect

for

for ſome time paſt, I agreed to a requeſt ſhe made me to provide her a lodging, and give her ſome ſupport, for the farther gratification of my unlawful appetites: accordingly, pretending ſhe had received a letter that her father was very bad, and requeſted her to come into the country, ſhe obtained her diſcharge from our good miſtreſs, who parted with her, as did all the reſt of the family, without the leaſt apparent ſuſpicion of what had happened; and I ſaw her to an apartment I had provided in the ſkirts of the town, ſupplying her with what money was neceſſary in her preſent condition. I generally viſited her every evening, and renewed now, without much compunction, that intercourſe that had brought me thus into ſo diſmal a ſituation. At the diſtance of three months after her removal, ſhe was delivered of a ſon, which happily died in the month: and now I more than ever herded with Prim and his companions, often ſtaying out late, and frequently not returning home all night, which induced great expences; and, together with thoſe of my miſtreſs, reduced me to very great ſtraits. Young Mr. Diaper, though he carried a face of more gravity and concern than ordinary, took no manner of notice of the difference of my conduct; but in every thing had hitherto behaved with his uſual friendſhip and kindneſs, which I was far from deſerving, being become a moſt notorious rake and debauchee.

CHAP. XI.

HIS EXTRAVAGANCY PERCEIVED BY HIS FATHER'S FRIEND, TO WHOM HE WAS INTRUSTED—HE ADVISES HIM—HE GROWS QUITE NEGLECTFUL OF HIS BUSINESS—TENDER DISCOURSE BETWEEN HIM AND YOUNG DIAPER—EXTRAVAGANCY OF HIS MISS—QUARRELS WITH HER—DISCOVERS HER INFIDELITY—PARTS WITH HER—RECEIVES A LETTER FROM HIS FATHER.

MY frequent demands upon Mr. Deacon, the gentleman to whom my father had recommended me, and intruſted with the payment of my allowance, and who had behaved with the greateſt reſpect and conſideration imaginable, ever ſince his departure, made him very ſuſpicious that my conduct was not ſo right as it had been formerly; for, in the firſt two years of my time, I had not drawn above a third of what he was deſired to ſupply me with; and now, all on a ſudden, as it were, taking the remainder out of his hands, and preſſing for more every now and then with great earneſtneſs, it was very natural for him to think oddly of the matter. He ſpoke to my maſter and his ſon about it, and enquired privately into my behaviour; but, as to my maſter, he knew nothing to the contrary but that I behaved as well as uſual; and, as to his ſon, he had too much affection for me to betray his ſentiments, or the knowledge he had of the alterations that he had obſerved in me; therefore he imagined that I might have fallen upon ſome ſcheme to employ the money in ſome way or other to my advantage, as he had obſerved in me before a great diſpoſition to œconomy and frugality: however, this did not hinder him from giving all the proper advice that he thought neceſſary in my unguarded time of life. He laid open the vices and follies of the town with becoming indignation; and pointed out to me thoſe rocks and quickſands on which ſo many unhappy young men had been loſt. As I had a great regard and reſpect for him, I always attended to what he ſaid with abundance of patience; for I had not yet learned to deſpiſe inſtruction, or to be diſobliged with reproof; and gave him ſuch anſwers, as, for the preſent, allayed his fears; and accordingly he had not wrote about them to my father.

My friendly young maſter all this time was very uneaſy on my account; he was ſenſible, that, if I was engaged in any laudable purſuit, I ſhould, with my former freedom, have imparted it to him, and aſked his advice, as uſual, till lately; and therefore feared, conſidering alſo the conſtant embarraſſment of my behaviour and countenance, that ſomewhat very extraordinary had happened to me; but my ſtaying out of nights convinced him that I was detained for no good. I could often perceive him ſigh; and as his love for me was very great, and, indeed, met with

a moſt affectionate return, and an unreſerved confidence, till I was thus hurried from myſelf by this breach in my morals, he could no longer conceal his concern; and one evening, when I was going to my uſual rendezvous, he begged the favour of my company, a requeſt I could not poſſibly help complying with.

We ſpent the fore part of the evening in our uſual manner, converſing on ſeveral uſeful topicks, and reading alternately; and, to render my detention the more acceptable to me, he provided a ſupper, and the glaſs was circulated with more freedom than ordinary. He accidentally, at length, took up the Fair Penitent, which lay on the table; and, turning it over, aſked my opinion of the tender ſcene between Altamont and his friend Horatio, after he had diſcovered the falſhood of Caliſta. I freely confeſſed I thought the poet had worked it up with a great deal of judgment; and that, conſidering the provocation Altamont had given his friend before, it was a maſterpiece to introduce Lavinia, without whoſe interpoſition it would have been very improbable to effect ſuch a reconciliation. Thence our diſcourſe rolled on the nature of friendſhip, about which our ſentiments were quite conformable: 'And now, dear Joe,' ſays he, 'may I not reproach you for want 'of friendſhip to me? I have obſerved 'an unuſual, unlooked for alteration in your behaviour, for many 'months: I am ſenſible your coldneſs 'towards me has not been cauſed by 'any thing I have ſaid or done to offend you; I have too great a regard 'for you ever even to think of any 'thing likely to give you pain or uneaſineſs; what, then, is the reaſon I 'am become diſtaſteful to you? You 'ſhun me, and fly my company, as if 'it was diſagreeable to you. As a 'ſincere friend is one of the greateſt 'bleſſings in life, to be diſappointed in 'ſuch an enjoyment is one of the 'greateſt mortifications imaginable; 'and our friendſhip was of ſuch a nature, having *ſevereſt virtue for it's baſis*, as the poet ſays, that nothing 'but a deviation from it's divine principles, I think, could deſtroy our 'union. My affection to you, is, 'perhaps, more ſtrongly rooted than 'you can well imagine; how then can 'I perceive the cloud you wear upon 'your countenance, and that viſible 'alteration in you; you, who was a 'pattern of regularity and ſobriety, 'without feeling the moſt pungent ſorrow? For God's ſake, Joey, unboſom yourſelf to me; whatever has 'happened, I am ready to comfort and aſſiſt you, not only by words, but will 'relinquiſh every thing in my power 'to reſtore your quiet. I am ſenſible 'of your late familiarity with Prim, 'and, take my word for it, he is a 'very wretch; and, though you never 'aſked me my opinion of Mr. Speculiſt, I will plainly tell you, that, 'if it be no impeachment to your good 'ſenſe to keep him company, yet, in 'time, it will be very deſtructive of 'your morality; there is ſcarce a more 'vicious fellow breathing, and he is 'a companion the more dangerous, as 'he gilds over his vices with the appearance of reaſon and philoſophy. 'What would our fathers ſay! what 'would they think of you, if you were 'known to like his fellowſhip and converſation!' So home a charge gave me the utmoſt pain; I bluſhed and was confounded, and ſincerely hated myſelf, for abuſing ſo much goodneſs and generoſity: in that tranſient moment I took a ſilent reſolution to leave off my follies; I was relieved by the thought; I reſumed a free air, and, without much conſtraint, told the dear youth that I was ſenſible my conduct had been very reproachable. 'Not 'ſo,' ſays he; 'I don't reproach you; 'I deſire to know nothing you are not 'willing I ſhould know, only return 'to the warm friendſhip you have always ſeemed to be inſpired with, and 'ſave me from the pain of thinking 'that you are purſuing a courſe that 'will make you compleatly wretched.' Theſe laſt words were accompanied with a tear or two, which excited the ſame emotions of grief in me. I promiſed the dear friend, that I would ſoon diſcloſe my whole ſoul to him; and, in the mean time, begged him to ſuffer me to drop the diſcourſe, which became too tender for me to ſupport; he conſented, we entered upon indifferent matters, and I ſeemed to be that night robbed of all my diſquiets, by the reſolution I had taken. I perceived, by ſome part of his diſcourſe, that he gueſſed a little at my ſituation; the

idea

idea gave me torture inexpreſſible; I reſolved, over and over, to forſake my ſilly and vicious companions, and to return again to the happy ſtate I had loſt almoſt the reliſh for. Alas! how frail are all our reſolutions? I think I was bewitched, and the next night deſtroyed the force of every thing that paſſed the night before: my mind, uſed to idleneſs and folly, was not ſo ſoon to be reſtored to itſelf, and made capable of ſober reflection; the glaſs was circulated, the jeſts flew about the table; Speculiſt harangued, and I forgot myſelf and my friend. How hard is it to recover the mind, when too much pleaſure has ſoftened and enervated it? The returns of vice, like thoſe of an intermitting fever on the body, are not to be reſiſted; it bears all before it, and deſtroys every ſober and reaſonable ſuggeſtion.

My neglects grew quite notorious at home; whole days, as well as nights, were ſpent with my new companions, or my girl, in all the abandoned looſeneſs imaginable: Mr. Deacon, in vain, adviſed me, and threatened to write to my father; I was loſt to all ſenſe of my duty, and reputation itſelf; when an accident, that befel me, rather conduced to confirm me in my bad courſes, than to ſhew me the folly of them, by dictating to my unhinged and perverted imagination, that all the pretences that were made in the world to religion and virtue were hypocriſy and diſſimulation.

The falſe pleaſures I received in my amours, which were not ſolely confined to Nanny, if I had not been loſt indeed to all ſentiments of happineſs, were mingled with ſo many diſagreeable circumſtances, that I ſhould not have long thought them engaging. As to her, I began to receive the moſt cutting affronts from her; ſhe had loſt all her ſoftneſs and complaiſance, and domineered and flounced about, in a manner that ſurprized me; her rapaciouſneſs and extravagancy made me perpetually uneaſy; ſhe had even prevailed on me to write to my father for an increaſe of his moſt generous allowance, and I had been ſuch a dupe as to comply. Our meetings were generally uſhered in, and concluded, with a quarrel, in which we mutually accuſed each other for being the cauſe of our preſent unhappineſs: in ſhort, I grew jaded and tired; ſeldom came near her; and, if fear of her violent temper had not deterred me, ſhould have parted with her with great ſatisfaction. I thought I perceived of late a ſelf-intereſtedneſs and cunning reſerve, that I had never noticed before. I had ſtayed away from her one whole week, when I took a reſolution to call upon her, to leave her ſome money, having juſt received ſome from Mr. Deacon, which, indeed, upon my importunity, he had advanced before it was due. When I came to the door, the woman of the houſe told me, with a half ſmile, that Mrs. Jenkins's couſin was with her, for that was the name we went by there, myſelf paſſing for her huſband, who was a tide-waiter, and employed chiefly in buſineſs upon the river, which made my viſits ſo uncertain. The word *couſin* ſtartled me, for I had really ſome little affection for her; and, upon enquiry, the woman told me ſhe thought I had known of his viſits, for he was there every day. I ſaid no more, but ſoftly ſtole up ſtairs into the bed-chamber, where, from a cloſet, I could over-hear every thing that paſſed in Madam's dining-room; and had not been placed long, but, to my great ſurprize, I heard the voice of Mr. Packer, our journeyman. The reader may eaſily gueſs my aſtoniſhment, and the conjectures that diſtracted my brain, when I was relieved from my doubts of the reaſon of his being there, by the following dialogue, frequently interrupted with kiſſes: 'So,' ſays he, 'the young puppy has not been here 'this week, you ſay; upon my word, 'Nancy, you ſhould act a little more 'politically; if you uſe him ſo roughly, you will loſe your ſpark, and you 'know we cannot do without him.'—'That's true,' ſays ſhe, 'but, as at firſt 'I gave myſelf to him to ſcreen our correſpondence, you muſt be ſenſible that 'I can have no regard for him, but the 'utmoſt averſion, which, in ſhort, I begin to be unable to conceal; I wonder you will put me to ſo difficult a 'taſk.'—'If it was not for his money,' replied he, 'he might be 'd——d; but it is impoſſible for me, 'in my preſent ſituation, to keep 'you myſelf; and, therefore, as we 'reap ſuch a benefit from him, you 'ſhould behave ſo as to ſecure him 'till we can do better.' This ſpeech

was ſucceeded by an embrace, which I could perceive was carried on to the laſt criſis. My ſurprize and aſtoniſhment at this exceeded deſcription; I trembled with rage and fury, my knees tottered under me, and I was ready to fall on the floor; but, recollecting myſelf, I made ſhift to find my way down ſtairs; and, going to a neighbouring publick-houſe, wrote the following letter, and left it with the woman to deliver to her, together with two guineas; and, paying the arrears of rent due, told her I diſcharged myſelf of any farther care about paying for the lodgings, and then departed, pleaſed with myſelf for having exerciſed ſo much temper and prudence.

'MADAM,

'THE proofs I have juſt received 'of your ill treatment of me, 'from firſt to laſt, by the diſcourſe I 'have over-heard between you and 'your paramour, have determined me 'to be your dupe no longer. I don't 'pretend to upbraid you, but only 'reflect upon my own folly and ſtupidity, for ſuffering myſelf to be made 'the tool and property of a baſe, deſigning woman, ſo evidently to my 'hurt and detriment. I have diſcharged what was due for your lodging, and have left two guineas in 'your landlady's hand for your preſent uſe; for you may aſſure yourſelf you will no more hear from

'JOSEPH THOMPSON.

'P. S. If your acquaintance behaves 'prudently, it ſhall not be my 'fault if any thing of his conduct tranſpires.'

Had any indifferent perſon been the accomplice of this woman, I believe I ſhould immediately have grown ſick and tired of vice, which wears ſo many thorns about it; but Packer was reckoned a prodigy of ſobriety, and had made ſhift to behave ſo cautiouſly, that he was the favourite of our whole family, and had been particularly obliging to me: he was a conſtant church-goer, and put on ſuch an appearance of religion and ſanctity, that he was the laſt perſon I could have ſuſpected of any criminal action; but now, diſcovering the blackneſs of his behaviour, I concluded, all in a hurry, that there was no real goodneſs in the world, and ſtrengthened myſelf with a maxim of Rochefoucault's, that Speculiſt had ever in his mouth, *that all mankind are knaves or fools, and only differ from one another as they are more or leſs ſo.* Thus I argued, or ſeemed to argue, myſelf into a belief, that hypocriſy and diſſimulation, rather than any real virtue or piety, was the ſource of the orderly behaviour of thoſe that paſſed for the beſt people. I rejoiced at my delivery from the ſlavery and expence I was involved in, and ſwore that no particular object ſhould bias me again to ſo much folly. Theſe reſolves were more ſtrengthened by the converſation I had the ſame evening with Speculiſt; and I ſtill increaſed them by the mirth that was inſpired by wine, and the company of my old aſſociates.

When I returned home, Mr. Deacon, I found, had left a letter, which he received incloſed in one to him from my father, which haſtily breaking open, I found to the following effect.

'DEAR SON,

'I Can't help telling you, that your 'deſiring an augmentation of the 'ſum I allow you for your expences, 'has very greatly ſurprized me; and 'I can't at preſent imagine how you 'could even diſpoſe of what you 'have had already. If I was apt to 'ſuſpect your conduct, I have but too 'much reaſon to do ſo; as I have, to 'my great concern, found you ſlack 'and remiſs in paying the compliment 'of writing to me and your mother; 'and Mr. Deacon has, with the 'moſt tender regard, however, to you, 'hinted ſome things to me which cannot fail giving me conſiderable pain: 'but as your maſter, in his laſt account of you, ſaid ſo much in your 'praiſe, and I know you ſo well ſecured from the attacks of vice or 'folly, which ride predominant in 'London, by a virtuous and ſober 'education, and an excellent natural 'temper, I will not give way to any 'uneaſy ſurmiſes; nay, I have even 'gratified your requeſt, and have deſired my friend to increaſe your ſtipend ten pounds every year. I 'hope, my dear child, you will not

'give

'give me occaſion to repent my indulgence: I am ſenſible of the many temptations youth are liable to in that wicked town; I am even tempted ſometimes to blame myſelf for being the inſtrument of your going there; but, all things conſidered, and reflecting upon the excellent examples before you, in your worthy maſter and his amiable ſon, I believe I may make myſelf eaſy. Remember one thing, that immoderate expences, even in the innocent cravings of nature, and the faſhions that cuſtom has introduced, is a thing of a very bad tendency, and will, in time, engage a corrupt habit of mind. I would not have you mean and ſordid; your temper and conſtitution ſecures you from that; and, on the other hand, employ your money judiciouſly, and let not your plenty be a temptation to a too great indulgence of pleaſure, or any extravagant gratifications. Sir Walter, who has built an houſe in our neighbourhood, and the young lady, who is always with your mother, and ſeems to have a great regard for me and my family, deſire their compliments to you: your mother ſends her bleſſing, and you have the ſame, moſt heartily, with prayers for your health and welfare, *from your very affectionate father*,

'WILLIAM THOMPSON.'

CHAP. XII.

HE FREQUENTS THE PLAYHOUSE—CONVERSES WITH WOMEN OF THE TOWN—RESORTS TO BAWDY-HOUSES—ADVENTURES AT A NOTED BAGNIO—BEATS THE WATCH—IS CARRIED WITH PRIM TO THE WATCH-HOUSE—THEY ARE RELEASED—PAYS A DEBT FOR PRIG—COMMENCES AN ACQUAINTANCE WITH MRS. MODISH.

THIS letter of my father's at firſt gave me a great deal of pain, and opened a field of reflection, which, however, I ſoon overcame: if it did me any ſervice, it was only to make me more careful of keeping up appearances at home, that my maſter might not perceive my alteration of character; therefore I never ſtaid out late, or lay out all night, at thoſe times which he ſpent in town, which were now leſs frequent than ever, as his ſon was more and more capable to ſupply his place; and, as to him, his friendſhip ſilently winked at every thing. Freed from the incumbrance of the perfidious wretch my miſtreſs, and Packer, for his own ſake, behaving with great circumſpection and modeſty, I gave a looſe to the falſe pleaſures I was devoted to, more than ever; every night carried me with Speculiſt, Prig, or Prim, to the theatre, which was now become my reigning taſte; but as my ſoul was muddied, and foul with vicious taint, all the ſublime morality of our excellent dramatick performances was loſt upon me, and, mingling with the ſenſeleſs herd, it only became a place of downright debauchery, and ſtupid ſallies of incoherent impertinence; hiſſing, affronting the audience, drawing bluſhes from the fair, intriguing with the actreſſes behind the ſcenes, attending the levee in the Green Room, converſing with the loweſt part of the town, though, perhaps, diſtinguiſhed by dreſs and title, buffoonery, bawdry, and rank nonſenſe, were the delicate inducements that drew us there. Often our entertainment concluded with a riotous quarrel, wherein the maddeſt actions, the moſt obſcene and irregular ſtarts of paſſion diſtinguiſhed us; and as we ſeldom went there till we were top-heavy, as the ſaying is, we frequently came off with the worſt: from thence we uſed to adjourn to the tavern, and, when thoroughly inflamed with the inſpiring juice of the vine, ſcour the hundreds of Drury, and commit ſuch pranks, as it were a ſhame and reproach even to mention. The women of the town now engaged my attention; and, for a time, I took the greateſt pleaſure imaginable in frequenting the dark regions of luſt. To deſcribe the various broils this engaged me in, and the *hair-breadth 'ſcapes* I had from the wiles of the flattering whore, and the rage of the ſwaggering bully, would tire my reader's patience, and keep him too long from things of greater moment, and of more engaging reliſh. The tricks I have ſeen put upon the unwary that fell into theſe righteous hands,

hands, the loathſome nauſeouſneſs of thoſe apparently tempting charmers, when viewed in *puris naturalibus*, would have ſoon given a ſurfeit to any but a wretch who had thrown aſide all delicacy and conſideration, and the exerciſe of reaſon and good ſenſe. My exceſſes of this kind frequently made me the victim of the moſt ſhocking diſtemper; which, however, as I ſuffered it to run to no extremity, gave me but a ſlight uneaſineſs; a ſurgeon's apprentice, one of our gang, was always at hand, with his own ſkill, and his maſter's medicines, to patch up the diſorder, without hindrance or confinement ſufficient to draw us off long from the odious cuſtom of reſorting to thoſe temples of Satan. The life of a common proſtitute is ſurely the moſt miſerable that imagination can form an idea of, ever ſubject to the brutal violence and filthy embraces of a promiſcuous motley herd, and, like the common-ſewer, a receptacle of all filth that flows from the libidinous exceſſes of the town; nor could the famed box of Pandora contain more evils than ſhe is made the inheritor of; till a conſtant purſuit of the ſame filthy trade totally demoliſhes her health, and ſhe rots away by piece-meal, and at length is too often expoſed and abandoned to a ſhocking untimely end, by the courſe of the ſlowly-ſtealing corruption, or the hand of juſtice heavily preſſing her for ſome trivial theft, that, perhaps, her woeful wants have forced her to commit.

One evening Prim and myſelf had formed a reſolution of lying at a noted bagnio near Charing Croſs, to purchaſe the enjoyment of a freſh brace of theſe dulcineas, being quite cloyed with thoſe at our uſual reſorts: being ſtrangers to the governeſs of theſe *filles de joye*, we perſuaded Speculiſt to introduce and ſtart the game. Old mother Damnable received us with great affection of complaiſance, and calling us her children, the uſual cant, ſaluted us ſeverally with a pair of lips that expelled a breath equalled by nothing but the cadaverous ſcent of a putrified carcaſe, and had almoſt prejudiced me againſt the goods we were going to cheapen. Speculiſt aſked her how trade ſtood. 'Alack, my dear,' ſays ſhe whining bawd, 'I am almoſt ruined; theſe half-pay officers lie ſo 'heavily upon my hands, and ſcore 'up more than I take of my other 'gueſts: well, God bleſs the king! 'but if we had another war, I might 'have ſome chance for my money— 'but what will you drink? I have 'ſome of the fineſt arrack you ever 'taſted.'—'Well ſaid, mother, let 'us have a ſtaring crown bowl, then.' —'Fye, Mr. Speculiſt! ſure you 'would not call for ſuch a pimping 'quantity as that!—What ſay you, '*love?*' chucking me under the chin, 'ſhall I make it up half-a-guinea?— 'Here, Mrs. Decoy, fill this bowl 'with arrack.—Won't you walk into 'the parlour, gentlemen? you will 'find all the ladies there; poor things, 'they want company.' Away we poſted into the parlour, and found three delicate *bona robas* drinking tea, and chatting by the fire-ſide. Here an elegant ſupper was ſerved up; and, after repleniſhing the bowl three or four times, moſt of which was ſucked up by Madam and her nymphs, we ſettled the preliminaries, and every man ſingling his doxy, mounted for our ſeveral apartments, juſt as the watchman had roared out, 'Paſt two 'o'clock!' I muſt own, I thought I was going to claſp an angel, the red and white was ſo livelily diſplayed on her cheeks, and the ſwelling boſom gave me ſuch a proſpect of heightened raptures; ſo with eager haſte diſrobing ourſelves, we crept between the ſheets, prepared to employ our time as induſtriouſly as eager warmth foretold we ſhould: my baſhful goddeſs, from her high ſenſe of modeſty, extinguiſhing the taper, to hide, as ſhe pretended, her glowing bluſhes, being, poor thing, but newly inſtructed in the trade. In about an hour afterwards we both fell into a ſound ſleep, from which we were ſuddenly awakened by a thundering noiſe at the door, which at firſt I could not conceive the meaning of, till I was thoroughly rouzed by the terrifying cry of '*Murder! 'thieves!*' Finding it high time to provide for my ſecurity, I huddled on my cloaths in a trice: as for Madam, ſhe ſtood ſhivering and ſhaking like an aſpin leaf; not that robbing the old devil's houſe, ſhe ſaid, would affect her, but ſhe was fearful the rogues would abuſe and violate her perſon. I adviſed her, however, to ſtay where ſhe

was,

was, whilſt I, armed with a poker, ſallied forth as grim as Hercules or Nero. Upon coming into the entry, which divided our apartment from three or four more on the ſame floor, I was immediately jumbled in the dark amongſt five or ſix women; who, by their voices, I found were the old bawd and ſome of her females, all trembling and crying to God, *to have mercy upon them.* I ventured to aſk the meaning of their fright; 'Alack-'a-day!' ſays the old whore, 'I am 'ruined, Sir; to be ſure they have 'moved off every thing valuable be-'low:' and then blubbered out, 'Oh, 'my china! my pewter! and, to be 'ſure, they have broken open my bar! 'I am an undone woman!'—'Well,' ſays I, 'can't you ſtrike a light?' and the good mother then recollected ſhe had a tinder-box in her room, but neither herſelf, nor any body elſe, could be prevailed on to ſtir to fetch it. Whilſt this was under debate, we heard the door of another room opened, and a hoarſe voice hallowed out, 'D—n your blood! what is all this 'racket for? are you all mad?'—'Oh, 'captain,' ſays one of the wenches, 'there are thieves in the houſe;' and at that inſtant a noiſe, like the overturning of a table and glaſſes, ſaluted our ears. 'Oh, by G—! if that's all,' ſays the ſame voice, 'it is no buſineſs 'of mine. D—n ye, why don't ye 'call the watch?' and ſo ſlapped the door too again, and double-bolted it. 'Aye,' ſays one of the ladies, 'there 'is your man of courage for you, 'Madam; I am ſure I would never 'diſgrace ſcarlet, if I was ſuch a 'coward—you will take care of num-'ber one, I perceive.' Preſently we heard a ſtamping up ſtairs, upon which the nymphs all ſcudded, ſome into one room, and ſome in another, wherever they could grope their way. As ſoon as I perceived the ſtamping was pretty near our ſtair-head, I aſked, 'Who is 'there? who is that?' A voice replied, which I ſoon diſtinguiſhed to be Prim's. 'What the devil have you 'been at,' ſays I, 'old friend?'—'Nay, I can't tell,' ſays he, 'for I 'believe all the devils in hell are let 'looſe below.' By this time Madam Governeſs brought a light, and found Prim and me together; he without any thing on but his ſhirt, and ſhaking with cold till his teeth uttered a ſound like the ticking of a clock, but more irregular. We reſolved now to explore the bottom of the matter; ſo ſnatching the light, and brandiſhing my poker, I marched in the van; Prim, armed with a braſs candleſtick, followed me, and the whole bevy of ladies brought up the rear. When we came into the parlour, where we had been drinking, we found, indeed, the whole room ſtripped, and, turning our eyes towards the window, perceived that it had been broke open; and the ſhutter had a pannel compleatly cut out of it: here was the myſtery opened; our next work was to look after the ſtragglers, if perchance any had lagged behind; but our ſearch was fruitleſs, for our noiſe had hurried them away ſo precipitately, that they had decamped without making any extraordinary booty. The man in ſcarlet, and Speculiſt, by this time had joined us, and propoſed a tiff of punch, which, as ſoon as Mrs. Decoy had kindled a fire, we had ſerved up, and nobody remained dull but the kind hoſteſs, who was mourning over the loſs of a punch-ladle and ſome other geer which ſhe miſſed after this incurſion. Such a groupe of figures I never ſurveyed before; the women had only looſe gowns over them, and ſo diſhevelled, that you would imagine they reſembled ſo many furies: the captain, who was now very valiant at ſight of a clear coaſt and the punch, had only his regimental coat on, and Prim had juſt put on a gown of Mrs. Decoy's, which he found lying in the kitchen; as to the miſtreſs of the houſe, having nothing on to confine her load of belly, ſhe appeared a creature of ſuch a form, that it was impoſſible to invent a name for. Every one moved now to retire again to their warm beds, and the ſame hint was given to me by a female voice over my ſhoulder, which I then perceived proceeded from my bargain, who I thought had not ventured out of her room; but, O heavens! Ovid, with all his metamorphoſes, could not have matched ſuch a tranſformation. The red that had glowed in her cheeks was now removed to her chin, and her whole face was ſuch a jumble of colours, and ſo hagged and frightful,

that I diſputed the identity of the perſon: inſtead of the ſwelling breaſts, two ſhivering bags diſcovered themſelves of the colour of bladders, and not unlike them, when juſt half blown up; and, as to the jutting hips, their prominency, which before ſupported a ſlender waiſt, was quite levelled and loſt. Quite ſick, and full of averſion and curſes, I reſolved to ſtay no longer; and Prim being of the ſame mind, we left Speculiſt, and paying our reckoning, which amounted to forty-five ſhillings, ſallied out in purſuit of farther adventures. We directed our courſe towards the city, and in my way I took occaſion to aſk my companion how he came down ſtairs at the bagnio at that hour of night; he informed me, that, being cloyed with his doxy, he had gone down with an intent to go to bed to Mrs. Decoy, as had been often practiſed by Speculiſt in that houſe; but found her neſt empty, and had been forced to hide himſelf till the thieves, of whom he counted three, had evacuated the premiſſes. In our way down the Strand and Fleet Street, we aſſaulted every one we met, chagrined with our late diſappointments; broke lamps, kicked ſtrumpets, and abuſed the watch, whoſe lanthorns and ſtaves became a prey to our frolicks, which we made prize of as they ſlept, contentedly ſnoring, at their ſtands. Turning the corner of Fleet Ditch, we perceived one of theſe hopeful guardians of the city's peace in a profound doze, his lanthorn and ſtaff ſtanding by him, which we ſeized and toſſed over into the ditch; but, waking ſuddenly, we were obliged to take to our heels, followed by him and half a dozen more of the fraternity, whom he had alarmed with the cry of 'Watch!' As we were nimbler than our purſuers, we ſhould ſoon have got clear of them, if a watchman had not ſtarted out of Ludgate, as we were ſcouring through the gate, who at one blow laid Prim flat upon the pavement: fired with this diſaſter, and the injury done to my friend, I flew upon him, and wreſting his weapon out of his hand, ſoon ſent him to bear him company. By this time, more aſſiſtance coming, I had a hard taſk to maintain my ground; and, after giving and receiving many weighty thwacks over the back and ſhoulders, I was ſeized by two of them behind, and with Prim, who had juſt recovered, was in triumph conducted to the watch-houſe: there ſat, in great ſtate, the nocturnal majeſty of Mr. Conſtable, who, on hearing the allegations of the accuſers, determined to accompany us directly to the Compter, for which purpoſe, he ſent orders for all his band to attend him; but perceiving he was an hired magiſtrate by his appearance, and the oddity of his behaviour, I begged the favour to ſpeak to him apart, and pretending to know moſt people in the ward, and adding to my ſpeech the prevailing rhetorick of half-a-crown, he perſuaded the injured parties to come to terms of agreement, telling them, we ſeemed to be good-natured young gentlemen, and would, no doubt, make them proper amends. His eloquence prevailed, and a gallon of beer and a quantity of gin being ſet before us, we ſoon came to an accommodation, and for the ſum of a ſhilling to each, after paying for the lanthorn and ſtaff, we were joyfully releaſed. It was now light, and we made ſuch a rueful appearance, that we determined not to go home till next evening, and directed our ſteps to the freſh air of Iſlington, to endeavour, by the reviving breezes of the country, to get rid of the qualms of our drinking, and the laſſitude occaſioned by want of reſt. In our way through that part of the ſuburbs in our rout, who ſhould we meet but poor Prig, in durance vile, in the hands of a marſhal's court catch-pole! he was quite aſhamed of this rencounter; but, underſtanding that he was only detained for a debt of three pounds to his ſhoemaker, we jointly depoſited the money and the coſts, over a quartern of brandy at an alehouſe, and ſet him at liberty. As he had made a midnight excurſion alſo, we prevailed on him to go with us, and got about dinner-time to Holloway, where we joined company with a promiſcuous ſet of perſons that were juſt ſitting down to table, at a houſe we had often uſed before. Amongſt the reſt was a very handſome woman, ſeemingly of about thirty years of age, whom her huſband, a moroſe, ill-behaved man, had brought out for an airing: ſhe betrayed ſo much

much averſion to her yoke-fellow, and appeared ſo complaiſant to every body elſe, that I ſoon judged her diſpoſition, and made all the advances I could to a farther acquaintance; and ſome of the company, after the cloth was removed, propoſing a walk in the garden, I gave my hand to the lady, who willingly left her ſpouſe to blow his pipe with my companions, and two or three more, over a bowl of punch, and accompanied me. I found this lady was not over coy, and judged by what I perceived, that if opportunity could be found, ſhe would not ſhew much obduracy to a warm, preſſing young fellow. She had ſmitten my fancy, and I was reſolutely determined to poſſeſs her, and rendered myſelf ſo agreeable to her, that we made an appointment to meet the next day at an acquaintance of her's in town, where I was to enquire for Mrs. Modiſh. We all came to London together, Prim and Prig having taken the hint, and made themſelves very agreeable to the huſband.

CHAP. XIII.

FATAL CONSEQUENCES OF HIS AMOUR—GOES TO THE MASQUERADE—PICKED UP AT VAUXHALL GARDENS—HE IS BEAT AND STRIPPED—GETS TO MR. SPECULIST'S LODGINGS—CATASTROPHE OF PRIM—CONTRACTS A BAD DISTEMPER—IS QUITE REDUCED—PAWNS HIS WATCH—GOES TO THE GAMING-TABLE—IS KICKED DOWN STAIRS—MEETS PRIG AT TOM KING'S—RETURNS HOME—IS WELL RECEIVED.

WITH eager expectation I counted the tedious hours, the next day, till the time of my appointment arrived; when, making an excuſe to go upon ſome buſineſs to the Cuſtom Houſe, I viſited the place that inſhrined my princeſs; which was at a little ſhopkeeper's on Tower Hill, where I found her waiting with as much impatience as I could poſſibly be agitated with. I perceived this was not to be the ſcene of our amour; for, when the good woman was gone aſide, ſhe deſired me to propoſe going with her to Vauxhall, and gave me inſtructions to call her couſin: this, as ſoon as tea was ended, I did accordingly, and carried the grimace on ſo well, that, having obſerved her acquaintance expreſs herſelf in a great hurry of buſineſs, I even preſſed her to accompany us; which, as I knew ſhe would, ſhe very politely declined: ſo, calling a coach, I handed her into it; and, when I had joined her, ordered the coachman to drive to Vauxhall, aloud; but, in a kind of whiſper, told him to make what expedition he could to Chelſea. In our way, all the little wanton blandiſhments that we had an opportunity for were practiſed on both ſides; and, in ſhort, we became ſo enamoured of one another, that the coach went too ſlowly for our wiſhes. She indulged me in the moſt tempting liberties, and ſeemed quite pleaſed with and proud of her conqueſt. I underſtood her huſband was a rich druggiſt, and that ſhe had been married againſt her conſent and inclination to him, which had, together with his moſt unſociable, jealous, and ſuſpicious temper, driven her to ſeek that happineſs and felicity abroad, that ſhe could not meet with at home. I began to think myſelf not at all to blame in this intercourſe; I looked upon her as a fine woman in diſtreſs, and flattered myſelf that my affording her relief and ſatisfaction was meritorious. Thus falſely do we argue, when the mind is depraved, and loaded with a weight of iniquity; we gild over to ourſelves crimes of the deepeſt dye, if the ſmalleſt circumſtances can be gathered to alleviate them. I verily believe the moſt abandoned miſcreants thus reaſon with themſelves; and that no man, let him be ever ſo wicked, but ſuggeſts to his mind ſome excuſe for what he commits, before he feels the falſe pleaſure in it that he propoſes. A plain proof this of the human heart's being originally created void of blemiſh, and ſtimulated by the Author of Nature to nothing but praiſe-worthy motions. I began to be tired of the promiſcuous latitude I had given myſelf in the uſe of women: thoſe uneaſy, wretched days, that ſucceeded the loathſome revelling nights, which left me all jaded, tired, and qualmiſh, began to give me diſguſt; I looked upon this adventure as a relief from ſuch nauſeous debauches, and reſolved to confine myſelf ſolely to my preſent object, and

drink large draughts of love. Mrs. Modiſh, to a very fine perſon, joined a turn of wit and good-ſenſe that charmed me; I found her converſation irreſiſtible, and thought myſelf the happieſt of men in her embraces. We ſpent the day ſo ſatisfactorily to us both, that we parted not only with regret, but in ſuch a tender manner as began to make us both ſerious; and I muſt ſay, that, barring the indulgence of this one appetite in ſo unlawful a manner, ſhe was not addicted to any one bad property. Poor woman! how happily, how prudently ſhe would have paſſed her days, had fortune beſtowed upon her a huſband of good-ſenſe and humanity, that ſhe could have an affection for, inſtead of a ſour, moroſe, jealous wretch, who had not capacity enough to put any means in practice to engage her tenderneſs! Ye covetous, worldly-minded parents, how many unhappy creatures you have made!

Our meetings were now very frequent; I forſook my old companions, and was bent on nothing elſe but pleaſing and obliging her. Methought there was ſomewhat in it that flatteringly recalled me to my former delicacy and good taſte; I imagined I was not doing any harm, as our intercourſe gave no body diſquiet; but this grave ſpecies of vice was ſoon to have a period. We were one evening returning from a country walk, her arm fondly reſting upon my ſhoulder, when we were met by a gentleman, the ſight of whom put her into the utmoſt conſternation; ſhe trembled, and was ready to faint. I was ſoon delivered from my ignorance of the occaſion by hearing him ſay—'So, ſiſter, where have 'you been walking? I hope my bro'ther is well?—Sir, your ſervant,' to me, and then bruſhed by us with great haſte. When ſhe recovered her ſpirits ſufficiently, ſhe informed me it was her huſband's brother, who had always been her very great enemy; and having ſome expectancy, in caſe he ſhould die without children, would, no doubt, make a handle of this meeting to do her all the prejudice in his power. I was diſtracted at what I heard; my diſpoſition was too generous to think of the inſults ſhe would be liable to with patience; I even went ſo far as to propoſe an elopement to her; but, with the utmoſt good ſenſe, ſhe repreſſed my propoſals, and particularly inſiſted that ſhe would do nothing to injure her reputation, or to provoke my ruin, which would, by ſuch a proceeding, be inevitable. I was convinced, and embraced her with all the tenderneſs and gratitude her words inſpired: we parted, and tears were ſhed on both ſides, deceiving ourſelves with the hopes of ſilencing her brother, which ſhe promiſed to attempt, and meeting the next day again. Full of the ideas of what might have happened, I went to the old place of aſſignation; but, inſtead of finding the object of my concern, had the following letter given to me—

'DEAR THOMPSON,

'I Fear, alas! this is the laſt time that 'even the liberty I at preſent take 'can be indulged: our being met was 'diſcovered, before I came home, with 'all the aggravated circumſtances that 'malice could invent. You may gueſs 'the uſage I have had from what you 'know of my huſband's brutal temper: I will not give you the pain I 'am ſenſible you'll feel in the relation 'of it. In an hour's time I ſhall be 'hurried into the country, where con'finement will be my lot, perhaps, till 'the hour of my death; I have only 'juſt opportunity to write theſe two or 'three lines unobſerved: gueſs the 'torment this cruel ſeparation from 'you occaſions me! I believe you will 'be equally affected; but ſtrive to for'get an unfortunate woman, and be 'happy as your deſerts can make you.

'Your affectionate friend,

'KATH. MODISH.'

It was a long time before I could get over this untoward accident: my nature ſoft and compaſſionate, my temper generous to an exceſs, gave me more diſturbance than can poſſibly be imagined. I curſed myſelf as the author of her misfortunes, and determined to take vengeance on her huſband; but the little reaſon I retained ſoon baniſhed ſuch thoughts. I now again returned to my old acquaintance, who received me as a man riſen from the dead; for I had practiſed the utmoſt deceit with Prim and Prig, and had made ſhift to keep my affair with Mrs. Modiſh an abſolute ſecret to every body. I mingled again in noiſe, folly,

Plate I

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. July 5, 1783.

folly, and uproar, to get rid of my uneaſineſs: for ſome time the remembrance of this charming woman made it very inſipid to me; but I ſoon became hardened againſt reflection. We all expreſſed an inclination one day to viſit the Maſquerade, which about this time was a diverſion very much admired; ſo accordingly equipping ourſelves with proper dreſſes, Speculiſt, Prim, Prig, and myſelf, entered the groteſque aſſembly: never was ſurprize equal to mine at the oddity of the ſight, which I had entertained no notion of before; a mixture of beings, of both ſexes, employed in all the ridiculous mummery that would only diſtinguiſh the monkey race; whiſpering, nodding, luſcious diſcourſe, offenſive to modeſty and good manners; and, in ſhort, ſecure in their diſguiſes, every one giving a looſe to the corrupted dictates of their hearts, and throwing aſide every neceſſary reſerve. Prim ſoon got to the gaming-table, where in a trice he emptied his pockets, and came away curſing his ill-luck. Speculiſt got into a *tête-à-tête* diſcourſe with a coronet, with whom I ſaw him leave the place; but underſtood next day, that, inſtead of a counteſs, he was engaged with a woman of the town, who had dexterity enough to make him ſpend a large ſum of money, and, in return, gave him the French diſeaſe. Prig exhauſted all the ill-natured malignity of his heart in railing againſt the company; and we, both heartily tired, came away together, and adjourned to the tavern, where we were ſoon after joined by Prim, with a moſt deplorable length of face, having loſt to the tune of twenty guineas; and what made him the more uneaſy, was, that at leaſt a moiety of it was cath of his maſter's. We contrived ſoon to eaſe that part of his pain, by making the ſum up between us; and, having ſent home our dreſſes, we ſupped, and retired to our ſeveral habitations, with an appointment to be next day at Vauxhall, where I promiſed to engage Speculiſt to accompany us.

At the cloſe of the ſucceeding day, when I repaired to Mr. Speculiſt's, to procure his company, I found him ſo chagrined with his laſt night's miſchance, that he reſolved to keep his chamber for ſome time; ſo leaving him, I repaired to the rendezvous, where I expected the other two; but when I had waited a pretty while, and perceived they neither of them came, I took boat, and immediately rowed away for Vauxhall, reſolved not to be baulked of the pleaſure I expected that night. When we came oppoſite to Whitehall Stairs, (as I had not inſiſted upon going ſingly in the boat, but had given the waterman liberty to take in any fare that might be agreeable to me) we were plied by a very pretty young lady, attended by a footman in a green livery. I gave her my hand to help her in, which ſhe accepted with the utmoſt good-nature, and we put off again to purſue our voyage. To have ſeen this young lady, one would have imagined that ſhe was the Goddeſs of the Silver Stream: it was impoſſible to ſurvey her, without feeling one's ſelf filled with the higheſt complacency and good-humour; ſuch an irreſiſtible ſweetneſs played in her features, as would have ſoftened the rigours of pain, and ſmoothed the brow of anguiſh: her modeſty was unaccompanied with affectation, and a ſingle look from her would have daſhed aſſuming rudeneſs. I thought myſelf entirely happy in having ſo gentle a partner in my boat, and ſtrove, by all the little civilities I was maſter of, to make my company and converſation agreeable to her. When we landed at Vauxhall, ſhe was received by a handſome young gentleman, who accoſted her with ſuch a becoming tenderneſs, and whoſe appearance lighted up ſuch ſatisfaction in her eyes, that I diſcovered, before they ſpoke, that the ſtricteſt ties bound them together. She very politely returned me thanks for my company, which were enforced by her happy huſband in ſo complaiſant a manner, that it almoſt raiſed bluſhes in my face. Underſtanding we were all bound to the ſame entertainment, he begged the favour of my company, which I was far from having the power to refuſe, they had gained ſuch an aſcendent in my good opinion. The diſcourſe of the gentleman was ſo judicious, and we were ſo mutually pleaſed with each other, that it was with reluctance we parted, after ſome time, when they left the Gardens, giving me a direction where they lived, and deſiring me to call, and continue the acquaintance. I could not help envying the

the happineſs of this amiable pair; virtue ſat ſo elegantly upon them, without any of that diſpleaſing ſtiffneſs, too often the attendant of ſtrict morals, that I made many mortifying compariſons between my preſent ſtate and theirs, and indulged a few moments melancholy upon my unhappy turn of mind; from which I was awakened by an ambling female, who ſeemed to caſt a kind regard upon me, as I ſauntered down one of the walks. I paſſed her, we met again; I thought I diſcovered a certain *je-ne-ſçai-quoi* about her that pleaſed me, though ſhe appeared to be turned of thirty. I was reſolving to make ſome advances to a further acquaintance, when ſhe accidentally ſtumbled within a few paces of me, and I eagerly ran to her aſſiſtance, and ſupported her in my arms, ſhe pretending to have ſprained her foot:—'I hope, Madam, you have not 'received much detriment!'—'No, 'Sir,' ſhe replied, with a ſmile; 'I 'have no pain, unleſs I am too troubleſome to ſo generous a gentleman.'—'I aſſure you, my dear creature,' I rejoined, 'I am ever at the ſervice of 'the fair; and as to the trouble you 'fear to have given me, it is your 'fault if it is not repaid; for I muſt 'own I feel it very conſiderable: but 'I believe I had better conduct you 'to the next ſeat, that you may repoſe 'yourſelf after your fright.' She gave a ſilent aſſent with a nod of her head, and I ſeated myſelf by her, and called for ſome wine and ſweetmeats; when, either by deſign or accident, ſhe ſpilt a drop or two from her glaſs upon my hand and ruffle, which endeavouring to wipe off with her handkerchief, in contention between us, her face was reclined ſo near to mine, that I ſtole a ſudden kiſs; at which ſhe bluſhed, and ſeemed diſpleaſed; but, reſuming herſelf, would have taken her leave, under pretence of being fearful leſt ſhe ſhould be diſcovered by any one who knew her: upon which I propoſed to attend her in a walk through the gardens, which, with a ſeeming reluctance, ſhe permitted. At the bottom of one of the alleys ſhe was accoſted very cavalierly by a young fellow under the name of Mrs. Tripſy; and, to my utter ſurprize, I diſcovered by her anſwer ſhe was certainly a lady of a very free diſpoſition; that is to ſay, one of thoſe convenient and ready commodities, that, without acting like a common woman, only receive viſitors at their lodgings under the higheſt notion of ſecreſy. We preſently, hereupon, grew very familiar; and, in ſhort, I was fooliſh enough to propoſe going home with her to Newington, where ſhe ſaid ſhe lodged; and ſhe was quickly prevailed upon to accept of my company. Nothing, ſure, is ſo eminently calculated to ſoften the mind as theſe places of harmony; they raiſe inclinations, in the moſt cold and frozen conſtitutions, to all the ſoft inducements of vice. It was with no little ſhew of reaſon that the famed Legiſlator baniſhed muſick out of his commonwealth: every faſcinating note opens the breaſt to receive the impreſſions of pleaſure, and unmans the ſoul, by propagating the enervating weakneſs to which human nature is too ſubject. What reſiſtance can be made againſt the melting *concord of ſweet ſounds?* The appearance of beauty decked in all it's wanton attire, the inflaming power of wine, the verdant bower, the fanning breeze, conſpire to the deſtruction of that regularity of conduct, that nothing can atone the tranſgreſſion of. It was pretty late before we departed; and as I had drank freely as well as my miſtreſs, the coach we hired for our tour to her apartments, excited deſires in me which were too powerful to be delayed, and called for a ſpeedy enjoyment. We were locked faſt in each others arms when the coach ſtopped, and I could over-hear a volley of oaths from a voice as hoarſe as a boatſwain's, and a demand of a woman, who he was ſure was in that coach, and was his b—h of a wife—'I know there's a fellow with her, too,' continued the voice; 'but, by G—d, 'I'll ſpoil his ſport! he ſhall never 'caterwaul in my territories again, I 'warrant him!' and, ſo ſaying, pulled open the coach-door. I had juſt recovered my ſeat, when I was attacked with a ſmart blow of a cudgel over my ſhoulders; and, at the ſame time, Madam was hauled out by main force, and I jumped out after her, and collared the fellow; but, two or three others coming up at the inſtant, I received half a dozen ſtrokes more, which levelled me with the ground. I had but juſt ſtrength enough left to aſk the

meaning

meaning of all this; and, it being very dark, could neither discover the number nor faces of my assailants.—'O 'damn you, d'ye chatter, you dog! 'I'll give you your hire before I have 'done with you,' says the same voice—'and as to you, Madam, I defer your 'punishment till I get you home.'—The woman then counterfeited tears, and vowed to her husband, as she called him, that I had forced her into the coach with me; and, before I could appeal to the coachman, I found he was one of the gang, and corroborated what she said. This parley was finished by so many cuffs, kicks, and bastinadoes, that I fainted away; and how long I lay in that condition, cannot well determine, but found myself, when I recovered my senses, in the arms of two or three passengers, who happened to come that way, and had raised me up, and wiped the blood from my face. I had only my breeches, shoes, and stockings on; my coat, waistcoat, hat, buckles, gold-headed cane, and about four guineas which I had in my pocket, were gone; therefore they made no enquiry after my mischance, perceiving I had fallen into the hands of footpads; and I had no inclination to let them into the truth of the story. I begged them to help me to some house or other, which they complied with; and it proved to be a little blind tippling-house by the side of the road. The landlord was prevailed upon to lend me an old great-coat to go to London in, after leaving my stockings, which were silk, as a security for the return of it; otherwise, if I had died with cold, he could not have been moved to assist me. It was near one in the morning before I got to town, very faint, and hardly able to crawl; in which condition, not caring to go home, I went to Mr. Speculist's lodgings, and found him just come from the tavern. After telling him my story, which suggested a good deal of warning to me, he got a surgeon to look at my wounds, who found nothing that required more than the application of common plaisters; and, being an honest man, did not attempt, by any unintelligible jargon, or the common chicanery of the profession, to make a penny of my cure. I slept very soundly till ten the next morning, and found myself able to return to my business. My friend Diaper was shocked at seeing the change of my dress, for I had borrowed a coat and waistcoat of Speculist; and seeing my face bruised, and hearing my relation of being robbed and stripped, in which I carefully concealed the part that affected my own conduct, he would not suffer me to enter upon business, but insisted on my going immediately to bed, which I did accordingly. I had now sufficient leisure to reflect on my numerous follies, and the train of mischiefs they had engendered; and must confess my actions at this time appeared in so absurd a light, that no words can express the confusion and disordered shame that arose in my breast. I resolved, if possible, to forsake such pernicious courses for the future, and was thus running on in self-accusations, when Prim entered my chamber, all pale and wan, and with a countenance that betrayed the utmost disorder of mind. I was startled to see it, and asked, hastily, what brought him there, and what was the matter. 'Alas, Joe!' says he, 'I'm ruined for ever. You remember 'I was to have met you last night, in-'stead of which that devil Prig tempted 'me to go to the gaming-table, where 'I was fleeced of above fifty pounds, 'which was most of it my master's 'money: he demanded it of me this 'morning; I had no excuse to make, 'and was obliged to confess the truth. 'My father was sent for, and the re-'sult is, that I am going to sea to ex-'piate my crimes. I am now return-'ing home, and shall hardly see you 'again before I go. God bless you, 'my friend; take warning by my un-'happy fate, and leave off courses of 'extravagance, that can never fail of 'the most dreadful consequences.' In saying this, he let fall a shower of tears, and my heart was too full for utterance: we embraced, and took a farewel, very likely for ever. The misfortune of this young fellow increased my chagrin: hating the follies he was guilty of, he had every good quality to recommend him. I heartily sympathized in his trouble, and formed to myself still stronger resolutions of amendment.

For a week after this accident I lived regularly, and stuck close at home; my friend, charmed with this appear-

ance

ance of reformation, was quite beſide himſelf with joy, and ſtudied to oblige me in every thing; but I ſoon diſcovered that my laſt amour had left a latent poiſon in my blood, that began to ſhew itſelf with very frightful ſymptoms; I applied to a ſurgeon, and it was his advice that I ſhould undergo a ſalivation, without which, he aſſured me that I could never be perfectly cured. This ſentence diſtracted me; I curſed myſelf, and the cauſe of my ſufferings; I was almoſt in the mind to diſpatch myſelf out of the way; I could apprehend no means of keeping the ſcandalous affair from being made publick, to my utter diſgrace, and the ruin of my reputation; but Providence kindly took my part, and put it into the head of my friend to propoſe my taking a country journey of a week, or ſo, for my health, which was now viſibly impaired, though he was far from gueſſing the reaſon: I accepted the liberty with gratitude, and reſolved to make it ſubſervient to my cure; accordingly, having put my horſe, which he lent me, to livery, I took a lodging at Hoxton, and the ſurgeon began his operations, providing a nurſe, and every thing neceſſary. Notwithſtanding the perpetual perturbations of my ſoul, I went through the buſineſs with great ſafety, and got up in three weeks quite recovered of the vile diſtemper, but ſo weakened, that I was hardly able to ſtir. It was neceſſary I ſhould ſtay ſome time to recruit my ſtrength, but my money ran ſhort, and it was impoſſible for me to procure a ſupply without hazarding a diſcovery: in ſhort, I was reduced to the greateſt miſery and diſtreſs; every thing valuable about me went, one after another, to the pawnbrokers, and at laſt my watch, on which I procured two guineas; and having recovered ſtrength enough, though not my complexion, I was reſolved to be confined no longer; ſo diſcharging my lodging, I kept juſt five ſhillings in my pocket; but now my horſe muſt be paid for, before I could have him to make a ſemblance of returning from the country; I was here quite nonpluſſed; at length, it entered into my head, that I might perhaps be lucky at the gaming-table in Covent Garden, where I had ſeen perſons that brought in a few ſhillings carry off pounds; the ſuggeſtion was tempting, and I immediately obeyed it.

When I came into this ſchool of villainy, I could not help employing a few minutes in ſurveying the groupe of figures that crouded about the tables,

"Some to undo, and ſome to be undone,"

As the poet ſays: that rapacious eagerneſs and avidity, the different diſtortions of the adventurers, ſhewn in their faces, and the ſudden ſtarts of joy, or ravings of deſpair, on the ſeveral turns of fortune, made me ſtrongly conceive the pernicious effects of this vice, both to the mind and body: here was a creature chinking his ill-gotten treaſure, and dancing about the room in extaſies of gladneſs; but ſoon behold what a change! he is ſtripped by a turn of luck, and loſes his laſt ſhilling; he flings the balls into the fire, ſtamps, raves, curſes his folly, and acts over the perfect madman; blaſphemies and execrations, enough to fill the ſoul with horror, echo throughout the room; and a conſtant buz and tumult is heard on every ſide; envy, hatred, malice, revenge, and all the unſociable and unamiable paſſions, here reign in their genuine deformity. I was lucky enough to win three or four pounds at the ſilver-table, after ſeveral turns of fortune, but could not be contented, and removed to the gold-table, where, in the twinkling of an eye, I loſt again every ſhilling in my pocket. I was now perfectly diſtracted; and was ſo abominably imprudent, that I returned to the ſilver-table again, and laid five ſhillings to four, though I had not one farthing about me, truſting entirely to good luck; but I was woefully deceived, and not being able to pay what I had loſt, notwithſtanding all my excuſes, two or three fellows diſgracefully carried me to the ſtairs, and, by the vote of the whole company, kicked me down from top to bottom, where the attendants turned me out of doors. As I had received no hurt, I thought myſelf tolerably well off, though I was extremely mortified: what to do now I could not tell; but, thinking I ſhould meet with ſome acquaintance or other, I ſtrolled over to Tom King's: here the ſcene was ſomewhat changed, in one corner two

two or three drunken ſleepers, ſnoaring away their load of liquor; here a groupe of rakes in laſcivious diſcourſe, and wanton attitude, with half a dozen whores; others, of both ſexes, poaching after game; brawling and wrangling at one box; curſing and ſwearing at another; at this part of the room a pair of boxers dealt luſty blows on each other's chops, whilſt ſome dirty devil of a proſtitute remained the prize of him who had the fortune to overcome his antagoniſt; at another part, two or three viragos were demoliſhing each other's coifs, and rooting up their hair, inſpired by ſome ſudden guſt of jealouſy. It was ſome time before I caſt my eyes on any body I knew; at laſt, who ſhould I diſcover, but Prig, as drunk as David's ſow, retailing out law to an audience of market-women and porters, who were going to fetch a warrant for ſome poor wretch from the juſtice? He was overjoyed to ſee me; and, taking advantage of his uſual good-humour, in his cups, I borrowed three pieces of him, and then adjourned, without taking leave, to the inn where my horſe ſtood, where I went to bed, after the moſt fatiguing, unhappy, and mortifying day, that I ever paſſed in my life.

Next morning I took a tour round the neighbouring villages, and came home as juſt alighted from a journey; and, though my ſtay had been ſo very long, I was received by my young maſter with the higheſt tokens of friendſhip and kindneſs.

CHAP. XIV.

PACKER WRONGS HIS MASTER, AND IS DISCHARGED. — DISCOVERS THOMPSON'S PRACTICES TO MR. DIAPER.—GENEROUS BEHAVIOUR OF YOUNG DIAPER.—HE RESCUES HIM FROM ROBBERS.—BRAVERY OF PRIG.—HE IS HIGHLY CARESSED BY HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS.

SOON after my return home, an affair happened that gave my maſter a great deal of trouble and concern; Packer, our journeyman, with whom I had ſeldom held any converſation ſince I diſcovered his ill uſage of me, and who, on his part, behaved with great civility, accompanied with a diſtant reſerve, had been frequently employed, in my abſence, in receiving money of our town cuſtomers, which uſed to be conſtantly my department. It happened, that the day after my arrival I was ſent to a retailer's ſhop to receive a ſmall ſum of money which was become due, to the amount of twenty-eight pounds; but they informed me that Mr. Packer had received it a week before; I had no ſuſpicion upon this, but only imagined that he had forgot to ſettle the book, which occaſioned me to think it was ſtill due. I came home, and told Packer of his neglect, which he ſeemed to be ſorry for, and went directly and entered the ſum on the credit ſide of the account. As we were at dinner, I informed my friend what buſineſs I had done; and, amongſt the reſt, mentioned the error I had been led into, hoping our cuſtomer would not be diſobliged at it. He ſeemed quite ſurprized, and proteſted that Packer had never brought the money on account. He very ſeldom dined with us, having the privilege to board himſelf at a ſiſter's he had, that kept an houſe not far from us; and therefore we carried on the diſcourſe ſomewhat farther, and both agreed in obſerving that he had been very melancholy, and, as it were, out of himſelf for ſome time paſt. It directly jumped into my thoughts, that he was carrying on no good deſign, which I had more reaſon to imagine than any one; but however, I would not ſtrengthen Mr. Diaper's ſuſpicions, but propoſed to go to all the cuſtomers in town, and ſee if we could gather any farther tokens of infidelity; which my friend agreed to, and I put in execution that very afternoon. Upon the whole ſcrutiny, we found he had received in all ſixty-eight pounds more than he had accounted for, which made my young maſter vaſtly uneaſy, and not a little diſturbed me; for, on the one hand, I loved Mr. Diaper and his family too well to be unconcerned at ſuch a diſcovery; and, on the other, I feared, when things came to extremity, Packer might be villain enough to hint at ſome particulars in my conduct that would very greatly ſink me in their opinion. My friend reſolved to ſet out that evening, though very late, to impart the matter

to his father, deſiring me to behave as uſual, and not to ſeem to know any thing of what he was going upon, at ſo unſeaſonable and unuſual an hour. Gueſs the aſtoniſhment of our maſter, when his ſon made known to him the diſhoneſty of Packer! he could ſcarce credit him; and, had he not been armed with the moſt convincing proofs of his treſpaſs, he would almoſt have thought it a forgery, ſuch an aſcendency he had gained over him by his affectation of religion and ſobriety. When he was thoroughly convinced, he ſet out for town, and arrived at home at about eight o'clock in the morning, to the ſurprize of all the family, but to the utter diſcompoſure of poor Packer, whoſe condition I heartily pitied, notwithſtanding the reaſon I had to deteſt him. At the diſtance of an hour or two after his arrival, he ordered him to appear before him; and what paſſed we could not learn, only he was diſmiſſed from his place, but in ſo conſiderate a manner, as not to drive him to any deſperate ſally of raſhneſs. I could perceive the tears trickle from his eyes; but, as I feared it would look like an inſult upon his misfortunes, had I taken any notice of him, I retired till he was gone. My maſter then called up his ſon and me, and addreſſed us thus: 'I am ſorry 'for this poor wretch; certain unhappy 'habits he has contracted have brought 'him thus to betray my confidence; 'but I hope my lenity, and the in'ſtructions I have given him, will pre'vent his total ruin.—What ſurprized 'me greatly, child, applying himſelf 'to me, was, that he gave me ſome 'hints that you had ſwerved from 'thoſe excellent principles you imbi'bed from your father, and have 'even ſhewn a neglect of my buſineſs: 'I muſt own I am apprehenſive the 'ſhare you had in the detection of his 'knavery put him, unhappy creature! 'upon this accuſation.'—'Depend 'upon it, Sir,' ſays my friend, 'that 'muſt be the caſe, for Mr. Thompſon 'is ſo conſtantly in my company, that 'nothing of that nature could have 'happened without my knowledge and 'participation.'—'Why, that's the 'very reaſon for my diſbelief,' replies the worthy gentleman—'nor will I 'give way to any ſurmizes to your 'prejudice: go on, young man, to 'deſerve my eſteem, and to purſue 'maxims of virtue and prudence, 'which will not fail of endearing you 'to all good men, and eſtabliſh a peace 'and harmony of mind, that no acci'dent, *in* future life, will have the 'power to deſtroy.' He then gave us both ſome excellent leſſons of advice; and, after leaving orders relative to buſineſs, returned to his country-houſe. When he was gone, I took my generous friend in my arms, and was ſo overcome with this teſtimony of his goodneſs and affection, that I even ſhed tears, which flowed from the pureſt gratitude; he accepted my acknowledgments with a becoming reluctancy, and aſſured me nothing ſhould ever deſtroy his regard for me, which he hoped in time would entirely help to ſeparate me from thoſe haunts, and thoſe friendſhips, that would not fail of being my undoing.

I became now more circumſpect in my conduct, and kept very regular hours, and found a greater reliſh for the ſociety of my friend, who did and ſaid every thing he could to engage me to put a confidence in him, and diſcloſe my ſituation. Gratitude, that inherent principle of a worthy breaſt, kept me ſteady to my duty; nothing could ever rob me of that amiable incentive, which ſtill directed my actions in a faint and concealed degree in my worſt lapſes; nay, this very principle engaged me the firſt opportunity I had to call upon Prig, who now kept chambers in New Inn, to repay my obligation to him. He recollected it next morning; ſo, in balancing accounts, I paid him thirty ſhillings, which were due to him, and was over-perſuaded to go with him to Chelſea, upon a party of pleaſure, of which he aſſured me only two other male friends would partake. We ſpent the evening there in high glee, and did not ſet out for London till near midnight, and were gaily diſcourſing along the firſt of the five fields, when we over-heard ſeveral blows given, accompanied with oaths and curſes, and a voice which methought I was well acquainted with, calling out for help and aſſiſtance. Our two friends, immediately concluding it was ſomebody attacked by robbers, crying out, 'It will be our turn next, 'and ſo the devil take the hindmoſt!' ran away; but, encouraging Prig, I told

told him, I was reſolved to ſee what was the matter; in which he ſeconded me, for want of courage was not one of his foibles. I was induced to this raſhneſs by the ſound of the voice, which again and again was repeated, and, how improbable ſoever it appeared, I could not for my ſoul conceive it to be other than that of my dear friend Diaper. I was armed with a large oak-ſtick, and Prig had a ſword by his ſide, which not being ſkilled in the uſe of, he put into my hand, and took the cudgel in exchange. We were ſome time before we reached the ſpot whence the noiſe proceeded, which we no otherwiſe diſcovered, for it was dark as pitch, than by a challenge of 'D— ye, who are you?'—'Friends, 'what's the matter?' we replied; and, in anſwer, a piſtol was ſnapped at us, which flaſhed in the pan without any exploſion; by which light diſcovering three fellows, I lunged at the firſt with my ſword, and heard a groan, after having with ſome difficulty recovered it, and perceived it was wet. Prig gave and received ſeveral blows, when ſuddenly our antagoniſts took to their heels and fled; we thought it to no purpoſe to purſue them, but enquired if any one was there who had been ill-uſed by the villains. Nobody anſwered; and, groping about, I ſtumbled over a man, who we made no doubt was murdered, and were going back to the town to get ſome help, if peradventure any ſigns of life remained; when a groan or two, and a ſtruggle, as if from throttling, proceeded from the corpſe: we then determined to bear him between us, as it was not above two fields off, rather than delay aſſiſtance till our return; accordingly we, in about half an hour, brought him to a publick-houſe; but oh, good God! what where my griefs, when, upon bringing him into the light, we diſcovered it to be Mr. Diaper, my excellent friend, ſtreams of blood running in plenteous currents down his face and boſom. Leaving him in the care of Prig and the landlord and landlady, I ran with all haſte imaginable for a ſurgeon, and luckily found one at home; and, upon coming back he had recovered his ſenſes, to my very great joy. He fixed his eyes upon us, and juſt reached out his hand to me, which I took and bathed with my tears, but could not utter a ſyllable. On ſearching for his wounds, the ſurgeon found none dangerous, the great flux of blood proceeding from his head, which was cut in ſeveral places as with a hanger, but ſlantways; and ſeveral contuſions he had received on his ſhoulders, breaſt, and ſides. We aſked, if it would be improper to remove him ſo far as his own houſe; but the ſurgeon apprehending no danger in it, and he ſignifying his deſire, having juſt recovered his voice, to be removed there, we procured a ſedan from my Lord ——'s, and brought him ſafe into the city, myſelf, Prig, and two or three men we had hired, ſerving as a guard. His wounds were dreſſed at Chelſea, and therefore, without any delay, we got him into a warm bed, which, with the motion he had juſt received by the chair, ſoon brought him to the perfect uſe of his faculties. It is impoſſible to deſcribe his grateful returns for the ſuccour we had afforded him, and the embraces he beſtowed upon me in particular; for my part, I thought it the moſt happy and providential accident that ever befel me, for no manner of doubt could have been made, that theſe robbers intended to butcher him, being irritated by a ſtout reſiſtance which he had made till overcome by numbers, having a great charge about him; it coming into his head that evening to call on a cuſtomer at Chelſea, where he had been induced to ſtay ſo late, after having received a large bill, by the preſſing ſolicitations of his kind hoſt. This affair could not be concealed from my maſter and his mother, who hurried up to town frighted out of their wits at the news of their ſon's diſaſter; but, when they underſtood how wonderfully Providence had interpoſed in his ſafety and deliverance, they were all admiration; they embraced me, and my maſter told me, this circumſtance had ſo increaſed his value for me, that he loved me little leſs than his own ſon, whom I had ſo bravely and ſo like a true friend reſcued from deſtruction. Their acknowledgments to Prig were unbounded, who was greatly delighted; which gave me more eſteem for him than ever, at the ſervice he had rendered this worthy family.

The next day we ſaw an account in the paper of this robbery, and that a

man was found dead in the field, who had received his mortal wound by the thruſt of a ſword; upon which my maſter went with Mr. Prig to ſee if they could make any diſcovery; but returned without any other ſatisfaction than that this muſt be the man whom I had run through the body. My friend had only loſt five guineas and ſome ſilver out of his left breeches pocket, our ſeaſonable interpoſing having ſaved the money he had received, amounting to near an hundred and fifty pounds. I was with him almoſt continually, and his friendſhip to me was ſo increaſed, that he was never happy when I was abſent.

CHAP. XV.

DISCOURSE BETWEEN HIM AND YOUNG DIAPER—THEY ARE TRICKED BY GAMBLERS—HE BORROWS MONEY—IS SCURVILY USED BY SPECULIST—A DISCOVERY, WHICH SURPRIZES HIM.

AS ſoon as my friend was tolerably well, his father, willing to give him an opportunity for a little recreation, ſtaid ſome time in town, and permitted us to take what innocent diverſions we had an inclination to; amongſt others, we frequently took excurſions on foot, into the country, without determining upon any particular rout, ſometimes rambling in one direction, over hedge and ditch, and ſometimes in another, entertained with the profuſion of ſweets that nature had beſtowed on the fields and meads, with ſuch a liberal hand, and the variegated beauties of the ſeaſon. It was in theſe walks that I unboſomed myſelf to this excellent youth, and gave him a detail of all my follies, from my firſt ſtepping aſide from virtue to the preſent time. He helped me to make many uſeful reflections on the vanity and fatal conſequences of ſuch a rakiſh and abandoned courſe of life; 'But, my 'Joey,' ſays he, 'one day, you won't 'be ſurprized, when I acquaint you, 'that I knew moſt of theſe particulars 'long ago; but diſſembled my knowledge of them, depending, that, one 'time or other, your good ſenſe would 'get the upper hand of your foibles, 'which, if they had met with oppoſition 'or upbraidings, would perhaps have 'only been ſtrengthened by it. Packer 'was ſo great a villain, as to betray 'your intercourſe with Nanny, very 'much to your diſadvantage, without 'making any mention of himſelf; 'but only as a matter of his obſervation. I deſpiſed his malicious inſinuations, for ſuch I judged they were; 'but was concerned for your ſituation. 'As to other matters in your conduct, 'I have gathered them from your own 'behaviour, your ſhunning my company, the embarraſſment you was 'generally under; but more particularly the company you kept eaſily let 'me into the manner of your ſpending 'your time, and the nature of your 'diverſions: but tell me now ſincerely, my friend, was not your generous temper ſhocked at the idea of 'being involved in a courſe of life that 'was abſolutely contradictory to your 'own ſober thinking, and put you to 'the neceſſity of making concealments, 'and acting under a cloud in every 'thing? I am amazed, for my part, 'when I reflect upon your difficulties 'and the breaches you muſt make in 'truth, in order to keep up appearances; which endeavour is a plain 'proof that you were ſenſible you was 'carrying on ſchemes directly oppoſite 'to the received opinions of mankind, 'and thoſe decorums that the moſt profligate are willing to comply with for 'their own ſakes, and to avoid publick 'cenſure and reproach.'—'Indeed, 'Sir,' I replied, 'you are making a very 'juſt judgment of my ſituation, and 'nothing could be more miſerable; my 'depraved appetites bore down my reaſon, and a habit of purſuing falſe 'pleaſure intoxicated me to ſuch a degree, that it made a moment's reflection uneaſy. Unhappy is that man, 'who bears about him a thorough conviction of what is regular and fit; 'and, at the ſame time, tranſgreſſes 'againſt his knowledge, and even the 'bent of his natural diſpoſition! I 'perceived I was affronting myſelf in 'every thing I did, and yet ſo powerful was paſſion, and overbearing appetite, that I had it not in my power 'to ſtem the torrent of vice that flowed in on every ſide. Alas! my dear 'friend, you are not acquainted with 'the hell ſuch a man carries about 'him, ever reſolving to forſake his

'ways,

'ways, and yet every moment more
'and more entangled. I believe I
'ſhould have forſaken my follies very
'often upon the pain the various diſ-
'aſters and ſcrapes they brought me
'into occaſioned; but there a kind of
'pride oppoſed me—"No," I cried,
"if I return to virtue by ſuch a cha-
"grin, I have no merit in it; I ought
"not to give her a triumph from the
"ills her enemy brings upon me, but
"for her own ſake, and giving her the
"honour of making a conqueſt over
"my ſoul, by the force of her pure
"and undiſſembled charms, without
"the inducements of ſorrow, pain, or
"ill-nature, I felt in tranſgreſſing her
"precepts." By this time we had en-
tered the town, which broke off our
diſcourſe. We were going through
Old Street, when a quarrel between
three or four well-dreſſed men engaged
our attention; one of them, in parti-
cular, ſeemed to look like a reſponſible
tradeſman, and had abundant gravity
and ſerioufneſs in his countenance;
who ſeemed to regard us with a great
deal of curioſity, ever and anon caſting
his eyes at us with a kind of eager pe-
netration. His antagoniſts ſoon left
him, before we could gather the mean-
ing of the diſpute, and went into a
publick-houſe in the neighbourhood,
whilſt he addreſſed his diſcourſe to us
ſeemingly in a very great ferment.
'Gentlemen,' ſays he, 'you look like
'men of honour—I know you, Mr.
'Diaper, and have a great friendſhip
'for your father—theſe villains, I
'can call them no better, have in-
'veigled me into a game at cards, and
'have ſtripped me of ſeven or eight
'guineas; I am ſure they could not win
'it fairly: I can't imagine what could
'rob me of my ſenſes ſo much as to en-
'gage with them, and I can't prevail
'upon the man of the houſe to fetch a
'conſtable, otherwiſe I would ſee into
'the bottom of their roguery, and pu-
'niſh them for the good of other
'unwary people that may chance to
'fall in their way; there's a neſt of
'them, I believe, that infeſt all parts of
'the town. I wiſh, gentlemen,' ſays
he, in a half whiſper, 'you would
'ſtep in to them and engage them to
'ſtay till I return with an officer; here
'are a couple of guineas, pleaſe to take
'them, Sir, and whatever you loſe more,
'in the mean time, to detain them, I
'will return you again; the good
'of the publick I would buy at any
'price.' It was impoſſible to refuſe
him this favour, he preſſed us ſo cloſe-
ly, and we had a curioſity likewiſe to
ſee the tricks of this ſort of folks, of
whom we heard every day ſuch odd ac-
counts: and, accordingly, begging
him not to ſtay long, becauſe our time
was precious, we went into the houſe.
We found them railing againſt our
employer in the bittereſt terms. One
ſaid, he was a preſbyterian parſon;
'No, damn the preaching puppy,'
ſays another, 'he is an oilman in
'Cheapſide, and a deviliſh rich fel-
'low.'—'Let him be what he will,'
ſays a third, 'he deſerves to be pu-
'niſhed for charging gentlemen with
'unfair practices, who are as good
'men as himſelf!' and then went on to
tell us a long ſtory of the games they
had played; after which, they ſaid,
one and all, that they would go:
'What ſignifies ſtaying, Mr. Biſhop,'
ſays one to another, 'it is late in the
'evening now, without you will play
'a rubber or two at cribbage?—
'What do you ſay, gentlemen, ſhall
'we make four?' We aſſented, and it
came to be our lot to be partners; we
played three or four games, and won,
at which they ſeemed to be wonderouſly
vexed, and then fortune changed unper-
ceivably, and we not only loſt the good
man's two guineas, but two more to
them, which chagrined us ſo, that we ſet
in earneſt to take our revenge; but it was
all the ſame, we loſt a guinea and a half
more; when one of them getting up,
ſeemed to recollect a piece of buſineſs he
had forgot, and ſaid he could ſtay no
longer, but would return again in half
an hour; however, he did not come in
an hour; and the old gentleman not
returning, we grew impatient, and
more ſo when, maugre all our in-
treaties, the reſt bruſhed off one after
another. The landlord then accoſted
us, and aſked us, 'Gentlemen, do
'you know what a ſet of people you
'have been converſing with?' We
told him, 'Yes,' and the reaſon why
we engaged with them; at which he
could not forbear burſting into a loud
laughter, and told us, that grave per-
ſon was one of the gang; and, no
doubt, had at once contrived this
ſcheme to take us in. It is impoſſible
to expreſs our ſpleen at this news; we

were

were almoſt ready to accuſe one another, and fell upon the man of the houſe for not giving us an hint ſooner. 'Lack-a-day, Sir,' ſays he, 'if they 'were to diſcover me in giving any 'ſuch intelligence, I ſhould be mur-'dered; they are the cloſeſt and moſt 'impudent gang of villains in the 'world, and appear in all diſguiſes.' We had no remedy, and went home full of diſpleaſure, though we could not help ſmiling at the trick that had been played us. Nobody can guard too much againſt ſudden prepoſſeſſions in a man's favour, as the world is at preſent ſituated, for ſuch people make it their buſineſs to know every body, witneſs this fellow's pretences to acquaintance with my maſter, which was what moſt deceived us; the quarrel had only been a ſham to draw ſome unwary perſon into their company, and the ſight of us directed him to this expedient. We could not help telling Mr. Diaper, when we came home, of this adventure, at which he was highly diverted, and took occaſion to caution us againſt the tricks of the town, which are every day put in practice.

I now quite loſt my inclination to the life I had led, and ſeriouſly applied myſelf to buſineſs, ſeldom ſtirring out, except now and then to meet Speculiſt and Prig, with whom I ſtill kept up a correſpondence; but I was haraſſed inceſſantly with duns, my late extravagances having left nothing in the hands of Mr. Deacon, whom I had ſo diſobliged alſo, by refraining from viſiting him, that I had not the face to aſk him to advance money, before it was due. My ſhoe-maker, taylor, nay, even my ſhoe-blacker, became importunate, ſo that I was forced to undergo the drudgery of promiſing, this time and that time, and t'other, to pay them, without a poſſibility of performing my engagements; which, as they thought I never wanted money, they interpreted much to my diſadvantage. It would be full half a year, before I could receive any part of my ſtipend, and I did not care to expoſe my wants to my friend. What to do to releaſe myſelf from theſe vexations I could not tell, and was forced to borrow ſum after ſum of Speculiſt and Prig, which they began to grow uneaſy about: nay, at times, I borrowed of others of my acquaintance, ſo that I was hardly able to ſhew my head. In this dilemma I called on Speculiſt, who I always thought had a peculiar value for me, and, knowing he did not want money, laid my trouble before him, and deſired him to let me have as much as would ſatisfy my other creditors, upon giving him a draft upon Mr. Deacon, for my yearly allowance as faſt as it became due; but, how was I aſtoniſhed, when he broke out into this ſpeech: 'Look ye, Mr. 'Thompſon, I don't care to truſt you 'any farther, and can't imagine what 'you do with your money; for my 'part, I have no more than is ne-'ceſſary for my own occaſions, and 'can't ſupply you any longer, nor 'do I deſire any more of your com-'pany: I have fallen under a great 'deal of cenſure already, by con-'verſing with young fellows that are 'not at their own hands, and I have 'loſt money by that ſcoundrel Prim, 'who is now gone clerk to the captain 'of an Eaſt Indiaman, and I believe 'will never have the honeſty to repay 'me a farthing; you ſhould apply to 'your relations, I think—' Here, interrupting him, I told him, I was ſorry that I had put it into his power to make me theſe reproaches, though I was glad thereby I had diſcovered his temper; which would give me a greater ſurfeit of the ways he had introduced me to, and been a conſtant partaker of with me, than the moſt heightened eloquence that could be employed: I put him in mind of that univerſal benevolence and kindneſs he was always inculcating; though I was a fool to regard it or think it ſincere, as, before now, I might have obſerved him contradict it in all his actions, had I not been totally blind: 'I find, Mr. 'Speculiſt,' I added, 'you can per-'ceive the beauty of a right behaviour, 'when exerciſed towards yourſelf, but 'not when it is required of you, or 'puts you to any pains or expences; 'and am now thoroughly convinced 'of the uſefulneſs and beautiful in-'ſtruction conveyed in theſe words, 'by the ſon of Sirach, "If thou "wouldeſt get a friend, prove him "firſt, and be not haſty to credit him: "for ſome man is a friend for his own "occaſion, and will not abide in the "day of thy trouble. And there is a "friend, who, being turned to en-

"mity

" mity and ſtrife, will diſcover thy " reproach. If thou be brought low, " he will be againſt thee, and hide " himſelf from thy face." Indeed, ' could I expect any other, when ours ' was a friendſhip like a conſpiracy in ' vice, and leagues of pleaſure, as ' Mr. Addiſon ſays?' He was ſtruck dumb with this juſt retaliation upon him, and I left him with all the marks of fury in his countenance. I muſt own I was ſhocked at the inſolence of this man, and his uſage of poor Prim, who, by the bye, I knew, owed him little or nothing, ſhewed him to me in his proper colours. I was reſolved to avoid ſuch companions for the future, and was returning home, deeply involved in ſelf-accuſation, when a tumultuous uproar, at the corner of a ſtreet I was to paſs through, made a ſtop, and I diſcovered the occaſion to be, that a woman had been detected in picking a pocket, and was put into the hands of the mob for due diſcipline: ſhe was cleanly dreſſed, and betrayed tokens of the greateſt fear and terror; but my eyes had no ſooner faſtened upon her, than I recollected the very features of the *quondam* Mrs. Tripſey, who had ſerved me ſuch a foul trick in my return from Vauxhall. As my reſentment had long ſubſided, I regarded her as an object of compaſſion, and would have prevailed on the people to carry her before a magiſtrate; but the proſecutor could not be found, and therefore it was in vain to plead for mercy, and ſhe was ſeverely ducked in the horſe-pond of a neighbouring inn, and then turned adrift in a moſt uncomfortable condition. I marked which way ſhe went, and followed her for near half an hour, till the poor wretch got into the fields, with an intent to dry her cloaths, and then hipped after her. She turned about, but no ſooner diſcovered me, than ſhe gave a ſhriek, and was making all poſſible haſte to run from me: but I overtook her; and, telling her, I meant her no harm, ſhe became tolerably calm; I told her, ſhe might well fear the conſequences of my ſeeing her; but, as I had juſt ſeen her puniſhed for another crime, I would wave my reſentment, if ſhe would let me know where to get my cane again, which I very much valued. She wept and thanked me, but aſſured me it had been ſold with my other things by her male accomplices, ſhe knew not where. I then laid before her her vile and wretched manner of life, and the conſequences it would in the end produce, with which ſhe ſeemed affected; and, giving her a ſmall piece of money, was going away; but ſhe begged me to ſtay a minute or two, for ſhe had ſomewhat to impart to me that might be of ſervice. ' The ' villain, Sir, that paſſed for my huſ- ' band, and robbed you that night ' I was in the coach with you, is dead; ' he was run through the body by ' ſome gentlemen who came up to the ' reſcue of another he had attacked in ' a field near Chelſea.'—' How!' ſays I, ' is what you ſay true?'—' Yes, ' Sir,' ſhe replied, ſomewhat alarmed at my ſtarting, ' he was, I aſſure you: ' I was unhappily ruined by that man, ' who brought me, through a ſeries of ' misfortunes and diſtreſs, to aid him ' in his wicked courſes; he was at ' Vauxhall, during the whole time of ' our converſation there, and the coach ' I called was driven by a fellow of the ' gang, who plied for the purpoſe of ' aſſiſting us in any ſuch attempt as ' that I made on you. But what I ' want to inform you is this, Sir, that ' the gentleman, who was robbed at ' Chelſea, is a great linen-draper in ' the city, with whom you live at this ' time; for this knowledge I gathered ' by ſeeing you both at the ſhop-door ' together the night before the rob- ' bery, and I wanted then an oppor- ' tunity to diſcover the deſign to you; ' for a deſign it was, and the fellows ' had their intelligence of his going to ' Chelſea, from a man who is lately ' become a partner in their rogueries, ' who lived as a journeyman with your ' maſter, and has the greateſt inveter- ' acy againſt you all three, for what ' reaſon I never could learn. Since ' yeſterday morning, I have been quite ' abandoned to wretchedneſs, and the ' crime you ſaw me ſo roughly hand- ' led for, I was induced to commit ' through mere want of bread. Your ' generoſity and goodneſs, Sir, I hope ' will make me a true convert; and, if ' Heaven is ſo gracious as to accept my ' repentance, I am reſolved to work my ' fingers to the bones, rather than ever ' expoſe myſelf to ſuch vileneſs and ' wickedneſs as I have too long been ' ſubject to and partaker of.' Here

ſhe

ſhe wept aloud, and moved my compaſſion ſo much, that I gave her half a guinea, which was the whole that I had about me, adviſing her to cheriſh theſe motions of returning goodneſs, and telling her, that if ever I ſaw her again, and was witneſs to a reformation and induſtrious honeſty in her, I would be her friend.

I could not help adoring the juſtice of Providence, in making uſe of my arm to execute vengeance upon the villain who had ſo ill uſed me; and my indignation againſt Packer, who had received ſo many favours from the perſon he was thus endeavouring to murder and deſtroy, was exceſſive: I remembered he knew of the money that was owing us at Chelſea, and if I had gone for it, no doubt, the favour received by my friend was intended alſo to me. So many inſtances of the vileneſs and corruption of human nature made me quite melancholy, and I returned home in an aſtoniſhment and profound thoughtfulneſs, that was immediately taken notice of by my friend, to whom I imparted the occaſion. He was paſt meaſure affected with the diſcoveries I had made; and, as we did not know what farther miſchiefs Packer, as he knew the ſecrets of the family, and the nature of our trade, might endeavour to do, we reſolved to be very circumſpect for the future in every thing we undertook, and to keep it a ſecret from my maſter, for fear of giving him any diſturbance.

CHAP. XVI.

SPECULIST WAITS UPON MR. DIAPER, WHO REPROVES THOMPSON—HE CONFESSES HIS FOLLY—IS PARDONED—EXCELLENT BEHAVIOUR OF HIS MASTER—PERMITTED TO VISIT HIS FATHER AND MOTHER WITH HIS FRIEND—THEY SET OUT ON THEIR JOURNEY.

I Found it was now abſolutely neceſſary for me to regain the confidence and eſteem of Mr. Deacon, in order to get rid of my troubleſome viſitants, for which purpoſe I more frequently went to ſee him; and, as he was really a very ſenſible and underſtanding man, reaped a great deal of benefit from his converſation, and had almoſt defaced the bad opinion he had conceived of me, when the malice or vanity of Speculiſt at once made a diſcovery of my untoward ſituation. He bore my late rejoinder to his diſcourſe very hardly; and, fired with reſentment at my conſequent eſtrangement from him, (for what he had ſaid, of not deſiring my company, was only one of thoſe airs he gave himſelf with thoſe acquaintances over whom he acquired a ſuperiority) reſolved to be revenged; and, therefore, this man of reaſon and philoſophy, who was not quite unknown to my maſter, one day paid him a viſit, at which he ſeemed very much ſurprized, as he had never converſed with him, not at all liking his character. He ſoon put him out of the uncertainty of his deſign, by acquainting him, he came out of pure compaſſion to Mr. Thompſon, to let him know, that he was fearful he had taken ſome bad courſes, and kept company with perſons who would do him much diſſervice; and then gave him a detail of thoſe little follies I had been guilty of, the neceſſities he knew I was driven to, and an account of the debt I had contracted with him; concluding, that he gave him the preſent trouble out of pure good-will to the young gentleman, not doubting but he would exert his authority and influence over me, to engage me to forſake ſuch practices for the future. The good man was quite ſurprized at this account of me; and, as he had heard me mention Mr. Speculiſt, as an ingenious gentleman, and one I greatly reſpected, ſaw, through the appearance of friendſhip he put on, the rancour of his heart; and, without any emotion, gravely aſked him, what it was I owed him. And, upon hearing it was only twelve pounds, counted him out the money, took his receipt, and begged the favour of him to depart the houſe; which he did with the utmoſt precipitancy and ſhame, which was the more increaſed by his meeting me full-butt at the bottom of the ſtair-caſe. He juſt moved his hat, and went away; leaving me in amaze at ſeeing him in our houſe, where he had never been before, and many conjectures about his buſineſs there.

The next morning, my friend and myſelf were both ſent for into my maſter's

ſter's chamber; who, after ſhutting the door, accoſted us in the following manner. 'My dear children, for I 'can't prevail upon myſelf to conſider 'either of you in any other light, I 'have obſerved, with an unmeaſurable 'ſatisfaction, your ſtrict union ever 'ſince you have been together; your 'tempers, your actions, and the re-'gard you have paid to me and my 'wife, and your ſtudying my welfare 'with ſo much care, in the manage-'ment of my buſineſs, has charmed 'me, and my mind has made me happ-'py in the contemplation of your vir-'tues.—You, Mr. Thompſon, parti-'cularly, becauſe bound only to me 'by the weak tie of obedience: I 'hope I have given you convincing 'proofs, by my behaviour to you, that 'I regard your fidelity and attachment 'in the tendereſt manner. What will 'you, then, what can I ſay to a man 'who has endeavoured to perſuade me 'with a fond officiouſneſs to bear un-'grateful tidings, that you have fol-'lowed courſes that I muſt highly diſ-'approve; have neglected my concerns '—which you, ſon, have connived at— 'have frequented the company of lewd 'women, and wild young fellows, 'whoſe only aim and ſtudy is the gra-'tification of their debauched imagi-'nations and depraved paſſions? I 'muſt own, I treated him with the 'contempt he deſerved, as I could 'ſee, through his maſk of friendſhip 'and concern, an inveteracy which all 'the ſhew of impartial repreſentation 'could not hide; nor had I believed 'any thing againſt you, if he had not 'at the ſame time convinced me of 'ſomething which grieves me greatly; 'he ſays you have been extravagant, 'and are in debt, and, as a proof of 'it, declared you was indebted to 'him. I gave him no encouragement 'to purſue his animadverſions, but 'have paid him the money for you; 'ſee, there is his receipt, and by that 'you will know the author of what I 'tell you. Now, I muſt own, if you 'are driven to ſuch neceſſities, it would 'almoſt lead me to think all the reſt 'of his charge was true; for I am 'ſenſible your father ſupplies you with 'every thing neceſſary, and more 'pocket-money than I ſhould care to 'truſt a youth with. I am not an-'gry, child, and only beg you to let 'me know your embarraſſments, that 'you may be relieved, and not tempt-'ed to do any thing unbecoming a 'youth I ſo greatly eſteem, and the 'ſon of a worthy and dear friend: I 'am ſenſible what temptations ſur-'round us on every ſide, at your age, 'and make all the allowances for hu-'man frailty that I poſſibly can.'— Here he pauſed, whilſt the tears ran down my cheeks, and I was for ſome time incapable of anſwering: at length, recovering myſelf, I thanked him for all his kindneſſes and conſtant good-neſs to me, and told him, I ſhould be inexcuſable not to make a ſincere con-feſſion of all my follies, which I hoped were not of ſo heinous a nature as not to be pardoned upon a ſincere amend-ment, as he had expreſſed ſuch a regard for my welfare, and it was the only means left me to return to my former innocence and tranquillity. I then gave him a ſhort detail of all my er-rors and ſlips of youth, not without mingling my tale with conſcious bluſh-es and motions of ſhame and regret, which often interrupted my diſcourſe. 'And now, dear Sir,' I cried, falling on my knees, and kiſſing his hand, with a fervent action of affection, 'I 'have given you an account of the 'crimes I have been guilty of, let me 'intreat you not to hate me, but let 'me plead with you for forgiveneſs 'and compaſſion: I hope it is not too 'late to recover my mind from thoſe 'vices which I have now a thorough 'deteſtation of; I have for ſome time 'forſaken theſe reſorts of wickedneſs, 'and feel the higheſt pleaſure on the 'approaches I make again to that 'peace and happineſs I have for ſo 'long a time loſt. Deprive me not of 'the ſociety of my dear friend, and 'the comfort I have ever received in 'your good opinion; I will be doubly 'diligent the remainder of my time, 'to make you amends for my repeated 'neglects: your goodneſs gives me a 'thouſand nameleſs compunctions; 'may Heaven enable me to deſerve it 'the remainder of my life!' I could ſay no more, and a flood of moving ſorrow put a period to my diſcourſe. My friend mingled his concern with mine, and ſaid every thing that could diſarm any reſentment that might ariſe

in his father's breaſt: he ſtood for ſome time thoughtful, at length he ſoftened, and a tear of mercy ſtole down his venerable face, and, raiſing me up, he embraced me with eager preſſures, then took his ſon into his arms, and kindly told us he forgave me every thing. Words cannot deſcribe the gratitude that aroſe in my breaſt, and quite overcame me; I made no anſwer, but embraced his knees; he ſaw my condition, and left us to come to ourſelves. How much relieved I was after the diſcloſure of my crimes and the pardon I received, no one can tell; had the weight of a mountain oppreſſed me, it's removal could not have given me more real eaſe. My friend preſſed me to his boſom, and gave me the higheſt congratulations; I returned his careſſes, and was ready to devour him with my acknowledgments for his goodneſs. A few minutes afterwards my maſter returned. 'Think yourſelf happy, Mr. Thompſon,' ſays he, 'that you have been 'obliged to make this confeſſion, and 'that you are relieved from the gloom 'that was occaſioned by the conceal'ment of your condition; I congra'tulated myſelf on ſeeing your return 'to virtue, almoſt as ſoon as I knew 'of your defection: let me intreat 'you to apply for pardon to the Au'thor of our being, whom you have 'highly offended by ungratefully miſ'employing thoſe excellent talents and 'abilities he has beſtowed upon you; 'let him have all the praiſe for this 'happy turn of your affairs; at the 'throne of his mercy be conſtant in 'your petitions, for his grace and 'favour to ſupport you in the reſolu'tions you have taken to act agree'able to his laws, his pure injunc'tions; reſume your good-humour 'and your endeavours to pleaſe and 'oblige every body you are concerned 'with, and, by a thorough adherence 'to religion and virtue, you will be 'happy yourſelf, and bleſs all your 'friends. Let me have an account of 'all your debts, which I will inſtantly 'diſcharge; and, rather than afflict 'your good father with the knowledge 'of what is paſt, I will wait till you 'are in a capacity to pay me again. 'It is neceſſary to relieve you from 'ſuch a burden to a generous mind, 'that you may have nothing left to im'pede you in your revived diſpoſition 'to happineſs; and, as you may have 'contracted ſome acquaintance you 'cannot handſomely part from ab'ruptly, I have been thinking to in'dulge you with the liberty of taking 'a journey into Yorkſhire, for a 'month or two, to ſee your parents; 'and, as my wife is able to bear the 'town better than ſhe has been for 'ſome time paſt, my ſon, if he 'pleaſes, ſhall accompany you; your 'father has often preſſed me to let him 'come down to ſee him, and he ſhall 'take this opportunity—therefore, fi'niſh what buſineſs you have in hand, 'gentlemen; you are welcome to my 'horſes, and may ſet out when you 'will—your father and mother long to 'ſee you; and it is time to gratify 'their deſire, after an abſence of four 'years and an half: if I want you in 'town ſooner than I have mentioned, 'I'll write you word; when you come 'back you will be a ſtranger to the 'people you would avoid, and may 'then keep them at a proper diſtance. 'Here's a ſmall token of my reſpect, 'which you will accept of for the ex'pences of your journey.' In ſo ſaying, he clapped a paper into each of our hands, containing twenty guineas, and left me in extaſy of admiration and acknowledgment for his goodneſs and condeſcenſion. My friend was tranſported with the thoughts of our going together; and, as for my part, I had never experienced ſo much delight before. In about a week after, having ſettled our books, and left all affairs ready to my maſter's hands, we ſet out on our journey, taking leave of him and my miſtreſs, who overwhelmed me, as well as her ſon, with the kindeſt expreſſions of regard.

CHAP. XVII.

DIGRESSION ON THE BEAUTIES OF THE COUNTRY — THEY OVERTAKE COMPANY, TO WHOM THEY ARE KNOWN — ARE ENTERTAINED AT MR. BELLAIR'S — DIAPER FALLS IN LOVE WITH MISS SUSANNA BELLAIR — HE RELIEVES HER FROM A GREAT DANGER — HIS PASSION APPROVED

PROVED BY HER BROTHER—MEETS WITH A RETURN FROM HER — THEY PURSUE THEIR JOURNEY.

HOW agreeable is a receſs from the town to a man who is conſtantly engaged in the hurry and noiſe of buſineſs! it exhilarates and refreſhes the mind, and gives the ſpirits a new flow, that has a very ſanative effect upon the body; emerging from noiſe, uproar, and confuſion, was like getting rid of a weight that bore us down with hard oppreſſion; the ſoul ſeemed now to enjoy it's manſion, and, roving gaily from one object to another, gratified it's unbounded curioſity, and it's enlarged vehicle was better qualified to entertain the noble gueſt.

What a profuſion of embelliſhments has the Sublime Author of nature beſtowed on the viſible creation at this ſeaſon of the year! How is the eye delighted with gaudy blended tincts of green, and azure, and gold! the ears raviſhed with the melody that is poured forth from the harmonious throats of the feathered inhabitants of every buſh and ſpray, and whole nature ſeeming in a ſtate of exultation to *hymn* the *Great Creator!* The loaded branches bend beneath the weight of the various products of the ſeaſon; the teeming earth ſends forth, from it's prolifick womb, the ſhining yellow grain, with rich increaſe; the neighing ſteed friſks over the plain; the tender lambkin gambols through the lawn; and the ſturdy peaſant ſees his riches flowing in on every ſide. Nothing can excite the mind to a greater veneration of the Great, Firſt Cauſe of all things, than to ſurvey all the wondrous, delightful objects, that every where around bedeck the rural ſcene; and the grateful mind, involuntarily, breaks out into raptures of praiſe and thankſgiving.

The two firſt days of our journey were uninterrupted by any accident; we enjoyed each other's company with a ſatisfaction that it is impoſſible truly to expreſs; our converſation, which rolled on various uſeful ſubjects, beguiled the way; and, as we had time enough before us, we made ſhort and eaſy ſtages, gratifying our curioſity with every thing that was worth viewing, and often making excurſions from the direct road, to indulge ourſelves with a pleaſant country, and an agreeable proſpect. Mr. Diaper, who had not been ſuch a journey for many years, was quite captivated with the new pleaſures we taſted; and we kept up a chearfulneſs and good-humour, which was but bare gratitude for the enjoyments we received.

About noon on the third day of our peregrination, we overtook a chaiſe and pair, followed by a number of domeſticks, in a livery that methought I had ſomewhere particularly noticed before; but when we had paſſed, and I juſt turned my head back to look at the perſons in the vehicle, how agreeably pleaſed I was to diſcover the ſame amiable gentleman and lady whoſe converſation had captivated me ſo much at Vauxhall! They knew me alſo, at once, and both ſeemed tranſported at the lucky meeting: after the firſt civilities had paſſed between us, I was gently chid for not having performed my promiſe of calling to ſee them, which I excuſed in as handſome a manner as I could. Then they enquired our route, which happened to be through that part of the country they were proceeding to, to their country-houſe, where they inſiſted that we ſhould accompany them, and ſpend a day or two, which we could by no means refuſe. We arrived there the ſame evening, and were introduced to a genteel and commodious houſe, which, for ſituation and accommodations, was one of the prettieſt and compleateſt villas that ever I ſaw in my life. My companion, as well as myſelf, was charmed with our reception, which was as cordial and reſpectful as could be given to the moſt valuable friends. The good ſenſe and œconomy of the maſter and miſtreſs were viſible in the contented and eaſy looks of the ſervants, and the excellent management and order that appeared in the minuteſt things: plenty without waſte, or profuſion, was ſeen at the table; and every thing wore an air of the moſt refined elegancy. They were received, at their entrance, by a young lady, ſiſter to the gentleman, who was a repreſentation of Flora; an innocent ſweetneſs ſhone in her countenance, and the ruddy morn was not arrayed with more inſpiring blooming graces: ſhe alſo accoſted us with a

courteous and inviting look, that you could not help feeling to the bottom of the heart. At ſupper we were entertained with a repaſt that ſpoke the noble temper of our hoſt; and a converſation enſued, in which every one bore ſuch a ſhare as gave a mutual good opinion of each other. We did not retire to bed till pretty late, and were conducted to a very grand apartment, where we were taken up ſome time in our admiration of our new acquaintance. My friend was curious to know how I came to be known to Mr. Bellair and his ſpouſe, for that was his name, in which I gratified him; he then ran out in exceſſive encomiums on the beauties and perfections of Miſs Sukey, by which I could plainly perceive his very ſoul began to be infected with her charms; which diſcovery not a little pleaſed me, as I had before obſerved an inſenſibility to the fair-ſex in him that very much ſurprized me: the whole night he toſſed and tumbled about, and every now and then a ſigh eſcaped him, as by ſtealth; upon which, the next morning, I raillied him very ſeverely. 'What ſignifies denying any thing to 'you, Joe?' ſays he, very ſeriouſly; 'I muſt confeſs that little Cherubim 'has made me uncommonly uneaſy; 'and I would give the world, if I had 'it, for a companion for life, of ſuch 'a diſtinguiſhed merit as I obſerved in 'that dear creature.' He uttered theſe words in ſuch a tone and manner that I could not help repeating my mirth at his expence; at which he grew a little angry, and forced me to deſiſt: after which we commenced a very earneſt diſcourſe about the family, and agreed to make all the obſervations we could of the circumſtances and diſpoſition of the young lady, without whom he proteſted he could not think of living. Our conſultations were finiſhed by a ſervant's entering with a meſſage that breakfaſt was ready; and we, immediately obeying the ſummons, found Mr. Bellair and the two ladies, who were very merry at our over-ſleeping ourſelves in ſuch a lovely morning; which, Miſs obſerved, was being a little ungrateful for the pleaſure it beſtowed upon us. Breakfaſt over, a walk was propoſed in the garden, which was a very extenſive one; and at the farther extremity of it was a very fine fiſhpond, with an alcove for the anglers to repoſe themſelves, and a bank of green turf all round it. 'This diverſion, you 'muſt know, gentlemen,' ſays Mr. Bellair, 'is a very favourite one with 'me, and my wife and ſiſter, as we 'can purſue it, and yet indulge our 'contemplations, and impart them to 'each other: but I aſſure you that 'Miſs is the beſt ſportſman by far, 'and not a preſent inhabitant of the 'ſcaly fry but has been, one time or 'other, upon her hook; though, like 'the method of the generality of la-'dies in treating thoſe lovers, who 'only ſerve to make up the number of 'their conqueſts, after trifling with 'them ſome time, ſhe gives them their 'liberty again.'—'If Miſs, Sir,' ſays my friend, 'were to torture her lov-'ers in that manner, I apprehend it 'would never be in her power to re-'ſtore the bleſſings you mention again 'to them, and they would be too fond 'of their ſlavery to deſire it.' At this ſhe bluſhed; and, to turn off the diſcourſe, propoſed ſending for the fiſhing-rods, to try our ſkill. We had all of us ſome ſport, but my friend, who was ſo fixed on the actions of the young lady, and ſo attentive to the indulgence of his infant paſſion, that he did not catch one; upon which ſhe merrily told him, ſhe would take care to provide a dinner for them both. The words were ſcarce out of her mouth, when, leaning too forward, the edge of the bank gave way under her, and ſhe fell at once into the water, which was pretty deep. We were all terribly frightened; but, as to Mr. Diaper, he gave a great cry, and immediately plunged into the pond; and brought her out in his arms, all wet, and faint with terror. The time was ſo ſhort, that ſhe preſerved her ſenſes; however, it put an end to our diverſion, and we attended her into the houſe, where ſhe was undreſſed, and put to bed. Her brother and ſiſter were ſo ſtruck with this action of my friend's, that they were never tired with acknowledging it; and, as to him, he exulted to himſelf in the inſtance he had given of his regard, and betrayed his concern, by enquiring of her health, every minute, in a manner almoſt troubleſome. He was equipped in a ſuit of Mr. Bellair's,

till

till his own were dry; and that gentleman, clapping him on the ſhoulder, told him, merrily, he was fearful that the water, inſtead of cooling him, had inflamed him ſo, that it would not be eaſily extinguiſhable.—'What ſay 'you, Mr. Thompſon? Your friend 'won't be much hurt by a fine woman 'and three thouſand pounds; and I'll 'promiſe him my conſent, I aſſure 'him.' Mr. Diaper bowed, and was ſo confuſed at this frank diſcovery and good-nature, that he had nothing wherewith to reply. Dinner was ſerved up, at which the young lady, now quite well, attended; but I could perceive ſuch a confuſion, whenever her eyes met thoſe of her preſerver, to whom ſhe expreſſed a high ſenſe of her obligation, that I made no queſtion but ſhe was as ſenſible as himſelf, and gave myſelf a great pleaſure in the reflection. We ſtayed in this happy manſion a full week, during which Mr. Diaper made a great progreſs in his amour, and Miſs Sukey ſeemed quite affected with his paſſion; they were ever together, and Mr. Bellair, being made ſenſible, by me, of his condition and expectations, was heartily diſpoſed to give him all the liberty with his miſtreſs that was poſſible. We could hardly ſeparate ourſelves from the family; and, I believe, Diaper would have been contented, if I had gone the remainder of the journey alone, if ſhame had permitted him; we parted, however, promiſing to ſpend a week at our return; and the parting of the lovers was ſo tender, that Miſs could not leave her chamber to ſee us mount, her diſcompoſure was ſo great.

Never was man ſo transformed as was the young gentleman; he was conſtantly muſing; had loſt his vivacity; would heave now and then an involuntary ſigh; and it was ſeldom I could get a word from him in the whole day's ride, except I put him upon talking of his miſtreſs; and then what raptures would break forth! How many vows and proteſtations of eternal conſtancy and truth! He let me into the whole of his courtſhip, and I found, to my extreme delight, that he had reaſon really to eſteem himſelf very happy; and therefore, after canvaſſing the matter between us, it was reſolved he ſhould aſk his father's conſent to the match, ſoon after our return. We put up at night at a very good inn, which was ſo full of gueſts, that we could get no other place to ſit in, all the rooms being taken up, but the kitchen. As my friend did not chuſe to mix in any promiſcuous company, and there was not another houſe of a long way, we were contented, and ordered a fowl to be laid to the fire, for our ſupper, which was immediately complied with.

CHAP. XVIII.

STORY OF THE INCHANTED BRIDLE—MIDNIGHT ADVENTURES IN THE INN—DISCOURSE BETWEEN DR. TALISMAN, PARSON ZEALOT, AND GAGE, THE EXCISEMAN—FATAL CONSEQUENCES OF THEIR DISPUTE—THEY ARRIVE AT MR. THOMPSON'S—JOY AT THEIR ARRIVAL.

THE company in the kitchen, principally compoſed of the ſervants of the gueſts who had put up in the inn, withdrew from the fire, in reſpect to our appearance; ſo that we were not at all incommoded at our ſupper, but rather entertained with the different characters we could overhear them give their ſeveral maſters and miſtreſſes, with whom, as uſual with the party-coloured gentry, they made very free. We ordered our beds to be made ready, whilſt we drank a glaſs or two after our meal; and were juſt adjourning to our chamber, when a young fellow broke into the kitchen, in the greateſt hurry and confuſion imaginable; his hair erected on his head, like the quills of a porcupine; his body full of convulſive motions; his face pale and diſtorted; his eyes fixed in their ſockets; and all the marks of dreadful fright and amaze, which robbed him of utterance; and, juſt as he advanced up to the fire, he gave a deep groan, and fell down in a ſwoon: every body was ſurprized, and ran to help him, plentifully beſprinkling his face with water, which, in a little time, brought him to himſelf. He ſtared wildly about him, for ſome time; and cried, in a hollow tone of voice, 'Is he gone? Is he gone?' and then getting up, took a turn or two round

the

the kitchen, and hallooed out again, 'Avoid, Satan! Oh God! ſave me! 'ſave me! Here he is! There he is!' and ſo went on, that every body concluded him diſtracted; and the hoſteſs coming in, followed by her huſband, ordered them to lay hands on him, for fear he ſhould do any miſchief. This they did accordingly; and, after they had got him down, he became ſomewhat calmer, whilſt the tears in abundance trickled down his cheeks, followed by oft repeated ſighs and groans. 'Alack!' ſays the landlady, 'I knew 'ſome bad luck would happen in our 'family, by my dream laſt night; and, 'to be ſure, a great calf came bolt into the bar-room, this morning, and 'frightened me out of my wits! 'Well, poor fellow, that old jade, 'Jenny Barnes, has certainly bewitched him! Good God! it's a ſhame 'ſuch devils ſhould be ſuffered to live 'in the pariſh.'—'Hold your tongue, 'you fooliſh b—h,' ſays her huſband, 'you are always canting ſome d—d 'nonſenſe or other; more likely ſome 'of your Methodiſt tricks have been 'put into his head—hold up your 'head, Jack; what's the matter?' The fellow was going to reply, when, moving himſelf in his chair, he kicked the bit of a bridle with one of his heels, which hung round his neck, and reached the pavement, which made a kind of a clink, and threw him into the ſame extaſies and diſtortions again, continually roaring, 'There he is! 'Don't you hear his chain? Oh, Lord, 'deliver me!—Pray, dear maſter, ſend 'for the parſon, I have ſeen the devil!' —'The devil you have,' ſays his maſter; 'what buſineſs had he in my 'ſtables?'—'No, no,' replies the man, all in a foam, 'I ſaw him at 'Black Jack's barn! there,' turning himſelf about, 'don't you hear him 'now? He's here! he's here!' and ſwooned away again: at this the landlord looked about him, and, ſpying the bridle, burſt into an immoderate fit of laughing: 'O ho,' ſays he, 'I 'have diſcovered the whole; wake, 'you ſilly ſon of a b—h; don't you 'ſee that here's no chain here, nor 'any thing like it. It's only the bit 'that makes this ratling;' and ſo gave him a douſe in the chops, which recalled him once more to himſelf: then turning to the company, told them, that a negro, that once lived with him, in quality of an hoſtler, had hanged himſelf in a barn, at the back of the houſe, and that ever ſince he had haunted that barn, and had been ſeen by ſeveral people, dragging a huge chain after him, which he always did at twelve o'clock at night; 'And this 'fellow,' continues he, 'has, no 'doubt, ſeen him, or heard him; and, 'forgetting he had the bridle at his 'heels, by the force of imagination, 'thought he had purſued him quite 'into the houſe, I ſuppoſe; and ſo 'there's your cock and a bull ſtory of 'a dream, and a calf, and Jenny 'Barnes—out, Madam; come, get 'up, and go to your buſineſs.' The hoſtler now, thoroughly convinced of his miſtake, endeavoured to get up, but was ſo weakened, that they were forced to convey him to bed, leaving us in high mirth at ſuch an inſtance of vulgar prepoſſeſſion, and the ſtrength of fancy. We ſoon after were conducted to our repoſe, which this accident had kept us from an hour or two longer than we intended. Our room opened into a long gallery, which was the means of communication to a whole tier of apartments; at the upper end was the conveniency of a privy for the uſe of the whole floor, and, by a very imprudent want of caution, the doors of the rooms were not furniſhed with locks, but only depended on the ſecurity of latches. We had juſt began to doſe, when we heard the latch of our apartment gently lifted up, and ſomebody ſoftly ſtealing to our bed-ſide, who, as he advanced, cried, 'Egod, 'Tom, I was a long time before I 'could find my way back again from 'that d—d vault; I think they ought 'to have a lamp burning in the gallery, for it is curſed dark; what, are 'ye aſleep already?' We made no anſwer, and he went on: 'I have been 'thinking of our expedition to-morrow; but, by G—d, I don't think 'it ſafe to attempt the coach or the 'chariot, for they are too ſtrongly 'guarded! now, there's the two young 'prigs, that ſupped in the kitchen, 'ſeem to be flush of money, and we 'had better ſet out betimes and ſecure 'them, for they go towards York, as 'the landlord informed me, and he 'believes will be a good booty: d—n 'me, why don't you anſwer? Ha! 'you

'you drank so damned hard last night, 'that you are as drowsy as the devil.' By this time he was pulling up the bed-cloaths, when I stirred, and, as if between sleep and waking, cried out, 'Be quiet—what—what d'ye 'want?' The mistake was soon perceived, and a quick retreat made from the bed and out of the door; upon which I gave a jog to my friend, and being too much concerned in the late speech to be easy without some farther discovery, I slipt out of bed, and tripped softly after the person who had made it, whom I soon traced to the next door but one to ours; and finding him gone in, and the door shut, applied my ear to the crevice, and heard him say, 'Tom, are you there?'—'Aye,' says Tom, 'where have you 'been!'—'Why, d—n me, I mistook 'the room, and have been talking 'about our route to-morrow, thinking 'it was to you.'—'Aye, d—n me,' replies the other, 'it is like one of 'your blundering tricks: what room 'was you in?'—'Two rooms higher,' says he. 'Why that's where the two 'young gentlemen lie that supped in 'the kitchen.'—'Is it, by G—d? 'Why, I hope they were asleep, how-'ever, for I was proposing to nail 'them to-morrow, imagining I had 'been talking to you; so I believe we 'had better decamp, before they are 'stirring, for fear of the worst.' As soon as I heard this, I left them to their farther consultations, and turned to go back; but had scarce groped my way three or four paces, when I was accosted with two arms round me, and a whisper of, 'Lord, William, how long 'you have been! I am almost starved;' which was followed by half a dozen kisses, repeated so quick, that I had not time to disengage myself. I soon perceived it was one of the softer sex who had made this mistake, and was going to undeceive her, when from a hand unseen, she received a violent blow over the side of the head, as I thought, which made the whole gallery ring, and down she fell, uttering a deep groan. As I apprehended a salute of the same sort, I put myself upon my guard, but could hear a pair of naked feet padding away as fast as possible; so I retired with great expedition to my own door, which I soon gained, and entered the chamber. I perceived myself right by hearing my friend's voice, who enquired, what made me stay so long: and I was going to give him an account of my adventures, when I was jostled against by somewhat that was endeavouring to pass me, which I assumed courage enough to seize hold of, at the same time enquiring, 'Who's 'this?' I received no answer, but violent struggles to get away from me; upon which I called out lustily, '*House! House!*' and stamped as hard as I could at the same time with my foot. 'What are you doing,' says Mr. Diaper; 'what's the matter?'—'Matter,' says I, 'why I believe some 'infernal spirits play their gambols 'here to-night; however, I believe I 'have got hold of somewhat that's 'flesh and blood here.'—'Hold it fast, 'then,' says he, 'and I'll secure the 'door till we know who disturbs us 'thus:' so saying, he jumped out of bed, when my prize, trembling, begged me to let him go, for he had mistaken our room for his own. 'Who are you?' says I.—'Lord, master, I am the tap-'ster that you saw last night, who 'waited upon you. I ask you ten 'thousand pardons for this offence, 'and the disturbance I have occasioned 'you.'—'Very well, friend,' says I, 'I forgive you; but, pray, was it you 'that knocked down somebody in the 'gallery just now?'—'Sir, you seem 'to be a good-natured gentleman, and 'I'll tell you the truth: I was going 'to meet our cook Peggy by appoint-'ment, you may be sure, and found 'her fast-locked in the arms of ano-'ther man, which provoked me to 'strike her; but I hope I have done her 'no hurt; for I perceive, by what you 'have said, Sir, that she must have 'mistaken you for me.'—'Why, was 'not you a villain to give her such a 'severe blow? For my part, I believe 'you have killed her,' says I.—'God 'forbid, Sir! but you know jealousy 'will drive one to any thing; and the 'blow was intended for you, Sir, I 'must own.' By this time a light appeared, carried by our paunch-gutted rogue of a landlord, who had been alarmed by the noise I made; upon which I let the fellow go, who ran away with all the expedition imaginable; and, looking out, perceived old Tun-belly, with great circumspection, directing his steps towards our part of the

the gallery; but the light dazzling his eyes, he ſtumbled over the poor girl, who ſtill lay ſenſeleſs on the ground, and came down like a weighty ruin, the candle ſpringing from him almoſt as far as the place I ſtood in, and left us once more in darkneſs. His fright was ſo extreme, that I could hear the teeth chatter in his head, whilſt he pronounced, in a mumbling accent, 'Lord 'have mercy upon me! Oh, ſpare me! 'ſpare me!' Upon which a thought entered my head, which I communicated to my friend, and we directly approached him, and ſeizing hold of both his ears, which we wrung very hard, in a counterfeited, hollow tone, I repeated—'*Barbara, celarent, darii, fe-*'*rio, baralipton*—I have been barbar-'ous enough, God knows! and fear 'you truly.'—'O ſpare me! ſpare me!' he replies. Upon which I repeated as much unintelligible jargon as I could recollect, which abſolutely finiſhed his prepoſſeſſion that we were evil ſpirits; and we could diſcern, to the entire offence of our ſmelling faculty, that his fear operated in the ſtrongeſt manner upon him. The girl, during this, having recovered herſelf, and hearing her maſter's tremendous voice, had, we could perceive, made ſhift to crawl away; ſo that the whole coaſt was clear for us, the reverberated ſnoarings in the rooms on every ſide convincing us alſo, that every paſſenger had yielded to the leaden ſway of Morpheus. Then, affecting an unnatural voice, I tweaked him ſtill harder, and told him in his ear, that, if he did not ſend the two highwaymen away directly, I would tear him to-pieces, and ſcatter his limbs in the air. 'You ſet them,' continued I, 'to pillage the two gen-'tlemen who ſupped in the kitchen; 'but, if the ſcheme is purſued, you 'will be betrayed and hanged on your 'own ſign-poſt; ſo think well of what 'I tell you; and, d'ye hear, for the 'future, don't ſell cyder for white-'wine.' As ſoon as he heard this he ſunk down, and we perceived he was terrified ſo much, that he was bereft of his ſenſes; in which condition we left him to come to himſelf, and went directly to bed, the morning-dawn beginning to peep abroad, hugely delighted with our manner of revenge, and the comical circumſtances that were likely to attend it. It was ten o'clock before we aroſe, when we directly adjourned to the kitchen, where Mrs. Hoſteſs was haranguing three gentlemen, we found, on the ſubject of the laſt night's adventures. 'Here,' ſays ſhe, 'have been ſad doings! Well, for my 'part, I ſhall never be able to go to 'bed in the houſe again! Poor Jack 'ſaw the negro laſt night, and Peggy 'ſaw ſuch an apparition, to be ſure, 'that ſhe is not able to riſe after it! 'But this is nothing to my poor huſ-'band; he heard a knocking and call-'ing in one of the rooms in the long 'gallery, as he thought, which, to be 'ſure, was a device of the Devil to 'draw him that way; and there he 'was ſet upon by two monſters, vomit-'ing out fire, and with eyes like burn-'ing coals, who have pinched him 'black and blue, and fixed their claws 'in him, and left him in a fit, which, 'for aught I know, would have killed 'him, had I not gone to ſee what was 'become of him; and, ſurely, he raves 'and talks ſuch ſtrange ſtuff, that I 'fear me he has quite loſt his ſenſes; 'and he ſent for two gentlemen, who 'dined in number four, and, though 'I was turned out of the room, I 'heard as much as to ſay, that he 'thought the houſe was too dangerous 'for them to ſtay in, and, as they 'were friends, he adviſed them to be 'gone; for he ſaid a great deal about 'God and Religion to them, and they 'mounted directly, and are gone. I 'believe, for my part, he might have 'ſent them to ſome biſhop; for I can't 'get a word out of him, and, to be 'ſure, we muſt take ſome care to lay 'the ſpirits, or elſe our houſe will be 'ruined. I wiſh, Dr. Zealot, you 'would go up and talk to him, for I 'left him quite mad and diſtracted; 'mayhap you can ſend them packing 'to the Red Sea for us!' The gentlemen to whom ſhe directed this diſcourſe were, Mr. Curate, of the village adjacent, a ſurgeon of the ſame place, and the exciſeman of that diſtrict; and, by hearing them ſpeak to each other by name, we ſoon learned that the parſon's name was Zealot, the ſurgeon's Taliſman, and the exciſeman's Gage. The parſon, who was a little petulant animal, ſcrewing up his mouth, and elevating his wrinkled brows, replied, with an air of uncommon gravity, that, peradventure, he ſhould go to ſee him; 'Though,'

'Though,' added he, 'he is ſo ſinful a 'wretch, never having received the 'Communion ſince I ſerved this cure, 'that I can ſcarce excuſe myſelf for 'ſuch a proſtitution of my ſacred cha'racter: however, what the church 'can do, Madam, in regard to you, 'ſhall be done; and, were he haunted 'by Legion himſelf, I'd ferret him out 'of your quarters, I warrant you. 'The powers granted to our order are 'extenſive enough to ſubject Satan, 'and all his united imps, to our un'doubted ſway over the realms of 'darkneſs.' No ſooner was this grave ſpeech uttered, than Taliſman, with a malicious and contemptuous grin, ſeized him by one of the buttons of his waiſtcoat, and broke out thus, accompanying his reply with repeated tugs at his button, the parſon one while hearkening to him, and ever and anon his eye bent upon that part where he was fearful the doctor would make a diſlocation to his prejudice—'Sir, Sir, 'your pretenſions are all farce and 'nonſenſe; the powers given to the 'apoſtles to caſt out devils have long 'ſince ceaſed in their ſucceſſors; they 'are proof, Sir, againſt all your exor'ciſms; the knowledge of your func'tion does not arrive to ſuch a pitch 'now a-days, I'll aſſure you, as to 'attempt things of that nature.—If, 'Madam, your houſe is haunted, or 'your huſband bewitched, I'll under'take to free him of his enchantment, 'which is not to be done in the old 'road that has been long beaten to no 'purpoſe by the prieſts. No, no! I 'ſhall preſcribe him ſomewhat to hang 'about his neck, a preparation of *elec'trum minerale*, by which the great 'Van Helmont diſſolved ſo many ſor'ceries; adding thereto the fume of 'Solomon and Eleazor trees; nay, 'Paracelſus is pretty clear, that, if an 'haunted or poſſeſſed perſon were only 'to urine through a birch broom, 'gathered in the morning dew, and 'bound up when Sol juſt deſcends be'low the horizon, it would be effec'tual; but I have other means to free 'your houſe, and will undertake your 'cure immediately: as to what theſe 'gentlemen talk of laying ſpirits, 'they—' Here, all in a rage, he was interrupted by Zealot, who roared out, in a violent manner, that he was an empty pretender, and that all that he had mentioned was mere exploded chimera. 'What are your Paracelſus 'and Van Helmont now, whoſe whole 'works may be bought for three half'pence by the pound? I thought Mr. 'Taliſman had read better authors, 'and to better purpoſe: ſure, none but 'himſelf could peruſe ſuch rubbiſh. 'I warrant you, you are ſuperſtitious 'enough to believe in the philoſopher's 'ſtone too, and, I dare engage, never 'looked into Sir Iſaac's *Principia* 'in your life, though he may juſtly 'be called *Princeps Philoſophorum*.'— '*Princeps Philoſophorum*, doctor!' replies Taliſman, all in an heat; '*Prin'ceps Rogorum*, you mean. I tell you, 'Newton was a plagiary, and bor'rowed every thing valuable from Old 'Daddy Flamſtead, and made no lit'tle uſe of thoſe very great men you 'have the impudence to beſpatter ſo.' Highly diverted at this ludicrous ſcene of abſurdities, I was juſt going to interfere with a word of encouragement on the parſon's ſide, who began to be out of breath, in order to keep matters even; when I was prevented by Gage, who banging the end of his cane againſt the pavement, after an hearty draught of ale, cried, that he was ſure neither of them knew any thing about what they were talking of; and, as to calling people names, it was no argument, he ſaid: for his part, he never heard any thing bad of Sir Iſaac Newton, and reſpected his memory for having proved the world to be like an egg; 'Though, by G—d,' continues he, 'if it is, it is an addled one! wit'neſs the two great men that are now 'diſputing about nothing; for, d—n 'me, if I believe there is either devil 'or apparition in the world, and I am 'ſure it is only prieſtcraft and imagi'nation.' This florid and witty ſpeech was ſucceeded by an horſe-laugh of ſome moments, in the concluſion of which a miſchievous animal, commonly y'cleped a cat, who ſat upon the dreſſer at the back of our orator, having perceived the airy motion of the ribband that hung to the tail of his wig, which was vibrated to and fro, according to the different inflexions of his oration, ſuddenly jumped from her watchful ſtation, and at one ſpring dexterouſly deprived his pate of it's artificial covering, and at the ſame time imprinted three or four ſanguine marks in the

back of his neck with her talons; he clapped his hand behind him at the firſt motion ſhe made, and feeling ſomewhat ſhaggy, whilſt at the ſame time the landlady gave a great ſhriek at the danger her gueſt was in, with a remarkable alteration of countenance, he ran out of the kitchen, muttering ſome exclamations by the way, which every one judged were the reſult of a fright; and truly frightened he was, for, whether his late diſcourſe, or the preſent character of the houſe, had increaſed his natural prepoſſeſſions or no, he never ſtopped nor ſtaid till he got to the village, whence a meſſenger ſoon arrived for Mr. Taliſman to bleed him, which terminated the moſt learned diſpute between him and the parſon—

'Parturiunt montes, naſcetur ridiculus mus!'

We now went to breakfaſt; which finiſhed, and having underſtood by our hoſteſs's former diſcourſe, that the two rogues had probably been frightened from their deſign, we mounted, and ſet forward on our journey, full of reflections upon the odd humours, and habitual villainy, of the common ſort of people; the unaccountable and unconnected diſcourſe we had heard; and the ſucceſs that we had had, in terrifying a parcel of credulous fools, and, through their means, of ſpreading unheard-of wonders through all parts of the country, where the devil preſides under ſo many various fantaſtick forms.

The remainder of our journey produced nothing remarkable; my friend's thoughts were generally employed in contemplations of his future happineſs, in the propoſed poſſeſſion of the charming Miſs Bellair; and I here firſt obſerved the prodigious alterations love produces in an amorous mind: ſuch a perſon ſhall be totally abſent to every other concern but that of his affection; the object of which, perpetually ſwimming before his fancy, renders every thing elſe diſtaſteful and abſurd; ſo forceably does his imagination work, that, by a conſtant anticipation of what he wiſhes for, he enjoys every minute, in idea, the happy occurrences of years to come; he converſes with the miſtreſs of his fancy; and ſo ſtrong is the inchantment, that he accuſes his friend for want of reſpect, if he impertinently breaks in upon his meditations: whenever I did ſo upon Mr. Diaper's, it was cenſured in ſo peeviſhly fretful a ſtrain, that I had only one remedy to regain his ſmiles; which was, by making myſelf a kind of companion in his imaginary tranſports, and ſuppoſing myſelf preſent at ſome future incident, big with bliſs and rapture, which never failed anſwering my end.

As ſoon as I diſcovered the native ſeats of peace and innocence, which I had been ſo long abſent from, my joy broke forth in a thouſand tumultuous expreſſions of that ſatisfaction which ſo viſibly agitated my countenance: my friend took his ſhare in my pleaſures; one of the greateſt of which was the thought of the joy I ſhould give my father and mother, by ſeeing us; and, to increaſe that joy, we had forborne to write an account of the preciſe time we intended to ſet out at for Yorkſhire, ſo that our arrival would be quite unexpected; and therefore we left our horſes at a farmer's, about a mile from my father's, where I was recognized with great joy, and ſet out on foot for his houſe. We arrived juſt as the family were ſitting down to dinner: Mr. Diaper, who entered firſt, and whoſe face my father and mother did not eaſily recollect, immediately preſented me to my mother, who, the minute I had fixed my eyes upon her, only cried out, 'Dear Joe!' and was quite overcome with the ſurprize. I took her in my arms, and, begging pardon for my raſhneſs, our interchange of careſſes was too tender and delicate to be deſcribed. My father joined us, and, bleſſing us both, was every moment ſtraining us in his embraces; the ſervants wept for joy; the whole houſe echoed forth our mutual congratulations; the neighbourhood caught the enlivening infection; and crouds of viſitants welcomed us into the country. Mr. Solfa, particularly diſtinguiſhing himſelf, ſet the bells to ringing; and my dear parents, willing to make it a kind of jubilee, opened their houſe to all the pariſh; and there appeared no end to the endearments we experienced on every ſide.

The next morning after our arrival, Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Archer, who were

were both acquainted the evening before with my return, viſited us; and the ſight of them revived all the love I ſtill continued to bear to their ſons.

CHAP. XIX.

HE GIVES HIS FATHER AN ACCOUNT OF HIS MASTER'S GOODNESS—IS PARDONED HIS LATE FOLLIES—RECEIVES A PRESENT FROM HIS MOTHER—THE AUTHOR'S PERSON DESCRIBED—VISITS SIR WALTER RICH—HIS RECEPTION THERE—CHARACTER OF MISS LOUISA RICH—MR. DIAPER RECEIVES A LETTER, WHICH OCCASIONS HIS DEPARTURE.

THE firſt opportunity I could obtain, I begged the favour of my father to indulge me with a few words in private, which he immediately complied with; and taking me into his ſtudy, with the utmoſt tenderneſs, enquired if I had any particular requeſt to make him. If I had, my behaviour had been ſo agreeable to him, that I might be ſure of it's being granted the minute I mentioned it. So indulgent a preface almoſt diſconcerted me in my intended diſcourſe, and for ſome time I remained almoſt motionleſs, with my eyes fixed on the ground: he took me in his arms, and, with a warm preſſure, told me he feared I was not well, or that ſomewhat oppreſſed my mind, which he conjured me to let him know: 'Look upon me, my dear,' ſays this beſt of men, 'in the light of 'a boſom friend; and let that take off 'ſomewhat of that awe that may be 'inſpired by the preſence of a father.' I graſped his hand, and, after ſome farther pauſe, made him acquainted with the numerous follies I had been guilty of; ſincerely relating all my unfortunate miſhaps, and concealing only ſuch particulars as would have been offenſive to the purity of his ears; his aſtoniſhment was ſo great, that I had the opportunity to proceed, without interruption, to enumerate the generous behaviour of my good maſter, and my friend, in ſuch terms as the warmth of my grateful heart inſpired; the circumſtance of his having undertaken to pay my debts, and every thing that I thought I could not diſpenſe with myſelf in concealing from him; concluding with ſuch obſervations as naturally might ariſe from a view of my miſconduct. When I had finiſhed, I perceived he was ſtrangely affected; and, deſiring me to ſtay there till his return, he left me in a ſituation between grief at having diſcompoſed him, and joy, that I had got rid of the load of concealments which oppreſſed me. I had not remained a quarter of an hour, when he returned, and, with a ſmile of complacency, put me out of my pain, by telling me, that, though the hearing of my miſconduct had given him great diſorder, yet, as my repentance ſeemed ſo ſincere, and my reflections ſo juſt, and that a mere principle of juſtice to him, and gratitude to my maſter, had moved me to this diſcovery, he could not excuſe himſelf from forgiving me: 'Come, then, my ſon, come to my 'arms; and let me not be behind in 'the race with this excellent friend and 'maſter! I ſhall return him my ac-'knowledgments in a letter to-mor-'row, and will remit him the ſum he 'ſo generouſly intended to beſtow on 'you: you make me amends, my dear, 'for the trouble you have given me, 'and the expence you have occaſioned 'me, by joining me, in the liſt of your 'benefactors, with him; and may the 'Almighty, whoſe goodneſs is ſo ma-'niſeſt, in your reſtoration to virtue 'and religion, enable you, by his gra-'cious aſſiſtance, to perſevere in a 'courſe of ſuch actions as are moſt 'agreeable to his will, and moſt con-'ducive to your preſent and eternal 'happineſs! Let us ſay no more, then, 'of faults, I am reſolved for ever to 'forget you was guilty of, and rejoin 'our friends, who expect us;' and ſo ſaying, without allowing me farther time for acknowledgment, than juſt to kiſs his hand, which I wetted with my tears, he left me to compoſe myſelf. Before I could well get out of the room, I heard my mother juſt entering; upon which I reached from a ſhelf, haſtily, a volume of Rowe's plays, and dipped into that ſcene of Tamerlane, where Moneſes is ſtrangled, and ſeemed reading, to hide my diſcompoſure, which, upon her enquiry, I attributed to my concern for Arpaſia. This ſerved my turn, and my mother, who now firſt had me in private, quite overcame me

with her endearments, which I returned with an ineffable ſatisfaction. Nothing could equal her tenderneſs for me, which ſhe gave a looſe to, and even ſhed a flood of tears of gladneſs, on the occaſion of ſeeing me again; which, I too tenderly loved her, not to increaſe with mine: it was then this lovely mother put into my hands a purſe with an hundred guineas, which ſhe had reſerved, ſhe ſaid, as a preſent for me the firſt time ſhe ſaw me in the country; and without giving me time to thank her, enquired if I had parted with the ring which was given me by Miſs Rich, on occaſion of my ſaving her from the fire. I felt ſome emotion at the mention of that lady, and told her, bluſhingly, that it was ſtill, and had ever been ſince, upon my finger. She adviſed me to wait upon Sir Walter and his daughter, who had both expreſſed a great regard for me ſeveral times, ſince my abode in London: 'Nay,' continued ſhe, 'Miſs has been 'almoſt my conſtant companion, ever 'ſince her father removed to the new 'houſe he has built in the neighbour-'hood; and I have conceived a very 'great affection for her, ſecond to 'none but that I bear to thee, my dear.' Our farther diſcourſe was interrupted by Mr. Diaper, who came to ſummon us to a game at cards; and, taking my mother about the neck, told her he would forgive her any thing but keeping his friend from him; 'And ſo, to 'puniſh you, Mamma, I have reſolved 'to ſit oppoſite to you at a game at 'whiſt, where I'll uſe you moſt un-'mercifully.' We then all three adjourned into the parlour, where we found my father, with our two friends; and it being my chance, with Mr. Archer, to ſtand out, and not being much inclined to cards, I reſolved, even then, to wait upon Sir Walter. My mother's diſcourſe had raiſed a kind of longing deſire in me to ſee Miſs Louiſa, which I did not trouble myſelf to account for; but flattered myſelf, it was only from the view my mother had given me of her acquirements, and thoſe increaſed perfections ſhe had attained, ſince I had ſeen her. From the ſame motives I dreſſed myſelf with more care than ordinary; and, imparting my deſign to Mr. Archer, he told me he would accompany me, in a viſit to his old friend. In our way we diſcourſed over the hiſtory of myſelf, and his ſon, and my friend Sharpley, whom we each expreſſed the ſame longing deſire to ſee: Mr. Archer wiſhed, in a very kind manner, that his ſon might be improved as much as I was, when he returned home, and paſſed many compliments on my perſon and appearance, telling me jocoſely that he would ſend circular orders to all the fathers in the Weſt Riding, to keep their daughters up till I went again to London. This diſcourſe, and our intended viſit to Miſs Rich, firſt occaſioned me to beſtow one conſideration upon my perſon; but an irreſiſtible inclination to pleaſe, where I was going, gave me no little ſatisfaction in Mr. Archer's opinion of me. My ſtature was certainly of the moſt commanding ſort, and my every motion diſcovered a ſtrength and firmneſs in my joints, that indicated me no puny deſcendant of my father; my complexion was fair, accompanied with a ruddineſs in my cheeks, that was ſet off by dark hair, which flowed over my ſhoulders, deſcending in ringlets, from the confinement of a ribband, which tied it behind: a good-natured ſoftneſs in my features gave me a place in a perſon's favour almoſt the minute I appeared, which I often experienced very much to my advantage; add, to all this, an agreeable, modiſh dreſs; and I was no inconſiderable figure in a country village, as the cuſtom of our trade allowed us alſo lace upon our hats and waiſtcoats. We got, in a little more than half an hour, to Sir Walter's new ſeat, which partook of all the concurrent advantages of air, water, and ſituation. A walk of elms led up to the houſe, which was built in the modern taſte, and ſeemed to beſpeak a very good fancy in the architect; every thing had an air of rural ſimplicity; and this villa was not loaded with ſuch ornaments as ſerve, indeed, to dignify a palace in town, but are highly abſurd in a ruſtick manſion, which ſeems peculiarly intended to ſoothe the toils of buſineſs, to inſpire health and vigour, and eaſe to the mind, and ſhould principally be formed to ſet off the beauties of nature, without ſurfeiting her too much with the affected touches of art. In ſhort, Sir Walter ſeemed to have been inſpired with a beam from that genius which has ſo beautifully appeared

peared in the magnificent, yet plain and ſimple retreats of a Boyle, or a Temple.

We had hardly advanced half way up the walk, when we were met by Sir Walter himſelf, his nephew, and his amiable daughter. As Sir Walter had heard of my arrival, he was at no loſs to gueſs who I was; and therefore, though he vowed he ſhould not have known me elſe, he hugged and kiſſed me, and proteſted he was as glad to ſee me as if I had been his own ſon. I returned my compliments to him in the politeſt terms I was capable of, as alſo to thoſe of his nephew, who, I could perceive, was much the ſame as I had left him; and, like many narrow-ſouled wretches, ſeemed to grudge me the careſſes I received. Whilſt they were giving a welcome to Mr. Archer, I ſaluted Miſs Louiſa, and could ſee her colour come and go at this interview; and indeed I found her ſo, paſt all deſcription, improved in her perſon, that I loſt at once all my aſſurance, which was converted into a timid awe, and a reverence that made my addreſs little leſs than the ſtile of adoration. Never, ſure, did raptured fancy rove over ſuch a profuſion of charms and graces, as at this inſtant accoſted my view! imagination, in her moſt wanton career, could not picture ſo much real excellence! Miſs Louiſa was of the middle ſtature; her boſom juſt betrayed her ſex; and her ſhape was too exquiſite to be deſcribed in other words, than thoſe of Prior—

'Fine by degrees, and beautifully leſs.'

Her lovely neck was ſhaded with dark brown hair, which in ſportful ringlets played in the breeze; her face, whoſe features were quite regular, was overlooked by the fineſt pair of eyes, ſure, that ever kindled love, of the exact colour of her hair; an habit of penſive thoughtfulneſs, which was conſtitutional in her, had ſpread an inimitable languor and ſoftneſs through her whole form, that melted the very ſoul; but, when ſhe ſmiled, ten thouſand reviving nameleſs beauties diſcovered themſelves, and the milk-white ivory teeth, and the laughing, joyous dimple that then appeared at the extremity of her pretty mouth, had an effect that can only be felt, and is too delicate for deſcription. Her hand was ſmaller than uſual, even in women of her ſize; and the little foot, which was all her modeſty of temper would ſuffer her to diſcover, when it peeped out from it's confinement, ſeemed even too ſmall to ſupport the miſtreſs of it. A majeſtick dignity of aſpect flowing from a conſciouſneſs of innate innocence and virtue, was the attendant of all her actions; but, in which, the leaſt tincture of affectation or pride was not perceivable, and indeed was abſolutely contradictory to her nature. Such was this delightful fair-one; and no wonder, then, if all my faculties were abſorbed in admiration! Oh, have we heard the thrilling notes breathed in the inſpiring airs, the gentle cadences of the inimitable Handel! Such was her voice, whoſe melodious accents diffuſed around unutterable gladneſs; nor tuneful Philomel's was half ſo ſweet, who, *moſt muſical, moſt melancholy*, chaunts her griefs to the reſponſive groves; or the towering larks, who chear the morn, when *the dappled dawn doth riſe!*

I was ſoon wakened from the contemplation of theſe graces, by the interruption of Sir Walter and Mr. Archer, who approached us, juſt as Miſs was returning my compliments, with congratulations on my ſafe arrival in the country, in ſuch a manner as conveyed an idea of her receiving great pleaſure from the viſit. 'Well, 'my boy,' ſays her father, 'what doſt 'think of Lucy; don't ſhe appear 'worth ſaving from burning, you 'rogue, you? God zounds, I wiſh 'thou hadſt an eſtate for her ſake, or 'that that *youngſter*,' pointing to his nephew, who was at ſome diſtance, 'would acquire thy merit, for whom 'I intend her, if he behaves well; for 'I think a fine woman, as well as a 'fine eſtate, ought to be entailed upon 'the family ſhe proceeds from.' This abrupt diſcourſe of the honeſt baronet kindled bluſhes in his daughter's face; and, fearing the farther pain the continuance might give her, Mr. Archer propoſed to go and ſee the houſe, which I had never been in. Accordingly, giving the lady my hand, which ſhe accepted with a look of extreme kindneſs and condeſcenſion, we followed her

her father, and were introduced to the manſion, whoſe inſide beſpoke the opulence of the poſſeſſor, in all the varied furniture and ornaments that are the product of wealth, and a generous uſe of it. As it was evening before we arrived, this firſt viſit was but ſhort, and we parted, after invitations to ſee him every day, the knight letting me know, he would never forgive me if I did not take an hunt with him, and make his houſe my home, almoſt, whilſt I continued in the country; adding, which was indeed a greater inducement to me than all the reſt, 'I warrant you, Miſs 'Lucy here will find ſome way or 'other to entertain her preſerver;' to which ſhe gave an inclination of aſſent, and in the moſt agreeable manner imaginable enforced her father's invitation. As we returned homewards, Mr. Archer obſerved, that I was quite buried in thought, and laughingly aſked me, if I had left my heart behind me. 'Ah!' ſays he, more ſeriouſly, 'I wiſh, my dear Thompſon, 'thou had'ſt the poſſeſſion of that 'worthy creature, who is doomed to 'the embraces of that clodpate we ſaw 'yonder, and perhaps will be made 'miſerable by it.' On our arrival at home, we were chid for our elopement, till we diſcovered where we had been, and I obſerved my friend Diaper to look more than ordinary melancholy; upon which, being fearful he was not well, I aſked him to take a walk that fine moon-ſhine evening, which he was pleaſed with the opportunity of doing; and, when we were alone, pulled out a letter, which he ſaid he had received by an expreſs, ſince I went out; adding, with a ſigh, 'There you will find the cauſe of my 'uneaſineſs.—I muſt be gone to-morrow.' I haſtily opened it with great trepidation, and found it as follows—

'DEAR SIR,

'I Take this firſt opportunity of paying my reſpects to you, ſince 'the pleaſure your company afforded 'us; and am the more ready to do it, 'as I believe your regard to a certain 'young lady will determine you to let 'us ſee you as ſoon as poſſible again. 'Poor Miſs Sukey has had a violent 'attack of a fever, which has at times 'even rendered her delirious; and, 'though it has ſpent it's baneful fury, 'and ſhe is ſomewhat recovered, it 'has left a weakneſs behind it, that 'almoſt renders her an object of compaſſion; and (for I will not conceal 'any thing from you) I fear your abſence preys upon her ſpirits as much 'as the diſtemper has done upon her 'body: you are too generous to eſteem 'a woman of merit the leſs for making no ſecret of her regard to you, 'as my ſiſter's education and diſpoſition entirely render her incapable 'either of affectation or diſſimulation. In ſhort, dear Diaper, a word 'to the wiſe is enough; and, if you 'take a tour over here, I am ſure it 'will contribute greatly to remove the 'poor girl's indiſpoſition; and you are 'too much the man of honour to ſtand 'out, when you have ſuch a ſummons 'to ſurrender yourſelf at the head-'quarters of your heart. I muſt deſire my ſincere reſpects to my friend 'Thompſon, but will not be ſo cruel 'to inſiſt upon his bearing you com-'pany, as it will remove him ſo ſoon 'from his relations, though I long to 'ſee him; but, if he ſhould oppoſe 'your leaving him, aſſure him, I'll 'return you again to him in a week 'at fartheſt. Mrs. Bellair ſends her 'compliments to you both. *I am your 'ſincere friend, and humble ſervant,*

'A. BELLAIR.

'P. S. Be it remembered, that this 'tour excuſes neither of you from 'your promiſe of ſpending ſome days 'with us, in your return to London. 'Take no notice, when you ſee my 'ſiſter, of this letter, and your coming 'will be a greater compliment to her.'

I could not oppoſe my friend's deſire to be gone, and he was ſo impatient for the morning, that ſleep never entered his eyes the whole night. I undertook to apologize for his abſence to my father and mother, who were not ſtirring when he ſet out; ſo, writing by him an handſome letter to Mr. Bellair, I rode with him ſome miles, and then left him to purſue his journey, and returned home.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

HE IS ENAMOURED WITH MISS LOUISA—COMBATS WITH HIS PASSION—RESOLVES TO CONQUER IT—MR. DIAPER'S ADVICE OVERCOMES HIS RESOLUTION—SIR WALTER FETCHES THEM TO HIS HOUSE.

I Soon satisfied my father and mother in Mr. Diaper's absence, and now found a great and sudden alteration in myself; conversation, even with those beloved persons, became dull and insipid; I sought out solitudes, and was never more uneasy than when disturbed in them; whole days together, in this absence of my friend, I spent in unfrequent walks, where I might be at liberty to indulge my contemplations: alas! I had received an inmate into my bosom, that rendered me perpetually restless and uneasy; whenever I waited upon Miss Rich, I came away still more full of the insinuating infection, which bore down all the powers of reason, which in vain I called to my assistance, before it. I was even fearful of seeing her, apprehensive the tumultuous motions of my soul might get the better of my discretion; nothing pleased me but thinking or talking of that dear creature, a flood of tender sentiments softened my breast, and sometimes even melted me into tears; too surely I found love had fixed his empire in my heart, where he triumphed with more than tyrannick sway; such a progress had a few days made, that I hardly could attend a moment to any thing but the dictates of this new passion; but yet it was a holy and pure respect, not mingled with the disordered ravings of lust I had so often experienced: no, it took rise from a knowledge of the virtue, the merit, the amiable goodness of the object, which even reason told me was the most praise-worthy and deserving I had ever seen or conversed with. I longed, methought, to make such charms of beauty, wit, and truth, my own; and here I was justified, thus far I could greatly excuse myself; but when I considered, on the other hand, the great disparity of our conditions and fortunes, the ingratitude I should be guilty of to her father, who loved me, and had informed me of his designation of her to another, and that such a woman would be reward sufficient even for an whole life of pains, and care, and industry in the profession I was destined to, I sickened at the prospect of the miseries I was bringing upon myself, and upon this object of my wishes, were she favourable to me; which, however, I had no reason to believe she would, from the knowledge I had of her prudence, and the duty and constant regard she paid to her father; though on all occasions she had treated me with a distinction savouring somewhat of the regard due to a brother, which was a title she always gave me, as she called my mother her's, and was even what Sir Walter himself had heard her with pleasure repeat. She took notice, and seemed pleased with the value I set upon the dear ring she had given me so many years ago, and shewed a great fondness for my company, and a thorough detestation of the brute, her cousin, which she could not forbear even to impart to me when we were alone. At her harpsichord, she took delight in all the softest tenderest airs, and, as I was mighty fond of hearing her, would be ever obliging me, often requesting me to accompany her with my voice, which was tolerable good, or the German flute. She would often, in seeming compliment to me, praise the life of a citizen, enumerate what she had heard of the sudden fortunes many of them had made, and the great families they had allied themselves to. Another discouraging circumstance was my condition of a servant at present; and I often cursed my fate, that had given me a susceptible heart, great and capacious, but had denied me a situation, and the goods of fortune, to indulge it's laudable desires. My family, indeed, was one of the best in the country, but Sir Walter's estate, which was very great, and his title, threw a damp upon that thought: I could expect at most, from the parsimony and possessions of my father, a few thousand pounds, which might enable me to begin the world with advantage; on the contrary, her fortune, independent of her father, was 12,000l. which had been left her

by

by an uncle, and, as her father ſhewed no inclination to marriage, it was very probable his whole eſtate would deſcend to her and her iſſue. In fine, every thing ſerved to diſcourage any attempts I might make that way, and, after repeated and moſt cruel ſtruggles, I came to a firm reſolution to ſtifle my flame, and to endeavour to cure it by abſence: but no one, who has not been in the ſame dreadful circumſtances, can imagine the horrid conflict I had to go through, and the practice of this reſolution coſt me more pain than if my bowels had been torn out by the hands of an executioner. I then recurred to books, and the converſation of my friends; but that would not do. I took the tour of the neighbouring villages, and viſited the whole pariſh, who adored me for my father's ſake; but here every ſtep I went, every houſe I entered, preſented ſomewhat that brought my charming Louiſa to mind; every family was full of her praiſes, and inſtances of her kindneſs and benevolence; the poor were cloathed by her, the hungry fed, and ſure ſo many marks of the goodneſs, piety, and charity of a young lady, never abounded any where before: this I found had been her and my mother's conſtant employment of every vacant hour, and bleſſings and prayers for her welfare were heard on every ſide. I now became a votary to the chace, and other country ſports; but here I was ſo often thrown into the way of Sir Walter and his kinſman, that I could bear it no longer; the one always forcing me home with him, where I was ſure to ſee the cauſe of my diſtreſs; and the other being quite obnoxious to my ſight, from the idea I had of his enſuing happineſs: and, on his part, regarding the favours I received as ſo many inſults upon himſelf, and as low minds are eaſily inſpired with ſuſpicions, he thought he ſaw ſomewhat more than ordinary between Miſs Louiſa and myſelf, which in an invidious way he inſinuated frequently to his uncle, who only laughed at him, and called him fool for his pains: 'You blockhead,' would he often ſay, 'you have no worth yourſelf, and 'are jealous of every body that has; 'zounds, it's time enough to confine 'her to your company and humours 'when ſhe is married to thee!' In this impartial manner could Sir Walter judge, and yet was determined to ſacrifice his daughter to a wretch he deſpiſed. Upon my friend's return, who had quite, by his preſence, chaced away Miſs Bellair's diſorder, and was more and more enamoured with that lovely woman, I propoſed to my father, that we ſhould accept of an invitation made us by Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley, to ſpend a week or two at their houſes; which he readily complied with, and accompanied us himſelf there for a few days: here, I thought I bid fair for eaſe, in their converſation, and the amuſements they had provided us; but, alas! it was flying from myſelf; and I grew ſo viſibly altered, that a man of leſs diſcernment than Mr. Diaper would have ſuſpected the cauſe. He had often ſeen Miſs Rich, and was full of her praiſes; and, by obſerving my behaviour in her company, had formed a near gueſs at my diſorder; ſo that he ſeemed not at all ſurprized when I opened my ſituation to him: but gueſs my amaze, when, inſtead of aſſiſting me to conquer my paſſion, he ſpoke to the following effect; 'Dear 'friend, I am ſorry you make your'ſelf ſo uneaſy; conſider, Sir Walter 'is doing a work that God and nature 'muſt equally diſapprove, and a work 'that is as abſurd to attempt, as to 'reconcile antipathies: no, no, I 'would aſſiſt you in any thing to re'relieve that worthy young lady from 'the impending ruin that awaits her, 'in the propoſed match with that wretch 'her father ſeems determined to give 'her to; and as to you, my dear 'Joey, in my eye, you are an equal 'match for her, or any other woman. 'I'll propoſe to my father, as ſoon as 'we return, to take you into partner'ſhip; and in a few years Sir Walter 'will not bluſh at an alliance with 'you; I'm ſure, if he does, ſhe has a 'fortune independent of him; and I 'don't think we are bound to obey 'our parents, in what would not only 'end in our unhappineſs, but be one 'of the greateſt crimes we could com'mit, an offence againſt Heaven it'ſelf; endeavour then, by all lawful 'means, to gain her affection; and,

'as

'as to the time you have to ſerve, I 'know my father's regard to you ſo 'well, that it need give you no man-'ner of uneaſineſs.' How eaſily are we reaſoned into our wiſhes, and brought to follow our inclinations! but the kindneſs, the friendſhip, of this dear youth, brought tears into my eyes, and I remained in his arms ſome minutes without ſpeaking, his generoſity had ſo affected me: when I recovered, my acknowledgments were extreme; and I could have no objection to what he ſaid, ſo exactly his advice tallied with my deſires. I returned to my uſual tranquillity, and was now as eager to return home, as I had been before to come away from thence.

I was in this ſtate of mind, when one morning Sir Walter came hallooing at Mr. Archer's door; and, diſmounting, came up to our bed-chamber, where we had juſt begun to dreſs ourſelves. 'Lads, lads! we can do 'no longer without you at home; my 'daughter obliges me to give a ball 'to-night, to the neighbouring good 'people, in order to have both your 'companies; ſo make no words, but 'mount, and away with me directly; 'mayhap we may ſtart game as we re-'turn, which we'll carry home as part 'of our dinner.' We made no reply; and he went on, in his merry way, till we were ready to go, when, taking leave of our good friends, who promiſed to be with us in a day or two, we rode after Sir Walter, who was heartily vexed we could meet with nothing in our way to his houſe worth killing; where we arrived about noon, after a very pleaſant ride, in which we entertained him with various relations of town-adventures, at which he lifted up his eyes, and was ſure, he ſaid, London was the devil.

CHAP. XXI.

THEY ARE RECEIVED WITH GREAT PLEASURE BY MISS LOUISA—HE DANCES WITH HER AT THE BALL—AN ACCIDENT DISCOVERS HIS AFFECTION TO HER—THE RECEPTION IT MEETS WITH—HE IS ASSAULTED, AND WOUNDED, BY SOME PERSONS UNKNOWN—CARRIED TO SIR WALTER'S—DISTRESS OF MISS LOUISA, ON THE OCCASION—SHE DECLARES HER LOVE FOR HIM.

SIR Walter would not permit us to go home to ſhift our linen, but lent us a ſervant to ſend for freſh cloaths from my father's; and, at the ſame time, to invite him and my mother to his daughter's evening-entertainment. When we were dreſſed, he introduced us to that young lady, who was habited in a white damaſk ſacque, which flowed looſely about her, with an air of beautiful negligence; and ſhe was ſo brightly beſpangled with jewels, in her ſtomacher and other parts of her apparel, that I never beheld a more ſumptuous ſight; but her ornaments borrowed luſtre from her, inſtead of increaſing her charms, and ſerved only as ſo many foils to ſet off her blooming graces. After the uſual compliments, ſhe joined with her father in raillying me, for abſenting myſelf from their houſe; which drew a ſigh from me, which it was not in my power to ſuppreſs, and which I found ſhe perceived, and innocently aſked me if I had not been well; which I anſwered, in aſſuring her, that nothing but a certain melancholy diſorder, that for ſome time had oppreſſed me, would have detained me from the only converſation that I delighted in. She ſeemed to be concerned at what I ſaid, and was going to reply, when dinner was ſerved up, and we ſat down to table. Amongſt other diſhes, was a chicken-pye, 'Which,' ſays the lovely creature, 'I have heard you ſay, Mr. 'Thompſon, was your favourite, and 'I made it on purpoſe for you; and 'therefore you muſt oblige me, by 'eating very heartily.' Such an inſtance of regard tranſported me; and I replied, with a tone and manner that let her eaſily conceive how much I thought myſelf obliged; our converſation grew quite brisk; and my angel-miſtreſs ſaid and did ſo many agreeable things, that my friend, as well as myſelf, was full of admiration: the old gentleman was ready to jump out of his ſkin for joy, and proteſted that I had inſpired her by my company. 'Why, my boy, ſhe had drooped ever 'ſince you have been gone,' ſays he;

'but if ever you ſerve her ſuch a trick 'again, whilſt you ſtay in the country, 'I'll never forgive you.'—'Nor I 'neither, I aſſure you, papa,' ſays Miſs, with an inimitable pleaſantneſs in her ſmile. 'Aye, aye,' replies Sir Walter, 'I and Numps here,' meaning his nephew, 'are nothing in 'the world with her; ſhe loves your 'company, becauſe you read and un-'derſtand books, and ſuch kind of 'things, which we don't know the 'uſe of, farther than the Bible, and 'Shaw's Juſtice, and Jacob's Law 'Dictionary, mayhap.' Night approached, and company poured in very faſt, which forced us to adjourn into the ball-room, which was decked in a very ſplendid and genteel manner; and during the whole time it laſted, I had the happineſs to be partner to my charming creature, every touch of whoſe hand fired anew my ſoul. Her couſin was buſy, meanwhile, in drinking and carouſing with his companions in the hall, this manner of ſpending time not being ſuitable to his taſte or education. Sir Walter danced with my mother; and Mr. Diaper procured an agreeable partner, in a young lady of the neighbourhood; and the whole concluded with an elegant cold repaſt, which ſhewed the polite judgment of the miſtreſs of the treat. Sir Walter would not permit us to leave him that night; and, after his daughter retired to reſt, reſolved that we ſhould both accompany him in a debauch; where we drank ſo freely, though contrary to our uſual cuſtom, that it was with difficulty we ſteered our way to bed; Sir Walter declaring, with an oath, that we were heartier cocks than he thought us to be, and not ſuch wiſhy-waſhy fellows as he frequently met with from London.

The next day Sir Walter propoſed to take an airing, on horſeback, upon the neighbouring downs; and his daughter very readily conſented to bear us company. No woman ever ſat a ſide-ſaddle with better grace! She looked like Diana herſelf, in a riding-habit, which was the richeſt that the indulgent fondneſs of her father could procure for her! The pad ſhe rode, which was a beautiful, long-tailed cheſnut, ſeemed proud of his burden, and champed the bit, and pawed the earth, with a ſeeming conſciouſneſs of the honour he received in ſuch a rider. We had juſt gained the downs, when the beaſt, who was naturally ſtartiſh, ſuddenly deſcrying ſome object that ſurprized him, curvetted to one ſide, and immediately after ſet up ſuch a race, that it was not in the power of the bridle to controul him. Sir Walter and my friend were a conſiderable way behind us when this happened, and I was riding by her ſide; ſhe gave a ſhriek, and the vicious creature tore up the very ground before him; diſtracted with the danger the life of my ſoul was in, all wild and apprehenſive for her ſafety, I clapped ſpurs to my horſe, endeavouring to overtake and ſtop her's; which, before I could effect, he ſtumbled in an hole, in his full career, and came down, caſting the frighted fair-one at ſome diſtance from him, where ſhe lay in a ſwoon, when I came up, and diſmounted. I immediately took her up in my arms, and, in the firſt agonies of my grief, could not help crying aloud, my tears deſcended plentifully upon her lovely face, which lay reclined, all pale and wan, upon my boſom. 'Heavens! 'what an unfortunate wretch am I! 'Oh, ye powers! reſtore me the lovely 'maid, or let my breath expire with 'her's! But, alas! ſhe hears me not, 'and already ſhe's no more!' Whether the tears I ſhed, or theſe diſjointed exclamations, brought her to herſelf, I cannot ſay; but a ſigh, which heaved her panting breaſt, gave me the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of thinking her alive. 'Gracious God!' I continued, 'give me back the charming maid, 'the pattern of your own excellence!' and, caſting my eyes down, perceived her's were opened; when, in the tumult of my joy, I imprinted an eager kiſs upon her forehead; but, recollecting myſelf, I bluſhed, and was ready to ſink into the earth for my preſumption: ſhe drew herſelf out of my arms, and gently ſaid, 'Mr. 'Thompſon, I am troubleſome; I can 'walk.'—'Dear Madam,' I falteringly ſaid, 'let me ſupport you, you 'are certainly hurt;' and by this time our two friends came up, and had caught the horſe, who, after his fault, was galloping home, and firſt gave tidings of the misfortune. I wiped my face, and ſtrove to conceal my tears. Sir Walter was mad with joy, that his daughter

daughter had received no hurt; and my friend took his ſhare of the general ſatisfaction. As to me, I was quite abaſhed at the thought of having incurred her anger, by my raſhneſs, and the diſcovery I had made of my ſentiments; and, removing her ſide-ſaddle to my horſe, without daring to look at her, aſſiſted her to remount. Sir Walter embraced me over and over, and was ſo full of the ſervice I had done her, that nothing elſe employed him but thanks and praiſes all the way home: ſhe ſaid very little, and ſeemed quite reſerved, which was attributed to the accident that had juſt befallen her; but I interpreted it as reſentment againſt me, and the thought racked me with the greateſt torture. As ſoon as we arrived, ſhe begged leave to retire, and went to bed, and her woman brought word down that ſhe was very ill; upon which, proper aſſiſtance was called, and we were all in the utmoſt pain and anxiety for her. I reſolved not to ſtir till ſhe was better; and Sir Walter took our concern very kindly; but, good God! the pangs that I felt were indeſcribable, and my friend could ſcarce keep me from doing ſome deſperate deed upon myſelf, till word was brought us down that ſhe was fallen into a doze, after taking ſomewhat to compoſe her. The next morning, to my extreme ſatisfaction, ſhe was perfectly recovered, and appeared at breakfaſt, if poſſible, more inchanting than ever; but I was the only ſufferer, to whom ſhe behaved with ſuch a diſtance, though with the utmoſt gentility, that I curſed a thouſand times the imprudence that had robbed me at once of the ſweet familiarity I had before enjoyed: however, ſhe returned me her thanks with ſo much feeling ſincerity, that I had reaſon to rejoice in the ſervice I was ſo happy to render her on this occaſion; but I could not overcome my timid confuſion, which ſcarce allowed me to ſpeak three words the whole time of breakfaſt; and I took leave in a ſituation of mind, that made me an object of compaſſion; and, arriving at home, as ſoon as decency would permit me, I retired, to vent my ſorrows in private. For ſome days a ſtate of ſtupid melancholy poſſeſſed me, which made my mother very uneaſy, and was aſcribed to illneſs, when a meſſage arrived from Miſs Louiſa, to deſire my company; glad tidings, indeed! which in a minute diſpelled my gloom, and I ſet out, immediately, for her wiſhed-for preſence. In entering the open walk to Sir Walter's houſe, was a kind of wilderneſs, which partly nature, and partly art, had made quite private, and concealed from view. Through this maze I directed my ſteps, as it was the neareſt way; and had got half through, when I received a ſudden ſhot from a piſtol, which grazed the ſide of my head, and almoſt ſtunned me; and, before I could turn about to diſcover the hand it came from, I was ſaluted with a blow over my arm, and a ſecond over my head, which felled me, ſenſeleſs, to the ground. I had no time for reflection before my fall; and whether the ill-uſage from theſe aſſaſſins was repeated, or what followed, I cannot tell; for the firſt diſcovery I made, when I recovered my ſenſes, was my father and my friend, weeping by my bed-ſide, which ſeemed to be in a very ſtrange place, which I did not at all recollect. I found myſelf weak and feeble, and could ſcarce ſpeak, but enquired, with a faint voice, where I was, and what brought me there. They were overjoyed to perceive I had ſo well recovered my underſtanding, but tenderly begged me to compoſe myſelf, and, in due time, I ſhould be informed of every thing. They ſaid no more; and I could ſee, by the ſorrow diſplayed in their countenances, that I had been very dangerouſly ill. For ſome hours I kept myſelf ſtill, according to their deſire; but, though my weakneſs ſtill was extreme, I heard every thing that was ſaid, and ſaw my mother very aſſiduous about me; and, to my great ſurprize, Sir Walter, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, frequently in the room, enquiring how I did. Being left in the latter part of the day, with only Mr. Diaper by me, I beckoned him to my bed-ſide, and begged to know what had happened; but he ſtill refuſed me, and earneſtly deſired me not to enquire any thing till I was more capable to attend the recital. I was forced to comply, and was three days longer in this uncertainty, in which time my youth got the better of my illneſs, and I recovered ſo faſt, that I was able to crawl about the chamber, by means of hold-

ing by the chairs and tables, and in two days more, without any aſſiſtance, though my arm pained me violently ſtill. It was now that my friend, who was ever with me, ventured to talk to me; and, in anſwer to my queries, ſpoke thus—'Bleſſed be God, my dear 'Joey, that you are ſo well again; 'you have gone through an intolera- 'ble fever, attended with a conſtant 'delirium of near ten days, in which 'every body deſpaired of your life; 'and you may judge the grief and 'ſorrow it occaſioned to us all, eſpe- 'cially as the authors of your horrid 'ill-treatment were not known, nor 'could be gueſſed at, or found, upon 'the moſt diligent ſearch; for you 'was diſcovered weltering in your 'gore in Sir Walter's Wilderneſs, in 'all appearance dead, by ſome of his 'ſervants, who conveyed you to his 'houſe, where you have been ever 'ſince, and are at preſent in his own 'bed-chamber; and I may venture to 'tell you, ſince your recovery has had 'a like effect on her, that Miſs Louiſa 'has been almoſt as bad as yourſelf. 'When you was firſt brought to her 'father's in that condition, ſhe ſwoon- 'ed away, and was with difficulty 'brought to herſelf; but when the 'ſurgeons had pronounced your caſe 'to be very bad, and doubtful at beſt, 'her concern could be no longer hid; 'ſhe wept, and, in a frantick manner, 'tore her lovely hair, and expreſſed 'ſuch a regard for you, as ſurprized 'every body, which was ſucceeded by 'a fever which had well nigh put a 'period to her life. Sir Walter, at 'preſent, thinks this the effect only 'of her friendſhip; but your mother 'and her woman are witneſſes to the 'contrary: in her light-headed con- 'dition ſhe was inceſſantly calling on 'her dear Thompſon, ſaid ſhe could 'not live without you, and expreſſed 'ſuch a peculiar tenderneſs for you, 'that any one might gueſs the cauſe. 'In proportion as you have recovered, 'ſhe has gained ſtrength, and is now 'better than yourſelf; but, though ſhe 'is ever enquiring after you, ſhe has 'intreated your mother, and charged 'her woman, not to mention the un- 'guarded things ſhe has ſaid. I congra- 'tulate you and myſelf on this diſco- 'very, which I hope will haſten your 'cure. No one can tell, my dear Joey, the 'grief and trouble you have put your 'father and mother in, and how great- 'ly affected I have been with the dan- 'ger of ſo ineſtimable a friend; and 'Sir Walter has ſhewn as much re- 'gard for you as if you had been his 'own ſon, notwithſtanding his diſtrac- 'tion for the illneſs of his daughter. 'Pray, now, tell me, my friend, how 'you came by ſuch wounds in your 'head, and that fracture of your arm, 'which has puzzled the ſkill of the 'beſt of ſurgeons about us?'—I gave Mr. Diaper an account of the affair, which amazed him; but, after all our gueſſes, though there ſeemed to be ſo viſible an intent to deſtroy me, we could not conjecture who could make ſuch an attempt, as I had never diſ- obliged any one in that part of the country, and was univerſally beloved. Though my grief roſe to a great pitch at the thoughts of my Louiſa's illneſs, yet what I had heard ſo tranſported me, that I forgot even that, and my own, and indulged an hundred extaſies and tranſports! The glad knowledge of her tender ſentiments towards me made me almoſt bleſs the cruel hand that in- volved me in ſo much danger, and made the diſcovery. I exulted in my happineſs, as much as if I had her al- ready mine; and the joy it occaſioned ſoon brought me to my priſtine health and vigour. That dear creature like- wiſe became ſo well as to be able to leave her chamber: our enquiries after one another had been repeated every minute; and now, that I was recovered ſo much, I burnt for an opportunity to ſee her, in which I reſolved to profit by my friend's advice, and not betray the knowledge I had acquired. Sir Walter reſolved to keep me there a week after the cure; upon which my father, mother, and Mr. Diaper, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, returned to our houſe, after the higheſt acknow- ledgments to Sir Walter for his good- neſs to me, the two laſt-mentioned gentlemen having been his gueſts on the ſame occaſion, their regard for me having made them too anxious to re- turn home, from whence the news of my misfortune had brought them, till I was perfectly out of danger.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

MISS LOUISA CONFESSES HER REGARD FOR HIM—HER AMIABLE SINCERITY AND PRUDENCE—HE IS OVERCOME BY HER GOODNESS—THEY VOW ETERNAL CONSTANCY—NATURAL RHAPSODY ON LOVE—THEIR CONJECTURES OF THE LATE ASSAULT.

I Was overcome with ſadneſs the firſt time I ſaw the charmer of my ſoul after her indiſpoſition, the roſes being quite vaniſhed from her cheeks; and ſhe was grown ſo thin and pale, ſhe was ſcarcely to be known. I accoſted her with a trembling accent, and expreſſed my ſorrow at her late illneſs; which ſhe received in ſo affecting a manner, and was ſo overjoyed to ſee me recovered, that the roſes again reviſited her face, and a kindling bluſh of conſcious pleaſure overſpread her countenance. Sir Walter gave us both joy on the occaſion, and, in his way, ſaid a thouſand things that ſavoured of his great affection for his daughter, and his regard to me; and, after ſitting ſome time, left us alone. Now, I was at the greateſt loſs imaginable how to behave, and hardly dared lift up my eyes to her: a thrilling tranſport, mingled with awe, invaded my whole frame, and, for ſome moments, I remained ſpeechleſs and immoveable; at length, aſſuming courage, I threw myſelf at her feet, and broke ſilence in this manner—'Ah, lovelieſt of women! juſtly have I been puniſhed for 'my preſumption and temerity, in 'daring to expreſs the fond concern 'of my heart at your late danger; 'but, as your diſpoſition is mercy itſelf, pardon me, my deareſt Madam, 'the crime I was guilty of; it was 'what nothing ſhould ever have prevailed on me to commit, and flowed 'involuntarily from me, when I feared 'I was going to loſe you! Pity me, 'and forgive me, and don't baniſh me 'from your reviving preſence for 'ever!' Her aſtoniſhment at this ſudden action was ſo great, that ſhe could not interrupt me, and I went on—'I 'muſt confeſs I love you, but is it my 'fault? No! all that ſee your perfections do the ſame. Oh! then accept the humble adoration I ſhall 'ever pay you, which ſhall never 'diſturb your happy moments; and, 'though I cannot conquer my raſh and 'fatal paſſion, I will keep it within 'ſuch ſtrict limits, that it ſhall never 'in the leaſt offend you. Alas, Madam! is it poſſible for me longer to 'conceal the effects of your wonderous 'charms, or to reſiſt the empire you 'have over all my thoughts and actions! an empire more acquired by 'your virtue, your good-ſenſe, and 'your amiableneſs of ſoul, than by 'the exterior graces of your perſon. 'Let the miſerable ſituation I am involved in excite your commiſeration! 'Behold me, conſcious of having an 'heart capable of all the ſublime and 'generous motions of love, and yet 'infinitely enamoured of an object, 'that, though reaſon convinces me I 'ſhould be for ever happy in, and endeavour to communicate the higheſt 'ſatisfaction to; yet ſhe even denies 'me hope of the poſſeſſion of it in the 'moſt diſtant degree. No, I own my 'ambitious preſumption does not aim 'ſo high: ſuffer me, in anguiſh, however, to ſmile in myſelf, and ſay that 'you do not utterly deſpiſe me!' Here the goddeſs of my ſupplications, raiſing me with her hand, which I imprinted an hundred burning kiſſes upon, before it could be withdrawn; and, ſtriving to conceal a confuſion that rendered her ſtill more lovely, broke ſilence in this manner—'Were I, Mr. 'Thompſon, to conſult the prudential 'or the political maxims of my ſex, I 'ſhould retire from your declarations, 'without vouchſafing you any other 'anſwer than the haughty diſdain you 'ought to think you have deſerved; 'but let me be a woman, and yet 'proof againſt her natural inſincerity: 'it is too late to deny to you, ſince 'the cauſe of my late illneſs has been 'too plain to your friends; I ſay, Sir—' And here the lovely face was painted with ſuch a crimſon dye as juſt illumines the horizon when the ſun firſt ſtreaks the ſkies with his aſcending rays!—'It would be an inſincerity, 'which my mind would condemn me 'for greatly, were I to deny that I 'have a proper regard for your merit, 'that I eſteem your perſon, and think 'myſelf greatly obliged to you for 'ſome inſtances of your friendſhip to 'me, which in an heart like mine,

'which

'which cannot be obliged, and at the 'same time affect an inſenſibility of 'the obligation, may have been very 'forcible recommendations to me in 'your favour. All the native pride 'of our ſex, Sir, as I know you to be 'a man of honour, ſhould not with-'hold me from indulging this eſteem 'of you to a greater degree;' here a ſigh, unnoted by her dear ſelf, heaved her generous breaſt—'but I have ever 'reſolved not to diſobey my father, 'who, I hope, will have ſo much af-'fection for me as not to force me to a 'match he has often talked of, which 'will undoubtedly make me the moſt 'miſerable of beings. As to my part, 'let me own, that, be our fortunes 'ever ſo different, a gentleman of Mr. 'Thompſon's rectitude of mind, and 'purity of ſentiment, would deter-'mine me to follow my inclinations; 'but, Sir, let us ſay no more of what 'ſeems to affect us both ſo much.'— 'Say no more, Madam!' I cried, in an extaſy of tranſport; 'after this melt-'ing diſcovery, ſay no more! as well 'you might reſtrain the thankſgivings 'that pour forth from the grateful 'mariner, who has unexpectedly land-'ed, after ſhipwreck, on ſome hoſpi-'table ſhore; as well the raptures that 'proceed from the dying penitent, 'when the gleaming hopes of mercy 'have been viſiting his departing ſoul; 'as ſtem the torrent of my acknow-'ledgments, which muſt, which will, 'have utterance! O adorable Louiſa! 'you have, indeed, raiſed me from 'death, to a new, an added ſenſe of 'the importance of my being, ſince 'you intereſt yourſelf in my fate. For-'give me, my angelick comforter, if, 'in the wildneſs of my tranſports, I 'am not able to expreſs myſelf in 'ſober, temperate language! O ye 'ſoft zephyrs! whiſper the kind, the 'tender accents, of my Louiſa, in 'every fanning breeze that murmurs 'through the grove! Tell it, ye imi-'tative echoes! catch the heavenly 'ſounds, and propagate the ſtrains 'I've heard around! O happy, happy 'youth! what envied bliſs! ſuperior 'joys are mine! Let the pains, the 'corroding cares of mortality, rage as 'they liſt, the idea that the ever-ſenſi-'ble, the blooming fair, pants for my 'welfare, wiſhes every bleſſing that I 'aſpire to ſhare, will bear me ſafely 'through the gathering ſtorms!'— Here the workings of my imagination had ſo ſtrongly affected me, that my weakened faculties were no longer able to ſupport them, and I ſunk down, without life, at her feet; at which ſhe gave a ſhriek, and the ſervants ran in to her aſſiſtance, and carried me to bed; where, when I came to myſelf, I turned my eyes about, and ſaw her ſitting by me, with earneſt cares employed for my recovery. I begged her pardon for the diſturbance I had given her, as well as my weakneſs would permit; and ſhe ſweetly and tenderly deſired me to compoſe myſelf, for fear I ſhould endanger another attack of my fever by the tumults of my mind. How judiciouſly did ſhe inculcate to me the government of our paſſions, and urged the future enjoyment of each other's company in ſafety, as a reaſon for my moderation, for fear of cauſing any ſuſpicions of my ſentiments in her fa-ther and her couſin, who of late had more than ordinarily pried after every thing that occurred between us, and began to be a conſtant, troubleſome gueſt, whenever we were engaged.— 'Let me, for I can hide it no longer 'from you, Mr. Thompſon,' ſays the deareſt and beſt of creatures, 'confeſs 'that I have a tender regard for you; 'that I ſhould think myſelf unhappy 'with any body elſe; and, though I 'have all the reſpect and duty poſſible 'for my father, yet, I freely own, I 'ſhould be diſobedient, if I were or-'dered to make choice of the wretch 'he, I find, propoſes to give me to: 'for, if he had all the other qualifi-'cations I could wiſh in a man I 'would chuſe for a companion in life, 'yet his natural brutality of temper, 'and the baſeneſs of his principles, 'would render him deteſtable.—No, 'Sir, nothing but a ſimilitude of ſenti-'ments, an union of ſouls, a thorough 'and mutual liking of each other, can 'make the marriage-ſtate eligible; 'but let me, Mr. Thompſon, have no 'reaſon to accuſe myſelf of indiſcre-'tion and weakneſs in making a con-'feſſion ſo oppoſite to the general 'maxims of my ſex, whoſe hypocriſy 'and pride, on ſuch occaſions, teach 'them to hide the motions of their 'hearts, and to take pleaſure in the 'little ſervile complaiſance they ex-'act of their lovers. I am above

'thoſe

'those mean arts, and you will be 'generous enough, I don't doubt, to 'make a proper estimation of what I 'have been tempted to say in your be-'half. We are yet young enough, 'and time and application may render 'you as agreeable in the eyes of my 'father, for a son, as you are now 'for a friend; for, be assured, I will 'never marry without his consent, any 'more than I will make myself mise-'rable to please his humour.' Here she ceased; and, raising myself in the bed, I assured her my sentiments were, and ever should be, conformable to her's; 'But excuse me, dearest Ma-'dam, if I here protest, before Al-'mighty God, that I will never in-'dulge a thought contrary to my af-'fection to you; and that, let what 'good or ill fortune soever betide me, 'you, and only you, shall be the mis-'tress of my heart.'—'And,' says my angel, with equal vivacity, 'in the pre-'sence of the same Being, I here vow, 'that, if I am not to be allied to you, 'my maiden-name shall descend with 'me to the grave!' I could not for-bear kissing her hand, with inexpressi-ble ardour, for this infinitely kind con-descension, which with some reluctance she permitted me to do: and, oh! let any lover, who has been so exquisitely happy, figure the situation, the bliss-ful situation, I was in at that time, and he will wonder I could keep my tran-sports from breaking out into farther actions of an enamoured, overjoyed, and raptured soul! Oh! the serene calm my bosom now began to feel is inexpressible! Methought I had assum-ed a new and more improved state of existence, and soared above the fetters of mortality!

'Hail, softest, sweetest, most de-'lightful passion, that warms the hu-'man heart! If virtue, and if merit, 'dignify thy triumphs, what real, 'solid bliss, thou canst impart! Hail, 'guest sublime! all pure and lovely! 'thou art wisely given by Providence 'adored, to soothe the ills of life!—"The cordial drop Heav'n in our cup "has thrown," to balance all our pains 'and numerous ills! By thee each sor-'did notion is exiled, and every senti-'ment refined!—"Our miens are fa-"shion'd, and our tongues are fil'd." Charmed with the love of my adored Louisa, I breathed a purer element—'and seem'd, nor only seem'd, but 'was inspir'd!' The little base de-sires indulged before, now sickened in my thoughts; how mean! how low! how trivial!—

'Who to forbidden joys would rove,
'That knows the sweets of virtuous love!'
ADDISON.

The present ease of my mind had such an effect on my body, that I was soon restored to my pristine health, and had at the same time the pleasure to see my Louisa's countenance array-ed in her usual smiles; the beauteous vermeil, which had been so long ba-nished, resumed it's seat in her cheeks, and gave an added lustre to her graces. Till this time she had forgot to enquire into the manner I received my late hurts, and the consequences were to me so salutary, that I even counted the assault made upon me a blessing rather than a misfortune; but when I hap-pened to say, that I was come to pay her a visit, pursuant to a message I had received from her, she was astonished, and protested she had never sent to me, nay, had, even at that period, resolved, if possible, to wean herself from my company, fearful of the effects of that insinuating passion that she found had assaulted her breast. This opened a field of conjectures about the author or authors of the cruelties that had been acted upon me, and we could, after long examination, fix upon no one so likely to have engaged in so rash and base an attempt, as her cousin, who, though she believed he had little affection for her, was too much sway-ed by his interest to look upon her re-gard for me with any measure of pa-tience or forbearance.

CHAP. XXIII.

SHE MAKES HIM HER CONFIDANT—HER AMIABLE BENEVOLENCE AND CHARITY—SHE SURPRIZES HIM BY A PROOF OF HER GOOD-NESS—STORY OF AN UNFOR-TUNATE FAMILY—ADVICE TO YOUNG LADIES—HE MAKES A DISCOVERY WHICH HE IMPARTS TO HER—HER SENTIMENTS OF RELIGION.

NOW, the gladsome hours flowed in jocund rounds, and all was happiness, and all was love; each con-scious

ſcious walk, each embowering ſhade, was witneſs to the bliſsful moments I ſpent in the converſation, in the contemplation, of my amiable Louiſa: every day diſcovered ſtill more and more perfections in the ſoul of that lovely maid; I grew quite another ſort of creature, and was ſo improved by her wit and good-ſenſe, that I breathed nothing but generous and noble ſentiments and deſires. It was one ſmiling morn, when I was in raptured accents ſpeaking my gratitude and acknowledgments, that ſhe interrupted me, and, with a voice that ſpoke the ſofteſt melody, told me ſhe was reſolved to impart all the pleaſure ſhe was now capable of beſtowing upon me, and make me the confidant of ſome ſecrets, that, ſhe doubted not, would give me heightened ſatisfaction; 'In ſhort, Mr. Thompſon, I will give 'you a ſpecimen of the manner in 'which I chuſe to ſpend ſome part of 'my time, which has given me ineffable delight, and contains all the 'ſecreſy I ever thought myſelf obliged 'or inclined to obſerve. My father's 'generoſity of temper yields me an 'opportunity, from the overplus of 'my own expences, to diffuſe a number of little benevolent kindneſſes 'amongſt the poor inhabitants of the 'neighbouring villages, whom I endeavour to make as happy as I can, 'with what Providence has beſtowed 'upon me. You muſt know, Sir, I 'think this one of the moſt grateful 'returns I can make to my Creator, 'for the bleſſings of abundance and 'plenty he has imparted to me; and 'raiſes my mind to an imitation of 'that beneficence wherewith he ſuperintends and looks through nature, 'ſcattering his bleſſings, in ſuch profuſion, upon his unworthy creatures. 'A heart that is not ſuſceptible of humanity and pity, that does not feel 'the angelick tranſports that glow in 'the boſom in relieving poverty and 'diſtreſs, and affliction and grief, is 'unworthy the enjoyment of the common favours of Providence, and 'ſhould be aſhamed to partake even 'of the ſun's reviving influence. I 'am ſoon tired with the folly of my 'toilet, any farther than it adminiſters 'to neatneſs and decency; and the 'books you know I generally converſe 'with, give added force to this diſpoſition I find ſo natural to me; but, 'above all, that beſt of books, which 'I regard as a rule for my ſalvation, 'in the ſtrongeſt terms inculcates the 'neceſſity of doing good, and in ſo 'ſublime a manner, that a perſon muſt 'be dead to all ſentiment and beauty 'of expreſſion, to diſregard it's precepts. Nay, I will own to you, my 'Thompſon, that my obſervation of 'your turn of mind to benevolent 'principles firſt opened a way to admit your image into my breaſt.—'Come, come,' continues ſhe, ſmiling, 'I'll conduct you to a ſcene that will 'be a proof of what I have ſaid.' So ſaying, ſhe ſtruck acroſs a meadow, which terminated the walk we were in, and roſe on one ſide into a hill of ſome height, whilſt I followed her with ſilent admiration; and methought ſhe looked like one of thoſe miniſtring angels, who, we are told, are employed in acts of love and kindneſs to the fallen race of men. 'O worth innate! O goodneſs moſt extreme!' I was forced to exclaim, 'what envied fate is mine! 'thus to be conſidered by the faireſt, 'beſt, and moſt excellent pattern of 'her ſex, adorned "with inward greatneſs, unaffected wiſdom, and ſanctity "of manners!"

At the farther ſide of this verdant eminence, was a ſmall hovel, which reſembled the ruſtick dwelling of Baucis and Philemon of old; and no ſooner was our approach diſcovered by the yelping of a ſmall cur that was friſking in the ſun-ſhine, and ran crouching to the feet of Louiſa, than a comely woman looked out and approached with a modeſt diffidence, mingled with joy in her face, and ſaluted that lady, in terms of the utmoſt veneration and reſpect; to which ſhe replied with an affability and good-nature, that was calculated to diſſipate the confuſion that our ſudden appearance ſeemed to have inſpired; and aſked, how her huſband did to-day, and then enquired after the reſt of her little family by name. 'My 'lady,' replies the honeſt dame, 'ſince 'we had the honour to receive your 'comfortable preſent yeſterday, which 'came at a very ſeaſonable time, my 'huſband has recovered his ſpirits, and 'is upon the mending hand. Oh, 'Madam! you have rendered us truly 'happy: may every bleſſing crown 'your

Stothard del. Birrell sculp.

Plate II.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. July 12, 1783.

'your wiſhes for your goodneſs!' By this time we approached the door, when two or three little cherubims ran out, and in their pretty, prattling way, welcomed my adorable, in a manner that convinced me ſhe had been no ſtranger to them; ſhe took each of them in her arms, and beſtowed kiſſes and careſſes upon them without number; enquired after the progreſs they had made in learning their books, and rewarded them according to their proficiency. A bluſh of uncommon ſatisfaction ſhone in her face, beams of unclouded joy flaſhed from her brilliant eyes, and the whole family were overcome with boundleſs ſatisfaction. She then enquired into ſeveral little particulars that are wanting in a family, gave the good woman ſome money, calling her aſide for that purpoſe; and then, preſenting her hand to me, we departed, and her departure ſpread a gloom upon thoſe faces that were ſo moved with joy before. I was all admiration, and had never been partaker of more real pleaſure. Heavens! what a dignity, what a luſtre did her goodneſs ſpread around her, and what a fine effect her elevation of mind had upon her native charms! 'You muſt 'know,' ſays the deareſt maid, 'that 'with a little aſſiſtance, and ſome pro-'per advice, I have ſaved this poor fa-'mily from deſtruction, and in that I 'am doubly repaid, by the pleaſure, 'the ſecret ſatisfaction, it has given me; 'not an acknowledgment I have re-'ceived, not a ſudden tranſport light-'ed up in thoſe innocent babies faces, 'but has given me more real bliſs than 'if I had received the greateſt benefit 'the world could beſtow. The man 'was a Londoner, and came down 'into theſe parts as an exciſeman; 'but for ſome ſlip or miſtake in his 'books was diſmiſſed, about three 'months ago, from the repreſentations 'of an ill-natured ſupervifor; ſince 'which, being deprived of his ſmall 'ſalary, he has worked as an huſband-'man for my papa, ſtriving with the 'greateſt affection to ſupport his fa-'mily of a wife and three children. 'As I was walking out one afternoon 'with my woman, I accidentally 'paſſed by the houſe, and heard a ter-'rible ſwearing and ſcolding within, 'which was diſcontinued upon the 'ruſtling noiſe I made in paſſing, and 'the woman you have ſeen, juſt look-'ed out to ſee who it was, with her 'face ſwollen with tears; ſhe dropped 'me a curtſey, which I returned by 'the like, accompanied with a "How "d'ye, good dame?" and, thinking 'her under ſome affliction, enquired if 'any misfortune had happened to her. 'The woman, who ſeemed to have a 'ſoul ſuperior to her appearance, very 'ſenſibly anſwered, that the detail of 'her misfortunes would be too tedious 'for my ears, and ſhe feared too af-'fecting to herſelf to go through 'with any tolerable decency; "But, "Madam," continues ſhe, "what "gives me at preſent the greateſt un-"eaſineſs is, that my poor huſband, "unuſed to want, has ſoured the beſt "of tempers by dwelling too much "on the thoughts of the hardſhips he "has met with, and grows croſs and "peeviſh to his family; whereas, I "could ſuffer the greateſt extremities, "without complaining in his ſociety: "indeed, our ills are almoſt too great "to bear!" here ſhe burſt into un-'affected tears, whilſt two or three lit-'tle children, almoſt naked, joined in 'the mournful ſcene. I was ſtruck to 'the heart, and by my endeavours have 'made their circumſtances more eaſy, 'and cloathed them in thatmanner you 'ſee, and this very morning have made 'my father promiſe me his firſt farm 'that becomes vacant, which I intend 'to ſtock for them, and put it into 'their power, by an honeſt applica-'tion and induſtry, to retrieve their 'affairs, and be of ſervice to ſociety, 'who had elſe become a burden to it: 'the huſband, eaſed of his anxiety, is 'become mild and ſober again, and 'the reflection upon his late impa-'tience and repinings againſt Provi-'dence, has thrown him into a diſorder, 'which, by the account of his wife, 'he is now like to get over.' I ob-ſerved to my charmer, that I had ge-nerally found, that thoſe perſons, who poſſeſſed the beſt natural diſpoſitions and talents, were moſt altered by mis-fortunes; whereas a lifeleſs clod goes through the up-hill and down-hill accidents of life, with a ſettled uni-formity of behaviour, which, though generally counted wiſdom and philo-ſophy, flows from a natural inſenſi-bility and dulneſs of conſtitution.

How happy would the beauteous

part of the creation become, if, like my Louiſa, they would beſtow a little leſs attention upon the impertinences of dreſs, viſits, and cards, and ſtrive to adorn their minds with wiſdom and knowledge, and to illuſtrate the delicacy they are born with, by ſuch a conſtant habit of doing good! How bright an appearance has beauty and virtue united, what a light they caſt upon every action of their lives? How inſipid, how unlovely are ſuch purſuits in women, as they muſt and often do condemn in our ſex? One would think avarice, pride, and anger, and peeviſhneſs, reſentment, and rage, were vices only of male growth, and were not able to fix their reſidence in a female breaſt, where generoſity, complacency, mercy, good-nature, forgiveneſs, and ſerenity, only ought to reſide: Oh! ye gentle ſoothers of human pains and inquietudes, copy this pattern of reſplendent excellency, by which you will fix your empire ſtill more abſolutely in our ſouls, and reaſon as well as paſſion will take a pride to ſacrifice at your altars, and adore your real and never-fading charms! Then we ſhall truly ſing, with the poet—

'You've in you all that we believe of
'Heaven!
'Amazing brightneſs, purity, and truth,
'Eternal joy, and everlaſting love!'

As we advanced in our return to the houſe, caſting my eyes at ſome diſtance, I perceived the ſquire, her couſin, talking very earneſtly with two fellows, who had no very promiſing appearance, which I made her take notice of, and ſhe, as well as myſelf, was ſtartled at their looks, which ſhe thought had ſomewhat villainous in them; when, caſting up their eyes, they diſcovered our approach, they ſeemed ſurprized, and ſhifted their ground. I followed them with my eyes till I had quite loſt ſight of them. Whether or no our knowledge of his diſpoſition, or the conjectures we had formed of his foregoing guilt, worked up our terror, I can't juſtly tell; but, in ſhort, we had reaſon to think he was meditating no good. I had preſence of mind enough to conceal my own fears, and to calm the tumults of my Louiſa's breaſt, who was perfectly put into a trembling fit by her preſagement of ſome ſiniſter deſign againſt our quiet. At ſupper, where he was preſent, I eyed him with more fixed attention than uſual, and thought I perceived a viſible confuſion and trouble in his countenance, which he ſtrove to conceal, but was forced to leave the room abruptly. That night, Sir Walter being engaged at a friend's houſe, I had an opportunity of ſpending entirely with my angel; and, amongſt other diſcourſe equally productive of ſuch diſcoveries of her knowledge and reading, as aſtoniſhed me, I ventured to aſk her, whether ſhe was ſo rigidly bigotted to the doctrines of the Roman Catholick faith, as to admit of no ſalvation out of the pale of that church. Let me treaſure up for ever the remarkable anſwer of this divine creature! 'I expected, my dear 'Thompſon, that ſome time or other 'we ſhould fall upon this diſcourſe, 'and am prepared to reſolve you of my 'opinions; that I am not bigotted, 'you might have learnt from your 'dear mother, as I have conſtantly, 'for ſeveral years paſt, joined in the 'publick worſhip at our pariſh church, 'where I have been greatly edified by 'the excellent diſcourſes of your fa'ther. As to this or that mode of 'worſhip, I think every one ought to 'be allowed to follow the dictates of 'conſcience; but I muſt own the ſim'plicity of the Church of England, in 'her rites and doctrines, ſeems more 'agreeable to ſcripture, than any other 'I have conſidered; and my retire'ment in the country, and the me'thod of my education, under a wor'thy mother, of large and charitable 'notions, gave me, together with a 'proper choice of books, which ſhe 'left behind her, and the uſe of a 'much better collection of your fa'ther's, which I had the liberty to 'ſend for any book from, an oppor'tunity of turning my thoughts to 'thoſe things, more than is common 'for one of my tender ſex. A prieſt 'of the Roman Church uſed to viſit 'our family, but was ſoon diſguſted at 'our converſing ſo much with Here'ticks, as he called them; but the 'truth was, becauſe we did not make 'him the repoſitory of our ſecrets, and 'act implicitly by his directions. Two 'things, amongſt thoſe of that per'ſuaſion, ſhock me more than any 'thing elſe, not that I believe all the

'ſtories

'ſtories that are told in our books of 'martyrology, which are the ſpirit of 'perſecution, and their maxim, that 'no faith is to be kept with Hereticks. 'In contradiction to which, I'll ſtick 'to what was ſaid by the great Mr. 'Pope, another Roman Catholick, of 'a charitable allowing ſpirit, in one 'of his letters, and, if I remember 'right, his words are theſe: "Fire "and ſword, and fire and faggot, are "equally my averſion; I pray for dif-"ferent ſects and different parties, "with the ſame ſincerity I pray for "myſelf; I think to be a lover of my "country is a glorious elogy, but "that it is a much greater to be a lover "of mankind." And I believe the 'Almighty eſteems no particular opi-'nions in compariſon to the truly good 'man, who may be ſaid to be a Chriſ-'tian at large. As things are ma-'naged at preſent by the advocates on 'every ſide of the queſtion, religion 'ſeems to have the leaſt ſhare in their 'reſearches, which is a thing I ima-'gine quite ſimple, and her duties 'comprized, according to our Saviour 'himſelf, in a very few words; but, 'alas! though ſhe is, as Rowe ſays—

"Divinely pure and ſimple from all arts,
"They daub and dreſs her, like a common
"miſtreſs,
"The object of their fancies."

I ſtood amazed at the penetration of my excellent miſtreſs, and the judgment ſhe ſhewed, and the facility ſhe ſpoke with, upon points of ſo puzzled and abſtruſe a nature.

CHAP. XXIV.

MR. DIAPER RECEIVES LETTERS FROM HIS FATHER, WITH A LETTER INCLOSED FROM PRIG—ODD ACCOUNT OF SPECULIST—NEWS ARRIVES FROM ARCHER AND SHARPLEY—UNHAPPY END OF MR. PROSODY—HIS DISCOURSE WITH HIS MOTHER, IN RELATION TO LOUISA—HE RECEIVES A LETTER OF CAUTION BY AN UNKNOWN HAND.

IT was with the utmoſt difficulty I prevailed on myſelf to leave my bliſsful abode, and to comply with the repeated requeſts of my friend, to return to my father's; which, however, at length I was obliged to do, taking the moſt tender adieu of the charmer of my ſoul. When I came home, every one rejoiced at the vivacity and lively ſpirit I brought with me; all being eaſy within, and the great buſineſs of love ſettled upon ſo unexpectedly happy a footing, I indulged all the jollity and mirth of my ſoul. My friend, to whom I imparted all that had paſſed, congratulated me in the ſincereſt manner. 'And now,' ſays he, 'I don't doubt, my Joey, but we 'ſhall be both extremely happy, and 'may promiſe ourſelves a life of con-'ſtant felicity, which I hope will be 'ſpent, for the future part of it, in a 'harmony and cordiality between us, 'equal to that we have maintained hi-'therto in the firſt; our joys, our 'griefs, mutual and the ſame.' Ah! how blind a little flattering ſucceſs renders unhappy mortals to the ſtrokes of ill-fortune, that they are every minute liable to, and which burſt the airy bubbles of their deluſive, deceitful expectations!

A day or two after my arrival, Mr. Diaper received a packet of letters from London, by the ſuperſcription of which we immediately knew it to be from my maſter, who had not wrote to either of us before, though my father and he had conſtantly correſponded; giving, as a reaſon for it, that he would not diſturb the young people in their diverſions, by giving them the trouble to write; notwithſtanding which, we had frequently paid our duties both to him and my miſtreſs. I was alarmed at this, greatly fearing it was a ſummons of us up to town; and nothing could at preſent have grieved me more than abſence from my Louiſa. Upon opening it, there was a letter for Mr. Diaper, and one for me, from his father, and another directed to us both, which I diſcovered in an inſtant to be from Mr. Prig. Both our letters from my dear and worthy maſter were full of affection to me, as well as his ſon; but we were extremely ſhocked, when we underſtood that Mr. Traffick, a merchant at Briſtol, had failed, whereby, at the loweſt computation, he was become loſer above twelve thouſand pounds. In relating this circumſtance he had ſaid all that a man of ſenſe and

a Chriſtian, who was acquainted with the unforeſeen accidents of life, could ſay to moderate his ſon's affliction; but it was a blow he could hardly bear with fortitude, as it in ſome degree diſconcerted the ſchemes of happineſs he had formed for himſelf with the lovely Miſs Bellair: in ſhort, though it was but a trifle, when weighed againſt my maſter's other poſſeſſions, it was a loſs that could not but be very heavily felt, and would, of conſequence, oblige us to retrench our extenſive dealings within a narrower compaſs. I was not without my ſhare of concern for myſelf alſo, that is ſo natural, as I knew it would render it more difficult for my friend to bring me into a ſhare of the buſineſs, which, on account of my pretenſions to Louiſa, I was become more and more deſirous of: however, as there was no remedy, we gave ear to the conſoling arguments of my father, who repreſented things to us in a moſt philoſophical and reaſonable light, and convinced us of the error and folly of laying ſuch unavoidable misfortunes to heart. My maſter concluded, that he found our preſence very neceſſary, as he, or one of us, muſt go down to Briſtol; and gave us an order to prepare for our return to London in three weeks, or a month at fartheſt. The letter from Prig was as follows.

'DEAR FRIENDS,

'THOUGH I reflect with pleaſure upon the enjoyments you participate of in Yorkſhire, and am ideally a ſharer in every ſatisfaction you feel, yet I am more pleaſed, in underſtanding that your principal has ſent you an *habeas corpus*, to remove your bodies up to London, which has been to me a dull and lifeleſs place, ever ſince your abſence. Mr. Diaper (to whoſe recommendations I muſt own myſelf very much obliged for a great increaſe of practice) has made ſo thorough a convert of me, that my former companions yield me no delight; and the ways I formerly purſued are grown dull and inſipid; and, let me aſſure you, I have not kicked a watchman, bilked a bawdy-houſe, or ſnored at Tom King's, for above theſe two months paſt. What the devil can you find ſo agreeable amongſt the *tikes* of Yorkſhire, to detain you ſo long from your friends? Are purling ſtreams, roſeate bowers, fallow lawns, and painted meads, ſtronger charms than we can procure to entertain you? For ſhame-ſake, haſte away, and join us; for pity-ſake, do; and let me ſing, as a friend of mine once did, with a little alteration—

"Yorkſhire, though full of wanton glee,
"Our op'ning pleaſures vie with thee;
"Thy barren wilds the ſtupid pleaſe,
"But muſick warbles through our trees:
"See Ranelagh, and ſee Vauxhall,
"The joyous glaſs, the ſprightly ball;
"Come, join and quaff the ſparkling bowl,
"Which raiſes, mends, and fires the ſoul."

'*Your affectionate friend,*

'RICHARD PRIG.

'P. S. The moſt extraordinary piece of news I can ſend you, is, that that man of moral rectitude, Philoſopher Speculiſt, has been caſt in 2000l. damages, for criminal converſation with the wife of a boſom friend; and, on non-payment, has been obliged to go to the Fleet Priſon.'

We could not help ſmiling at our friend Prig's conciſe and *laconick* epiſtle, and his daſh of poetry, which exactly ſpoke the temper of the man; and that, together with the arrival of our friends Archer and Sharpley, contributed to expel the gloom that had overſpread our minds. They had each of them received a letter from his ſon, which they communicated to us. Tom Archer went on with great ſucceſs in his mercantile employment; and poor Jack Sharpley had met with a great many misfortunes upon his ſtation; but by the death of the captain, and all the three lieutenants, had received the commiſſion of third lieutenant, which fell to him by rotation, and had been confirmed ſuch by the lords of the Admiralty: they were both in good health, which could not fail to communicate a great deal of pleaſure to me, and naturally led me, which I had never thought of before, to enquire after our old maſter, Mr. Proſody,

Proſody, who I found had been dead near two years, and that his wife died a year before him. His death was occaſioned by a flogging-bout, which he too unmercifully beſtowed upon the poſteriors of a gentleman's ſon, who, in revenge, had harraſſed him for his nonjuring principles, to ſuch a degree, that, upon refuſing the oaths, he was prohibited, by the archbiſhop, from teaching a publick ſchool, and died of a broken heart, leaving above 1500l. to his daughter, Mrs. Harrow, who ſtill was living, and well, with her huſband. My two old companions had mentioned me with ſo much affection in their letters, that I thought myſelf obliged to ſit down to write to them; which I did accordingly, and committed my epiſtles to the care of their fathers, to be ſent with theirs.

My dear mother, one morning, taking me into her cloſet, began, in a raillying way, to enquire after Miſs Louiſa, and into the particulars of our correſpondence. I was too much convinced of her prudence and affection, and her regard to that amiable lady, to make a ſecret to her of the progreſs I had made in my love, and the happy ſituation my heart was in; mingling my account with ſuch encomiums upon the object of my adoration, and ſuch involuntary raptures, and elevation of expreſſion, that ſhe could not help perceiving how nearly I was affected with what I ſaid. The thoughts, though diſtant, of this alliance, gave her exquiſite pleaſure; and though ſhe gave me many cautions to moderate my extravagant and overbearing tumults of ſoul, yet ſhe concluded in aſſuring me, that the dear creature had ſuch juſt notions, and ſo ſincere a regard to whatever ſhe ſaid, that no human means were ever likely to diſturb our union, and, no doubt, Providence had determined we ſhould be happy in each other. She knew too well the delicacy of my father's temper, to need any injunctions to keep the matter a ſecret from him; and promiſed me, that in my abſence at London ſhe would endeavour more and more to cultivate the good opinion and eſteem that Louiſa had conceived of me: I embraced the excellent woman with unfeigned tranſport, and methought this confidence I had repoſed in her, made her more my mother than ſhe was before.

When we came down ſtairs, a letter was given me, which had been left by a countryman; the direction was almoſt unintelligible, but, opening it, I found it to this effect.

'SUR,

'I Give youe theſe notis to take 'caree of youer ſelfe, for Squier 'Riche has reſolved to ha youer harts 'bloud, and I am one of thouſe hir'd 'to diſpatch you; and you may be 'ſure, if you can bee catch'd, you 'will note iſcap, as you did the tim 'afor. I honor youer faather, which 'is the reſon of theſe notis

'*From your well-wiſher,*

'A. B.

'Beſure alwayes to go well armud.'

This advice ſtartled me, as it convinced me that this baſe and cowardly wretch had reſolved to get rid of me, one way or other; and I communicated it to Mr. Diaper, who determined I ſhould never go to Sir Walter's without him in my company, and both well armed: upon conſideration, we reſolved not to diſcover the matter to that gentleman, till we could, by ſome accident or other, get one of his emiſſaries into our hands to confront him, as he was ſo much beloved by him. We deplored the unhappineſs he was under to be ſo blinded to his wicked diſpoſition, as to entertain a thought of ſacrificing his excellent daughter to ſo perfectly brutal a villain. I ſhould have ſought him out in the firſt motions of my rage, and, upon his declining a fair combat, have pinned him to the earth, had not my friend repreſented the imprudence of ſuch a reſolution, which obliged me to deſiſt.

CHAP. XXV.

SIR WALTER SURPRIZES THE TWO LOVERS—HIS BEHAVIOUR THEREON — IS FORBID THE HOUSE—THEY CORRESPOND BY LETTER — THEIR CORRESPONDENCE

DENCE DISCOVERED—HER WOMAN DISCHARGED—SHE IS PRIVATELY CONVEYED AWAY.

I Communicated the foregoing letter the next day to my Louiſa; and, at the ſame time, informed her, that I muſt be torn from all the pleaſure I enjoyed in her loved ſociety, for ſome time; giving her an account of the reaſons for our unexpected departure from Yorkſhire: ſhe condoled with my friend in his loſs; but ſaid ſo many inſpiring things to comfort him, that grief ſoon fled, being driven away by the influence of her perſuaſive eloquence and enlivening ſmiles. When he had ſat with us ſome time, he retired to ſeek Mr. Sharpley, who had alſo accompanied us, promiſing to call for me in the evening. My Louiſa was greatly pleaſed with the precautions I took to bring my friend with me, and inſiſted I ſhould never come there, or go any where elſe, without him. 'Mean and low deſigning 'men,' ſays ſhe, 'are more artful 'than a man of a generous ſpirit will 'permit himſelf to become, even for 'his own ſafety; and no wretch ſo 'low, but may, one time or other, 'find an opportunity to wreck his ma-'lice and ill-will on the perſon he 'hates.' Her apprehenſions caſt her into ſo profound a melancholy, that I was alarmed, and blamed myſelf for giving her ſo much pain, by letting her into the ſecret of the letter; it even operated ſo far, as to draw a ſhower of tears from her fair eyes: I claſped her tenderly in my arms, and ſhe reclined her lovely face upon my ſhoulder, whilſt I endeavoured, with my utmoſt art, to ſoothe her forboding fears. Juſt as we were in this poſture, unluckily Sir Walter opened the door of the room, with ſuch ſuddenneſs, that we could not adjuſt ourſelves, before he had taken a full view of our attitude; and, after a ſilent look of indignation, returned the way he came. I muſt own I was never ſo diſcompoſed in my life, and my charming miſtreſs trembled from head to foot: we knew his obſtinate, over-bearing, reſolute temper, too well, to doubt the conſequences of this diſcovery; and our apprehenſions were not permitted to have a long ſcope, for, in leſs than twenty minutes, a footman brought me this ſhort note.

'SIR,

'AFTER what I have juſt beheld, 'you will not think it ſtrange 'that I deſire you forthwith to depart 'my houſe, and never to enter my 'doors again.

'WALTER RICH.'

In the condition I was, I hardly knew what I did; but, to gain a few minutes time for reflection, I wrote the following anſwer.

'DEAR SIR,

'I Beg the favour to be introduced 'to you, and that you would in-'dulge me with two or three words in 'my defence; you may think me to 'blame, when, really, I am far from 'any deſign to diſturb your peace, 'but would rather loſe my life, than 'cauſe ſo kind and good a friend a 'moment's uneaſineſs. *I am, Sir, 'your moſt affectionate humble ſervant,*

'JOS. THOMPSON.'

The footman told me, with great concern, that his maſter and the ſquire were together, and that he never ſaw him in ſo great a paſſion before. 'Lord, Sir!' ſays the fellow, very innocently, 'I hope you are not going to 'fight; we all love you, and hope no 'miſchief will happen between you 'and maſter.' Whilſt he was gone, Louiſa told me, ſhe believed it would be in vain to ſtrive to bring him to reaſon at preſent, and adviſed me to go; the rather, as ſhe hoped my abſence, and what ſhe had to ſay to him, would calm his rage; 'But, let what 'will happen, Fidele,' (that was the name of her maid) 'ſhall bring you a 'line to-morrow, if ſhe can without 'ſuſpicion: depend upon it,' added the lovely creature, 'I will never for-'feit my vow.' I was going to return her my acknowledgments, in the tendereſt manner, when the footman returned, with another written meſſage, to this effect.

'I Would have you quit theſe terri-'tories this minute, for I cannot 'anſwer for it elſe, that I may not act 'ſomewhat

'ſomewhat towards you that would 'violate the common rights of hoſpi-'tality; hoſpitality, did I ſay! nothing 'of that kind is due to a deceiver, an 'hypocrite, and a villain.

'W. R.'

Finding it in vain to perſiſt, I took a tender adieu of my heavenly Louiſa; and we both mingled our tears together, apprehenſive of what we had to go through, which filled my ſoul with a gloomy train of horrid ideas.

I deſired the ſame footman to deliver him this anſwer, however, which was all the diſtraction I was under would ſuffer me to write.

'SIR,

'YOU are certainly ſeduced to 'your own unhappineſs, by the 'falſe and malicious inſinuations of 'that baſe wretch your nephew, who 'has, for what reaſon I cannot tell, 'even attacked my life by ruffians, 'and is meditating another exploit of 'the ſame kind. Believe me, Sir, 'your excellent daughter has done 'nothing contrary to the rules of 'prudence and virtue, diſcretion and 'duty; and you will find you have 'greatly wronged *your affectionate 'humble ſervant*,

'JOS. THOMPSON.

'P. S. I hope, Sir, if only for the 'ſake of your own peace of 'mind, when your paſſion is a 'little abated, you will hear 'what I have to ſay. What I 'have hinted about your kinſ-'man I am ready at any time to 'prove.'

Oh! what pangs I ſuffered at this cruel period, the ſource to me of ſo many ſucceeding misfortunes; a thouſand times I was near laying violent hands upon myſelf for my indiſcretion, and then again I excuſed myſelf by the conſideration, that I thought Sir Walter abroad as well as his daughter, he having left word, he ſhould not return till evening, which was the reaſon we were caught in ſo unguarded a manner: thence I could not help reflecting, that his ſaying he ſhould be out ſo long was only a feint, in order to ſurprize us, the ſource of which I immediately concluded to be the ſquire. I was in an hundred minds to return and take ſpeedy vengeance on him, or die in the attempt; but then the thoughts of my Louiſa's diſpleaſure checked the raſh deſign, and the danger of farther irritating her father againſt her. 'Wretch, that I was,' I could not help exclaiming, 'to imagine 'Heaven would be propitious to me, 'ſtained with the guilt of a thouſand 'crimes and enormities! Could I think 'that it had deſtined me ſo much per-'fection, without throwing innumera-'ble difficulties and diſcouragements 'in my way, as a juſt puniſhment for 'my preſumption? No, I ſee plainly 'this is only a taſte of the miſeries it 'has in reſerve for me.'

When I got home, I entered privately, and threw myſelf all bathed in tears upon my bed, where I gave full play to the melancholy and diſtraction of my breaſt, till my very brain became diſordered; and God knows how far my deſperation would have carried me, but for my friend, who accidentally came through my apartment, which was the way to his own. If he was ſurprized to ſee me at home ſo ſoon, he was much more amazed to ſee the condition I was in, and with great precipitation demanded the reaſon of the extravagances he heard and ſaw me guilty of; which when I had acquainted him with, he ſympathized with me, on this unlucky misfortune, in a truly ſenſible manner; but put me in mind of the folly of reſigning myſelf to fruitleſs and unavailing complaints and tears; that I ought to wait with patience till I heard from Louiſa; and that poſſibly from her intelligence ways might be thought of to bring Sir Walter into a better temper, and, by expoſing the villainy of his nephew, open his eyes to all the abſurdities he was guilty of, in ſo ſteadily perſiſting to bring about what would render his amiable daughter ſo infinitely and woefully wretched. I became ſomewhat calmer at theſe encouraging words, and compoſed myſelf, as well as I could, in expectation of hearing from the idol of my ſoul, counting every moment an age till I was convinced of her welfare and ſafety. At length Fidele arrived, and brought me a letter from my angel, which I kiſſed with tranſport; and hugged the poor girl in a joyful manner,

manner, over and over again, and thought I had great reaſon to be comforted, when I found the contents as follow—

'SIR,

'AFTER you left the houſe, my 'father called me into his cham- 'ber, and, with leſs paſſion than I 'expected, taxed me with indulging 'an affection for you, which croſſed 'all his meaſures; inveighed againſt 'you in the bittereſt manner, and 'commanded me never to think of or 'ſpeak to you more. In the beſt 'terms I could (though I was greatly 'concerned and frightened) I endea- 'voured to moderate his ſuſpicions; 'but my ſincerity, and the regard I 'pay to truth, would not ſuffer me to 'deny the impreſſions I had received 'in your favour, though at the ſame 'time I aſſured him I would never 'think of you in a way he ſhould diſ- 'approve, or enter into any farther 'engagements with you than were per- 'fectly innocent. This raiſed his 'fury to a pitch that made me trem- 'ble; and he told me, that he intend- 'ed I ſhould have a regard only to his 'nomination, and commanded me to 'look upon my couſin, as a man he 'was reſolved to make my huſband 'very ſhortly. I fell on my knees, 'and vowed I could not entertain the 'moſt diſtant idea of the wretch he 'mentioned with patience, and found 'my poſture and the tears I ſhed 'had ſomewhat moved him; and, tak- 'ing advantage of the lucky moment, 'drew from him a promiſe never to 'force my hand where I could not 'beſtow my heart, I proteſting I would 'not marry another than he ſhould 'approve. He, however, firmly per- 'ſiſted in his reſolves, that I ſhould 'never correſpond or ſpeak to you, to 'which, alas! I gave a ſilent appro- 'bation, on pain of being denied the 'little liberties I enjoy. Ah, Mr. 'Thompſon! what a ſituation am I 'in, divided thus, between love and 'duty! Yet let me once more aſſure 'you, that you, and only you, can, 'or ſhall, employ the thoughts of *your*

'LOUISA.'

Oh! how I, raptured, kiſſed the dear name, that ſubſcribed theſe tender, ſenſible, and moving lines, and wrote with great haſte this anſwer, which Fidele immediately returned with to her lady—

'DEAREST AND MOST AMIABLE 'CREATURE,

'WHAT miſeries I have ſuffered 'to this bliſsful moment, in 'which you ſo generouſly repeat your 'vows of conſtancy and affection, 'words are too faint to deſcribe! Ah, 'charming Louiſa! can there be great- 'er torment to a man that loves as I 'do, than to be denied the happineſs 'of ſeeing and converſing with the 'adorable object of his paſſion? The 'torments, that the damned are ſaid 'to undergo, is a feeling conſciouſneſs 'of the joys and ineffable delights of 'the bleſſed, and a privation of the 'participation of thoſe joys for ever, 'which ſo ſtrongly is working in their 'ideas. Where, alas! now are the 'improving pleaſures that flowed over 'my ſoul, when I heard my Louiſa's 'heavenly accents, her melodious, 'melting ſtrains? Oh, I am tortured, 'even to madneſs, at the painful re- 'flection of being deprived of thy ſight, 'without hope of returning to it 'again! But ſure, Heaven, who muſt 'be propitious to ſo pure an image of 'it's own perfections, will at length 'accord to thy wiſhes, and make thee 'happy as thy virtues and goodneſs 'deſerve. My lovely fair, preſerve 'the remembrance of me in your mind, 'till I can ſome way or other find a 'way to ſoothe your cruel father's re- 'lentleſs rage; and let me, at leaſt in 'this endearing manner, frequently 'converſe with my all of happineſs I 'e'er deſire. The diſtraction of my 'mind is too great to write more diſ- 'tinctly; but believe I am ever thy 'moſt tender, faithful, and eternally 'conſtant adorer, whilſt I can ſub- 'ſcribe the name of

'JOSEPH THOMPSON.'

I peſtered Fidele with an hundred queſtions, whilſt I was writing, break- ing off and writing again, every mi- nute, with ſuch ſudden ſtarts of joy and movements of ſorrow, that the faithful creature was affected, even to tears, and begged me, for her lady's ſake, to be more compoſed and calm, which

which I promiſed her I would. I was now ever, in private, pouring out my complaints, and ſetting forth my paſſion to the object of my wiſhes. Fidele had ſcarce time to do any thing elſe than to carry our meſſages and letters to each other, which ſhe did with ſo much willingneſs and affection, that the preſents I forced upon her, and which ſhe ever modeſtly would have declined accepting, were but a poor reward for her labours; though her lady alſo, whom ſhe had been brought up with, was profuſely generous and grateful to her. Our intercourſe was carried on thus for ſome days without interruption, and I received freſh proofs of the conſideration this delightful woman had for me; her letters were filled with ſuch exalted ſentiments, ſuch refined notions of things, that my admiration was almoſt equal to my love, and I died with languiſhing deſires to ſee her: this diſtant way of converſing only ſerved to heighten theſe longings; but I was ſoon robbed of even this remaining conſolation, this only refuge from deſpair; and one fatal moment involved me in a ſeries of miſeries that were dreadfully ſevere. The ſquire, whoſe ſuſpicions made him ever watchful, and who was quite incenſed at the total loſs of the favour of Louiſa, who would never ſit a moment with him but when her father was in company, and gave him every day freſh marks of her deteſtation and abhorrence, could not fail to obſerve the frequent journies Fidele made from home, and, imparting his ſurmiſes to Sir Walter, that ſhe brought and carried letters to and from his daughter and me, they agreed to watch her motions more narrowly; and one evening, in her return, they forcibly inſpected her pockets, and found a letter from me, full of the expreſſions of my love and gratitude to my charmer for her kindneſs and ſenſibility of my ſufferings; which having read, Sir Walter loaded his daughter with reproaches and cruel upbraidings, and even went ſo far in his fury, as to vow revenge upon her Minion, as he called me, wherever he found me; and immediately, notwithſtanding all her tears and ſupplications, turned Fidele out of his houſe, who came to me in the utmoſt agony and diſtraction, at being thus forced to leave her dear miſtreſs. It was now that my rage exceeded all bounds; I raved and tore in ſo violent a manner, that my friend could not abate by all his kind leſſons of advice and caution. I determined to ſeek this villain, this bane to my future expectations, and ſacrifice him to the injuries of my Louiſa; and accordingly was going to put my deſign in execution, having got over two or three fields on my way to Sir Walter's, armed with a pair of piſtols, one of which I reſolved he ſhould make choice of, or I would put him to death without mercy, when I was accoſted by a footman, whom I knew to be Sir Walter's, and who in a trembling manner gave me this billet—

'DEAR SIR,

'I Have juſt time to ſend you word 'by this compaſſionate domeſtick, 'that I am now going to be conveyed 'to my aunt's in Somerſetſhire, the 'coach waiting at the gate for that 'purpoſe.—Heavens, what outrages 'have I endured! But, be ſure you 'behave with prudence, and don't 'ſuffer yourſelf to be tranſported to 'any raſhneſs; for, depend upon it, 'nothing ſhall ever force me to be 'other than your

'LOUISA.

'I fear my tears have rendered this 'ſcroll unintelligible—take care of 'my poor Fidele, and hope happier 'moments.'

CHAP. XXVI.

HE PURSUES AFTER HER—MEETS SQUIRE RICH—DARES HIM TO COMBAT, WHICH HE, COWARD-LIKE, REFUSES—PREPARES TO PUNISH HIM, BUT HE ESCAPES—IS OVERTAKEN—HE FIRES AT HIM, AND BRINGS HIM DOWN—IS KNOCKED OFF HIS HORSE BY ONE OF THE SQUIRE'S ATTENDANTS HIMSELF—FOUND BY CERTAIN PASSENGERS IN A BLOODY CONDITION, WHO CONVEY HIM TO THEIR HOUSE IN THEIR CHARIOT—

RIOT—IS KNOWN BY A LADY, WHOM HE IN VAIN ENDEAVOURS TO RECOLLECT.

MY rage, notwithſtanding theſe injunctions of my Louiſa, was too great for expreſſion, and choaked up my voice, and my breaſt ſwelled with boiling choler; I juſt had patience to enquire if the coach was gone, which he reſolved me in the affirmative, and to aſk which road it had taken; which I no ſooner underſtood, than without a ſingle word more I returned home, and not entering the houſe to ſpeak to my friend, or poor Fidele, I ſaddled my horſe, and, mounting, galloped the way I had been directed, breathing nothing but revenge and bloodſhed, whilſt tears of grief and bitter anguiſh ran plentifully down my cheeks. I rode with all the ſpeed my horſe's legs would permit for two or three hours, when I heard the tread of horſes, and, to my inexpreſſible delight, ſoon deſcried the ſquire and two attendants, who were returning back with great expedition for ſomewhat they had forgot to take in the hurry. I drew a piſtol from my holſters, and croſſing the road, which was not very broad, ſtood prepared to retard his farther progreſs; and he no ſooner ſaw me, than he ſtopped ſhort, and turned pale at the tremendous ſpectacle, whilſt I cried out, 'Villain! diſmount, and prepare 'to give me ſatisfaction for the injuries you have heaped upon me, and 'the worthieſt and beſt of creatures, 'and declare where you have carried 'the charmer of my ſoul, or this mi'nute is the laſt I will ſuffer you to 'breathe that air you have poiſoned 'by your notorious crimes!' Before he could well recover himſelf to anſwer, one of the ſervants, equally fearful of what might happen to himſelf, ſaid, that the ſquire was not concerned in the taking away his young lady, who was a great many miles onwards, under the care of Sir Walter, and that he hoped I would not do any miſchief. Without attending to what the ſervant ſaid, I reiterated my reſolution to his maſter, who, clapping ſpurs to his horſe, with a rapid pace ruſhed by me, followed by one of the attendants; which I could not prevent, but immediately followed him, and my horſe, having the greateſt ſhare of heels, ſoon overtook the flying enemy, who roared out, for God's ſake to ſpare him, and he would be my friend for ever; but, before the words could well reach my ears, I fired at him, and he fell from his horſe; upon which, endeavouring to diſmount, I received from behind a blow on the ſide of the temples with the butt-end of an horſe-whip, which laid me ſenſeleſs amongſt the horſes feet; but was ſoon brought to myſelf, by a number of kicks and blows given with an intention to deprive me of life by the recovered ſquire, whoſe fright only had occaſioned his fall, and who frequently commanded his men to ride after my horſe and get the other piſtol, for he was reſolved to butcher the dog, before he left him. All this I heard diſtinctly, till a ſtroke, like the firſt, again put me into the ſame ſtate as before. How long I might lie motionleſs and dead to all ſenſe of my misfortunes, I cannot poſſibly determine; but, when I recovered my ſhattered ideas, the torture of my mind, the oppreſſive grief of my ſoul, was too big for utterance, and only broke way in groans, and ſighs, and tears: I ſtrove to get upon my legs, but, alas! found myſelf too weak, with loſs of blood, and too much bruiſed, to attempt it without aſſiſtance. Thus then I lay in expectation ſome compaſſionate paſſenger might peradventure paſs that way, and in charity convey me to ſome houſe where I might get aſſiſtance to return home. Oh! how violent was my diſtraction, and what havock it made on my weakened and labouring faculties! How mournfully the image of my Louiſa floated before my view, in vain imploring my ſuccour and aſſiſtance! Then, again, the wretch, who had juſt left me in this horrid condition, called up all the fierceneſs and rage inſpired by his numerous injuries and wickedneſſes: 'Yes,' I cried with a faltering voice, 'no place, though ever ſo ſacred, ſhall 'ſcreen thee from my reſentments; 'even from the arms of thy uncle will 'I drag thee, and inflict upon thee the 'death thou ſo well deſerveſt, for thy 'outrages againſt the beſt and moſt 'lovely of her ſex!' Theſe thoughts gave me eaſe, methought, and allayed my torments, when a chariot, with ſome domeſticks on horſeback, appeared in view; and I was no ſooner deſcried, than a gentleman in it, of a mien that commanded reſpect, alighted, and, approaching me, aſked me, with great

concern,

concern, how I had come by ſuch barbarous uſage, the marks of which were ſo viſible. I eſſayed to ſpeak once or twice, but my voice failed me; and the gentleman ordered his ſervants, with great care, to put me into the chariot, gave them directions to drive gently to his houſe, which was two or three miles farther, and where we arrived in about an hour and an half, and found he had got home before to prepare matters for my reception. I was taken out of the chariot, and carried up to bed; but, as I was ſupporting through the hall, I heard a female voice, the ſound of which ſeemed very familiar to my ears, exclaim, 'Oh, heavens! what do I ſee, 'it is Mr. Thompſon!' I turned my head about, but the lady had ſuddenly retired, leaving me in a maze of conjectures, who this could be who had expreſſed ſuch a concern, and was ſo well acquainted with my name and perſon.

CHAP. XXVII.

THE GREAT CARE THAT IS TAKEN OF HIM BY THE STRANGE GENTLEMAN—HE HAS A REMARKABLE DREAM WHICH OPERATES TOWARDS HIS RECOVERY—UNDERSTANDS WHO HIS GENEROUS BENEFACTOR IS, WHO AMAZES HIM, BY ACKNOWLEDGING A FAVOUR DONE TO HIS LADY.

MY eyes could only intimate to my generous preſerver, what a grateful ſenſe I entertained of the aſſiduity and care he ſhewed for my ſafety and recovery; for, though my ſenſes were entirely perfect, my loſs of blood had been ſo great as to deny my tongue the exerciſe of it's office. A ſurgeon being ſent for, he examined my wounds and bruiſes, and found them conſiderable enough to put my life to ſome hazard: what he moſt apprehended was, that a fever would enſue; and therefore, after he had dreſſed me, he gave ſtrict charge that I ſhould be kept as calm and compoſed as poſſible, and that nobody ſhould ſpeak to me, or engage me to talk, on any account. His orders were obeyed; but the torments of my harraſſed and diſtracted mind had well-nigh baffled all his ſkill: the idea of my Louiſa's loſs, and the force that might be uſed to make her unhappy, with my total ignorance of the place ſhe was carried to, on one hand, and my rage and reſentment againſt the wretch who had uſed me ſo barbarouſly, on the other, allowed me not a moment's interval of reſt. Ten thouſand crude and indigeſted ſchemes I formed in my diſtorted imagination, to reſcue my miſtreſs, and to puniſh my enemy: then, again, the abſence of my friend, and the ſituation my ſudden and raſh diſappearing would put my father and mother into, gave me inconceivable pain. Wearied at length with a conſtant ſucceſſion of theſe thoughts, I fell into a ſlumber, in which, methought, I beheld my lovely maid advancing to meet me in a meadow, diverſified on every ſide with the ſhining gifts that Flora beſtows on the moſt delightful ſeaſon of the year: as we approached each other, we diſcovered, to our mutual ſurprize, a deep and rapid ſtream, which our firſt tranſports had hindered us from perceiving. Methought we wept at this unexpected difficulty, and I was going to plunge myſelf into the waves, the more ſpeedily to embrace the charmer of my ſoul, when, with her uſual, placid ſmile, ſhe repreſſed my eagerneſs, by the following words: 'Oh, 'my Thompſon! think, with your 'wonted good-ſenſe and patience, be'fore you attempt ſo fatal an action; 'if you ſhould meet with death here, 'in my ſight, think what inſtant mi'ſery I ſhould be reduced to: rather 'let us explore the head of this river, 'or ſearch on each ſide, if, perchance, 'we may meet with ſome bridge or 'boat, that will give us a paſſage to 'each other's embraces.' I obeyed the ſweet phantom, and, looking up, perceived at a little diſtance, a ſmall barque, which was moored to a tree, on my ſide of the ſtream, which I made to with the utmoſt joy; and, entering, immediately turned it adrift, and prepared to croſs to the other ſhore; which I had no ſooner reached, within the boat's length, than I gave a ſudden ſpring, in order to get to land the ſooner; but miſſed my footing, and fell into the water, whence, when I had got out, all wet and tired with the fatigue I had undergone, I had loſt the ſight of my Louiſa, which I began to bewail with all the paſſionate geſtures and language that ſuch a diſappointment could inſpire; when I heard her

voice calling me, by name, from the bank of the river I had juſt left to meet her: 'Ah, my much-loved youth! 'how unhappy your violent temper 'makes us! Providence, ever propi- 'tious to thoſe who put their truſt in 'it, and, with reaſon and calmneſs, 'endeavour to attain it's bleſſings, 'never favours the raſh and paſſionate 'murmurs and attempts of the un- 'thinking and fool-hardy! How often 'have you promiſed me to accord to 'my deſires, and, repoſing confidence 'in the truth I have vowed you, wait 'with patience and reſignation the diſ- 'penſations of Heaven in our favour! 'Farewel. It is denied me to ſatisfy 'our ardent wiſhes, till you behave 'with more temperance and modera- 'tion than you have hitherto; yet, at 'length, I muſt believe we ſhall be 'happy.' Here the endearing form diſappeared from my view, and I waked in an agony of grief and ſorrow: however, this dream had a ſudden effect upon my mind, that aided my phyſician's ſkill; I looked upon it as a warning from above, to be leſs violent in my deſires; and recollecting how well it tallied with what my Louiſa had always inculcated, and particularly in her laſt melancholy letter, I grew more compoſed; and, in two or three days, was ſo altered, as to be able to talk and ſit up in my bed. I was prodigiouſly curious to know what kind hands I had fallen into, and particularly who the lady might be, who had expreſſed herſelf with ſo much ſeeming emotion at the ſight of me. I had ſeen no female ſince I had been there, but an elderly matron, who was my nurſe; and the gentleman, who ſeemed more than ordinarily tender of me, was very cautious how he ſpoke to me, for fear of giving me any diſturbance. I now ventured to aſk the good woman, my attendant, the name of my benefactor; which ſhe ſatisfied me in, by letting me know it was Squire Goodwill, and that his ſeat, where I then was, was called Mount Chriſtian; by which I underſtood, for I had before heard of the family, that I was about thirty-ſix miles from my father's, whither I determined the next day to get a meſſage carried to Mr. Diaper. The next morning, when Mr. Goodwill came in to ſee me, he found me up, and ſitting by the fire-ſide; he expreſſed ſome apprehenſion that I had got up too ſoon, and then congratulated me on my recovery in the moſt polite and good-natured terms. I returned my thanks for the various inſtances I had experienced of his goodneſs; and was ſo much affected with the ſubject, that I thought I could never acknowledge them enough. He told me not to think myſelf under any obligation, for that he had done no more than he thought he was obliged to perform to his fellow-creature, under ſuch circumſtances, as a man and a Chriſtian; and that he reaped the more pleaſure in having been the means of ſaving my life, from the conſideration that I had conferred formerly ſome favours upon his wife, 'Which,' added he, 'I ſhall 'ever retain a very grateful ſenſe of.' I was confuſed at what he ſaid, not being able to recollect I had ever ſeen her; which doubt I imparted to him, and told him, though I had reaped the benefit and honour of his friendſhip, by a deception which had operated ſo much in my favour, I could not diſpenſe with myſelf, for my want of ſincerity, if I did not undeceive him, by aſſuring him I had never had the happineſs even to ſee his good lady. He ſmiled at this, and told me he did not doubt but I ſhould know her at the firſt ſight, and that, the next morning, he would do himſelf the ſatisfaction to introduce her to breakfaſt, an opportunity ſhe had languiſhed for; but was fearful, before, of the ſurprize doing me hurt.

CHAP. XXVIII.

HE ADVERTISES HIS FRIEND WHERE TO FIND HIM—RECEIVES A VISIT FROM MADAM GOODWILL—HIS AMAZEMENT AT THE SIGHT OF HER—WHO SHE PROVES TO BE—SHE RELATES HER ADVENTURES.

AS ſoon as Mr. Goodwill had left me, I wrote a letter to my friend Mr. Diaper, acquainting him that I was at Mount Chriſtian, with the occaſion of my being there, and every thing that had happened to me, ſince my precipitate departure from my father's; which I endeavoured to excuſe to him, and begged, that without letting our family know my ſituation, he would

would immediately do me the pleaſure to viſit me, that I might return in his company; at the ſame time begging him to put poor Fidele, who had, till now, been entirely out of my thoughts, under the protection of my mother, till my return. This letter I immediately ſent by a domeſtick, whom Mr. Goodwill had been ſo obliging to furniſh me with for that purpoſe.

I muſt own I waited with ſome impatience for the ſight of Mrs. Goodwill: there was ſomewhat ſo myſterious, I thought, in her knowledge of me, that it very much raiſed my expectations of the event. I immediately imagined the lady, whoſe voice and manner I had taken ſuch particular notice of at my being brought in, muſt be that gentlewoman; and the tone of her voice, being what I thought I was no ſtranger to, ſtill involved me in more and more perplexity: at length the time arrived, and Mr. Goodwill entered with his ſpouſe, whom I no ſooner got up to ſalute, than I was ſeized with the utmoſt admiration and aſtoniſhment, diſcovering in her features the well-known lines of the amiable and unfortunate Mrs. Modiſh. Her preſent ſituation, and the diſcourſe I had had with Mr. Goodwill the morning before, together with the recollection of what had paſſed between us ſome years ago, joined to make my ideas a jumbled chaos of odd and unconnected thoughts. She perceived my confuſion, and obliging me to ſit down, told me ſhe did not wonder at my ſurprize to ſee a woman ſo altered in her circumſtances, and in ſo happy a ſtation, the preceding part of whoſe life had been attended with ſo much miſery. —'I was equally ſtruck,' continued ſhe, 'to behold a gentleman I ſhall ever 'eſteem and value brought to my houſe 'in ſo cruel a condition, which gave 'me great and uncommon uneaſineſs 'and concern. If Mr. Goodwill, who 'is well acquainted with my hiſtory, 'will permit me, and you have ſtrength 'enough to bear the recital, I will 'ſoon inform you how good Provi'dence has been to me, and how ſur'prizingly I am become, from the moſt 'wretched, the moſt happy woman 'breathing; and ſtill more ſo, as it 'has afforded the late opportunity to 'ſhew my regard for Mr. Thompſon.' I returned my thanks for her favours in the moſt feeling manner, and ſignified my deſire to hear her adventures; which, Mr. Goodwill being otherwiſe engaged, and withdrawing, after begging pardon for his abrupt departure, ſhe recited accordingly, in the following manner—

THE ADVENTURES OF MRS. GOODWILL.

'YOU may remember, Sir, the diſ'treſs I was in upon being met 'by my brother-in-law, as I was re'turning from a country-walk with 'you, and that afterwards I ſent you 'a mournful letter, which was dictated 'by my concern, as well for you as 'myſelf; for Mr. Modiſh was full of 'rage, that I would not diſcover who 'you was, and where you lived, vow'ing the utmoſt revenge for the wrongs 'he ſuppoſed you had done him; but 'I was proof againſt all his menaces, 'which made him carry his brutal 'treatment to a length of outrage, the 'very remembrance of which makes 'me tremble; and, about half an 'hour after, at the utmoſt hazard, I 'had ſent the letter to you, I was hur'ried into a coach with himſelf and 'his brother, and a box, in which 'were my cloaths and linen; and a 'coachman, according to his inſtruc'tions, drove at a great rate, till we 'came to a village, about ſeven miles 'from town, where we alighted, at 'the gate of a very large houſe, which, 'upon entering, I immediately diſco'vered to be a private mad-houſe, and 'you will eaſily imagine my melancholy 'and deſpair, when I over-heard them 'give inſtructions to the gentlewoman 'who kept it to hold me cloſely con'fined; and, if it was found needful, 'to chain me, ſhave my head, or other'wiſe treat me, as the nature of my 'diſorder ſhould require; and then, 'with an angry menace, that he would 'now wreck his utmoſt vengeance 'upon me, they went away, leaving 'me in a condition that may be more 'eaſily imagined than deſcribed. The 'gentlewoman then approached me 'with an air of the utmoſt humanity, 'and bid me be comforted, telling me 'ſhe already knew the nature of my 'caſe, and heartily pitied my unfor'tunate condition; adding, that ſhe 'knew too much of the ſurly diſpoſi-

'tion

'tion of her own husband, and the 'ills she suffered from it, not to attempt every way to make my captivity as easy as possible, merely from 'sympathizing in my distress: in 'short, I found the good woman to 'be a person of so kind a disposition, 'and humane behaviour, that I began 'to think myself more happy than I 'could have expected. Her husband, 'indeed, was a brutal tyrant, that, 'having been used to domineer over 'and chastise the unfortunate creatures 'that were put into his hands, practised no decorum towards me, or any 'one else; and, upon any little pretence, would lock me into my apartment, and swear I was absolutely 'mad, and should be treated accordingly. To get rid, in some degree, 'of his abuses, I was advised by his 'wife, who heartily befriended me, to 'be as serviceable as I could to them 'in their domestick affairs; and the 'scheme took so well, that I was even 'trusted with the keys, and made the 'gaoler of my fellow-prisoners. To 'tell you how many exorbitant crimes 'I took notice of in the time I continued here, would make your hair 'stand erect upon your head: wives 'have been received, as mad, from 'their husbands, who were tired of 'them; parents from their children, 'children from their parents, and 'used in so brutal a way, as often, 'really, to produce that disorder, or 'others that have proved more fatal to 'them. The keepers of those houses 'are generally the lowest and most 'hardened wretches to any sense of 'pity or regard for mankind, and use 'the power given to them with a wantonness that is terrible to think of: 'all the schemes possible are put in 'execution to get money, and the 'people in a common workhouse may 'be said to enjoy better provisions 'than those whose friends really pay 'large sums for their support and 'maintenance. My good comforter 'and adviser, who was used little better herself, frequently lamented her abject fate, and the necessity she was under to countenance such proceedings, 'which panged her to the very heart. 'I think, amongst a great number of 'reputed lunaticks, in the compass of 'one year and an half, I observed ten 'or a dozen who were as much in 'their senses as I was myself, and 'were only trepanned into the house, 'to gratify the base designs, or satiate 'the revenge and cruelty of their relations. My husband, who allowed 'them forty pounds a year for my detention and board, never came near 'me more; and I understood, in about 'two years, that he had died without 'making any provision for my future 'support; so that, consequently, I 'was at liberty to go where I would. 'I was now in great distress where to 'apply for relief; the law, with the 'small remainder of my friends, seemed too tedious a method to recover 'some part of my fortune from his 'relations, to whom he had left every 'shilling he was worth. My father 'was dead, and my brother, the only 'survivor, besides myself, of the family, I knew was too penurious and 'avaricious to assist me. I once thought 'of sending word to you of my forlorn condition; but a train of reflections upon the former actions I 'had been guilty of, and which I 'really had long regretted, and resolved to forsake; actions I should 'never have been guilty of, had my 'good fortune cast me into more worthy, kind, and indulgent hands than 'those of Mr. Modish; and the injury I might thereby continue to do 'to a young gentleman, whose temper 'seemed to destine him to a happier 'fate than to possess the heart of so unfortunate a woman, determined me 'against it.—Yes, Mr. Thompson, 'though I ever loved you since I knew 'you, yet I was resolved never to indulge my passion in the disorderly 'and criminal manner I before had 'done, and therefore forbore to let 'you know in what way fortune had 'disposed of me. At last I closed 'with a proposal made me by kind 'Mrs. Ludlam, and stooped so low as 'to accept wages of her husband to 'assist her in her household concerns, 'and the superintendency, at times, 'of the lunaticks under his care. I 'exercised this post, hoping that, as 'the Almighty had thought proper 'and fit thus to humble me in this 'life, he would graciously accept my 'sincere amendment and sorrow for 'my past offences, and mercifully receive me into his favour, when it 'should please him to demand my

'wretched

'wretched being into his hands who 'lent it to me. Such ſerious reflec- 'tions, and a view of the many miſe- 'ries human nature is ſubject to, in- 'ſtances of which I had daily before 'my eyes, together with the conver- 'ſation of my amiable miſtreſs, diſſi- 'pated all my anguiſh of heart; and 'I enjoyed a calm in this low ſitu- 'ation, that I thought nothing could 'ever have power to diſturb, and which 'I wiſhed no alteration in, when Pro- 'vidence, doubtleſs, to reward my re- 'ſignation to it's will, and to put it 'into my power, by acts of goodneſs, 'to manifeſt my ſincere repentance in 'a condition more ſuitable to my for- 'mer ſphere, ſent a gentleman one day 'into our houſe as a patient, whom it 'had reſerved to make me compleatly 'happy. A coach ſtopped at the gate, 'attended by a number of domeſticks 'in rich liveries, and a gentleman 'alighted from it of a fine aſpect and 'preſence, which ſeemed altered by a 'profound melancholy, and a kind of 'ſtupidity in his countenance, which 'one might plainly perceive was far 'from being natural, and indicated 'his diſtemper too ſtrongly to leave 'any doubt of the loſs of his reaſon. 'He was led in by two others of the 'ſame age nearly with himſelf; and, 'after he was introduced into the par- 'lour, they left him to give proper in- 'ſtructions to my maſter, and were 'longer in conference than ordinary, 'talking with ſeemingly great vehe- 'mence and force; and I thought I 'heard one of them tell my maſter, 'that, if he performed their orders 'ſtrictly, he ſhould, over and above 'what was agreed on, receive a far- 'ther reward of an hundred pounds; 'to which he made a very profound 'obedience. I don't know how, but 'methought this gentleman at firſt 'ſight intereſted me in his fate; I 'commiſerated his depravity of mind, 'and wiſhed he had been happier. I 'found in myſelf an inclination to 'attend upon him, long before his 'conductors, each of them, put a gui- 'nea into my hand, deſiring I would 'add my care to my maſter and miſ- 'treſs's, that their friend ſhould be 'kept cloſe, and no one ſuffered to ſee 'him, without he came in company 'with one of them. I could not help 'thinking there was ſomewhat extra- 'ordinary in this method and manner 'of proceeding; and if the gentle- 'man had not ſhewn all the ſigns of 'frenzy in his eyes, and ſtupid de- 'portment, I ſhould have imagined he 'had been brought there rather as a 'ſacrifice to ſome bad deſign than for 'a remedy againſt his diſorder. When 'they left us, my maſter ordered me 'to ſee that a certain room was pre- 'pared for him, which was the worſt 'in the houſe; at which, when I ad- 'mired, he bid me not be impertinent, 'but obey his orders. Accordingly, 'things were made ready, and he was 'locked in; and, though in no degree 'outrageous, had the *ſtrait waiſtcoat* 'clapped upon him, which he was ſo 'far from oppoſing, that he yielded to 'every tranſaction with the paſſiveneſs 'of an infant. Mr. Ludlam then gave 'me orders to attend him, and bid me 'not mention him to Dr. Hellebore, '(the phyſician attending our houſe) 'as the gentlemen had left what phy- 'ſick was neceſſary for him, which I 'was to give him every other morn- 'ing. Nothing of this, ſo contrary to 'our common methods, but ſtill more 'and more increaſed my ſurprize: 'however, it was not my buſineſs to 'diſpute, though when my miſtreſs 'underſtood from me my inſtructions, 'ſhe could not help ſaying, with a 'ſhake of the head, that ſhe was fear- 'ful it was never intended he ſhould 'go alive out of the houſe. None of 'our keepers, either men or women, 'were ſuffered to go near him but my- 'ſelf, ſo great was the confidence our 'governor repoſed in me; and, the 'firſt time I went in to him, I found 'him in a fixed poſture, weeping like 'a young child; and, if I aſked him 'any queſtion, he anſwered with the 'ſame ſimplicity and inattention which 'a young child would have done. He 'was ſuffered to eat no meat, and his 'fare was only water-gruel, bread 'and cheeſe, and butter, which he 'never took with the leaſt appetite, 'and generally left three parts of his 'day's allowance for me to carry away 'again. Thus he continued, with 'his arms conſtantly confined in the 'day-time, for near a month, in which 'I duly attended him, and every other 'day infuſed a powder in his water- 'gruel, which my maſter gave me for 'that purpoſe. He was almoſt always 'dozing,

'dozing, and fell away till he was ſo 'meagre, that his bones appeared 'through his ſkin, and he looked like 'the picture of death. I frequently 'carried him proviſions privately from 'our table, which he would eat very 'greedily, and ſhewed a much greater 'reliſh for than the food appointed 'him. Things were in this ſituation, 'when my maſter was obliged to go 'as far as Cambridge for a week, to 'receive another patient, and both of 'us totally forgot to mention his leav-'ing the powder, which he delivered 'only day by day, which I neither 'knew by name, nor had ſeen before, 'though it ſeemed to be a compoſition 'of ſeveral kinds of drugs and mine-'rals. This occaſioned an omiſſion of 'three days in the adminiſtration of 'his phyſick; for it was ſo long be-'fore Mr. Ludlam diſcovered that he 'had been guilty of ſuch an overſight; 'which he no ſooner did, but, leaving 'his buſineſs imperfect, he returned 'in great haſte to rectify his neglect: 'but it was too late; for, the morning 'of the ſecond day after his depar-'ture, our patient began to rave and 'talk in a very extraordinary manner, 'and would frequently curſe his bro-'ther, and ſeveral others by name, 'who had been the ſource of ſo many 'misfortunes, as he mentioned, to him; 'yet, in his utmoſt anger, he behaved 'mildly to me, and, in the evening of 'that day, told me, in as ſober a way 'as I ever heard any thing told, that 'he had been abuſed, and that his 'brother and ſome other perſons, eager 'to poſſeſs his eſtate, and to hinder 'him of a match with ſome ſuitable 'perſon or other, which they appre-'hended would baulk their deſign, 'had taken the advantage of a de-'bauch, and mingled a ſoporifick and 'ſtupifying powder with his liquor, 'by which they had reduced him to 'the ſtate he ſuppoſed I firſt ſaw him 'in, and which he did not doubt had 'been continued by frequent repeti-'tions of the ſame benumbing and 'dreadful compoſition. He begged 'me, for God's ſake, to hear his 'ſtory; which I did, and, indeed, 'thought it a very melancholy one. 'He had been at one mad-houſe al-'ready by the ſame means, and per-'ceived that they had trepanned him 'thus again, with a ſettled intention 'to take away his life; adding, that 'he did not deſire me to believe him, 'till, by hearing the ſame ſtory over 'and over from him, without a ma-'terial omiſſion or variation; and from 'his temperate behaviour, I was con-'vinced he was not diſtracted, and 'that at this time he only enjoyed a 'lucid interval. He was ſenſible, he 'ſaid, that the ſame ſtuff had been 'given him ſince he had been under 'our care, but hoped I was not privy 'to any of this villainy; that he en-'tertained great hopes from the good-'natured caſt of my mind, that, when 'I was convinced of the truth of this 'relation, and who he was, which he 'would put me into a way of learn-'ing, I would uſe my good offices to 'procure his liberty; and that, as a 'recompence for that important ſer-'vice, he would vow, in the moſt ſo-'lemn manner, to make me the miſ-'treſs of himſelf and fortune, the 'minute he had ſettled his affairs.— "I am now alive again, I ſuppoſe by "ſome miſtake in the execution of "their project; and I conjure you, "if you know, to tell me how you "give me that curſed inſlaver of my "ſenſes, and that you would omit it "for the future, and ſhew it to me. "As a proof that I am perfect in my "underſtanding, I will ſtill counter-"feit the ſtupidity I was ſubject to, "that (for I perceive you are an "aſſiſtant here) your rogue of a ma-"ſter may not ſuſpect the alteration "that has happily betided." How 'impoſſible is it for you to gueſs the 'amazement that ſeized me upon hear-'ing him! I at firſt doubted the re-'ality of what I heard, and thought 'it only ſome ſudden turn of his diſ-'order; but when I recollected every 'thing I have before related, and 'compared it with what he had juſt 'told me, I could no longer doubt 'the villainy that had been practiſed 'upon the poor gentleman. I there-'fore aſſured him of my ſervices, upon 'his giving me the ſame proof of his 'ſanity on the morrow, by perſiſting 'in the ſame ſtory; that, as to his 'name and family, I had heard it 'from my maſter; telling him that I 'found he was a Yorkſhire gentleman, 'of a good eſtate, whoſe name was 'Goodwill; and that what aſtoniſhed 'me moſt was the information I had

'received

'received from the ſame hands, that, 'after a proper trial, a commiſſion of 'lunacy had been awarded againſt him 'by the Lord Chancellor. He ſaid 'that was, he believed, too true; but 'the acts of lunacy had been proved 'upon him at a time when the afore-'ſaid potions had rendered him for 'ſome time incapable of managing his 'affairs, and returning proper anſwers 'to the queſtions that were aſked him; 'that he had friends, who, if he had 'an opportunity to ſee them, would 'help him in his application to his 'lordſhip for a reviſal of his caſe, and 'which could be no otherwiſe effected 'than by my affording him my aſſiſt-'ance to make his eſcape to London. 'His behaviour the next day ſo tho-'roughly convinced me that he had 'been impoſed upon, that I told him I 'was reſolved to aſſiſt his eſcape that 'very evening. His acknowledg-'ments were couched in terms of the 'moſt extreme gratitude; and, my 'confidence in him having given him 'the uſe of his arms, he preſſed me 'between them, and proteſted that he 'would not, he could not, enjoy the 'fortune I was returning into his 'hands, unleſs I would promiſe to 'ſhare it with him. In ſhort, Mr. 'Thompſon, his perſon, his manner, 'and a ſecret inclination my heart 'could not help, confeſſing towards 'ſo much merit and good-ſenſe as he 'ſeemed to be maſter of, dictated a 'reply ſuitable to his wiſhes; and, 'when I had told him my own ſtory, 'he ſaid he could not help obſerving, 'that Providence had undoubtedly ap-'pointed, by our thus meeting, a pe-'riod to each of our misfortunes. It 'was but an hour before Mr. Ludlam's 'arrival that I privately opened a way 'for him through the back-door of 'our houſe, and that of the garden, 'whence, after a tender embrace, I 'ſaw him, ſwift as his condition and 'ill-habit of body would permit, ſet 'off for London, over the neighbour-'ing fields, after I had aſſiſted him in 'tearing the ſheets of his bed, and 'wrenching the bars of the window 'to which he tied them, to make it 'appear that he had made his eſcape 'without any aſſiſtance. Mr. Lud-'lam returned in the utmoſt pain for 'his forgetfulneſs, and was very ready 'to charge me with part of the fault; 'but when, upon going up ſtairs, 'he perceived what had happened, he 'curſed and ſwore like a madman; 'and, but for the expedition he thought 'himſelf obliged to uſe in the purſuit 'of Mr. Goodwill, would, I believe, 'have done me ſome miſchief in his 'paſſion. He returned, however, jad-'ed and fatigued, the next morning, 'not being able, to my great joy, to 'overtake or diſcover the runaway; 'and immediately diſpatched an ex-'preſs to the brother in Yorkſhire with 'an account of his misfortune, and 'the next day put an advertiſement in 'the papers, deſcribing Mr. Good-'will's perſon, and promiſing a re-'ward to whoever ſhould bring him 'back. For ſome days after this, in 'which his revenge was directed againſt 'me, to whom, in ſpite of all the re-'monſtrances of his wife, he had given 'warning, and reſolved that I ſhould 'ſtay there no longer, for my neglect, 'as he called it, we heard nothing of 'Mr. Goodwill; but one evening a 'coach and ſix ſtopped, and to my 'tranſported view was preſented that 'gentleman himſelf with another, 'alighting and entering through the 'gate. I flew to open the inner-door, 'and, the minute he entered, he clapſed 'me fondly in his arms, and told his 'companion, in me he might behold 'his guardian-angel and preſerver, to 'whom he owed his life and fortune; 'adding, "I came, my dear creature, "with the utmoſt expedition, to make "you a ſharer in my happineſs: my "Lord Chancellor, convinced by my "appearance, and the teſtimony of "this good and worthy gentleman, "and ſome other friends, how much "he had been impoſed upon, and how "ill I have been treated, has recalled "his commiſſion, and re-inſtated me "in the poſſeſſion of what I had been "ſo villainouſly deprived of; and I "have yeſterday directed a proſecution "to be commenced againſt the parties, "who have injured me ſo groſsly, whom "I don't fear of bringing to condign "puniſhment. I recollected the obli-"gations you ſaid you were under to "Mrs. Ludlam, and on that account "have declined any proceedings againſt "the villain her huſband, on condi-"tion he becomes a witneſs againſt "my brother, and the other conſpi-"rators." Mr. Ludlam, who had

'juſt come to the door, and perceived 'how matters had been carried, and 'heard theſe laſt words, fell upon his 'knees, and confeſſed the ſhare he 'had had in this ſtate of roguery, and 'that he had undertaken to give him 'ſuch things as were ſent for that 'purpoſe, and very bad uſage, to de-'prive him, as ſoon as poſſible, of his 'life. Some things he added, that 'had paſſed between the brother and 'him, which made the two gentlemen 'lift up their eyes in the utmoſt aſto-'niſhment at his unparalleled wicked-'neſs. They gave him proper advice 'upon the occaſion, and he was ſo 'affected with what was ſaid, that he 'promiſed a ſincere reformation of his 'life, and proteſted a deteſtation of 'the many crimes of this ſort he had 'been guilty of. Mr. Goodwill, af-'ter beſtowing a handſome preſent 'upon my good miſtreſs, of whom I 'took a moſt tender adieu, carried me 'with him to London; where, the 'morning after our arrival, he mar-'ried me, and I have ever ſince, with 'that moſt excellent of men, enjoyed 'a life of perfect bliſs and ſatisfac-'tion. We have been at this ſeat 'about three months, and underſtand 'that the conſpirators, fearful of abid-'ing the iſſue of the law, before they 'could be ſecured, have fled over into 'France, where my ſpouſe thinks to 'leave them to the remorſe of their 'own conſciences, without carrying 'his juſt reſentment farther againſt 'them; nay, has even privately re-'mitted ſome monies for the uſe of 'his wretched brother; ſo merciful 'and forgiving is his diſpoſition! Mr. 'Ludlam is altered for the better, 'and behaves with more decorum to 'his good wife, with whom I even now 'take a pleaſure to correſpond.—And 'thus, Mr. Thompſon, I have recited 'this ſurprizing ſeries of events. My 'huſband knows nothing of our for-'mer familiarities, which is the only 'circumſtance I ever hid from his 'knowledge; and your prudence will 'direct your behaviour ſo properly, 'as neither to give him or myſelf any 'uneaſineſs. I dare anſwer for it your 'principles are not altered, that you 'poſſeſs the ſame veneration for virtue 'I knew you once did, and which I 'am ſorry we ever offended; which, 'more than any thing, will ever en-'gage me to beg a ſhare of your 'friendſhip, and to endeavour, on all 'occaſions, to ſhew you how much I 'think myſelf obliged to promote your 'intereſt and welfare both by my own 'good offices and thoſe of my ſpouſe. 'I ſhall be glad to know by what ac-'cident you came into the cruel con-'dition my huſband found you in, 'and whether you ſtill purſue the pro-'feſſion I left you engaged in.'

CHAP. XXIX.

HE SATISFIES MRS. GOODWILL'S ENQUIRIES—SHE ENGAGES TO TAKE FIDELE INTO HER SERVICE—MR. DIAPER ARRIVES, WITH WHOM HE RETURNS TO HIS FATHER'S—RECEIVES A LETTER FROM LOUISA—HIS FRIEND AND HE SET OUT FOR LONDON—THEY ARRIVE AT MR. BELLAIR'S.

THUS this worthy woman concluded her narration, which gave me infinite pleaſure: I was grieved at the hardſhips ſhe had gone through, and ſincerely congratulated her on her preſent happineſs, which, indeed, ſeemed without the leaſt alloy to adulterate it. We both took occaſion to admire the ways of Providence, 'puzzled in 'mazes, and perplexed with errors;' nor could I forbear repeating the following lines of the ſame excellent poet upon the occaſion—

'Our underſtanding traces them in vain,
'Loſt and bewilder'd in the fruitleſs ſearch;
'Nor ſees with how much art the windings
'run,
'Nor where the regular confuſion ends.'

I began to be more reſigned to the diſpenſations of Heaven, perceiving by this recital, which illuſtrated many former obſervations, that our deſigns and counſels are far from being able to produce the effects we deſire, unleſs Providence at the ſame time ſuperintends and approves our plans of action; and that we ſhould never repine at the little accidents or rubs we meet with in purſuit of our wiſhes, ſeeing they may in the end be productive of the very things we think them moſt retrograde and contrary to.

I thanked her for her profeſſions of regard

regard to me, with warmth and fervour, and related my former adventures, in as brief a manner as poſſible to her, enlarging upon what had lately happened, and my affection for the charming Louiſa. She condoled with me upon the croſſes that had befallen us in our loves; but, at the ſame time, comforted me, by repreſenting how much I ought to be ſatisfied in the prudence and conſtancy of that lady, and her promiſes of being no other's than mine; that all the ſallies of rage and paſſion I had been guilty of, had been an injury to the opinion I ought to entertain of her, and, inſtead of farthering my wiſhes, had involved me in the greateſt danger and diſtreſſes. I was convinced of the truth of what this excellent woman ſaid, and reſolved for the future to act with more caution and regard to my Louiſa's inſtructions. She then took notice of what I had related of the grief of Fidele at her being ſeparated from her miſtreſs, and obligingly told me, that ſhe would take her under her care, if I would permit her, till her lady was in a capacity to receive her again into her ſervice. I was charmed with this offer, as I was under a little dilemma, as to the manner I ſhould diſpoſe of that faithful girl, whom my lovely maid had ſo ſtrongly recommended to my protection, knowing that my father would be too delicate in an affair of this nature, to let her continue about my mother, who otherwiſe I was ſure would have been proud of the opportunity of keeping Fidele with her. Mr. Goodwill, by this time, returned, and the converſation became general; amongſt other matters, he ſaid, he was glad to underſtand I was his countryman; that he recollected to have ſeen my father, whom he wiſhed for an opportunity to revive his acquaintance with, and hoped, wherever I ſettled for the future part of my life, I would join with him and Mrs. Goodwill, in maintaining a friendſhip and correſpondence with each other. I was too much honoured by ſuch a propoſal to hear it without the utmoſt returns of thankfulneſs I could make, by owning my ſenſe of ſo kind and to me intereſting a propoſal; for Mr. Goodwill, without diſpute, was a gentleman of a very large eſtate, and as conſiderable in his intereſt as moſt in the county. I diſcovered in this and other converſations I had with him, that he was a man of great ſenſe, nice diſcernment, and had acquired a knowledge of letters, that almoſt induced me to think he had ſpent the greateſt part of his life in a college. As I grew ſtill better and better, they took me with them in the chariot, and now and then on horſeback, and endeavoured, by all the amuſements they could invent, to chace away my melancholy, and inſpire me with my wonted health. In about a day and an half, my dear friend, who ſet out with the meſſenger the minute he received my account where I was, arrived, and his preſence ſeemed to caſt a new ſatisfaction over my mind, that ſoon helped me to overcome my remaining weakneſs. Our meeting was very tender and affectionate, and he expreſſed his grief at ſeeing ſo viſible an alteration in my countenance; but, when he heard from me every minute circumſtance of the cruelties that Squire Rich had acted upon me, he was all diſtraction, and it was with difficulty I could reſtrain him from going immediately in ſearch of the villain, to bring him to immediate puniſhment for his repeated crimes. He was received by my friends with great diſtinction and reſpect, they having underſtood by me his worth, and the mutual friendſhip that ſubſiſted between us; and they ſpared no device to make our abode agreeable and entertaining to us. I gave him a ſuccinct account of the adventures of this happy pair, which gave him prodigious pleaſure, and opened a field for many excellent obſervations, by all which he eſſayed to convince me of the unreaſonableneſs and folly of my late behaviour. I was curious to know how my father and mother took my ſudden diſappearing, upon which he informed me, that they were both under a conſternation that is inexpreſſible, when they underſtood the motives and manner of my ſetting out, which Fidele was able to give them an idea of: as to his part, he ſaid, he had rode in ſearch after me every way, and had employed two or three days in vain and teazing efforts to find me; but that nothing could equal the dread and apprehenſions of their foreboding ſouls, when my horſe, which had been ſtopped by a neighbouring farmer, who had ſeen me ride

him, was brought home without his rider. My mother fainted, and Fidele wrung her hands in the utmoſt agony; my father, to whom, at that time, my friend was diſcloſing my amour, which he thought it now neceſſary to do, was ſtruck with fear at what might have happened to me, and diſpatched meſſengers every way, but to no purpoſe, to diſcover where I was, or what accident might have befallen me; and every one was inconſolable in the family till my letter arrived, which, notwithſtanding my injunctions, he thought proper to communicate to my father and mother, which raiſed their drooping hearts. He farther informed me, that Sir Walter had not returned to his ſeat, ſince he went from it, which was the day of my own departure; that my father was quite grieved at my imprudence in involving myſelf in a paſſion for Miſs Louiſa before I was ſettled in the world; but more particularly blamed me for my raſhneſs, and want of temper, in the purſuit of it: however, he believed, he ſaid, that he was ſecretly inclined to favour my pretenſions, as well from affection to me, as his veneration for the lovely and deſerving object of my flame, whoſe great merit and beauty, he could not help privately owning, were a ſufficient inducement for my acting as I had done.

Two days after my friend's arrival, being now able to take the journey, we took leave of Mr. Goodwill and his lady, not without loading them with ſincere and hearty acknowledgments for the favours and kindneſſes we had received, and making proteſtations, on all ſides, to continue our friendſhip and acquaintance, accompanied on our parts with repeated promiſes of waiting upon them again in the country, or as ſoon as they arrived at their houſe in London. In the evening we alighted at my father's, and the ſight of that neighbourhood well-nigh plunged me into my former melancholy, and drew a profound ſigh from the bottom of my heart. My mother received me like one riſen from the dead; and poor Fidele, who had ſtaid with her ever ſince, was in extaſies at ſeeing me again. My father received me alſo with great affection, but mingled his expreſſions of joy for my ſafe arrival with animadverſions upon my folly, in ſuffering myſelf to be driven to ſuch headſtrong actions by my paſſion, which, however, he generouſly ſaid he had not the power to condemn, but only let me know that he thought I ought at leaſt to have been freed from the obligation I was under to my maſter, before I had ſuffered love to make ſuch an alteration in me; concluding with rules for the future government of my tranſports, and injunctions to wait the happy moment, which he ſaid might probably arrive, when Sir Walter might be induced, by his daughter's ſolicitations, and a view of my increaſing worth and merit, to return to his former eſteem of me, and conſent to make me his ſon-in-law. I kiſſed his hand at this flattering concluſion, which ſeemed to revive my expectations of happineſs, and reſolved, as near as poſſible, to conform myſelf to the rules he had laid down. Fidele and my mother both approved of her going to ſtay with Mrs. Goodwill, where, accordingly, ſhe went, carrying a letter of compliments from me, and another of thanks from my father, for their goodneſs to me, after I had made her a handſome preſent in money, and promiſed her ſhe ſhould never be at a loſs for a friend, till I could reſtore her to my Louiſa. She had not been gone above two hours, when a man, in Sir Walter's livery, delivered me a letter, which I immediately diſcovered, to my equal amazement and joy, was the writing of my charming Louiſa. Finding, by it, I was not to return an anſwer, I rewarded the ſervant for his fidelity to his young lady, in the moſt generous manner, and ventured to aſk him if he knew where the ſquire was gone; and he informed me he was at a neighbouring ſeat to that where my Louiſa reſided, where he ſtill lived with Sir Walter, without making any progreſs with his couſin. I was concerned the diſtance gave me no liberty to chaſtiſe this ſcoundrel; but it was impoſſible, and I pleaſed myſelf with the thoughts of ſome future opportunity of gratifying my juſt and equitable reſentment. Never was mortal ſo inſpired as I was by the receipt of this reviving letter, which I kiſſed and hugged to my boſom, with enthuſiaſtick raptures! Oh, the melting ſoftneſs conveyed in every line! the tender

der fears! the earneſt wiſhes for our happy return to each other! diſſolved my very ſoul away. She informed me of her health, and that her father, content with having removed her from me, allowed her more liberty than ſhe could have expected at her firſt arrival; that ſhe had engaged this ſervant to bring me that letter, to which ſhe deſired I would not think of returning an anſwer, as it might occaſion, by a diſcovery, ſtill more unhappineſs to her: ſhe ſweetly endeavoured to chace away any diſtruſt of her truth and conſtancy, which might dwell upon my mind; and ſuppoſed, ſoon after I could receive this, I ſhould be obliged to return to London, where ſhe adviſed me to live as happily as poſſible, till ſome future good fortune ſhould put it in our power to ſatisfy the motions of our hearts. Such a pleaſing ſatisfaction and calm ſucceeded the receipt of theſe welcome unexpected lines, that could be equalled by nothing but that eaſe the ſight of my Louiſa herſelf would have inſpired, which gave my father and mother, and my friend, a great deal of joy; and now the time of our departure, according to my worthy maſter's inſtructions, was near expired, and Mr. Diaper was eager to viſit his Miſs Bellair, where, according to promiſe, we were to ſpend a week, which I could not refuſe to this excellent aſſociate. Before we ſet out, we viſited Mr. Goodwill and his lady once more, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, and took a farewel of all our friends, who regretted our departure. A thouſand times I viſited, alſo, every retreat about Sir Walter's, where I had been ſo bleſſed in my Louiſa, and ſighed her name in every conſcious grove! I went to the poor family ſhe had once carried me to ſee, whom I found in grief for the loſs of their benefactreſs, whoſe place, at preſent, I endeavoured to ſupply, by giving the good woman a ſum of money for her immediate purpoſes, and promiſing to ſee them at my return into the country. My mother's tenderneſs gave her great pain in this ſeparation; but, when Mr. Diaper and myſelf both aſſured her that we would obtain leave to take another tour, in four or five months, ſhe was, in ſome meaſure, comforted. My father was alſo moved at parting with us; and, indeed, we were now ſo naturalized to the country, that we could hardly bear the thoughts of leaving it ourſelves. Our embraces and adieus were ſenſibly touching, and we ſet out with my father, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, who would inſiſt upon ſeeing us ſome miles on our way; but which only ſerved to give us freſh torment, in going through the ſame tender ſcene once more.

Now left to ourſelves, nothing but love filled our thoughts, and we rode a conſiderable ſtage without breaking the ſilence our contemplations occaſioned. The difference, indeed, between my friend's reflections and mine was great; he was, with eager wiſhes, longing expectations, in the proſpect of throwing himſelf at the feet of his lovely Bellair, whilſt I was deploring the immenſe diſtance that ſtill divided me from my Louiſa, and the various obſtacles I had to ſurmount, before I could even promiſe myſelf the happineſs of ſeeing that adorable creature. Thus differently were we employed, till we arrived at Mr. Bellair's, where we were received with more rejoicing and civilities than can well be expreſſed.

CHAP. XXX.

A GENEROUS PROPOSAL OF MR. BELLAIR'S—MR. DIAPER HAPPY IN THE VIEW OF HIS FUTURE BLISS—THE TENDER PARTING OF THE TWO LOVERS—THEY SET OUT FOR LONDON—ARRIVE THERE—ARE MOST AFFECTIONATELY RECEIVED BY MR. AND MRS. DIAPER.

THIS amiable and worthy pair ſtudied how they could teſtify their pleaſure at our long expected viſit; and Miſs Sukey, whoſe charms were more and more improved ſince I laſt ſaw her, contrived a thouſand little entertainments for her lover, to fix him as long as poſſible with her. Our converſations rolled upon the ſeveral accidents we had met with in the country; and Mr. Diaper having jocularly told Miſs Bellair that I was as much a captive to love, ſince ſhe ſaw me, as himſelf, it opened a way for me to gratify theſe good and kind friends with a character of my Louiſa, and a detail of my paſt misfortunes, and the griefs

griefs that at this time oppreſſed my heart. 'After all you have ſaid,' cries Mr. Bellair, 'I don't ſee you 'have ſo much occaſion for deſpair as 'you imagine; your principal diffi-'culty ſeems to lie in gaining Sir 'Walter's conſent to your happineſs, 'which you imagine want of fortune 'will render an impoſſibility. As to 'that, I believe I may ſoon promiſe 'you a remedy, which I here vow I 'will adminiſter with the utmoſt ſatis-'faction. I expect, by the death of 'an uncle in Leiceſterſhire, who is 'every day likely to deceaſe, an in-'creaſe to my eſtate, already large 'enough for this lady and myſelf, of '1100l. a year. If I were to make 'this privately over to you for ſome 'years, which I proteſt I ſhall find 'no regret in doing, would you con-'ſent to make an acknowledgment, 'by paying your friend here 2000l. 'as an increaſe of my ſiſter's fortune, 'as ſoon as it comes into your hands? 'The term ſhall be twelve or fourteen 'years, then to be reſumed by me or 'my heirs, paying a proper conſider-'ation upon the death of Sir Walter, 'for the uſe of the money ariſing from 'the income of the ſaid eſtate, which 'alſo ſhall be applied to the uſe of 'Mr. Diaper and my ſiſter, or their 'children. What doſt ſay, Thomp-'ſon?' added he, 'I love you ſo 'much, that you ſhall be welcome to 'the poſſeſſion of it, as ſoon as it 'falls; and then, I fancy, with that 'ſtock of merit, ſo much in requeſt, 'Sir Walter will give ear to your ſuit.'

As I knew this propoſal was not merely dictated by mirth, but would have been put in practice, upon my deſiring it, as ſoon as it was in Mr. Bellair's power, I returned him thanks with a mixture of ſerioufneſs and jeſt; and told him I would take as much time to conſider of it, as would paſs between this and the death of his uncle.

We hunted, fiſhed, and made frequent parties of pleaſure, whilſt we ſtaid at this gentleman's; and both himſelf and his lady endeavoured to baniſh that ſettled, mournful gloom, that conſtantly, notwithſtanding all my efforts to the contrary, was impreſſed upon my countenance. As to Mr. Diaper, he was as happy as a man can be, who enjoys the company of the object of his love; and ſeemed now to have nothing to fear that could hinder his approaching marriage, which he was to get his father's conſent to the minute he arrived in town, and where Mr. Bellair and his family propoſed to repair in a month's time at fartheſt. Miſs Sukey was entirely pleaſed in her choice; and upon his mentioning his father's late loſs, which ſo much affected him, told him, an increaſe or decreaſe in his fortune was never capable of making the leaſt impreſſion, to his prejudice, in her boſom; that ſhe did not doubt of being happy with him, and that riches had no ſhare in the affection ſhe profeſſed for him. Her ſentiments were agreeable, in that, to her brother's and ſiſter's, who often told my friend, that half what he was likely to poſſeſs was enough to make two reaſonable beings happy.

The time of our departure came. My friend had perceived it's approach with pain, and was now quite afflicted at the thoughts of leaving his miſtreſs; who, on her ſide, alſo, was full of anxiety and uneaſineſs, which ſhe could not conceal. I have thought ſince, that Providence permits us to receive ſome foreboding hints of the ills that are likely to be our portion. I have often, before ſome ſiniſter event, found a heavineſs and dulneſs, a grief dwelling with me, that I could not account for, juſt before the blow has fallen upon my head. All the fair proſpects theſe tender lovers had of their felicity, which ſeemed ſo near in it's approach, could not conſole them for this ſeparation, and ſighs and tears involuntarily flowed! Alas! too ſure a preſage of the gathering ſtorms, that were threatening to diſcharge their force upon them!

Mr. Bellair and his ſpouſe, by their diſcompoſure in parting with us, convinced us how dear we were to them; and I could not help feeling a certain unſpeakable regret when I took my leave. We ſet out, and, nothing particular happening the remainder of our journey, we arrived in London, in perfect health of body, but with other minds than we had carried thence, after an abſence of ſeven months and a few days.

When we came home, the ſervants hardly knew us, our faces were ſo tanned; nay, honeſt Prig, who happened

to

to be there at our entrance, ſwore we had made a voyage into the South Seas, and had brought home the duſky hue of the Spaniſh Indies. My maſter and miſtreſs received us with the utmoſt affection, and endeavoured every way to ſhew how much they were pleaſed in our punctual compliance with our orders to return. We viſited our acquaintance, and began to reſume our ſeveral departments in buſineſs, which, from ſo long a diſuſe, appeared at firſt very aukward to us.

CHAP. XXXI.

HE GROWS MELANCHOLY—HIS MASTER SUFFERS ANOTHER GREAT LOSS—HIS FRIEND'S DISTRESS THEREON — LETTER TO HIM FROM MISS SUSANNA BELLAIR—MR. DIAPER WRITES TO MR. THOMPSON ON ACCOUNT OF HIS SON'S CONDITION—HIS FATHER WRITES HIM A LETTER WHICH INCREASES HIS DISORDER—MR. DIAPER FAILS—BEHAVIOUR OF THAT WORTHY MAN UPON THE UNFORTUNATE OCCASION—HE GIVES THOMPSON HIS INDENTURES, ACCOMPANIED WITH PROPER ADVICE.

MY maſter, ſoon after our arrival, ſet out for Briſtol, to inſpect into the affairs of Mr. Traffick, where he ſtaid near a fortnight; but found things ſo bad, that himſelf, and the reſt of the creditors, were obliged to accept of five ſhillings in the pound for their demands; which, as that gentleman made it appear to their ſatisfaction, that his misfortunes flowed from no perſonal bad conduct, but from unavoidable loſſes in trade, they made no difficulty of, and ſuffered him to enter into buſineſs again; my maſter, in the moſt generous manner imaginable, giving him freſh credit.

My mind ſo dwelt, ever ſince my return from the country, upon my charming Louiſa, and repreſented the difficulties I had to encounter to procure the enjoyment of that lovely maid, and the diſtance ſhe was at from me, with the poſſibility of her being induced, by abſence and threats, to forſake me, in ſuch gloomy and torturing lights, that I fell into ſo black and profound a melancholy, as alarmed the whole family for my ſafety; in vain were all the reaſons of my friends, vain were the various avocations buſineſs provided, or the ſeveral amuſements the goodneſs of Mr. Diaper ſuffered us to partake of: nothing could remove my fixedneſs of thought from objects of ſo terrifying a caſt, on which I was brooding perpetually, with an intenſeneſs that ſhattered my brain. I forgot to correſpond with my friends, and hardly ever wrote to any but my mother, whom I peſtered with enquiries of Louiſa, from time to time, which ſhe was utterly incapable to anſwer; and were, ſome of them, ſo abſurd and ridiculous, that the excellent woman wrote me word often, ſhe was fearful my head was diſordered, and gave me very proper advice to moderate my grief and diſturbance, which ſhe ſo plainly perceived, but which I was now incapable of attending to. Life hung upon me, and became a burden; I had entertained a notion that it was impoſſible I ſhould ever be happy: hope, with all it's encouraging train of ſmiling promiſes, had forſaken my breaſt, and the curſed fiend Deſpair tyrannically ruled there, with deſpotick ſway: tears, involuntarily, would frequently trickle from my eyes, and whole hours I uſed to ſit moping in my apartment, and quite ſtupid with the indulgence I gave to my ſorrows. My health declined apace, and I became a mere ſhadow of my former ſelf, to the great concern of my maſter and miſtreſs, and the grievous affliction of my dear friend, who was reduced almoſt to the ſame ſtate by his ſenſibility of what I ſuffered: alas! as great torments were in ſtore for the generous youth; he, too, was deſtined to undergo his ſhare of pain; and a blow our affairs received, about this time, rouzed me from my inattention to what paſſed in the world, and made my conſolations as neceſſary to him, as his had been to me. Of three veſſels, the cargoes of which were Mr. Diaper's, we every day expected to arrive from the Streights, with rich returns of merchandize, two of them were taken by Sallee Rovers, and carried into that den of pirates, where they were confiſcated by thoſe rapacious Barbarians. This was ſuch a loſs as obliged us immediately to ſtop our payments, in

ſuch

ſuch a manner, that our credit ſuffered greatly; and it well nigh obliged Mr. Diaper to ſhut up his ſhop. He bore it himſelf like a Chriſtian and a philoſopher; he could accuſe himſelf of nothing that could impeach his character, and it was an accident that all the foreſight in the world could not have guarded againſt: the ſhips were not inſured, and therefore there was no remedy for the diſaſter, and he was forced patiently to ſit down with the total loſs of near 20,000l. My friend, however, would receive no comfort; it was the death to all thoſe flattering, deluſive hopes he had entertained of his uninterrupted happineſs with his dear Bellair. His father had given his conſent to the match, had, as a prelude to it, taken him into partnerſhip with him, and he was to have ſet out in a month to make that beauty his own. He himſelf had as contemptible an opinion of wealth as it deſerves; but his ambition centered ſolely in making her rich and happy, and extending the agreeable views of independency and fortune to their future offſpring. No wonder if the abortion of all theſe ſchemes, and the loſs of ſo engaging proſpects, ſhould give him the ſevereſt tortures! I, on my ſide, could not but reflect that the misfortune was alſo greatly mine; all my hopes now of being taken into the partnerſhip, which my worthy maſter, as well as his ſon, had promiſed me I ſhould, were in a manner extinct, and I deſpaired, more than ever, of poſſeſſing my Louiſa. Fortune ſeemed to obſtruct me in all my views and deſigns; but I bore up under it, with more conſtancy than I could ever flatter myſelf I ſhould be able to do; and applied myſelf, by all the means in my power, to comfort my young maſter; but he was inconſolable, and, in the firſt agonies of his ſoul, wrote word to Miſs Sukey of the bitter loſs, in terms of mingled love and deſpair. I cannot help giving the world the remarkable anſwer he received from that lady, which in ſome meaſure, when every thing elſe failed, reſtored him to ſome reliſh for life.

'DEAR SIR,

'I Received your melancholy letter, 'with a ſincere grief and ſenſibi-'lity of your late misfortunes; but 'don't miſtake me, it was not occa-'ſioned at all by my being likely to 'ſuffer by the blow; far from it, my 'love for Mr. Diaper was built upon 'other foundations than the hopes of 'riches, or the blandiſhments of for-'tune; your perſonal merit, Sir, your 'worth, your virtue, and good ſenſe, 'were the inducements to give you 'my heart, and no accident of this 'kind can ever deprive you of it. A 'little, Sir, a very little portion of 'wealth is ſufficient to make a pair 'of reaſonable creatures happy; or, 'we will ſuppoſe you ſtripped of the 'common needs of life, yet I can be 'pleaſed and happy, whilſt I am ſen-'ſible your mind is the ſame. If we 'muſt defer our union longer on this 'account, let us bear it with becoming 'patience, and depend upon it nothing 'ſhall ever alter my ſentiments towards 'you, or alienate my affection from 'you, which is too pure to ſuffer de-'cay. My fortune you are acquaint-'ed with already, and I hope you will 'think it ſomewhat more than a com-'pliment, when, with my brother's 'leave, I deſire you would take it, 'even juſt now, into your hands, if 'any application of it can be of ſer-'vice to you; I will make you my 'ſteward and guardian, but only take 'notice of this, that you will be 'obliged to provide ſome how for the 'owner, if it ſhould not thrive in 'your hands, but follow the fortune 'of what you have already loſt. Dear 'Sir, let me deſire you to exerciſe the 'ſame reſignation to the will of Pro-'vidence that I do, and chearfully 'bear up under ills that cannot now 'be cured, but may in time be over-'come. Adieu for the preſent, and 'be aſſured, that Mr. Diaper is ever 'in the mind and thoughts of his af-'fectionate

'SUSANNA BELLAIR.'

'Diſintereſted creature! generous 'maid! may thy excellences prove a 'pattern to thy ſex, and atone for 'the faults of a thouſand leſs worthy 'fair-ones! Curſed be the pen that 'prophanes the glorious, the reſplend-'ent kind, with malicious ſlander or 'envenomed ſatire! May that writer, 'who arraigns them all without di-'ſtinction, never be revived by their

'chearing

'chearing graces! may their delicate 'ſoftneſs of ſoul, and innate genero-'ſity, never ſoothe his black, his 'gloomy ideas, or chace away his 'meditative ſpleen! Come, ye balmy 'influences, ye beings breathing in-'effable delight and fair unclouded 'peace, in all your radiant beauties, 'and gild each duſky ſcene of mortal 'woe! Tranſported with the know-'ledge of your faithfulneſs and truth, 'your natural rectitude of ſentiment, 'your nice diſcernment, and the joys 'you diffuſe around you, I, raptured, 'hail that great creating Power, 'whoſe works were chearleſs dark, 'till you were formed, for ſuch a pre-'cious valued gift as you. It was 'then that lordly man began to live, 'began to taſte of happineſs, ſur-'paſſed by none but that of Heaven 'itſelf! it was you refined his groſs 'material frame, and taught the every 'art that meliorates our ſouls; you 'are the fountains whence all the '*ſweet civilities of life* derive their 'ſpring and ſource! Pain, with all 'it's writhing pangs, it's fell diſtor-'tions, vaniſhes before your gladden-'ing ſmiles; and carking care, corrod-'ing melancholy, with all it's brood-'ing train of dark chimeras, fly your 'enlivening glances!

"Oh, woman! lovely woman! nature form'd
"you
"To temper man, we had been brutes with-
"out you."

My friend was no ſooner reſtored to himſelf, than, as if we were alternately to want each other's aid, I drooped again, and reſigned myſelf, with more violence than before, to all the gloom my dark ideas ſpread around me; which went ſo far as to render me al-moſt incapable even of buſineſs, or common converſation. My maſter, good man, who uſed all his art to draw me from my untoward ſtate, by reaſon and argument, and who partly gueſſed the condition of my mind, by what he had heard paſs between me and his ſon at ſeveral times, thought he ought to neglect no longer informing my father of my ſituation, and his fears of the conſequences; and accordingly wrote him word, that if he thought the coun-try would contribute to reſtore me to myſelf, however he wanted me in Lon-don, I ſhould have liberty to return into Yorkſhire for ſome time. I was not apprized of this, till one morning he gave me a letter from home, which came incloſed in an anſwer to him; which, when he gave me, he told me he feared it contained ſome news that would be very ſhocking to me; but put me in mind, that we were with pa-tience to bear the misfortunes Heaven permitted to fall upon us, and not by idle murmurs againſt it's diſpenſations, or a too great indulgence of ſorrow, to provoke ſtill more it's diſpleaſure. I was ſtunned with this preface, but, O heaven and earth! what was my ſitua-tion when I read the following lines!

'MY DEAR SON,

'WHEN I reflect upon the vanity 'and frailty of all mortal joys, 'the uncertainty of life, the pains we 'daily, hourly, ſtruggle with, the 'damp that ſucceeds our full-blown 'hopes, and the brevity of our exiſt-'ence here, how much I deſpiſe the 'avidity and eagerneſs we expreſs in 'our worldly purſuits! *Man that is 'born of a woman hath but a ſhort 'time to live, and is full of miſery*, is 'the ſentence that awaits us at our 'births, and we feel the fatal effects 'of it, through the whole courſe of 'our pilgrimage. Let us, then, be re-'ſigned to the diſpoſal of that Being, 'who orders every thing aright, *and 'whoſe ways are paſt finding out*; let 'us preſs forward to the end of our 'race, and not ſuffer the accidents 'that befal us here, to diſconcert us 'in our purſuits of a happier and bet-'ter ſtate, which ſurely awaits us at 'the appointed time. Let us reflect 'that we are formed for ſuch purpoſes 'in this life, as immoderate grief and 'overbearing ſorrow will unfit us for; 'and that we commit the greateſt of 'crimes, if we incapacitate ourſelves 'for thoſe uſes for which Providence 'has deſigned us. You are young, 'you are capable of being ſerviceable 'to yourſelf and others; God has 'given you an upright mind and an 'underſtanding heart; ſtrive to exer-'ciſe thoſe gifts in a proper manner, 'by applying yourſelf to the duties 'of your profeſſion. I command you 'to do ſo as a father, I exhort you as 'a divine, I conjure you as a Chriſ-

'tian, and I call upon you as a philoſopher! Oh, my ſon! I muſt, notwithſtanding, confeſs my weakneſs as a man, and feel for you all the pains the mournful intelligence I am going to give you will occaſion you! Your poor Louiſa is no more—a fatal illneſs carried her to the joys of immortality, near a fortnight ago—in Somerſetſhire. All the country mourns the loſs of ſo much goodneſs and perfection, and your poor mother is inconſolable on her own account, and diſtracted for fear of the conſequences it may produce to you. We received this advice from Sir Walter himſelf, who ſays, now, he wiſhes ſome things had not happened, which he fears gave her great uneaſineſs: he ſeems to feel all the grief that a father muſt feel on ſuch an occaſion; and as he, of his own accord, ſent for me to acquaint me with the news, I endeavour all I can to conſole him. Remember, ſon, the wiſe conduct and excellent behaviour of that prudent maid we have ſo immaturely loſt; think how ſhe would have behaved, had ſhe heard the news of your deceaſe; ſhe would have mourned greatly, no doubt; but her ſentiments of religion, and her duty to God, were too ſtrongly impreſſed upon her mind to permit her to indulge her bewailings to a criminal exceſs. Look upon yourſelf as ſtill obliged to purſue the maxims I am ſure ſhe muſt have frequently laid down to you, and ſtrive to make up her loſs to the world, by copying all her virtues. Your maſter is under as great affliction for you as I am: conſider, he now wants your ſervice more than ever, and let your gratitude to him, your love of your worthy friend, your reſpect to me and your mother, and your own good, rouze you from unavailing ſorrow and impious complaints againſt the conduct of Providence. Sir Walter has diſcarded the ſquire; and, which is ſomewhat extraordinary, preſents his love to you, and wiſhes you would forget the injuries you have received from him. *I am, your ever-affectionate and tender father,*

'WILLIAM THOMPSON.'

The ravings of the damned, the howls of the tortured wretch in the vaults of the cruel Inquiſition, the ſtarts of the bewildered madman foaming in his fits of frenzy, methinks, could be no more than a picture of what I felt at the reading of this letter, which ſoon flung me into a violent fever, in the deliriums of which I inceſſantly called out upon my lovely and unfortunate Louiſa. I recovered, indeed, by the ſtrength of my conſtitution, the care of my phyſicians, and the kind attendance of the family, which was involved in more grief on my account, than on account of their own misfortunes: but my mind, quite jaded and fatigued, ſunk into a ſtate of ſtupid quietiſm, and I barely moved as it were by clock-work; and yet, that I might have ſtill an added weight of affliction, about this time, my dear-eſt maſter, preſſed on every ſide by his creditors, was forced to conſent to a *ſtatute of bankruptcy*, in which his ſon was joined. How ſerenely, with what fortitude this good man behaved under ſo grievous a calamity, would ſhame deſcription; he gave way to no fretful repinings, but ſeemed to meet the ruin of his affairs with a compoſure that aſtoniſhed every one that knew the happineſs and proſperity he had fallen from! If he had any great concern, it was on my friend's account; who, by this mortifying ſtroke, was reduced to a neceſſity of beginning the world anew, and who felt more pungent ſorrow than can be expreſſed. I was ſo afflicted at the ill fortune of this well-beloved family, with whoſe fate my own was ſo linked, that I was incapable either of giving or receiving comfort; and my maſter even deſcended ſo far, as to endeavour to moderate the tranſports of my ſorrow, with a tenderneſs that only ſerved to increaſe my trouble. When the commiſſioners had concluded their proceedings, every creditor received ſixteen ſhillings in the pound, and were ſo affected with the fairneſs, juſtice, and equity of Mr. Diaper's proceedings, and the regularity of his accounts, that they proffered to take half the ſum, if he would again enter into trade; but he was now advanced in years, and expreſſed ſo much averſion to launching out again into an ocean of difficulties, that

that they found it in vain to perſuade him, and therefore made my friend a preſent of three hundred guineas, in token of their reſpect. My maſter had ſtill his wife's jointure to live upon, which he ſaid would be abundantly ſufficient to make the remainder of his days happy, in a retreat, free from the noiſe, hurry, and uncertainties, of the buſy life he had led, and which now he was quite ſick of: it was near 200l. *per ann.* on which the creditors could form no pretenſions, and, indeed, were ſo far from doing it, that they made his lady a preſent of great part of her plate, and other valuable moveables. When all the infernal hurry of this affair was over, my maſter called me to him one morning, and thus addreſſed me. 'My dear 'Thompſon, you ſee the end of all 'my pains and care to provide, as I 'intended to do, for your friend, and 'the diſappointments that have ruined 'my ſchemes of happineſs; and that 'now I have left but juſt enough in 'the world to live in a genteel privacy 'with my family: alas! my dear, one 'of my greateſt troubles ſprings from 'the knowledge I have, that I cannot 'do the juſtice I intended to your me'rit, fidelity, and the affection you 'have ever ſhewn to me and mine, 'which, however, I hope Heaven will 'graciouſly reward in the future 'courſe of your life.' Here the good man wept, and my tears flowed without intermiſſion: I could juſt bring out, 'Oh, Sir—you are too kind—I 'don't deſerve a thought of yours 'ſhould be thrown away upon me; 'your misfortunes preſs me too hard! 'I ſhall never overcome them.'—'Say 'not ſo, child, I beſeech you,' he replied; and, after ſome pauſe, went on thus. 'I had fondly hoped to have 'made you for ever one of my family, 'as you know, by taking you into the 'buſineſs, which I ſhould then have 'retired from, and left to you and my 'ſon, whoſe love to you is greater 'than that of a brother; but you ſee 'Providence has otherwiſe diſpoſed of 'events, and we muſt reſt contented. 'My ſon, I find, is quite averſe to 'following his buſineſs, and I am 'making intereſt to get him to go to 'the Eaſt Indies, in quality of one of 'the Company's ſupercargoes; in which 'poſt he imagines he may have an op'portunity of acquiring another for'tune, ſufficient to make him happy 'with the young lady you are ac'quainted with. I will ever ſtudy to 'do you, my dear, all the ſervice I am 'capable of; and my intereſt in the 'world, I thank God, is not in the 'leaſt affected by my late diſaſter. I 'am ſenſible you muſt wait your good 'father's pleaſure, before you can 'determine as to your deſtination; 'and, till you hear from him, let my 'houſe in the country be your home: 'I here give you up your indenture, 'and ſet you free from all obligations 'of ſervitude; you have behaved too 'well for me to deny you the little 'time that is to run of the ſeven 'years, and I would not oblige you to 'ſerve any one elſe as an apprentice. 'I hope your mind will recover it's 'former ſerenity, and I adviſe you to 'take care of your conduct, ſeeing, 'if you enter into buſineſs, as I ſup'poſe you intend, you will find a fair 'character will ever be your greateſt 'good in all the dealings you will be 'engaged in. You are now your own 'maſter; and I hope you will behave 'in ſuch a manner, as to be an ho'nour and credit to me, a bleſſing to 'your parents, and of ſervice to man'kind.' My heart was ſo full, I could return no other anſwer, than my kiſſing his hand, and bathing it with my tears; and the idea of the total loſs of my friend's company (for I had never heard him mention his deſign of going abroad) was more than I could well bear. My miſtreſs and her ſon ſoon after entered the room, and gave me joy of my freedom; which I informed them was not a ſtate at all different from what I had ever enjoyed, from the firſt minute I was bound apprentice, by their kindneſs and goodneſs. Mr. Diaper would provide a ſupper upon the occaſion, and we ſpent the night as agreeably as we could be ſuppoſed to do after all the late occurrences.

CHAP. XXXII.

MR. DIAPER DISCOVERS HIS PURPOSE TO THOMPSON—HE TAKES LEAVE OF MISS BELLAIR—IS

ACCOMPANIED TO GRAVESEND BY THOMPSON AND PRIG—THEIR TENDER FAREWEL — HE EMBARKS FOR CHINA — MEETS WITH AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE AT BLACKWALL—HER STORY, AND DEATH — THEY SAVE A WOMAN FROM DROWNING — WHO SHE PROVES TO BE—SEQUEL OF HER STORY.

AS ſoon as my friend and myſelf were alone, I poured out my complaints of his unkindneſs to me, in deſigning to leave me alone and forlorn, to tempt the rage of angry ſeas, and tempeſtuous ſkies, with all the dangers of unuſual climates: he told me he had reſolved not to apprize me of it till he was ſure of the time of his going, as he could not bear to anticipate my uneaſineſs; that he had great conflicts with himſelf before he came to the reſolution of going abroad, but found it the readieſt way to regain the ſtate he had loſt, and to make himſelf, and his charming Bellair, happy. I told him I thought he had no occaſion to attempt, by this way, to acquire a fortune; that he might be ſure of Miſs Sukey's venturing all for his ſake, and that, as my father would, no doubt, put me into trade with five or ſix thouſand pounds, which ſhould be employed in our mutual behoof, with his father's ſet of cuſtomers, and our aſſiduity, we might ſoon be in a condition not to be deſpiſed. He embraced me at this offer, but deſired me not to diſſuade him from his reſolution; which only gave him pain, as he was to part from the object of his wiſhes, ſo dear a friend, and ſuch good parents: and then, reſuming a vivacity which had been long baniſhed from him, cried out, 'Come, my 'dear boy! I preſage that we ſhall 'both yet be compleatly happy, if 'you can but forget one fatal ſtroke, 'which I hope you will, before I ſee 'you again.' I was obliged, at length, to acquieſce, with a ſorrowful heart, to his reſolves, and attended him to take leave of Miſs Bellair, who was come to town a few days ſince with her brother and his family, and he had already viſited them, and reluctantly brought her to conſent to his going. He was to embark in two days time, and was on the morrow to take his leave of the Directors, who had appointed him a very good ſtation, that of Canton in China. Their adieu was too tender for even the ſtanders-by to ſupport with dry eyes; and, after vows of eternal truth and conſtancy, they parted, but both of them, as well as Mr. Bellair and his ſpouſe, inſiſted I ſhould viſit them as often as I poſſibly could; which I promiſed, with a great deal of pleaſure. The parting between him and his parents was little leſs tender, and he ſet out the next evening, with myſelf and Prig, who were reſolved not to leave him till we ſaw the ſhip under ſail. We arrived at Graveſend at about ten o'clock at night, and he found, at the Swan, the reſt of his brother-ſupercargoes, who were appointed to the ſame ſhip, the ———, of thirty-two guns, and one hundred and fifty men, commanded by Captain Friendly. We ſpent two days here very agreeably, ſave that the continual gloom of my mind gave my friend great uneaſineſs, who charged Prig to be as much with me as poſſible, and endeavour, all he could, to divert my melancholy; telling him he ſhould expect his friend at his hands, ſafe and well, at his return. Prig, had, indeed, behaved, ever ſince our arrival from Yorkſhire, with ſo much friendſhip and reſpect, and his character was ſo much altered, that we both conceived a great value for him; which was heightened by the diſintereſted concern he had ſhewed in the late tranſactions of my maſter, who had been of great ſervice to him in his profeſſion. The wind ſhifting favourably, and every thing ready for ſailing, now began the taſk of parting, which we were both incapable to ſupport with the decency we had reſolved to ſupport it; we wept, and betrayed ſo much real ſorrow, as amazed all the ſtanders-by; rough, unpoliſhed ſeamen, who were not capable of the delicate ſenſations, ſo warm and lively a friendſhip as ours was capable of inſpiring. Far as our eyes could ſtrain, we marked each other, till the leſſening ſhip entirely mocked the ſight. A thouſand times I implored the merciful Ruler of the world to return him in ſafety to his friends embraces, and his native country, happy and proſperous! We returned to London by water, the next morning,

morning, in a boat we had hired for that purpoſe; and, paſſing by Blackwall, our curioſity led us on board a ſhip that was receiving the criminals, from three or four covered lighters, for tranſportation to the American colonies. As we were attentively viewing theſe unhappy, hardened wretches, as they came up the ſhip's ſide, a woman, in tattered weeds, all pale and wan, with the ſymptoms of death in her face, who was forced to be ſupported up the ſide by ſeveral ſailors, arreſted my ſight, and preſented the remains of a face, that, methought, I very well remembered, and ſoon recollected to be that of the perfidious and deſigning Nanny, who had ſerved me ſuch a trick, in conjunction with Packer, and laid the foundation of all my former diſquiets. Her condition, notwithſtanding, gave me pain, and ſhe no ſooner fixed her eyes on me, than ſhe fainted away. As ſoon as ſhe recovered her ſenſes, I would have gone away; but ſhe called me with a weak and hollow voice, and deſired to ſpeak to me. I approached her, and the poor creature fell upon her knees, and hoped I would forgive her for the injuries ſhe had formerly done me; to which I was going to reply, when one of the officers offered me the uſe of his cabbin, if the young woman had any thing to ſay to me; which I accepted, and ſhe crawled in after us, as well as ſhe could, where ſhe addreſſed herſelf to me in this manner. 'Oh, Sir! 'how ſhall I look you in the face, af'ter what you know of me! that vil'lain that firſt debauched me, ſoon af'ter you ſo juſtly abandoned me, left 'me in want and miſery, which obliged 'me to ſeek a ſubſiſtence by the moſt 'abhorred of ways, that of proſtitu'tion, at an houſe of ill fame in Co'vent Garden, where he had before 'often carried me, and would have 'perſuaded me to go to lodge. Here 'I was long ſubject to the loathſome 'embraces of all comers and goers, 'till a vile diſtemper obliged me to 'undergo a ſalivation; which, being 'unſkilfully managed, left me in a 'moſt deplorable condition, having to'tally ruined my complexion and 'conſtitution. Perfect want induced 'me, one night, to pick a gentleman's 'pocket, who paſſed through the 'Strand; for which fact I was tried 'at the Old Bailey, and am ordered 'for tranſportation, to which you 'may perceive I am going, with the 'reſt of theſe unhappy creatures. I 'am ſo ill now, that I can ſcarce ſup'port myſelf whilſt I tell you this, 'and hope a few hours will eaſe me 'of all my miſeries together, by 'death! I truſt I have made my peace 'with Heaven; and, if you will mer'cifully forgive me, I ſhall die with 'ſatisfaction.' She wept, and I told her I freely forgave her, and hoped, as ſhe had repented of her crimes, Heaven would forgive her too. She ſhewed the utmoſt joy at this; and, whilſt ſome refreſhments were providing, which we ordered for her, I aſked her if her father and mother were alive; but ſhe informed me they were both dead, and ſhe feared had broke their hearts at the bad courſes ſhe had taken; the remembrance of which drew a ſigh, which ſeemed to proceed from the bottom of her heart. We both gave her money, and hoped ſhe would live to make amends for her faults, and once more be happy; which words were hardly out of our mouths, when ſhe dropped down before us; and, upon ſtooping to raiſe her up, we found the unfortunate woman had breathed her laſt.

So ſudden an exit ſurprized us, and we could not help reflecting on the incident, as a freſh mark of the ſuperintendency of Providence, which had directed me to call on board that veſſel, by which I was able to ſpeak peace and comfort to the ſoul of this departing inſtance of it's diſpleaſure.

Our boat had ſcarce carried us half a mile from this melancholy ſcene of human wretchedneſs, when another boat, in paſſing us, ran foul of a ſhip's hawſer, and overſet, before we had even an opportunity to fix our eyes upon it, ſo much as to diſcern if there were any paſſengers in it; but we ordered our waterman to lie upon his oars, to be of what ſervice we poſſibly could, if there were any perſons in danger. Preſently a woman popped her head above water, at ſome diſtance from our ſtern; and, at the ſame time, the waterman came up, and began to ſwim towards us, and we ſoon took him in, whilſt the woman ſunk again,

before

before assistance could be given her, there happening to be no boat but ours near us at the time this unfortunate accident happened. We watched earnestly her rising the second time, which she did just at our boat's side, when I seized her by the arm, and supported her, with her head above water, till Prig and the waterman came to my assistance, and helped me to draw her in. She happened to be the only passenger, so that we applied ourselves to bring her to her senses, and held her up till she had voided a prodigious quantity of water, which she had swallowed; and then she began to revive, Mr. Prig having, with a penknife, very dextrously opened a vein in her arm. We ordered our man to row to the Surry shore; and, landing, the two watermen bore her between them to a publick-house, where we got the landlady to put her to bed, and were resolved to wait till she was somewhat recovered of her weakness, and to see her home, as she appeared, by her habit, to be no mean woman.

Towards noon she got up, and came down stairs into the room we were sitting in, and returned us her thanks in a very grateful manner, for having saved her life. I discovered, the minute I heard the voice, somewhat, methought, in the tone and manner of it, that was a little known to my ears; and when, thereupon, I looked her steadily in the face, we both mutually betrayed signs of amazement, I discovering my Vauxhall harlot once more, and she the benefactor who had relieved her after her being ducked by the mob a long time before. The confusion she was in, and the alteration her half-drowned condition had made in her face and cloaths, when she was in the boat, had hindered my recognition of her then; but now, I cried out, 'What, Mrs. Tripsey, once 'more obliged to me?' adding—'Why, 'my friend Prig, this, and the adventure before, would sound very 'romantically, if they were to be related—However, I'm glad to see 'you, Madam, so well habited, and 'hope you have forsaken your old 'courses.' She was so astonished, she could not speak for some minutes; but, at length, assumed courage, and addressed us thus.

SEQUEL OF THE STORY OF MRS. TRIPSEY.

'NOtwithstanding the bad usage, 'Sir, you received by my connivance, Heaven has made you my 'benefactor and saviour; at once you 'have saved me from present and future destruction, for your goodness, more than any thing else, determined me to forsake the vicious 'courses I was engaged in, and now 'you have given me my life: would 'to God, Sir, it were in my power to 'make you a proper return for these 'blessings! but, as I am sensible of the 'generosity of your mind, I know it 'will please you to hear that an unfortunate fellow-creature is raised, 'by your means, from the lowest 'depth of misery to happiness.

'No creature sure could be in greater 'distress of body, or under greater 'tortures of soul, than I was, when 'you saw me so cruelly used by the 'barbarous hands of the unrelenting 'mob. You generously relieved me 'from the first, and your kind exhortations, and the resolutions I made, 'consequent thereto, in great measure, 'calmed the latter. All that day I 'chose out the most unfrequented 'fields; and, by walking about, dried 'my cloaths upon my back, meanwhile pondering what I should take 'to for my future subsistence, and to 'support me free from the wretched 'ways I had used, and the company who 'had been my ruin. I came of good 'parents, who died some years before 'my lapse from goodness, leaving 'only myself and a brother, who was 'now, I knew, a substantial farmer in 'the county of Middlesex; but he 'had shewn so much detestation of 'me, on account of the courses I had 'taken, that I found no encouragement in the thought of flinging myself upon his mercy and protection. 'I was musing thus in my way, to 'town, and by the slowness of my 'motion, and want of attention to my 'way, to be sure, looked like one of 'those creatures I had formerly been; 'when a man on horseback, in the 'road, called to me in a familiar strain, 'and asked me, how I did, and if I 'would grant him a certain favour. 'I turned my eyes at the sound of the

'voice,

'voice, and perceived it was the very 'brother I had been thinking of ſo 'intently, though I was certain, from 'the great alteration a length of time 'had made, he could not poſſibly 'know me. I thought this meeting 'was providential, and was willing to 'humour the matter, to ſee what lengths 'he might poſſibly go, before he knew 'me; and accordingly with a ſhy air at-'tempted to croſs the road, at ſome diſ-'tance below him; on which he alight-'ed, and catching me by the arm, was 'going to uſe me ſomewhat roughly, 'for no paſſengers were coming by, 'when I cried, "Come, brother, you "are attempting to commit a greater "crime than you imagine!" Theſe 'words, and the ſound of my voice, 'ſtruck him all on an heap, and he was 'ſome time before he came to himſelf, 'when I fell on my knees, told him 'my forlorn condition, my late praiſe-'worthy reſolutions, and begged him 'to believe me, and ſhield me from 'vice and poverty!

'He melted, at length; and, raiſing 'me, carried me to a publick-houſe at 'ſome diſtance, where he diſplayed all 'that love and affection, which, though 'it may be for a time ſtifled, by little 'ruffles and accidents of life, yet 'muſt ſtill, one time or other, revive 'again, in the boſoms of near rela-'tions, let their miſconduct be ever 'ſo notorious, and got an horſe there 'for me to ride home with him upon. 'I underſtood his wife had been dead 'near a twelve-month, and had left 'him two children, the care of whom 'and his houſe became my province; 'where I have lived ever ſince, in the 'utmoſt calm and content, hoping God 'will accept my ſincere repentance 'and amendment, and graciouſly par-'don the numerous crimes I have 'committed. I was going to Green-'wich, when the late unfortunate ac-'cident happened to me, which you, 'Sir—and that gentleman—ſo gene-'rouſly relieved me from, for which I 'ſhall pray for eternal bleſſings on your 'heads.'

We were pleaſed with this ſhort nar-ration, careſſed her, and encouraged her in her purſuit of virtue and ſo-briety; and, after dinner, ſaw her into another boat, in which ſhe purſued her voyage; and we, full of the odd adven-tures we had met with, returned to London.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

JOE THOMPSON.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

MR. DIAPER AND HIS FAMILY RETIRE INTO THE COUNTRY—THOMPSON RETURNS FROM THENCE, AND TAKES A LODGING IN LONDON — ALMOST CONSTANTLY AT MR. BELLAIR'S—THE MANNER OF EMPLOYING THIS LEISURE TIME—HEARS FROM ARCHER—CONTRACTS AN AVERSION FOR WOMEN—VISITS A SUBURBIAN CLUB WITH MR. DEACON—ACCOUNT OF THAT ABSURD SET OF PEOPLE, AND THEIR CONVERSATION — RECEIVES A LETTER FROM MR. DIAPER, DATED LISBON.

SOON after I came to London, Mr. Diaper, having ſettled all his affairs, ſet out for his country-houſe, where he propoſed to ſpend the remainder of his days, and where I could not be excuſed from accompanying him. From thence I wrote to my father an account of my preſent ſituation, and prayed his directions how to diſpoſe of myſelf: at the ſame time giving him an hint, that I ſhould be glad to enter into another employ than that I had been engaged in; and, if he conſented to it, had much rather follow the example of my friend, and ſpend two or three years abroad, which would in all probability conduce to wear off the melancholy gloom that oppreſſed my mind. The ſolitude I indulged in this receſs, though at firſt it humoured my diſpoſition, and gave a ſcope to my perpetual ideas of my lovely loſt Louiſa, and my abſent friend and partner in affliction, yet it ſoon grew dangerous for me to ſtay there longer, for fear of entirely unhinging myſelf for the purſuits of life, which were now become neceſſary to me; and therefore I took leave of my worthy maſter and miſtreſs, who made me promiſe to ſee them every week or fortnight, to conſole them for the loſs of their ſon, and returned to London, where I took an apartment in Red Lion Street, Holborn, till I ſhould otherwiſe diſpoſe of myſelf. I almoſt every day paid a viſit at Mr. Bellair's, which was now the only comfort I received, and was much edified by the company of that worthy family; Miſs Sukey lived quite recluſe, and ſeldom would ſee any company but me, and then her converſation ran wholly upon her dear Diaper, whoſe health we were continually drinking. Theſe amiable perſons ſo ſincerely ſympathized with me in the

loſs of my Louiſa, that my melancholy was always diſpelled in ſome meaſure by their ſociety; but, in a few weeks, I loſt even that conſolation, by their departure into the country, where they would fain have had me bear them company. Now, my only relief lay in the converſation of Prig and Mr. Deacon, who entered into all my concerns, and behaved in the kindeſt manner, and once a week I generally went over to ſee Mr. and Mrs. Diaper. I employed myſelf ſometimes in writing to my friend, Mr. Goodwill, his ſpouſe, and poor Fidele, who were all under great concern at my loſs; but Fidele was quite inconſolable, and had taken on ſo much at the death of her miſtreſs, that they feared ſhe would fling herſelf into a conſumption. I wrote her word, that I would for ever take care of her, and deſired Mr. Goodwill to let her have whatever money ſhe wanted, which I would repay him again. She frequently went over to ſee my mother, with whom alſo Mrs. Goodwill had commenced an acquaintance. I received a letter from Archer about this time, informing me, that he was become a dealer himſelf, and went on with great ſucceſs: as to poor Sharpley, I had heard nothing from him a conſiderable time, nor knew in what part of the world he at preſent was. My father wrote me word, that I might ſtay where I was, and take a little pleaſure, till he came up to London, to talk with and ſee me ſettled, which he propoſed to do in about three months. In the intervals of my other avocations, I endeavoured to make myſelf maſter of ſeveral branches of learning I had not touched on before; and, merely by way of amuſement, went through the ſtudy of navigation, which yielded me great pleaſure. Still the image of my Louiſa remained before my eyes, and I every now and then fell into the moſt cruel deſpondency, and called aloud for death to relieve me from my torments. I found it ſo dangerous to be alone, that I encouraged my friend Prig to call upon me as often as he had an inclination, and forced myſelf to partake of all the diverſions and amuſements he propoſed; but thoroughly conceived an averſion for the company of women, which at firſt was inſpired by a certain delicacy of never taking any delight in the ſex ſince my Louiſa's death, which was a reſolution I ſo conſtantly ſupported, that at length I even grew moroſe and unmannerly, and would abruptly leave any company upon a lady's entrance. Mr. Deacon, though an excellent man, had one prevailing foible; he loved his bottle, and had a club for every night, where he often importuned me to accompany him, under the notion of keeping up good company and fellowſhip. I was one evening perſuaded to go with him to one of thoſe meetings, which gave me ſuch an idea of the folly and abſurdity of ſpending time in a promiſcuous company, of that *while away ſtrain*, that I cannot help drawing the picture of it, not doubting but it is a pattern of moſt others in this metropolis. At our entrance, we were ſaluted by three or four perſons, to whom Mr. Deacon preſented me, and excuſed his breaking in upon the rules of the company, by bringing a ſtranger without leave; we then ſeated ourſelves, and a profound ſilence enſued of near twenty minutes, which was interrupted by Mr. Shuttle, a weaver, who obſerved, that it was the fineſt day we had had for a fortnight paſt, which he was very glad of, as the next day he was to go to a pariſh feaſt at Barnet. Mr. Burniſh, a brazier, replied, that he had been invited to go there too, but that Mr. Tunbelly, the churchwarden, had never had a gooſe at any one of his feaſts, which was a thing he greatly loved, and could not imagine he had any averſion to it himſelf, for which reaſon, he was ſure it was always omitted as an affront to him. Mr. Shuttle then gave a long account of a dinner he eat the day before with Juſtice Mittimus, in which he particularly praiſed the chicken and aſparagus, and concluded with obſerving, that the juſtice did nothing without his advice. Immediately the doors were thrown open, and in came the juſtice himſelf, at which all the reſt raiſed themſelves up, and lowly bowed; he was a pretty large made man, of a venerable aſpect, and a deal of gravity, who ſaluted every body by name; but obſerving me, was going to retreat in a huff, if Mr. Deacon had not pacified him, by aſſuring him I was his friend. 'Oh! oh! very well, very well! How 'do you do, Sir?' And, ſoon after ſeating himſelf, lugged the leg of a fowl

from

from one of his pockets, and a lunch of bread and cheese from the other, and would insist upon it every body should eat with him; some compliments, bestowed by Mr. Shuttle on the goodness of the fowl, produced an account from Mr. Magistrate of it's cheapness, and a digression of the price of beef, and the insolence of the butchers of Newgate Market. This over, in came Mr. Snap, the justice's clerk, with a warrant to sign, which obliged the justice to put on his spectacles, notwithstanding which he would have signed it at the wrong end, if his clerk had not directed his hand. 'You know 'what the affair is, Mr. Snap, I sup-'pose?'—'Yes, Sir,' replies the clerk, 'it is about an assault.'—'Oh, ho! 'is it so? Send them to Bridewell, then.'—'Yes, Sir,' says the clerk, who could hardly contain himself, 'I made 'the commitment out for that place.' The clerk dismissed, and supper ended, his worship took up the pipes, and filling one, after offering his tobacco to the whole company to smell to, saying it was the best in Christendom, he poured out a glass, and drank the king's health. Another pause of silence ensued, till the health went round, when Captain Swagger, a sea-officer, entered upon politicks, by swearing it was shameful England should ever be in peace, since she got more by war; adding, that he did not doubt of seeing us soon masters of France, Spain, and the Indies, if we did but exert our naval strength as we did in Edward the Third's time: the justice here observed, that the captain must be mistaken, for he never had heard of a man of war in those days; the captain swore by G—d there was, and that they were called the Cinque Ports, from their being five of them. Mr. Shuttle observed, that France never could be conquered, it was so much bigger than England, which the justice disputed, and said, England he was sure was bigger, and applied to me for a decision, saying, I looked as if I had been abroad, and could certainly tell. I was fearful of offending either side, so contented myself, by telling him, that what was called L'Isle de France, where the city of Paris stood, was much less than England; at which he set up a laugh of triumph, telling Mr. Shuttle, it was hard if he should not know, when he had Berry's map of France in his parlour, and his wife had an uncle who was cook to the Duke of Orleans. This proud vaunt was concluded with a bumper, in which he drank confusion to Cardinal Fleury, and damnation to the French king. Now they began to be noisy, and talked in separate sets about their wives and children, and their several professions, which was interrupted by Mr. Bonnet, the peruke-maker's singing a bawdy song, to which Mr. Shuttle, licking his lips, cried '*Oncour!*' soon afterwards the justice fell asleep, Shuttle got drunk and abused the captain, the captain struck him, the tables were overturned, and we thought it high time to pay our shot, and move off; which we did, Mr. Deacon assuring me, as we went home, that, if I had not been a stranger, I should have heard very good conversation; but did not doubt I should be made amends the next time.

When I arrived at home, I made many reflections upon what the world generally calls *conversation*, which is so far from being what is really intended by the word, that it is rather a perversion of it; and though perhaps twenty thousand people in London meet every night for that purpose, one might safely lay an even wager, that scarce an hundred ever partake of the sweets of that enlivening and improving banquet, or understand what conversation is.

In six weeks after my friend's departure, upon a visit to Mr. Diaper, I found he had just received a letter from him, by way of Lisbon, where they had been obliged to touch to refit, having met with a storm in the Bay of Biscay, which had done them considerable damage. There was also a letter for me, one for Mr. Bellair, and another for Miss Sukey, both which Mr. Diaper desired me to take the charge of transmitting, which I did accordingly. My letter was to the following effect—

'MY VERY DEAR FRIEND,

'AFTER a tempestuous voyage, 'which has already well-seasoned 'me to my new life, we have put 'into Lisbon, to repair our shattered 'vessel, from whence I take an oppor-'tunity of writing to you and the rest

'of my friends. Alas! I did not 'know half the pain I ſhould feel in 'this ſeparation from every thing that 'is dear to me! My endearing Sukey 'runs for ever in my mind, and I ſur-'vey the awful diſtance that will ſe-'parate us ſtill more and more with a 'terror that I cannot deſcribe. I have 'no one now to tell my griefs to, and 'I turn my eyes in vain on every ſide 'to find my dear Thompſon, to ſolace 'and comfort me in my diſtreſs. Oh! 'had fortune kindly joined us both in 'the ſame adventure, I had then been 'happy; but now—

"—Like the ſhip-wreck'd mariner, aghaſt,
"On ſome curs'd barren ſhelve, I ſeek in vain,
"With wand'ring eyes, for help in my deſpair!"

'I hope this will find you, my ever-'valued aſſociate, in better health and 'ſpirits than when the writer left you; 'and that, if Providence ſends me 'again to reviſit my native ſkies, I 'ſhall ſee you cured of a hopeleſs 'grief than can be of no avail to re-'cal the precious ſaint you have loſt, 'who now perhaps attends and watch-'es over your ſteps as your guardian-'angel.

'I have deſired my dear father to 'put my letter to the charmer of my 'ſoul into your hands, truſting to 'your care for it's ſafe conveyance. 'Whilſt I write my hand ſhakes, and 'I tremble with apprehenſion at what 'may have happened ſince my depar-'ture! Oh! this cruel uncertainty, 'that diſtance creates, of what paſſes, 'is grievous! Often I wiſh I had the 'power of tranſporting myſelf with a 'thought from place to place, to ſolve 'my doubts of your healths and proſ-'perity. You may now, with every 'body elſe that I love and eſteem, 'have become the prey of Death's 'daily ravages. Tormenting thought! 'which I muſt not, will not, indulge; 'for it would carry with it diſtraction 'and madneſs!—My ſincere reſpects 'attend Mr. Prig, who I hope never 'leaves you long enough for you to 'increaſe your melancholy. Our cap-'tain and the reſt of our gentlemen 'are very agreeable companions; and 'I am as happy as a man can poſſibly 'be in my ſtation, and have hitherto 'preſerved my health very well. A-'dieu, dear friend; you will hardly 'hear from me again till ſome home-'ward-bound ſhip comes from the 'Indies; by the firſt of which, if 'alive and well, I will not fail to 'write to you, and every body elſe, at 'large. Take care of my lovely maid, 'and keep her mind as eaſy and com-'poſed as poſſible, whenever you have 'the happineſs to ſee her; though I 'ſuppoſe ſhe is now gone with her bro-'ther into the country.

'If, oh! ye Powers ſupreme, who ſtill pre-'ſide
'O'er all events, and all our actions guide,
'Virtue, and Virtue's votaries, are your care,
'Preſerve the beſt of friends, and kindeſt fair!
'Shed balmy comfort, whereſoe'er they move,
'Ah! cure an anxious grief from abſent love!
'Reſtore to peace a mind in deep deſpair!
'And ſuffer patient calm to enter there!
'And, oh! protect me through the raging main,
'And ſafe reſtore me to their arms again!
'Rebuke the billows, that deſtructive roll,
'And ſpread their baneful rage from pole to pole:
'Soft may the breezes fill the ſwelling ſail,
'And no rude ſtorm deform the gentle gale!

'Excuſe my numbers, and believe 'me, my deareſt Thompſon, *thy eter-'nally-affectionate and ſincere friend*,

'W. DIAPER.'

CHAP. II.

HE, WITH PRIG, IS ATTACKED BY FOOTPADS—THEY TAKE THREE OF THEM—ONE OF THEM PROVES TO BE PACKER—DISCOURSE BETWEEN THOMPSON AND HIM—HE IS COMMITTED TO NEWGATE, TRIED AT THE OLD BAILEY, CONDEMNED, AND EXECUTED—OBSERVATIONS ARISING FROM HIS BEHAVIOUR IN HIS LAST MOMENTS—MR. ARCHER AND MR. SHARPLEY ARRIVE IN TOWN.

I Diſpatched an anſwer to my friend by a ſhip that was juſt ſailing to Liſbon, which probably might arrive there time enough to give him the wiſhed intelligence how matters ſtood in

in England; and, by the ſame conveyance, ſent another letter to Archer.

One evening, as Mr. Prig and myſelf were returning from Hampſtead, where we had taken an excurſion, ſomewhat later than ordinary, on foot, thinking it the ſafeſt way, we ſtruck through the fields between Kentiſh Town and Bloomſbury; and, for our better ſecurity, as there were many accounts of robberies committed between Hampſtead and London, had drawn our hangers, which we carried naked in our hands. We had already croſſed three fields, and could plainly diſcover the lights from Red Lion Street and Queen's Square, ſo that we imagined we had got clear of any moleſtation; but we were miſtaken, for ſuddenly paſſing over a narrow cauſeway, two men jumped out of a ditch on one ſide, whilſt two others did the ſame on the other ſide, and, with a multitude of oaths and execrations, ordered us to ſtand and deliver, or we were dead men. As we perceived each of them was armed with a piſtol, we did not think proper, for the ſake of a little money, to be fool-hardy, and ſo directly delivered our purſes to them; at the ſame time I told them we had no more, for our watches were left behind us; and deſired them to treat us like gentlemen. 'Aye, ſo we will!' ſays one of them, and immediately fired his piſtol, the ball of which grazed upon my ſhoulder, and took away a piece of my coat. We immediately concluded we were to expect no quarter from them, and therefore turning back to back, prepared to make the beſt defence we were able, and in that poſition received the fire of another piſtol, two others flaſhing in the pan, without receiving any hurt, and then were attacked on all ſides with bludgeons, which they had concealed in their boſoms. We beſtirred ourſelves as nimbly as we poſſibly could, but yet were fearful we ſhould be overpowered with numbers, when a lucky ſtroke I made, cut one of the fellows down the ſhoulder; and, ſhortening my hanger, which was a cut-and-thruſt one, I ran it up to the gripe in his body, at which he gave a groan, and fell down at my feet. There needed no more to diſhearten the reſt, who directly took to their heels; but we purſued them ſo nimbly, crying out, 'Thieves!' all the way, that, at the end of Red Lion Street, they were all three taken, and we immediately carried them into a publick-houſe till we could get more aſſiſtance, and convey them before a magiſtrate. We found no other offenſive weapons upon ſearching them; but no ſurprize could be equal to ours, when, in the face of one of theſe footpads, we diſcovered the features of that villain Packer! I gave a great cry, occaſioned by my aſtoniſhment, and aſked him the reaſon he was not contented with our money, but purſued our lives with ſo much inveteracy, which had brought him into his preſent circumſtances. I added, I was ſorry to ſee him in ſuch a ſituation, for he muſt now expect the reward due to ſo many crimes as he had been guilty of; at the ſame time wiſhing any other perſon had been the means of bringing him to juſtice. He loured a ſcornful look, and ſwore nothing grieved him but that he had not been the death of me, for then hanging would have been but a trifle; 'And 'could I,' ſays he, 'have found you 'out, long ſince, I would have made 'you the victim of my reſentment.' I told him I was ſorry his diſpoſition was ſo wicked; for though he had done me many injuries, and had well nigh cauſed the death of my friend, who was attacked by his procurement at Chelſea, yet I could not remember I had ever provoked him, by any thing I had ever tranſacted, to ſuch an inhuman reſentment. 'No!' he replied, 'was not you the means of 'turning me from Mr. Diaper's, by 'making yourſelf buſy with what you 'had no concern with?' I aſſured him the contrary, and that what I did in that affair was what I merely thought my duty, and what I could not diſpenſe with myſelf from doing, without mixing it with any thing perſonal againſt himſelf, more than the nature of the caſe required. By this time ſome perſons returned, with an account that the man who had fallen was dead, and a conſtable entering at the ſame time, though very late, we carried them before a neighbouring juſtice of the peace, and the matter was ſo clear againſt them, that he committed them all three to Newgate; and the ſeſſions being begun at the Old Bailey the day before, the bill of indictment was found; they

they were tried the laſt day but one of the ſeſſions, and, upon the ſtrongeſt evidence, condemned to die. Packer behaved with the utmoſt boldneſs during the whole trial; and, reflecting upon his former appearance and behaviour, it gave me a melancholy concern to ſee ſuch an alteration. His preſent diſpoſition and temper, to be ſure, however, was natural; whereas the ſobriety he had formerly aſſumed, muſt have been all hypocriſy and grimace.

Packer had a great many friends; but his diſorderly behaviour had ſo incenſed them, that no one would ſtir on his behalf; and, with the other criminals, he was ſoon after executed at Tyburn, where he would make no confeſſion, but died in an hardened and ſenſeleſs diſregard to religion and hereafter. Such was the end of this man; and, notwithſtanding the manifold injuries I had received of him, it was with pain I conſidered myſelf as one of the inſtruments of his puniſhment. Mr. Diaper was alſo concerned at his fate; but it was contrary to all the maxims of reaſon, ſelf-defence, and regard to the publick, to endeavour to get him a reprieve, which otherwiſe, by that gentleman's numerous friends, there would have been very little reaſon to doubt. How ſoon this death followed that of the unhappy woman he had debauched and ruined! and of which I was alſo a ſpectator! And the hand of Providence was ſo viſible in their puniſhment here, that I hope we may entertain an opinion that mercy will be extended to them in a future ſtate, from that Being who is all forgiveneſs and forbearance, and of whom mercy is one of the greateſt and moſt ſublime attributes.

I made many obſervations upon the behaviour of this man in his laſt moments. One would be at a great loſs to conceive how a human creature, capable of reflection, can work himſelf up into ſuch an utter inſenſibility, at an hour ſo awful, as that of the ſeparation of the ſoul from the body, and launching into the boundleſs immenſe ocean of eternity; and yet we ſee daily inſtances of this ſhocking ſtupidity, for ſtupidity it muſt be in ſuch inſtances as theſe; where the wretch has not that innocence and purity, that conſciouſneſs of having acted like a rational creature, and that 'earneſt hope, that 'fond deſire, that longing after im-'mortality!' which fills the heart, and ſupports the ſpirits, of the juſt man in his laſt moments. Annihilation would be more tolerable to them, were they to think at all, than a future ſtate of exiſtence; they would feel no 'ſecret 'dread, nor inward horror, of ſink-'ing into nought;' far from it, the thought would be agreeable. Ignorance, ſuch total ignorance, as I have obſerved, in ſome of the loweſt of our race, may be one reaſon of the unconcern at a circumſtance it is poſſible they know little of; but may we not rather ſeek for it, than in ignorance, and a falſe bravery, in the conſultations they receive from the ordinary, the abſolutions and promiſes he gives them? He adminiſters the ſacraments, and aſſures them of pardon and remiſſion of ſins, through the merits of Chriſt. Nothing can come nearer to the practices of the Roman Catholicks than this artificial aſſurance and comfort given to the criminals; and I think Dr. Mandeville's ſcheme would have a better effect both upon them and the ſpectators of their exit, when he adviſes not to proſtitute the ſacrament in that manner, but to ſuffer them to go full of deſpair, 'weeping and gnaſh-'ing their teeth,' to the gallows; which perhaps would have a real good effect upon their minds, bring them to a ſenſe of their condition, and make their breathings, and ſore ſighings of heart, an acceptable ſacrifice for their ſins. Now, full of the notion, that, by ſaying they believe what the ordinary tells them, they ſhall be ſaved, adding thereto the ſacred ceremonies of the church, they think they may put on what appearance ſuits their tempers beſt at the ſhocking moment; and their natural vanity directs them to ſuch an one as ſhall gain the greateſt applauſe with the mob. The ordinary ſhould be honeſt enough to tell them the uncertainty, the evident uncertainty, of their repentances being received, when it is deferred to the laſt moment of life; that death-bed repentances are not worthy of that term, and that no one can be ſaid ſincerely to repent, unleſs he has an opportunity, and does amend his life; that, indeed, God is a Being of infinite mercy, and that he has great confidence, if they are truly ſin-

cere,

cere, that their prayers, though late, may be received, and plead at the throne of grace; and farther than this he ought not, nor ſhould not, preſume to go.

The proſecution we were thus obliged to, of theſe men, took us up a conſiderable time; and it was ſcarce finiſhed, when a meſſage was left at my lodgings, that Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley were arrived in town; and that, as they could ſtay but a week at moſt, they begged as much of my company as poſſible, and deſired I would meet them that very evening at the Standard Tavern in Leiceſter Fields. I was quite overjoyed at the thoughts of ſeeing theſe two dear friends, whom I loved as much, almoſt, as if they had been my fathers. I could not imagine, however, what brought them up to town, and ſuſpected it had ſome relation to my affairs, or that ſomewhat had happened to their ſons, more than ordinary, ſince I had heard from them: ſo, full of eager expectation, begging the favour of Prig's company, I haſted, as ſoon as the hour came, to the place of appointment.

CHAP. III.

HE MEETS MR. ARCHER AND MR. SHARPLEY — HE APOLOGIZES FOR HIS FRIEND—RECEIVES AN ACCOUNT OF SIR WALTER'S ALTERATION OF TEMPER, AND THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN HIM AND THE SQUIRE—THEY BRING HIM A LETTER FROM FIDELE—IT'S REMARKABLE CONTENTS—HIS RAGE AFTER PERUSING IT—THEY RETURN INTO YORKSHIRE—PRIG SETS OUT UPON A JOURNEY—HE GROWS MORE AND MORE MELANCHOLY.

MY meeting with theſe worthy gentlemen was accompanied with marks of the ſincereſt friendſhip and affection, proceeding from the heart, undefiled with the grimaces of compliment. I introduced Mr. Prig to their acquaintance, as a man I greatly eſteemed, and was thanked, on all ſides, for the favour. After the firſt civilities were over, I enquired after the health of my father and mother, and their families. My father had ſent me a letter by Mr. Sharpley, in which he informed me, that he and my mother were in perfect health; but that he was ſomewhat chagrined, at not being able to come up to London in leſs than three months after the time he before had appointed, and which was now juſt on expiring, becauſe the gentleman, who had the greateſt part of his ready-money in his hands, would not be able to call up what he thought neceſſary before. He told me, in the concluſion, that, if I had no overbearing inclination to ſtay in town till then, he ſhould be glad if I would come into Yorkſhire, and ſpend the intermediate ſpace of time, between this and his ſetting out to ſee me ſettled in the world. There was no anſwer to my requeſt of going abroad, as my friend Diaper had done, which a little ſurprized me, as I had made it in ſo preſſing a manner. Mr. Sharpley had accompanied his friend up to town through civility, and principally with a deſire to ſee me, for Mr. Archer's buſineſs was to execute ſome commiſſions for his ſon, who went on at Oporto with great ſucceſs. As to young Sharpley; I found he was, at preſent, ſecond lieutenant of the Swiftſure, to which he had been removed from the Loo, and was now upon the ſtation of Boſton in New England; of which I took a memorandum, with a purpoſe to write to him the firſt opportunity. We now began to talk over old affairs, and Mr. Archer was ſurprized, he ſaid, at the ſtep my friend Diaper had taken, and more eſpecially when he underſtood with how much eaſe he might have entered again into trade, with an abſolute proſpect of retrieving his circumſtances; to which I replied, that it was no eaſy matter for a man, who has once found himſelf at the end of his wiſhes, but is ſuddenly diſappointed by ſome unforeſeen ſtroke of ill fortune, to aſſume ſpirit and perſeverance ſufficient to bear the reflection, and the tedious toil of acquiring, by going over again the ſlow methods of induſtry and trade, what he had loſt; and eſpecially when love intervenes, and points out every tedious path to our wiſhes, as an injury done to the beloved object, and to the completion of our hopes and expectations; and therefore I could eaſily excuſe, from my friend's youth and ſanguine

diſpoſition,

diſpoſition, his hazarding himſelf as he had done, ſeeing, that if a few years, in the employ he had embarked in, were ſpent with the uſual ſucceſs thoſe gentlemen meet with, he would find himſelf in a better ſituation than he could expect to be in, after having ſpent his whole life in traffick at home. I even went ſo far, as to ſay, that, ſince ſome cruel diſappointments I had myſelf met with, I had much rather venture abroad, than ſettle in my profeſſion in England, where my ambition would be conſtantly checked by the idea that I had loſt every thing in the world that could ſerve as a ſpur to me to undergo the neceſſary fatigues of buſineſs; nor could I forbear ſhedding tears at this concluſion, and the preſence of two perſons who revived in my mind all the painfully-pleaſing tranſactions of my diſaſterous and unfortunate paſſion. They were very much moved at this apoſtrophe of grief, which naturally led them to condole with me on the loſs of my Louiſa, which they did in terms that plainly ſhewed me what an intereſt they took in my welfare. 'I ſhould,' ſays Mr. Archer, 'have been at a loſs 'how to have brought this ſubject on 'the carpet, knowing the ſenſibility 'you ſtill have when it is mentioned, 'if you had not put me thus upon it; 'but I am able to give you a better 'account than you have yet received, 'I believe, of the death of that young 'lady, and what happened afterwards 'in her family, which is ſo much altered, by the loſs of her, that you 'cannot help being amazed at the relation of it.' I endeavoured to reſtrain my tears, and beſought him to proceed, which he did, in the following manner. 'Sir Walter was not preſent at his daughter's death, but was 'at York, with that villain the ſquire, 'in order to the ſettlement of ſome 'affairs previous to the marriage 'which he had reſolved on between 'her and that nephew, and which he 'had tyrannically endeavoured, but 'in vain, to procure her conſent to, 'and had left her, with menaces of 'all that diſpleaſure and rage could 'dictate, if ſhe did not comply at his 'return. His ſiſter, in ſending him 'the mournful tidings, let him into 'ſome things in relation to the ſquire, 'that immediately induced him to diſ-'card him for ever; and he was ſo 'touched with his daughter's loſs, 'that he could not bear to viſit the 'place of her interment, which was 'in the family-vault at Taunton, 'where her mother was alſo depoſited, 'for Sir Walter's family, you know, 'was originally of Somerſetſhire, and 'he has never attempted to go there 'ſince; for his ſiſter was ſo much affected with the loſs of her niece, 'that ſhe went ſoon after to France, 'with an intent to reſide there the remainder of her days, after beſtowing 'all the hard epithets that grief and 'anger could ſuggeſt, againſt his cruelty and barbarity. He has been 'ever ſince at his houſe in Yorkſhire, 'and he is ſo altered, that he has quite 'forſaken his old diverſions; and 'when I waited upon him to take my 'leave, and told him of my deſigned 'rout to London, he ſhed tears, and 'ſaid, with a melancholy geſture, that 'perhaps I might then ſee poor Joe, 'to whom he deſired I would give his 'love, and tell him he was a ſevere 'ſufferer for what he had acted againſt 'him and his daughter, his dear Louiſa. "Had I known," continued 'he, "the worth of that youth, ſo "well as I do now, I believe I ſhould "have conquered my averſion to his "alliance with my daughter, whom I "was fooliſhly endeavouring, nay, "did ſacrifice, to the views of one "of the worſt of men, whom I have "ſince found out to be in the loweſt "degree baſe. I can now, alas! "make no other recompenſe, than by "aſſuring him I ſhall ever eſteem him "as my own child: and pray tell him "if I can be of any uſe to him in his "future concerns, neither the inclination, nor the money, ſhall be "wanting." I was ſurprized, you 'may imagine, at ſuch a declaration; 'and more ſo, when he informed me, 'that Fidele, his daughter's waiting-'maid, had yielded to his perſuaſions, 'and the deſires of your mother, to 'quit Mrs. Goodwill, and ſhe is now 'Sir Walter's houſekeeper: he does 'nothing without conſulting her, and 'endeavours all he can to compenſate 'her for the loſs of her kind lady. 'She gave me a letter for you, when 'I left the houſe, which I have here 'brought you.' Upon this, he delivered me the letter, which I knew to

be

be Fidele's hand, and which I opened haſtily, much aſtoniſhed with what had been told me. I found it as follows.

'DEAR SIR,

'I Hope you will excuſe the trouble 'I am going to give you, when 'you know that my obligations to 'you, and ſome matters I have to re-late of my excellent lady, are my 'motives for writing to you. In the 'firſt place, Sir, let me return you my 'unfeigned thanks for the kind and 'genteel treatment I have received 'from Mr. Goodwill and his lady, 'ſince you placed me with them, and 'the marks of your favour and re-membrance I received, at ſeveral 'times, when I was there, which will 'ever engage the moſt grateful returns 'that ſhall be in my power. You 'will be ſurprized when I acquaint 'you, that I am now with my old 'maſter, to whoſe preſſing ſolicita-tions, and the commands of your 'honoured mother, which I more re-garded, I at laſt conſented; and he 'has made me ample amends, by 'placing me at the head of his fami-ly; where, however, I have the con-tinual pain of reflecting, by all the 'objects before me, upon our great 'and irreparable loſs in the death of 'my dear young lady, which nobody 'but yourſelf could feel ſo tenderly as 'I did. Sir Walter has taken on 'very grievouſly for my miſtreſs's loſs, 'and is ſo changed, that if any one 'were to ſay any ill thing of you in 'the family, he would immediately 'loſe his favour. I have gathered ſe-veral things from him, at times, 'which I ſhall acquaint you of, if 'ever I have the happineſs to ſee you 'again; but two things I cannot now 'diſpenſe with myſelf from telling 'you: he has, with the utmoſt con-cern, told me that the ſquire led him 'into a ſcheme that was, in the end, 'fatal to Miſs Louiſa; which was, to 'propagate a ſtory in Somerſetſhire, 'that he had killed you in a duel; 'and, after that report, ſhe never held 'up her head again. He has, like-wiſe, ſince that, been informed, by 'one of the ſquire's attendants, of 'his uſage of you in the road to Mr. 'Goodwill's, and his having attacked 'your life by ruffians, near his own 'ſeat; all which conſpired, with his 'regard to my lady's memory, to ren-'der him ſo diſtaſteful to his uncle, 'that he has forbid him ever entering 'his doors, or appearing any where 'where he is; and has reſolved never 'to give him a penny more than he 'can help. He is retired to a little 'eſtate he has near Doncaſter, full of 'ſpleen and reſentment, to brood over 'the villainies he has committed, and 'the fine proſpects he has loſt. I pray 'Heaven, Sir, to protect and proſper 'you, and to enable you to overcome 'your diſtraction of mind! From 'your moſt obliged and affectionate 'humble ſervant,

'FIDELE HEARTWELL.'

The circumſtances of this letter called up all my griefs afreſh; and I bemoaned my loſs in ſo tenderly affect-ing a manner, mingled, every now and then, with ſuch motions of rage, and vows of revenge, againſt the au-thor of my unhappineſs, that my friends were at the greateſt loſs how to calm my tranſports. I even raved againſt Sir Walter himſelf, for a blind, ſtupid, inſenſible wretch, who merited ten thouſand times more tor-tures than he had, or was likely to ſuffer; curſing him, in the bitterеſt terms, and wiſhing all the plagues up-on his head that could be mentioned, hoping, with Shakeſpeare—

'————a thouſand knees,
'Ten thouſand years together, naked, faſt-'ing,
'Upon ſome barren mountain, and ſtill 'winter,
'In ſtorm perpetual, would not move the 'gods
'To look what way he was.'————

When I had thus vented all that my dolour and rage could ſuggeſt, I yield-ed to the ſupplications of my three friends, and became more compoſed; but ſtill, every now and then, the ſilent tear would trickle down my cheek, and the burſting ſigh rend my very boſom in twain.

We ſpent the remainder of the even-ing in a very agreeable manner; and, as my friends were not provided with a lodging, I prevailed upon them, the one to accept of part of a bed with me, and the other with Mr. Prig, who was

quite ſmitten with their converſation, and earneſtly deſired as great a ſhare of their company, as he could have, during their ſtay in town.

I could by no means bring myſelf to go down into Yorkſhire: I was too much diſordered, even upon the leaſt mention of my deareſt Louiſa, to venture myſelf where every place, every face I ſaw, would revive all that flow of ſorrow and anxiety, that was at preſent ſomewhat ſtifled by the endeavours of my friends, and my own and the frequent change of company and place, I, on purpoſe, indulged myſelf in; ſo that I wrote my father word, I would wait in town for his wiſhed-for arrival; giving him ſuch reaſons for my reſolution, as he muſt be very well ſatisfied with.

It was with great reluctance, after ten days ſtay in London, in which I conſtantly accompanied them, and frequently carried them to Mr. Diaper's country-houſe, who made them heartily welcome, as well on his ſon's account as mine, that I parted with our two friends; who, having finiſhed the buſineſs that brought them up, to their ſatisfaction, ſet out for Yorkſhire, and Mr. Prig and myſelf accompanied them twenty or thirty miles out of London, where we took a very affectionate farewel. Soon after, I was alſo robbed of another agreeable companion, in my friend Prig, who was obliged to go on a journey, into the Weſt of England, on ſome law affairs, which he imagined would employ him between three and four months; and now I was left too much to my own reflections, which I indulged in all their baneful ravages over my ſoul, and gave way to all the diſtracting gloom they occaſioned; whole days I uſed to ſhut myſelf up in my chamber, and give a looſe to my complaints and tears, for the death of my poor Louiſa, whoſe lovely image was ever before my eyes, and whoſe accents hung upon my ears. Mr. Deacon took notice of this alteration, with concern, and began to call more frequently upon me, and took me out to his ſocieties; where, indeed, ſometimes the very comical abſurdity of the company would draw a ſmile from me, and chace away an uneaſy thought; but I wanted my dear Diaper, whoſe kind reaſonings, and conſoling arguments, could only have been effectual enough to have made me more patient and eaſy. In ſhort, I began to be a torment to myſelf, and a pain to every body about me.

CHAP. IV.

HE TAKES TO DRINKING—MR. DEACON DIES, BY WHICH HE IS INVOLVED IN A SAD SCRAPE—HE IS ARRESTED—CARRIED TO THE SPUNGING-HOUSE—HIS TREATMENT THERE—REMOVES HIMSELF, BY HABEAS CORPUS, TO THE FLEET—HIS MOTIVES FOR DOING SO.

THE ſtupid languor of my mind, and the continual perturbation of my ſpirits, which were inceſſantly harraſſed in this manner, at length brought me into a ſtate of downright inſenſibility; and I went, as it were, mechanically, to ſome club or other, every evening, where I contracted a habit of drinking, than which nothing could be more low and degrading. I ran into the ſtrain of their diſcourſe, and felt a kind of relief from myſelf, and a pleaſure in ſaying things nothing at all to the purpoſe; and, when wine or beer could not ſuffice to allay my uneaſineſs, I had recourſe to drams, which grew ſo habitual to me, that I kept a private bottle in my chamber; to which I uſed to apply ſo frequently, that it was a mercy I did not kill myſelf. Could any creature be more fallen! but, in ſhort, ambition, and every other incentive to life, and praiſe-worthy actions, were defunct in me; and, in the ſole reflection that I had loſt Louiſa, I was dead to any acquiſition of name, fortune, or happineſs. Oh, how wretched a ſituation was this! and the force of theſe helliſh cordials, ſoon expired, left me in a worſe ſtate than before, which could only be mended by a repetition of the ſame fictitious ſpirits.

I was thus loſt, when, one morning, poor Mr. Deacon, who, as I ſaid before, was too great a votary to the bottle, dropped down dead in his compting-houſe, with a ſudden fit of apoplexy: he had received ſome intimations before, that he was going to be ſubject to that dreadful diſorder, and had reſolved, over and over, to drink leſs than he uſed to do; but had

not

not had power enough to break his habit of evening debauches, to which he thus fell a ſacrifice.

I was much concerned at the death of ſo worthy a man, who was a perfect adorer of my father, and, on that account, had been a good friend to me; but I ſoon found, to my coſt, that, by a piece of imprudence we had both been guilty of, I was like to be a greater ſufferer by his deceaſe, than I was aware of.

Mr. Deacon, about two months ſince, had a very large demand for money; and his affairs were ſo ſituated, at that time, that he could not command ſo much as he wanted, by 600l. His friendſhip with my father, and that which ſubſiſted between him and me, made all his concerns known to me; and I fooliſhly offered to give him my note for ſo much, which, as I was well known to have ſerved my time to Mr. Diaper, and to be going into trade for myſelf, and my father to be a man in very good circumſtances, he might eaſily get the ſum he wanted upon: this, though an affair that ought to be very cautiouſly tranſacted, was what I had known to be very common in the city, upon ſuch emergencies; and I did not doubt Mr. Deacon's honour, who was rich, and who promiſed me to take it up before it became due; ſo that I took no counter ſecurity from him, and confided entirely in his integrity and diſcretion, forgetting the excellent maxims I had imbibed in my apprenticeſhip, of leaving nothing of that nature to chance, or the accidents of death or ſickneſs. Mr. Deacon was, I am perſuaded, a very honeſt man; but ſomehow or other, not being able to take up my note, as ſoon as due, had called on the perſon who had it in his poſſeſſion, and made him eaſy, by appointing a time of payment; ſo that I thought the affair quite over, when his ſudden death betrayed to me that he had not paid it, and it was ſtill in the ſame hands: what to do I could not tell; I waited on Mr. Deacon's brother, who was his ſole heir and executor; but, being a mercenary, ſelfiſh wretch, he pretended his brother had left no minute of the affair any where amongſt his books and papers; and flatly refuſed to believe what I related, or to pay me the money; and, after all I could ſay, I was forced to leave him, venting ſuch reproaches only as my anger and reſentment dictated to me to make uſe of. I thought this as mortifying a ſtroke as any man could meet with, thus to be trapped, before he begun the world, by his good-nature and gratitude, out of 600l. beſides, I had not the money to pay it, and my reputation was likely to ſuffer upon the occaſion. I was quite aſhamed to mention it to Mr. Diaper; and, as to my father, I reſolved, if I could not get time for the payment, to undergo any thing, rather than make him acquainted with it; and it was a great misfortune to me, that Prig was out of town, who was moſt capable of adviſing me on ſuch an affair; for as to the clerk he had left in his chambers, he was a mere greenhorn. I was reſolved therefore to keep out of the way, as the perſon who had the note was very vociferous in demanding the money; ſo that I did not ſtir from my lodging for near a fortnight; but, as ill luck would have it, I expected one morning a porter from an inn, with ſome preſents from Mr. Goodwill, which I was obliged, in civility, to receive; and, in the interim, the maid of the houſe came up to my chamber, to let me know a porter below had brought me a letter, and ſomething in a baſket, whom I immediately ordered up; but my blood was congealed in my veins almoſt, when, preſenting the letter, which was all a ſham, he told me he had a warrant againſt me, at the ſuit of Mr. Vulture, the money-ſcrivener; and immediately three or four more villainous countenances, *ſans ceremonie*, bounced into the apartment. I found it was as vain, as imprudent, to reſiſt; and, putting on a tranquil air, deſired to know where they propoſed to carry me. 'Sir,' replies the chief of them, 'my lock-up 'houſe is in Gray's Inn Lane, where 'you will be as much at your eaſe as 'at home;' ſo ordering a coach to be called, and giving proper directions to my landlord, if any body enquired, I ſuffered myſelf to be conducted to the aforeſaid place of *ſalva cuſtodia*. I was put, at my entrance, into a room, where were ſeveral priſoners, of both ſexes, ſome airily ſinging and talking, others ſtupid, and full of deſpair, at their misfortunes; but all ſeemingly agreed in this, that drinking was a cure for their maladies. As ſoon as the

officer had left me, one of them advanced, and very facetiously welcomed me to my new quarters, where, he ſaid, he had been ſeveral times; and, ſeeing me look ſomewhat dull, bid me not mind it, one half of the world had been there already, and the other muſt come there ſoon; 'Come, Sir, we muſt 'have your *footing*, and when your 'gall's a little broke, you'll be eaſy.' I aſked him what he meant by my footing. 'Only two and ſixpence for a 'bowl of punch, which is what we 'all pay at our entrance into this noble 'ſociety, Sir; and you look too much 'like a gentleman to diſpute the cuſ-'tom.' I immediately gave him two and ſixpence, and a bowl was brought in, which was ſoon ſucked up by my aſſociates, who then became very curious and inquiſitive to know my buſineſs, and the occaſion of my being *bum'd*, as they called my being arreſted. I had no mind to ſatisfy them, nor indeed did I reliſh their company; but immediately had a meſſenger called, to ſend a note by to Mr. Briſk, Mr. Prig's clerk, that I might have a little advice. Meantime the officer had intimated to the keeper of the houſe, that I was a warm hand, and flush of *cole*, as I afterwards heard; ſo that he came, with a great many bows and ſcrapes, and told me, if I pleaſed, I might have a room to myſelf, if I did not chuſe ſo much company. I told him I had much rather to be alone; ſo, taking leave of my new acquaintance, he uſhered me into an apartment up two pair of ſtairs, where he locked me in, and left me to my meditations. I was, indeed, harraſſed, by my uneaſy thoughts, to ſome purpoſe, and never was ſeen ſo forlorn a wretch; my former ſufferings, and my preſent diſtreſs, combined together to make me exquiſitely unhappy. I had now the idea of the pain and regret I ſhould give my father, whoſe reproaches, for my want of conduct and prudence, were ever in my ears, and made me perfectly diſtracted: at length Mr. Briſk came, who relieved me from my preſent perturbation, by his preſence. He wiſhed his maſter had been at home, who, by backing the warrant, would have given me time to put in bail; but as that could not now be done, conſidering the exorbitant expence I muſt be at where I was, he adviſed me to remove myſelf to the Fleet, till he came to town, which, in the end, would ſave me money; and he gave me ſuch an idea of that priſon, that I could not help thinking it far preferable to the dungeon-life I led at preſent, and was likely to do if I continued at the ſponging-houſe any longer; ſo I agreed to what he ſaid, and gave him the neceſſary money to procure me an *habeas corpus* for my removal. I had luckily above twenty guineas by me, at the time of my arreſt, which, in ſome meaſure, ſupported my ſpirits; and now I had taken my reſolution, methought I was eaſier, when the officer came into my apartment, to whom I had imparted what I had done. He ſeemed quite chagrined, and put on a deal of ill-humour upon it, no doubt, expecting me to renew the writ, and, for the ſake of avoiding a gaol, ply him continually with civility-money, to permit me to remain where I was. He ſaid the plaintiff would take any bail, and was ſurprized I would go to the Fleet, which he repreſented in the moſt ſhocking colours to me; but I was prepared for him, and, the four and twenty hours not being expired, I knew he could not carry me to the county gaol, Newgate, before my *habeas corpus* would be taken out, and then I was ſecure from the diſappointed rage of theſe inhuman gentry: however, my good-nature operated ſo ſtrongly, that I gave him half a guinea, at which his brow began to ſmooth; and, aſſuming another tone, he told me he would do any thing to ſerve me; that I was happy to have fallen into his hands, who was a gentleman that had been reduced, by misfortunes, to accept of his preſent employ; that many of his brethren would have carried me to Newgate, upon the firſt mention of an *habeas*; but as to him, he was a man who did not love to prey upon gentlemen under trouble. All that he ſaid was backed by the man of the houſe; and I could not help calling for a bowl of punch, to reward them for their civility. At night I went to bed, about ten o'clock, but ſlept little; and about ten the next morning, Mr. Briſk brought me news, my *habeas* would be ready at night, which made me very eaſy, for I longed to be in a ſtate of more liberty. As ſoon as he was gone, the officer came in, and, taking me aſide, told me he believed

believed the plaintiff was a ſour, ill-tempered fellow; and, if I would give him five guineas, he would put in bail above, that ſhould juſtify their being worth 10,000l. though one was a broom-ſtick maker, and I might go about my buſineſs, where I would; but that, if I was obliged to ſtay publickly in London, I might clap in a *writ of error*, and fight him off for a twelvemonth. I was aſtoniſhed at the roguery of this ſet of men; and though it was not proper for me to reprove him, I conceived ſo hearty a diſlike to theſe wicked, incroaching inſtruments of the law, that I would ſooner ſuffer an injury, at any time, than employ them: to both plaintiff and priſoner they will be equally unjuſt! Gain is the god they worſhip! and I will venture to ſay, there is not one in an hundred that has either honour or honeſty.

At night I experienced the extortion of ſuch infernal houſes, and was charged three ſhillings for my bed, two ſhillings for firing, and five ſhillings extraordinary for occupying the room by myſelf; which, with what my dinners, ſuppers, and liquors, came to, in their way of reckoning, amounted, for the day and an half I ſtaid there, to forty ſhillings and upwards, beſide the half guinea I gave the officer: yet this is ſuffered in a country ſubject to the beſt laws, and where we boaſt ſo much of our liberty, and the privileges of Engliſhmen!

Mr. Briſk, a tipſtaff, and the bailiff, attended me to a judge's chambers, from whence, the uſual forms complied with, we were ſet down at the priſon-gate about nine o'clock at night, and were immediately uſhered into the Lodge, where a rough-hewn fellow, ſtaring me full in the face, and ſeeming to devour me with his eyes, demanded two ſhillings as his fee, telling me, he was the *head-turnkey*; I complied with his demand, being adviſed before by Briſk, as alſo in paying a compliment of a bottle of wine to the reſt of his colleagues, who welcomed me to the College, as they called it, with great mirth and jollity. I alſo paid the maſter's-ſide fee, and had a room promiſed me that very night at the rate of two ſhillings and ſixpence per week, ready furniſhed.

I was the more ready to go to the Fleet, from the conſideration that I ſhould there be more ſecret, than at a ſponging-houſe, and had conceived a notion that it was a place where few people of conſequence were ſeen to enter; but in this I was miſtaken, I afterwards found; for a *fair*, comparatively ſpeaking, could not have a greater reſort of perſons of all ſorts than this place, where I was every minute known by ſome body or other. Again, I imagined, when my father came to London, and ſaw me there, he would be more ready, after ſuch a *faux pas*, as I had been guilty of, to gratify my inclination of going abroad. I thought I had money enough to ſubſiſt me till his arrival, for I had been informed, that every thing was very cheap in this place, and that a man could find few opportunities of ſpending money there; in which I was alſo deceived, as the ſequel will demonſtrate, for I believe, by ſuch a number of people, more money is hardly ever ſpent abroad, there not only being all the incentives to luxury and extravagance, but almoſt an obligation to comply with them: however, I was now in it, and it was in vain to think of a ſudden retreat; ſo, following Mr. Briſk, we entered the houſe, and were introduced to a pretty commodious coffee-room, where, at ſeveral tables, were many well-dreſſed perſons, regaling themſelves with variety of liquors.

CHAP. V.

HE IS PAINTED IN THE COFFEE-ROOM — ADJOURNS TO THE FLEET CELLAR — HUMOUROUS APPEARANCE OF THE GUESTS THERE — HEARS A CHARACTER OF SPECULIST — ENTERS HIS NEW APARTMENT — DESCRIPTION OF IT — CHARACTER OF THE PLACE IN GENERAL — DIVERS REFLECTIONS — HE JOINS WITH AN ORDINARY.

WE had not been ſerved with the bowl of punch we called for, before ſeveral fellows, moſt of whom I had taken notice of in the Lodge, came in, one after another, upon different errands, and ſtaring me for ſome time earneſtly in the face, and ſeeming to meaſure my very height, went out again;

again; I expreſſed my ſurprize at ſuch treatment, at which the gentlemen, who were moſt of them priſoners, I found, ſeemed very much diverted, and informed me, they came to *paint me*; by which I afterwards underſtood was meant to take ſuch an obſervation of my perſon and features, as might make me known to them, if ever I came to the jig, for ſo they call one of the inner gates of the priſon; and, indeed, without ſome ſuch obſervation, it would be impoſſible to prevent eſcapes amongſt ſuch a number of people as are here confined. Theſe fellows ſerve the warden alſo as a kind of delatores, and are his intelligencers of every thing that paſſes in the inſide of the place. The man that kept the coffee-room, being a very pragmatick ſaucy fellow, we agreed to adjourn to another ſcene, and ſee what entertainment we could meet with in the tap or cellar, to which we deſcended by a ſtaircaſe; and upon my entrance, from the blackneſs and darkneſs of the walls, and the low ceilings, I imagined I was entering the temple of Moloch, and the buz and promiſcuous noiſe of the gueſts and the drawers put me in mind of the hurry and confuſion between decks in a firſt rate *man of war*. Such a motley crew of jovial beings, ſure, never were ſeen any where elſe; for my part I forgot I was in a place of confinement, and began to think I was entering Tom King's, or a booth in Bartholomew Fair; ſome were in ſerious debate on matters of high import, as how to circumvent their creditors, and eſcape the jaws of the gaol; others were curſing the remorſeleſs wretches, who had ſuffered them to linger out ſo many years in miſery and diſtreſs, without any view or proſpect, but that of ſatiating their inhumanity. Many were dancing from box to box, with all the anticks of madmen; and theſe I ſoon diſcovered were the wits, who cauſed redoubled peals of laughter at every thing they ſaid or did. Some were drunk, others half-drunk and quarrelling, ſome eating, ſome drinking, and, in ſhort, wherever you caſt your eyes, you diſcovered little that could beſpeak the object of your view at all touched with their conditions. The landlord, perceiving that we were ſtrangers, accommodated us with a box, after ſome little time, and we called for a tankard of beer; and preſently all the company was up in arms to ſee the new priſoner, and many, with a familiar air, ſhook me by the hand, and told me, they were glad to ſee me there; where, if I had money, I might live as well as ever I did in my life. This grew tireſome to me, and Briſk, having been there before, aſked, if we could not procure a room. Upon which we were ſhewed to one, which was as handſome as one in a tavern, in which were only two grave-looking gentlemen, who I found were alſo priſoners; one of them Sir William Failer, a baronet, and the other Dr. Diagnoſtick, a phyſician, who both appeared to be men of ſenſe, and expreſſed a great concern at ſeeing me there. We called for a bottle of wine, and had ſome ſmall matter for ſupper, which was brought in by a man cook, who was as great an oddity, in perſon and behaviour, as ever I had ſeen. Sir William and the doctor drank with us, at my requeſt, and entertained us with the hiſtory of the place, and the character of the chief perſons in it; and, amongſt the reſt, told me, there was one Mr. Speculiſt, who was a very clever man, but had behaved ſo arrogantly and overbearingly, that he was univerſally deſpiſed by all his fellow-priſoners in general. Then they cautioned me againſt lending money, and adviſed me to keep as much above ſtairs in my own apartment as poſſible, which I ſhould find more for my peace and comfort than being below, where they were perpetually involved in broils and factions. The reckoning coming to be paid between the baronet and the phyſician, I perceived they were at a kind of a plunge, not having enough about them, and both pretending to be angry at the trouble of going to their rooms for more; upon which Sir William ſaid, he would ſee if he could find any body in the tap-room that would oblige him, and prevent his journey; ſeeing this, and thinking them very honeſt gentlemen, I pulled out a crown, and begged they would not be at a loſs, ſince I could oblige them: with ſome difficulty they accepted the favour, promiſing payment next morning; but I never heard of it again, and ſoon after found they were notorious, both of them, for borrowing and never returning

Plate III. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & C.o July 19,1783.

turning what they borrowed. This indeed is the curſe of this place, and a man ſhould never carry about him more than enough for his own uſe; for, if he does, he is ſure to have cuſtomers enough to make it away too. At ten, Briſk was obliged to depart, when the tremendous cry of, *Who goes out?* was bawled forth by the watchmen, and ſoon after the chamberlain, with a pair of ſheets on his arms, ſummoned me to explore my new apartment. Gueſs my ſurprize, when paſſing through a narrow kind of paſſage, which ſtunk moſt abominably, and which I underſtood afterwards was called Mount Scoundrel, I was introduced to a little room, that I preſume had been, ſome twenty years before, white-waſhed, but now was ſo black, and the walls ſo decayed, that the light pervaded it in ſeveral places, and, at the top, I had through ſeveral cracks a clear view of the azure ſky: a ſordid bed, covered with horſe-cloths rather than blankets, and a rug that had received many a gorgeous party-coloured patch, which *ſeemed to ſpeak variety of wretchedneſs*; a grate, conſiſting of three worn-out crooked bars; a chair or two without backs; and a table, which of a foot was lame, and

'Thruſt between the limping leg a ſherd,
So was the mended board exactly rear'd,'

compoſed the furniture. I expreſſed my diſcontent to the chamberlain; who, ſcratching his head, with a burleſque air, told me, few gentlemen had a better room at firſt; but, no doubt, when I became acquainted with the cuſtom of that place, I might remove more to my ſatisfaction. I found by this I had made a miſtake; ſo I tipped him half a crown, and promiſed him half a guinea more, if I could have a better on the morrow: he bowed, and very obligingly told me, he would ſee what he could do for me.

The next morning I roſe early, not having ſlept the whole night, partly from the badneſs of my lodging, and partly from the inceſſant noiſes of drunken diſorderly priſoners, who all night long raked about and quarrelled in the adjacent galleries. *Now to explore my priſon*, and indeed a more gloomy proſpect, methought, I had never ſeen before. I was met by the doctor I had ſupped with the overnight, who ſhewed me all it's avenues, and read me a long lecture, to convince me how neceſſary exerciſe was in this place to preſerve health; particularly recommending *fives* for that purpoſe, at which I ſoon underſtood the doctor was a dabſter, and partly got his living by it.

To a thinking man, who exerciſes his reaſoning faculties, nothing can be more irkſome than ſuch a miſerable ſtate of exiſtence as this in a gaol; and however neceſſity, or avarice and diſhoneſty, may form a kind of artificial eaſe and tranquillity in ſome breaſts, yet ſigns of horror and regret will ſometimes break forth from them, whether they give way to it or no. Can there be a more horrible ſituation, than to labour under this *civil impediment*, and to reflect that you are cut off from the race of mankind, as a deſtroyer of your neighbour's property, and, as it were, buried *quick* from all remembrance? Dreadful thought! which can be equalled by none but thoſe of the remorſeleſs *creditor*, who under the ſanction of laws, too much abuſed, ſhall daily, hourly, become the torturer of ſome unhappy honeſt family, whoſe misfortunes only have rendered them inſolvent: yet ſuch there are, who, in our church ſervice, every day ſtill repeat, *Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors*. Blaſphemous impiety! execrable murderers! wiſely has the legiſlature, from time to time, relieved, at certain periods, the ſuffering guiltleſs creature from theſe mercileſs bonds!

In the Fleet, I found perſons of all ranks, all profeſſions, and almoſt all religions; and there can be no loſs of agreeable companions for men of every taſte. Some have taken ſhelter here to ſave the fortunes for themſelves or their heirs, which ought to be given up to the ruined creditors; numberleſs families ſuffering by ſuch villainies; others have been caught, and fixed here, after a train of ſucceſsful rogueries, bringing in the ſpoils of hundreds; but the greateſt number are thoſe unhappy ones I hinted at before, whoſe caſe is greatly, ſincerely, to be pitied. The honeſt man here droops and pines, deſpair and death are ſeen in his face, and he deplores his misfortunes! The others loſe, in a round of drinking,

riot,

riot, and debauchery, all ſenſe of ſhame, and all compunction for their crimes, and make their priſon a veritable hell, to thoſe about them, more ſerious, more compoſed.

'Juſt Heaven! when will the bliſsful time arrive, that man, thy ſubſtitute below, ſhall ceaſe to tear and rend his fellow-creature! ſhall ceaſe to be deſigning, cruel, baſe, and act in every thing conſiſtent with his nature and his make! Lions their fellow-lions ne'er devour, and tigers love their kind! Each ſavage, prouling through the howling deſart, with fiery eyes and baneful glare, in ſearch of needful prey, ſtill ſpares his likeneſs, wars not on his brother! but man, ungrateful for the every bleſſing thou haſt on him beſtowed, with ruthleſs ravages deforms his ſoul, and triumphs in his neighbour's wretchedneſs; nor feels the pitying thought, nor ſheds the melting tear, for others woes!'

When dinner time arrived, Sir William accoſted me upon the Bare, acquainting me, there was a very good ordinary in the cellar, at which himſelf, with ſome other very ſociable gentlemen, uſually dined, and hoped, that I would let them have the pleaſure of my company to dinner. I, for my part, had neither thought of eating or drinking yet, and was taken up in many melancholy reflections upon my forlorn eſtate, and the unhappineſs and the ſucceſſion of misfortunes that ſeemed to attend me, at every ſtep in life; but this invitation awaked me from my reverie, and made me perceive the calls of nature were ſtrongly ſtruggling within me, and I attended him to a room in the cellar, where our meal was elegant and cheap, and the company really deſerved encomium; ſave that wit had here unbounded licence, and ſhook off all the reſtraints of modeſty and decency. However, I was not diſpoſed to be very cynical, and promiſed to dine there every day, ſo long as the ſame good company frequented it.

CHAP. VI.

GETS ANOTHER APARTMENT—MEETS SPECULIST—BECOMES EXTRAVAGANT—LOSES MONEY AT FIVES—IS QUARRELLED WITH AT THE DRAGON-CLUB—FIGHTS HIS ANTAGONIST UPON THE BARE, AND BEATS HIM—IS IN GREAT DISTRESS—MAKES AWAY WITH HIS CLOATHS BY DEGREES.

NEXT morning the chamberlain, eager to handle the half-piece I had offered him, helped me to an airy and commodious room fronting the Bare, where I gave a little treat to Sir William, the doctor, and two or three other members of the ordinary. I was going up to it in the afternoon, when I met, at the end of the gallery, Speculiſt, full-butt, who made a ſtand, and burſt out into an immoderate fit of laughter, crying out, 'Mr. Thompſon, who ever thought of ſeeing you 'at College! Come, my friend, let us 'ſacrifice all our old animoſities; and, 'ſince fortune has put us into the ſame 'ſituation, let us live as ſociably as 'we can, and endeavour to do one 'another all the little ſervices that are 'requiſite in this place.' I was not proof againſt the good-humour with which he uttered this, and gave him my hand; for I thought it in vain to ſtand out, as every minute would fling us in one another's way, and I was ever an enemy to an implacable temper; though I ſilently reſolved in myſelf to keep as great a diſtance as I well could, and to converſe with him in the moſt cautious manner. So I went with him to his room, which was on the ſame floor, after he had viſited mine, which I found to be one of the beſt in the houſe, and ſuperbly furniſhed. Here I drank a dram with him, and parted. I ſoon found I had got into a ſet of company that made it impoſſible for me to live frugally; and, though our eating daily was ſo reaſonable, yet the want of ſomething elſe to employ time, and the vivacious mirth of the table, generally kept us over the bottle or bowl till pretty late, and I ſoon got an habit of going to the clubs that were held almoſt in every part of the priſon, where I ſeldom came off for leſs than half-a-crown at a ſitting, and ſometimes not for double the money. I engaged alſo at fives very frequently, which fleeced me of a good deal of money, having generally my maſters in the game to deal with;

with; so that my small stock, in less than six weeks time, was pretty much exhausted, and I began to fear it would not last me so long as was needful; which gave me the bitterest pangs, as I saw daily instances of the excessive misery of poverty in this prison, where money, and money only, engages respect, and the services and civilities of your fellow-prisoners. I admitted of no visits but Brisk's, whom I made promise not to let his master know where I was till he came to town; and as to my father and Mr. Diaper, I wrote to them as usual, so that they had no suspicion of what had happened. I was here in a constant round of company, and diversions of one sort or another, which I eagerly pursued, fearing the return of my griefs and melancholy despondency, if I indulged in the least my reflections on my dearest Louisa, who still was uppermost, when I did not use art to stifle my remembrances of her. Things were in this situation, when, one evening, at the Dragon Club in the cellar, I had a dispute with Captain Bully, late an officer in a marching regiment, who attacked me very uncivilly, for having said that swearing in common conversation was a very ungentleman-like behaviour. The captain was a brute and a blockhead; but had reigned conqueror in all the athletick trials of skill he had been engaged in, so that he was the terror, and, at the same time, the may-game of all his fellow-prisoners. 'Damn you, Sir,' says he, 'who made 'you a reformer here? I will swear, 'Sir; and I am a gentleman, that my 'commission will declare.'—'Captain,' I replied, 'I meant nothing 'personal; but still must insist on what 'I said before, and am sorry to see 'there is any body so stupid as to contradict me.'—'Stupid! G—d d—n 'me! what do you mean by that?—'No more stupid than yourself; I believe I have had as good education 'too, and will read Greek with you, 'or any thing else, for what you dare.' At this the whole company fell into a laugh, which encouraged me to lay him a wager that he could not read English. A book was brought, and he attempted to read, but the wager was given against him; and, upon my saying somewhat farther, he took up a glass, and flung it full at me, which, by ducking my head, I avoided, and challenged me out upon the Bare. I had no mind for this porterly exercise, but, as amongst school-boys, so here I was sensible a man would be reflected upon by every one that refused such a challenge; so, being heartened by all present, I stripped, and went to the field of action, where my antagonist was gone before me. Speculist, upon this occasion, behaved exceeding well, and insisted upon being my second. A ring was formed, and now, being stripped in buff, we stood for some time lowring defiance at each other, like two furious bulls contending for the mastership of the pasture. At length we advance with more than mortal fury, and the resounding blows thunder upon our breasts, with repeated force. My antagonist, I soon found, was inferior to me in strength, but superior in skill; upon which I endeavoured to close with him, but all in vain; he baffled my every attempt, and a blow I received over my temples, sent me senseless to the earth; but, soon recovered, I fought aloof till I had gained breath, when, darting, at once, head and hands into the pit of his stomach, I laid him sprawling, and, to compleat the stroke, fell with all my weight upon him. It was some time before he came to himself, but so dismayed and weakened with his unlooked for fall, that now I closed with him with ease, but did not at first put forth my utmost strength; and presently the sanguinary streams ran from all parts of our bodies, and Victory seemed to hover in suspence to whom she should give the day; when, suddenly, grasping him closely in my arms, I raised him up, as Hercules did Antæus, and dashed him with such force to the ground, that he lay without sense and motion, nor could again resume the fight. The crowds around hailed my conquest with loud shouts, and rung my praises through the Bare; some shook me by the hand, others clapped me upon the back, and all expressed the highest satisfaction to behold the haughty bully thus discomfited, and Hockley in the Hole, and Tottenham Court, yield the day to invincible Yorkshire. My bruises were not very troublesome, and I soon recovered my pristine vigour,

and could now walk or talk without moleſtation, all my fellow-priſoners allowing me a *cock of the game*.

I fell ſoon from this height into the moſt direful diſtreſs; my money was gone, and now I employed, for ſome time, one of the runners to carry, from time to time, my cloaths, watch, and other valuable things, to the pawnbrokers, to ſupport life. I had moſt of my things from my lodgings, and a few weeks ſtripped me to one coat, two ſhirts, a pair of breeches, ſtockings, and ſhoes; but I ſtill kept up ſome appearances, and frequented the uſual clubs. I was obliged to refrain even that in a few days longer, and could go no more to the ordinary, having already a ſcore at the tap, of which the landlord gave me many mortifying items. I ſhooled about, and picked up a dinner here and there in the priſon; and more than a ſcore times have gone the whole day without nouriſhment; ſo that I became a mere ſkeleton. I once kept to my room, and, for a whole week, or ten days, lived upon bread and water, obſtinately reſolving not to impart my diſtreſs to any one, but to wait with patience till my father's arrival, which I now expected in a very little time, the plaintiff having *declared* againſt me, and refuſing all terms of accommodation. And at this time my former griefs revived in my mind, with redoubled impetuoſity; and my Louiſa, ſleeping or waking, haunted my ſoul, and ſwam before my eyes, in all her torturing, lovely charms; but Louiſa loſt and gone for ever! I had no ſports or company to divert my cruel reflections; and all my old aſſociates, perceiving the game was up with me, forſook me, without vouchſafing even to ſpeak to me when we met. Speculiſt, indeed, two or three times invited me to dinner; but I was not ſo far reconciled to baſeneſs, as to accept any farther favours of a man I could not but recollect ſo many mortifying occurrences of. Often a biſcuit and a dram of Geneva, together with the water from the pumps, made my repaſt for four and twenty hours; and I wiſhed earneſtly for death, to hide my ſhame, and terminate my grief and miſeries at once.

CHAP. VII.

A DIGRESSION—SPECULIST TAKEN ILL—HIS BEHAVIOUR ON HIS DEATH-BED—DIES—AN UNEXPECTED VISITOR ARRIVES, AND ENQUIRES FOR THOMPSON—THE AFFECTING INTERVIEW BETWEEN THEM—HIS FATHER AND DIAPER COME TO HIM—HE IS SET AT LIBERTY—TAKES LEAVE OF HIS FELLOW-PRISONERS.

SURE no condition can be more calamitous, more to be pitied, than that of an unfortunate wretch under confinement for debt! His friends, tired with his importunate requeſts for relief, forſake him, and abandon him to his fate, with bitter cenſures on his indiſcretions and follies; his enemies, knowing themſelves ſecure from his reſentments, load him with all the bitter invectives that wanton pride, and helliſh malice, can inſpire; his incenſed creditors, fired with their injuries, are too apt to think his puniſhment juſt, and, arrogantly aſſuming to themſelves the authority of Heaven, call down vengeance, and inflict tortures, unceaſing tortures, on his head; not reflecting, that the *Saviour of the world* has moſt authoritatively recommended charity and kindneſs to the priſoner, as one of thoſe virtues by which we merit happineſs hereafter. *I was ſick, and in priſon, and ye viſited me.* What a pathetick ſentence! and how truly worthy the Divine lips that ſpoke it! If benevolence is due to our fellow-creatures in general, how much more ſo is it to that part of them who are thus exiled from the community, and for a misfortune, perhaps, rather than a fault, as is the caſe of numbers, doomed to a melancholy gloom, ſhut up within relentleſs walls and bars, without the means to ſupport, even there, the wretched remains of life!

'———Take phyſick, Pomp:
'Expoſe thyſelf, to feel what wretches feel;
'That thou may'ſt ſhake the ſuperflux to them,
'And ſhew the heavens more juſt.'——
SHAKESPEARE.

Oh!

Oh! I have ſeen, and have ſickened at the horrid ſight, numbers of wretches, capable of being uſeful, in the higheſt degree, to the publick, ſecluded from all the privileges of men and Chriſtians, *pale famine* waſting them away by ſlow degrees, and grievous oppreſſion grinding them to death! Theſe are the greater number that fill our Engliſh priſons, and every minute, with bitter anguiſh, curſe the hour they were born, and invoke an end of their wretched beings. Let us look abroad: do Turks, or Infidels, thus treat their debtors? Is it neceſſary here, when the wiſe Hollanders, the glory of commerce, find it otherwiſe there, and every Chriſtian country ſeems to act by contrary maxims? 'Oh, Britain! thou land of liberty! 'how canſt thou view diſgrace like 'this, and ſuffer many thouſands to 'be torn from uſeful labour, arts and 'ſciences, for ills, the lot of human 'race, or unwary indiſcretions! Lives 'there a man, who, kindly ſympa-'thizing, pities human woes, who 'gives the quick reliefs to waſting 'ſorrow! all humane, great, and 'good, the pride, the glory, of his 'native country, who feels for ſuffer-'ing merit's deep diſtreſs! Lives there 'a Lyttleton, who ſoftly bends, and 'lends his ready ear to every tale big 'with calamity! And are theſe things 'ſtill ſo? Riſe, Cornwall, Oglethorp, 'and all the generous band of patriot 'ſouls, and ſee mankind redreſſed!'

Mr. Speculiſt, about this time, was taken ill with a malignant fever, which carried off a great number of the priſoners, and, before I heard of it, was out of all hopes of recovery. One morning, a man, who waited upon him, came to tell me that Mr. Speculiſt wanted to have a little converſation with me; at the ſame time letting me know that it was the firſt interval of reaſon he had had for ſome time, having been conſtantly delirious ever ſince the diſtemper ſeized him. I made what haſte I could, and found the poor creature ſo changed, that he was hardly to be known; the *fire* and *hautear* of his countenance, that *fierte*, ſo viſible in him, was now extinct, and he lay, with hollow eyes, and pallid, meagre face, gaſping, as it were, for breath. The ſight ſhocked me; and, notwithſtanding all the former reaſons I had to be angry with him, I could hardly refrain from ſhedding tears. He reached his feeble hand, quite cold and clammy, to me, and begged me to ſit down, for a few minutes, which I did, and he thus addreſſed me.

'Mr. Thompſon, I ſee you are 'touched to ſee me thus; and you 'can't help making ſome reflections 'on the difference between my former 'appearance and my preſent. I ſhall 'die—of that I am aſſured; and all 'the philoſophy I thought myſelf ma-'ſter of, will not ſupport my ſpirits in 'this dreadful moment! Oh, Time! 'how have I abuſed you, and all the 'precious gifts Providence has kindly 'beſtowed upon me!' Here a rending ſigh heaved his breaſt, and a tear or two, all the moiſture left in his brain, trickled down his withered cheeks. 'Oh, my friend!' he continued, 'could I recal my days again, I 'ſhould, I think, deſpiſe and hate 'the odious ways I have followed. 'How has vanity, and a deſire of ap-'plauſe, tempted me to diſpute thoſe 'truths which the conviction of my 'mind, per force, would ſtill make 'me only acknowledge! How have 'my hours been ſpent! how idly, un-'profitably, and how wickedly! and, 'alas! the conſequences are bitter 'pangs, deſpairing groans, and fears 'of what may come hereafter! for—

"If there's a Power above us,
"(And that there is, all nature cries aloud
"Through all her works) he muſt delight
"in virtue;
"And that which he delights in muſt be
"happy."

'I would pray—but I am convinced 'my preſent circumſtances will be the 'inducement; and I fear a death-bed 'repentance will be of no avail! Oh! 'how extreme are my tortures, and 'the wounds of my conſcience are 'not to be healed! Could I this mi-'nute make reparation for all the in-'juſtices, cruelties, and wrongs, I 'have acted towards my fellow-crea-'tures, (for I have been a moſt aban-'doned monſter of vice) I ſhould 'then, with ſome confidence, apply 'to the throne of grace *for mercy in 'time of need*; but, alas! I am taken,

'as the poet expreſſes it, *unnuzzled, diſappointed, unaneled*, with all my crimes ſtaring me full in the face, and bearing me down to the bottomleſs pit, *where ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth*. My friend, take warning by me, and never affront your good ſenſe ſo much, or the ſentiments of your mind, as to join in ſcenes of riot and debauchery, and run ſuch baſe lengths, for the gratification of thoſe appetites and paſſions, which ſhould conſtantly be governed by religion and reaſon; then in the hour when your ſoul is ſeparating from it's earthly manſion, you may have the exceeding great conſolation, of applying, by ſuch acts of devotion as are the manna of the mind, to that God who never forſakes thoſe who love him, in the time of their tribulation; and not, like me, be doomed a prey to anguiſh, fear, and doubt, dreading, yet longing, to exiſt again, and loſt in wild and endleſs mazes of exploring wretchedneſs!' Here his ſpirits would hold out no longer, and he fell into his uſual delirium, with ſuch ſtrong convulſions, that I doubted not he was in his laſt agonies. Poor unhappy man! I wept at his condition, and, by an involuntary motion, fell on my knees, at the ſide of his bed, and put up earneſt petitions for mercy and commiſſion, from the offended Author of his being, in terms that ſurprized every body about us; and, before I roſe, he was no more!—but gave up the ghoſt, a placid ſmile being viſible on his countenance.

This was the end of poor Speculiſt; a man, who, if he had rightly managed his great talents, would have been a bleſſing to his friends, and an ornament to his country; but over-bearing vanity and luſt brought him thus to a gloomy priſon, and, by an infectious diſtemper caught there, to an untimely grave! May that be the end of his ſufferings!

I had fulfilled near three months in this confinement, where every thing conſpired, with my ſorrows, to rob me entirely of any reliſh for life; and was now reduced to ſo ſad a ſtate, that my remaining cloaths hardly ſufficed to cover my nakedneſs, and my toes peeped through the yawning chaſms time had made in my ſhoes; ſo that I could not ſtir out of my room, and was almoſt ſtarved. In this dilemma all my woes returned upon me with repeated violence; and, having no books of any account left, my time was ſpent merely in the moſt bitter reflections, and the moſt cruel ſighings and groanings of an afflicted ſpirit. Sometimes I vented my ſorrows in poetick ſtrains, where I endeavoured to warble forth my complaints, and the beauties of my adorable Louiſa; nothing giving the ſoul a greater turn to numbers than ſo melancholy, ſo tender a ſituation as I was in. Amongſt many ſuch eſſays, I have ſelected the following, which will truly picturize the condition of my mind at this time—

I.

'Was ever maid ſo form'd to pleaſe,
'As ſweet Louiſa, heavenly fair!
'Whoſe ſmiles could howling tortures eaſe,
'And calm the ſoul's moſt deep deſpair!

II.

'Where'er ſhe mov'd, untainted joys,
'All gladſome, wanton'd in her train;
'And rinbald nonſenſe, riot, noiſe,
'Exil'd, forſook the bluſtful plain.

III.

'Fierce thro' the flames her charms inſpir'd,
'Where all the blooming graces rov'd;
'Her mind's perfection's more admir'd;
'E'en Reaſon bow'd, obey'd, and lov'd!

IV.

'Such thoughts! ſuch ſentiments refin'd!
'Ne'er mov'd a female breaſt before;
'And ſparkling wit, ſoft beauty join'd,
'Compell'd ſage Wiſdom to adore!

V.

'Ah, then! what ſorrowing ſtrains can tell
'The bitter anguiſh I endure!
'Who can my pangs, my griefs, reveal!
'What my tormented boſom cure!

VI.

'For, ah! the radiant angel, torn
'From theſe fond arms, to Heaven aſpires!
'And, doom'd to ceaſeleſs woe! I mourn
'My hopeleſs, ineffectual fires!

VII.

'Hail, then, the dungeon's darkſome gloom!
'Hail, horrors! miſeries! and cares!
'Since Lucy, in the ſilent tomb,
'Commands my groans, excites my tears.

VIII.

'No more glad day ſhall gaily ſhine!
'No more ſhall balmy comfort chear!
'But muſing ſadneſs ſhall be mine!
'And penſive moans, and ſighs ſincere!

IX.

'Come, friendly Death! to mortal grief,
'Though dreaded, yet a welcome gueſt!
'Ah! give a ſuffering wretch relief!
'And eaſe the youth's afflicted breaſt!

'X. Oh,

X.

'Oh, then! to fields, to floods of light!
'My rapture'd soul shall blissful stray;
'And all resplendent, glorious, bright!
'Louisa meet me on my way.'

Whilst I was one day busied in this manner, I heard my name repeated by a well-known female voice in the gallery several times, which, for my soul, I could not believe to be any other than my mother's; and nothing can equal the shock that the thought gave me. The voice approached my ears nearer and nearer; and at length one of the common side prisoners opening the door of my room, said, 'That's the 'gentleman's room, Madam, you enquired for; and you will find him 'within.' Gracious God! it was she, it was the dear woman herself! who, advancing a few paces, and at the same time shutting the door with one hand, no sooner discovered the meagre, wretched figure her son, than she uttered a loud cry, and fell back in a swoon, in a chair that stood behind her. Sufficiently roused from my stupid lethargy, I flew to her, and raising her head, reclined it on my bosom, whilst a flood of tears flowed from my eyes; and all I could pronounce was, now and then, in the intervals of my convulsive emotions, 'Dear Madam!— 'Heaven!—What do I behold!' She soon came to herself; and, fastening her arms about my neck, wept bitterly; oft repeating, 'My son! My son! 'What wretchedness to see thee thus! 'Oh, what! what have you done, to 'bring you here!' I fell on my knees, and, grasping her hand, begged her to calm herself, and I would relate all my story; 'But your sudden, unexpected, surprizing arrival, has filled 'me with such wonder and astonishment, that it will be some time before I can command myself so much 'as to talk any thing sensible. My 'amazement, dear Madam, has even 'turned my brain;' and, indeed, so it had: I was not prepared for such an incident, which, had I thought of all the improbabilities in life, would never have entered my thoughts, and puzzled me so to account for, that my head ran round, as it were, upon wheels, with a velocity that took from me all steady thinking for some considerable time. I called the man in, who still waited without; and my dear mother sent him for a bottle of wine, of which, when I had drank a glass or two, (for nothing but water had entered my lips that day before) I was revived enough to talk, and my mother had acquired spirits enough to hear me. The first question I asked was about my father's health, who she assured me was very well, and that they arrived in London the day before, and went immediately to Mr. Diaper's country-house, apprehending they should meet with me there; for I had not let them know where I lodged in any of my letters, and they had forgot to enquire of Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley before they set out, who could have informed them. Mr. Diaper, overjoyed to see them, came with them to town; and, as he knew where I lodged, in Red Lion Street, carried them directly there; but no surprize could exceed theirs, when, upon knowing who they were, my landlord informed them I was a prisoner in the Fleet Prison. My father, after indulging, with my mother and Mr. Diaper, all the grief such news could occasion, enquired if he knew on what account I had gone there, and had kept it a secret from all my friends so long; but he could not satisfy them, and directed them to the spunging-house, where I was carried after my arrest, and there they came to a knowledge of my plaintiff, the nature of the debt, and every thing else that could give them a thorough insight into the affair; at which my father and master were so concerned, they could hardly utter a word for a long time. From thence they waited on Mr. Vulture, and he was so generous as to own that he believed I had never received a penny satisfaction for my note from Mr. Deacon; but that it was the unguarded mistake of a youth, whom he would not have been so severe with, if he could have afforded to stay any longer for his money; but as he did not know, nor I care to tell him, where my relations lived, he found it necessary to arrest me, to secure the payment of it. Mr. Diaper, who knew him, and who was known to Vulture, blamed him highly for not letting him know the affair, when he would have bailed me, and not suffered me to undergo the disgrace and pain of imprisonment; but he excused himself by

saying,

ſaying, that he could not imagine ſo much friendſhip had exiſted between us as that came to. Then they talked to Mr. Deacon's brother, but could not bring him at all to reaſon, though my father talked of commencing a ſuit in equity to recover the money; and demonſtrated, that I could not poſſibly be any thing in his brother's debt. Vulture was applied to again after this, to know if he would come to any compoſition; but he excuſed himſelf by ſaying, he had been the whole money out of pocket ſo long, that he had been a great loſer: however, in compliment to Mr. Diaper, he would deduct the fees and law-charges, and give me a diſcharge on the receipt of the 600l. 'Mr. Diaper and your father,' continues this deareſt mother, 'are now 'in the Lodge, paying your fees, and 'ſetting you at liberty, having paid 'Vulture the ſum upon the note this 'morning betimes; but, my dear, you 'are quite altered; I never thought I 'ſhould ſee my Joey in ſuch a place! 'or ſuch an habit!' She had juſt finiſhed theſe words, when in ruſhed my father and Mr. Diaper. If they expreſſed all the joy imaginable to ſee me again, the forlorn condition I appeared in gave them the utmoſt torment; and my father and he both, though very tenderly, chid me for not acquainting them ſooner with this matter, and writing for the proper ſupport for my neceſſities, whilſt I was here. 'Look ye, my ſon, though you 'have acted ſo ſillily, ſo unguardedly, 'in this affair of the note,' ſays my father, 'yet, as I believe you was 'ſwayed by gratitude to my old friend, 'poor Mr. Deacon, to do what you 'did, and cannot be accuſed of any 'thing but folly and inattention, in 'not taking a proper counter ſecurity 'of him, I ſhall make you no re'proaches, and hope your future con'duct will wipe off any ſtain your 'impriſonment may have occaſioned; 'but now we have got you diſcharged, 'and you are at liberty to go, your 'figure is ſo rueful, that you cannot 'appear till dark.'—'But,' ſays my maſter, 'I fancy, Sir, a little money 'will redeem Mr. Thompſon's cloaths 'ſufficient to appear in; for I ſuppoſe 'he has not ſold them, but committed 'them to the cuſtody of ſome pawn'broker.' To this I anſwered in the affirmative; upon which my dear father gave me ten guineas, and I immediately ſent the runner I uſed to employ, for my cloaths, whilſt they ſatisfied their curioſity in viewing the priſon, the Bare, the coffee-room, &c. and then I got ſhaved and dreſſed, and appeared before them like myſelf. We beſpoke a dinner in the cellar; and my fellow-priſoners, hearing of my diſcharge, thronged into the room to wiſh me joy, which I returned, deſiring them to drink a glaſs of wine; and preſenting them to my father, to whom, when I had informed him of their ſeveral characters, he ordered me to make ſome preſents, if I thought proper; accordingly I did ſo, where I knew it would be acceptable; and gave, in his name and Mr. Diaper's, a conſiderable ſum to the begging-grate. Amongſt the reſt, poor Sir William Failer came to congratulate me; but my father had no ſooner fixed his eyes upon him, than he ran to embrace him; and they exchanged ſuch mutual civilities, as quite ſurprized me. 'And is this your ſon?' cried Sir William; 'I wiſh I had known it 'ſooner, how happy ſhould I have 'been!' My father, who I ſoon perceived had a great regard for him, aſked him how long he had been there. He ſaid, 'Near two years, for a debt of 'forty pounds.'—'Good God!' ſaid my father, 'is it poſſible! *Tempora mu-* '*tantur, & nos mutamur in illis!*'—'Ah, my old chum!' replied Sir William, 'little did I think, ſome years 'ago, ever to ſee this place; but *jacta* '*eſt alea.*—

"——*Quæque ipſe miſerrima vidi;*
"*Et quorum pars magna fui!*"——

After ſome other diſcourſe relative to Sir William's affairs, my father invited him to dinner; and that over, called him on one ſide, and made him a preſent of ten guineas, which he received with a grateful tranſport: then taking leave of all my acquaintance, and clearing all my ſcores and debts in the place, I once more launched out into the open air, and immediately, with theſe three dear and much-loved perſons, ſet out for Mr. Diaper's country-houſe. Mrs. Diaper, at my arrival, overcame me almoſt with careſſes; but, when ſhe had heard my

ſtory,

ſtory, ſhe lifted up her hands and eyes, and ſaid, if her ſon was to know it, ſhe believed he would go diſtracted; and blamed me greatly for not acting with more regard to myſelf, by letting my friends know my diſtreſs; declaring ſhe would have made away with her plate, if it could not have been done without, rather than have ſuffered me to continue in priſon a minute. At ſupper, talking about the place we juſt came from, I acquainted Mr. Diaper with the death of poor Speculiſt, and the manner of it, which occaſioned a great many curious and uſeful reflections on all hands; 'But what moſt 'ſurprizes me is, to ſee Sir William 'Failer ſo deſtitute of friends,' ſays my father; 'though, indeed, when 'we come to conſider all things, it is 'not ſo ſtrange neither; for he has, to 'be ſure, been a very indiſcreet and 'unhappy man; and the paſſages I 'recollect of his life are a remarkable 'leſſon of prudence to mankind.' I aſked him to relate what he knew of that gentleman; which, being backed by Mr. Diaper and the two ladies, he did immediately, to the following effect.

CHAP. VIII.

THE HISTORY OF SIR WILLIAM FAILER, BART.

'MY acquaintance with this gen-'tleman commenced at the 'Univerſity, where he was at that time 'a ſtudent as well as myſelf; Sir Wil-'liam being of Emanuel, and I of St. 'John's; and has been continued till 'within nine or ten years; when his 'various misfortunes and diſtreſſes ſo 'altered him, that he ſought other 'friends of a different ſtamp from 'thoſe he before aſſociated with. You 'will obſerve, in the anecdotes I am 'going to give you of this gentleman's 'hiſtory, that the greateſt talents, the 'fineſt opportunities of riſing in life, 'are of no avail, if a little worldly 'prudence, or care to keep up appear-'ances, and a little ſelf-intereſt alſo, 'for a little is undoubtedly laudable, 'mingle not in our actions.

'Sir William was deſcended from a 'collateral branch of one of the nobleſt 'and moſt antient families in the North 'of Scotland, the heads of which being 'dipped in a late rebellion againſt the 'prince on the throne, were obliged 'to forſake their native country; but, 'however, at preſent, make the bright-'eſt military figures in a neighbouring 'government; one of them being al-'lowed to be as conſummate a general-'officer as any in Europe. He was 'tall, and well-made, had a great deal 'of vivacity and ſpirit, and a finiſhed 'education, which, I aſſure you, you 'now but ſee the remains of: his 'name and family brought him into 'the world with great advantages; 'and, though his paternal eſtate was 'very ſmall, he might, from his know-'ledge of the world, and adroitneſs in 'the management of publick affairs, 'have expected very great encourage-'ment from the people then at the helm 'in the latter end of the reign of her 'late majeſty Queen Anne; but juſt as 'he came to London for good, ſhe died; 'and thoſe friends who were likely to 'aſſiſt his riſe, were out of play. Soon 'after he ſtood candidate to repreſent 'his native borough in parliament, 'but was oppoſed by a courtier of 'great diſtinction, who, by procuring 'a number of honorary freemen to be 'made, carried the election againſt 'him; upon which Sir William peti-'tioned the Houſe, and had ſuch fla-'grant proofs of bribery and corrup-'tion to produce, that it was thought 'proper not to ſuffer him to be heard; 'and, the very night before the hear-'ing came on, he was ſeized by a 'meſſenger, and confined by an order 'from the Secretary of State. Sir 'William was examined to certain 'interrogatories ſeveral times by my 'Lord T——; but behaved with a 'ſpirit and firmneſs that ſurprized that 'ſagacious nobleman, who, from this 'behaviour, commenced a very warm 'friendſhip for him, and recommend-'ed him to another great man, who 'promoted him to a lucrative employ 'in one of our Weſt India colonies, 'where he might have made himſelf 'rich and happy, could he have ſa-'crificed his honour and conſcience to 'views of intereſt, as too many em-'ployed in publick affairs do. A large 'ſum of money came into his hands, 'by way of forfeitures, for which his 'predeceſſors never uſed to account; 'but Sir William, full of the patriot, 'and fraught with all the ſublime

'principles

‘ principles of diſintereſted love of the ‘ publick, refuſed to follow their ex- ‘ ample, and wrote for orders to remit ‘ it to the Treaſury. The mi iſter ‘ wrote him a kind letter, in which he ‘ told him he thought he had as much ‘ right to the money as other perſons ‘ in his office had had, and adviſed ‘ him to ſay no more of the matter; ‘ but he could not ſtomach this, and ‘ accordingly remitted the money, ‘ which was ſafely received; and what ‘ uſe was made of it the publick never ‘ came to the knowledge of; but I re- ‘ member, when Sir William after- ‘ wards came to England, and applied ‘ to the ſame great miniſter for ſome ‘ *pecuniary* favours, he laughed in his ‘ face, and told him he had it once in ‘ his power to make his fortune, by ‘ keeping what, perhaps, was diſſipated ‘ amongſt a parcel of ſcoundrels; ſo ‘ openly did that miniſter acknowledge ‘ the corruption in which he dealt, and ‘ of which, indeed, he was truly the ‘ father. In this colony he became ‘ enamoured of the beauteous Matilda, ‘ a widow lady, of large poſſeſſions, ‘ whom attacking with all the advan- ‘ tages of perſon and power, he ſoon ‘ made a conqueſt of, and married; ‘ but this marriage was ſo far from ‘ being ſo agreeable to Sir William as ‘ he imagined it would; and, the *honey- ‘ moon* over, he found his lady ſtiff, ‘ moroſe, a great devotee, and, even ‘ in the arms of her huſband, uttering ‘ extempore prayers, and doing every ‘ thing according to the maxims of ‘ ſoul-ſeeking and ſaving-grace: terms ‘ which Sir William had as little ‘ notion of the efficacy of, as he had ‘ of the Pope's ſupremacy. In vain ‘ he endeavoured to conquer this de- ‘ vout humour; ſhe was a Preſbyterian ‘ of the moſt finiſhed caſt; and, for ‘ an oath or profane word, uſed in ‘ paſſion, would deprive him of her ‘ bed and company for a month. ‘ One day, I, amongſt others, after ‘ his return to London, dined with ‘ him; it happened to be on a Sunday, ‘ and, after dinner, my lady went to ‘ the meeting, as uſual. Sir William ‘ had been praiſing a parcel of Ma- ‘ deira very highly, but, when he ‘ came to look for the key of his cel- ‘ lar, found my lady had carried it ‘ with her. This was a trick ſhe had ‘ often ſerved him, to prevent his pro- ‘ faning the Sabbath; and he had as ‘ conſtantly vowed to be even with her. ‘ He had a footman, a ſtout fellow, ‘ whom he ordered immediately to aſſiſt ‘ him in taking the cellar door off the ‘ hinges; which done, he laid it upon ‘ his ſhoulders, and ſaw him himſelf ‘ bear it into the meeting-houſe, which ‘ was not at a great diſtance, where he ‘ carried it to his lady's pew, and, ‘ flinging it down, told her his maſter ‘ had ſent the cellar-door to unlock, ‘ ſince ſhe would not leave the key at ‘ home. My lady ſcreamed out; the ‘ preacher was forced to ſtop in the ‘ midſt of his diſcourſe, the hubbub ‘ was ſo great; and, mean time, one ‘ of the elders was turning the foot- ‘ man out of doors; when Sir Wil- ‘ liam appeared, and hallooed out, ‘ “ Look ye, Madam, your affected ‘ “ godlineſs is not to deprive me of my ‘ “ wine; give him the keys directly, ‘ “ or we will carry you in proceſſion ‘ “ upon our ſhoulders, and make you ‘ “ unlock it at home.” My lady ‘ found ſhe was not joked with, ſo ‘ gave the key; but never came home ‘ afterwards; and they parted, by mu- ‘ tual conſent, Sir William ſurrender- ‘ ing up to her uſe, and that of her ‘ children by a former huſband, all ‘ her fortune. Some years after, grow- ‘ ing out at elbows, he ſolicited for, ‘ and obtained a government in North ‘ America, in which he behaved with ‘ ſatisfaction to the government at ‘ home, and to the eaſe and benefit of ‘ the people under his command, for ‘ fifteen years; but was thrown out ‘ by a faction, and came home as poor ‘ as ever. Now he applied all his ta- ‘ lents to drawing up ſchemes for the ‘ uſe of the miniſtry, in which he met ‘ with great encouragement from Ge- ‘ neral Commodus and Sir Houghton ‘ Hall; the firſt of them a patron of ‘ great integrity and credit, and gene- ‘ rous even to a fault; the other as re- ‘ markable for his extenſive power at ‘ the helm. Several of his ſchemes ‘ were put in execution, and he made ‘ ſhift, from the largeſſes that were ‘ beſtowed upon him, to keep the beſt ‘ company, and to ſupport a tolerable ‘ equipage. Undoubtedly no man in ‘ England underſtood more the inte- ‘ reſt of his mother country, or that ‘ of thoſe numerous and beneficial de- ‘ pendents upon her in America; but,

that

'that prime miniſter being forced to 'reſign and retire, he was for ſome 'time unemployed; and having con-'tracted large debts, (for Sir William 'was far from being an œconomiſt in 'his own affairs) he was ſeveral times 'arreſted, and conſigned to loathſome 'priſons, whence he was generally re-'lieved by ſome of his worthy patrons. 'He now turned publick writer, and 'for ſome time plied the quill with 'great ſucceſs; but, that yielding him 'but a ſlender ſupply, he grew ſcan-'dalouſly guilty of borrowing ſmall 'ſums of every one he met, and an 'unfortunate ſecond marriage, to-'gether with this ſad habit, hurt his 'reputation greatly; which was the 'more to be pitied, as he now ad-'vanced apace into years. His diſ-'treſs was told to the generous Com-'modus, who with a princely gene-'roſity made him a preſent of five 'hundred pounds, to pay off his 'troubleſome creditors: but he did 'not know who he had to deal with; 'Sir William ought to have been ma-'ſter of 10,000l. a year, according to 'the dictates of his natural temper. 'He left Commodus full of gratitude, 'and haſtened to an ordinary to regale 'himſelf, not having made an hearty 'meal for ſome days; and who ſhould 'he ſee there but the unfortunate Bel-'lario, a great unhappy friend of his, 'who, after the firſt compliments, told 'him a long ſtory of his preſent diſ-'treſſes? "Good G—d!" cries the 'baronet, "how happy am I, my dear "friend, to have it in my power to "relieve you: here, take this hundred "pound bank-bill, and make your-"ſelf eaſy; if you want more, call on "me to-morrow at my lodgings;" 'thus he went on, forgetting entirely, 'in the native benevolence of his heart, 'the exceſſive occaſion he had for more 'than the whole himſelf, and the in-'tent of it's being beſtowed upon him; 'but a queſtion Bellario put to him a 'little diſconcerted him; he aſked him, 'where it was he lodged: upon which 'he bluſhed, recollecting it was at a 'blind chandler's ſhop; and, taking 'a ſhort leave, haſtened home to pay 'ſix weeks arrears of rent that he owed 'there, before he forgot it. When 'he came home, his landlady's huſ-'band, who was a very honeſt fellow, 'and father of a numerous family, he 'found, by the wife's tears and com-'plaints, was arreſted for a debt of 'five and twenty pounds, which would 'be the total ruin of him and his fa-'mily. Sir William's heart was not 'proof againſt this ſcene of diſtreſs; 'he cried out in an extaſy, "Thank "God! I can relieve him! I will do "it this minute!" ſo pacifying the 'woman, and, putting a guinea into 'her hands, he went and releaſed her 'huſband, and brought him home with 'him, paying the whole debt and 'charges for him. In ſhort, before 'the next week, poor Sir William 'began to fall from all that ſudden 'elevation this money had raiſed his 'honeſt heart to, and was obliged to 'borrow half a crown of a friend, 'dine in a cellar, and ſoon after was 'arreſted in a ſmall action, and car-'ried to the Marſhalſea; whence, in-'deed, Commodus again releaſed him, 'but would never ſee his face more. 'After this he purſued certain ſchemes, 'which he had propoſed for the bene-'fit of the city traders, of which he 'made a good deal of money at times; 'but was frequently interrupted by a 'taylor, to whom he owed a conſider-'able ſum of money, who had put the 'cauſe into the hands of a pettifog-'ging ſcoundrel of a lawyer. This 'lawyer was ſpecial poor, and, when-'ever he wanted a new ſuit of cloaths, 'uſed to frequent the coffee-houſe 'where Sir William uſed, and that 'gentleman never being able to con-'ceal his noble temper, when he was 'full of money, as ſoon as ever he 'diſcovered it, perſuaded the taylor to 'arreſt him; which he no ſooner did, 'than he adviſed him to take the 'charges, and freſh ſecurity for ano-'ther twelve months; ſo that Sir Wil-'liam has been arreſted five times for 'the ſame debt, merely owing to his 'own inattention and the villainy of 'the attorney, who has got as many 'ſuits of cloaths by it; and I believe 'it is that very debt he is now in du-'rance for. I apprehend, Sir Wil-'liam may have been too great a vo-'tary to the fair ſex, and too incau-'tious in thoſe promiſcuous amours, 'which may have diſobliged ſome of 'his friends; but this is certain, by 'what he hinted to me, that, after 'having done his country great ſer-'vices, ſome of which he is ſtill un-

'paid for, and though he is ſtill capable of being of great uſe, particularly in America, and underſtands the fiſhery of Great Britain better than any man in the kingdom, yet his application to a great man only for five ſhillings *per diem* has been rejected, and he is in a downright ſtarving condition, which I think is a diſgrace to our country. He has put into my hands the copy of the very touching letter he wrote to that great man, by which one may ſee the diſtreſs he laboured under; and I think myſelf happy that it was in my power to give him ſome aſſiſtance. My father then read the letter, which was as follows, dated from the Fleet Priſon—

"RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR,

"I Have now been confined in priſon "near five months, for a debt "under the value of thirty pounds; "and, as I do not truly owe fifty "pounds beſides in the world, I am "no ways apprehenſive of any other "conſiderable demand of that nature.

"On my firſt hearing of the intended ſettling of ———, and by that "means ſecuring an important barrier "to all the colonies in the main, as "well as encouraging our trade both "in the fiſhery, and with the diſtant "Indians, I was uneaſy that my unhappy confinement would not permit me to do myſelf the honour of "waiting on you, in order to acquaint "you with a great many truths, ſome "of which perhaps are yet unknown "to you. For, altogether regardleſs "of any particular advantage that "ſuch information could bring to myſelf, I moſt humbly preſume to aſſure you, that, without diſſimulation or reſerve, I ſhall always take "the greateſt pleaſure imaginable, in "rendering a perſon of your amiable "character, and my country, at the "ſame time, real ſervice, acting in "ſuch a manner having always been "my ambition, as it gave me the "greateſt ſatisfaction in life, and ſtill "affords me, in the preſent diſtreſs, "a quiet contented mind.

"There are ſome other things eſſential to the affairs of America that "I wiſh could be laid before you, "ſuch as the nature and uſe of a paper "currency there, the neceſſity of putting it under a proper regulation, "and the unavoidable conſequence of "utterly ruining our trade in, and "with theſe colonies, ſhould it be totally prohibited.

"I have likewiſe ſome uſeful remarks to offer on a proper encouragement to be given for carrying "on both the herring and cod fiſhery, "on the north coaſt of Scotland; and "I ſhould think myſelf ſufficiently "rewarded, if any knowledge or induſtry I am maſter of, could but "procure me ſo ſmall an encouragement as five ſhillings a day for common bread; and having now but a "very few years to live, if your honour will condeſcend to gratify your "own humanity, by procuring me "liberty, together with ſuch an allowance for my ſubſiſtence, it will "undoubtedly afford you the agreeable reflection of having ſaved, from "inexpreſſible want and miſery, *right honourable Sir, your honour's moſt dutiful and ever obedient ſervant,*

"WILLIAM FAILER."

CHAP. IX.

HE PERSISTS IN HIS DESIGN OF GOING ABROAD—PRIG ARRIVES, WHOM HE CONSULTS—LUCKILY THINKS OF APPLYING TO MR. GOODWILL—THAT GENTLEMAN ARRIVES AT MR. DIAPER'S—HE PERSUADES MR. THOMPSON TO LET HIS SON GO TO THE EAST INDIES—MR. GOODWILL PROCURES HIM TO BE SENT AS A FACTOR TO FORT ST. GEORGE—HE TAKES LEAVE OF THE DIRECTORS—IS NOBLY FITTED OUT FOR THE VOYAGE.

WE ſpent three or four days in this receſs, and I took it ſo kindly and gratefully, that my father nor Mr. Diaper ever reproached me, or mentioned my late folly, that I was full of a ſenſe of their goodneſs, which gave me more than uſual inclination to pleaſe in every thing I did; and I even, for ſome time, ſacrificed my cruel regrets to the joy and pleaſure I experienced in the company of theſe dear perſons. I found Mr. Diaper had not yet heard from my friend again, which

which did not give us much uneaſineſs, as no India ſhip had arrived, ſince he ſet ſail from Liſbon; but, to make us ſome amends, we received letters from Mr. Bellair and Miſs Sukey, accompanied with ſome preſents to Mrs. Diaper, by which we found that lady and her brother in the ſame ſentiments of my friend, and longing for advices from him.

Notwithſtanding the eaſe and compoſure, however, that I affected, I was under a good deal of concern to ſee my father and Mr. Diaper ſtill in an humour of ſettling me in the buſineſs of a linen-draper, to which I had now loſt all manner of reliſh; and to which the departure of my friend had not a little contributed: beſides, the many accidents that I had met with, the death of my Louiſa; together with the life I had lately led, had given me a repugnance to a cloſe application, and a courſe of hurry and trade: this, though, was not making a proper judgment of things, for, in the execution of my deſign of going abroad, if I had thought only of the common difficulties that would naturally occur, and the care I muſt manage with to bring myſelf into a wiſhed ſtate of ſucceſs, I believe I ſhould have laid it abſolutely aſide; but now I ſaw, I thought, a relief from my afflictions, in thus ſhifting the ſcene of action, by the variety of unuſual objects that would preſent themſelves; and, in ſhort, my hapleſs love had given a romantick turn to my mind, which abſolutely unhinged me for an home employment. I ſhould not have known how to manage in this dilemma, if good fortune had not returned Mr. Prig to town, who immediately came down to pay his compliments to Mr. Diaper and us, upon hearing we were all together. He was received with great reſpect by that gentleman and my father, to whom I introduced him with particular expreſſions of regard; but, as for myſelf, I felt unuſual ſatisfaction in ſeeing a man, who was now my only boſom friend, and the repoſitory of my ſecrets.

He was to the laſt degree ſurprized when he heard of my impriſonment, and the affair of Mr. Deacon; but it was his advice to ſit down with the loſs; for though, by filing a bill in Chancery, perhaps ſome relief might be got, yet the time it would employ, and the neceſſary expences, previous to the obtaining any ſatisfaction, would be ſo great a diſcouragement, that we ſhould be heartily ſick and tired, before it would be terminated. My father, who was an enemy to long and tedious litigations, upon theſe advices, agreed to let the affair drop, telling me, with a great deal of good-humour, that he would look upon it as a debt due to him from me, whenever I was able to pay him.

When I could conveniently do it, I took my friend Prig with me upon a ride, and diſcloſed to him my ſituation, and the eager deſire I had to follow Mr. Diaper's example, by going abroad; for which I gave him ſuch reaſons, that, finding all his perſuaſions to the contrary of no avail, he heartily promiſed me his aſſiſtance to bring over my father and mother to lay aſide their thoughts of ſeeing me fixed in England; and now we began to think of the beſt means to bring it to bear, when, luckily, I recollected that Mr. Goodwill had an uncle in the direction of the Eaſt India Company, and determined to write to that gentleman to uſe his intereſt with him, for my obtaining ſomewhat in their ſervice, which I had all the reaſon in the world to believe he would employ with a great deal of pleaſure; and, accordingly, that very evening I wrote to him, acquainting him with my requeſt and my inducements for it; and another letter to his lady, to back me in my deſire; and ſent them directly to the poſt. Mean time, I endeavoured to keep my father from making any progreſs in my affairs, by propoſing continual parties of pleaſure to him and Mr. Diaper, which they readily engaged in, upon the conſideration of the confinement I had ſuffered, which they imagined muſt have conſiderably hurt my conſtitution, and rendered air and the amuſements of the country neceſſary to re-eſtabliſh my health; and my mother, as well as my father, was very careful never to mention Sir Walter or his family, which I was glad of; for the leaſt word of my dear Louiſa would have caſt me into my old melancholy, which I was now ſomewhat relieved from by the purſuit of my favourite project. At length a letter arrived from Yorkſhire, which,

to my ſurprize, only contained theſe words—

'DEAR SIR,

'MR. Goodwill will be in town 'almoſt as ſoon as you receive 'this; and I believe I ſhall alſo have 'the happineſs to ſee you myſelf.

'*Your moſt affectionate friend,*

'K. GOODWILL.'

I could hardly tell what to think of Mr. Goodwill's not writing himſelf, and the laconick ſtrain of this epiſtle from his wife, and waited impatiently another week for the event; for I had wrote to Mr. Goodwill, to be ſo good to ſend a letter to my father, and to endeavour therein to bring him to conſent, by repreſenting the ſervice he could do me, if it were in his power. The week was hardly expired, when, as we were one morning at breakfaſt, a coach and ſix drove up to the houſe, which Mr. Diaper was wondering at; when my mother, clapping her hands for joy, cried out, 'I am ſure, Joe, 'that livery belongs to a very great 'friend of yours;' and ſo it did, indeed, and ſpringing from my ſeat I ran to the door before any of the ſervants, and, opening it, flew to the coach-ſide, where Mr. Goodwill and his lady were juſt alighted, who claſped me in his arms, with affection, telling me, 'You ſee, Mr. Thompſon, 'I don't do things by halves; but am 'come to town myſelf on purpoſe to 'ſerve you.' I returned him my thanks, as well as my confuſed joy would permit, and ran to ſalute his lady, who was in raptures to ſee me, and ſaid an hundred obliging things. My father and Mr. Diaper, with the two ladies, ſoon approached, and the interchange of compliments was very polite and endearing, and my father, who had, before he came to town, been ſeveral times at Mr. Goodwill's, introduced them to Mr. Diaper and his ſpouſe, who expreſſed their ſatisfaction at the honour that was done them, in terms that ſhewed how much they thought themſelves obliged. When the firſt hurry of our ſpirits was over, my father aſked, to what happy turn it was that we owed the pleaſure of ſeeing them: upon which Mrs. Goodwill told him, laughing, that he ſhould ſoon know that, and, perhaps, when he came to be informed, he would wiſh they had never come at all; but he replied, that, ſince ſhe could behave ſo merrily upon the occaſion, he was ſure it was nothing that could make him uneaſy, for he, next to the ſon they had preſerved him, reſpected her and Mr. Goodwill, ſecond to no perſons on earth. The converſation then became general, and the day was ſpent moſt agreeably, the evening concluding with mirth, in which Prig, who ſoon after arrived, was a ſharer; and the health of my friend was not forgot to be toaſted over and over, to whom this amiable pair expreſſed ſo much value, that Mr. Diaper and his mother were full of acknowledgments for it.

The next morning, after breakfaſt, (for Mr. Diaper, who had room enough, inſiſted upon, and obtained their company, for two or three days, with their whole equipage) taking an hint from Mr. Goodwill, I went out, and left them all together, when I was ſenſible he would bring the matter of my deſire upon the anvil; nor was I miſtaken, for I was ſent for in, in about two hours, by my friend Prig, who told me he believed all things were made eaſy for me, and that I ſhould hear ſomething that would ſurprize me. I followed him into the parlour, where I had left them, and perceived my mother was drying her eyes, which gave me ſome pain. 'So, 'Joey,' ſays my father, 'I find you 'have put a trick upon us; and yet 'ſuch an one, that, as it has afforded 'us the company of ſuch valuable 'friends, I can't be angry at. So 'you are willing to leave us in purſuit 'of adventures, I find; but Mr. 'Goodwill has ſaid ſo much in favour 'of your ſcheme, and has been ſo 'well backed by Mr. Prig, that, 'notwithſtanding all my reluctance, I 'believe I muſt yield to part with you, 'if you can bring your mother to a 'compliance, who ſeems more averſe 'to loſing you than any one. Mean 'time, pray return that good friend 'of yours,' pointing to Mr. Goodwill, 'thanks; for he has been offer-'ing ſuch things in your favour, that 'convince me he loves you as much as 'if you were his own ſon.' I advanced to him, and thanked him, with an

an action betokening all the gratitude of my mind; and then endeavoured, by all the perſuaſions I was maſter of, to bring my dear mother to accord to my going abroad; which, with great reluctance, I at length did; and then they all lamented my not going at the ſame time with my friend, as Mr. Goodwill was certain he could have got the ſame voyage for me, by his intereſt: but nobody ſeemed more ſorry on that account than Mr. Diaper and his lady, who hoped, however, we ſhould encounter each other in ſome part or other of the voyage, which it was far from impoſſible we ſhould do. We then, agreeable to a deſire of Mr. Goodwill, all conſented to accompany him to his houſe in town, where he inſiſted we ſhould ſpend the time till my embarkation, which would be ſoon, as the Company were now taking up ſhips to ſend out to their ſeveral factories; and he did not doubt of procuring me a very good birth in one of them. My father told him, he left it entirely to his management; and was ſure he could give his ſon into no better hands.

At our arrival in town, we were received and entertained with great magnificence; and the day after it, Mr. Goodwill took me with him to wait upon his uncle, who, the firſt minute he mentioned his requeſt, aſſured him I ſhould be provided for immediately; and mentioned one Captain Social, of the Haſtings, bound to Fort St. George, as a man of a good diſpoſition; and that he hoped to procure a factory for me at that place, which he thought would be more advantageous than the buſineſs of a ſupercargo; and would adviſe me, when I was appointed, to go with him. We left him, quite pleaſed with our viſit, Mr. Goodwill not doubting he would be as good as his word. 'And now, 'Mr. Thompſon,' ſays he, 'I'll per-'ſuade Mrs. Goodwill to ſend a ven-'ture of a couple of thouſand pounds 'by you, which you ſhall make the 'moſt of.' I embraced him at this freſh mark of his kindneſs, and returned home as briſk and lively as ever I was in my life, fired with the expectations of my new deſtination, and the pleaſures I ſhould experience in viewin foreign countries, improving my fortune, and making my friends happy. Two or three days after I received an order to attend the Board of Directors, which I accordingly did the next day, and think I never was more ſtruck with any thing than the ſight of a number of gentlemen, through whoſe hands the concerns of ſo important and extenſive a traffick paſſed, and who managed the affairs of ſuch a tract of country as they poſſeſſed in Aſia, ſuperior to the dominions of ſome European princes in magnitude. I was received in ſuch a manner, as convinced me how powerful my recommendations had been; and, after enquiring into my abilities, and the profeſſion I had followed, I was informed I was appointed a factor at Fort St. George, and that I muſt prepare to embark in a fortnight's time, on board the Haſtings, Captain Social, bound to that place. They then gave me ſome leſſons of fidelity and honour in managing the concerns that would be committed to my care; and, after having ſeen the proper ſecurities taken, very politely wiſhed me a good voyage, with health and proſperity in the country. We then, that is, myſelf and Mr. Goodwill, and my father, went with Mr. Goodwill's uncle home, where we returned him our thanks, in a proper manner, and ſtaid to dine with him, when he gave me all the intelligence he could of the nature of my poſt, and the country, where he had been himſelf ſome years; which afterwards was of very great uſe and ſervice to me.

Thus all things ſettled, my father applied himſelf to fit me out in an handſome manner, in which he ſpared no coſt; and the joint endeavours of Mr. and Mrs. Diaper, my mother, and Mrs. Goodwill, furniſhed me with every thing in ſuch profuſion, that I believe never any body was better provided; and, amongſt other things, my father took care to buy me a choice collection of books.

CHAP. X.

MR. THOMPSON GIVES HIS SON A PAPER OF INSTRUCTIONS, FOR THE MANAGEMENT OF HIS CONDUCT—MR. DIAPER RESOLVES, WITH HIS SPOUSE, TO SPEND SOME TIME IN YORKSHIRE—

PRIG

PRIG EMPLOYED ADVANTAGEOUSLY BY MR. GOODWILL — THEY ACCOMPANY THOMPSON TO DOVER — THEIR TENDER PARTING — HE EMBARKS ON BOARD THE HASTINGS, CAPTAIN SOCIAL, COMMANDER — THEY WEIGH ANCHOR, AND SET SAIL ON THEIR VOYAGE TO THE EAST-INDIES.

THE nearer the time of my departure approached, the more ſenſibly my father and mother were affected at the thoughts of loſing me; and, indeed, I myſelf felt all that anxiety that is ſo natural, at a view of the diſtance that would ſoon divide me from all I held dear. Mrs. Goodwill and Mrs. Diaper caught the infectious concern from my mother; and the former began to be ſorry ſhe had uſed any means to forward my going. I ſpent as much time as I could with theſe worthy women, and endeavoured, in concert with the other gentlemen, to diſſipate, as much as poſſible, the uneaſineſs that poſſeſſed my mother's mind, and to cure her of thoſe apprehenſive thoughts ſhe entertained of the diſaſters that might happen to me.

My father, one morning, took me aſide; and, taking me into his arms, whilſt he indulged a few tears, which rolled down his cheeks, ſaid, 'My 'dear ſon, you are going to be divided 'from me—perhaps for ever. I have 'yielded to your importunity; and, 'now I have done ſo, I am uneaſy for 'the event: however, that Being, who 'orders every thing for the beſt, will, 'I hope, guide and protect you, proſper your ways, and return you ſafe 'to your diſconſolate parent, whoſe 'only comfort you are, and to the 'arms of your valuable friends. I 'have drawn up here a ſet of inſtructions for you, my dear, which I 'recommend to your frequent peruſal, that ſo, when you are far from 'me, your father's care may ſtill follow you. If you act agreeably 'thereto, which I don't at all doubt, 'you will be happy.' He ceaſed here, and gave me the dear paper, over which I ſhed many tears; and ſhall never forget the affectionate and truly excellent contents, which were as follow.

'MY DEAREST SON,

'HARD as it is to think of part-'ing with you, I yield to your 'deſires, and commit you to the care 'of that overſeeing Providence, that 'directs and governs all the actions of 'our lives; but as you have diſappointed all thoſe ſanguine hopes and 'expectations I had fondly raiſed to 'myſelf, of immmediately ſeeing you 'ſettled in your native country, and 'receiving that comfort and pleaſure 'the knowledge of your being near 'me would have inſpired; and you 'are going to launch into an uncer-'tain ocean of difficulties, and to en-'counter the unavoidable dangers of 'a long and tedious voyage, and a ſo-'journ in a diſtant, ſultry climate, ob-'noxious to the health of the inhabi-'tants of theſe northern countries; 'you are bound, by the moſt ſacred 'ties, to act agreeably to the dictates 'of wiſdom and virtue, and, as much 'as lies in your own power, to pre-'ſerve yourſelf ſafe, that you may 'return once more to bleſs me, before 'I die. You will, therefore, excuſe 'to the affection and the tenderneſs of 'a parent, that I give you ſome leſ-'ſons for the government of your-'ſelf, in your hazardous undertak-'ing; though I am ſenſible your good 'ſenſe, and your excellent endow-'ments of mind, render it in ſome 'meaſure unneceſſary.

'In the firſt place, oh, my ſon! pre-'ſerve, in all your words and actions, 'a thorough veneration and regard for 'the Divine Being; let nothing buy 'your attention from that object of 'your thoughts, have an *intention* to 'pleaſe him in all you do, be conſtant 'in ſuch acts of grateful devotion to 'him as raiſe the ſoul from it's earthly 'fetters, and will ſecure an eaſe and 'calm of mind in the greateſt diſ-'treſſes and troubles you can meet 'with.

'I need not inculcate to you, I 'hope, to perſevere in the ſteady prac-'tice of the precepts of your immor-'tal Saviour, and, by adhering to 'thoſe maxims of virtue and religion 'you have imbibed, ſecure yourſelf, 'at all events, a place where ſorrow 'never ſhall come, nor ſin and death 'ſhall ever abide. This practice will 'always keep your breaſt tranquil and

'eaſy,

'easy, amidst the most torturing hard-'ships; and, were the whole world, as 'Horace says, to feel a general disso-'lution, you would hear the mighty 'shock with unconcern, and unap-'paled.

'To your superiors shew a gene-'rous and disinterested respect; to 'your equals, an honest, open free-'dom; and to your inferiors, a good-'natured humanity, and a proper sen-'sibility of what they do to serve 'you.

'In the Company's concerns, be-'have with a fidelity, that your own 'heart shall never reproach you with; 'and in such legal opportunities as 'occur, of profiting yourself, shew 'no greediness, no rapacious avarice; 'and those riches you thus may chance 'to acquire, will be as balm to your 'mind, and you will never survey 'them with that peevish anxiety ill-'bought wealth does always occa-'sion.

'Never affect superior knowledge to 'those you are concerned with; and, 'in dealing with the natives of the 'country you are proceeding to, let 'them see that you are a real Chris-'tian, and that that sets you above 'them, in sincerity, honour, and ho-'nesty, as much as it does in your fu-'ture expectations of hereafter; then, 'perhaps, though you are not re-'quired to step out of your road, to 'attempt it, you may make them ena-'moured of those doctrines you pro-'fess, and become partakers of the 'cross of Christ.

'Be not hasty nor passionate, the 'common fault of those who reside 'long in hot countries; passion de-'forms the visage, hurts the bosom, 'and renders a man uneasy in him-'self, and odious to those about him.

'Drink with moderation, for your 'health's sake. I charge you to 'avoid all intemperance of that kind, 'which destroys such multitudes in 'the Indies. Look upon yourself as 'accountable for your life, and the 'use of it, to the Author of your 'being; and that your father and 'mother's happiness or misery here 'depend upon it's valuableness and 'preservation.

'Adieu, my beloved son! may 'success crown all your lawful and 'honourable undertakings! and may 'you be returned safe and happy, at 'length, to the embraces of *your most 'affectionate and tender father*,

'WILLIAM THOMPSON!'

I received a great deal of satisfac-tion, before my departure, upon un-derstanding that Mr. Diaper had yield-ed to the desires of my father, mother, and Mr. and Mrs. Goodwill, to go with his family to spend some months in Yorkshire, partly at one house, and partly at the other; and that they were also to set out to go there as soon as they had seen me safely embarked: thus I had the pleasure to contemplate, that all these dear and valuable per-sons would be together, to console and comfort each other, under the concern my absence, and that of my friend, would naturally occasion to two such fathers, of whom we were the only children, and the solace of their age; and Mr. Goodwill was so taken with Prig, that he promised him the ma-nagement of all his concerns, and gave him a deputation to act as his steward, in three or four manors he possessed in the county of Hertford; insisting, also, he should take a journey into Yorkshire, at the same time, which he readily complied with, as it was now vacation; and that particularly gave me great delight, as by him I sent letters to Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miss Sukey, with an account of all that had happened; and recom-mended him to them, as a proper hand to convey their letters to, for me and Mr. Diaper, and to transmit our an-swers to them, when they arrived in London.

When Captain Social informed me he was to fall down to Gravesend, I would have gone on board; but he very genteelly told me, that he believ-ed he should come to in the Downs; or if not, that if I would immediately set out for Dover, he would shorten sail till a boat could bring me on board from that place, or Deal. I took him at his word; and, all my friends re-solving to accompany me, we arrived, without any remarkable accident, at the first-mentioned place, and found the Hastings had not yet come round; but she did that very night, and, the wind

wind dying away, the captain came to anchor in the Downs, and came on ſhore, with ſeveral gentlemen, bound on the voyage with us, to pay their compliments to my friends, and receive their fellow-paſſenger; ſo that our inn was filled with gueſts; and Mr. Goodwill would purſue his generoſity ſo far as to entertain us all. We ſtrove to keep up our ſpirits, as well as we could; but ſtill were all very heavy-hearted; though my father put on all the gaiety that he could poſſibly, to divert the reſt: at laſt the dreadful word was given, that we muſt repair on board; and, whilſt the captain and the reſt went down to the boat, I prepared, with an heavy heart, to take a long adieu of my friends. Mr. Goodwill himſelf was ſtruck a little at the mournful ſcene, notwithſtanding all his philoſophy; and the big drops ſtood in Prig's eyes, who could not utter a ſyllable. Mr. Diaper behaved with as little compoſure as when he parted with his own ſon; his wife and Mrs. Goodwill diſſolved into tears; my father claſped me in his arms, with the utmoſt fervour, and beſtowed ten thouſand bleſſings upon me, and put up his prayers for my ſafety. I embraced my dear mother, whoſe grief would hardly permit her to return the careſſes I gave her; and, as for myſelf, I was a kind of weeping, inanimate chorus to every thing that was ſaid or done. We parted; and the ſeparation of the ſoul from the body, methought, could not be more dreadful! Mr. Goodwill and Mr. Diaper could only ſee me to the boat, where, after embracing each other, without ſaying a word, I caſt myſelf into it, and a flood of tears relieved my anxious boſom. I really thought I could have ſtood this adieu with more firmneſs; but I even ſobbed, and my breaſt heaved, painfully, with the ſtruggling ſorrow; ſo that I was incapable of turning my eyes towards the ſhore again, dreading, yet longing, ſtill to behold, once more, the dear people I had forſaken.

When we came on board, the captain ordered a bowl of punch, to waſh down ſorrow; telling me, at the ſame time, that he had not been more moved himſelf a great while, than at the condition he ſaw me in, and my friends; adding, that he did not doubt but our meeting again would be as affecting. I dried my tears at the mirth my companions aſſumed; began to reaſon with myſelf, and became calm and ſociable, not without putting up ſome ſilent petitions to Heaven, for the health and ſafety of thoſe I had left, and my own happy voyage. Whilſt we were weighing anchor, a boat came on board, with ſome live ſtock, and ſome dozens of wine, which my father had ſent as an additional preſent for our ſtores, and ſeveral other favours of the like kind from Mr. Diaper, with their kind love to me, and their reſpects to the reſt of the meſs; and a ſervant of Mr. Goodwill's, who came in it, gave me a letter, which, by the ſuperſcription, I knew to be my deareſt mother's hand; and, though I had been abſent but an hour, I was ready to kiſs the fellow, as a perſon whom I had not ſeen for an age, and who brought tidings from the dead. I perceived there was ſomewhat incloſed; and the man telling me I was deſired not to open it till I got out to ſea, I put it up ſecurely in my pocket, and wrote a few lines to the dear woman, and the reſt of my friends, in ſuch terms as my preſent tender ſituation dictated.

An eaſterly gale ſoon after ſpringing up, we finiſhed getting up our anchor, with the ſhouts of the crew, to whom we had given a handſome quantity of liquor; and Captain Social ſaluted the town with ten guns, and added as many more, in compliment to our friends, who, coming on the ſhore, purſued us with eager eyes, as far as ſight could follow us—

'I ſhook my hand at diſtance on the main:
'They took the ſign, and ſhook their hands
'again.'

I was charmed in ſailing along the chalky coaſts, to obſerve the country all beſpread with towns, which had a fine romantick effect upon the ſight, and could not fail of being highly entertaining to perſons who had never been at ſea before; and what gave me great joy was, that, after a little qualmiſhneſs, I felt no more ſickneſs then, or all the voyage after. With a ſigh I took leave of England, as we paſſed that famous promontory, the

Land's

Land's End, which we did the next morning betimes, extremely glad to have cleared the channel; and—

'Now dreaded Scilly mocks the ſtraining
'ſight,
'Whoſe uſeful fires, expiring, faintly gleam.'

And we are loſt, in the vaſt Atlantick ocean, to any other objects than ſky and water.

CHAP. XI.

HE OPENS HIS MOTHER'S LETTER, AND FINDS A PICTURE OF HIS LOUISA—THEY MEET WITH A TERRIBLE STORM—DISCOVER A VESSEL ON FIRE, WHICH BLOWS UP—THEY RECEIVE THE CREW OF HER ON BOARD—THOMPSON DISCOVERS AN OLD FRIEND AMONGST THEM—THEIR ACCOUNT OF THE MISFORTUNE.

MY new way of life agreed with me exceedingly well, and I felt myſelf ſo briſk and lively, that I thought I was perfectly inſpired by every breeze that breathed through our ſails. Beſide the officers of the ſhip, we had ſeveral other gentlemen on board, ſome, like myſelf, going in the Company's ſervice, others to ſettle, for the ſake of improving their fortunes, at their factories in the Eaſt Indies, by trafficking on their own bottoms; and we were in general a very ſociable and friendly ſet of people, who having ſeen the world, and being intelligent and improved in their minds, formed an entertaining and agreeable ſociety. We had laid in ſuch a ſtock of proviſions and liquors of all kinds, that we had little to fear of wanting any of the conveniences of life, in ſo long a voyage, if we were favoured with a tolerable paſſage. The captain relinquiſhed much of the uſual ceremony practiſed by gentlemen of his rank, and we formed a meſs together, that made every thing ſatisfactory about us, and in all our actions we ſhewed an inclination to pleaſe each other. My cabbin was large and commodious, and ſufficient for me and a faithful domeſtick, Will Truman, who had long lived with my father, and, out of pure affection, reſolved to follow the fortunes of his ſon.

We had no ſooner got out to ſea, than I opened my mother's letter, and oh! what was my joy, what my ſorrow, to behold, in a gold-caſe, ſet with ſmall brilliants, the picture, in miniature, of my dear, my lovely Louiſa! Wonder ſeized me at viewing the unexpected image of that eternally adored fair-one, and all my regret for her loſs revived afreſh, and kindled up remembrances in my ſoul, which time and my preſent views had ſomewhat ſtifled. I kiſſed the ſweet reſemblance, over and over, and hung it by a ribband to my boſom, reſolving to keep it there till the hour of my death. In the hurry of my ſpirits, I forgot for ſome time to look at the letter that conveyed this ineſtimable preſent; but, when I became calmer, I found it to the following effect—

'MY DEAREST, MUCH-LOVED SON,

'THOUGH I blame myſelf for 'renewing your trouble, at the 'ſight of this jewel, yet I cannot keep 'it longer from you, as it is your un'doubted property. Some time before 'our dear Louiſa's aunt ſet out for 'France, after her niece's death, a 'footman came from her with a letter, 'and this precious relick. If the 'ſight of it ſurprized me greatly, the 'contents of the letter gave me ſtill 'more aſtoniſhment; ſhe ſaid, her 'niece, on her death-bed, had de'ſired it might be ſent to me, as a 'token of the reſpect and love ſhe 'bore to the mother of a gentleman 'who was infinitely dear to her, and 'for whom it was originally intended, 'if fate had not deprived her of him 'in ſo cruel a manner. By Fidele, I 'afterwards underſtood the meaning 'of theſe expreſſions, which were then 'quite dark to me, and that the news 'of your death had given her the fa'tal ſtroke, that loſt her to us for ever. 'But, my ſon, you live, thank God, 'and may you live long and happy! 'Whenever you look at that ſweet 'face, conſider my loſs in our Louiſa, 'and preſerve yourſelf, to make me 'amends for my affection to both of 'you. Oh! my dear, my heart is 'too full, at this ſeparation, to ſay 'more! Heavens guard, protect, and

'keep you; make you happy where 'you are going, and return you safe, 'to bless the fondly-longing sight of 'your *most tenderly affectionate mother*,

'ELIZABETH THOMPSON.'

Propitious gales carried us, without any remarkable occurrence, to the height of Cape Cantin, to the north-west of which we were by our reckonings distant about 120 leagues, when we began to apprehend a gathering storm. The clouds on the western board began to blacken the skies, and a few melancholy drops wept a farewel to one of the finest days I had ever, methought, experienced: and now the lightnings flashed, and the hoarse thunder growled over the concave vault with deafening roar, as if whole nature was meeting with a general dissolution, and presently the impetuous west wind raised the irritated billows mountains high. Our commander had given his orders, with such just discernment, that we were prepared we thought to meet it's worst efforts; but the redoubled fury of the storm soon rendered our situation very dangerous, and, before we could hand our mainsail, it was split into twenty pieces, and kept flapping against the mast for some time, before a short lull of the wind would permit it to be run up to the yard. If I had ever had advantageous notions of our British seamen, I now more than ever found them just, and their diligence and bravery, on such occasions, surely dignifies them before those of any country I ever knew. Not an hand but was employed in executing some order or other, for the safety of the vessel; and to see them, like swarms of bees, hanging on the yards, was a sight equally pleasing and dreadful. The tempest increased with greater violence, and the waves tossed us aloft, and then sunk us alow, with such sudden shocks, that my brains were perfectly addled; and, notwithstanding all the force I used with myself, I could stand the deck no longer, but followed the example of the rest of the passengers, and committed myself to the safe custody of my cabbin. The horrid tumult upon deck, the piping of the boatswain and his mates, mingling with the howling of the winds, and the continual dashing of the foaming waves, made such a confusion, as was sufficient to stun the head of any stranger to these uncouth and terrifying scenes. For near four and twenty hours we lay to; but, though to us all this gave excessive pain, when it was in the height, Captain Social told me, it was nothing at all but good seaman's weather, and swore he was tired of the little action he had had so long before. About noon, the next day, the skies began to clear, the wind seemed to die away in gentle sobbings, and soon the heavens were serene; the sun darted his brightening rays upon us, and we felt no incommodity but the ship's rolling motion, occasioned by the great tumbling sea the storm had left behind it, and which put the seamen into more apprehension than the foregoing blasts had occasioned; but in the evening a stark calm succeeded, and the surface of the water was as smooth as a mill-pond. The descending sun formed a kind of dusky amphitheatre around our horizon; the azure firmament was illuminated with all the glorious shining host that adorn those spacious plains, till the moon—

'Rising in clouded majesty, at length,
'Apparent queen, unveil'd her peerless light,
'And o'er the deep her silver mantle threw!'

A scene this, that raised my mind into such a state of wondering devotion, as I could not, if I may say so, even in thought express; at last I broke out into a soliloquy somewhat like this: 'Oh, infinite Creator! benign Go-'vernor of the universe! *How mani-'fold are thy works! In wonder hast 'thou made them all! Day by day we 'magnify thee, the Father of a boundless 'majesty.* Permit an humble mortal to 'prostrate before thee, and worship thy 'immense omnipotence! Can we be 'ungrateful when thou hast given us 'faculties above all the rest of thy crea-'tures here below, to contemplate thy 'works, to reverence thy forming 'wisdom? How low, how unworthy, 'I seem, how little to myself, when 'I reflect, that all yon splendid sparks, 'that, glittering, chear me with their 'influence, may be worlds, more wor-'thy thy care and protection, than the 'yet not well known spot, of which 'I am an inhabitant! But, oh! for-

'give

'give the attempts we make to ſearch
'into thy hidden treaſures, the ſtores
'of thy eternal creation, the arcana
'thou haſt every where around ſtrewed;
'for, by our reſearches, we are ſtill
'more and more convinced, that *thy*
'*ways are paſt finding out*, and our
'adoration is raiſed in proportion to
'the diſcoveries we fancy we make!
'Lowly bending before thee—

"Supremeſt Good! whoſe providential ſway
"Remoteſt ſeas, far proſtrate nations tell;
"Whether ador'd inviſible, all pure,
"Diffuſe as light throughout eternal ſpace;
"Or circumſcrib'd, a local deity,
"As narrow ignorance has oft maintain'd;
"Accept our grateful praiſe, which, taught
" to riſe
"From our glad hearts, invades thy op'ning
" ears,
"For every inſtance of thy gracious aid,
"For every wonder in our favour wrought,
"Whilſt roving thus thro' ocean's utmoſt
" bounds!"

In the morning we were bleſſed with a fine eaſy gale, that carried us at the rate of two knots an hour, ſo ſmoothly, that we could hardly perceive the way the veſſel made—

'————————a breeze
'Soft, breathing lightly with it's wings,
' along
'The ſlacken'd cordage glides; the ſailor's
' ear
'Perceives no ſound throughout the vaſt
' expanſe;
'None but the murmurs of the ſliding prow,
'Which gently parts the ſmooth and azure
' main.'

GLOVER.

In latitude 20°, 10′, about a week afterwards, whilſt we were endeavouring to ſtand away to the Cape de Verde Iſlands, we heard ſeveral guns fired, as from a ſhip in diſtreſs; which ſignals our captain anſwered, and ſtood far to the weſtward, more than his courſe required, as we imagined the ſound came from that point of the compaſs: they continued firing for ſeveral glaſſes, and then we diſcovered a great light at ſome leagues diſtance, as if a ſhip on fire, which made a moſt terrible appearance; and, ſoon after we had deſcried her, ſhe blew up, the fire extinguiſhed, and a black thick cloud ſeemed to riſe from the water. We made no doubt that the crew had had time enough to ſave themſelves in their boats; ſo the captain ſhortened ſail, and fired a gun every half hour to acquaint the unhappy ſufferers that aſſiſtance was at hand. About twelve next day, having happily very favourable weather all the time, we ſaw, as far as our glaſſes would enable us to ſee, a boat crouded with men, who ſeemed ſtruggling, with all their might, to gain our veſſel; upon which Captain Social took in more ſail, and, about ſeven o'clock, the poor creatures, almoſt ſpent, and dead with fatigue, got within a boat's length of the ſhip's ſide; whence they hailed us, and begged, for God's ſake, to be taken on board. This was immediately granted, and, backing the ſails, they all got ſafely in, to the number of forty-ſix ſouls. I never received more pleaſure than in ſeeing how eager the generous ſeaman is in relieving his fellow in diſtreſs; every man ſtrove who ſhould be foremoſt, in giving them or procuring them refreſhment; and, on our part, the captain, as we underſtood him to be, and two others, whom he pointed out, we got into the great cabbin, where we ſet before them the beſt proviſions and liquor we had, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee them eat like famiſhed men, for they had not had time to get any thing out of their ſhip but a little biſcuit, ſo that moſt of them had been faſting ever ſince they left her. We found their ſhip was bound from Virginia to London, partly laden with tobacco, partly with rum, having touched at Barbadoes to take in the latter, both on the account of a gentleman who was a paſſenger on board, to whom the captain behaved with great deference, which made us all take more particular notice of him; but I had ſcarce caſt my eyes upon his face, whilſt at the ſame time his encountered mine, than he ran eagerly to me, and we embraced each other with the utmoſt affection, all we could utter being, 'Dear Thompſon!'—'Dear Prim!' For it was that very young fellow, whom, I muſt confeſs, I ſhould as ſoon have expected to meet in London, at that minute, as on board the Haſtings. Every body ſeemed pleaſed as ourſelves, at a meeting ſo unexpected as they judged this to be; and my meſs-mates as well as myſelf, ſtrove to outdo each other in complai-

ſance and tenderneſs to theſe new comers. If I was ſurprized to ſee Prim, he was as much ſo to ſee me at ſea; but we were obliged to ſuſpend our curioſity to attend to other matters. Capt. Clements, for that was the name of the captain of the ſhip that was burnt, returned, together with the reſt, the moſt unfeigned thanks for the relief we had afforded them, and begged Captain Social would permit him and his crew to remain with him till ſuch time as he met a veſſel bound to Europe; promiſing to draw bills on his owners to indemnify him: but Prim, which made me ſtare at him, aſſured our captain that he would ſatisfy him for every thing before he left our ſhip, and accept Captain Clements's bills himſelf. We were ſoon induced to comply, and when every thing was regulated for the men, and births aſſigned them, Captain Social provided Mr. Clements with a cabbin; and I deſired the favour of Prim to accept of half mine whilſt he ſtaid on board, which he readily acquieſced in, and another gentleman practiſed the ſame hoſpitality to their comrade.

Captain Clements's account of the late unfortunate accident that had happened to his ſhip, which was called the Lovely Betty, of fourteen guns, and three hundred tons burden, was thus—A fire being left later than ordinary by the cook in the capooch, one of the ſeamen had lighted his pipe at it, and then went down to his birth to ſmoke it with ſome of his meſs-mates over a cann of flip. It happened their liquor was very low, and, to get a freſh ſupply, they very honeſtly agreed that this ſame fellow ſhould attempt to ſpile one of the hogſheads of rum, which, for want of room in the hold, was ſtowed pretty near them: he forgot his pipe, and, whilſt he was at this precious work, a quantity of the lighted tobacco fell into his cheſt, which ſtood open, and ſome combuſtible matters he had in it, (being the gunner's mate) took fire, which was not perceived till the flames had got to too great an head for all the pains and ſkill they made uſe of to put a ſtop to them. They knew they were not far from the Cape de Verde Iſlands, which gave them ſome ſpirits to attempt getting there in their boat; but, however, not willing to miſs any opportunity that might offer to ſave their lives before they left their ſhip, they had fired thoſe ſignals of diſtreſs, which brought them the bleſſing of the relief we gave them.—The captain concluded his narration, by acquainting us that Mr. Prim was the chief ſufferer, moſt of the cargo being ſhipped by him, which, however, he was ſenſible he had wrote word to inſure in London by a veſſel that ſailed before from Barbadoes; and, as to the bottom, that he had inſured himſelf.

I was ſurprized ſtill more and more to hear Prim talked of thus as a man of great worth, though I was heartily glad to hear it; and when we retired to reſt, which was not till pretty late, after the mutual careſſes were over, and I had gratified his curioſity to know how I came into the Haſtings, I ſaid—'My friend, you left England 'very abruptly, which I have often 'thought of ſince with the utmoſt con'cern; and, by the ſituation you are 'in at preſent, I am ſenſible you muſt 'have met with ſeveral turns of for'tune, that I wiſh you would gratify 'me in the recital of.'—'I have ſo, 'indeed, my dear Thompſon,' he replied; 'and, though at preſent in ſuch 'circumſtances, am really a happy 'man. I always loved you, my friend; 'have thought of you tenderly an hun'dred times ſince my departure; and, 'as ſoon as I had ſeen London, you 'would have been the firſt perſon I 'ſhould have renewed my acquain'tance with. Come, make a bowl of 'punch; and, whilſt we are drinking 'it, I will gratify you with a relation 'of the good and bad accidents that 'have occurred to me ſince my un'happy breach with my maſter, and 'the means by which I may ſay I am 'at preſent rich and happy.' I made the punch, and Mr. Prim began his adventures thus.

CHAP. XII.

THE ADVENTURES OF MR. WILLIAM PRIM.

'YOU remember what an agony 'I was in that fatal morning 'I took my leave of you, after my 'maſter had diſcovered my being de'ficient in the caſh he had intruſted to 'my

'my care. He was ſo incenſed, that 'he would ſuffer me no longer to con-'tinue with him; and my father, who 'was as much irritated againſt me, 'hurried me on board an Eaſt India 'ſhip, which ſailed the next day, the 'captain of which he had ſome ſlight 'acquaintance with, and who took me 'in quality of his clerk. All this 'was done ſo ſuddenly, that I was 'but poorly fitted out for ſuch a voy-'age; and my father has ſince lament-'ed the precipitancy with which he 'parted with me, by letter, which has 'coſt him a great deal of affliction, 'and numberleſs tears; but, being a 'man of a warm and paſſionate diſpo-'ſition, I can very eaſily forgive him, 'eſpecially as it was an introduction 'to the good fortune I have ſince met 'with.

'Captain Surly, my commander, 'who from his infancy had uſed the 'ſeas, was a mere brute, and wanted 'common humanity; and my father, 'having indiſcreetly confided to him 'the ſecret of my being forced to ſea, 'upon the aforeſaid account, inſtead 'of ſtriving to make my captivity eaſy, 'and if I had any bad principles to 'reclaim me from them, he was con-'tinually obſerving, in a reproaching, 'malicious ſtrain, the ſlip that I made, 'and menacing me with bad uſage, 'if I ſerved him as I had done my 'former maſter.

'You may gueſs that this ſat very 'hardly upon a breaſt that had ſome 'principles of honour, and knew how 'mankind ought to be treated; but 'you muſt confeſs, my friend, this is 'too often the caſe, and many an un-'happy man that has been guilty of 'an error, would reform, if the world 'would let him; but, being expoſed 'and maltreated, they grow deſperate 'and regardleſs of what may happen 'to them; and, finding all mankind 'their enemies, reſolve to be even with 'them, and commence downright vil-'lains from the impoſſibility of re-'gaining their characters. However, 'this was not my caſe; and I knew 'the humane and thinking part of 'mankind would paſs over a ſingle 'crime in a young extravagant, could 'they ſee tokens of amendment that 'would juſtify their good opinion of 'him.

'A dog could not endure a worſe 'life than I did, moſt part of this 'dreadful voyage; and, when I ex-'poſtulated with him, he gave me the 'moſt opprobrious language, and ſe-'veral times even went ſo far as to 'kick me out of the cabbin, where 'he was generally drunk the greateſt 'part of the day. Such tyranny made 'me weary of my life, and I began 'not to care what became of me; and 'more eſpecially as the ſhip's crew 'took the ſignal from their captain, 'and treated me in general with the 'utmoſt contempt: and one day a ne-'phew of Surly's, who was a fourth-'mate on board, without the leaſt pro-'vocation, took me by the noſe, and 'led me about twenty paces, to the 'great diverſion of the ſhip's com-'pany. Fleſh and blood could hold 'out no longer, and, ſeizing him round 'the waiſt, in ſpite of all his ſtrug-'gling, as he was not near ſo ſtrong 'as myſelf, I fairly flung him over 'board, where he would certainly 'have paid for his inſolence with his 'life, if all the ſails had not been laid 'aback, and the boat hoiſted out to ſave 'him. The minute the captain heard 'of this action, he ordered me before 'him, and, with the fury of a tyger, 'fell upon me with his cane, and hav-'ing nothing to defend myſelf, and he 'being a very ſtrong man, beat me 'moſt unmercifully, and then ordered 'me to be turned before the maſt. I 'muſt ſay this for every one of the 'officers and men, that they thought 'my uſage on this occaſion very hard, 'and without the leaſt colour of juſ-'tice; and a ſupercargo we had on 'board was ſo exaſperated, that he 'told the captain to his face that he 'was a ſcoundrel; for which the brute 'ordered him to keep to his cabbin, 'and would not ſuffer him for ſome 'days to take the benefit of walking 'upon the quarter-deck. And now 'the young Surly uſed me worſe than 'ever any galley-ſlave was uſed, and 'made me almoſt curſe the hour I was 'born; and if we had not put into 'Madagaſcar, where we were driven by 'ſtreſs of weather, I ſhould have exe-'cuted a reſolution I had formed; 'which was, the firſt opportunity, to 'ſeize him and fling myſelf overboard 'with him, and drown him and my-'ſelf together; but the ſight of land 'put other thoughts into my head,

'which

'which I purſued the dictates of in the following manner.—We lay in a good bay on the weſt-ſide of the iſland, where we were repairing our rigging, which I think is called the Bay of St. Auguſtine, and were employed in taking in ſuch wood and water as we ſtood in need of for the proſecution of our voyage; and as I was employed in the boat, in making frequent trips from the ſhore to the ſhip to fetch on board the wood we cut, I reſolved, the firſt opportunity I had, to make my eſcape, and rather truſt to the mercy of the barbarous natives, of whom I heard ſtrange accounts, or to the chance of ſome other ſhip's putting in, by which I might get off the iſland, than longer to continue in the helliſh ſlavery I was under amongſt this villainous ſet of wretches. About two leagues from our landing-place was a very thick wood, by which my eſcape might be concealed till the ſhip was obliged to purſue it's voyage. Being thus determined, I waited an opportunity till the laſt water was to come on board, and mean time ſecretly conveyed on ſhore, at times, a tinder-box, ſome biſcuit, and a bottle or two of brandy, all which I had, unperceived by my comrades, concealed in the ſand; and taking a lucky time, when they were all engaged in ſleep, waiting a proper minute till the tide ſet off ſhore, I ſecured a muſquet, and an horn of powder, which lay by them; and, with all expedition poſſible, gained the wood I have before ſpoken of, where I tarried at the ſkirts of it till ſuch time as the boat went on board; which it did, after they had hallooed and hooped for the ſpace of half an hour after me, to give me notice of their going off. I had got upon a riſing hill, from behind which I could ſee the veſſel, without the danger of being ſeen myſelf; and whether the brute was glad to get rid of me, or what, I cannot tell, but, without ſending aſhore again to ſearch for me, they weighed anchor, and I ſaw them ſtand out to ſea, with a briſk wind at north-weſt by weſt, which ſoon carried them out of my ſight.

'I now began to feel all thoſe terrors a man muſt experience upon being thus left alone in an unknown country, of which I had heard dreadful ſtories, and without a proſpect of meeting with the neceſſaries of life, unleſs I threw myſelf into the arms of barbarous ſavages, who, perhaps, might treat me with more cruelty than I had been uſed with before; and I began to bewail my raſhneſs and folly in leaving the ſhip; but I ſoon awaked from this tumult of my ſoul, and went to the beach to get my biſcuit and brandy, and what other matters I had left there, which I found ſafe, and then ſought the cover of the wood again; which I had no ſooner entered, than I eſpied, upon a tree, the wood of which is ſomewhat like Brazil wood, a fowl of a black colour, ſpotted with white, ſomewhat reſembling our turkies, which I ſhot at, and killed; and immediately cutting ſticks with my knife, I made a fire, dreſſed my prize, and made as hearty a meal as ever I did in my life; and which was the more pleaſant, becauſe I had brought ſalt on ſhore in my pocket to reliſh what I killed. I was now in great want of water, and a veſſel to drink it in: the firſt complaint I ſoon eaſed, by going to the foot of the rock where we watered our ſhip; and my hat ſerved me for drinking out of. In a few days I began to find my ſituation very agreeable, and reſolved to keep as near the bay as I could, to diſcover any ſhip that ſhould chance to put in there, by which I might get off the iſland. I found in the woods dates, and on the mountains oranges and citrons, which alſo yielded as fine clear water as ever I drank. Apes abound here in abundance, and many birds fit for food; but eſpecially that I have before ſpoken of, which has this remarkable circumſtance, that it has yellow horns on it's head, which is a mixture of blue and red; and they rove about the woods in large flocks, and are not ſhy; ſo that I got them without difficulty; and in a rock, pretty near the extremity of this wood, I found a natural cave, which ſerved me for my lodging. My brandy, by good management, held out to a miracle; and I ſoon learned to live without bread, in lieu of which I eat dates. What I moſt apprehended was the want of powder, of

'which

'which I had now only a few charges 'left; and, to provide againſt the 'worſt, having a very good knife, I 'cut long lances of the hard wood 'I have mentioned, and practiſed my-'ſelf in darting at a mark; ſo that at 'length I became ſo dextrous as to be 'able to transfix any bird at a mode-'rate diſtance that was not on the 'wing. I had a chart of the Eaſt 'Indies, and ſeveral others, with a 'treatiſe of navigation, and a pair of 'compaſſes, with which I employed 'ſome part of my time; and, at other 'times, I cut my name on the trees, 'and the date of the year on which I 'voluntarily became a fugitive from 'the human race; and one of theſe I 'carved very handſomely, with the 'following inſcription—

"Seaman,
"This inſcription will tell thee,
"That an unhappy youth,
"William Prim, an Engliſhman,
"And citizen of London,
"Choſe here to expoſe himſelf to all the
"dangers of an unknown country,
"Rather than longer pine under the hard-
"ſhips inflicted upon him
"By John Surly, commander of the Dover
"Indiaman,
"In the year 17—.

"Oh! if my grief were known, my dire
"deſpair,
"Thou could'ſt not, ſure, thy pitying
"tears forbear;
"Condemn'd, an hopeleſs exile, thus to
"mourn
"My native plains, where I ſhall ne'er
"return.
"*Ens entium, miſerere mihi!*"

'All this time, which was near five 'months, I had been diſcovered by 'none of the inhabitants, and took 'care, for fear of them, to keep pretty 'much within the purlieus of the 'wood, which I had ſo long made my 'reſidence, often caſting a wiſhing 'eye towards the ſea, from my look-'out, eagerly hoping for the arrival 'of ſome veſſel, to bear me from my 'melancholy ſolitude. My cloaths 'were worn off my back almoſt, and 'hung in grievous tatters about me; 'and my ſhoes had been gone a con-'ſiderable time; but my feet were ſo 'hardened and callous, that I felt no 'incommodity from going bare-foot-'ed. One day I diſcovered from my 'eminence, two of the natives going 'towards the bay; but providentially, 'though they paſſed through my wood, 'they did not diſcover me. I cannot 'expreſs to you the affright I was in; 'for, had they ſeen me, I muſt have 'expected to have been carried into 'the inland parts of the iſland, and 'have forſaken all hopes of ever get-'ting off, which now buoyed up my 'ſpirits. They were well ſhaped, and 'had printed pieces of linen, ſeeming-'ly calicoe, thrown over their ſhoul-'ders, by which I perceived they now 'and then trucked with the European 'veſſels that came into the iſland. 'They were armed with bows and 'arrows, and had each a long wooden 'lance in his hand. I cannot ſay I 'was entirely, however, without a 'companion, for I had taken an ape, 'in a toil which I invented for that 'purpoſe, made of the boughs of 'trees, over a deep pit, which I had 'dug upon a ſand-hill; and though 'they are very large, I tamed him ſo, 'by my kindneſs, that he followed 'me about like a dog; and had ſo 'many odd pranks and grimaces, that 'he often made me laugh extremely, 'and would imitate all my actions; 'ſo that I frequently ſent him for 'water, and to gather me oranges and 'lemons, which he did very dexte-'rouſly. At length my deliverance 'arrived; and to my inexpreſſible joy, 'when I had, as near as I can gueſs, 'fulfilled my ſeventh month, as I was 'wiſtfully ſurveying the diſtant ocean, 'and thinking over all the accidents 'of my life, I ſaw, ſome leagues in 'the offing, a ſail, and the ſight al-'moſt made me faint away; but how 'rejoiced, beyond expreſſion, was I, 'when it ſtood directly into the bay, 'and caſting anchor there, ſent it's 'boat on ſhore to look for freſh water! 'I preſented myſelf before the land-'ing-place, and ſtartled them by my 'ragged, uncouth figure, which at firſt 'made them ſtare; but our joy was 'mutual, when we diſcovered each 'other to be countrymen; and, when 'I had told them ſome part of my 'ſtory, they carried me on board to 'their captain, who ſeemed to be a 'ſenſible, humane man, but who 'queſtioned me very cloſely, fearing I 'had belonged to ſome of the pirate 'ſhips with which theſe ſeas ſwarmed;

'and

'and when he was convinced of the 'contrary, he entertained me on board, 'gave me cloaths and neceſſaries, and 'I once more began to live; but, hav-'ing been ſo long diſuſed to breeches 'and ſhoes, the former galled me, and 'the latter ſwelled my feet moſt in-'tolerably. The captain's name was 'Nelſon, and that of his ſhip, the 'Charming Suſannah. I found he was 'very rich, and a conſiderable planter in 'Virginia; that the veſſel was his own; 'that he had carried a lading of his own 'tobacco to London, from whence he 'took in a proper cargo, to trade on 'the coaſt of Africa for ſlaves; that 'a mutiny had happened amongſt his 'crew, who had riſen upon him, and 'ſeized the ſhip, which they endea-'voured to bring round the Cape to 'this iſland; but being in great dan-'ger, in lat. 40° 10' S. and long. '10° W. of London, in a ſtorm, 'they had releaſed him to navigate the 'veſſel, which he carried into the 'Cape; but though he had them now 'in his power, he had been ſo honour-'able as not to betray them to the 'Dutch; and by mere dint of argu-'ment and perſuaſion, at which I 'found him an artiſt myſelf, had re-'claimed them, and all was paſt over, 'after ſetting the two chief mutineers 'on ſhore, and very juſtly paying 'them their wages; that another hard 'gale had driven them ſo far to the 'eaſtward, where their want of water 'had induced them to bear up to Ma-'dagaſcar, where they relieved me in 'ſo unexpected a manner. There were '150 negroes on board, he having loſt 'near eighty in theſe ſeas by ſickneſs.

'When Mr. Nelſon had heard my 'ſtory, which he animadverted upon 'with great ſweetneſs, and found that 'I was not a ſeaman, but bred up a 'trader, he gave me charge of his 'books, and made me alſo his ſtew-'ard, as well as his clerk, having loſt 'his former ſteward in the voyage; 'and never was man's condition ſo 'altered for the better; for he was a 'mild, ſociable, humane creature, had 'little of the rough ſeaman, but a vaſt 'deal of the gentleman about him; 'and had, I ſoon found, ſtudied and 'read the beſt authors. In ſhort, I 'loved him, and ſerved him ſo readily 'and affectionately, that I perceived I 'gained much upon his mind; and 'you would be ſurprized to think how 'dearly he valued me in ſo ſhort a 'time; but now he never would eat or 'drink without me; I became his con-'ſtant companion; and, by the ci-'vilities I was thereby enabled to con-'fer on my ſhipmates, gained the 'eſteem of the whole ſhip's crew. I 'found my captain had in Virginia a 'wife, and one daughter, of whom he 'was often talking with great tender-'neſs; and he promiſed me, if I 'would ſettle with him there, he would 'give me an handſome ſalary, to look 'after his affairs; which propoſal I 'readily cloſed with; and indeed one 'main inducement was the character 'he gave Miſs Fanny, of whom I be-'came perfectly enamoured, and al-'ready conceived hopes of poſſeſſing 'her, and making my fortune.

'We had a very good voyage till 'we came to the Cape de Verde Iſlands, 'where we touched at St. Vincent, but 'had no ſooner taken our departure, 'than a great ſtorm aroſe, which puz-'zled all the ſkill of our ſeamen, and 'it was with difficulty we rode it out, 'after loſing our main-maſt, which 'was ſhivered from top to bottom by 'a flaſh of lightning; and, being un-'ſtepped by the ſame flaſh, rolled over-'board, endangering the loſs of the 'ſhip, which, however, was preſerved 'ſafe; and bearing away for the Lee-'ward Iſlands, under a jury-maſt, we 'there remained near a month to refit, 'in which time we diſpoſed of an hun-'dred of our negroes, to great advan-'tage. My health, during all theſe 'tedious adventures and voyages, was 'not in the leaſt affected; and I grew 'rather ſtronger and ſtronger, by the 'continual exerciſe I went through; 'and the captain falling ill at Bridge-'town in Barbadoes, he truſted the 'management of all his concerns to 'me, without reſerve; in which I be-'haved with ſuch diligence and fideli-'ty, that he embraced me, when he 'ſaw my accounts; and, over and 'above my wages, made me genteelly 'a preſent of twenty guineas; and ſpoke 'of me in ſuch terms, to the gentle-'men of that iſland, that, if my gra-'titude to him would have ſuffered 'me, I might have ſettled there with 'great advantage.

'We arrived at Glouceſter, in Vir-'ginia, in about ten days after we ſet

'ſail

'ſail from Barbadoes; but in our paſ-
'ſage we had very near all been de-
'ſtroyed by a very terrible accident
'that happened to us; and my beha-
'viour on the occaſion, ſtill more and
'more endeared me to Mr. Nelſon.
'One of our people being ſent down
'into the powder-room for ſome car-
'tridges, in an abſence of thought,
'carried an inch of candle with him,
'without putting it into a lanthorn,
'which was an uſual precaution we
'made uſe of; and, having ſome diffi-
'culty to come at what he wanted,
'very calmly ſtuck it into a barrel of
'powder, which was half unheaded;
'and, forgetting it afterwards, came
'up without it, faſtening the hatch-
'way after him. I immediately re-
'collected he had carried a candle with
'him, and called him aft, where the
'captain, a mate, and myſelf, were
'walking on the quarter-deck, and
'aſked him haſtily, what he had done
'with the candle. The fellow ſtood
'aghaſt, and could not utter a word;
'Mr. Nelſon, and all the reſt of us,
'turned as pale as death; and he or-
'dered the boat out immediately, ex-
'pecting every minute the ſhip to blow
'up; but I inſtantly aſſumed preſence
'of mind enough in this dread and
'confuſion, and, opening the hatch,
'jumped down the ladder, where I
'found the ſteady candle had burnt
'till within the diſtance of two lines
'only from the powder: I imme-
'diately ran my hand gently under it,
'and, ſcooping that, and an handful
'of powder with it, out of the bar-
'rel, endeavoured to toſs it up into
'the cabbin; but it fired in my hand,
'and burnt me in a dreadful manner:
'however, it ſaved the ſhip, and our
'lives; and every body had ſuch a
'ſenſe of the hazard I ran, and the
'ſervice I had done them, that the
'captain claſped me in his arms, and
'told me he would ever eſteem me as
'his ſon; and the whole ſhip's com-
'pany rang acclamations and praiſes
'to me from ſtem to ſtern. Mr. Nel-
'ſon's plantation was upon James
'River; ſo that when he had deliver-
'ed ſome part of his cargo at Glou-
'ceſter, we ran up, and anchored at
'his very door, ſaluting his family
'with all our guns. Mr. Nelſon made
'me dreſs myſelf in a rich ſuit of
'cloaths, which he ordered me to pro-
'vide myſelf with at Bridgetown; and
'being, you know, no contemptible
'figure, he made me a great many
'compliments on the gentility of my
'perſon. We were rowed on ſhore in
'the barge, only him and myſelf; and
'he was received, at his arrival, by
'his wife and daughter, with a ten-
'derneſs that well indicated the regard
'they had for ſo valuable a relation.
'He preſented me to them, with theſe
'kind expreſſions—"See here, ladies,
"a man to whom I owe my ſhip and
"cargo, my own life, and that of my
"people: I beg you would eſteem him
"as a friend of mine, and who is
"going to become one of my family."
'I ſaluted Mrs. Nelſon, and her
'amiable daughter, at whoſe ſight, I
'muſt confeſs, I directly yielded up
'my heart a prize to her charms.
'They received me with great polite-
'neſs and good-nature; and I found
'Mrs. Nelſon's temper to be pretty
'much a copy of her huſband's; but
'(and, my dear friend, you will ſuffer
'a lover to ſpeak) I found Miſs Fanny,
'paſt all my expectations, lovely, and
'the beauties of her mind exceeded
'far even thoſe of her perſon. You
'know, Thompſon, that I have a
'good addreſs, and a ready fluency of
'ſpeech; and I put myſelf forward in
'every thing that could be agreeable
'to my friend, and theſe ladies; in-
'ſomuch, that Fanny, I believe, ſoon
'perceived me another gueſs creature
'than the *buckſkins*, a term the
'towns-people make uſe of, jocoſely,
'to diſtinguiſh the country planters,
'who had made love to her; and I
'flattered myſelf, that this firſt inter-
'view gave her ſome motions in my
'favour. She was tall and fine-
'ſhaped, her features regular, and her
'delicate ſkin was of the fineſt white
'that ever I beheld; ſhe was near
'nineteen years of age; and if ſhe had
'any fault, it was that of being a lit-
'tle affected, and too conſcious of the
'charms nature had given her. Mr.
'Nelſon was a juſtice of peace in the
'county, and ſo reſpected by his
'neighbours, that we had a crowd of
'viſitors every day, for ſome time, to
'welcome him on his arrival; and,
'determining not to go to ſea again, he
'put his mate into the veſſel, as cap-
'tain; and loaded him with a cargo
'for London, ſoon after; and juſt be-

'fore he ſailed, I paſſed a compli-
'ment, at an entertainment, that was
'made us on board, which my young
'lady took with a ſenſible pleaſure. I
'aſked Mr. Nelſon, why he called his
'veſſel the Charming Suſannah. To
'which he anſwered, wondering at
'my queſtion, that it was the name
'he bought her in, and he never had
'thought it worth while to alter it.
"But, Sir, I beg the favour you would
"re-baptize her," ſays I; "and, if
"I have found any favour in your
"ſight, let me give it a name that has
"a real meaning."—"Agreed!" ſays
'he; "what ſhall the name be?" I
'bowed to the company, and, begging
'them to walk on the quarter-deck,
'I ſtepped forward, with a bottle of
'wine in my hand; and, daſhing it
'againſt the main-maſt, cried, "From
"henceforward this veſſel ſhall be
"called the Lovely Fanny, as a juſt
"compliment to the fineſt woman in
"Virginia!" Miſs bluſhed like ſcar-
'let; her father and mother were
'pleaſed, as well as herſelf, to the laſt
'degree; and we fired a round of the
'guns at this new ceremony. When
'we came home, whether the liquor,
'which I had drank pretty freely of,
'or the heat of the weather, oppreſſed
'me, I can't tell; but I, all on a ſud-
'den, fell down, without ſenſe or
'motion, which frightened Mr. Nel-
'ſon and his lady extremely; but, as
'to Miſs, ſhe was like one diſtracted,
'and talked ſo tenderly of me before,
'by bleeding, I was brought to my
'ſenſes, that her father and mother
'were amazed at it, and perceived I
'had made a very deep impreſſion on
'her mind. In ſhort, my friend, I
'won't trouble you with our court-
'ſhip, which, though it yielded me
'the greateſt pleaſure, would not be
'very intereſting to you; and ſhall
'only relate a circumſtance, which
'made a great deal in my favour, and
'haſtened the match; which was
'this—

'We were, with her father and
'mother, in a diſtant county, at the
'back of the colony, paying a viſit to
'Mr. Hoe, a planter there, whoſe
'ſon, a great, ſenſeleſs, *bawbuck*,
'was deſperately in love with her;
'and though ſhe hated him, I knew,
'yet ſhe permitted his addreſſes, on
'purpoſe to make me jealous and
'more ſubmiſſive; and one evening,
'walking in the neighbouring Savan-
'nah, whilſt ſhe was, by turns, raiſ-
'ing and depreſſing our hopes, for
'we were both with her; and had juſt
'ſaid, "Gentlemen, I have no opi-
"nion of a man's profeſſions that
"can thus live tamely with his rival;
"I ſhould rather think rage and de-
"ſpair ſhould engage them to fight
"for the poſſeſſion of what they ſo
"eagerly wiſh; and I ſhould be glad
"to be the firſt woman in Virginia,
"that has been the ſubject of a duel;"
'when out iſſued from the wood a
'dreadful large briſtling wild hog,
'and, without fear, made acroſs the
'Savannah, directly oppoſite to us.
'Poor Miſs ſcreeked out, and ran for
'ſhelter, in her hurry, to young Hoe,
'who had a matchet by his ſide; but
'he directly ſcoured away in a mi-
'nute; whilſt I, laughing, had pre-
'ſence of mind to halloo out to him
'to come and defend his miſtreſs,
'who, by this time, was fallen into a
'ſwoon. In fine, I had no time to
'loſe, for the brute advanced apace,
'and began to grunt, like a real wild
'boar, caſting up his ſnout, all white
'with foam, into the air, and gnaſhing
'his prominent, jaggy tuſks. I drew
'my hanger, and made a ſtroke at
'him, that hardly penetrated his hide,
'and but inflamed him the more; and,
'tearing up the very ground for mad-
'neſs, he attacked me, with a ſpring,
'and tore my breeches up, and made
'a ſlight wound in my left thigh,
'which I immediately returned, by
'cleaving him, at one blow, aimed
'with all the ſtrength I was maſter
'of, down the ſkull; and, ſeconding
'it, he fell, and roſe no more. Fanny
'had juſt recovered, and ſeen the lat-
'ter part of the fight; and now, like
'a Guy of Warwick, or a valiant
'Moor of Moor Hall, I cut off his
'head, and laid it bleeding at my mi-
'ſtreſs's feet. The firſt thing ſhe did,
'was to lend me her handkerchief to
'bind up my wounds; and, whilſt ſhe
'was doing that, obſerved what a
'ſcoundrel and coward her other lov-
'er was; adding, at the ſame time
'giving me her hand, "Generouſly
"you have ſaved my life, and, there-
"fore, it is but juſtice to devote it,
"for the future, to your happineſs
"and ſatisfaction." I embraced the

'grateful

'grateful fair-one with tranſport, and 'carried her to the houſe, where Hoe 'was ſufficiently roaſted by all pre-'ſent, and I was as much applauded; 'ſo that, in about ſix months after 'this, with the conſent of both father 'and mother, I married my amiable 'Fanny, and partook of delights in 'that tender union, that are far too 'great for the power of eloquence to 'deſcribe. My father-in-law and 'mother ſurrendered a large planta-'tion to our uſe, and, to our inexpreſ-'ſible grief, both of them deceaſed 'about half a year ago, leaving us in 'actual poſſeſſion of near 30,000l. 'My love to this dear creature has 'been conſtantly increaſing, and ſhe 'has bleſſed me with a lovely boy, 'that is juſt the picture of his mother. 'If any thing at firſt gave me uneaſi-'neſs, it was the obſerving a coldneſs 'in my wife's diſpoſition, which did 'not ſuit with the warmth and fervour 'of my ſanguine and amorous tem-'per, and which I often reproached 'her with; but I ſoon got her lovely 'perſon in as full perfection as I knew 'before I had her ſoul.

'I parted with her to come this voy-'age to ſettle ſome affairs in England, 'with the utmoſt regret; and, indeed, 'ſhe would have been my comrade in 'it, if ſhe was not big with child, 'which would not permit me to truſt 'her to the uncertain dangers of the 'ſea; and the event has proved the 'juſtneſs of my judgment; though 'nothing gives me pain in the acci-'dent that has happened to me, ſince 'it has procured me the pleaſure of 'ſeeing Mr. Thompſon, ſave that it 'will make my voyage ſomewhat 'longer, and thereby detain me, more 'than I propoſed, from the arms of 'my dear wife, to whoſe labour I am 'under ſolemn promiſe to return, if 'Providence permits me. I hope the 'friends I have wrote to have inſured 'my cargo; but if not, the loſs, at 'preſent, won't be much to me; and 'I have bills about me to the value of '2000l. upon ſome of the beſt mer-'chants in London. And thus you 'ſee, my friend, that I am a very hap-'py man; and I do aſſure you, I 'ſtrive, by doing all the good in my 'power to my fellow-creatures, to re-'turn thanks to Providence for it's 'bleſſings, and to atone for the former 'irregularity of my conduct. But 'now I ſhould be glad to hear how 'Speculiſt, Prig, and the reſt of our 'old acquaintance do; and whether, 'in purſe or perſon, I can ſerve my 'old friend, and prove to him, that I 'am ſtill the diſintereſted Will Prim 'he formerly knew me to be.'

CHAP. XIII.

HE SATISFIES PRIM IN HIS ENQUIRIES — THE MUTUAL CIVILITIES THAT PASS BETWEEN THEM—THEY TOUCH AT ONE OF THE CAPE DE VERDE ISLANDS—A VESSEL PUTS IN THERE ALSO, BOUND TO GLASGOW IN SCOTLAND — PROVES TO BE FREIGHTED BY PRIM'S OVERSEER—HE GOES ON BOARD HER — ENTERTAINS THE GENTLEMEN FROM THE HASTINGS —THEY TAKE LEAVE OF EACH OTHER, AND PROCEED ON THEIR RESPECTIVE VOYAGES.

I Was charmed with the frank and open air with which Mr. Prim related his adventures, and the various difficulties and diſtreſſes he had encountered before his fortunate and happy ſettlement, and congratulated him with the utmoſt ſincerity; and we both obſerved that many young fellows of natural good diſpoſitions, and whoſe minds were of a generous caſt, though they might be ſomewhat rakiſh, and purſue bad courſes; yet, one time or other, their good ſenſe will get the better of their follies, and they will return to thoſe maxims of virtue and honour which they had forſaken. He was ſorry for my worthy maſter's misfortunes, and was ſurprized at what I told him of my friend Diaper's being gone to the Indies, ſaying, 'I think 'we are all turned adventurers for my 'part, but Prig, who holds his own 'ground, and thrives in his native 'country, which I am very much re-'joiced at, and will call to ſee him.' I told him, if he had any luck in getting to England, that Prig would be in Yorkſhire. 'Then, faith,' ſays Prim, 'if you will give me a direc-'tion, I will go and pay him a viſit 'there.' I anſwered, I ſhould do that with great pleaſure, and would recom-

mend him to my father's acquaintance, and ſome other worthy people, to whom I would take an opportunity to write by him, if he would take the trouble to carry the letters; which, he ſaid, he would make it his care and ſtudy to do, and informed me, that if his wife would conſent, he intended in a few years to ſettle in his native country, there to ſpend the remainder of his days, and hoped he ſhould ſee me there too by that time. He was very ſorry for poor Speculiſt, though, he ſaid, he had not behaved to him very handſomely; and, being very curious to know my real motives for going to the Eaſt Indies, I related all my misfortunes to him, at which he very tenderly ſympathized with me, and attempted to ſpeak ſome encouraging words of comfort. 'Let me aſſure 'you, my friend,' ſays he, 'if ever 'you have any occaſion, if you'll draw 'bills on me, I'll pay them at ſight, 'for any ſum of money you may 'want, and here is my direction, "To "Col. Prim, upon James River in Vir"ginia;" for you muſt know I am a mi'litary man too, and command in our 'Virginia militia, and am alſo in the 'commiſſion of the peace for James, 'York, and Glouceſter counties.' I thanked him for his civility, and then opened my wardrobe, deſiring him to fit himſelf with what cloaths he liked beſt amongſt them. He choſe a ſuit of blue cloth, with a gold lace, and took three of my ſhirts, and ſome other neceſſaries of that kind, having loſt all, but what he had on his back, in the late conflagration of his ſhip. He offered to give me a bill to the amount, but I refuſed it with anger, and told him, I would truſt till we ſaw each other in England. The winds not hanging very favourably for us, Captain Social reſolved to touch at St. Vincent, one of the Cape de Verde iſlands, which we ſafely reached; and in a very commodious bay came to anchor, intending to purchaſe ſome additional live ſtock, and get a recruit of freſh water to fill our empty caſks. Here I took an opportunity of writing to my father and mother, and all my good friends in Yorkſhire, and alſo to Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miſs Sukey; all which, with proper directions and inſtructions, I confided to the cuſtody of Mr. Prim. We ſpent our time very agreeably, often taking trips to the ſhore; and our new comrades being all as agreeable as ourſelves, we led a life that was really to be envied. I ſhall not take up my reader's time in a deſcription of thoſe iſlands which are ſo well known, and of which ſuch ample relations are given in books of voyages, which may juſtify ſuch omiſſions in the future courſe of my adventures.

When we had laid here about two days, a large ſhip came in, which Captain Clements knew to be a ſhip he had left in Virginia, commanded by Captain Cable; and Prim, he, and myſelf, with two or three more of our company, went on board her, and found that moſt part of the cargo had been ſhipped by Mr. Prim's overſeer, and was conſigned to Mr. Ferguſon, a merchant at Glaſgow, on his account. The captain was glad to ſee his freighter, and ſoon agreed to take him, Captain Clements, and the crew of his ſhip, on board, and to carry them to that port; Mr. Prim engaging to pay what was thought due, over and above their working their paſſage. We were entertained very nobly on board, and ſoon after Prim and his ſhip's company removed to Captain Cable's ſhip, giving Captain Social an indemnification for their ſtay on board of him. Two of the hands, being willing, were entertained on board the Haſtings, and agreed to go to the Indies with Captain Social.

I ſtayed with Prim in the veſſel he was going home in, and, in a day or two after he had left us, all the gentlemen on board the Haſtings were invited to an entertainment on board the York, where we were regaled with the beſt the ſhip could afford, and Prim was never tired, with Captain Clements, of paying their acknowledgments to us: we had our muſick with us, and ſpent the day in a moſt agreeable manner, making an entertainment of the ſame ſort next day for them in the Haſtings; and Prim got a pipe of Madeira, and ſome other refreſhments, which he beſtowed, as a preſent, on the crew of the ſhip, in return for the civilities they had ſhewn to his people. He alſo would inſiſt upon increaſing our ſtores out of the York, which was extremely well provided for her voyage to Scotland.

Both

Both ſhips having taken in what they had occaſion for at St. Vincent, and the wind ſerving to turn out of the bay, we both weighed, after taking leave of each other in the moſt affectionate manner; Prim and myſelf being almoſt melted into tears at parting. He would make me accept of a diamond ring, as a token of his love, which I returned by a preſent of the like kind; and, having a very fine gold repeating watch, he inſiſted upon making Captain Social a preſent of it for all favours; and he alſo made ſome very pretty acknowledgments to the other gentlemen of our meſs.

We both got out to ſea, and ſaluted each other with our guns, and three cheers, and their ſhip was ſoon out of ſight.

It gave me extreme ſatisfaction, that I had met with ſuch an opportunity of writing to my dear friends in England, which I knew would in ſome meaſure eaſe them of their anxiety for my welfare.

CHAP. XIV.

THEY ARE IN DANGER FROM A WATER-SPOUT—HE IS SAVED FROM GREAT PERIL BY HIS SERVANT—CAPTAIN SOCIAL DIES—THEY ARE DRIVEN BY A STORM TO THE SOUTHWARD—IN GREAT DISTRESS—THEY MEET WITH LAND—BEAR UP TO THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE—REFIT THEIR VESSEL, AND PROCEED ON THEIR VOYAGE.

THIS meeting with Prim ſpread an eaſe and calm over my mind that was very ſalutary to me; and no one, that has not been long and tedious voyages, can imagine how agreeable it is at a great diſtance from home to meet with a friend or a countryman; you ſeem then to be enjoying all you have left behind you; and ſuch an interview ſtores you with a number of pleaſing ideas and remembrances, that ſoften and leſſen all the fatigues you undergo. We touched at St. Helena, where we continued only two days, and then run away for the latitude of the Cape; but we were ſurprized one morning with the ſight of what the ſeamen call a *water-ſpout*, and the more ſo, as they are not very frequent on this ſide the Cape: for my part, I regarded it as a curious inſtance of the wonders of Nature, but did not indulge my delight ſo far as not to be apprehenſive of ſome danger. We were ſo near, that we could ſee the water aſcend through this column of air, and were obliged to tack, to avoid any ill conſequences that might ariſe from it's breaking; which, at the diſcharge of a ſwivel, it did, curling the ocean with a white foam as far as the eye could reach. It was very merry to hear the ſuperſtitious reaſonings of the ſailors upon this phænomenon: I looked upon it as one of thoſe natural events that illuſtrate and demonſtrate the truth of the new philoſophy. I was attentively viewing it's diſappearance, and for that purpoſe had ſtretched myſelf farther than ordinary out of one of the cabbin-windows, when the ſhip ſent an head ſo violently, that I was ſuddenly caſt out a prey to the waves. I beſtirred myſelf, after the firſt ſurprize was over, and began to ſwim after the veſſel, which made conſiderable way, and was in the utmoſt terror, as I happened to be the only one in the cabbin, at the thought of being left by them; but luckily Truman, my man, caſting his eyes abroad, diſcovered me ſtruggling with the billows, and making what efforts I could to raiſe my head above water in ſuch a manner as to be perceived. He knew me; and, telling the next perſon to him of what he had ſeen, immediately jumped overboard to my aſſiſtance. He was an excellent ſwimmer, and ſoon came up to me, where I was almoſt ſpent with labour and overcome with deſpair; and, ſlipping under me, ſupported me on his back, till the ſhip being ſufficiently now alarmed, the ſails were backed, a boat put out, and we were taken up more dead than alive, and carried on board. We ſoon came to ourſelves, and every one congratulated my deliverance; and I was ſo ſtruck with this action of Truman's, that I thought I could not acknowledge his affection and attachment too much; and from this time I gave him a more reſpectful treatment, made him ſuperintendant of all my affairs; and, finding him a man of as good an head as he had an heart, I ſeldom reſolved on any thing without firſt aſking him his

his advice; and by this faithful ſervant I reaped many advantages, as will be perceived in the following part of my adventures.—Poor Captain Social was attacked, about this time, with the gout in his ſtomach, which he had for a ſeries of years been afflicted with, in ſo violent a manner, that, notwithſtanding all the aſſiſtance of our ſurgeon, a paroxyſm carried him off, to the great regret of every body on board, as he was truly an excellent ſeaman, a vigilant commander, and a gentleman of great good-temper and humanity. He was ſucceeded in the command of the Haſtings by Mr. Bentley, our firſt mate, whoſe good qualities could alone conſole us for our loſs. The death of our captain was followed by a violent ſtorm, which met us in longitude 10° weſt, and latitude 30° 8′ ſouth, and continued without intermiſſion for fourteen days; ſo that our people being all jaded and tired, our ſhip tried an hull, and drove at the mercy of winds and waves, and, by our reckonings, far to the ſouth of our true courſe. It was now I began to conceive and feel the miſeries and hardſhips of a ſea-faring life, and for moſt part of the time, as we could light no fires, we were forced to content ourſelves with biſcuit, and ſuch cold ſtores as we had by us, to ſatisfy our hunger; being alſo forced to keep cloſe in our cabbins, for the moſt experienced ſeamen could very difficultly ſtand the deck. The tenth day, whilſt the waves rolled over us, and burſt upon us with a fury that made us apprehend every minute we ſhould founder, our fore-maſt was brought by the board, and it was with difficulty we cleared ourſelves of her, time enough to prevent the damage we feared it would do us; and we had no ſooner got over that diſtreſs, than one of our guns of the lower tier broke looſe, and we were apprehenſive ſhe would by her forceful ſallies break through the ſhip's ſides: in ſhort, we were all confuſion; but the captain, with a commendable preſence of mind, ordered up all the hammocks and bedding, and ſo providentially choaked her up, that we found the danger quite over. When the ſtorm in ſome meaſure ſubſided, we found ourſelves in latitude 50° and ſome minutes ſouth; and, as near as we could gueſs, in longitude 118° 15′ eaſt of the meridian of London, in the vaſt and unploughed Southern Ocean; and, a calm ſucceeding of many days, our water grew ſo ſcanty, that we were reduced to half a pint a day; and, to add to our calamity, above half the ſhip's crew were eaten up with the ſcurvy, and our freſh proviſions were ſo low, that what we ſpared to them was not ſufficient to be of much ſervice in that dreadful diſtemper: but how ſurprized were we one morning, when a man at the maſt-head cried out—'Land! Land!' and ſounding, we found fifty fathom water. We were at a loſs to imagine what land this could be, which bore from us ſouth-eaſt, till Mr. Bentley, in one of his charts, found a cape, which was there called Cape Circumciſion, and was a very late diſcovery. I muſt own, juſt at that moment, I was in hopes our commander would ſend a boat to diſcover the coaſt; but a ſoutherly wind ſpringing up, he took the advantage of it, and ſtood away to the north-weſtward, which courſe in a few days brought us ſafely into Saldana Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, to our inexpreſſible joy and ſatisfaction. Here our men were ſoon recovered of their toil and illneſs, and I received great pleaſure in viewing the fine ſettlements of the induſtrious Dutch at the Cape, who have made a paradiſe of the country the Engliſh deſpiſed, and all other nations looked upon with the utmoſt diſtaſte. The natives themſelves, who ſeemed hardened to all the maxims of human creatures, now, under their government, begin to aſſociate together and form ſocieties; a plain proof that the wildeſt natures may be cultivated, if proper methods are employed. We lay here near three weeks; and, having taken in proper proviſions and refreſhments for the farther part of our voyage, we weighed, with one French and two Dutch ſhips in company, and, with a fine gale, and delightful weather, doubled this famous promontory, and entered the Indian Ocean.

CHAP. XV.

THEY ARE OBLIGED TO PUT INTO THE ISLAND OF JAVA — SAIL FROM THENCE, AND ARRIVE AT FORT ST. GEORGE, ON THE COAST

COAST OF COROMANDEL—HE IS WELL RECEIVED—FALLS ILL—RECOVERS, AND APPLIES HIMSELF ASSIDUOUSLY TO THE DUTIES OF HIS PROFESSION—RECEIVES LETTERS FROM ENGLAND.

WE purſued our voyage through this delightful ſea for ſeveral days with all the ſucceſs we could deſire, and, methinks, nothing can equal the pleaſure we experienced: ſtill quiet gales filled our ſteady ſails, the veſſel gently gliding through the waves; and, if the heat was almoſt intolerable, we were compenſated by having little elſe to do than to look abroad, and ſurvey the fine ſkies, and the ſmooth face of the ocean, curled into meandring forms by the ſliding keel. An infinite number of ſheerwaters, and other birds of the aquatick kind, attended our progreſs; the timorous flying fiſh, purſued by the devouring albicones, now and then ſkimmed over us, whilſt the ſportive porpoiſe, tumbling with uncouth poſtures, baſked every now and then on the ſurface of the waters. This weather did not, however, continue a great while, and was followed by a ſmarter gale at north-eaſt than we could well expect; ſo that we were driven a great way to leeward, and our captain thought it adviſeable to try to ſtretch over, either to fall in with the iſland of Sumatra or Java; which laſt we ſafely reached, and anchored in the port of Batavia, the capital of the Dutch empire in this part of the world; where we were viſited by the proper officers, who continued on board of us to prevent any illicit trade, as few of our outward-bound Indiamen ever touch at their ſettlements in this country. However, conſidering Dutch craft and policy, we were tolerably well uſed, permitted to buy ſuch things as were neceſſary for us, and to go on ſhore. Nothing is a greater proof of the opulence of their company, and their power in the Eaſt Indies, than this city, which has in it all the conveniences and pleaſures this part of the world can afford; and it is ſurprizing to what an height they have raiſed themſelves, by perſeverance and abſolute induſtry, in ſuch a few years, as thoſe ſince they applied themſelves ſo indefatigably to this trade. The Dutch governor-general lives like a prince, and exacts and receives more homage than the States-General themſelves do from their ſubjects in Europe. We lay here only three days and an half, and then put to ſea with the wind at S. W. which ſtill ſhifting more favourably, we entered the harbour of Fort St. George, after a tedious and fatiguing voyage of near ſeven months, ſaluting the fort, which was returned by the like compliment. We landed the next day, and waited on the governor, by whom we were very politely received; and I was alſo viſited and congratulated on my arrival by the reſt of the gentlemen and factors of the place, which much exceeded the ideas I had entertained of it. Fort St. George is a very handſome ſtrong building, but ſadly ſituated, the ſoil being very ſandy and dry, ſo that all roots and herbs are brought to perfection with a great deal of trouble. The ſea rolls very impetuouſly upon the ſhore, and more ſo than on any other place on the coaſt of Coromandel. The White, or European Town, has two churches, one for the Engliſh, the other for the Roman Catholicks. I hired a lodging in what they call the Old College, which was but a ſooty kind of dwelling; but I found many other gentlemen-factors there, which made me tolerably eaſy. It is governed by a mayor and aldermen. The Black Town is inhabited by Gentoos, Mahometans, Armenians, and Portugueſe, and has temples and churches for each religion. The company have a mint, and there are ſeveral publick ſchools in the town. The governor is the ſupreme magiſtrate, and has a council, compoſed generally of factors and merchants, with whom he conſults on the company's concerns. The colony has very little of it's own produce or manufactures for foreign markets; and the trade is principally in the hands of the Armenians and Jews, the Engliſh being greatly employed in ſhip-building. There are ſuppoſed to be eighty thouſand inhabitants in the towns and villages under the company's juriſdiction; and there are about five hundred Engliſh amongſt them, as gentlemen, merchants, ſeamen, and ſoldiers. People enjoy a great ſhare of health here, and look briſk and ruddy; the heats in ſummer being the greateſt

greateſt trouble and inconvenience they labour under; but that ſeldom laſts above four or five hours a day, when the ſea-breeze comes on, and revives the drooping ſpirits of the panting inhabitants. The governor has an handſome country-ſeat, with good gardens, a bowling-green, a teal-pond, and other agreeable curioſities. He is attended by a guard of Engliſh ſoldiers whenever he goes abroad; and lives in princely ſtate and grandeur. So much for deſcription, which is a little beſide my deſign; but I thought I could not excuſe myſelf from ſaying ſomewhat of a place in which I ſpent ſome years of my life, and laid the foundation of my preſent happineſs.

Soon after my arrival, I had the misfortune to be taken ill with a violent fever, peculiar to the climate, which held me a conſiderable time, and brought me almoſt to death's door; but the care of my phyſician, who was the ſurgeon of the Haſtings, a very worthy and ingenious man, and ſkilful in either profeſſion; and the conſtant, affectionate attendance of Truman, together with the ſtrength of my conſtitution, overcame my diſorder; and, as ſoon as I was well, I applied myſelf, with all the aſſiduity I was capable of, to make myſelf maſter of the manner of trade in theſe countries, and the nature of the buſineſs I was to tranſact; in which I was very much aſſiſted by Mr. William Saris, another factor, who had ſome time reſided there, and was nearly of my own age and temper, with whom I contracted a very intimate and cloſe friendſhip; ſo that I ſoon began to move about in the ſphere fortune had allotted me with becoming ſpirit and induſtry; and was univerſally careſſed by both ſuperiors and equals. I had, in a month after my arrival, the pleaſure of letters from my father, and other friends in England, by a ſhip that ſailed a fortnight after us; which, indeed, gave me no account of any thing that had happened extraordinary, but was a pleaſing proof of my friends punctuality in writing to me.

CHAP. XVI.

HE SENDS TRUMAN ON A TRADING VOYAGE—RECEIVES GREAT ADVANTAGES FROM IT—SENDS HIM TO THE DIAMOND MINES—IS ORDERED ON THE COMPANY'S AFFAIRS TO SURAT—EXECUTES HIS COMMISSION WITH SUCCESS—IS ORDERED UP TO HUGHLY—IN GREAT DANGER AND DISTRESS ON THE ISLAND OF SAGAR—PROVIDENTIALLY RELIEVED—RETURNS TO FORT ST. GEORGE.

I Was near three months in the country before I ventured to turn what money I brought with me, which was between 3 and 4000l. of my own and Mr. Goodwill's, to any advantage; in all which time, however, I endeavoured to improve, by the experience I acquired, from obſervation and converſe, particularly with my friend Saris; and as I was willing to avoid any imputation of preferring my own intereſt before that of the company, or indeed of interfering in private trade, I kept Truman about me, in the nature of a friend, who had come to improve his fortune, and at length determined to provide him with a cargo, and ſend him in one of the country ſhips on a trading voyage, to the coaſt of Perſia; and Saris alſo wanting to be concerned, he advanced a proper cargo; and, for Truman's better encouragement, who was a man of ſolidity and good ſenſe, we agreed to pay him a certain ſum for agency; and I advanced him 200l. to riſque on his own account; ſo, giving him proper inſtructions, we ſent him away. He was five months in executing his commiſſion, which he did with great dexterity and equal fidelity. The wines, and other returns, he brought, were diſpoſed of to ſuch advantage, that I found myſelf near 1000l. gainer; and Mr. Saris was upwards of 300 rupees the better. His own venture procured double, and he paid me the 200l. having with his agency cleared near 300l. ſterling; which gave me infinite pleaſure, as I was reſolved, if poſſible, to make his fortune, before he left the Indies, with me; and he had ſhewed himſelf ſo much a man of ſpirit and genius in this affair, that, afterwards, both myſelf and Saris approved of any thing he propoſed for our profit, and never found ourſelves deceived. He was ſoon after quite enamoured of a ſcheme he had formed of making a tour

pur to the diamond mines, which we accordingly furniſhed him properly for, and underſtood, by a letter we received from him a fortnight after his departure, that he had hired ſo many covets of ground, incloſed them, and had begun to dig, as is the cuſtom, ſurrounded by the King of Golconda's centinels, who challenges all ſtones of above ſixty grains as his own, the adventurer having all the reſt he finds.

We entertained great hopes, from the good fortune that we generally found attended Truman, that this expedition would turn very much to account; but before we heard again, I was ordered on my employers affairs, to tranſact ſome buſineſs at Surat; and was obliged to go over land to that city; which gave me great pleaſure, as I wanted to ſatisfy my curioſity in viſiting the interior parts of the country. The goods I had with me were loaded on oxen, an ox being able to carry between three and four hundred weight; and for myſelf, as ſoon as I came to Maſſulipatan, I hired a palanquin, or little coach, with balluſtres about it: it had a covering of ſattin; a ſlave attends to manage the covering, according to the traveller's poſition, as to the ſun; and another carried a targot, or fan of oſiers, covered with ſtuff, to keep off it's heat; it is carried by three or four men on their ſhoulders, who go as ſwift as the chairmen in England do with a ſedan, from being brought up to the laborious exerciſe from their youth. They are paid at the rate of five golden rupees per month, for each man; but if they continue with you after a limited time, they will increaſe the price. I was very well provided with proviſions; for in the Banjan towns we had flour, rice, milk, and ſuch other food; and in thoſe of the Mahometans, mutton, fowls, and pigeons; and, as the heat of the ſun was exceſſive, I generally contrived to travel after ſun-ſet, and lie by in the moſt ſultry part of the day; by which I preſerved myſelf from illneſs, for I found my ſpirits greatly jaded and fatigued by the exceſſive warmth of the climate. They meaſure their diſtances by leagues, or by a meaſure they call *gos*, which is equal to four leagues of ours. I arrived at Golconda in about a fortnight, which is a very large city, under it's own monarch, who is tributary to the Great Mogul. I ſaw this potent prince, who can raiſe an army of 600,000 men; and what I moſt admired about him, was a diamond, of above half a foot long, upon the crown of his head. From Golconda I journied to Viſapour, which is above 300 leagues diſtant from it, and from thence to Bicholly, and thence to the Portugueſe iſland of Goa, on which ſtands their famous city, the capital of their poſſeſſions, and the ſcene of ſo many brave and heroick acts as were performed by the Albuquerques, and the reſt of thoſe great men, that firſt fixed them in this part of the world; but they are now dwindled to a bare ſhadow of what they formerly were, and are, at the ſame time, the ſcorn and victims to the cunning of every other nation ſettled ſince in the Indies. From Goa, after ſeeing every thing that was eſteemed curious, partly by land, and partly by water, I arrived at Surat, to my entire content, after a journey, which, though it gave me ſuch opportunities as are very agreeable to a curious and inquiſitive man, yet almoſt tired me to death. This is the only port in the Mogul's dominions, and is inhabited by a promiſcuous medley of Moguls, Perſians, Arabians, Turks, Perſees, or Gaurs, and Franks, or European Chriſtians, whoſe number, however, is not very conſiderable. I was well received by the Engliſh factory, and, after tranſacting the buſineſs I came about, partook of the diverſions and amuſements of the place, and made a thorough inſpection into every thing in Surat, and the country adjacent. This city may be reckoned the great mart of the Indies, and where all the Chineſe and European commodities may be had in great plenty. I took a paſſage from hence to Bombay, the chief of our forts on this coaſt; and from thence ſailed in a jonk to Fort St. George, where I arrived in about ten weeks afterwards, giving a ſatisfactory account of the execution of my commiſſion to the governor. Soon after my arrival, I was ordered on another affair of importance, up to Hughly factory, to which I departed in a ſmall veſſel, with two or three Gentoo mariners. This factory is ſituated on a river of that name, which is a branch of the famous Ganges.

When I arrived at Fort William, after having delivered my credentials, I was received into the factory in a very friendly manner; and, notwithſtanding a good deal of chicanery, and ill uſage, from ſome perſons in authority, I found means to finiſh what I came about, with honour; and alſo to do myſelf ſome private ſervices in the way of traffick, upon my own bottom; and took my departure, with tokens of reſpect from all the gentlemen there. In coming down the river, I had a great fancy to put into the iſland Sagar, though I had heard it was much infeſted with tygers, who are very fierce, and the ſeamen did all they could to perſuade me from it: however, we brought to, and, arming myſelf with a matchet and firelock, with ſeveral charges of powder and ball, I left the veſſel, and reſolutely determined to face any danger that might happen in the gratification of my curioſity; and the more ſo, as the iſland is reckoned holy amongſt the Pagans, numbers of Jougies going there, the latter end of every year, to worſhip. The iſland is full of buſhes and mangroves; and I was no ſooner on ſhore than my people rowed the canoe out again, and ſtood over, full of affright, to Rogues River, where I ſaw them come to anchor. I was not very well pleaſed at this; but, looking upon their fear as a piece of ſuperſtition, I advanced into the iſland, and came, without interruption, to a ſavannah, about half a mile from the place I landed at, which was dry and parched up; but I had no ſooner got over it, than, caſting my view forwards, I perceived no leſs than four glaring fiery eyes, directed towards me through the buſhes, and preſently concluded they were the creatures I had heard ſo much talk of; nor had I time for much conſideration, for, ſetting up an infernal howl, they both made at me, with all the fierceneſs their ſavage natures and hunger could inſpire. I muſt own I was greatly ſhocked and frightened, and had only juſt preſence of mind ſufficient to recollect, that I had no way to ſecure myſelf, if my piece miſſed fire, and as I could not have time to charge again, if I did not diſpatch the remaining beaſt with my matchet. I had heard of wonderful eſcapes made from wild beaſts, by the native terror they feel in hearing the human voice elevated, and therefore I gave as loud a ſhout as I could, and, at the ſame time, fired my piece, and, very providentially, ſhot one of my antagoniſts through the head; the other ſtood ſome time in a kind of aſtoniſhment, at the flaſh and report of my piece; but ſoon made a ſpring at me, with redoubled fury. If I was capable of indulging any reflection at this time, it was to curſe my fooliſh curioſity that brought me into ſuch imminent peril and danger; and I really gave myſelf over for loſt: however, not to be wanting to my defence, I gave a forcible ſtroke with my matchet, and cut off one of the brute's fore feet; at which he ſet up ſuch a hideous yell, that the iſland and ſhore around reverberated back the ſound, which was continued by ſuch an infinity of echoes, that my hair ſtood upright on my head: he made a ſecond ſpring, and, more lucky than the firſt time, I clove him down the ſkull, and he fell, the black inflamed gore running from him in purple ſtreams. Immediately ſnatching up my muſquet, I made all the haſte my legs would permit me to the place I landed at; and, waving my handkerchief, the people took notice of the ſignal, and the canoe came juſt time enough to ſave me from a freſh attack, numbers of tygers following us even into the water, two of the foremoſt of which we diſpatched with our firearms. I looked upon what I had undergone, as a juſt puniſhment for my raſhneſs, and determined, for the future, never to hazard myſelf in ſo idle and ridiculous a manner. As ſoon as we got on board, where they never expected to ſee me again, we ſtood into the bay; and, after touching at Bellaſore, Viſagipatan, and ſome other factories, where I left ſome diſpatches that were given me from Fort William, I ſafely landed with my goods at Fort St. George, whence I had been longer abſent than it was ſuppoſed I ſhould be. My friend Saris now adviſed that we ſhould leave our preſent lodging; and therefore, with the governor's leave, with whom I ſtood in high favour, we took an houſe in the White Town, and hired proper ſervants, reſolving to live together as long as we ſtaid in the country.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

THEY RECEIVE CERTAIN ADVICES FROM TRUMAN, WHO DESIRES TO BE RECALLED—HE ARRIVES WITH GREAT GAINS FROM THE MINES—GIVES HIS MASTER A VERY VALUABLE STONE—METHOD HE TAKES TO CONCEAL IT—HE RECEIVES MORE LETTERS FROM ENGLAND—THEIR CONTENTS—WRITES TO MR. GOODWILL FOR A PARTICULAR REASON.

WE had heard but once from Truman since he left us, which gave us some pain, as fearing some accident might have happened to him; but, just as we were going to dispatch an express to see what was become of him, one of his slaves arrived with the following letter—

'HONOURED SIR,

'I Have been employed for you very 'much to the purpose; and, though 'I have had my health but badly, yet 'I need not be ashamed of the acquisitions I have made; and therefore, if you think I have been long enough employed here, should be glad of your orders to return to Fort St. George. I have inclosed a list of the most valuable stones I met with, which are clear from all deductions or charges to the king or his officers. I am at present at Golconda, where I have also purchased some stones; but I have a very particular reason to desire my recal, which I cannot trust to this letter; and am, after compliments to Mr. Saris, *honoured Sir, your obliged, affectionate and faithful servant,*

'WILL TRUMAN.'

By his subjoined list and account, we had indeed great reason to be satisfied with his pains, computing that he had gained on my account to the value of near four thousand pounds, and above one thousand for Mr. Saris; so that, eager to see the honest creature, I sent him orders to set out, as soon as they came to hand, sending them by a trusty servant of my own, who went along with his messenger, and in about three weeks afterwards he arrived; but so altered by his fatigues, and the heats he had endured, that we hardly knew him. I caressed him with the utmost affection, for I really began to esteem him rather as a brother than any thing else. He delivered to us our respective quotas, mine amounting to several pounds weight of small stones, of divers sizes, which I knew would turn to an extreme good account, either here or in Europe. He had also made a considerable deal of profit himself, so that he might now be said to be possessed in his own right of little less than a thousand pounds; and I obliged him to accept of two hundred pounds, as Mr. Saris did of fifty, in recompence for his unwearied pains and diligence.

The first opportunity we had to be alone, we settled our particular accounts, which I found justly and fairly stated and balanced; and then smiling, he told me, that he had somewhat still that was my property, that he hoped would soon, with other things, conduce to carry me from these uncomfortable parts of the world; 'For, 'dear Sir, I can't help longing to see 'my old master and mistress, and our 'friends in Yorkshire; who, no doubt, 'are already impatient enough of your 'absence;' and, so saying, he pulled out of a leathern purse, which was sewed to the waistband of his breeches, a diamond of a size and lustre that amazed me so much with it's brightness, as for some time robbed me of speech; and at length, when I hugged him in my arms, and asked him by what good fortune he got so valuable a prize, he gave me the following account—'I 'was more than ordinarily attentive, 'Sir, to inspect all the soil my labourers removed, and for that purpose hardly gave myself even time 'for rest; and being pretty generous 'of my money, and what provisions 'and refreshments I had about me, 'to the king's overseers, as well as 'my own people, they did not so 'strictly watch my actions, as they 'did those of other undertakers: one 'day I thought I perceived somewhat 'of a larger bulk than ordinary shine 'through the sand; but took no notice, and, when all eyes were employed another way, I stooped, and 'put what I suspected to be so valuable 'into my pocket, and retiring to a

'ſtream at a diſtance, which was ſhad-
'ed by ſome trees, and where I gene-
'rally retired in the heat of the day,
'I examined, and found, amongſt a
'a cluſter of ſmall ſtones, this very
'diamond; I was fearful of a diſco-
'very, as it was of a ſize far ſuperior
'to thoſe we were allowed to take
'away, and therefore immediately
'ſewed it up again in my breeches,
'in the manner you have ſeen; and,
'thank God, brought it ſafely away
'with me; and wiſh it was more va-
'luable than it is, that, by preſenting
'it to you, it might be a greater in-
'ſtance of my gratitude to your fa-
'mily, and my zeal and affection in
'your ſervice.' I made him a noble preſent, and took it into my cuſtody, we both, according to the beſt of our ſkill, imagining it to be worth above 20,000l. ſo that with what I had acquired otherwiſe, I might be deemed a ſudden very rich man. Our next care was to contrive how to ſecure and conceal it from all eyes till the time when we could return to Europe arrived; and, at laſt, I hit upon a project of hollowing the heels of an ordinary pair of ſhoes, in ſuch a manner as to contain it in the cavity under the upper heel-piece; which we did ſo, that it was impoſſible for any one to diſcover what had been done; and ſo cautious I was, that I determined to keep it a ſecret, even to my friend Saris himſelf. If the thoughts of my deareſt Louiſa had not now, ever and anon, intervened, I ſhould have eſteemed myſelf a very happy man; but whenever her remembrance croſſed my mind, as it frequently would, all the acquiſitions I made, were matters of grief to me, as I was ſure I could never enjoy them with my lovely, charming maid, now no more an inhabitant of theſe mortal regions of miſery. If I had any ſatisfaction in the view of being returned to England in wealth and ſpendour, it flowed from the regard I had to my parents gratification, the joy of my friends, and the good of the indigent and unhappy.

We had been ſettled here for four years, and though I took care to write home by every conveyance, yet I had received no return, which gave me the moſt touching pain and uneaſineſs; for I looked upon the advices I had received at my firſt arrival, as of no great importance, being diſpatched ſo ſoon after my departure. I knew the punctuality of my friends too well to doubt their writing to me by every opportunity that offered, and, therefore, unleſs death or ſickneſs had happened, I was ſenſible their letters muſt ſome how or other have come to hand. In ſhort, the concern I was under gave me no reſt; and Truman was almoſt as much grieved as myſelf, for he had as much love for my father and mother, as if they had really been his own. Whilſt we were in this deſpondency, the arrival of a ſhip from England cheared our hearts, bringing us letters of a very freſh date, from all the perſons I ſo dearly loved. They mentioned their having wrote often before, ſo that I concluded they had ſent by ſhips bound to other parts of Aſia, and that the letters might miſcarry in the country veſſels they were ſent to me in, or in the carriage over land. My father, mother, and all my friends, were in health, for which I returned ſincere thanks to the Almighty; and my friend Mr. Diaper, to my great joy, had been home from two voyages, and was then gone out upon his third, and had acquired a very conſiderable fortune. He was to the laſt degree ſurprized to hear, that I was gone to the ſame part of the world he came from, and tenderly concerned that the diſtance of the ſcene of his voyages from the place I was ſettled at rendered a correſpondence or interview impoſſible, unleſs by mere accident. His lovely miſtreſs and her family were well, and, at his return from his preſent voyage, he intended to ſettle in England, and enter into the happy union he had ſo long ſighed after: all theſe particulars I received in a letter from old Mr. Diaper; and Prig gave me a long account of Prim's behaviour in Yorkſhire, where he came down with my letters, and to ſee him, and gave him the greateſt ſatisfaction in the knowledge of his having ſeen me and brought tidings from me. He had carried himſelf, whilſt in England, with ſo much honour and generoſity, as to wipe out all ſuggeſtions to his prejudice, and to gain the love of my father, and all he converſed with; and they expected him, by every ſhip that came from Virginia, with his family, to ſettle there. I took the opportunity, upon the return of the ſhip

that

that brought thoſe letters, to write anſwers to them, and particularly wrote to Mr. Goodwill, to get me an order from the directors to come home, whenever it ſuited my inclination or deſires; for, by the time I ſhould receive it, I did not doubt but I ſhould be eagerly fond of returning to my native country, after which I ſent many a rending ſigh, that came from the bottom of my heart, crying often, in the height of my paſſionate remembrances—

'Ah, may I yet reviſit thee once more!
'Once more ſurvey thy Thames' unequall'd
'towers!
'Or thro' thy fruitful vales tranſported ſtray;
'Baſk under thoſe lov'd ſhades I us'd to
'haunt,
'Secure from ſcorching heats, benumbing
'dews,
'And all th' inclement rage of eaſtern ſkies!
'—But, ah! Louiſa, thou art ever fled,
'And joy returns not to this tortur'd breaſt!'

CHAP. XVIII.

HE HAS FARTHER GOOD FORTUNE—OBSERVES THE SETTLED MELANCHOLY OF MR. SARIS—ENDEAVOURS TO SOOTHE HIS DISQUIET—DISCOVERS SOMEWHAT OF THE CAUSE OF HIS AFFLICTION—HE INDUCES HIM TO RELATE HIS UNHAPPY STORY.

SEVERAL things I, after this adventure of the diamond mines, undertook, with the aſſiſtance of Truman, had a like good ſucceſs; ſo that, at the end of five years, I found myſelf worth above 35,000l. ſuppoſing my great jewel to be worth no more than 15,000l. which was the loweſt value I could put upon it; and all this ſucceſs accrued to us without ſubjecting me to envy or reproach, ſeeing I took all the care in the world to merit every body's eſteem, and to execute faithfully the orders of my principals. Truman was looked upon as a relation of mine, and moſt of our riches were ſuppoſed to belong to him, which opinion we did all in our power to keep up. As to Mr. Saris, he had brought but a ſmall fortune with him; but had, however, by the opportunities my money gave him of good markets, raiſed it to 11,000l. and, as to Truman, he had of his own above 2,500l. which he looked upon as ſufficient for him to live happily upon the remainder of his days: in ſhort, we all thought ourſelves very happy, and were, unlike the generality of merchants, content, nor deſired by ſtill accumulating more money to tempt fortune too far, and bring upon ourſelves a reverſe of luck, which, could we get ſafely to Europe, we thought ourſelves out of the power of. Mr. Saris and myſelf lived in the utmoſt harmony, and were complimented with the epithet of the brother-factors; and I muſt own his temper was ſo amiable, his notions of things ſo juſt, and his actions ſo diſintereſted and honourable, that I felt for him as great an affection as I had ever done for any man but my friend Diaper, whom I could not help fancying he was very much like; but it gave me ſome uneaſineſs to perceive, as I had conſtantly done, a gloom and melancholy ſpread over his countenance, that for my life I had not been able to fathom the meaning of; he diſliked much company, and ſhewed a diſtaſte at being amongſt the ladies, which, though it humoured my diſpoſition, yet I could not imagine he had the ſame motives for that I had. I uſed all the art I was maſter of to diſſipate this chagrin; and, that failing, did all I could to learn the occaſion of it: to engage him to diſcloſe himſelf, at times I gave him my own hiſtory, at the recital of which, he expreſſed a great deal of concern, but ſtill continued ſilent, as to what affected himſelf. We frequently diverted ourſelves, according to the cuſtom of the place, in viſiting our neighbours, and going abroad in the country in our palanquins; ſometimes our books, of which, as I obſerved before, I had a large collection, made our entertainment at home in our vacant hours, and at other times muſick or back-gammon killed our tedious moments. A briſk young lady, the widow of an Engliſh merchant, and very rich, fell in love with Saris; and it was a great ſurprize to me and every one, conſidering that people here ſtick at nothing to make their fortunes, to ſee this young gentleman not only cold upon the occaſion, but, when a propoſal of marriage was made to him, he abſolutely, though gentelly, refuſed

the

the offer. I thought it ſo much to his advantage, that I ſhould be wanting to friendſhip, if I did not do all I could to perſuade him into it; but, with a ſigh, he told me, if I knew the reaſons he had never more to think of the ſex, I would excuſe him; and, to free himſelf from my importunities, he one evening told me, he could no longer refuſe to gratify my curioſity by a detail of his ſtory, how much ſoever he might ſuffer in the recital; and, without waiting my reply, began thus—

THE STORY OF MR. SARIS; OR, THE UNHAPPY HUSBAND, AND CRUEL FATHER-IN-LAW.

'WHEN I reflect on the ills I have ſuffered, in the few years I have ſeen of life, it amazes me, that I have ſupported myſelf from death or diſtraction; for I cannot forbear to exclaim, that ſure, of all men, I am the moſt unhappy. I am a native of the kingdom of Ireland, and my true name is not Saris, but Fitzgerald; having altered it, when I left that country, that the repetition of it might not adminiſter to the remembrance of my misfortunes. My mother, who was reckoned a beauty, was of a very illuſtrious family, in the county of Cavan, but was baſely betrayed by a promiſe of marriage from a nobleman of diſtinguiſhed rank; and I was the unhappy fruit of an amour, of which ſhe repented to her dying hour. She had an independent fortune, and therefore the falſeneſs of her lover, who baſely married another, ſoon after I was born, did not ſubject her to the frowns or ill uſage of her friends and relations; and ſhe was ſo privately delivered of me, at a farm-houſe in a diſtant county, that the ſecret of her miſcarriage was known to very few. She reſiſted all the overtures of altering her condition after this, though many very advantageous propoſals were made her; often telling thoſe that were in her confidence, that, though the wretch who had wronged her, had acted ſo meanly, ſhe ſtill thought herſelf married in the ſight of Heaven, and would never violate thoſe engagements. She ſolely applied herſelf to my education; and her extreme fondneſs for me was repaid by a like affection, and ſuch progreſs in all that I was put to learn, as gave her inconceivable delight. She was a woman of a noble and generous ſoul, and would never hear her betrayer mentioned, and ſtudiouſly avoided every place ſhe was likely to ſee him in: to me ſhe never made a ſecret of my birth, telling me, that I muſt make amends for my mother's folly, by acquiring worthy and honourable ſentiments, and, qualifying myſelf to ſerve mankind, wipe out the vulgar prejudices they might imbibe, which would, no doubt, level their force againſt me. My father, whom I was never permitted to ſee, died when I was ten years old, leaving to a ſon, by his ſecond marriage, (for ſo I muſt call it) his title and eſtates, ſubject to an annuity of 400l. a year, payable to my mother, as an expiation of his crime, and a token of his repentance, for ſo he expreſſed it in the will he left behind him, and to me 2000l. My mother was ſo ſtruck with this inſtance of his regard, that ſhe forgot his faults, and mourned his death, as if ſhe had been his widow; and, though ſhe lived till I was ſixteen, yet ſhe carried a load at her heart, that threw her into a deep conſumption, and, in fine, carried her off, to my exceſſive regret, in the 35th year of her age, leaving me in the guardianſhip of Sir Thomas Bourk, with an eſtate of 500l. per annum, and the 2000l. I have before-mentioned. I went to live with that gentleman, till I was properly qualified for the univerſity, and then went to purſue my ſtudies at Trinity College in Dublin, where I remained till my 20th year, and made no ſmall improvement in letters: from thence I went to reſide for ſome time at Paris, where I learnt the language, and all thoſe exerciſes and accompliſhments neceſſary to a young gentleman, who would puſh his fortune in the world; and returned at the end of a twelvemonth to my native country. Sir Thomas received me with the utmoſt kindneſs; and I determined to ſtay with him till I had procured a commiſſion in the army, for to that way of

life

life my genius particularly led me. This gentleman was a widower of 50 years of age, well made; and, having always lived in the polite world, carried an air of diſtinction about him in every thing he ſaid or did; and I thought myſelf entirely happy in his converſation; and he, on his part, let me perceive that he had for me the affection of a father. The next ſeat to ours was that of Mr. Malony, a gentleman of quite a different diſpoſition, a brute by nature, and whom mere accident had given the poſſeſſion of a large eſtate to; he was litigious and ſpiteful, the dread of his neighbours, the tyrant of his tenants, and the plague and tormentor of his family: his raps, as the peaſants are called in Ireland, hated him mortally; and, but for the virtues of a lovely and charming daughter, then in the 18th year of her age, he would have lived in a deſart, none of his neighbours caring to converſe with him. This lady had all the perfections of body and mind that could adorn the ſex; and ſuch a fund of charity and humanity, that the whole country rung her praiſes. I had never ſeen her, though my curioſity was greatly excited by the reports of her beauty and good ſenſe; but one evening, as we were returning from hunting, we met her going home in a chaiſe, and Sir Thomas giving me the hint who ſhe was, I regarded her with a fixed attention, and never took off my eyes, till, alas! her image had made too deep an impreſſion on my heart ever to be removed. We complimented her, which ſhe returned in ſo engaging and complaiſant a manner, and with ſuch a good-natured condeſcenſion, that ſhe finiſhed her conqueſt; and I returned home ſo thoughtful and penſive, that Sir Thomas told me, ſmiling, it was proper I ſhould pay a viſit to Malony, which would yield me a proper antidote againſt the charms of his daughter. In a word, after this, I had no reſt, and was continually propoſing ſchemes to myſelf of being introduced to her again, when Sir Thomas informed me, that Malony had very ill-naturedly confined one of his raps for purſuing the game over his manor; and told me he would make me his agent, to bring him to reaſon, by which I might have an opportunity to ſee Miſs Jenny. I jumped at the propoſal; and, receiving proper inſtructions, ſet out on my embaſſy. It was about a mile from our houſe; and, when I came to the gate, I knocked near a quarter of an hour before any body anſwered me; at length a ſurly fellow, preceded by a maſtiff, who had not a worſe look than himſelf, enquired my buſineſs. I bid him acquaint his maſter, that I begged to ſee him, and that I had ſomewhat to ſay to him from Sir Thomas Bourk; the fellow made not a word of reply, but, with a ſcouling look, retired into the houſe, crying, as he went off, "Here, Towſer, come along." In ſome time after he came again, and, opening the gate, told me, in the ſame ſurly manner, that his maſter was in the parlour, and, if I wanted him, I muſt go that way, directing me with a nod of his head. I entered the houſe, and, ſeeing a door open to my right, went in, and found my gentleman wrapped up in flannels, having got a fit of the gout, and his ſweet daughter working with her needle, at the other end of the room. "So, I know your buſineſs," he cried; "and you may tell Sir Thomas that "I will purſue the law; and, if I had "been able, I would have tied his "raſcal to a tree, and ſhot him dead, "for his inſolence!" He went on in this wild manner, and never aſked me to ſit down, nor would ſuffer me to put in a word; till Miſs, riſing, brought me a chair, and deſired me to repoſe myſelf. This action, and the ſight of her charms, quite tranſported me; ſo that I remained ſome moments ſilently gazing upon her, which made her bluſh; at length I began to talk to her father in ſo mild and perſuaſive a ſtrain, that I overcame his brutal, ſavage temper; and he promiſed me the man ſhould be releaſed, and he would forgive him. This was a great matter; but I ſtill wanted to ſtay longer, and commended the ſituation of his houſe, or rather caſtle, in ſuch an inſinuating manner, that he bid his daughter ſhew me his gardens, and every

thing

'thing elſe that was worth ſeeing, 'which ſhe readily obeyed him in. 'Indeed, this creature had beſtowed 'all that art could yield on this de-'lightful ſpot; for ſo it appeared 'when I got into it; and, if regular 'parterres, falling caſcades, cooling 'grottos, and embowering ſhades, 'could render a garden agreeable, all 'theſe might be found here. I walk-'ed with this lovely maid, with ſo 'much diſorder in my heart and coun-'tenance, that ſhe eaſily perceived, 'and gently told me, ſhe feared I was 'tired. I told her I could never be 'tired with ſuch company as that I 'was bleſſed with; but, if ſhe pleaſed, 'would repoſe a little in the alcove, at 'the end of the alley we were in, if 'ſhe would not forſake me; ſhe, ſmil-'ing, ſaid, ſhe would accompany me; 'and we entered, and ſeated our-'ſelves. Happy ſituation! a murmur-'ing rill ran at the foot of the little 'eminence this box ſtood upon, which, 'in tinkling falls, meandred amongſt 'the ſhining pebbles; the jeſſamine, 'and the woodbine, interwove their 'gentle tendrils with each other, as 'they aſcended the alcove. The mu-'ſick that was poured from the throats 'of the feathered ſongſters, in the 'neighbouring groves, interrupted 'now, and now ſwelled by the fanning 'breeze, that bruſhed the quivering 'leaves, joined the amorous cadence 'of a ſpouting Triton, that from his 'full-blown cheeks emptied his watery 'treaſures into a reſervoir, in full view 'of our retirement; and the goddeſs 'of theſe rural ſcenes ſat beſide me, 'arrayed with more reſplendent graces 'than deck the riſing morn, or ſtreak 'the weſtern ſkies, at the retreat of 'the enlivening god of day! Fired 'with the preſent occaſion, I ventured 'to tell her, that, though now the 'happieſt of mortals, I ſhould ſoon 'experience a ſad reverſe, if ſhe would 'not permit me to breathe my paſſion, 'a paſſion that took birth when firſt 'I ſaw her! and would continue to 'the lateſt hour of my life. She 'bluſhed, but at length confeſſed ſhe 'had conceived ſome favourable ſenti-'ments of me; and that, would her 'father conſent, my viſits would not 'be diſagreeable. Oh, my friend! 'you who have known the warmth of 'a lover, may eaſily conceive how I 'received this generous declaration! 'My acknowledgments were un-'bounded, and I acted like one tranſ-'ported. We retired into the houſe, 'and her father chid her for ſtaying ſo 'long; but I behaved in a manner 'agreeable to his humour; and he 'went ſo far as to give me a general 'invitation to ſmoke a pipe with him, 'that was his phraſe, whenever it 'ſuited my conveniency. Sir Tho-'mas was ſurprized, at my return, 'when I gave him an account of my 'ſucceſs; and more ſo, when the re-'turn of his tenant convinced him 'that what I ſaid was true. He con-'gratulated me; but told me, he was 'ſure Maloney would never give his 'conſent to my having his daughter, 'as he was a bigotted Roman Catho-'lick, and intended her for a nephew 'he had in Ruth's regiment of the 'Iriſh Brigades, in the French ſer-'vice, whom he had invited over to 'poſſeſs his daughter, and heir his 'eſtate. This was very diſcouraging 'news; but I was reſolved to purſue 'the dictates of my paſſion; and we 'took care to keep our correſpondence 'ſo ſecret, that I had free acceſs to 'Maloney's houſe; and he never ſu-'ſpected the inducements for my fre-'quent viſits. I will not keep you 'too long by the rehearſal of the hap-'py moments I enjoyed at this time, 'and the progreſs I made in my Jen-'ny's affection; but it may ſuffice, 'that, in ſix months time, I had her 'liberty to demand her in marriage of 'her father; and employed Sir Tho-'mas Bourk to get his conſent; but 'no rage could equal his, when the 'propoſal was made to him; he ran 'out into the moſt ſcandalous and 'mean invectives; and, in concluſion, 'rudely bid that gentleman depart his 'houſe, for he would take care his 'daughter ſhould never have it in her 'power to marry a baſtard. You 'may be ſure this uſage of my friend 'and me ſhocked me greatly, and, at 'firſt, I was reſolved to call him to a 'proper account; but my love over-'came all, and I now pondered upon 'every method I could deviſe, to ſpeak 'to the inſlaver of my ſoul, which, at 'length, I effected, by getting over 'the garden wall, in diſguiſe, and

'brought

'brought her to consent to make her 'escape in a few days, and marry me, 'without her tyrant's consent. I was 'the rather induced to this precipi-'tancy, as every day Colonel Maloney 'was expected in Ireland, and I was 'fearful she would not be proof against 'the hardships that would be inflicted 'upon her, if she did not consent to 'have him; and it was the easier to at-'tempt an escape now, because her 'father had not discovered she had any 'regard for me more than ordinary, 'and therefore still allowed her the li-'berty of going at large about the 'house and gardens; for Sir Thomas, 'by my desire, had concealed the in-'clination she had for me, for fear of 'subjecting her to his brutal fury; so 'that it seemed only a simple proposal 'made from me, without other in-'ducement than the hopes of having a 'good fortune.

'We agreed that I should wait at a 'place assigned, with two or three 'trusty friends, and a ladder of ropes, 'by which she might get over the 'wall; and then we were to proceed to 'Dublin, to be married, and to leave 'our reconciliation with her father to 'time, which might operate in our fa-'vour.

'The second night after this agree-'ment, I engaged three of the neigh-'bouring young gentlemen to assist 'me; and, providing horses and fire-'arms, we set out for the expedition. 'It was very dark, but I found my 'delightful creature punctually at-'tending at her station, and, with 'ease, conducted her over the wall, 'and mounted her; and, my friends 'getting on horseback, I was prepar-'ing to do the same, when I was chal-'lenged, in a hoarse voice, with— "What are you about there, you "dog? Have you been robbing Mr. "Maloney?" I had not time to reply, 'for, at the same instant, I received a 'blow over the head, that made me 'stagger; on which I let go the reins 'of my horse, and, facing about, drew 'my sword, my antagonist, whom I 'could just see, doing the same, and 'at it we went; but I was so fortu-'nate, that, in three or four passes, I 'ran him through the body, and he 'fell; and, at the same time, I was as-'saulted by another hand, who cried 'out, that I had killed his poor ma-'ster, in the French language. One 'of my friends, who had dismounted, 'soon gave the same account of him 'that I had done of the other; and then 'we bestrode our horses again, and en-'couraging poor Miss Jenny, who had 'fainted at the danger I was in, we 'made the best of our way, and in 'three days arrived, without any re-'markable accident, at Dublin, where 'I was soon put into possession of all 'my soul desired. Sir Thomas had 'declined making one of us, as it was 'more prudent for him to stay on the 'spot, where he was more likely to be 'of service to us, than where we were; 'and you may be sure I was quite sur-'prized, when acquainted, by letter 'from him, that Maloney was search-'ing the whole country for me and 'his daughter, with vows of a bitter 'revenge; and that the two men, 'whose rashness had occasioned their 'deaths, were his nephew and his va-'let de chambre, who were just arrived, 'when our getting over the wall put 'them upon seeing what we were 'about, which proved so fatal to them. 'There was now no time to be lost, 'and, concealing ourselves, as well 'as we could, we applied to our 'friends in power; and having ob-'tained a promise of a pardon from 'the Lord Lieutenant, if necessary, 'leaving my wife at Dublin, we went, 'and took our trials at the assizes; and 'the jury, though greatly influenced 'by Maloney, brought in their verdict, '*chance medley*, and we were acquitted 'of the murders. That wretch put 'all methods in practice, and used all 'his friends and money to get a ver-'dict against us; but the affair was so 'clear, that he was quite baulked in 'his villainous designs; though I was 'obliged, however, to send for his 'daughter from Dublin, into court, 'he having preferred a second bill of 'indictment against me, for stealing an 'heiress, which ended as much to his 'dissatisfaction as the former, by her 'generous testimony in my favour. 'The whole country rejoiced at his 'chagrin, which added so to his re-'sentment, that he hired ruffians to 'destroy me; which having discover-'ed, and finding no other way to put 'an end to such practices, I indicted 'him in my turn, and he received a 'sentence agreeable to his crime; but

'his emiſſaries, on account of being 'his tenants, and threatened, to force 'them to undertake the job, with all 'his reſentment, in caſe they did not 'undertake it, were acquitted.

'Finding it in vain to attempt to 'bring him to reaſon, I ſat down con-'tentedly; and, having an eſtate of 'my own in the country, went to live 'upon it, and enjoyed all the pleaſures 'in my union with my endearing wife 'that my fondeſt expectations had 'flattered me with; and I believe no 'couple in the univerſe could live more 'happily in themſelves, or more be-'loved by others.' Here poor Saris wept, and made the bittereſt reflec-tions; and uttered ſuch moving com-plaints, that I could ſcarcely calm. 'Alas!' he ſaid—

"It is the curſe of virtuous minds, op-"preſs'd,
"To think what their ſtate is, and what "it ſhould be:
"Impatient of their lot, they reaſon "fiercely,
"And call the laws of Providence un-"equal."

When I had brought him to ſome temper, he reſumed his narration in the following manner. 'My ſpouſe, at 'the end of a twelvemonth, brought 'me a ſon, who, I hope, is now liv-'ing, and will meet with a happier 'fate than his poor father; and in all 'that time, though we uſed all the arts 'we could employ for that purpoſe, 'the brute, her father, would neither 'ſee us, nor ſpeak to us, though our 'coaches often met in the ſame road; 'and he conſoled himſelf for the loſs 'of my wife, by taking a houſekeep-'er, who was a ſhocking, red-haired 'creature, and made him believe ſhe 'had a child by him ſome years be-'fore, which he now took extraordi-'nary care of, on purpoſe to ſpite me. 'After the birth of my ſon, I was re-'ſolved to have juſtice done to my 'wife, in an affair which I had, till 'that time, ſuffered to lie dormant: a 'brother of her mother had left her, 'by his will, ſome years before, 8000l. 'in the hands of her father, who was 'his executor in truſt for the uſe of 'his daughter. I ſent a proper perſon 'to demand payment of it, which, as 'I knew he would, he peremptorily 'refuſed, telling the gentleman, in his 'way, that we were villains and beg-'gars; beſides, he had more money to 'ſpend in law than I had, which he 'would rather do than we ſhould be 'ſixpence the better for him. Upon 'this, I brought my action againſt 'him, and carried the affair on, till, 'on various pretences, he removed it 'to another court; and, in fine, I filed 'a bill in Chancery againſt him, and 'went ſo far, that, after ſpending near 'two thouſand pounds on each ſide, I 'was ſure of a decree in my favour 'the following term, the Lord Chan-'cellor having expreſſed the utmoſt 'deteſtation of his proceedings; and 'now this devil, for I can give him 'no gentler term, made overtures of 'peace, and employed emiſſaries, who 'expreſſed his ſorrow at our differ-'ences, and told us it was his deſire 'all animoſities ſhould be buried, and 'he would appoint a day when we 'ſhould wait upon him, to eat a re-'conciling dinner at his houſe. Good 'God! to what lengths ſome men 'can carry their wickedneſs! Upon 'my wife and ſon's account, I cloſed 'with the propoſal, and appointed my 'friend Sir Thomas to be one of our 'company, little ſuſpecting any trea-'chery. The day came, and I car-'ried my wife and ſon with us, and 'we were received by him, with all 'the diſſembled fondneſs the execution 'of his black deſign required. We 'ſpent our time very agreeably; he 'kiſſed and embraced us, and made 'my wife a preſent of ſome of her 'mother's jewels, and after dinner 'we had ſeveral bottles of wine to 'drink ſucceſs to our accord, and 'agreed to put a ſtop to all law-pro-'ceedings on both ſides. The houſe-'keeper, whom I could ſcarcely reliſh, 'made one of the company; but, all 'on a ſudden, my wife complained 'ſhe was ſick, and both myſelf and 'Sir Thomas found ourſelves very 'queer and qualmiſh: ſhe grew worſe 'and worſe, and turned black in the 'face, and before help could arrive 'expired in my arms. Dreadful mo-'ment! Whilſt I was lamenting loudly 'this cruel diſaſter, I heard the houſe-'keeper whiſper him ſoftly, "You "ſee, Sir, it did take at laſt." Theſe 'words rouzed me from my deplora-'ble ſituation, and, my head begin-'ning to turn round, I ſeized her by

'the

'the ſhoulders, and, drawing my 'ſword, aſked her ſternly, what ſhe 'was telling her maſter. She turned 'pale as death, and was going to re-'ply, when a ſervant breaking in, 'fell on his knees, and told us, he was 'ſure his young lady and all of us 'were poiſoned; that he had brought 'ſome ſtuff to kill vermin for his ma-'ſter the day before, and was ſure it 'had been applied to that purpoſe. 'Good God! what a ſcene was here! 'my dear wife dead before me, Sir 'Thomas juſt fainting, myſelf hardly 'able to ſtand, and the wretches, who 'had brought this ruin upon me in 'horror and amaze at being diſcover-'ed. What could I do, my friend? 'What would you have done? Rage 'dried up my tears, and choaked the 'paſſage of my words; and oh, hea-'vens! I ſeized my wretch of a fa-'ther, and ran my ſword up to the 'hilt in his breaſt, and leaving him to 'vomit out his black ſoul, I executed 'the ſame vengeance on his whore; 'and then, loſing all ſtrength, fell life-'leſs upon the body of my deareſt 'Jenny! The ſurgeon and phyſician 'we had ſent for, when I firſt per-'ceived my wife ill, ſoon after arrived, 'and were ſhocked at the mournful 'ſcene; but finding ſome ſigns of 'life in me and Sir Thomas, and 'hearing the report of the family, 'that we were poiſoned, ordered us to 'bed, and adminiſtered proper anti-'dotes, by which we expelled a great 'quantity of it, and came to our-'ſelves, but ſufficiently weakened; 'and though the ſtrength of our con-'ſtitutions overcame the ſhock nature 'had received, yet a violent fever ſuc-'ceeded from the diſorder of my mind, 'which kept me in this accurſed houſe 'near ſix weeks, during which Sir 'Thomas kindly took care of my 'child and family, and had the proper 'depoſitions made before the coroner, 'which prevented a great deal of trou-'ble to us. My wife's death lay 'heavy at my heart, and I was near 'ſix months, in which I never ſhewed 'any ſigns of reaſon. Sir Thomas 'had removed her ſoon after his reco-'very, and cauſed her to be buried 'with proper ceremony; and, when I 'was a little brought to my ſenſes, I 'cauſed a ſtately monument to be 'erected over her, with a proper in-'ſcription to her memory, which, 'however, has far a better record in 'my breaſt, from whence the lovely 'image ſhall never depart.' His griefs were ſo renewed at this part of his diſaſtrous hiſtory, that he fainted, and it was a long time before I brought him to himſelf, and was concerned my ſilly curioſity had called to mind his cruel ſorrows. I begged him to finiſh here, and ſay no more; but, wiping his tears away, which trickled faſt from his eyes, he continued as follows. 'Had 'it not been for the conſideration of 'my infant ſon, I had certainly done 'ſome deſperate miſchief to myſelf; 'but argument and reaſon made me 'ſoon more temperate; I reſolved, 'however, to forſake a country that 'had been the ſtage of ſo many cruel 'accidents to me; and ſettling my 'affairs, which were now larger than 'ever, by the acceſſion of the mon-'ſter's eſtate, who had ſo barbarouſly 'killed my comforts for ever, I ap-'pointed Sir Thomas guardian to my 'ſon, giving proper inſtructions for 'his education; and, taking 2000l. 'with me, reſolved in ſome diſtant 'clime to end my days. Fortune, at 'London, directed me to a friend, 'who propoſed a voyage to the Eaſt 'Indies to me, which I cloſed with, 'and arrived here about half a year 'before you. I underſtand by letters 'I have lately received from Ireland, 'that my ſon is well; and have ſo 'many preſſing inſtances to return 'home, that I believe I muſt once 'more viſit this image of the woman 'I loved, and ſuffer grief to lay me 'there by her ſide. My trafficking 'here has been merely by way of 'amuſement, and with no deſire to 'amaſs money. Alas! thoſe times 'are over with me! and now I have 'given you my dreadful ſtory, you 'will not wonder at my melancholy, 'or that I think of nothing but death; 'which, I hope, will ſpeedily end my 'wretched and painful being.'

CHAP. XIX.

HE RECEIVES LEAVE TO RETURN TO ENGLAND — SOME STRICTURES ON GOVERNMENT — FINDS MR. SARIS AT LIBERTY TO GO ALSO — THEY SEND

TRUMAN AWAY WITH THE GREATEST PART OF THEIR EFFECTS — TAKE LEAVE OF THEIR FRIENDS — ARRIVE AT BATAVIA—EMBARK IN A DUTCH EAST INDIA SHIP FOR EUROPE —TOUCH AT THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

IT was more than twelve months before I heard from Mr. Goodwill, and the reſt of my friends; and I returned ſincere thanks to God, that, during all this time, no mortality had happened amongſt us. Mr. Goodwill ſent me the order I deſired, which his uncle had obtained by his intereſt, and bore date at the time that letter was wrote: it permitted me to leave the country, and my factory, in ſix months after the receipt of it. I waited upon Governor ——— with this leave, who received me in the politeſt manner; for he had ſhewn me extraordinary reſpect ever ſince I arrived, which had been repaid by me in an obſervation of that due deference and obedience that I think ſhould be always paid to our ſuperiors. There are, no doubt, a ſet of perſons in being, who are conſtantly uneaſy under whoever governs. Man, born a free agent, naturally aims at reaping all the privileges that are his happy lot; but he carries this ſometimes too far, he enters into a compariſon between himſelf and the perſon who rules him; he erroneouſly imagines, that that perſon ſhould have greater talents and abilities than fall to the ſhare of ſuch finite beings; he ſees him ſubject to the ſame frailties with himſelf, and he blames the Power who could not better diſtinguiſh than to appoint ſuch a governor to rule over him. My friend, the moſt divine and heavenly man that ever exiſted, that true judge of human nature, to whom we are obliged for all thoſe ſublime rules and precepts, that under various forms govern the civilized part of the world, never entered into the merits of a ruler's character, or it's demerits: he even ſuppoſes, or ſeems to ſuppoſe, that Providence has a great ſway in ſetting up magiſtrates, when, in anſwer to the Jews enſnaring queſtion, without calling Cæſar an uſurper and a tyrant, as he really was, he ſays, 'Give unto Cæſar the things that are 'Cæſar's, and unto God the things 'are God's!' Certainly, in the wiſe diſpoſition Heaven makes of things, it deſtines one man to this employment, and another man to a different one; it alſo appoints thoſe that ſhall govern, and thoſe that ſhall obey; and, their obligations to each other being mutual, if the heavenly contract is broke through by either party, it becomes void, of no effect, and ſuch remedies ought to be applied to, as are thought proper by either ſide of the queſtion; ſo far as they do not affect the general laws of nature, and the rules or conduct of Providence. It is enough, my gentle reader, that thy property is ſecured, and thy perſon free from danger; leave the minute ſprings and movements of government to ſtateſmen; believe they do right, and never by an exploring inquiſitiveneſs into the actions of your ſuperiors in their publick ſtation, or in the management of their private concerns, endanger that hurt to your mind, that diſcontent and ill-humour produce. The governor, undoubtedly, is obliged to conſult the good of the governed, and no obligation lies upon us tamely to ſubmit to oppreſſion, and the injuries flowing from a bad adminiſtration, to, let me ſay, it's conſtituents. But we muſt not magnify our wrongs, or increaſe our ſorrows, by ſeeing through a falſe and deceitful medium. Here we are happy—George reigns in the hearts, as he does over the perſons of his ſubjects, with a mild, a gentle ſway. Does he appoint miniſters? He appoints ſuch, we muſt hope, as from a thorough knowledge he thinks equal to the taſk of adviſing and directing him to purſue his people's good and happineſs; like ſmall ſtreams derived from this ſource, all our petty magiſtrates have their original; and let us endeavour rather to cover than to declare their faults, if they produce no other bad conſequences than what flow to themſelves, by the contempt an imprudent management of their private concerns will occaſion. Every department of government does not furniſh an Halifax, or a Montague; a Montague, alas! lately departed, too ſoon loſt to the bewailing world.— 'Oh, Montague! as long as virtue is 'reſpected by mankind, as long as 'virtue is eſteemed by the good, as 'long

'long as trade flouriſhes in this mari-
'time country, as long as true and
'genuine benevolence of heart ſhall
'conduce to the relief of the miſera-
'ble, ſo long ſhall thy loſs be lament-
'ed by all that ever heard thy name
'and character! Thy ducal coronet
'borrowed luſtre from thee; and thy
'high rank and birth only ſerved to
'make thy noble mind more conſpi-
'cuouſly apparent!' I ſee, methinks, the godlike peer, with that humanity of countenance ſo remarkably his, bending in ſilent attention to ſome tale of woe, and reaching out the ready hand to relieve diſtreſs; his heart melting in ſoft ſympathy and gentle compaſſion, hardly reſtraining the tears that ſtand in his pitying eyes! But I can enlarge no more, though I long to do it on this engaging ſubject, which has carried me ſo far out of my road, and brought to my remembrance one of the greateſt men that ever exiſted.

I was in ſome pain about poor Saris, as I did not thoroughly know how he ſtood in regard to the company, and whether he could alſo leave Fort St. George as ſoon as I did, which was what I earneſtly deſired; but when I mentioned my thoughts to him, he told me, he was at liberty to depart whenever he would; which leave he had obtained of his friend, in the ſame manner I had procured it by mine, and that he would go to England when I departed, for the benefit of my company. I returned him thanks, and we immediately began to get matters in order, and to finiſh our various concerns, particularly, that of ſettling our accounts for the company with the governor, which we did with tokens of his approbation for our fidelity. When Truman found we were diſpoſing matters for our departure, he jumped and ſkipped about as if he was diſtracted, and was not ſo much maſter of himſelf for a long time, as to govern his tranſports with any degree of moderation. When he came a little to himſelf, he adviſed us to go to Batavia, and from thence in a Dutch ſhip to Europe; war being declared, according to our accounts, between the Engliſh and French, though as yet no hoſtilities had been commenced in the Indian ſeas. 'I tell you what, Truman,' ſays Mr. Saris, 'with Mr. Thompſon's conſent, we'll ſend thee off for 'England, with our beſt effects, in the 'homeward bound Dutch fleet, and 'you ſhall leave us next week, and go 'to Batavia for that purpoſe; and 'we will take the chance of any ſingle 'ſhip that may ſail from thence at the 'ſix months end.' Truman was at firſt averſe to this propoſal, his affection for me not permitting him to think of parting with me; but, upon our joint deſire, he undertook, though reluctantly, to prepare for his departure; and, in about a month, having furniſhed him properly, we ſent him, in a ſmall veſſel, to Batavia, whence the ſame veſſel brought letters from him, that he had embarked, and ſailed, in good health, for the Cape of Good Hope. I retained my large diamond, and a ſmall charge of money, having conſigned all the reſt of my effects, jointly, to my father, Mr. Diaper, and Truman, till I arrived. Truman affected me greatly, when we parted, and, in a reſpectful manner, claſping me in his arms, begged me to take care of myſelf; and prayed to God to preſerve me ſafe in my deſigned voyage: in ſhort, we both ſhed tears, and I paid that tribute with pleaſure, to ſo faithful, ſo juſt, and ſo diſintereſted a man, who had ſecured himſelf a large ſhare of my love and eſteem. We implored the bleſſing of God upon his voyage, and hoped he would arrive ſafe at the deſtined port. No man, that has not experienced the pleaſure of having a faithful agent and ſervant, can expreſs the relief it gives to the cares of life; and the ſecret to procure that ſatisfaction, is to convince the ſervant, you have his welfare and intereſt at heart; and then it is natural for him to conſult yours, as his own well-being depends upon it. The loweſt people may be brought to eſteem and practiſe noble principles; and will, of courſe, follow them, if no abſurd, or bad management, in thoſe above them, directs them to different courſes. Would we have honeſt and true domeſticks about us, we muſt act in ſuch a manner ourſelves, as to appear amiable in their eyes; which will make them fearful of following other maxims themſelves. When the time of our own departure came, we took an adieu of all our good friends, and were entertained agreeably by all the gentlemen of the town, who ſhewed great concern in parting with

us;

us; and the governor, and our brother-factors, particularly vied with each other, in making us preſents of ſuch things as would, they thought, render our voyage agreeable. As we had no fleet, or ſingle ſhip, going to Europe, we determined to go the ſame way that we ſent Truman, and arrived ſafely in the city of Batavia, where we had immediately an opportunity of a paſſage to Holland, in the Yfrow Chriſtiana, commanded by Captain Vander Speigel, which was a remarkable ſtout ſhip, and well manned, mounting forty guns, and carrying a hundred and ſeventy ſeamen. Having obtained Governor Van Bluck's licence, which we did with ſome difficulty, to go in her, I had our effects regiſtered, we embarked, and ſtood out to ſea. Before we paſſed the line, we loſt our captain, who was one of the moſt ſottiſh and brutiſh fellows in the world, and was actually ſet on fire by drinking ſpirituous liquors, which, at length, burnt out his entrails, and carried him off. He was ſucceeded by a very gentleman-like man, Captain Beeckman; and, as if the exiſtence of this fellow had retarded, or been the *remora* of our progreſs, the wind, which had been till now unfavourable, ſhifted about, and carried us at a fine rate, till we fell in with the Cape, where we came to anchor along-ſide of two Dutch, and three Engliſh Eaſt Indiamen, after paying the proper ſalutes to the forts and ſhips, and receiving the ſuitable returns to our compliments.

CHAP. XX.

HIS AGREEABLE SURPRIZE, IN MEETING, UNEXPECTEDLY, A DEAR AND VALUABLE FRIEND—THEY RELATE TO EACH OTHER THEIR ADVENTURES—MR. DIAPER'S ACCOUNT OF AN UNHAPPY SHIPWRECK AND ESCAPE—THE SHIPS SAIL IN CONCERT—ARE SEPARATED BY A VIOLENT STORM.

WHEN we had come to anchor, Mr. Saris and myſelf went, with the captain, and ſome other gentlemen, for ſhore, in our long-boat; and, as we paſſed along-ſide of a large Engliſh ſhip, we enquired her name, and my heart jumped from my boſom almoſt, when we were anſwered, as to that particular, and that ſhe was commanded by Captain Friendly. This revived a thouſand endearing ideas in my mind, and I begged the captain to call on board her, which we did; and, the minute I ſet my foot on deck, I enquired, precipitately, whether Mr. Diaper was on board. I was anſwered by the captain, that I was very lucky if I wanted to ſee that gentleman, as he was ſupercargo on board the next ſhip; to which he would do himſelf the pleaſure to accompany me, as he had not himſelf ſeen that valuable man a great while, his voyage having been altered when he left England. When he came there, as I was getting up the ſhip's ſide, I overheard my friend's voice talking to ſomebody, and purpoſely covered my face with my hat, to ſurprize him with the unexpected ſight I was going to preſent before him. We were entreated to go into the great cabbin, where we ſeated ourſelves, and ſoon after Mr. Diaper entered and ſaluted us; he was ſo altered, that, had it not been for his voice, I ſhould ſcarcely have diſtinguiſhed him, and for that ſympathetick involuntary recognition my heart afforded me. I was as much altered myſelf; but, the moment he heard me ſpeak, he turned his eyes eagerly towards me, without ſaying one word; his knees tottered under him, and he exclaimed, 'Great 'God! I thank thee for this!' and would have dropped down, had I not ran to him, and claſping him in my arms, could not refrain from tears: 'Heavens!' I cried, 'this is bliſs—un-'utterable—inexpreſſible—and pays 'me for all my fatigues.'—'To meet 'thee thus,' he rejoined, 'who could 'expect it?' And thus, for near a quarter of an hour, we did nothing but embrace, and utter ſuch diſjointed ſpeeches, as our ſudden elevation of mind could only dictate. Has my reader known what it is to feel the warmth of friendſhip's ſublime and inſpiring ſentiments, that flow of joy that ruſhes over the ſoul, in obliging and being obliged by diſintereſted virtue? Has he been long abſent from the amiable partner of his boſom? Has he found her at his return conſtant, true, and

and faithful, and equal to all his longing wiſhes? Then he may have felt thoſe guſts and ſtarts of paſſionate fondneſs, that we felt in ſeeing each other, after a ſeven years abſence, and all the uncertainties it had produced in our minds of each other's welfare; *that flood of* joy, that *wild tumultuous roll*, that caſt aſide *body*, and left nothing about us but *mind*, and wondering, gazing ſight. When we became ſomewhat calmer, ſtill our enquiries of each other made our converſation a diſjointed medley, in aſking queſtions on each ſide, without being maſter enough of ourſelves to reſolve them. At length I preſented Mr. Saris to him as a valued friend, who had been, ever ſince we met, highly participating in our mutual ſatisfaction; and, being obliged to yield to Captain Beeckman's deſires to go on ſhore as ſoon as poſſible, Mr. Diaper obtained leave of his captain to accompany us; for though the ſupercargoes are ſuperior to the commanders of India ſhips, when on ſhore at the factories, they are under the captain's direction in the voyage: when we came on ſhore, after again refreſhing ourſelves, whilſt the captain was employed in his buſineſs, Mr. Diaper, Mr. Saris, and myſelf, took a walk in one of the beautiful gardens of the Dutch Company, which bloom with all nature's various productions; and, ſitting down under the ſhady covering of a delightful alcove, I related all my adventures and ſucceſſes to my friend; and he, in return, gratified me with an account of all that had happened to himſelf ſince our ſeparation; by which I underſtood, to my great joy, that he never again propoſed going to India, having acquired a fortune of near 30,000l. through various difficulties and dangers, with honour to himſelf and ſatisfaction to his owners. He now hoped, with me, we ſhould find all our friends well, and particularly his adorable Bellair, whom he was haſtening to eſpouſe. I found, in his laſt voyage with Captain Friendly, he had been ſhipwrecked, and underwent great difficulties on a barbarous coaſt, whereby he had been a great loſer; and, that adventure being very curious and extraordinary, I ſhall particularly inſert it, as he related it.

THE UNFORTUNATE SHIPWRECK AND LUCKY ESCAPE OF MR. DIAPER.

'WE had a ſucceſſion of foul weather, from the very day we left the Cape of Good Hope, which continued, with little intermiſſion, till we came the length of the Philippine Iſlands; from which, by our reckonings, we had been driven a great way to the eaſtward, when another violent ſtorm aroſe from the S. E. and for near three weeks we were the ſport of the winds and waves, and could keep no regular account of our way. Our people had been ſo reduced by ſickneſs before, that we had not hands ſufficient to manage the ſhip, ſo that the ſupercargoes, and other gentlemen, were obliged to exert themſelves in performing the meaneſt as well as the moſt toilſome offices. Our proviſions fell ſo ſcarce, that we were at very ſhort allowance; and for water we had not above half a pint a day *per* man, and we had been obliged to throw our guns and the leſs valuable part of our cargo overboard. Nothing could be more dreadful and pitiable than our melancholy ſituation; ſo that we began to abandon ourſelves to deſpair, and, wearied with ſickneſs and fatigue, reſigned ourſelves in expectation of the fatal moment that ſhould put a period to our misfortunes. I took a ſpell one evening at the helm, and experienced a great inſtance of the protection of Providence; an increaſed guſt of wind threw a ſea over us, that waſhed me, a mate, and three other men, that were upon deck, overboard, and though it was almoſt inſtantaneous, yet I had time enough to reflect that I was loſt, and to put a few fervent ſupplications to God, recommending my ſoul into his hands, who beſtowed it upon me; when another wave threw me again upon the main-deck, and there left me gaſping for life: it was ſome time before I came to myſelf, and I was then hurried into the cabbin, and put to bed by Captain Friendly. The mate and the other three were loſt, and, with the higheſt ſentiments of devotion, I

'gave

'gave thanks to, and adored that merciful Being, who had thus ſaved me 'from the waters that ſo terribly encompaſſed me round about. We began ſoon to experience all the miſeries of famine, which appeared in it's moſt terrifying forms. Six of our ſick people expired through mere want of neceſſary ſuſtenance, and we were all ſo overcome with faſting, that the men began to debate, whether or no lots ſhould not be caſt for one of us to die to preſerve the reſt. We drank our urine for many days, not having the leaſt rain ſince the ſtorm began, which otherwiſe we ſhould have ſaved for our uſe. Our main-maſt was brought by the board, but, through mercy, we got her clear of the ſhip, and our bow-ſprit and part of our rudder were carried away by the howling waves. Sure no ſight can be more dreadful than to ſee a veſſel in ſuch a forlorn condition, and to ſurvey, all around, the horrid waſte of waters breaking mountains high on every ſide! at diſtance you ſee them diſſolve into a white foam now ſinking into an abrupt vale, or riſing into a perpetual ſucceſſion of broken craggy hills, rolling far and wide away. The howling burſts, that the bellowing wind ſends forth, rattle through the rigging with impetuous force, and, like one continued peal of thunder, ſeem to deafen the ears, and ſtun the brain.

——— "ſee forked glare
"The livid lightnings through the vaſt ex-
"panſe,
"And, hark! hoarſe thunder growls with
"dreadful roar!
"No more the helm obeys the pilot's hand;
"See, borne aloft, our maſts pervade the
"ſkies,
"And now we're bury'd in the gulph below!
"Dreadful the ſhocking ſcene! but
"grateful ſtill
"To Genii, who aſpire, though ſtill ſur-
"rounded
"By every wretched ill that ſtarts the ſoul,
"To purchaſe honour, and to ſerve man-
"kind!
"Let wretches, mean and ſordid, ſafely lurk,
"Bury'd luxuriouſly, in holes and corners;
"Ours is the uſeful life, though want and
"anguiſh,
"Famine, and all the dreaded train of
"evils
"That human nature ſhrinks at, oft con-
"ſpire
"To check our frailty in the glorious
"race!"

'At the end of three weeks, or thereabouts, as I was looking out afore, methought I ſaw an object, that, after obſerving ſtedfaſtly, I found ſtill kept it's poſition: I ſet it by the compaſs, and perceived it bore off us due ſouth; ſo, with joy, I called to Captain Friendly, who was then very ill, and told him, I was ſure I made land a-head. Though he could ſcarcely crawl, the news gave him ſuch ſpirits, that he was up in an inſtant; and, every body getting the ſcent, the decks were ſoon filled with people, whoſe looks were capable to ſtrike the ſoul with horror; all wan and pale, and ghaſtly, from illneſs and famine; their countenances now betrayed ſomewhat of a ſmile, and the meagre hands and hollow eyes were lifted up to thank God for the mercy he had beſtowed upon us. The ſucceeding day we had a ſhort ceſſation of the ſtorm, and, the ſky being ſomewhat clear, we could now perceive it was plainly land, riſing into hummocks, and deſcending on each ſide into a point; we could not imagine what land it was, but ſteered directly in for it, imagining it to be about ſeven leagues diſtant from us, when the wind again began to riſe with it's wonted fury, and drove us directly in for it: and now a freſh difficulty aroſe, how we ſhould prevent the veſſel's driving up the rocks, which would be our inevitable deſtruction; however, after tacking about, we found we could not keep her head up to the wind, and, weary and faint, let her drive, invoking the great Pilot of the univerſe once more to appear and act in our favour. In ſhort, three or four hours brought us amongſt the breakers, and preſently the ſhip thumped hard upon the rocks, beat part of her falſe keel off, and one of the larboard-ſtrakes; ſo that ſoon the water poured upon us on all ſides, and we were obliged to put out our boats, which were the long-boat and pinnace, which with leſs difficulty we did, as the former

'had

'had been all day in the chains; and, 'putting in the latter the company's 'silver, and providing ourselves with 'some powder, fire-arms, and mathe-'matical instruments, with all our 'books and papers, and some other 'materials, we safely got into them, 'to the number of forty-five souls, 'and committed ourselves to the pro-'tection of Providence, whose assist-'ance we again experienced, by get-'ting safely also on shore, whilst at a 'distance we saw our poor vessel torn 'into a thousand pieces.

'Our first care was to secure our 'boats; and, whilst a party set about 'building tents for such of our people 'as were quite sick and unable to help 'themselves, and whom with extreme 'difficulty we had got from the wreck 'with us, the captain, myself, and 'two more, went armed to look abroad 'into the country, to see the place, 'and to discover if it was inhabited, 'and if we could procure the neces-'saries of life. The soil was sandy, 'and abounded in several kinds of 'trees and shrubs; particularly, to our 'great joy, we found the palm-tree to 'be one of them, which gave us a 'prospect of meeting with still greater 'abundance. We found some deer 'and some wild hogs, and several 'other sorts of animals for food, and 'a particular kind of herb somewhat 'like spinage, by the help of which 'refreshments we were soon all well 'recovered save six, who expired 'soon after our landing; and began 'to enter into a form of domestick 'government, parties being appointed 'to kill game, others to cut firing, 'and the remainder to lengthen our 'long-boat, by the help of which we 'were in hopes we might get from 'this place. All our conjectures were 'a long time at a puzzle to know 'where we were, though some of our 'old voyagers were positive we were 'in one of the most northerly of the 'Marian Islands, which lie from 13° 'to 22° of northern latitude, and in '148° of east longitude from the me-'ridian of London. Our observations 'were confirmed in this; and some of 'our men desiring to go out in the 'pinnace, to discover if we were really 'upon one of these islands or no, and 'to seek for inhabitants, (for as yet 'we had seen none) ten of them were 'permitted to go with Mr. Midgley, 'a supercargo, and a mate at their 'head: they were victualled as well 'as we could supply them; and, hav-'ing the proper instruments, and some 'trifles which we had saved, to truck 'with the natives, they set out on their 'voyage; but whether they were bu-'ried in the sea, or destroyed by the 'Barbarians, I cannot tell, for we 'never saw them more; and the loss 'of so many of our comrades struck 'us with a great damp, and sunk our 'spirits, having now only twenty-'seven left; besides, in losing the pin-'nace, we received a very great detri-'ment, as now we could not go out 'to fish, which had made a part of 'our diet. The island, in the interior 'part, was like a garden, and the air 'so temperate, that we could not help 'thinking ourselves as happy as peo-'ple in our circumstances could de-'sire to be, considering all things; 'and could we once get to any of our 'settlements or factories, and from 'thence to Europe, as we had done 'all that men could do, we did not 'doubt our conduct would be approv-'ed by the company, and that they 'would make no difficulty of employ-'ing us again in their service. In the 'close of the day we busied ourselves 'in such sports or diversions as we 'could perform, as wrestling, leap-'ing, &c. and I made a back-gam-'mon table in a rude fashion, and 'having dice, that was the entertain-'ment of the better sort of us: every 'day I read the church-service morn-'ing and evening, by the captain's de-'sire, and on Sundays we attended the 'devotion of the day with all the punc-'tuality and seriousness imaginable, 'and set apart that seventh portion of 'time to those exercises that amend 'and raise the heart to the great first 'Fountain of all-created things. In 'appearance there could not be a more 'harmonious and peaceable set of peo-'ple than we all were, expressing great 'regard and affection to each other; 'but our melodious Waller might 'well say—

"More dangers now from man alone we
"find,
"Than from the rocks, the billows, or the
"wind."

'And this in a little time proved ex-

‘ actly to be our unhappy caſe. Is it ‘ not ſomething ſurprizing that the ‘ ſpirit of diſcord reigns ſo much ‘ amongſt mankind, that it follows ‘ them, and intrudes itſelf into their ‘ breaſts, even when their very being ‘ depends upon unity and friendſhip's ‘ being preſerved amongſt them? Could ‘ a ſituation much more direful be ‘ thought of than ours was, ſeparated ‘ as it were from all the world, the ‘ companions and brothers of mis- ‘ fortune, and of misfortune not to ‘ be overcome without our joint ef- ‘ forts employed to extricate us. Yet ‘ we fell into feuds and diſſenſions that ‘ cauſed the death of many, and had ‘ very near ruined the innocent with ‘ the guilty, and involved us all in ‘ deſtruction. Hitherto every one had ‘ ſhewn the utmoſt willingneſs in the ‘ taſks appointed them, and to obey ‘ the commands of their officers, to ‘ whom they had been as ſubmiſs as ‘ before our ſhipwreck; and by that ‘ means our long-boat was nearly ready ‘ for ſea, was decked and ſtrengthened ‘ properly, ſo as to become an excel- ‘ lent ſea-boat; and the rigging her, ‘ for which we were particularly oblig- ‘ ed to the palm-tree, was on the point ‘ of being finiſhed, when a moſt hor- ‘ rid conſpiracy was diſcovered, carried ‘ on by twelve of our beſt hands, who ‘ had entered into an agreement to take ‘ away the company's treaſure, and ‘ make their eſcape in the veſſel, and, ‘ leaving us in this diſconſolate con- ‘ dition, go to ſome of the Portugueſe ‘ ſettlements, ſhare the money, and ‘ every one to ſhift for himſelf. This ‘ was their firſt plan; but they after- ‘ wards altered it, and agreed to run ‘ amongſt the Philippine Iſlands, or ‘ to ſteer to the Streights of Manilla, ‘ and there to endeavour to ſeize ſome ‘ large veſſel, and go upon the *account*, ‘ or turn pirates. The principal con- ‘ ſpirator was one Scott, the boatſwain, ‘ a fellow that on board I had obſerved ‘ to be of a mutinous, domineering ‘ ſpirit, and particularly ſevere in the ‘ execution of his office: in ſhort, I ‘ never liked him, but had ſeen him ‘ behave with great caution and cir- ‘ cumſpection ſince he had been on ‘ ſhore, which had in a manner cured ‘ both Captain Friendly and myſelf of ‘ our prejudices againſt him. They ‘ were all armed with firelocks and ‘ hangers, as well as ourſelves, which ‘ made it the more dangerous; and ‘ their deſign was juſt ripe for execu- ‘ tion, when I was the happy inſtrument ‘ to diſcover and defeat it. I was one ‘ day with my gun, and a favourite ‘ dog of mine, who had been before ‘ to India with me; and, having tired ‘ myſelf in the purſuit of game, laid ‘ myſelf down in a copſe, intending ‘ to take a nap before I returned to my ‘ companions, whilſt the dog ſtrayed ‘ at ſome diſtance from me round- ‘ about, employed in the ſeeking way ‘ of pointers. I overheard a voice ‘ which I knew to be Scott's, who ‘ hallooed to another man—“ Damn “ me! how came this dog here? He's “ like his maſter, always peering and “ prying about, and be damned to “ him! I wiſh I could as eaſily diſpatch “ him as I could his dog, and then “ we ſhould have nothing to fear; but “ I'll be damned if I do not hide the “ preciſe ſon of a bitch ſome how or “ other, notwithſtanding!” Upon ‘ which he gave my dog a kick, who ‘ ran yelping away, and, as it hap- ‘ pened, diſtant from the place I lay ‘ in, at the back of which theſe fel- ‘ lows were walking.—“ Curſe me,” ‘ replies another, whom I knew to be ‘ Will Jones, the carpenter's mate, he “ is a good fellow, too, for that mat- “ ter; I would not have any blood “ ſpilt if it could be helped; but as “ to the company, a pack of rich “ ſcoundrels, I think it no ſin to rob “ them, if it was of twice as much.” ‘ I lay cloſe all this while, and heard ‘ them talk over their whole deſign, ‘ and luckily left the ſpot, without it's ‘ being perceived that I had overheard ‘ them; and, in the courſe of their ‘ talk, learned all the names of the ‘ gang. I was ſhocked and amazed ‘ at ſuch a ſcene of villainy, but re- ‘ ſolved to act very cautiouſly, as I ‘ perceived they were already very ‘ ſtrong. The next day I took Captain ‘ Friendly out with me, and Mr. Ben- ‘ ſon, one of our mates, and the only ‘ one we had remaining, under pretence ‘ of ſhewing them a fine proſpect which ‘ I had diſcovered in my peregrinations ‘ the day before. When we had got ‘ far enough, I began to open what I ‘ had heard, and my important diſco- ‘ very, which made them tremble; ‘ and, though they were both as cou-

‘ rageous

'rageous men as any I ever knew, yet 'it was some time before their amaze-'ment would suffer them to speak a 'syllable: at length, when their first 'surprize was over, we began to con-'sult ways and means to crush the 'conspiracy before it came to a greater 'head; and, in order to that, it was 'thought necessary that the silver should 'be put under a guard of two of our 'trustiest men, to be relieved every 'four hours, and that I should lie in 'the hut where it was secured; that 'the captain should call all the hands 'together the next day, and endea-'vour to seize the conspirators un-'armed, by the help of such of our 'people as still continued faithful, 'and to whom we were to impart the 'heads of the affair this very evening. 'Accordingly, we sent privately to 'them, one by one, to avoid suspi-'cion, and received a promise from all 'of them that they would stand by 'their commander, and not see the 'company injured; and most of them 'were so irritated, we could hardly 'restrain their rage within proper 'bounds: but what gave us great un-'easiness, was the impossibility of se-'curing their arms, or catching them 'without them; for, from a precau-'tion generally attendant upon the 'actions of designing and bad people, 'who are full of suspicions, and ever 'on their guard, they, it was observed 'of late, always went armed, and, 'as we were told, which was what had 'surprized the rest of the men, even 'lay with their muskets by them all 'night. It was then thought proper 'to alter our plan of action; and, 'the first time three or four of them 'went out together to fish or hunt, 'to surround them, and, by force of 'arms, make them prisoners; and, 'thus weakened in their numbers, to 'attack the rest, and, not surrender-'ing, to put them to the sword. An 'opportunity immediately occurred; 'and Scott, with four more, going out, 'towards the other end of the island, 'with pretence to hunt, but really to 'agree on methods to put their scheme 'in execution, I begged the captain 'to permit me to follow him with 'seven picked men; which, accord-'ingly, he did; and I took a different 'rout, knowing, however, it would 'soon bring us to encounter each other. 'In about an hour we heard them ap-'proach at a distance; upon which I 'ordered three of my men to enter a 'kind of thicket, where they might 'be concealed from their first sight, 'whilst I advanced with the rest some 'paces, and soon perceived my gentle-'men, who made a stand, and asked, 'in a familiar way, how we came out 'so far. I drew them by degrees to 'the place of my ambuscade, talking 'of indifferent matters; and then, 'facing about suddenly, cried, "Gen-"tlemen, I command you to lay down "your arms, and surrender yourselves "prisoners, that you may be cleared "of a black design against the lives "of your companions, and to run "away with the vessel that we have "all contributed to build, to carry "us from this solitary place, or re-"ceive the punishment due to your "crime." Scott, with the rest, turned 'pale, to hear me speak thus; but 'being a bold and desperate set of 'wretches, they soon resumed their 'countenances, and he told me he did 'not know by what authority I called 'them to account; that they were not 'under my command, nor any one 'else; and would try who were the 'best men, if I persisted in my design; "So, d—n ye, my lads, let us charge "them directly!". On which he fired 'at me; and thereupon I ordered my 'men in the thicket to let fly, by 'which two of the conspirators were 'killed, who at the same instant, with 'an unlucky shot, dispatched one of 'my companions: however, like wild 'beasts, they did not take warning 'by their friends fate, which only 'served to redouble their fury; and, 'Scott advancing before the other two, 'to knock me down with the butt-'end of his piece, I clapped my fire-'lock to his breast, and shot him dead 'on the spot; on which his companions 'surrendered themselves prisoners at 'discretion, and we bound their hands, 'and drove them before us till we 'came near home; when, leaving them 'with two men for their safe-keeping, 'the rest of us entered our little plan-'tation, where Captain Friendly was 'under dreadful apprehensions, fear-'ing our plot had miscarried; but 'now, when, from the information 'of my prisoners, I could give him 'an exact account of the number and

'designs of these wretches, he was 'made tolerable easy, and we prepared 'for the execution of the second part 'of our scheme. The captain and 'Mr. Benson, each attended by six 'men well armed, advanced before 'their hut, and summoned them to 'surrender, or expect to be treated 'without mercy, as Scott and the rest 'of their companions had been be-'fore; but crying out, "One and "all! One and all!" they sallied out, 'and, desperado like, fired their pieces 'on both parties, by which we lost 'two men; and, by our return to their 'fire, dropped two of theirs. By this 'time they had retreated to a large 'tree, which had been cut down for 'some time before, of which they make 'a kind of breast-work; and, before 'our people could close with them, 'had loaded again, and discharged full 'in their teeth, by which another man 'was killed, and Captain Friendly 'wounded in the shoulder; but, in 'return to the salute, our parties fired, 'and laid three more of them flat on 'the earth; and the remaining two 'flung down their arms, and submit-'ted. As so much blood had been 'spilt, and these four fellows were 'the least guilty amongst them, Cap-'tain Friendly deferred any proceed-'ings against them, and proposed to 'keep them confined till we sailed, in 'order to deliver them up to the first 'factory we came to, for the company 'to dispose of as they thought fit: but, 'whilst we were busied in quelling this 'insurrection, five of our men, who 'were on board the Escape, (for so we 'had named our new vessel) agreed to 'run away with her; and providing 'themselves privately with some pro-'visions and water, had put out to sea, 'without being perceived by any of us, 'we were so employed in the aforesaid 'operations; and thus, whilst we were 'contending for the prize, it was run 'away with from both parties. Our 'consternation was extreme, when we 'discovered this perfidy, and saw, at 'distance, our boat under sail, and 'ploughing through the waves. We 'were unable to speak or think, and 'were involved in the deepest and most 'cruel despair, finding now all hopes 'to get away fruitless, and of no ef-'fect, unless Providence directed some 'vessel that way, which was a thing 'we had no foundation to suppose. 'We were now only ten of us, in-'cluding our prisoners, who seemed 'so sincerely penitent, that they were 'suffered to walk abroad, but were 'not trusted with arms. Nothing can 'equal, sure, our disconsolate condi-'tion, and we began to think Heaven 'had forsaken us, and that we must 'finish our days thus remote from our 'friends, and native country, and rob-'bed of all our sanguine desires, and 'fondest wishes; when, one calm 'morning, to our infinite joy, we de-'scried a sail, at some leagues distance; 'upon which we made a great fire on 'an eminence, and, getting upon ano-'ther hill, pitched a great pole there-'on, upon which we hung a shirt, and 'continued firing our musquets, with-'out intermission, hoping some eye or 'other on board her would discover 'these signals of distress; and how re-'joiced were we, when we could see 'a boat put off, full of men, who 'rowed with all their might towards 'the island, and soon came within hail 'of us; when, lying on their oars, 'they asked us, in Portuguese, who 'we were. I answered for the rest in 'that language, that we were the re-'mains of the crew of an English ship, 'who had been shipwrecked here a 'great while ago; and begged them, 'for God's sake, to take us on board, 'which they immediately consented 'to; but would not touch the com-'pany's silver, without first obtaining 'their captain's leave. We were over-'come with transport at this change of 'our condition, and returned sincere 'thanks to God for our deliverance, 'and that we had fallen into the hands 'of friends and allies to our nation; 'and, indeed, we met with the noblest 'usage from the captain, Don Fran-'cisco de Zuniga, who, at my re-'quest, sent his boat again to shore for 'the treasure I was so fond of saving 'for my owners benefit. This ship 'was bound from Goa, on a trading 'voyage to China and Japan, and was 'a very large vessel, and better manned 'than most of the Portuguese ships 'generally are in these parts of the 'world; and the good captain agreed 'to put us ashore at Canton, which 'was the first place he designed to 'touch at. Nothing could happen 'better than this; nor could we be

'carried

'carried to a more desirable place; 'but, though we experienced all the 'goodness and generosity imaginable 'from this noble Portuguese, we ex-'perienced the utmost brutality, and 'superstitious hatred, from the com-'mon sailors possible; and could not 'help acknowledging, that, in their 'ships, they are the most nasty and 'lazy wretches, that ever the world 'produced; and such bad seamen in 'general, that, in a hard gale of 'wind, they, instead of bestirring them-'selves with briskness and alacrity, 'are constantly supplicating their St. 'Antonio to do their business for them; 'so that their commanders are forced 'to exert their authority over them, 'as over a pack of slaves, to bring 'them to any thing. They are, how-'ever, well acquainted with the East 'Indian Seas, and are good pilots; and 'from them we learned, that the island 'we were upon was called Assogon; 'which they themselves had been driven 'to the sight of also by a storm, which 'proved to us so propitious and for-'tunate. Don Francisco was as good 'as his word, and set us safely on 'shore at Canton, refusing to take any 'satisfaction for the service he had 'done us; and we once more got 'amongst our countrymen, after a se-'ries of such perils, misfortunes, and 'dangers; and soon after took passage 'in another of the company's ships for 'England; where, when we arrived, 'and had given the directors an ac-'count of our behaviour and hard-'ships, they treated us very kindly, 'made us handsome presents, and gave 'Captain Friendly a ship for Coast and 'Bay, and provided me with my pre-'sent voyage, to my old station, Can-'ton; whence I am arrived here, 'homeward-bound, happy in having 'recovered a friend I so dearly love, 'and who has been constantly upper-'most in my thoughts.'

We sympathized with each other, in the various difficulties and misfortunes we had met with, and congratulated, mutually, one another, on our good success, which was likely now to raise us to a state of uninterrupted happiness, if a mortal can ever be said to participate of it. He heard Prim's adventures with pleasure and surprize, and conceived an high opinion and regard for Mr. Saris. When he talked of his dear Bellair, he perceived the tears start in my eyes; and I could not help making a mournful comparison between his happy state and my misery, deprived, for ever, of my adorable and adored Louisa. He saw my pain; and, taking me in his arms, kindly said all he could to dissipate my uneasiness, and blamed himself for mentioning a name which could not fail reviving my ideas of the charmer of my soul. He would fain have persuaded us to leave the Dutch ship, and go passengers in his; but we had contracted such a friendship for Captain Beeckman, and he had done so many things, kindly to accommodate us in the voyage, that at length my friend agreed, it would be almost a crime to leave him, and especially as their ship was so full, that he could not promise us near so good entertainment there. He invited the captain with us, to a genteel treat he gave us on board his ship; and, all the time we lay at the Cape, the intercourse of civilities from ship to ship was great and noble, and like men who sincerely delighted to oblige each other. The friendly behaviour between Mr. Diaper, myself, and Mr. Saris, spread a complacency every where, and inspired love and humanity into every breast. When we had got all on board that was necessary for our voyage, my dear friend took a tender farewel of us, hoping we should arrive safe to the desired, the destined spot, from which we had been so long absent, in these uncomfortable, sultry climates. Captain Beeckman, by the desire of the other captains, took the command as commodore, and delivered his orders accordingly; resolving, if possible, to keep company with each other to Europe. We weighed, and set sail in concert, and continued so till we came the length of the Canaries, when a violent storm arose, that put us in the utmost pain for each other. Our ship rode it well; but Captain Friendly's, and that wherein my friend was, seemed to labour very hard, amidst the impetuous winds, and boiling waves, which rose even to the clouds; and, in a day afterwards, the storm still continuing, we lost sight of our whole fleet, to our great uneasiness. I sent up petitions for their safety, and prayed that the Almighty would still the raging main, and protect my poor

friend

friend and his companions. We drove thus for ſeveral days; but at length the tempeſt abated, and a ſtill calm ſucceeded this war of the elements.

CHAP. XXI.

THEY PUT INTO MADEIRA—AN EXTRAORDINARY ADVENTURE—HE SAVES AN OLD FRIEND FROM A GANG OF BRAVOES—THEY ARE WOUNDED IN THE CONFLICT—THEIR MUTUAL JOY AT THE SIGHT OF EACH OTHER—MR. ARCHER'S ACCOUNT OF THE ACCIDENT—HE EMBARKS WITH CAPTAIN BEECKMAN—THEY ARRIVE AT AMSTERDAM.

THE winds hanging contrary to us, and ſome of our men being very ill, our captain reſolved to touch at the Madeiras; and accordingly we anchored in the road of Fyal; and ſoon after the captain, Mr. Saris, and myſelf, went on ſhore, and dined at the Dutch conſul's, where we were elegantly entertained; and the next day paid our compliments to the Engliſh conſul, who received us with that politeneſs ſo uſual to that gentleman, and ſtaid us to dinner; and ſeveral of the Engliſh merchants accompanied us to ſee the curioſities of the iſland, and thoſe of the town. I had a particular veneration for this place, as it was the ſcene of the adventures of two faithful lovers, who here finiſhed their lives and misfortunes together, after retiring from the rage of their perſecutors in England. The Romiſh inhabitants abound with all the ſuperſtitious cuſtoms and ceremonies that can make a rational creature ſick of ignorance and enthuſiaſm; and, perhaps, in their manners, are the baſeſt and loweſt wretches that one can form an idea of. I found the celebrated wines of this place not near of ſo generous a reliſh and flavour, as they were in moſt diſtant parts I had drank them: and it is an obſervation of the merchants, that the beſt Madeira is to be found at New York, in North America, owing as much to their management of it there, as to the accidents of purgation and refining, which it meets with in the paſſage. We ſpent many agreeable hours here, and were univerſally careſſed; but, to our diſappointment, found only one Dutch ſhip, of all our convoy, had put into Fyal; which gave me freſh pain for poor Diaper, who, my melancholy diſpoſition ſuggeſted to me, had periſhed in the ocean's devouring jaws.

One evening I was returning from a merchant's to the Engliſh conſul's, having left Mr. Saris and Captain Beeckman behind me, and was going to the upper part of the town for that purpoſe, when my ears were accoſted with the claſhing of ſwords, and ſeveral heated expreſſions uttered in the Portugueſe language; and particularly one voice cried, 'Villains, though 'oppreſſed with numbers, you will 'find me no eaſy conqueſt!' From a certain generous propenſity in my nature, I drew my ſword, and haſtened to the ſuccour of this unknown perſon, and, by the glimmering twilight, could perceive he was aſſaulted by ſix others, who had ſurrounded him; upon which I cried, in the ſame language, 'Courage, Sir; I believe your cauſe 'is good by the multitude of your aſ'ſailants; fortune has ſent you an aſ'ſiſtant, who, perhaps, may turn the 'ſcale on your ſide;' and, ſo ſaying, I beſtirred myſelf in a manner that made our antagoniſts think it was time to act with more caution than they had hitherto done: but villains are always cowards; and after giving my companion a wound, that laid him on the ground, and running me through the left-arm, one of them dropping, and the reſt having received ſeveral hurts, they ſcoured away, and left us maſters of the field of battle. By this time the garriſon had been alarmed, and a ſtrong party, with an officer at the head of it, ſent to quell any diſorder that might have ariſen: they found me raiſing the unknown gentleman, who had received ſeveral wounds; and, when they had looked in the dead man's face, they knew him to be one of thoſe execrable raſcals, that for hire will undertake to rid a man of his enemy, by ſtabbing him or ſhooting him privately, or attacking him with numbers; a practice more common amongſt the Portugueſe than even with the Spaniards and Italians; nay, thoſe fellows pretend to ſo much honour in their way, that, if the employer happens to relent, they ſurely ſacrifice him, if he gives notice to his antagoniſt to avoid the danger

he

he has planted for him. When the officer had received my account of the affair, he very civilly desired me to attend him to the governor, who was making merry at an English merchant's, who testified so much in my favour, that we were set at liberty, and a proclamation issued to take the rest of the persons concerned in this vile attempt. The gentleman I had relieved, could scarcely walk; but, understanding he quartered at Don Henriques de Guzman's, the officer and myself accompanied him there, where we received the thanks of that gentleman, and a fine young lady, his daughter, who both seemed mightily affected with the misfortune that had happened to their friend. In the hurry and confusion this affair had put me into, I had not regarded him attentively; but, hearing him thank me very gratefully in the English language, methought the tone and manner of his expression revived somewhat in my memory, that had been very faithfully recorded there; and how pleasingly surprized was I, when, asking the name of his preserver, after telling him it was Thompson, weak as he was, he gave a transporting cry, and said, 'Yes, it is he! it could be no body 'else but him that saved me. Ah, 'my dear friend!—and yet it cannot 'be he—it must—it is—and he has 'quite forgotten his faithful Archer!' At that name, I plainly perceived it to be that young gentleman I had so dearly valued, and who was so altered, it was impossible for me else to have recollected him. Though now plain, it was still mysterious; and, taking him in my arms, our congratulations were so affecting and tender, as melted all the standers-by; in short, we were moved ourselves, and all the little scenes of boyish affection, and the transactions of our juvenile years, rushed at once into our minds, and caused an inexpressible gladness to play about our hearts. Don Henriques, and the rest of us, could hardly persuade him to go to bed, and have his wounds dressed, which we found were not dangerous; and, as to mine, it appeared so slight a matter, that I would have sat up all night with my friend; but that the surgeon would by no means permit, for already our interview had occasioned a fever in him, which he was very apprehensive of the consequences of; so returning thanks to the gentleman and his family, I departed to my lodging, promising Archer that I would see him betimes in the morning.

I informed Mr. Saris of my good fortune, in having saved the life of a man I so much loved, and whom I had not seen for so many years. I could perceive Mr. Archer was altered very much for the better, and had all the gentleman about him; together with the roughness of an Englishman, there was mingled the soft air and look of the Portuguese, which had a very good effect upon the spectator; but what I valued him much for was to see, that he carried the same honest friendly heart in his bosom, that he had done when we roved the fields of science, under the endearing care of my father. I carried Mr. Saris with me to see him, and he was so well recovered, that he was able to discourse; and we renewed again all those testimonies of affection, so natural where there is an established regard between two persons; and, he being able to bear it, at his desire I gave him an account of all my transactions and adventures from the time of our separation till now, part of which he had received by letter from his father, who he informed me, much to my joy, was alive and well, with Mr. Sharpley the elder; but, as to young Sharpley, he had not heard of him for some time, near a twelvemonth. He condoled with me like a man that loved me on my disasters, and congratulated me on my succeeding good fortune, with an unfeigned satisfaction. Upon enquiring after his affairs, I found they had not been interspersed with any very extraordinary accidents; but that, in a settled course of traffick, he had made himself master of a pretty fortune; that the scene of his business had not been solely confined to Oporto; that he had frequently resided at Lisbon, from whence he had now brought a cargo to Madeira, which having disposed of to great advantage, he had a thought of taking passage with us for Holland, from whence he would provide himself with another cargo to Oporto: his letters from England were of much later date

than

than any of mine, and from them I learnt my father and all our friends were well in Yorkſhire, where Mr. Archer propoſed to viſit us in about a twelvemonth, and, if things went to his mind, to ſettle in London. I was charmed at his propoſal of going with us to Holland, and aſſured him he ſhould want no accommodations, if I myſelf was forced even to ſwing in a hammock. Mr. Archer's life hitherto had been one uniform plan, wherein the merchant had always the upper hand; and, in the conſideration of riſing in his profeſſion, all the ſtarts and paſſions of the ſoul were centered; indeed, no man ſeemed better cut out for trade, having all the admired principles of that ſet of men. As he had not mentioned a word of love in his whole ſtory, I could not imagine how he came to be attacked by the bravoes, thoſe aſſaults being commonly the reſult of ſome *amour*; and therefore I made ſo free as to aſk him, if he knew the meaning of his being ſet upon by them. He told me, he gueſſed ſomewhat of the matter; and that his being careſſed by Don Henriques, and his amiable daughter, had raiſed the hatred of Don Juan de Carvalho, a noble Portugueſe, who had pretenſions to her; and, love and jealouſy being almoſt always united in the Portugueſe, that he had thus contrived to take him off. We entered into a diſcourſe of the baſe principles that animate this nation, and from thence into another on duelling, which is ſo common in other countries; and Mr. Saris obſerved, that the method of taking an enemy off in this manner, with the gloomy revengeful Portugueſe, allowing for the different notions of things, that different people or nations have, was equally honourable when conſidered in this light, that the ſingle combatant, as well as the aſſaſſinator, thinks nothing can retrieve his honour but ſpilling the blood of his antagoniſt. Indeed, the generous Engliſhman, and the Frenchman, oppoſes his man ſingly, and face to face; but the ſame principles inſpire his breaſt as do thoſe of an Italian, when he ſtabs you behind with his ſtilletto; for they purſue the ſame ends, but by different routs. If any thing, the practice of the Engliſh and French is more abſurd; for to have received an injury, and at the ſame time, to put it in the power of your enemy to take your life, is either confounding right and wrong, or is depending upon the aſſiſtance of a Being in the combat, who has declared, *he that ſheds man's blood, by man ſhall his blood be ſhed.* Pity it is, that the utmoſt contempt does not ſucceed ſuch encounters to both parties, and that, by a publick brand, they were not ſeparated from ſociety, as aliens and ſtrangers to thoſe amiable propenſities of human nature, mercy and forgiveneſs of injuries.

Captain Beeckman conſenting at our requeſt to Mr. Archer's taking paſſage with him, we accommodated him as well as we could; and being quite recovered, and ſettling his affairs, ſo as to find them as he wiſhed, when he ſaw his correſpondent at Liſbon, we took leave of all friends and acquaintance; and, weighing, ſtood for the north-eaſt, and were ſoon out of ſight of the iſland, running afore the wind with a fine gale, which gave us hopes of ſoon concluding our tedious voyage. Fair and ſerene weather continued during the remainder of our paſſage, which, being at the moſt pleaſant ſeaſon of the year, yielded us a great deal of ſatisfaction; and ſure no one can deſcribe the many ſtarts and motions of joy that filled my heart, in approaching Europe's happy ſeats, after ſo long an abſence; nay, the ſame gladneſs ſhone in the eyes of the meaneſt of our crew; and even Mr. Saris, though oppreſſed with a black and deadly melancholy, ſeemed inſpired with pleaſure. It is Providence, it is Heaven itſelf, who has placed in our breaſts, that inclination to our native country, that directs and ſtimulates us in all our actions; that amiable propenſity to deſire and long to behold and enjoy the happineſs of living, of dying, where we were firſt kindled into life, and firſt became members of ſociety! Even the frozen Laplander, and the ſun-burnt Hottentot, have the ſame ſentiments; and deprived of their native, though comfortleſs ſkies, are greatly unhappy, and, pining, feel the moſt pungent ſorrow.

We came to anchor in that famous river, on which is ſeated the ever-renowned mart Amſterdam; and I thought, for a long time, my curioſity could

could never be satisfied, in viewing all the wonders of that great metropolis, not only of the United Provinces, but, I may say, also of the whole trading world; and my two companions, who were also before strangers to the place and country, were as eager, as myself, to gratify themselves in inspecting the laws and customs of this wise and great people.

CHAP. XXII.

MR. SARIS DEPARTS FOR IRELAND —ARCHER TAKES LEAVE OF THOMPSON, AND EMBARKS FOR OPORTO—HE DISPOSES OF HIS DIAMOND TO GREAT ADVANTAGE — VISITS ROTTERDAM, AND OTHER PLACES—EMBARKS IN THE SALISBURY, M'KENZIE, FOR LONDON—THEY ARE TAKEN BY THE FRENCH.

MR. Saris having found an opportunity to go to Ireland by a ship bound to Cork, laid hold of it, and, after taking the most tender leave of each other, and promising to keep up an epistolary correspondence, embarked for that place, leaving it to my care to remit him the effects he had in Truman's hands, when I got to England, where I would have persuaded him to accompany me; but he was very eager to see his son, and therefore I could not possibly expect that gratification. Soon after his departure, Mr. Archer, having compleated a valuable cargo for Portugal, also took his leave of me, intrusting to my care letters to his father, to mine, and my mother, and Mr. Sharpley the elder. I parted with him with great regret, and his reluctance to separate was almost as great as mine; but we comforted each other, in the consideration, that, in about a twelvemonth, he would be able to compleat all his affairs abroad, and return to England.

I applied to several eminent jewellers to dispose of my large diamond, which I was now resolved to turn into money, in order to remit it to England; but some through ignorance, and others through knavery, put so low a price upon it, that I was resolved not to dispose of it here at all: however, at last I happened, at a coffee-house adjoining to the Stadt-house, to mention it to Mr. Levy, a noted Jewish broker, who was in raptures at the sight of it, and undertook to get me a customer; which he accordingly did in the Prince of Darmstadt, whose agent paid me down to the amount of 22,000l. which was more than ever I expected; and I thought myself so obliged to the fidelity and address of Levy, that I insisted upon his accepting 200 florins, besides what was usual for commission; and thus I found myself richer than I could in my most sanguine hopes have desired, and immediately procured bills payable at London, which I sent by the packet to Mr. Diaper, reserving only about 500l. to carry me home, and for such other matters as might occur. I now made the tour of the provinces, and saw the most considerable places in the dominions of the Republick, and at length went to Rotterdam, with a view to get a passage in some ship for England, and found the Salisbury, Captain M'Kenzie, ready to sail; with whom agreeing, I embarked with him, and in three or four days afterwards sailed for that country my soul now longed after, though it revived in my mind a thousand ideas, that gave me pain inexpressible.

Captain M'Kenzie's ship was a very stout one, and well manned; so, notwithstanding privateers swarmed in the Channel and North Seas, he was resolved not to wait for convoy, but make the best of his way alone, and accordingly we sailed with a favourable wind; but, abreast of the North Foreland, we were chaced by a privateer under French colours, who, though we crouded all the sail we could, wronged us greatly, and soon came up with us. She was a large ship, full of guns and men; however, M'Kenzie resolved to do all he could to save himself, and, edging down upon her, gave her a broadside, which raked her fore and aft, and damaged her rigging: our salute was returned by the like compliment, and all their tops being manned with marines, with small arms, who discharged at the same time, we had a number of our men killed and wounded; and Captain M'Kenzie being shot through the head, his mate disabled, and all things in confusion, it was thought high time to strike to the enemy, who sent their boat on

board of us; and, leaving a number of hands behind them, took me and two or three other paſſengers with them to appear before their captain, whoſe name was Le Serre, and the privateer's the Terrible, belonging to Havre de Grace. He behaved with an extremity of politeneſs, returned us our ſwords, made us dine with him, and forbad his men to ſtrip any of the priſoners, to whom he acted with great generoſity and tenderneſs. He found his prize a very good one; which, perhaps, not a little contributed to his pleaſant temper, for we were laden with a very valuable cargo. My loſs was very trifling, conſiſting principally of what money I had about me; and Le Serre very much diſtinguiſhed me, and ſeemed greatly pleaſed with my converſation. And thus I found myſelf in the condition of a captive, though it did not give me much pain, as there had, I underſtood, been a cartel ſettled between the two nations for the exchange of priſoners: nay, I was not a little pleaſed that I ſhould have an opportunity to ſee France, which I had a long time deſired.

CHAP. XXIII.

HE SETS OUT FOR PARIS—HE RELIEVES AN ENGLISH OFFICER IN DISTRESS—FINDS HIM TO BE AN OLD FRIEND—THEY SATISFY ONE ANOTHER IN THE RELATION OF THEIR ADVENTURES—THEY VISIT VERSAILLES—THE OFFICER FALLS IN LOVE WITH A LADY THEY MEET IN THE GARDENS.

HAVING diſpoſed of matters in the prize, and on board the Terrible, the captain carried us into Dunkirk, where our men were put into the priſon; but, as to myſelf and the reſt of the paſſengers, we had liberty, upon our parole, to walk in the town; ſo that we did not go near the works, which they are very cautious leſt any ſtranger ſhould inſpect. We had a houſe aſſigned us to lodge in, and from thence, when a little ſettled, I wrote to my father, Truman, and other friends in England, to whom I had alſo before wrote from Rotterdam, acquainting them with the misfortune that had happened to me, and letting them know that I had drawn a bill for two hundred pounds, payable on ſight to Monſieur Varillon, or his order, in London. I received an anſwer in about a month, in which, after condoling with me on my miſhap, they informed me that Truman, with my effects, had arrived ſafe in England, and that they had diſpoſed every thing for my benefit; that the bills I ſent from Holland had been paid, and that all my friends were in health, and longed for nothing ſo much as to ſee me; and Mr. Goodwill had got letters from a great man to the miniſter of the marine in France, by which he did not doubt they ſhould hear I was immediately releaſed; and this way they the rather took, as no cartel ſhip would fail to France for ſome time. My mother's letter was full of tenderneſs, and all that affection and regard ſhe preſerved in her breaſt for her ſon, of which I had had ſo many and ſo great inſtances. One thing gave me a high ſatisfaction, which was, that I received a letter from my friend Diaper, who had ſafely arrived in England, and only waited my coming home to celebrate his nuptials with his deareſt Miſs Bellair. In about ten days after I had the pleaſure of receiving theſe letters, which ſet my heart at reſt, an order came to the governor of Dunkirk to releaſe an Engliſh gentleman, whoſe name was Thompſon, and to ſuffer him to depart to whatever place his inclination led him; and accordingly I was ſent for by him, and acquainted with the news. I returned him my thanks in the beſt manner I could, and he ſtaid me to dine with him; and I wrote a letter of acknowledgment to the miniſter, and hoped I ſhould be permitted to thank him in perſon at my arrival in Paris, where I propoſed to do myſelf the honour to go as ſoon as I had ſettled my affairs at Dunkirk. This I had no ſooner done, and received remittances from London, than I reſolved to ſet out for Paris; but, before I went, thought I could not leave Dunkirk, with ſatisfaction to my mind, unleſs I endeavoured to ſoften the rigours of my countrymen's confinement, who were now very numerous; and, accordingly, I went to the place of their durance, and beſtowed upon each of them a ſum of money; and, for

the

the uſe of the ſhip's crew I was taken in, I left a conſiderable ſum in the hands of Mr. Poſtlethwaite, an Engliſh merchant reſiding at Dunkirk, with a deſire that he would iſſue it out to them as he thought in his diſcretion they needed it. Dunkirk is not more formidable at preſent to this nation, by it's ſituation and the works that have been carried on there, than as it is the receptacle and aſylum of all the outlaws, bankrupts, and ſmugglers, almoſt, that are forced to leave their native country for fear of puniſhment for their crimes and frauds; the latter particularly, who are conſtantly employed, in defiance of our laws, in making trips over to England with uncuſtomed goods, are of the greateſt ſervice to the French, by the early intelligence they give their merchants of the men of war and privateers that ſail from our ports, with their deſtination, by which they are able to ſteer ſuch courſes as they may avoid the danger of being made prize of; ſo that no ſet of people meet with more countenance here, or are more encouraged by the governors of all their ſea-port towns.

I hired a proper conveyance, and ſet out by way of Graveline to Calais, and from thence took paſſage in the coach for Paris. Our company conſiſted of three or four French officers and a Dominican, who was going to that metropolis, having procured a chaplainſhip to a perſon of diſtinction there. Nothing could be more entertaining than this company, and the uſual politeneſs of the French nation made our journey infinitely agreeable. At Amiens one of our companions left us, whoſe place was ſupplied by an Engliſh gentleman, who ſeemed in perſon and temper formed to pleaſe. It is natural for one to be very curious in knowing the affairs that detain our countrymen in France at this time; and in a free and genteel way he informed us, that he had been captain of the Spy, an Engliſh ſloop of war, which was, in purſuing a French privateer too eagerly, run on ſhore upon the coaſt of France; where, after loſing their veſſel, they were obliged to ſeek for ſhelter in their long-boat, and were made priſoners of war; that his crew had been, with himſelf, exchanged, but having contracted a friendſhip with the Sieur du Pleſſis, captain of the Amiable, a French ſhip of war, he had accorded to an invitation he made him to pay him a viſit at Paris. The reſt of this gentleman's diſcourſe gave me a very high idea of his good-ſenſe; and there was ſomewhat ſo ſweet ſeemingly in his diſpoſition, that one could not avoid loving him. At Beauvais, (for we took that road) this gentleman called me on one ſide, and, begging my pardon, deſired I would with patience and candour hear him make a requeſt to me, which, from his knowledge of his countrymen's generoſity, and from ſome things he had heard me advance in diſcourſe, he had great hopes I would freely grant him. 'In ſhort, 'Sir, I am unhappy enough to have 'been robbed between Calais and 'Amiens, by two Iriſh ſoldiers, of all 'I had about me, and I cannot pro-'miſe myſelf to receive money for 'ſome weeks, even when I come to 'Paris. At preſent I have only one 'livre about me, and am unable to 'pay my reckoning and coach-hire; 'but, if you can have ſo much con-'fidence in me as to lend me a few 'livres, you may depend upon it I will 'moſt faithfully repay you again.' I took him by the hand, and told him he obliged me by his requeſt; and, feeling in my purſe, drew forth half the contents, and put it into his hands, amounting to ſome louis d'ors. He ſtood ſilent for ſome time, and then advancing, catched me eagerly in his arms, and could not find words to expreſs his acknowledgments; at length he cried, 'Would to God, Sir, I may 'merit your friendſhip; for I already 'feel I ſhall be unhappy, if I am not 'eſteemed by you; and, perhaps, Sir, 'you may one time or other think it 'no diſgrace to be known by Sharp-'ley.'—'Sharpley!' I replied, with a remarkable alteration of voice and countenance, 'it cannot be: pray, dear 'Sir, what countryman are you? If 'of Yorkſhire, as my heart ſeems to 'tell me, I ſhall count myſelf hap-'py.'—'I am, Sir; I am of that 'county,' he rejoined, with precipitation; 'but, dear Sir, are you ac-'quainted with that name and fa-'mily?'—'I am not only acquainted, 'Sir, but love them all as well as I 'do myſelf, and am ſurprized at my 'dulneſs that I could not diſcover my

'dear friend before! Come to my arms, 'and partake of all that is mine; for 'our ancient tie of friendſhip en-'titles you to it.—Is it poſſible you 'ſhould not remember Thompſon?'— 'Thompſon!' he cried.—'What!— 'Yes—my dear Joey!—It is he him-'ſelf, and that accounts for the im-'pulſes I felt in his favour!' We embraced, and I believe no one ever was witneſs to ſo much mutual love and tenderneſs between two friends: we were never tired with gazing at each other; and this unexpected meeting in a foreign country, in ſuch circum-ſtances, gave a flow of pleaſure and ſatisfaction that expreſſion is too faint to deſcribe. There was ſomewhat in Sharpley more like myſelf than in Archer; he was a more generous, open ſoul, his ſcene of life had been as much varied as my own, and he had all that native freedom and generoſity in his breaſt and actions that cannot fail of raiſing love and eſteem. We even wept on both ſides, and quite forgot that we were going to Paris, had not the driver of the voiture awakened us from our tranſports, by telling us it was time to prepare for going. The reſt of our journey was full of the increaſed pleaſure ariſing from the company of ſuch a friend, and we arrived ſafely at Paris, where Sharpley inſiſted on my accompanying him to the houſe of Monſieur du Pleſſis, where that gentle-man, in the politeſt manner, begged us to make it our own whilſt we ſtaid. It was in the ſtreet of St. Honore; and himſelf and his family were ſuch en-gaging people, that I thought myſelf quite happy in their ſociety; and, as to Sharpley, he was treated by Du Pleſſis more like a brother than an ac-quaintance. He had received ſome wounds in an encounter with an Eng-liſh ſhip of war, and had obtained leave, for his bravery, to ſpend ſome months with his family in this city, where the beſt and greateſt company daily reſorted to ſee him. When we were a little ſettled, I called my friend on one ſide, and told him, as he ex-pected no remittance from his agent for ſome time, I begged he would make free with my purſe, and let us ſhare it; that, as to my part, I was ſo-ſitu-ated, that I could have money enough of any banker in Paris, and therefore inſiſted upon it that he ſhould deal with it as his own, without reſerve. He thanked me in the warmeſt manner, and we immediately ſhared what I had remaining about me, and began to live in common with that openneſs that diſtinguiſhes friends and gentlemen from the avaricious and penurious creatures, that only pretend to thoſe ſublime principles that we felt at the bottom of our hearts.

'Hail, holy friendſhip! that inſpires 'the boſom with generous warmth 'and harmony! that tunes the ſoul to 'notes of higheſt concord, and com-'penſates for all the ills of life! Born 'with this principle towards each 'other, this kind, this heavenly mo-'tion to mutual love, and ſoft bene-'volence, nothing but Paſſion's fell, 'deteſted reign, and baneful vice in 'her maligneſt progreſs, can break 'the native tie that knits mankind to-'gether! A tie as neceſſary to ſocieties 'as it is to individuals! It leſſens 'loads of woe, with aching ſympathy 'and tendereſt compaſſion; and joy, 'which loves to be communicated, in-'creaſes more and more, whenever it 'finds partakers in it's tranſports. 'The wretch, all gloom, who has not, 'does not, feel thy influence, lives a 'moſt jealous, moſt ſuſpicious crea-'ture: forlorn, he ſtalks about all 'comfortleſs, and knows he wants the 'friendly aid, the powerful aſſiſtance, 'to ward each fatal blow that threatens 'deſtruction to his peace and quiet! 'Oh! may I never live devoid of thee! 'Benign and lovely ſweetener of my 'life, dear conſolation to the troubled 'breaſt!'

When we found a proper opportu-nity, according to my friend's earneſt deſire, I gave him an account of all the accidents that had befallen me ſince he firſt went to ſea, at which he expreſſed the utmoſt ſurprize; and when I related the death of my Louiſa, and my deſpair and diſtraction after that melancholy occurrence, he could not refrain tears, which plentifully trickled down his cheeks, and teſtified more than any thing the affection he bore me. He then gratified me with an account of his own adventures, which principally conſiſted of ſea voy-ages, and affairs, and deſcriptions of ſuch places in the ſeveral parts of the world as he had viſited. He had wrote to his father ſince his being taken pri-

ſoner,

ſoner, but had received no anſwer; ſo that he was obliged to me for the lateſt accounts how affairs ſtood at home, at which he was very much pleaſed, particularly to hear that his father was well: he had not ſeen him ſince his firſt going to ſea, nor had been in England but once, when he was fitted out for a cruize in the Spy, and they had then only an opportunity to receive one letter from each other. He had taken ſome prizes, which had turned to a good account, as his agent on Tower Hill had informed him; ſo that, excluſive of his pay, he was maſter of a comfortable ſum of money; and had endured ſuch a number of fatigues in the ſervice, that, though he had an entire affection for his king and country's intereſt, he longed for nothing more than to retire into Yorkſhire, and there enjoy ſome years of quiet; and for that purpoſe was reſolved to return with me, after ſeeing what was worthy a curious obſervation in France. I was charmed to hear his inclination, and, embracing him, told him that his intereſt ſhould be ever mine; and that, as to money, he never need want it, whilſt I had any in my poſſeſſion. He received this declaration with ſo viſible an emotion, and ſo many acknowledgments, that I was obliged to inſiſt upon ceaſing the diſcourſe, which with ſome difficulty I brought him to do; for Sharpley's ſeafaring life had not robbed him of his natural eloquence, and I found thoſe rudiments of ſcience, and thoſe great and noble principles he had received from his worthy tutor and mine, were rather enforced and ſtrengthened by the obſervations he had made, than weakened by a life of turmoil, noiſe, and hurry, accompanied with the uſual dangers that fall to the lot of gentlemen of his profeſſion; and, indeed, it is the misfortune of moſt of the officers of the navy, that they are ſent very young to ſea, before they have made that progreſs in learning that would poliſh and brighten their future conduct; and the ſages of the ſea may ſay what they will, but ſo early an initiation is no more neceſſary in that art than in the ſcience of the army, where you ever find the fineſt and moſt polite gentlemen, and the ſmalleſt number of brutes. It was no wonder at all that we did not immediately know one another; for Sharpley, when a lad, was thin and ſpare, and of a very fair complexion; but now he had increaſed in bulk greatly, though it had not taken away from, but rather added to his gentility, and was of a ſwarthy complexion, which, together with the difference a modiſh dreſs and a wig occaſioned, very well might conceal him. I think I never ſaw a man, who looked more like a perſon of diſtinction and importance, and his very look and action beſpoke the good opinion of all that beheld him. As to my part, I was grown very thin, and was of as black an hue as a Mullatto, from the intenſe heat of the climate I came from. I had alſo loſt my hair, and wore a peruke, and the richneſs of my habit might, with all this, very much diſguiſe young Yorkſhire; and I had contracted ſuch a careleſs way of wearing my apparel, in which I uſed to be remarkably neat, ever ſince the loſs of my dear, my much-lamented Louiſa, that I could not but ſeem a quite different creature, even to thoſe who had ſeen me ſince Mr. Sharpley.

Mr. Du Pleſſis was ſo kind, with Monſ. De Baſſompiere, his nephew, and ſome other French gentlemen, to carry us to all the publick diverſions and places in Paris; the Theatre, the French and Italian Opera; and, by the favour of the Marquis of Houdaincourt, a particular friend of his, we had the honour to be introduced to his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's preſence, to ſee him dance at a ball, and dine, ſeveral times, with the royal family: we were alſo preſent when his majeſty killed a wild boar, with his own hand, in the wood of Soignies. We viſited Fontainbleau, Marli, and all the remarkable palaces of the nobility and gentry thereabout; and were alſo, once or twice, on a party of pleaſure at St. Dennis, and other publick places of reſort; nor could help admiring that ſweetneſs and *politeſſe* that make the inhabitants of this country ſo very agreeable to foreigners. One object ſtill remained, which I was reſolved we would thoroughly feaſt our ſenſes upon, before we left France, which was, the ſtately palace of Verſailles, and it's admired gardens and proſpects; and, ſeveral of our new friends determining

mining to accompany us there, we ſet out, in the marquis's coach, for that delightful place.

We were three or four days in viewing this magnificent palace; and were ſo loſt in a field of wonders, that it was with regret we thought of leaving the charming ſpot. Sure nothing in the world can equal the beauties that every where around delight the eye, and exalt the mind! The ſuperb apartments, decked with all that art and ſcience can furniſh; and the ſpacious gardens, in a thouſand varieties, ſeem the favourite retreat of all the rural deities. Flora has here beſtowed her choiceſt graces; and the Dryads ſport in every labyrinth and grove of this immortal monument of the glory of Lewis XIV. who certainly went, amidſt a thirſt of empire, the only way to deſerve the name of great, by becoming the patron of all the diſtinguiſhed and learned in every profeſſion; and, like Auguſtus, cheriſhed thoſe artiſts that were ſure to make him live for ever. Here he laid, more than by his conqueſts, the foundation of an univerſal empire; and, if any thing contributes, ſome time or other, to give his country that diſtinction, it will proceed from their cultivating wiſdom, diſcipline, and liberal arts; and, thereby procuring a reſpect, eſteem, and veneration, from all nations, who now, in general, act by her maxims, ſpeak her language, and imbibe all the politeneſs and gentility, ſo natural to her. In ſhort, ſhe ſits ſupreme in literature; and gives her laws with ſo much amiable ſweetneſs, that the whole world yields ready and willing homage.

We were taking our laſt view of this pride of France, when, walking through one of the alleys, we met two ladies, one of them maſqued, who, at our approach, would have directed their ſteps another way; but, ſeeing them under ſome embarraſſment, we would have retired; and I ſaid to Sharpley, 'Let us, Sir, turn down 'the next walk;' when the maſqued lady exclaimed, 'Good God! what 'do I ſee?' and fainted in the arms of her companion. The ſweetneſs of the voice attracted all ears but mine, who had been deaf ſo long, and blind to all female perfection; ſo I kept on my way with Mr. Du Pleſſis, while Sharpley, the marquis, and Baſſompiere, flew to the aſſiſtance of the ladies. The fainting fair-one had juſt come to herſelf, and handſomely returned thanks for their kind intentions; but ſeemed to caſt her eyes on every ſide, as if to ſeek ſomewhat ſhe wanted; and heaving a repining ſigh, when ſhe could not diſcover it. The other lady enforced her compliments, and would have withdrawn; but the marquis enquired of a footman, who attended them, if they had any convenience waiting to carry them home; which he anſwering in the negative, inſiſted upon their accepting his coach, and Sharpley offered his ſervice to attend on them; which, after ſome denials, they, with ſeeming reluctance, accepted: and, ordering the coachman to drive to St. Clou, left them, full of admiration at their uncommon beauty. We went to Paris that evening, in a coach we borrowed of the Marchioneſs de Geſveres, where we found Mr. Sharpley had juſt arrived before us. He appeared ſo grave, and ſo much upon the reſerve, that he was bantered by the whole company, who told him his civility to the unknown ladies had loſt him his heart. He ſmiled, and made an evaſive anſwer, which only confirmed us in the truth of our obſervation. When we went to reſt, he made an excuſe to viſit me in my apartment, and then told me he feared he was a miſerable creature, if he could not gain the attention of one of the ladies he had conveyed home to his addreſſes. 'My friend,' he cried, in rapture, 'never was ſo finiſhed a piece 'in the creation, as this lovely crea'ture! and the beauties of her mind 'far excel thoſe of her perſon: be'ſides, ſhe is ſo inartfully merry and 'debonair, that ſhe exactly ſuits my 'temper, and I cannot live without 'poſſeſſing her; lend me your aſſiſt'ance, dear Joey, and I'll be your 'ſlave the remainder of my life. The 'other is alſo a perfect beauty, but too 'melancholy and penſive for my diſ'poſition; and, if I judge rightly, has 'ſome great load of ſorrow at her 'heart, by her frequent ſighing, and 'the involuntary tears that trickled 'now and then adown her lovely face: 'in ſhort, they are our countrywo'men; the one the daughter, and the 'other the niece, to an elderly lady, 'that has reſided ſome years in France.

'They

Stothard del.

Angus sculp.

Plate IV.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Aug. 1. 1783.

'They keep little company, and have done me the honour to give me a general invitation to see them at their house at St. Clou, which is a large and spacious edifice; and they live, in all respects, like persons of the first quality. Oh! how happy should I be, could I obtain so dear a companion, to solace the future hours of my life! One thing surprized me, which was, that the melancholy one, who is the niece, enquired particularly after the names of the gentlemen she saw us with at Versailles; and, amongst the rest, asked who the gentleman in scarlet and gold was, who left the walk, with the old one, in complaisance to them; and I had no sooner told them you was our countryman, and that your name was Thompson, than she fainted away, and wept most piteously; and, in that condition, was borne off to bed; her cousin and aunt assuring me they were accidents very frequent with her, and that she had been troubled with such fits from her infancy: however, the discourse was still continued; and my charmer particularly enquired, if you was married, and what part of the world you came from last. I satisfied their enquiries; and it is my opinion, (though I know it is what you neither like nor desire) that you have, at first sight, smitten the niece, in a manner that I should be rejoiced to melt her cousin to, after years of longing servitude.' I congratulated Sharpley on his good fortune, and promised him, if I could any way serve him in his amour, I would; and, after mutually embracing one another, we parted and went to bed.

CHAP. XXIV.

SHARPLEY MAKES GREAT PROGRESS IN HIS AMOUR—RECOMMENDS A PAGE TO THOMPSON, AT THE REQUEST OF SERENA—HE SETS OUT FOR THE MARQUIS DE HOUDAINCOURT'S SEAT IN NORMANDY—THEY ARE ATTACKED BY BANDITTI—HIS LIFE SAVED BY HIS PAGE—THE STORY OF THE MARQUIS, AND THE BEAUTIFUL MARGUERITE D'AULNAY—THEY RELEASE HER FROM HER CONFINEMENT—SHE IS MARRIED TO THE MARQUIS.

MY friend was now almost constantly at the feet of his mistress; and, though he could not prevail upon me to accompany him to her hotel, yet I heard, from time to time, from him, that he had reason to think himself a very happy man, and that Serena, that was the name of his beloved, made him all the returns that so faithful and tender a passion deserved. I should, had it been necessary to him, have made no difficulty of visiting that lady and her family, as they often had requested, by him, that I would; but the account he gave me before, of the sensibility of the niece, deterred me. I had too much honour to trifle with a lady in so important an affair as that which concerned, I presumed, the happiness of her future life; and my resolution was so honestly and firmly fixed, never to think of woman more, since the loss of my Louisa, that I would expose myself to no temptations from the fascinating sex. These reasons Sharpley could not help acknowledging were unanswerable, and ceased to press me any more on that head.

One day he told me he had a proposal to make to me, which he hoped, for his sake, I would not refuse him: I told him I could not conceive any thing could be asked of me, by him, that I should have the least pretence to refuse. 'Then I will tell you, my dear friend,' he replied; 'my Serena, to whom I have frequently, from the overflowings of my heart, given an account of our mutual friendship, and those excellent qualities you possess, has enquired if you had any faithful servant about you; and, upon my informing her, that neither you, nor myself, had any other than two we had hired since we came to Paris, who did not much suit our disposition, she told me she had the son of an unfortunate officer to provide for, and would take it as the kindest favour I could confer upon her, if I would endeavour to prevail on you to take him into your service as a page; and I hope, dear Joey, you will do me that favour; and, as the niece is out of town,

'that

'that you will farther wait on Serena, 'and take him from her hand.' I liked Mr. Sharpley's propoſal exceeding well, as I had no one about me that I could confide in; and promiſed next morning to wait on Serena, and accept the youth from her. Sharpley was all joy at my condeſcenſion, and took care that I ſhould not forget my appointment. We were received by that lady, who was extremely handſome, and her mother, with the utmoſt reſpect; and how I cannot tell, but I felt a pleaſure in converſing with them that I thought I ſhould never again feel in any female company. They ſeemed as natural to me as my own relations would have been; and, after talking over the merits and abilities of the youth I was going to take into my ſervice, and promiſing the kindeſt uſage, for her and her mother's ſake, he was called in, and appeared before us. The minute I caſt my eye upon him, I was prejudiced in his favour. He had a certain ſweet ſoftneſs in his features and addreſs, that was very taking; but what gave me ſtill a ſtronger liking to him, was, that, allowing for the difference of ſex, he was ſo exactly the picture of my poor Louiſa, that the ſight of him produced ſuch agitations in me that I was almoſt ready to ſwoon; and I had reaſon to think he liked his maſter alſo, at firſt view, for, ſeeing me in ſuch convulſions, he turned as pale as death, and his knees tottered under him. 'Good God!' I cried, 'was 'ever ſo near a reſemblance! Oh, 'Sharpley! it is the picture, the real 'image of my Louiſa! which is ſo 'ſtrongly and laſtingly engraved in 'my heart.—Alas, Madam!' I continued, turning to Serena, 'you are go-'ing to give me eternal torment, by 'recommending to me this young 'gentleman, who will, every time I 'look upon him, put me in mind of 'the greateſt loſs a man could ever 'ſuffer.' Sharpley, and the two ladies, could ſcarce refrain from tears, the reſt of my ſpeech was ſo moving; and as to Eſtampe, for that was the name of the young lad, he wept ſincerely, which ſtill added to my regard for him; and, notwithſtanding the trouble it gave me to look on him, I reſolved to carry him home with me, which I did accordingly.

I gave him ſome leſſons, as to his conduct and future behaviour; and conceived ſo well of him, that I gave him immediate charge of all my papers, and every thing elſe that was valuable; ſuffered him to ſit at table with me; and recommended him ſtrongly to the care of Madame du Pleſſis, and her family, whilſt I ſtaid at Paris; and, in ſhort, I grew ſo fond of him, that I could hardly bear him out of my ſight. I appointed him an apartment to himſelf, as he profeſſed an averſion to lying with his own ſex, and did every thing that I thought would be agreeable to him. On his ſide, he ſhewed all the attachment to me I could wiſh for; he prevented all my wiſhes by his diligence; and when (for I concealed nothing from him) I uſed to lament my Louiſa, he ſympathized with me, in ſuch a manner, that I was fearful, ſometimes, it would hurt his health. He now and then waited on Serena and her mother, who returned me innumerable thanks for the favours I beſtowed, every day, upon their Eſtampe, for ſo they uſed to call him; as they had, as they informed me, bred him up from a child. He was very cautious and ſparing, when I deſired an account of himſelf and his family; contenting himſelf with telling me, that his father was an officer in the Swiſs Guards, who, dying, left him, a ſiſter, and their mother, in great diſtreſs, having been an extravagant and expenſive man; that Serena's mother had bred them up, through charity, and given him thoſe ſentiments of generoſity and gentility I had ſo much admired; that, as to his mother, ſhe had been dead near a twelvemonth, having ſubſiſted, to the hour of her death, on the bounty of the ſame good and benevolent family; and that he was in hopes he ſhould be able to recommend himſelf ſo to my favour, that he ſhould never want another friend. I aſſured him he never ſhould, and that I eſteemed him rather as a brother than a ſervant.

About this time the Marquis de Houdaincourt gave me an invitation to ſpend ſome weeks with him at a ſeat he had in Normandy, and engaged Du Pleſſis and Baſſompiere to be of the party; and would have prevailed on Sharpley to go, but he was too deeply

engaged

engaged with Serena to leave her company so soon. We set out for that province, which I was the more desirous of viewing, as it contained so many monuments of the bravery of our noble ancestors, who here, in thousands, lost their lives, to preserve possessions on the continent; which will always be detrimental to the nation. His house and estate lay near Elbeuf, in a pleasant country, watered by a branch of the Seine, and surrounded by other noblemen and gentlemen's estates and castles. We were received with peculiar distinction, and made daily visits to the cities and towns about it, gratifying our curiosity with every thing remarkable to be seen. The Normans are a brave, industrious, and honest people, who remember their former independency, and regret the loss of it; retaining, still, some customs and privileges that all the power of the court of France has not hitherto been able to deprive them of. In one of our excursions, when only the marquis, myself, and Estampe, were going to Caen, we were attacked by three banditti, at the edge of a forest we had just before passed through, who, without giving us the least notice, fired upon us, but without doing us any damage, save frightening our horses. Estampe trembled every joint, whilst the marquis and myself fired, each, one of our pistols on the robbers, and brought one of them down, who thus paid for his rashness with his life. The other two then fired upon us with their pistols again, the balls whistling by our ears without doing execution; and, our horses being pretty unruly, we dismounted, fired our other pistols, flung them at their heads, and attacked them sword in hand: the villains stood it well; but fortune had nearly given us the victory, and we found but a faint resistance, when another of the rogues, drawn by the noise of firing, rode up to the assistance of his comrades, and attacked me behind, and would have clove me down the skull before I was aware; when my page gave a loud shriek, and, advancing, fired one of his pistols at the new comer, which luckily sent a shot through his brain; and the others, seeing this, left their horses, and made a retreat into the thickest of the forest, where it was in vain for us to pursue them. Poor Estampe lay on the ground, and I was beginning to bewail his fate, when he rose up and convinced us nothing but fear had cast him upon his face, after he had so readily opened me a deliverance, in the manner just recited. I did not expect much courage from such a youth, and without reproaching him for the want of what is merely mechanical, and to be acquired by long practice and custom, I thought I could not dispense with myself from shewing my gratitude by a multitude of caresses, and by making him a present of my purse, as an encouragement to him; and the marquis would have done the same; but how greatly were we surprized, when he said, 'Gentlemen, 'let me have the merit of having done 'some service to you and myself, without impeaching it by taking a reward for what was my duty and my 'own interest.' We put our money up, and I began to perceive all that nobility of heart in this youth, that would have adorned a more exalted station, which still more and more raised my love and esteem for him. We caught our horses, and, mounting, went to the destined place, and from thence by another way returned home safely. I cannot here help making some reflections upon what the world generally calls courage and bravery, which I believe in some few breasts to be constitutional, or flowing from a particular quality of the blood and juices; but, in most, from a mechanical acquired habit of reasoning themselves out of their fear, which may be said to be natural: thus, a certain great general would duck his head at the first discharge that was made on either side; but, recollecting himself, and standing two or three fires, his reason got the better of his apprehension, and he boldly plunged into blood and confusion. If courage is then a principle or virtue to be acquired, can we blame a person who is destitute of it, if he has not had such opportunities of learning it, as generally fall to the lot of a particular set of people; or, if the same noble juices warm not his heart, as distend our own to fortitude and valour? The country *lout*, at first, hears with terror the cannons roar, and the din of war; but use and custom soon conquer his natural aversion to those shocking scenes, and he rushes

nto the battle with a thirſt of glory, and joins coolly in the ſack of towns, and the pillage of the poor inhabitants: but this let me inſiſt upon, that even the unthinking common ſoldier and ſailor, as well as the thinking officer, feel at firſt onſet a palpitation of heart, which the continuance of the fight, and the example of each other, ſoon overcome. When we had been ſome time with the marquis, he one morning told us, that we ſhould not depart without firſt doing him a piece of ſervice, which he did not doubt of our aſſiſtance in, as it was to relieve oppreſſed and diſtreſſed innocence; and immediately accounted for his requeſt in the following manner—

'It was about three years ago, that, 'at a publick aſſembly at Paris, I loſt 'my heart to one of the fineſt young 'ladies of this province, who was then 'with her father, who came to that 'city to ſollicit for a poſt in the go'vernment here. She was tall, re'markably well ſhaped, and her ſkin 'like alabaſter; her majeſtick aſpect 'commanded reſpect, at the ſame time 'that her lovely eyes ſwam in heavenly 'moiſture, and her good-natured be'haviour encouraged the approach of 'her adorers, who were very nume'rous, and the beauties of her mind 'ſet off the graces of her perſon. I 'was ſo ſtruck with her charms, that 'I learnt her father's buſineſs at court, 'and, an opportunity ſerving, did him 'ſuch effectual ſervice with the mini'ſter of ſtate, that he could not help 'returning me thanks, and inviting 'me to ſee him at his lodgings, which 'were in one of the beſt quarters of 'Paris. I knew little of him in Nor'mandy, where the common report 'proclaimed him an avaricious, re'vengeful wretch, whoſe god was 'gain, and whoſe greateſt happineſs 'conſiſted in amaſſing riches. He had 'only this daughter Marguerite, and 'another named Bellimante, who was 'crooked, and otherwiſe deformed; 'but more ſo in her mind than in her 'body, which made her the averſion 'of every one that approached her: 'in ſhort, ſhe was the very reverſe of 'her beautiful ſiſter. D'Aulnay had 'married a ſecond wife about twenty 'years younger than himſelf, who was 'an intriguing, artful lady, and was 'in hopes by her management to get 'every penny at his death, which he 'was, through all the perils and dan'gers the Scripture warns us of, mak'ing himſelf maſter of by injuſtice, 'cruelty, and oppreſſion. I ſoon got 'the entire affection of the lovely Mar'guerite, without it's being perceived 'by any of the family; and we were 'quite happy in the proſpect that 'D'Aulnay could not refuſe his con'ſent to my marrying his daughter, 'as my rank and fortune were far ſu'perior to his; but, unluckily for 'us, Madame D'Aulnay caſt a fa'vourable eye upon me, and, quite 'inflamed with luſt, made a declara'tion in ſuch terms to me, as called 'up all the blood in my cheeks. I 'was ſo ſurprized, that I was unpre'pared for an anſwer; but at length 'I recovered, and read her ladyſhip 'ſuch a leſſon of conjugal duty, that 'ſhe vowed revenge, and was ſoon 'after too much in a capacity to exe'cute it. I made a propoſal of mar'riage to him between his daughter 'and myſelf; but Madame D'Aulnay 'had been beforehand with me, and 'repreſented to him, that I had made 'an attempt upon her honour, and 'deſired him to forbid me the houſe; 'and therefore he received my propoſal 'with cutting diſdain, and never de'ſired to ſee me more. I aſked him 'the reaſon of his ſurprizing conduct; 'but he refuſed any; upon which I 'roſe up, and in a great paſſion told 'him, which I own was imprudent, 'that I valued not a fortune, and, if 'his daughter would conſent, would 'ſoon releaſe her from his odious ty'ranny. His wife was ſoon informed of 'the affair, and now no longer doubt'ed that I had refuſed her offer, in 'conſideration of my love to her 'daughter-in-law; for bad and de'ſigning people cannot poſſibly ap'prehend, that any body can act vir'tuouſly but from a view of private 'intereſt, and think all the world as 'vile as themſelves; ſhe, therefore, got 'the cuſtody of her daughter com'mitted to her charge, and employed 'her ſiſter as her deputy; under which 'management ſhe underwent the moſt 'ſhocking mortifications and hard'ſhips, which were increaſed by her 'being guarded ſo ſtrictly, that it was 'impoſſible for us to correſpond toge'ther. I ſought out by all the ways

I could

'I could to tranſmit a letter to her 'hands, but in vain; and at length ſhe 'was carried to his caſtle, about three 'leagues from hence, where every 'ſervant is an Argus; nowithſtand-'ing which, I have yeſterday, by diſ-'guiſing myſelf as a workman, a 'number being employed at preſent in 'making ſome repairs in his manſion-'houſe, delivered a letter to her hands 'as ſhe walked in the garden, by 'which I have appointed her to be 'ready to-morrow night at ſix o'clock 'in the park, where her mother per-'mits her ſometimes, with herſelf and 'her ſiſter, to walk; when, with 'Heaven's help, and your kind aſſiſt-'ance, I am reſolved to take her from 'her tyrants, and make her mine, for 'which I have got a licenſe ready.' We conſented to bear him company, and ſet out at the hour appointed, and had not been long at our ſtation, well armed, before we ſaw the beautiful Marguerite appear, attended by her two tormentors, who ſhewed all the animoſity in their behaviour to the poor lady, that could be; whilſt ſhe, conſcious of approaching relief, had a countenance, in which joy ſeemed to ſeek ſhelter under the maſk of ſadneſs. When they came pretty near, the marquis went forth from our ambuſcade; and, advancing towards his miſtreſs, took her by the hand, and ſaluting her, was going to lead her off; when Madame D'Aulnay interpoſed, and aſked him, what buſineſs he had with the lady. Upon which he retorted, 'A 'buſineſs that God and nature ap-'proves; not ſuch a buſineſs as you, 'Madam, once propoſed to me.' She ſwelled with malice and ſpite at this anſwer, and ordered Bellimante to go and alarm the family, that they might prevent a rape; but our friend led off a blooming maid, bluſhing like the roſy morn, and having put her into a chariot, that ſtood ready, without any purſuit or oppoſition, we carried her to his caſtle, where his ſiſter and other ladies were aſſembled to receive her; and from thence we attended them to Evreux, where a prieſt tied the holy knot, and made them one in perſon, as they had been long in ſoul. The next day, he, attended by us, waited upon his father-in-law, who at firſt gave him but a cold reception; but when he declared he expected no fortune with her, and that he only hoped he would do her juſtice at his death, he brightened up, and became ſo ſociable, that he delivered all her wearing apparel; and promiſed, if they behaved dutifully to him, ſhe ſhould be treated by him like a daughter at his death.

CHAP. XXV.

THEY RETURN TO PARIS—A PROPOSAL OF MARRIAGE IS MADE TO HIM—ESTAMPE'S BEHAVIOUR THEREON—HE ASKS HIM A PARTICULAR FAVOUR—IS DENIED AFTER IMPORTUNING HIS MASTER TO GRANT IT—A TERRIBLE FIRE AT THE HOUSE OF DU PLESSIS—GOES TO SERENA'S AT HER DESIRE—SEES ESTAMPE'S SISTER—A MOST AFFECTING DISCOVERY—GREAT JOY OF SHARPLEY, AND THE FAMILY.

A Few days after the marquis's nuptials were celebrated, we took leave of that happy couple, who parted with us with reluctance, and returned to Paris; where, as ſoon as we arrived, I ſent Eſtampe to find out Sharpley, and give him notice of it. He found him at Serena's, and he came, or rather flew, to my arms at the firſt ſummons, expreſſing all the joy his honeſt heart felt at ſeeing me again; and I, for my part, experienced as much joy in meeting that worthy man, as I did when he informed me, that Serena's mother had, at length, conſented to gratify his and her daughter's inclination, in returning to her native country, and making theſe two tender lovers happy in each other; and therefore Sharpley very preſſingly importuned me to make our ſtay in France as ſhort as poſſible. I aſſured him I would ſoon reſolve to ſet out for England; but, though I longed, yet I dreaded to ſet foot on that delightful ſhore. As ſorrow increaſes by compariſon with others felicity, the happineſs I had been witneſs to in the marquis and his lady, and that I now perceived in my friend, recalled a number of ſad and doleful ideas into my mind, and I gave myſelf over to all the pangs and tortures that deſpair indulged can inflict. In vain were the little arts my Eſtampe put in practice to chear me;

I saw all nature happy, I thought, but myself, and in the irrecoverable loss of Louisa, I found all the affection that a human breast could feel, and Serena and her mother, desiring my company, at the same time, added to my unhappiness, by introducing me to the Countess D'Elbeuf, who had taken a liking to my person, and who desired them privately to let me know, that my addresses to her would be so agreeable, that, if I would marry her, she would settle the whole of her immense fortune on me and my heirs. She was young, handsome, and rich; and the two ladies used, or seemed to use, all their art to bring me to pay her a visit; which I obstinately, notwithstanding, refused, and sternly told them, if the subject was again insisted on, I must come to a resolution never to see them more whilst they staid in France; and, Sharpley joining his intreaties to mine, I heard no more of the proposal from that quarter; but I found Estampe was set on continually to ring the countess's praises in my ears, and, in an insinuating way, to represent how hurtful my fruitless and unavailing tears were for the loss of my Louisa, and how much my repining was a sin against Heaven: that I was in the prime of life, and owed a duty to my friends and country, which I was by my resolution and manner of life attempting to destroy. He fell at my feet, and begged me to lay aside all thoughts of my unfortunate angel, and to embrace the enticing and glittering prospects that were yielded to my acceptance. I rose up in a fury, and cried out, pushing him rudely from me, 'And art thou so little acquainted 'with my temper, as to utter such 'words before me? Thou, who beareſt 'the image of my adorable Louisa, 'and whom, in respect to that, I have 'made my companion and bosom 'friend—begone from my sight, and 'never see me more! No,' I continued, shedding a flood of tears, 'never 'shall the generous compact we made 'be broken, never will I forfeit my 'vows of eternal truth and constancy, 'which death and the grave have not 'the power to cancel: made before the 'awful Majesty of Heaven, in Heaven 'the sacred tie shall be affirmed, and 'my Louisa shall be mine for ever! 'This ring, the sacred pledge of my 'Louisa's love! This speaking picture, that almost truly smiles, and 'soft approves my constancy, shall 'ever hang upon this faithful breast, 'and, when the damps of death bedew my face, the last request, that 'e'er my faltering tongue shall make, 'will be, May these be buried with 'me! Methinks I see my radiant maid 'floating in purest fields of light! and 'she gives a plaudit to my constancy. 'Oh! if I e'er could meet a fair one, 'that confessed thy wonderous matchless charms; that shewed a mind so 'excellent and so endowed with every 'ornament and every grace; it would 'then be some excuse to be unfaithful '—but that's impossible, as 'tis impossible to bring thee back to life—'No—second marriages are my aversion. I sure was married once—and 'other joys shall never reach me more!' The poor boy stood trembling during all these exclamations, and the tears even wetted the place he was in; though I thought I perceived a kind of satisfaction in his eyes, at the same time, that was unaccountable to me. He knelt, and embracing my knees, asked me pardon for his rashness, which proceeded purely from his affection for me, and through hopes of seeing me cured of a grief that hung upon me so heavily; 'But, Sir,' he went on, 'I'll never tempt your indignation so 'far as I have done, the remembrance 'of which makes me tremble; and 'will ever be a faithful monitor to 'you of all my poor lady's perfections,' (for so I had instructed him to call her) 'of which you have given 'me such transporting accounts.' I raised him, and told him, I forgave him now; but if the dearest friend I had in the world were to set about moving my unalterable resolution of living and dying for ever my Louisa's, or encouraged such discourse and such proposals, I never would see him or speak to him again. Estampe turned up his eyes to Heaven, in wondering astonishment; and his heart was so full, that he was obliged to quit the room to ease the burden of his sympathizing bosom. I declare, after this, I had not so much regard to Serena and her mother, as I had before; nor could bear to go to the house, for which I framed

framed ſuch excuſes, as made it neither look like want of affection to my friend, or diſreſpect to them.

One day, as I was fondly contemplating the features of my Louiſa, in the faithful picture that had been my conſtant companion through all my difficulties and dangers, Eſtampe told me, that his ſiſter was ſo nearly like that portrait, that he was very ſure I could not tell the difference between his lady and her, if I was to ſee her. This led me to aſk a number of queſtions about her, and to enquire, how it came ſhe had never yet been to ſee him ſince his being in my ſervice. He anſwered me, that ſhe had, by the recommendation of Serena, been introduced to the Ducheſs de Chartres, and that ſhe had taken ſuch a fancy to her, as to admit her at firſt to attend about her perſon, and that ſince, her affection increaſing by a view of her good qualities, ſhe had made her her companion and confidant, and was ſo fond of her, that it was ſeldom ſhe could ſuffer her out of her ſight; and that ſhe very rarely viſited even Serena, or her mother; where he had had an opportunity twice of ſeeing her, ſince he had the honour of being with me; but that, by appointment with thoſe ladies, ſhe was to wait upon them in a day or two, and he wiſhed I would ſuffer him to enquire the particular time of her coming, and make myſelf an accidental gueſt to ſatisfy myſelf, that what he had ſaid of her reſemblance to his lady was juſt. 'Indeed, Sir, I won't compliment her,' he continued, 'but ſhe is ſo near a 'copy of that excellence you weep the 'loſs of, that I don't doubt but the 'ſight of her will give you pleaſure, 'and perhaps may contribute to chace 'away, for ſome moments, the cha-'grin and deſpair that perpetually 'haunt your mind.'

I was pleaſed to ſee the zeal of this worthy lad, who was continually propoſing ſomewhat or other to divert my attention from the ſubject of my ſorrows; but this viſit I abſolutely refuſed to comply with, telling him, I ſuffered mortification enough in daily ſeeing his features, which had ſo near a reſemblance of Louiſa, and that I could not, I was ſure, be able to ſupport myſelf in ſeeing before me ſo living a picture of the woman I loved, which would, no doubt, rob me of my ſenſes entirely, and drive me to diſtraction. He urged me, notwithſtanding, again and again, with ſuch earneſtneſs, that he ſurprized me, and even begged upon his knees, that I would gratify him by ſeeing his ſiſter, and was ſure it would be productive of more good to me than I could poſſibly be aware of. I took him up very ſhort, and told him, his talking in that manner to me was ſuch a riddle, that I could not underſtand it, and threatened him, that if I ever found him capable of carrying on, or ſuppoſing he could execute any cunning ſcheme upon me, that was prejudicial to my honour and the reſolutions I had taken, I was certain I ſhould very difficultly refrain from uſing him as he deſerved, and turning him out of my ſervice. 'Look ye,' I added, 'when once a ſervant thinks he 'can be too cunning for his maſter, he 'never ſtops at ſmall crimes, but car-'ries his deſigns on till they end in 'his own detriment and ruin; and 'therefore, to preſerve my good opi-'nion, I muſt never know you capa-'ble of any thing of the ſort, even 'where you ſhould think it was for 'my peace, quiet, or intereſt.' Poor Eſtampe was grievouſly ſhocked at what I ſaid, and was going to reply, when Sharpley came in, and brought his Serena with him to pay me a viſit. I received them with my uſual gladneſs; and, after ſome other matters talked over, Serena told me, that ſhe had a great favour to beg of me, which was, that I would come and dine with them the next day; to which I gave my aſſent, on condition there was no other company than themſelves and her mother; ſhe freely owned there would be an Engliſh lady there, that ſhe wanted to introduce to my knowledge and acquaintance, who had met with as great misfortunes in love as myſelf, and had come to the ſame reſolution never to think of marriage again. 'Indeed, 'Mr. Thompſon,' ſhe added, 'you 'will find her far from being a diſ-'agreeable lady; nor will ſhe force 'you, like our tittle-tattle ſex, to talk 'more than you care for: come, my 'dear friend's friend,' clapping one of her pretty hands upon my ſhoulder, 'you ſhall not refuſe me this favour, 'which, I aſſure you, ſhall be the 'only one of the kind I will ever aſk 'again till you give me leave.' I

could

could not long reſiſt this agreeable creature, and the joint endeavours of my friend, who enforced what his Serena ſaid, as much as he poſſibly could. When they departed, Eſtampe told me, he was glad they had got my promiſe to go, as he was ſure it would divert my melancholy; for latterly I had ſeen no company at all: 'And, Sir,' ſays he, '(but I am afraid to mention it again) 'that Engliſh lady, Miſs Serena men-'tioned, is the very ſiſter I ſpoke of to 'you, to whom they jocoſely give 'that title, and who has been as un-'fortunate as yourſelf.' I ſtarted at this, but it was too late to go back, though it put me out of humour, for I thought I ſaw the heads of a contrivance in it, that I could not fathom. My viſit had like to have been baulked, however, the ſame night, by a dreadful fire that broke out at the houſe of Du Pleſſis, and raged in a terrible manner; and the city of Paris not being provided with ſo convenient aqueducts as we have in London, it did a great deal of damage before it was extinguiſhed. My concerns were of ſo ſmall a bulk, that they were ſoon removed; but poor Du Pleſſis ſuffered greatly, which infinitely concerned both Sharpley and me, who reſolved in ſome meaſure to aſſiſt to recover his loſs. It began between eleven and twelve at night; we were all in bed, and myſelf in a moſt profound ſleep, when the flames had taken hold of the very ſtair-caſe that led to my apartment, that of Eſtampe and ſome others. The firſt news I had of the danger was from that page, who ran trembling to my bed-ſide, and begged me, for Heaven's ſake, to awake and ariſe, or I ſhould be burnt in my bed: he had had time to dreſs himſelf, and ſoon ſecured what belonged to us; but, by that time I had ſlipped on my cloaths, the flames had ſeized the chamber-door, ſo that we were forced to tie the ſheets together, and it being but one ſtory from the ground, though a pretty loſty one, I ordered Eſtampe firſt to deſcend, which he refuſed to do; ſo, not to waſte time in diſpute, I got down ſafely firſt, and he as ſafely followed me. The family of Du Pleſſis, and myſelf, and ſervants, were invited by Count Garonne, whoſe houſe was oppoſite, to make uſe of the conveniences it afforded us till we could better provide ourſelves; which we did accordingly, for it was impoſſible to refuſe ſo polite an invitation: as to Mr. Sharpley, he had left Du Pleſſis, and had taken lodgings hard by St. Clou, where he could be nearer his Serena; ſo that he ſuffered nothing by the misfortune, nor heard of it till next morning, when he came to condole with us on the accident, and was quite delighted to hear that not one perſon was hurt, but that we all eſcaped the flames without the leaſt detriment. Poor Eſtampe, as he was attending me whilſt I dreſſed, ſaid, 'Now, Sir, this puts me in mind 'of the ſervice you was of to my poor 'lady, when you ſaved her from the 'fire at her father's; and, though I 'barely reſemble her, yet I have had 'the happineſs in her perſon, as you 'are pleaſed ſometimes to call it, to 'retaliate the kindneſs you did her.' I ſighed, and told him, I would never forget the office of love he had performed, which ſtill increaſed his value in my opinion.

When we were dreſſed, I walked to St. Clou alone, for Eſtampe had begged to be excuſed going with me, the laſt night's ſurprize having ſo affected him, that he was greatly diſordered in his head. I was received by my three friends, with the gladdeſt teſtimonies of affection; and, before dinner, we entertained ourſelves in the garden, and in a library, full of the beſt and politeſt authors, which gave me an high opinion of the refined taſte of theſe ladies, and their good ſenſe; and, in ſhort, every action of Serena's made me approve my friend's choice.

Dinner being ready, we went into a ſummer houſe, where the table was ſpread in an elegant manner, and the mother and daughter both excuſed the lady's not coming, they had mentioned; who had ſent word, ſhe could not make one of the company till after dinner, when ſhe would be ſure to attend us. I could not help perceiving, by the looks of Madame Rich, that ſomewhat more than ordinary was in agitation; and when dinner was over, and they withdrawn for ſome moments, I told Mr. Sharpley ſo, who ſaid, that he had made the ſame obſervation, but was totally ignorant of the meaning of it. They came in again, and ſeating themſelves, in about a quarter of an hour afterwards, word

was

was brought, that a coach had ſtopped at the gate; on which advice the old lady got up, and went to receive her gueſt, as ſhe ſuppoſed it to be, and ſoon returned with her. As ſhe entered the room and ſaluted the company, I, though I hardly encountered her with my eyes, perceived ſhe was prodigiouſly genteel, and of a middle ſtature. She complained of being troubled with the tooth-ache, and, on that account, held an handkerchief to her face, which concealed the lower part from view; but, by what I ſaw of her, upon a cloſer attention, ſhe was a very charming woman, and recalled much of my Louiſa already into my mind. We ſat ſome time talking of indifferent matters; but the lady ſuddenly dropping her fan, and I ſitting oppoſite to her, ran to take it up, and, preſenting it to her, looked full in her face: but, oh! angels, and all the bleſſed hoſt of heaven! Had an apoplexy darted through my brain; had a thunderbolt, red from the flaſhing ſky, transfixed me; had, inſtant, the laſt day been proclaimed, and the graves given up their dead in my ſight, my affright and terror had been not much more—

'A ſudden horror ſeiz'd my giddy head,
'And my ears tingled, and my colour fled:
'Nature was in alarm.'———

To my ſight was revealed the form, all beauteous as it was, of the dead Louiſa; who, ſmiling, took the fan, and bowed her head. I fell, and, uttering a hollow groan, loſt all my ſenſes at once in a ſwoon! It was, I afterwards found, a long time before I came at all to myſelf; and, when I did, my words were ſo incoherent and diſjointed, that it was feared I had totally loſt my underſtanding; and I was put to bed in a high fever, raving, and calling upon my Louiſa! dear, lovely Louiſa! whom ſtill my eyes perceived, ſhedding tears by my bed-ſide; when I exclaimed, 'Oh! mockery of woe! 'whence, oh! am I thus tortured, 'thus abuſed, with images and fancies 'of what is not in being?' The lovely phantom, inclining her cheek to mine, and wetting it with kindly dew, cried out, 'My dear, my long-loſt 'dear! how I accuſe myſelf for raſhly 'putting you into this ſtrange delirium, by preſenting your Louiſa before you, in ſo unguarded a manner? 'But yet, behold it is ſhe, it is ſhe 'herſelf, preſerved yet to be happy 'with her Thompſon, her dear lamented Thompſon, whoſe death ſhe 'long has mourned, with ſighs and 'tears of bitter, cruel anguiſh. See 'that I tell the truth;' and, ſoftly laying her balmy lips to mine, ſaid, 'Don't you know Eſtampe in your 'Louiſa?' The touch reviving brought me to myſelf, though ſtill wondering amazement made me gaze around, as if I doubted of my own exiſtence: at length, I folded round the ſlender waiſt my longing arms, and ſnatched her to my boſom, imprinting kiſſes on her bluſhing cheeks, that glowed with warmth and love. 'This, this,' I cried, 'repays my every pang, and all 'the numerous ills thy loſs has cauſed 'me, thou excelleneſt and thou ſweeteſt fair! whoſe death was death to 'me; for ſince I have not lived, but 'walked, and ſtalked about, forlorn, 'and moſt unhappy! Oh! gracious 'God! *our preſent joy makes our paſt 'miſeries ſport!* But where, or how, 'or when, waſt thou preſerved to bleſs 'my longing ſight? It is all a miracle '—it is wondering frenzy of fierce in-'tenſeſt love.'—'All, all, my Thompſon,' ſhe replied, 'thou ſhalt know, 'and how, for many years deploring 'thy ſad loſs, I have lived obſcure in 'this beloved place; beloved, ſince 'again it gives me you: but let us 'ceaſe and calm our frantick ſouls; 'repoſe thyſelf whilſt I retire and ſtrive 'to be compoſed.' I would not, could not, part with her; and ſhe kindly conſented to ſtay by my bed-ſide till I had tried ſo to come to myſelf, as to be able to riſe, and be fit for converſation. I fell, at length, into a ſweet ſlumber, that held me near an hour; and, waking, looked about earneſtly for the charmer of my heart, whom I ſaw ſitting beſide me, and watching my return to reaſon—

'———fairer to be ſeen,
'Than the fair lilly on the flowery green;
'More freſh than May herſelf, in bloſſoms 'new.'—

Seeing me awake, ſhe gently preſſed my hand, and aſked me, if I thought I could riſe; which anſwering in the affirmative, ſhe withdrew, and I aroſe, and went down into the parlour, where I found my charmer, and my other friends, who congratulated me on my happineſs;

happineſs; and Sharpley, claſping me in his arms, proteſted he wanted nothing to make him compleatly bleſſed; 'But pray, Madam,' ſays he, turning to Serena, 'how could you be ſo cruel 'to conceal this ſecret from me? Why 'might not I have had a ſhare in this 'plot?'—'No, no, Sir,' replies the good old lady, 'we knew your attach-'ment too well to your friend, to 'think it poſſible for you to conceal 'any thing from him, and therefore 'were reſolved to keep it to ourſelves.' He advanced to my Louiſa, and, ſaluting her with great politeneſs, and that awe her preſence always inſpired, told her, had he known her before, he ſhould have recommended Miſs Rich, his countrywoman, to another place with his friend than that of a page. To which ſhe replied, that ſhe ſhould always be delighted to ſerve her old maſter, in that capacity or any one elſe that would give him greater pleaſure. I bowed, and told her, ſhe ſhould always command me, for I had been too long at my own hands, not to ſee that I wanted government. 'Well, niece,' ſays her aunt, 'you 'are now ſure of your lover's con-'ſtancy, which you was reſolved to 'try to the utmoſt, and I believe he is 'not now ſorry, that he has ſeen 'Eſtampe's ſiſter.' The old lady, whoſe good-nature and good-ſenſe I admired, and her amiable daughter, were never tired of careſſing us both; and we paſt the remainder of the day in the utmoſt gladneſs and feſtivity: the ſervants had their ſhare of the rejoicing for this good news; and, as to my part, if I have any idea of the future joys of Heaven, it flowed from the true and genuine ſatisfaction I enjoyed in my recovered angel's ſoft ſociety, whoſe pleaſure ſeemed, and was as great as mine. Decency requiring us to part, I went with Sharpley to his lodging, after taking leave of my ſoul's treaſure, with the utmoſt reluctance.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE ADVENTURES OF MISS LOUISA RICH.

AS ſoon as the morning dawned, my friend and I aroſe; lovers like us were not much given to ſleep; we had enough of tenderneſs and boundleſs affection to employ us moſt part of the night, in converſation of our happineſs; and the idea of being ſo nearly related to each other gave us a pleaſure, that could only be felt by us, who underſtood and practiſed all the delicacies of friendſhip. We hugged one another, and mutually ſpoke congratulation to ourſelves, and praiſes to our miſtreſſes. For my part, I felt no ſuch dulneſs and melancholy, as for ſo many hundred mornings afflicted my ſoul; but was all over the gay, eaſy, free Joe Thompſon, that I had been before my misfortunes. 'Hence! hence!' I cried, 'all ſadneſs, all deſpair, ſince my 'Louiſa is again revived, and ſhall 'at laſt be mine!'

We found the ladies were not riſen when we waited upon them, and went into the garden to recreate ourſelves till they came down to us, which they ſoon did; and, all around them—

'Spread fragrant odours, ſpread ambroſial 'ſweets!'

We breakfaſted, amidſt all the felicitous raptures their preſence inſpired; and then, to encourage my Louiſa to relate her miraculous (for ſo I could not help calling it) eſcape from England, and the jaws of death, I told all that had befallen me ſince the moment, the fatal moment of our ſeparation, till the preſent happy hour. They all lifted up their eyes at the vile actions of the ſquire, on whom they could not help calling down puniſhment for his crimes. My amiable maid now reddened, now turned pale, at the various misfortunes that had befallen me, and often was ready to ſink at the narration of the grievous ills I had ſuffered; and the ſtory of my grief and perpetual deſpair for her loſs drew tears from all my four auditors, who ſweetly, gently ſympathized in my woes. The preſence of the dear creature, who was the principal cauſe of all, gave me ſo much ſpirits in my relation, that I ſeemed inſpired, and painted all I ſaid ſo ſtrongly, that I myſelf even wept at the doleful tale. 'And now,' I cried, as ſoon as I had concluded, 'thou joy of my

'heart,

'heart, oblige me with thy adventures, which I think muſt have been 'as extraordinary as my own; and 'let me know how you reſolved to 'counterfeit death, and the motives 'for all your proceedings ſince.' Bluſhing, ſhe began, and thus recounted what I had deſired—

'I hope I ſhall be excuſed, when I 'ſay that it is impoſſible for me to 'deſcribe ſo touchingly what I have 'undergone, as my dear Thompſon 'has; for women, though, perhaps, 'their ſouls are ſofter far than men's, 'have not ſo much the power of elo'quence and nervous fire, to ſhine in 'deſcriptive tale. They feel moſt 'ſenſibly, but cannot relate the mo'tions of their breaſts ſo well; not 'uſed to misfortune, not expecting it, 'it hurries their ſpirits to ſuch a de'gree when it comes upon them, that 'they loſe the power of expreſſion in 'the fulneſs of their minds. Much 'more now, then, I am worthy of ex'cuſe, when I can hardly call what 'I have ſuffered, ills at this moment, 'when the preſence of that gentleman 'has ſo rejoiced my heart, that, whilſt 'I look on him, I forget, in extre'mity of ſatisfaction, every tortur'ing incident of the many years I 'have mourned.

'No one, ſure, can imagine the grief 'it occaſioned me to loſe my faithful 'and truſty Fidele, in the manner I 'ſo ſuddenly did; but my pain was 'ſtill increaſed, when my father came 'into my chamber foaming with rage, 'and after the moſt irritating language 'that he could uſe, in which he hardly 'kept his hands from executing the 'puniſhment he ſaid I deſerved, for 'my diſobedience and ſilly love, as he 'called it; he locked me in, took the 'key in his pocket, and told me, at 'his departure, he would remove me 'far from the wretch I had choſen to 'place my affection upon; and, ac'cordingly, ſome time afterwards, 'having armed his ſervants, and or'dered a coach and ſix to the gate, I 'was carried, or rather dragged into 'it, by himſelf and the villain my 'couſin, having had but juſt time to 'get one of the ſervants that loved 'me, and had been obliged to me for 'preſerving him in his place, to carry 'you the little note you have men'tioned in your ſtory. This I wrote 'to prevent thoſe ſallies of paſſion that 'I knew would aſſault you, when you 'could not learn what was become of 'me, and to make you eaſy as to the 'continuance of my affection. I knew 'not, but by ſome words my couſin 'had dropped unawares to my father, 'in my preſence, where I was going 'to be hurried: there was no one in 'the coach but myſelf, and I was 'ſenſeleſs to every thing but the di'ſtracted ideas that oppreſſed my brain, 'whilſt it was drove at a prodigious 'rate, leſt you ſhould get notice of 'the way we had taken, and purſue 'us; for my father often ſaid to the 'ſquire, "The dog is brave, and he, "and young Diaper his friend, would "ſtick at nothing to ſerve each other; "and, as I don't care for murder, "let us keep our rout as ſecret as "poſſible; for they will be ſo deſpe"rate, that we muſt ſacrifice them, "if they offer to follow us." The 'ſquire recollecting, when we had 'got ſome miles, that ſomewhat or 'other was forgot in the hurry, was 'ſent back with two ſervants; for 'he refuſed to go alone, as I after'wards heard, for fear of meeting 'you, and for which I heard Sir Wal'ter call him a ſniveling, pitiful dog; 'ſo that I continued under my father's 'convoy, and hoped, when we came 'to the ſtage we were to bait at, that 'I ſhould be able to ſoften and mollify 'his temper in the abſence of that in'cendiary, the bane to all my happi'neſs. We put up, late at night, at 'a large inn in a noted town, where 'we found pretty good accommoda'tions; and when ſupper was brought 'in, and we had eat what we had an 'inclination to, my father called for 'tobacco; and, in a ſurly way, told 'me I muſt give him my company, 'and muſt not go to bed till he did. 'I informed him, as tenderly as I 'could, that his company was more 'deſirable than any other, and my be'haviour might inform him, that I 'never was better pleaſed than when 'he did me the honour to beſtow it 'upon me. "Sayeſt thou ſo, Lucy?" 'he replied, "give me a buſs for "that ſpeech: I could forgive every "thing, if you would forget your "linen-draper, and agree to my ſenti-

" ments." I ran to him, threw my ' arms round his neck, and, with tears ' in my eyes, told him, I muſt own I ' perceived ſo many good qualities in ' Mr. Thompſon, that I could not ' help being moved by them—" But, " dear papa, what need is there of " any reſtraint upon me? My ſince- " rity is juſtified by my not concealing " my affection to him from you; and " I promiſed you, (and, you know, " Sir, promiſes are ſacred with your " little Lucy) that I would never " think of him any otherwiſe than as " a friend and acquaintance, unleſs " you gave your conſent to it.—Why, " then, Sir, muſt I be hurried from " you, at ſuch a diſtance from my " dear father, whoſe only ſolace and " comfort I uſed to be, merely for " liking a man he has himſelf ſo much " eſteemed, and introduced to my fa- " vour and acquaintance? Have you " not, deareſt Sir, ſaid yourſelf, he " was the only man you ſhould like " for me if he had a fortune ſuffi- " cient, and that you wiſhed he was a " ſon of yours, and one of better " birth?—Ah, Sir! his deſcent is " known to you to be almoſt equal to " your own; but, ſetting that aſide, " and ſuppoſing him to be beneath my " choice in birth, yet let me repeat " ſome lines to you, you have often " deſired me to read, and applauded—

" ——Search we the ſecret ſprings,
" And backward trace the principles of
" things;
" There ſhall we find, that, when the world
" began,
" One common maſs compos'd the mould
" of man;
" One paſte of fleſh on all degrees beſtow'd,
" And kneaded up alike with moiſt'ning
" blood.
" The ſame Almighty Pow'r inſpir'd the
" frame
" With kindled life, and form'd the ſouls
" the ſame;
" The faculties of intellect and will,
" Diſpens'd with equal hand, diſpos'd
" with equal ſkill,
" Like liberty indulg'd with choice of
" good or ill:
" Thus born alike, from virtue firſt began
" The diff'rence that diſtinguiſh'd man from
" man:
" He claim'd no title from deſcent of blood,
" But that which made him noble, made
" him good;
" Warm'd with more particles of heaven-
" ly flame,
" He wing'd his upward flight, and
" ſoar'd to fame;
" The reſt remain'd below, a tribe with-
" out a name."

" Then, dear papa, tell how I have " offended you in being of the ſame " ſentiments with yourſelf, and ac- " knowledging that merit which you " firſt taught me to ſee and admire: " beſide, Sir, you ſay, or always have " ſaid, that an ungrateful perſon is " a monſter. Oh! how often—you " can tell—the generous youth has " ſaved my life when in the utmoſt " peril! And can I, Sir! can I, my " father! be inſenſible of the favour " of that being he has preſerved to " me!" My father wiped his eyes; ' and, after ſome pauſe, broke out ' thus, " G—d z—ds! and ſo I have " brought you up to know more than " the father that begot thee!—What " doſt tell me of a new-fangled tale, " of this and that, that I nor any " body elſe can underſtand the mean- " ing of, of merit and gratitude, and " the reſt, at this time? Yes, I " have told thee it was good to be " grateful; but did I ever think thou " wouldſt plead his own words againſt " thy father? I reſpect old Thomp- " ſon and his wife well enough, and " did like the boy, I muſt own, till " he manifeſted a deſign upon my " daughter. You know I intended " you from your birth for your couſin, " and ha' him you ſhall. G—d's " blood! doſt thou think ſo many " thouſand a year was ever intended " for a parſon's ſon, and a London " tradeſman? No, no! if he had of- " fered to court your maid, I'd given " my conſent, and ſomewhat beſide, " mayhap; though I wiſh that numps " knew as much as he, too, it would " be better for him; and you know " Joe is an heretick, and of an heretick " family: but, however, to be ſure he " is as good as us, no doubt. I don't " believe he'll be damned neither; " and the dog toſſes off his bottle as " well as any man." Here I inter- ' rupted him—" Papa, if he has not " a great fortune now, with your aſſiſt- " ance he may have one; and a man " that can improve an eſtate like him, " is a far better match than one that

" has

"has not wit enough to keep what he "has."—"Huſſy, hold your tongue," he replied, "my reſolution is fixed; "you ſhall have your couſin, or nobody. Z—ds! if I had had ſenſe "enough, I ſhould have cut off your "paramour's ears; but thoſe he keeps "to loſe in the pillory, for lies ſpoken "behind his compter!" I ſaid no more, after this odd, incoherent harangue; and he fell aſleep, and ſnored ſo loud, that an houſe-dog, who laid under the table, ſuddenly made at him, and bit him by the heel; at which he waked, and, looking about, ſaw me ſitting weeping, and aſked me what ailed me. "Indeed, Sir," I replied, "I am not uſed to ſit up theſe "hours, and it frightens me, for fear "either my dear father, or myſelf, "ſhould get ſick upon it."—"Thou "art a good girl, faith; and I aſk "thee pardon," he ſaid; and ringing for the hoſteſs, who had ſat up merely through complaiſance, ordered her to ſhew me to bed, and went immediately after to bed himſelf. I was in hopes what I had ſaid would have altered his way of thinking; for I added a great deal more than I can at preſent remember: and, indeed, the next morning at breakfaſt, he behaved with ſo much affection, that my thoughts, I imagined, had proved true; but, juſt after we had ſat down, my couſin came in, and glancing a malicious look at me, in which joy was very viſible, (that is, not the pure joy that animates an honeſt face upon any happy incident, but ſuch a malign kind of ſatisfaction that the bad part of the world experience, when they have ſerved a particular turn of their own, and which is diſtinguiſhed from the other by their very countenances) called my father aſide, at which time I ſuppoſe he related his rencounter with you, which you have ſo mournfully, and, to me, painfully deſcribed; for the old gentleman returned, with new fury painted in his viſage, and, without ſaying a word to me, ordered the horſes to the coach; into which entering, we purſued our journey, and in three days more arrived at this lady's, at the Grange in Somerſetſhire. My aunt, who has a fine eſtate there, had been often, in my dear mother's time, at our houſe, and her amiable daughter, my dear Serena, was partly brought up with me under my mother's care. I need not deſcribe them, the ſequel of my ſtory will inform you of their noble and generous turn of mind; and, as to their perſons, it would be vanity and impertinence in me to attempt to draw their pictures. My father apprehended that my aunt would have immediately fallen into his ſentiments; and, indeed, ſhe was much prejudiced againſt me when ſhe firſt heard his ſtory, and agreed to a vote he put, that I ſhould be confined to my chamber till my temper was altered: but how ſurprized was the dear good woman, when ſhe, attempting to call me to account for my folly, heard the real truth of the affair, and that Mr. Thompſon was not a vagabond, a raſcal, a deſigning villain, but a gentleman in every reſpect formed to gratify the taſte of a woman of good-ſenſe and virtue! At another time ſhe may tell you, no doubt, in what a ſpirited and affectionate manner I talked of you: it would not become me at preſent to repeat all I ſaid in your praiſe, and on your behalf; let it ſuffice, that, with this young lady's aſſiſtance, I melted her ſo, that, the next morning, ſhe perſuaded my father to let me be at large under her inſpection, for that ſhe would anſwer for my conduct. I was peſtered all this while with the nauſeous viſits of the ſquire, who, in his aukward way, addreſſed me, and beſpoke my good-will: but I returned him no other anſwer than ſilence gave; and once, when he particularly teazed and peſtered me, I told him I would ſooner pierce my heart with a dagger, than ever think of marrying ſuch a monſter of revenge and cruelty. He left me abruptly upon this, and forbore his viſits for ſome days; he and my father being, at that time, at Sir William Careleſs's, a ſeat about two miles from that of my aunt; and in this interval, a ſervant I could depend upon being ſent about ſome buſineſs in Yorkſhire, I put into his cuſtody a letter for you, which I am glad to hear you ſafely received.—Ah, Mr. Thompſon! my fears at this time were much greater on your account than my own; I knew your

'ſanguine reſolute temper, and was 'ſhocked at the thought of the deſpe-'ration my loſs would occaſion in 'you, in your noble ſpirit, which can 'never ſubmit to an injury with that 'moderation, that, perhaps, is as com-'mendable as neceſſary; and I framed 'that letter on purpoſe to calm the tu-'mults of your ſoul. Mean time I 'underwent all that the fooliſh offici-'ouſneſs of my father, the hateful 'addreſſes of the ſquire, and my own 'gloomy ideas, could inflict. Let me 'own my love to you was as intenſe 'as it was pure and holy: I lament-'ed your abſence, and the diſtance 'that divided us, and ruminated upon 'the accidents that might prove fatal 'to our loves, with ſuch perpetual 'ſighings and tears, ſuch frantick 'ſorrow, that my aunt and couſin, 'nay, even my father, was alarmed 'leſt I ſhould throw myſelf into a fe-'ver; and the villain, our perſecutor, 'was forbid for ſome time to approach 'me. By this time theſe two ladies 'had entertained ſuch a love and 'eſteem for me, which all my life will 'never be able to make them amends 'for, that they ſincerely reſolved to 'befriend me in all my deſires, and, 'if poſſible, to eaſe me of the perſe-'cutions that ſurrounded me: they 'talked all they could ſuggeſt to my 'father, but found him as firm and 'ſteady as a rock in his purpoſes, 'that I ſhould renounce you for ever, 'and wed the ſquire. "I did pro-"miſe," ſaid he, "never to force her "inclinations, provided ſhe would "not correſpond, or have any thing "more to ſay to young Thompſon; "but ſhe broke through her contract, "and I have now a diſcharge for every "thing I attempt to make her happy, "even againſt her will: nor ſhall ſhe "much longer dally with me, if I "drag her to church, and give her "hand into my nephew's by force." 'Theſe ladies, as well as myſelf, 'knew the reſolute obſtinate temper 'of my father; and his behaviour ſo 'irritated me, that, though I had pro-'miſed never to marry without his 'conſent, yet I believe, had you been 'upon the ſpot, I ſhould have made 'my eſcape to you, or done any thing 'to be freed from his tyranny. A-'mongſt the great number of viſitors 'that reſorted to ſee my aunt, was 'Colonel Williams, a gentleman of 'a very large eſtate, who at firſt ſight 'expreſſed a very great value for me, 'and aſked leave of her to pay his 'addreſſes to me. He was as polite 'and generous as he was rich; and, 'when my aunt told him of my pre-'engagement, he deſiſted; but when 'ſhe informed him alſo of the hard-'ſhips I laboured under on account of 'the ſquire, whom by this time all 'the gentry in the neighbourhood 'eſteemed a very booby, he propoſed, 'with my leave, to appear publickly 'as his rival, that, by producing ſome 'act of villainy and baſeneſs from 'him, my father might be forced to 'alter his purpoſes. I conſented—he 'made parties of pleaſure for us—'profeſſed himſelf my admirer, and 'went ſo far as to aſk my father's con-'ſent to marry me; which, though 'he genteelly declined, yet his vanity 'was too much humoured in ſeeing 'his daughter the toaſt of the county, 'to forbid his viſits, and my aunt put 'on an air of ſatisfaction at what he 'did. The ſquire, who was ſoon ap-'prized of this potent rival, complain-'ed of it to my father, and of the en-'couragement he had received; but 'he gave him this anſwer—"Z—nds! "why if thou haſt not ſpirit enough "to defend thy claim againſt all the "world, thou art not worthy of her." 'He took this ſo much in dudgeon, 'that he came to my aunt's, where he 'found the colonel and myſelf playing 'a game at picquet, whilſt my couſin 'was looking on, in a ſummer-houſe 'in the garden: as ſoon as he came in, 'he ſat down without ſaying a word, 'or pulling his hat off; upon which, 'the colonel, laughing, ſaid, "La-"dies, I have ſo much veneration for "your ſex, that I think a man who "has aſſurance enough to come into "your preſence without taking off "his hat, ought to have it nailed to "his head, as the Czar of Muſcovy "once did that of a certain ambaſſa-"dor."—"By G—d!" returns the 'ſquire, "you can't nail it there."—"Not in the preſence of theſe ladies," 'he rejoined; "but if you are very "impertinent, I'll take you out and "correct you for it." The natural 'cowardice of this villain made him 'preſerve ſilence ſome minutes; but 'at length he broke out, "Sir, what

"buſineſs

'buſineſs have you with that lady?" —"No other at preſent," ſays the colonel, "than to protect her from "your rudeneſs and brutality; and "ſo, pray, Sir, don't watch our actions, but be gone directly, or I "ſhall be forced to uſe you as you deſerve!" He did not ſtir, and the colonel, ſtill laughing, got up, and gave him three or four ſtrokes over the ſhoulder with a hazel-twig, and hauled him out of the ſummer-houſe by the collar; and the great oaf, with his long ſword by his ſide, ſtole away into the houſe to our inexpreſſible diverſion. To go farther yet, the colonel paid a viſit to my father at Sir William's, to complain in form of his rudeneſs, and to tell him that he would uſe him juſt ſo, whenever he was impertinent again in any place he choſe to be in. My father at firſt was very angry with the colonel, but ſoon came into a better temper, and cried, "Ay, do, colo"nel; I wiſh you could raiſe his paſ"ſion ſo much as to get him to fight: "well, he's a worthy lad, too; but we "were not all born with courage." My aunt and couſin raillied him ſo far for his cowardice, together with his uncle, that he thought he was obliged, according to his notions of honour, to kill him, and, for that purpoſe, way-laid him in a bye-path, and fired a piſtol at him, the ball grazing on the crown of his hat. The colonel ſtarted, and, turning about, drew his ſword, and purſued his antagoniſt, whom he ſoon came up with, and was quite-aſtoniſhed to find it was the noble Squire Rich. In the firſt motions of his reſentment he was going to run his ſword through him, but, conſidering the worthleſſneſs of the object, thought it was better to expoſe him to ſhame; ſo, tying his hands behind him, he made him march before him to my aunt's, where he uſhered him in, and told the ſtory of the intended aſſaſſination. Never creature, ſure, looked ſo meanly as the wretch did at this time; and, when my father was ſent for, he was ready to expire with ſhame at the reproaches that were made him. The colonel left him bound, ſaying, "Sir, in conſidera"tion of you and your family, I will "not expoſe this villain to publick "puniſhment; only conſider wiſely, "whether a man of this ſtamp is a fit "huſband for your charming daugh"ter." My aunt proteſted to my father, that he ſhould never enter her doors again; and the old gentleman took him home with him, giving him an angry kick on the breech, as he went out at the door. Would you believe it, this fellow had aſſurance enough to tell my father, and made him believe it too, that he was walking out, and, for diverſion, fired his piſtol at a mark, not knowing the colonel, or any body elſe, was paſſing that way; and promiſed him, that, to retrieve his reputation, he would call him to a gentleman-like account for the calumnies with which he had loaded him, and that the reaſon of his ſilence under the charge againſt him, was the preſence of himſelf and me, and the conſideration of the apparent circumſtances, which, to be ſure, were greatly in his diſfavour. All this he uttered with ſo many ſighs and tears, and proteſtations of his innocence, that my father, blindly fond of him, credited all he ſaid; and only required, that, as a proof of his innocence, he would challenge the colonel; "And, if "you don't do that," ſays he, "to "be ſure you can never have Louiſa." He introduced him again to my aunt's with this ſtrange ſtory, which, though none of us believed, we agreed to his viſits, knowing he would ſoon ruin his ſcheme by his fear of challenging the colonel; which we imagined he would as ſoon attempt to do, as to face an army of 10,000 men; but, this time, his credit was preſerved with my father, by the colonel's being ordered, the next day, to his duty in London, to which place he ſet out, after taking a genteel farewel of us, with a promiſe to return, and try the ſquire's courage in leſs than a fortnight. But this dreadful fortnight gave me more pangs than tongue can deſcribe, and was the ſource of a reſolution that brought me to this country; and, now let me ſay, to all the happineſs I could propoſe in life.

'The ſquire, after the colonel's departure, bluſtered, and ſtrutted about, like the famous *bully* of Mr.

'Congreve,

'Congreve, and then diſappeared, all 'on a ſudden; giving out, that ſince 'one victim had fled, he was reſolved 'to take ſatisfaction of another, who 'had uſed him as ill as this *prig*, by 'daring to rival him in my affections. 'He was gone near a week, when my 'father, with a mixture of joy and 'concern in his countenance, brought 'a letter to ſhew my aunt, ſaying, "Z—ds! I am ſorry for the poor "lad's fate, too; but Numps has, at "laſt, ſhewn himſelf a man of cou-"rage; and I'd have Colonel Wil-"liams ſtand clear, when he comes "back." The letter was—

"HONUR'D SUR,

"I Hope youe wil now not blive the "many baſes ſtories thate are ſo "conſtanteley tolde youe of me; for I "have givene a good acounte of "younge Tomſin, whome, in a du-"elle, I made a ſackrifice off, and "bite the grounde. I have got ſafe "here, frome the purſut made after "mee; and, now hes removde, I hope "I ſhall meete with no further muleſ-"tetion, in aboute havinge cuſen "Louiſee. The poore felow was "juſt fettinge out for Londin. *Youer "dutifull nefew, tell deth,*

"HUMPHRY RICHE.

"BOSTON, LINCOLNSHIRE."

'My aunt read this letter with the 'utmoſt aſtoniſhment; and, though 'ſhe did not believe he had killed you 'in a duel, yet ſhe did not doubt but 'he had, in the baſe way of aſſaſſina-'tion, taken away your life. She 'took my father aſide, and begged 'him not to let me know the affair ab-'ruptly, but truſt to her care cau-'tiouſly to diſcover it, and let her have 'the letter for that purpoſe; and the 'next morning, taking me into her 'chamber, ſhe called in her daughter; 'and, ſhutting the door, began to open 'the matter to me thus. "My dear-"eſt niece, to me misfortunes are no "ſtrangers; I have lived long enough "to look upon every thing below as "vain and tranſitory, and all our fan-"cied enjoyments as only ſo many in-"centives to get acquainted with mi-"ſery. The pleaſures we reap here "cannot compenſate for the pains we "endure; we are daily, hourly, ſeek-"ing after toys and bubbles, and "neglect the more important con-"cerns of a future ſtate. You your-"ſelf, young as you are, have felt "ſome trouble: the loſs of your dear "mother, though you was then al-"moſt an infant, cauſed in you a ſin-"cere grief, which I know you was "ſenſibly afflicted with; but, per-"haps, ſomewhat that will more near-"ly affect you has happened; a fatal "accident, that, if you are not armed "with religion and reaſon ſufficient to "bear, may, perhaps, kill your peace "of mind for ever!" Here, all wild 'and frantick, yet unſuſpecting the 'reaſon for this diſcourſe, I cried, "Oh, Madam! what has happened?— "My father!—Is he killed?—Is he "dead?—Alas! what ſhall I do?—I "am ſorry I ever diſobeyed him."— "No, no, my dear, calm yourſelf— "your father is alive and well—per-"haps he does not ſo much deſerve "this dutiful concern—no, it is not "for his loſs you are now to mourn— "but—" here a ſhower of tears ſtop-'ped her farther utterance, and ſhe 'tenderly claſped me in her arms, 'whilſt her daughter and myſelf join-'ed our tears, unknowing the occa-'ſion, with her's. She came to her-'ſelf, and went on. "The beſt of "youths, my dear—don't look ſo "wildly—the beſt of youths, as you "have deſcribed him, is dead!—is "murdered by a villain!—your dear "—Thompſon!"—"Oh, God!" I 'cried, and fell from my chair in ſo 'ſtupid a ſwoon, that my head re-'ceived a violent contuſion, which, 'ſee, I carry the marks of to this day. 'They were both ſo alarmed at this 'accident, that they were near being 'in the ſame condition; they both 'loved me tenderly, as I did, and ever 'ſhall do, them: what could they 'ſay? what could they do? They 'raiſed me, rubbed my temples with 'Hungary water, and other ſuch re-'viving preparations; but, for a full 'hour, could not bring me to the leaſt 'ſenſe or motion. At length I awoke 'from this death-like trance; and the 'firſt idea that preſented itſelf to my 'imagination, was my deareſt Thomp-'ſon, all wan and pale, his blood iſ-'ſuing out at ſeveral wounds, and his 'hair clotted with gore! "Oh!" I

'cried,

cried, "let me die with thee! I have "no buſineſs now in life. Where "ſhall I meet thee, thou dreadful, "well-known form?—Oh! let me "hide thee in my arms, and wipe off "the ſanguine ſtreams that deform thy "viſage!" and then fainted away again; and, aſſiſtance being called, I was put to bed in an high fever; and was for ſome days ſo delirious, that it was thought I ſhould never get over it. My dear aunt and couſin were inconſolable; and my father, notwithſtanding his obdurate temper, was ſincerely grieved; but the two ladies would not ſuffer him to approach me, and loaded him with the epithets of Cruel! Baſe! and Barbarous! and told him he had murdered one perſon, and now, they ſuppoſed, would ſend his emiſſary to kill the other. His nephew was arrived, and put on the air of a great deal of concern; but my aunt ſent him word, if he approached the houſe, ſhe would order her ſervants to ſecure him as a murderer. In about three weeks I was ſomewhat upon the mending hand, but recovered ſlowly, and with ſuch a worm at my breaſt, as deprived me of all comfort. My colour vaniſhed from my cheeks; I grew as pale as a ſpectre, and my body ſo thin and emaciated, that I was hardly known to be the ſame: however, I had reſolution enough to deſire my aunt to let me into the particulars of my Thompſon's fate, and had ſeriouſly entered into the gloomy reſolution to make away with myſelf the firſt opportunity. Oh! let a perſon be ever ſo wiſe or intelligent, there are ſome misfortunes ſo ſevere, that it is impoſſible for them to bear up againſt their force; the brain, and all the faculties weakened, admit of the moſt direful reſolves; and, perhaps, none but thinking perſons can be ſo much affected. *A fool has not ſenſe enough to grieve*, is as true a ſaying, as it is a trite one. I agreed with her, that you muſt have been baſely murdered, though I could not account for your having ſtaid ſo long in Yorkſhire; and, for a great while, I formed many ſchemes to bring your murderer to juſtice; but the unlucky thought, that, perhaps, my father was concerned in it, ſtopped me in my intended proſecution, which otherwiſe my aunt, notwithſtanding the ſquire's near relation, would have joined in. I was no ſooner up, than my father, very abruptly, brought the ſquire to pay me a viſit; on which I would have retired, but he took hold of me, and told me I ought not to blame Numps for what he had done, for a gentleman muſt defend his honour and his miſtreſs. I kept an obſtinate ſilence all the time they ſtaid; and, had I had a proper weapon, I believe I ſhould have had ſtrength to have run it through his perfidious heart. My father ſaid, in a menacing way, "Well, Lucy, Numps and I are going "into Yorkſhire to ſettle matters for "your removal home; and then I expect you'll—d'ye hear me—do as I "order you, and think no more of a "man who deſerved to die, and was "beneath your notice." I made no other anſwer than by a flood of tears, which hindered my ſight; and they departed. My aunt and couſin were ſhocked at this inhumanity, ſo much that they could not ſpeak to him; and I told thoſe ladies, very deliberately, after they were gone, that I would never more ſee Yorkſhire, or the face of my cruel father, whatever became of me. They were frightened at the manner of my expreſſion; and, the next day, my aunt, having conſulted with herſelf, propoſed the following ſcheme, not thinking that I would long perſiſt in my reſolution; and ſhe hoped, by flattering my diſpoſition, to keep me from ſuicide, which was what ſhe imagined I hinted at; and, at the ſame time, ſhe knew it would bring my father to his ſenſes. "Dear "Lucy," ſays ſhe, "I was brought "up in France, and have contracted "friendſhips there; I long to ſee that "kingdom again, and we will all "three, for ſome years, leave this fatal country; but, as I cannot keep "you from your father's authority, "you ſhall fall ſick, and, ſeemingly, "die: we will make a ſumptuous funeral for you, and bury you apparently amongſt the family at Taunton. You ſhall, mean time, till "our embarkation, go to a diſtant tenant's of mine in Exeter, who will "never betray our ſecret; and, after

"you

" you are buried, I'll write ſuch a " letter to your father, as, perhaps, " may entirely alter the ſyſtem he at " preſent acts upon. My eſtate is " ſufficient for all our uſes, and you " and my daughter ſhall have an equal " claim to it with myſelf." I jump-ed at this propoſal; it flattered the gloomy, deſpairing condition, I was in; I hated Yorkſhire; I hated England; I almoſt—I could not help it—hated my obdurate father! What my aunt propoſed, as a ſcheme politically to over-reach my diſordered mind, I improved into a ſettled vow, never to ſee my father, or my native country again. Perhaps I had ſome principles, like revenge, then in my heart—yes—I confeſs I had—but your mother and father I thought of with great affection: I could have wiſhed the former had known the truth of my deſtination; but, at laſt, I reſolved ſhe ſhould not, leſt, from tenderneſs to me, ſhe might betray me to my father; I therefore deſired my aunt to write a letter to her of my death; and in it I incloſed my picture, as a preſent to her, which I had got drawn on purpoſe for you, and you have got it, Sir; and, if you value the original, as much as you have that copy, I ſhall be the happieſt woman living. In ſhort, I died—was buried—as had been concerted; my aunt wrote a terrible letter to my father upon it; and, without waiting an anſwer, we hired a veſſel for France, where we ſafely arrived, after a pretty turbulent paſſage. My aunt had ſo ſettled her affairs, that her ſteward remitted her the profits of her eſtate quarterly; and, it being large, the dear woman has kept up a grander equipage than ſhe did in Somerſetſhire. We have now been in this houſe near eight years, and, keeping little company, we have been happy in ourſelves, and have, by numerous good offices, contributed to the happineſs of others. Our needle-work and our books, and now and then a ride or a walk, have been our principal avocations, I mean that of my aunt and my Serena; for, as to myſelf, I have not enjoyed a moment's eaſe; your endearing form has ever been before my eyes; and the tortures of my ſoul, the perturbations of my heart, my departing, dying, bleeding heart; even thy pen or tongue could never be able to deſcribe! I have reſolutely hitherto refuſed to hear from, or ſend to my father, or England; and my dear aunt has humoured my diſpoſition ſo far, as never to mention one word of the intelligence ſhe has, at times, received. I muſt own, ſince your account of my poor father's repentance, ſo long ago, I burn to fling myſelf at his feet, to eaſe the tortures of his now altered mind; and, ſince I have recovered my dear Thompſon, Yorkſhire will be the only agreeable ſpot to me in the world. I long to ſee your dear father and mother alſo, and my poor Fidele, and to return my thanks to your Mr. and Mrs. Goodwill, and all the reſt of our friends, and to be happy once more amongſt them.

'My couſin and I had been to ſee a lady of the court of Verſailles, when I ſaw you come down the walk, and heard your well-known voice; and the ſurprize (for I immediately thought, with the vulgar, it muſt be an apparition) made me faint away, and the reſt that followed you are acquainted with. Mr. Sharpley has alſo occaſion to remember it,' continues my Louiſa, with a heavenly ſmile, 'for he loſt his heart the moment, he ſays, he ſaw my much-loved Serena; though I think, if I underſtand the language of their eyes, he has got as precious a pledge in return. When Mr. Sharpley was perſuaded to ſtay that night, we endeavoured to get your name, if haply you wore fleſh and blood about you; and his account of your adventures confirmed me we had both been impoſed upon. I longed to know, if you were really as faithful to your loſt Louiſa, as it was ſaid you was; and, your reſolution never to converſe with the ſex rendering it impoſſible to ſee you under that character, I propoſed to my aunt and couſin the reſolution I had taken, to get into your ſervice as a page. This you are ſenſible I did, through the good offices of Mr. Sharpley; and I faithfully ſerved you, under the name of Eſtampe; but, Mr. Thompſon, if I loved you before with an intenſeneſs of affection, how muſt your Louiſa love you now! improved

'proved in knowledge! improved in 'goodneſs! and ſo conſtant to your 'firſt affection, as often whilſt I at- 'tended you, made me lift up my 'eyes, in thanks and praiſes to the 'Almighty, for forming ſo excellent 'a copy of his own perfections here 'below!—In defence of this dear man,' ſays Louiſa, turning to the two ladies and Mr. Sharpley, 'I did a thing be- 'yond the uſual daring of my ſex, and 'fired a piſtol, and killed a man; but 'there can be no wonder in all that, 'ſeeing, if he had died, I ſhould ſoon 'have followed him!—Come, Mr. 'Thompſon, let us haſte to England '—my father can no longer deny his 'conſent—he repents—you are rich, 'and we cannot live without each 'other, and I will ſtudy to be grate- 'ful to you for all your conſtancy, by 'ordering every future action of my 'exiſtence, ſo as to pleaſe—*my life, my lord, my huſband.*'

Thus the melodious, angelick voice, ceaſed the charmingly eloquent and ſenſible narration; and, for ſome time, buried, abſorbed in admiration, I could not utter one ſyllable, but fondly gazed, and devoured all her world of perfections with my eyes. At length I broke out into ſuch raptures, as well- nigh, with mere over-ſtraining na- ture, had robbed me of life. 'Lovely 'dear Louiſa! heavenly maid! it is 'impoſſible for me to expreſs what I 'feel of thy matchleſs, unprecedented 'virtues! Had I the tuneful tongue, 'the gentle lyre of a Catullus, the 'Horatian lute, the numbers of the 'melting Waller, the prevailing art 'of Sedley, I could then ſcarce do thy 'merits adequate juſtice! Oh!—

"For thee each gladſome morn ſhall wake;
"Grey e'en, replete with bliſs, retire;
"My Lucy I will ne'er forſake,
"But ſtill, to falt'ring age, admire.

"Ever the ſame, no diſcord ſhall decreaſe
"Our ſettled happineſs, celeſtial peace.
"Politeneſs ſmooth, and decency, ſhall
"ſway
"Our thoughts, our acts, and reaſon's
"forceful ray."

'Yes, we will return to the arms of 'our friends, and the embraces of our 'parents! I burn, I ſigh, I die, till I 'have thee mine for ever!'

Mr. Sharpley, her aunt, and Serena, were quite delighted with her manner of relating her adventures; and all, in their turn, thanked her in the politeſt and wittieſt terms for the compliments ſhe had beſtowed upon them. 'And, 'is it true,' ſays Sharpley, 'that I 'have got my Serena's heart?—Bliſ- 'ful diſcovery!—Is it true, my angel?' —'Nay, aſk my couſin,' replied that amiable lady; 'my couſin ſays ſo, and 'ſhe never tells an untruth.' He got up, embraced her firſt, and then her mother; and never, ſure, were a happier ſet of people ſeen together.

CHAP. XXVII.

THEY SETTLE THEIR AFFAIRS IN FRANCE—MADAM RICH DISPOSES OF HER HOUSE AND GOODS—THEY STAY SOME TIME IN PARIS—MEET WITH AN OBJECT OF CHARITY—THOMPSON RELIEVES HIM, NOTWITHSTANDING A FORMER PIECE OF ILL USAGE—THEY TAKE LEAVE OF THEIR FRIENDS—SET OUT WITH PASSPORTS FOR FLANDERS—ARRIVE AT WILLIAMSTADT—EMBARK FOR ENGLAND—LAND AT HARWICH.

MR. Sharpley and myſelf ſoon ſettled what affairs we had to tranſact at Paris; and, having now gratified our curioſity with the ſight of every thing worth viewing, we only waited till Madam Rich had diſcharged her ſervants, except the Engliſh ones ſhe brought over with her, and diſpoſed of the houſe ſhe had bought at St. Clou, and the furniture, which was very ſuperb; which ſhe ſoon did, to great advantage, Mynheer Van Straaten, the Dutch reſident, making a purchaſe of the whole. My Louiſa had lived ſo recluſe, ſince her being in France, that ſhe had not ſeen many of the remarkable publick places, build- ings, and palaces; ſo that we deter- mined to take lodgings at Paris for a fortnight, and do all we could, and dedicate the whole time for the enter- tainment of the ladies. One day, when we were at the Hotel Dieu, a re- covered patient, amongſt others, at- tended to ſhew us the ſeveral wards and conveniences of that noble charity; and I ſoon found, by his accent, that he was an Engliſhman; and, looking

ſtedfaſtly upon him, methought I alſo recollected his features. I aſked him where he was born in England. He ſaid in London, and that his name was Deacon. 'I think I have heard of a 'merchant of that name.'—'I had a 'brother a merchant, Sir,' he replied, 'and I was his unfortunate ſucceſſor 'in the buſineſs.' I found now it was really poor Mr. Deacon's brother, who had been the cauſe of my arreſt and impriſonment in the Fleet ſo many years before; but appeared to be in ſuch miſerable circumſtances, that I was reſolved I would not mortify him, by making myſelf known; for nothing can be greater cruelty, than to inſult over the miſeries, even of an enemy: I was, inſtead thereof, really concerned, and grieved to the higheſt degree; and all my old regard for his worthy brother returned freſh into my mind. I was curious to know how he came in an enemy's country, and what had reduced him to ſuch a forlorn ſituation. He informed me that he had ſuffered great loſſes in trade, before the war broke out; and, at laſt, was obliged to fly to France, with a very ſmall ſum in his pocket, to avoid the miſeries of a gaol in his native country; that he lived ſome time as a clerk to a merchant at Boulogne, but, his maſter failing, he could find no farther buſineſs in his own way, after ſpending the little money he had in ſearch of it; and mere want induced him to inliſt as a common ſoldier, in the regiment of Picardy; that, in a ſmart engagement between the French and the Allies, he had the misfortune to have two of his fingers ſhot off, and was diſcharged as unfit for ſervice; that he ſtrolled to Paris, begging moſt part of the way, and was there taken ill in the ſtreet of an ague and fever, and ſent to the hoſpital by the pariſh where he was found; and hoped ſoon to be able to ſhift for himſelf, and get over to England, if he could get money to pay his paſſage, where he did not doubt of meeting with friends to ſerve him; and, as he was a fugitive, of getting clear of his debts, by an act of inſolvency, which he heard had lately paſſed. My heart was moved at his dreadful relation, and, calling him aſide, I told him I was his countryman, and could not bear to ſee him in ſo much diſtreſs, and begged he would ſuffer me to make him a ſmall preſent; on which I ſlipped twenty *louis d'ors* into his hand; and he was ſo overcome at the ſight of it, that he was ready to drop down before me; his face turned pale as death, and his knees tottered under him. Mr. Sharpley had an eye upon me; and, finding what I was about, approached, and told me he hoped I would let him advance his mite to the relief of a countryman under misfortunes, and made him accept of ten *louis d'ors* more; adding, 'If it had not been for you, my 'dear friend, I ſhould have made but a 'bad figure not long ago myſelf: we 'are all ſubject to the unavoidable ills 'of life, and ſhould conſider our fellow-'creatures under ſuch calamities, as 'types of what the beſt of us may one 'day be.' Madam Rich and the ladies would know the buſineſs we were about, and all three made him handſome preſents; upon which his joy flaſhed from his very eyes, and dwelt, in involuntary ſmiles, on his countenance.

Soon after we took leave of Monſieur Du Pleſſis and his family, Monſieur Baſſompiere, Count Garonne, and all our friends in Paris, who loaded us with civilities; and, having obtained the proper paſſports, which we had a great deal of difficulty to do, we ſet out for Flanders, by the rout of Cambray, where, after ſtaying ſome time, as we did indeed in every remarkable place, for the eaſe, and, at the ſame time, for the entertainment of our fair fellow-travellers, having obtained a *ſafe conduct* for any place where we met with the troops of France, we arrived at Antwerp; from whence, in a day and an half, we came to Williamſtadt, where we deſigned to embark for England. My Louiſa, Serena, and the old lady, preſerved their healths and ſpirits ſurprizingly well, during this long and fatiguing progreſs, notwithſtanding, at many places in Flanders, the accommodations are ſo mean, that the loweſt wretch in England would grumble to be forced to take up with them: and this may be obſerved, for the honour of our country, that in no part of the world you meet with ſuch fare, and ſuch treatment, as in the inns upon the roads in England. France and Holland come neareſt to the ſame ſtandard; but, as to the Spaniards, Italians,

Italians, Germans, and all other people in Europe, the uſage amongſt them is coarſe, but tricking; their accommodations wretched, and their fare execrable. I was now quite gay, pleaſed, and chearful; all the world appeared to me in an amiable light; I had no reſentment in my breaſt; mankind were forgiven by me, for all their oddities and their follies, which now ſeemed rather virtues than crimes. Alas! how misfortune ſours a man to the reliſh of life; the leaſt thing ſaid or done, that contradicts his humour or particular fancy, is conſtrued into a fault.—Tired with living, fretted, and continually vexed by his uneaſy thoughts, or condition, he looks upon all men as his enemies, and ſees abſurdities in their conduct, which, at another time, would only ſeem peccadilloes, and be eaſily looked over.

We were the moſt at a loſs to preſerve the decorums, in this country, due to the ſex; but with the aſſiſtance of the officers of both the French and Allies, we did tolerably well, and could generally provide one bed for the three ladies, in a country harraſſed by the marches and countermarches of, and the numerous devaſtations cauſed by two potent armies; and all the praiſe imaginable is due from me to the military gentlemen on both ſides, who freely granted us eſcorts, where they thought it would contribute to our eaſe and ſafety, from poſt to poſt. 'Ye 'powers! did I ever think, could I 'have the leaſt idea, of enjoying thus 'the ſociety, without fear or inter-'ruption, of my angelick Louiſa, now 'truly mine, ſince dead to all the 'world beſide;' and if little tender fears, now and then, intruded themſelves, for her ſafety and protection, it ſprang from no ſuch low principle as jealouſy, for that paſſion was quite loſt in the confidence I repoſed in the lovely creature: in ſhort, we were ſuch a ſet of people as nothing now could poſſibly diſturb; we were ſecure of our freight, and myſelf and Sharpley acted as if we had the wealth of both Indies in our poſſeſſion. The elevation of ſentiment our ſoft companions inſpired, gave all our actions a noble and generous caſt; we were kind, even to a fault, to our ſervants, and beſtowed largeſſes upon the ſoldiers, with a princely magnificence, particularly to thoſe who every day arrived at Williamſtadt from England, yet unacquainted with the hardſhips and fatigues of the war.

We hired a veſſel for ourſelves, but, Captain Sharpley ſoon after meeting with the captain of a man of war of twenty guns, an old acquaintance, he got leave of the commodore to take us on board, and ſtand over to Harwich; which he did, and we ſafely landed at that place, in thirty-ſix hours after we weighed from Holland, making Captain Tripſack, our commander, a very handſome preſent for his good-nature and politeneſs, and beſtowing a conſiderable benefaction upon his brave and undaunted ſeamen.

CHAP. XXVIII.

IS ACCOSTED BY AN ACQUAINTANCE—MAKES HIM AN HANDSOME PRESENT—THEY SET OUT FOR LONDON—ARE KNOWN AT COLCHESTER—BY WHOM DISCOVERED—THEY ARRIVE IN LONDON—SEND FOR MR. PRIG—TENDER SCENE BETWEEN THOMPSON AND MISS RICH.

WE had juſt ſettled ourſelves, and were going to dinner at the beſt inn in the town, when word was brought me, that a gentleman, who had ſeen us come in, deſired to ſpeak to me; upon which I begged the favour of the meſſenger to deſire him to walk in;—he came; and at his firſt entrance I really did not at all remember him, but he no ſooner eſſayed to paſs the uſual compliments upon me, than I, ſhaking his hand with a good deal of heartineſs, ſaid, 'What—Mr. Briſk! 'my old friend—how could you know 'a man ſo much altered ſince you ſaw 'him in the Fleet, both in habit and 'perſon?'—'Sir,' he replied, 'it was 'a long time before I could recollect 'you; but, at laſt, I did make ſhift 'to remember Mr. Thompſon, my 'maſter's friend, whom I left but 'yeſterday; and he telling me, you 'was every day expected from France, 'it added to my memory's ability.' I aſked him, what brought him down to Harwich; he told me, that, by his maſter's recommendation, he was appointed clerk to the Britiſh commiſſary

in Flanders, and was going to Helvoetſluys in the pacquet from Harwich, having tranſacted firſt ſome buſineſs for Mr. Prig at Colcheſter. I was glad to ſee this young gentleman, to whom I had forgot to be grateful for his former ready and willing attendance under my misfortune; and after ſtaying him to dinner, and entertaining him with agreeable ſatisfaction, I took him aſide, and told him, that I was ſorry I had not thought of my obligations to him before I left England; but I hoped he would excuſe me, and that it was not too late to ſhew him my gratitude; upon which I put a bank-note for an hundred pounds into his hands. He bluſhed, and would have refuſed the favour; but I inſiſted on his acceptance of it, and told him, that, when he came again to England, I would endeavour to ſettle him in his old profeſſion, in which, I was ſure, from the example of Mr. Prig, he would behave ſo as to become a bleſſing, and not a curſe to the world, as too many attornies were. He was all rapture at my kindneſs, and returned me a million of thanks; but the pacquet being ready to ſail, I had not an opportunity of farther converſation, and he took his leave.

The next day we hired a coach and a ſet of horſes, and ſet out full of joy for London. We were now upon Engliſh ground, and haſtening to the embraces of our friends, who I did not doubt were impatient to ſee me, and had for a long time expected my arrival; though, as to Captain Sharpley and the ladies, they could have no idea of the arrival of ſuch perſons. Oh! what floods of rapturous delight overſpread our boſoms, the nearer and nearer we approached the place of our nativities, or the ſcenes that were to terminate our uncommon adventures, in ſo gladſome, ſo happy an union, as we expected ſoon to experience! At Colcheſter, when we had juſt alighted in the inn yard, I was ſeized by the arms of a gentleman in boots, who hugged me ſo cloſely, ſo ſwiftly, and ſo eagerly, that I had not time to diſcover who he was, till I heard him repeat, every now and then, 'My dear 'maſter—arrived at laſt—my friend—'my ſon, my every thing that is va'luable!' and then, by the expreſſion and the voice, I knew it to be my honeſt faithful Truman. I returned his careſſes, with an enlivening fervour, and an emotion of heart, that was inexpreſſibly touching to me—we ſhed tears; and my company ſoon underſtood, by hearing me repeat, 'Dear Truman!' over and over, that he was that worthy domeſtick they had heard me ſo often celebrate the praiſes of. We retired into a room, and I preſented him to Sharpley and the ladies, who careſſed him without meaſure: when he approached my Louiſa, he ſtarted back ſome paces, and, lifting up his hands and eyes, turned towards me, and ſaid, 'Ah, 'dear Sir, what do I ſee! you are either 'very happy, or my fancy has cheated 'me with an illuſion; ſure, it is Miſs 'Rich, whom I have ſo often ſeen in 'Yorkſhire, ariſen from the dead, and 'whom you have ſo ſorely, and for ſo 'many years, ſo juſtly lamented.'—'Yes,' the dear maid replied, 'I can't 'keep ſo good a friend to Mr. Thomp'ſon in the pain of ſuſpenſe: I am 'that perſon, and have as ſincerely 'lamented your maſter, who I thought 'was loſt for ever.' Truman fell on his knees, and kiſſed her hand, again and again, and was ſo tranſported, that for ſome time he could only utter ſuch diſjointed ſentences, as the fulneſs of his joy would permit. He danced, he ſung, and practiſed over ſo many different movements of paſſion, that I feared it would turn his brain. When ſomewhat calmer, he, on my enquiry, told me, Mr. Goodwill and his ſpouſe, Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miſs Sukey, were in town, and that he left them at Mr. Diaper's, where his ſon alſo was, in earneſt expectation of my arrival; that, at their deſire, and from his own impatience to ſee me, he had undertaken to croſs in the pacquet to Holland, and, having obtained a proper paſſport, to wait upon me at Paris, for which purpoſe he had got as far as Colcheſter on his way, when he had the good fortune to meet us in ſo ſurprizing and unexpected a manner. 'Your father, Sir,' added he, 'has been in town twice ſince your 'laſt letters; but is at preſent gone 'down again to Yorkſhire, where he 'hopes ſoon to ſee you.' He did not remember any thing of Sharpley, till he told him who he was, at which he embraced him feelingly, and congratulated him on his ſafe arrival in England, telling

ing him, his father was very well, with the whole family: 'But, Sir,' he continued, 'is my dear lady here to be 'discovered immediately? If I might 'advise, I would perſuade her to be 'diſguiſed, that ſhe may ſee Sir Walter, without his knowing her, and, 'which I am ſure he will be ready to 'do, he may give her to your arms 'himſelf, without knowing he beſtows his daughter upon you, whoſe 'loſs, and the injuries he has cauſed 'to you, he ſtill laments in the moſt 'affecting manner.' We liſtened with pleaſure to his propoſals, and reſolved to put his ſcheme in execution, and to keep her revival to life a ſecret to every one, till our marriage was performed; and, by Madam Rich's deſire, I would keep him no longer, but ſent him up to town, with a commiſſion to hire a ready furniſhed houſe for the ladies in the moſt genteel part of the town, till I had ſettled my affairs in London, and could attend them into Yorkſhire. We now, on that account, to give him proper time, ſtaid ſome days at Colcheſter; and, in the rout to London, employed as much time as we could, ſo that it was near a week before we entered into that (to me, well-known) metropolis, which we did in the evening; and Truman waiting, according to a letter of advice I ſent him, at the White Hart Tavern in Holborn, we immediately took another coach, and conveyed our fair and dear companions to an houſe in Red Lion Square, which we found Truman had made choice of with a great deal of judgment; every thing about it being in the moſt polite and elegant taſte.

The next day, with Sharpley, I went to the Temple Exchange Coffee-houſe, dreſſed in the richeſt manner, and, going into a room above ſtairs, ſent the waiter away to Mr. Prig's chambers, to acquaint him, that two gentlemen deſired to ſpeak with him. Prig I found was very particular in enquiring after our appearance, &c. no doubt, ſuſpecting it was me, and ſoon after arrived; I got up and ſtood at the window, with my back towards the door, have given Sharpley a letter for him, as from me, and proper inſtructions how to behave. When he came in, Mr. Sharpley aſked him if his name was Prig; to which, having anſwered in the affirmative, he told him, he had ſeen a gentleman in France, one Mr. Thompſon, who had deſired him to bring him that letter, and to drink a glaſs of wine with him. 'Thompſon, 'Sir,' ſays he; 'you honour me, and 'oblige me!—How does that dear 'friend do whom we have expected 'every day in England?'—'I left 'him, Sir,' replies Sharpley, 'in a 'very bad ſtate of health; but—' 'Good God,' the other interrupted with a ſigh, 'is he at Paris, Sir?'—'He was there, Sir, when I was there.' —'I'll go over in the pacquet and ſee 'my valued friend, let what will be 'the conſequence.' He ſpoke this ſo touchingly, that I could refrain no longer; and, turning round, cried, 'No, my dear Sir, you ſhall have no 'ſuch fatiguing journey; behold your 'Thompſon here, and more yours than 'ever!' He jumped from his ſeat, and, after gazing wiſhfully upon me, ran into my arms, and almoſt devoured me with embraces; which I returned as cordially, and it was ſome time before we were able to ſpeak: it was all madneſs of extaſy; and Sharpley was forced merrily to interpoſe, to bring us to the level of rational creatures. I then let him know who that gentleman was, and he was quite overjoyed to ſee him; and the relation of our adventures gave him freſh and added ſatisfaction. 'Well, gentlemen,' ſays he, 'thank Providence you are return-'ed ſafe and happy, which will glad 'the hearts of all your friends, as 'much as it does mine. Your Mr. 'Diaper, and all the reſt that are in 'London, long as much to ſee you as 'they ever did for any thing in the 'world; my friend, and Mr. Good-'will, have ſtaid in London a conſi-'derable ſpace of time on purpoſe: but 'what do you think? Prim and his 'family are come to England, and I 'am juſt now preparing the title-deeds 'of an eſtate he has purchaſed near 'Cheſhunt in Hertfordſhire.' This more and more increaſed my ſatisfaction, already riſen to a great height; and I could not help, though I had reſolved to the contrary, to impart to Prig the ſecret of my having found my long-loſt Louiſa; at which he was all wonder and aſtoniſhment, and exclaimed on the goodneſs of Providence, and the ſurprizing ways it every day takes to bleſs mankind.

Prig

Prig was juſt the ſame man as when I left him, and was ſtill unmarried; but by the great and extraordinary favours beſtowed on him by Mr. Goodwill and Mr. Bellair, and the recommendations of Mr. Diaper and my father, had ſuch a flow of ſucceſs in his profeſſion, that he was already ſet above the world, and had acquired a genteel fortune.

I begged him not to give the leaſt hint to our other friends of my arrival, becauſe I intended to go down to Mr. Diaper's, and ſurprize them agreeably by my preſence; and that the recovery of Louiſa might be a ſecret to every body but himſelf: we then took him with us to ſup with the three ladies, and he was ſtruck with admiration at the charms of my Louiſa and her converſation, and repeated, as he went away, ſeveral times to me, 'She is a 'a moſt lovely creature!—I never ſaw 'ſuch a beauty before!'

Mr. Sharpley and I had been in the city with Prig, and I had bought a rich diamond ſolitaire, and he had purchaſed a magnificent pair of ear-rings, as preſents for our two miſtreſſes, and ſome trinkets for the old lady, and had hired a coach and chariot of a proper perſon, to attend them during their ſtay in London: after Prig was gone, we each of us preſented our jewels, and I had the happineſs to put mine round the delicate neck of my angel, who was quite ſtruck with the action, and ſaid, 'You 'are very gallant, my dear Mr. 'Thompſon, and ſtudy ſo many ways 'to oblige me, that I can't expreſs the 'tender ſentiments that croud into my 'mind towards you.'—'Ah! lovely 'maid,' I replied, 'can I do too 'much, in the whole future courſe of 'my life, to merit the regards of the 'dear creature, who has ſuffered ſo 'much on my account, and is ſuch a 'miracle of beauty, truth, and con-'ſtancy?' Serena received her preſent with joy, and the old lady took it ſo well that we remembered her in theſe trifles, that ſhe was in an extreme good-humour upon it, and told Sharpley, that ſhe would take care and make him ſuch ſatisfaction, that, on his marriage, beſide her daughter's fortune, ſhe would give him an eſtate, that ſhould equal him with the beſt gentleman in the county of York. Sharpley and Serena both threw their arms about her neck, and embraced this kind mother; and we were ſo tranſported with each other's company, that it was very late before we left them to retire to a lodging Truman had provided for us in the neighbourhood. The next day, I ordered Truman to let me have bank-bills to the value of a thouſand pounds, one of which I turned into guineas, and putting all together into a rich purſe, which I had purchaſed on purpoſe for the occaſion, I waited on the ladies, and, taking my Louiſa into her cloſet, I began thus, 'My lovely creature! 'I now hope you look upon yourſelf as 'mine, and that you ought to ſhare 'with me that fortune Providence has 'permitted me to gain, and which, if 'Sir Walter had it in his power to 'deny his conſent to our union, or 'ſhould deprive us of his favour, 'is ſufficient to make us happy! I 'can't bear you ſhould be longer 'obliged to Madam Rich, for what 'you may have in your own perſon, 'and really do poſſeſs. Take this purſe, 'and it's contents, which will ſuffice 'for the remainder of your expences 'in your maiden ſtate, and provide 'yourſelf with every thing you ſhall 'have an uſe or fancy for, before we 'ſet out for Yorkſhire.' The dear angel looked at me with a world of tenderneſs, whilſt I was ſpeaking, and then broke forth into the following ſpeech!—'My dear Thompſon, I ac-'cept your generous preſent, in truſt 'for your uſe, and hope I ſhall ma-'nage this with the ſame prudence I 'ſhall always ſtudy to behave with in 'your affairs. I do always look on 'myſelf as yours, and only yours; for 'my father has, I think, greatly for-'feited his authority over me by his 'uſage: but ſtill let us practiſe all the 'duty due to parents, and then if he 'refuſes his conſent, or is angry when 'he diſcovers his daughter, under the 'character of your wife, why let him 'diſpoſe of the dirty acres as he 'pleaſes; I have ſtock of affection 'ſufficient I hope to compenſate for 'their loſs to you; but I look for 'happier things, and believe he will 'now be proud of his ſon-in-law! 'To ſay I am ſurprized at your pre-'ſent, would be gloſſing too much the 'ſentiments of my mind; for, know-'ing my dear Thompſon, I know him 'capable of every thing good, and

'kind,

'kind, and generous; but how—which way—ſhall I, can I, reward his goodneſs to his Louiſa?'—'Your being ſenſible only, my ſweeteſt Louiſa, of my pains, my ſufferings—your approving my paſſion, your conſenting to bleſs me with that world of charms—to give me that ſoft hand—to be mine for ever—is more than a recompence for ages of torture.—And, ah! for ever, ſhall the dear condeſcending gentleneſs be the guide, the motive to all my actions. I will haſte, love, and finiſh my affairs in town, and prepare to launch into an ocean of bliſs, which can have no alloy.'

CHAP. XXIX.

HE GOES DOWN TO MR. DIAPER'S—JOY ON SEEING HIM—CARRIES THEM TO SEE HIS LOUISA—RECEIVES LETTERS FROM MR. SARIS—GENEROSITY OF THAT GENTLEMAN—MR. GOODWILL'S EXCESSIVE KINDNESS—VISITS MR. PRIM—HE FINISHES THE SETTLEMENT OF HIS AFFAIRS—THEY SET OUT FOR YORKSHIRE.

WHEN a week more had paſſed, in which we were taken up in viſiting all the curioſities in the city and neighbourhood of London, to which our Louiſa and her couſin Serena were as yet ſtrangers, never having been in that metropolis before; I could not farther reſtrain the impatience I was agitated with to ſee my dear friend, and the reſt of the amiable ſociety, who, we underſtood by Prig, were ſtill at my old maſter's in the country; and, accordingly, that gentleman, Captain Sharpley, and Truman, accompanied me there. As we approached the well-known ſpot, it recalled to my memory a thouſand former ſcenes of happineſs and miſery that had occurred to me; but all this ſerved now only to increaſe my preſent ſatisfaction, which was unbounded. We arrived; and I was no ſooner entered the room where they were at dinner, than I was univerſally known at firſt ſight, and they had well-nigh, in their hurry of riſing to congratulate my appearance, overturned the table they were ſitting at. My maſter, Mr. Goodwill, and Mr. Bellair, were never tired of ſtraining me in their arms; the ladies gazed upon me with the utmoſt fondneſs, and wept plentifully with mere joy. I returned their careſſes with intereſt, and ſhed a flood of tears, which my full heart could not reſtrain: but, as to my friend and myſelf, it was all delight and tranſport that ſeized us, and we were near a quarter of an hour in one another's embraces, ſaying all the tender and affectionate things that inſpired our boſoms. When we were ſomewhat calmer, our diſcourſe, however, was equally touching, and we were never tired of making fond enquiries into each other's health and welfare, and the accidents that had befallen us. They knew moſt part of what had happened to me from Mr. Diaper; but, as to what had paſſed ſince our ſailing from the Cape of Good Hope, I was obliged to recount it to them, which I did in as ſuccinct a manner as poſſible; and, notwithſtanding my reſolution to the contrary, I could not help letting them into the miracle of my recovering my Louiſa, knowing it concerned us only to keep it a ſecret from Sir Walter; at which eyes and hands were lifted up in wondering admiration at the goodneſs of Heaven! and then they all burſt out into freſh congratulations to me on my inexpreſſible happineſs, and propoſed the next day to pay a viſit to the ladies our fellow-adventurers. Captain Sharpley, whoſe father was known to them intimately, was received with the utmoſt politeneſs, and every one at firſt ſight entertained a friendſhip for him, particularly my dear Diaper; and we three happy lovers exulted together upon the bliſsful ſituation we were at preſent witneſſes to in each other. We went to town the ſame day to prepare my Louiſa, Madam Rich, and Serena, for the intended viſit, that was to be paid to them on the morrow; and I entreated my deareſt maid to dreſs herſelf in the richeſt manner ſhe could; which ſhe, ſmiling, promiſed to comply with. She aſked me, if I had heard any thing more of her papa: I told her, he was well as ever, but ſtill as much grieved at what had happened in our affairs, and for her loſs; that the ſquire, as Mrs. Goodwill had informed me, was ſtill at his own ſeat at Doncaſter; and, notwithſtanding all the arts he could

uſe,

uſe, had never been able to mollify his uncle, who had been informed of his villainies, by one of the fellows that attended him, when I was laſt uſed ſo ill by him; and, again, his meanneſs and baſeneſs in perſuading him that he had killed me, by which report he had loſt his Louiſa, had more and more exaſperated him againſt him: he had been informed, by the very perſon who wrote me the letter of caution when I was at my father's, of my life's having been attacked by his procurement, near his own houſe. He had pardoned that fellow for his honeſty, but had by continual proſecutions driven the reſt out of the county, as a ſacrifice for the injuries I had received from him; and that he was at preſent in ſuch a temper, that it was believed, if no art at all were uſed, he would readily, at the unexpected ſight of us, conſent to our marriage. All this gave my Louiſa new ſpirits, and ſhe cried, 'Oh! how I long to ſoothe 'the pains of this cruel, yet repentant 'father!' Our viſitors arrived the next day, and we introduced them to Madam Rich, who entertained them whilſt Sharpley and myſelf went to bring in our adorable miſtreſſes. I never was ſurprized at any thing before, ſo much as at the fine and lovely figure my Louiſa made; her dreſs was magnificent to the laſt degree, and ſhe was all over apparently a climax of ſtars that blazed in the jewels that adorned her: round her neck hung the ſolitaire I had preſented to her, and at a locket my picture in miniature, which I had a ſat on purpoſe to oblige her, in the trembling panting boſom. We brought them into the apartment, and all the ſenſes the company had were now reduced to one, in viewing our two lovely, delightful fair-ones!

Mr. Goodwill, Mr. Bellair, Mr. Diaper, Mr. Prig, and all the ladies in general, ſtruck with aſtoniſhment at her numerous graces, advanced to meet her, and ſaluted her as a perſon of whom they had received the higheſt ſentiments of regard and affection, and expreſſed after ſome time by their actions and ſpeech, how much they were pleaſed with her converſation. Serena had her ſhare alſo in the praiſes that were beſtowed, and thoſe two and Miſs Bellair immediately commenced a friendſhip for each other: young Mr. Diaper, who was the only one preſent ſhe had ſeen before, was particularly taken notice of by her, and he whiſpered me, that he thought her infinitely improved, and ſtill more wiſe and more lovely. In ſhort, before they parted, they almoſt adored her; and Mrs. Diaper, hugging me to her, ſaid, 'Joey, I thought you would be happy 'at laſt; and ſee, Providence has bleſſed both you and my ſon with it's 'choiceſt gifts, to whom I conſtantly 'return unfeigned thanks for it's 'goodneſs to you, and for the bleſſings 'it thereby provides for your fathers 'and mothers, and your friends.'—'And what,' added her ſpouſe, 'is a 'prodigious increaſe to all this joy is, 'what few perſons can ſay; they have 'not only been returned ſafe themſelves 'to our arms, but find all their friends 'as ſafe and well, after eight years abſence, or more, as when we had all 'the grief of parting with them: And 'thus, indeed, Providence has bleſſed 'us; and be it's goodneſs ever adored!'

After this firſt interview, they frequently waited upon each other, and Louiſa often went to Mr. Diaper's with her aunt and couſin, and to the houſes of Mr. Bellair and Mr. Goodwill in town, who were ſo enamoured of our angelick family, that they were never eaſy out of their company. Mr. Sharpley was generally for the latter part of our ſtay in London, for I wrote, when I firſt arrived, to my dear father and mother, that I would be down in a month or ſix weeks at fartheſt, their ſquire and conductor: as to myſelf and Truman, with the aſſiſtance of Prig, we were buſy in ſettling my concerns, and putting my money into the funds, which I looked upon as my duty till I could better employ it; for nothing can become a true Engliſhman more than to aſſiſt the government, which is at preſent ſupported againſt it's enemies attacks, as much or more by the influence of the monied people, to whom the preſent eſtabliſhment is a ſecurity for their fortunes, as by the ſhare they have in the hearts of the whole kingdom, who muſt own the bleſſings they derive from their mild and merciful ſway. My merchandize, as well as that of Mr. Saris, moſt of the produce of which Truman had paid to his order, and what belonged to himſelf had been

turned

turned into cash by Truman, except such things as I reserved for my Louisa's use, and for presents to my father, mother, and other friends, to whom also Mr. Diaper had been pretty profuse of the curiosities of the eastern world. About this time I received a letter from our friend Saris, Truman having received several before I came over, which was to this effect, in answer to one from me—

'MY DEAREST FRIEND,

'MY trouble was excessive when I 'understood by Truman's last, 'that you had been taken in your passage, and was a prisoner in France; 'but, thank God, I now have received one from your own hands, that 'testifies to me, to my infinite satisfaction, that you are as happy, after 'a series of uncommon events in your 'behalf, as love, wealth, and your 'native country, can make you! I rejoice greatly at this turn of kind Providence in your favour, and beg to 'hear from you every now and then, 'but particularly when you have made 'the adorable Louisa your own. As 'to poor Saris, he never intends to 'move from this spot, where his whole 'time is spent in the care of a dear 'son, and the friendship of Sir Thomas, whom you have often heard 'me mention; yet all the while I am 'devoured by a slow and deadly melancholy for my unhappy fate in the 'loss of my dear wife, which nothing 'can ease but the obliterating arms of 'death, to which I shall give myself 'no concern, let my descent be ever 'so soon. Truman has remitted me, 'in your absence, all I could demand 'save about 300l. which I beg that 'faithful creature would accept of as 'a token of my gratitude for the many 'services he has done me, and for 'which I have inclosed a discharge: 'may Heaven bless you, my worthy 'dear Thompson, in all your good 'undertakings! and may you reap 'those felicities in this world, which 'were denied to *your truly affectionate 'and faithful friend, and obliged 'humble servant,*

'WILLIAM SARIS.'

'CORK, JULY—.'

I was pleased to hear of our friend's welfare, and, with Truman, struck with this instance of the generosity of his temper: with this increase, he had a fortune of near 4000l. which put that faithful friend and servant in the state he could never have flattered himself with obtaining, had he staid in England, and not gone abroad with me. We both of us wrote answers to his kind letters, and promised to preserve our correspondence with him that way, as often as we had an opportunity.

The last thing I had now remaining to settle was my account with Mr. or rather Mrs. Goodwill, who had generously ventured two thousand pounds with me when I went to the Indies; but, after all I could urge, neither he nor she would accept of one farthing more than the original sum. I was so acquainted with their kindness and affection for me, that I was not surprized so much as I otherwise should have been, and still insisted there was twelve thousand pounds due to them, whenever they pleased to call for it. 'If 'so,' replies Mr. Goodwill, 'we will 'make you our steward, to employ it 'for the good of mankind, which no-'body understands better how to do.' He carried me to his uncle, and most of the directors, to return thanks for their goodness to me; and to the former I made some presents of value that I had sent home, which he received at my hands with great good-nature and pleasure. And now all being ready for going into my native county, which I longed heartily to see, I begged Prig and Sharpley to accompany me to pay a visit to Prim, who was gone from London to his new seat in Hertfordshire; and accordingly we set out, and got there about dinner-time. As, by my friend's account, he every day expected to see me, he was not much startled, but received me with that open and sincere friendship that ever had distinguished his actions. His lady was but in a bad state of health, or he would have accompanied us into Yorkshire, where all the rest of my friends had promised to repair. He gave me a detail of what had happened to him since we met at sea, and informed me that his old tyrant, Captain Surly, with his nephew, were, going on shore at

an iſland, (one of the Ladrones) murdered by the inhabitants, in revenge for having ſeized one of the natives, a female, and carried her on board his ſhip to gratify his brutal luſt. This account he received from the ſupercargo, who took his part when the captain beat him ſo violently in his cabbin. He rejoiced without meaſure at my having recovered my Louiſa, and we parted, after his making a reſolution to viſit me in Yorkſhire as ſoon as his wife's illneſs would permit him.

All things ready, Mr. Goodwill and his lady, and Mr. Diaper and his lady, in Mr. Goodwill's coach and ſix; Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, Miſs Sukey, and my dear Diaper, in Mr. Bellair's coach; and Madam Rich, Serena, my Louiſa, and Sharpley, in a coach Mrs. Rich had bought in London, with a ſplendid retinue of ſervants, ſet out for Yorkſhire. Myſelf, Mr. Prig, and Mr. Truman, rode on horſeback, and generally kept a mile before the coaches, to provide refreſhments, quarters, and accommodations, which was our department. Never was a ſet of happier people! Content ſat on every face, and joy unbounded diſtended every breaſt with rapturous emotions! And, as to the three lovers, never were creatures ſo altered! no uneaſy pangs from abſence, or jealous ſuggeſtions of deſpairing frenzy, now aſſaulted our boſoms, and we experienced—

'Good after ill, and, after pain, delight:
'Alternate, like the ſcenes of day and night.'

CHAP. XXX.

ARRIVE AT MR. BELLAIR'S—ONLY THOMPSON AND SHARPLEY SET OUT FOR MR. THOMPSON'S WITH TRUMAN—THEY ARRIVE THERE—JOYOUS EMOTIONS OF HIS FATHER AND MOTHER—THEY WAIT ON MR. ARCHER AND MR. SHARPLEY—VISIT THEIR FRIENDS—RECEIVE A MESSAGE FROM SIR WALTER RICH—VISIT HIM—WHAT PASSES UPON IT.

WE arrived happily at Mr. Bellair's ſeat, where he inſiſted we ſhould repoſe ourſelves ſome days, and were entertained with his uſual genteel hoſpitality, and he contrived all the pleaſures he could to divert the ladies, and make their ſtay agreeable to them. It was here agreed amongſt us, that only myſelf, Sharpley, and Truman, ſhould proceed to my father's, as well to get proper quarters for ſo numerous a company, as to keep our arrival a greater ſecret from Sir Walter; and, accordingly, we ſet out, after recommending our lovely miſtreſſes to the care of my friend Diaper, who, at this ſhort ſeparation, could hardly withold the tears that ſtood ready to ſtart from their eyes, upon which Prig bantered them very ſmartly. We made ſuch expedition, that we ſoon arrived within ſight of the dear and well-known plains where firſt we drew our vital breath. 'Ye groves,' I cried, 'receive under your cooling ſhade once 'more your old inhabitants! Ye murmuring ſtreams, that *o'er the unnumber'd idle pebbles ſtray*, once more 'bring your bubbling notes to our 'liſtening ears! Ye reſponſive echoes, 'once more repeat, in imitative ſtrains, 'the name, the wondrous charms, of 'my Louiſa, that dwells upon my 'tongue! Ye conſcious bowers, to 'lovers ſighs and vows for ever ſacred, 'holy, once more to you we breathe 'the amorous tale of ſoft, endearing 'tranſports, now our own!'

Mr. Sharpley gave me the compliment of going firſt to my father's, where we arrived; and, giving our horſes to Truman, who ſtaid without, enquired of a ſervant, whoſe face I well remembered, if Mr. Thompſon was within. He looked earneſtly at me, and I could perceive by his not anſwering, and the viſible alteration of his countenance, that he knew me, which a little diſconcerted us; and, before we could ſtop him, he opened the parlour-door with eager haſte, and cried—'Oh, Sir!—Oh, Madam!—my 'young maſter is—come home!'—There needed no more.—My dear mother crying out, and running into the paſſage, which we had juſt traverſed as far as the door, would have fainted and fell, but that I caught her in my arms, repeating, 'Beſt and moſt-loved 'of mothers! behold, at laſt, your 'ſon, who never will leave you more, 'nor more will cauſe you tears!'—'And is it thee, my deareſt, deareſt 'Joey!' ſhe replied. 'How bleſſed! 'how happy am I!—But yet—how 'altered!—

'altered!—Sure it cannot—it muſt—
'it muſt be he!—I feel it here—my
'heart confeſſes him!' All this while I did not ſee my father; and as ſoon as my mother was ſomewhat calmed, though ſtill ſhe wildly gazed, ſhe led me into the parlour; and Sharpley, who had taken no notice, nor been taken notice of, followed me.—We found that excellent man juſt riſen, trembling, from his knees, where he had been pouring forth ejaculations of praiſe for this happineſs! He advanced towards me, the colour now going from, and now coming into his face alternately, and he could ſcarcely ſupport himſelf from falling, whilſt I ruſhed into his arms, and we both uttered the fondeſt, the moſt warm expreſſions of paternal affection—filial love and duty! Reaſon, at length, reſumed her empire over us, and our ſpirits more compoſed, Sharpley ſeizing my mother round the neck, and then kiſſing the hands of my father, ſaid, 'Sure, dear Sir—deareſt
'Madam—you have another ſon—
'that yet you have not acknowledged!' They ſtared wiſhfully on him, but were ſtill at a loſs to know him; till I cried—'Ah! can you forget your
'Sharpley, Sir?' They both roſe at this, and careſſed him in the kindeſt, tendereſt manner, which he returned with a becoming warmth. We then ſent a ſervant to relieve Truman, who was received by my father and mother as a valued friend. By this time all the neighbourhood were apprized by the ſervants of our arrival, the bells rung, and the farmers came in, to congratulate us. I hugged the honeſt people in my arms, and was tranſported to ſee them; and, as to Solfa, he had ſo much feeling upon the occaſion, that he could hardly ſpeak, whilſt Sharpley and I embraced this honeſt friend to our boyiſh years. My father, at my deſire, ſet open his doors, and gave all the pariſh a hearty welcome to the beſt of cheer; and the next day we went over to Mr. Sharpley's, who was ſo overcome with this providential recovery of his ſon—and in ſuch company—ſo happy in his love—that he dwelt for ever on the pleaſing topick, and never ceaſed embracing us; and Mr. Archer alſo, to whom I gave tidings of our other friend, was almoſt ready to die with joyous emotion. They accompanied us to ſee all our old friends and aſſociates of the neighbouring villages and hamlets, who thought themſelves happy in the notice we took of them; and I begged my father, in my name and young Mr. Sharpley's, to give five hundred pounds in charities to the diſtreſſed poor, and the induſtrious labourers, of his pariſh, which raiſed their love and veneration of me to a height like adoration. I was congratulated by every one upon my good fortune; and, in a day or two after our arrival, an opportunity ſerving, we, at their deſire, related our adventures to my father and mother, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley: but when I came to that part of my ſtory where I had found, ſo miraculouſly, my Louiſa, it was a long time before I could obtain belief, though from perſons that confided in my veracity, till our joint proteſtations of the truth, and, as a proof, her being ſo near us, confirmed what we ſaid. Never were people ſo beſide themſelves with joy—the bliſs to them was unutterable! My father himſelf could not refrain from ſhewing the ſhare he took in my felicity, by the moſt tranſporting acts of ſatisfaction; and my mother now wept, and now ſmiled exultingly at having recovered her dear, dead Louiſa! They promiſed, however, to keep the ſecret till a proper time for diſcovery; and my father's, Mr. Sharpley's, and Mr. Archer's houſes being ſufficient to entertain all our illuſtrious gueſts, they begged they might have that honour; and my mother beſpoke Louiſa to be with her till our nuptials, which I readily granted.

I was juſt deſigning to pay a viſit to Sir Walter, whoſe pulſe I longed to feel; and, indeed, I longed to ſee him, and all my old regard for him was returned, when he ſent a ſervant to me to deſire my company at his houſe; and I, taking Captain Sharpley with me, immediately obeyed the ſummons. We found him in the apartment in which I had enjoyed ſo much happineſs, in a mourning dreſs, which he had worn conſtantly ever ſince he received the news of his daughter's death! At the ſight of me, (for he knew me immediately) the old baronet burſt into tears, and ſaid, 'Ah, Mr. Thompſon!
'you are too good—I did not expect
'ſo ready a compliance to my deſires—
'I did not deſerve it at your hands—

'I who murdered Louiſa, and behaved 'ſo ungratefully, ſo wickedly, to you!' I was moved to ſee him ſo touched with ſorrow, and advancing, preſſed him in my arms, whilſt the tears ſtood in my eyes; and replied, 'Deareſt Sir—my 'father—for I muſt ever call you ſo—'forget whatever injuries were done 'to me—I forget them for ever—you 'are puniſhed enough, Sir, in the loſs 'of our dear and excellent Louiſa!—'Can I forget you are her father—and, 'though oppreſſed with the ſame ſor-'row, will ever behave to you with 'duty and affection, and ſtrive to 'leſſen your woes, or mix my own 'with them!'—'Ah, generous youth!' he returned, 'how could I be blind 'to ſo much merit?—Oh! if the dear 'girl were now alive—ſhe ſurely ſhould 'be thine; but, ſince it cannot be re-'called—come, live with me—the ſo-'lace of my age—and accept of all 'that I can give at my deceaſe!—That 'wretch, that villain—that bane to 'my happineſs—ſeduced me!—But, 'no doubt, you have heard it all—the 'ſad, the fatal *ſtory!*'—'I have, dear 'Sir—you are excuſable, and highly 'ſo.—I accept your kind propoſal of 'living with you, and chearing my 'Louiſa's father in his troubles—for 'fortune I have enough—and long for 'nothing now—ſo much in life—as to 'puniſh, to chaſtiſe, that baſeſt wretch, 'your execrable villainous nephew!' Fidele broke in, and, hanging about my neck, repeated oft her lady's name with mine—her dear friend and patron, her Mr. Thompſon; and when we were taking our leave, and retiring through the gate, an honeſt-looking man and woman, whom I did not recollect, gave me a thouſand bleſſings, and prayed for my long life and proſperity! I ſtood ſtill, and, after returning their compliments, enquired how I came to merit ſuch a ſhare of their reſpect. The man replied, with ſome emotion, 'Dear Sir, if you have for-'got us, we ſhall ever remember your 'bountiful goodneſs to us, as well as 'that of our dear lady departed.' I then began to recollect ſomewhat of their faces, and found it was the poor exciſeman and his wife, whom my dear Louiſa had ſo charitably relieved, and to whom I made a preſent at my departure for London ſo many years ago. I ſaluted the woman, and, taking the man by the hand, enquired if I could be of any ſervice to them now. If I could, I was very ready to do it; but he replied, 'Sir, your goodneſs over-'comes me; but I want nothing at 'preſent, and have every thing in the 'ſervice of Sir Walter that we can de-'ſire; for when he underſtood that we 'had been the objects of my late young 'lady's charity, he took us into his 'houſe, making me his bailiff, and 'my wife his laundry-maid, and has 'been infinitely kind to me ever 'ſince.' I was charmed to hear theſe inſtances of his regard to Louiſa's memory, and found every thing ſo ſituated, that we had little oppoſition to fear, even if he knew his daughter's real ſtory.

I had preſented Mr. Sharpley to him, who was going, though unknown to him, to be his nephew; and he received him as the ſon of a gentleman he eſteemed; and upon our mentioning the brilliant aſſembly that was coming down to the marriage of Mr. Diaper, and thoſe of ſome other friends, he generouſly offered his houſe alſo for their accommodation.

CHAP. XXXI.

THEY RETURN TO MR. BELLAIR'S—ALL SET OUT FOR MR. THOMPSON'S—ARRIVE THERE—HOW THEY ARE DISPOSED OF—HE MAKES A PROPOSAL TO SIR WALTER—SIR WALTER CONSENTS TO IT—FIDELE INTRODUCED TO HER LADY—TRUMAN FALLS IN LOVE—MAKES A REQUEST TO THOMPSON—HE GRANTS HIS DESIRE, AND MAKES LOUISA AN ADVOCATE FOR HIM—FIDELE GRANTS HIS SUIT, AND OBTAINS SIR WALTER'S LEAVE TO MARRY HIM.

WE ſtaid about a week longer with our parents; and now, longing to behold our miſtreſſes, accompanied by my father, Mr. Sharpley, and Mr. Archer, we ſet out for Mr. Bellair's, and once more rejoined the dear objects of our affection, and gave our company an account of Sir Walter's diſpoſition; at which my Louiſa was tranſported, and ſaid, 'I 'think, my dear Thompſon, I had 'better

'better die in earneſt: you ſee you 'may have the eſtate without the in-'cumbrance of a wife.'—'Ah, Ma-'dam!' I replied, 'you know me too 'well to think I can ever bear a ſmil-'ing ſentence of that ſort from you: 'without you, all the riches and plea-'ſures in the world would be diſtaſte-'ful.' When my father came for-ward at firſt to ſalute her, ſhe would have fallen upon her knees; but he caught her in his arms, called her *his ſweet daughter—his angel*—and told her, her revival would add twenty years to his life. Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley, in their turns, expreſſed how much they were affected with the ſight of her; and all our company were charmed with the preſence of theſe three gentlemen. It was agreed that my Louiſa ſhould wear a maſk till ſhe got into private at my father's; and, every thing being ſettled, we ſet out for that loved place; but were quite ſurprized, at about a mile from the houſe, to meet twenty runners, all dreſſed in rural pomp, with ribbands and flowers, being the young men of my father's pariſh, and almoſt all the gentlemen and farmers on horſeback, who came to welcome us, and precede us through the villages, where all the bells rung our welcome. We thanked the honeſt people for theſe teſtimonies of their reſpect, and when we alighted, Mr. Diaper threw a handful of money amongſt the runners, whoſe example was followed by myſelf, Mr. Goodwill, and Sharpley; and the gentlemen were invited to partake of a cold repaſt, which was prepared by my mother for our refreſhment. Louiſa and Madam Rich, with Serena, went into a back parlour with my mother; where, when ſhe had unmaſked, the ſcene between them was too delicately melting and tender to be deſcribed; and, 'Deareſt mamma!'—'Sweeteſt, moſt 'excellent daughter!—lovely Lou-'iſa!' was all they could, for a long time, utter. The two ladies were tranſported with the converſation of this good woman, who, in her turn, conceived a great affection for them; and, as Louiſa could not appear publickly yet, nor her aunt or couſin, Sir Walter's ſervants knowing them, ſhe ſpent the remainder of the day in their company; to which the other ladies frequently paid viſits.

Sir Walter came to my father's, unexpectedly, as ſoon as we arrived, to compliment the company, and to give a general invitation to them to his houſe; and behaved more chearfully than he had done for a long time before, often embracing me and my friend Diaper, and calling us his children. He was known to all the company preſent, who had moſt of them ſpent ſome time in Yorkſhire, after my departure for the Indies; and, as to the Bellair's, they were an ancient family, and well known to him before. It was agreed, that Mr. and Madam Goodwill, with their equipage, ſhould go to Mr. Archer's; Mr. Bellair and his lady, and ſervants, to Mr. Sharpley's; Mr. Diaper and his wife, with Prig, to Sir Walter's; and Madam Rich, Serena, Louiſa, and Miſs Sukey, to remain at my father's. As to Diaper, Sharpley, myſelf, and Truman, who I inſiſted ſhould always now be treated and live like a gentleman, we had beds provided for us at our old friend Solfa's, which we liked, as being nearer our miſtreſſes, than any other ſituation. Our preſence diffuſed gladneſs all around the country, and the inhabitants of the neighbourhood vied with each other in the games and ſports they exhibited, upon occaſion of having ſuch good company amongſt them. As it was thought proper, on account of the concealment, I was forced to go to York for a licence for my intended marriage: but, as to Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Diaper, my father bade the banns in his church, which he thought the moſt primitive and regular way. All things being ſettled for the happy moment that was to unite ſuch faithful lovers, and it being to be performed in three days time, I, one morning, took Sir Walter aſide, and began to talk to him thus. 'My fa-'ther, I have a favour to beg of you: 'my Louiſa is no more! and it is vain 'now to lament for what we cannot 'recal. Oh! were ſhe but alive, I 'ſhould be happy. My father has 'perſuaded me, for ſome family rea-'ſons, to marry. I have paid my 'addreſſes to a young lady of birth 'and fortune, and ſhe has yielded to 'my ſuit. You might once have 'made me happy, but that is paſt; 'and, as I could not receive my Lou-'iſa at your hands, grant me the fa-

'vour

'vour to give away this lady to me at 'the *altar*, and adopt her for your 'child.' The old gentleman wept, and reproached himſelf for his former cruelty and folly; but, at length, conſented to do as I propoſed, for which I returned him my utmoſt acknowledgments. I farther requeſted of him, that he would ſuffer Fidele to attend upon her till the marriage was over, which he, with great readineſs, granted alſo. I told that good creature, that my mother deſired to ſee her, and ſhe went over to our houſe directly, where ſhe every day, ſince my departure, had viſited. That dear woman and Mrs. Goodwill, after careſſing her, and introducing her to the reſt of the company, carried her into the room where her lady was playing upon the harpſichord to Serena, Miſs Sukey, and Mrs. Bellair. She roſe up, and the poor girl, the minute ſhe ſaw her, ſwooned away, only crying out, 'Good 'God!' They brought her to herſelf; her miſtreſs embraced her, and was never tired of beſtowing kiſſes and preſſures upon her, which ſoon convinced her ſhe was fleſh and blood. She heard her lady's ſtory with admiration, like that one would expreſs at ſeeing a perſon riſe from the grave; and, falling upon her knees, cried, 'Oh! did I ever expect to be ſo hap-'py!' whilſt tears of joyous affection trickled faſt from her eyes.

Truman, as ſoon as I returned home, begged me to walk into the garden, and ſurprized me, when he told me, that he hoped, as he had long and faithfully ſerved me, I would contribute to make him happy. 'I love 'Fidele, Sir, have loved her ever ſince 'I firſt ſaw her; and I ſhall never be 'eaſy, if I have not her heart and 'perſon. It is true, Sir, I am ſome-'what older than ſhe is; but, when I 'was down before in Yorkſhire, after 'I came from India, I paid my ad-'dreſſes to her, and believe ſhe was 'not indifferent to my offers; and 'one motive to her condeſcenſion was, 'that I was valued and reſpected by 'you. She will ſoothe my future 'hours; and has imbibed ſuch excel-'lent principles from my lady, that 'ſhe will be in herſelf a valuable for-'tune. Do, Sir, ſpeak to Miſs Lou-'iſa; and, with her, endeavour to 'incline her to marry me.' I was ſo pleaſed to hear this, that I could not enough expreſs my ſatisfaction, and promiſed to do all in my power to ſerve him: accordingly, I ſpoke to my Louiſa, who was as pleaſed as myſelf to hear it; and we both, in a proper manner, ſpoke to Fidele; particularly Louiſa repreſented him, as he really was, a very worthy and excellent man, a good friend of mine, beloved by us both, and one, who, in perſon and temper, was formed to make a woman happy. In ſhort, we ſoon diſcovered, by her eyes and her anſwers, that ſhe loved him as much as he loved her; and, bluſhingly, ſhe told us ſhe would be ruled in any thing by us. Truman was all extaſy when he heard of her compliance, and I went with him to Sir Walter, and repreſented him, and his affairs, in ſuch a light, that he readily gave his conſent to her leaving him; and this news cauſed great mirth and pleaſure to our whole company; and we reſolved their marriage ſhould be performed at the ſame time with our own.

CHAP. XXXII.

MR. ARCHER THE YOUNGER ARRIVES IN YORKSHIRE — ANOTHER VISITOR CALLS UPON THEM — THE FOUR AMIABLE PAIR ARE MARRIED—SIR WALTER'S SURPRIZE AND JOY IN DISCOVERING HIS DAUGHTER—HE PAYS HER FORTUNE, AND MAKES OVER AN ESTATE TO THEM—THEIR GUESTS DEPART—HAPPINESS THAT SUCCEEDS THOMPSON'S MARRIAGE—CONCLUSION.

THE next day Mr. Archer brought up a gentleman from his houſe, that, to my great ſatisfaction, I found to be his ſon, whoſe preſence, on the preſent happy occaſion, was prodigiouſly agreeable to Sharpley and myſelf; and he was overjoyed when he heard how our affairs ſtood. My father and mother almoſt overwhelmed him with kindneſs; and, being preſented to all our good friends, they conceived ſo good an opinion of him, as to give him, at once, a place in their eſteem; but this was not the only unexpected viſitor that arrived, for a gen-

tleman

tleman alighted at my father's, attended by ſeveral ſervants, and aſked for me. I came to him, and he accoſted me with great gentility, and ſaid, that he had heard my name mentioned at the next town, as juſt arrived from abroad, and that I was ſurrounded with numerous friends; though unknown at preſent to me, he had formerly done me ſome ſervices, and was reſolved to leave the road, and make one in our happy ſociety, and congratulate me on my arrival in England. I returned him thanks, and introduced him to our company; at the ſame time telling him I was ſorry ſo to forget my obligations, as not even to have the pleaſure to recollect his face. Madam Rich, who heard his voice from the next room, and what had paſſed, with Serena and Louiſa, none being preſent but thoſe who were in the ſecret of her being alive, preſſing towards him, cried, 'Ah, Colonel Williams! how 'lucky we are to ſee you here!' This name, and the compliments that paſſed between them, gave me to underſtand, that it was that generous gentleman Louiſa had mentioned with ſo much diſtinction: nor was I miſtaken; but he was ſo ſurprized to ſee my adorable, that, for ſome time, he could hardly recover himſelf, till, being let into the heads of our adventures, he broke forth into congratulations upon our happineſs; and we perſuaded him to ſtay with us till our marriages were performed, to which, with joy, he conſented. His preſence put us upon talking about the ſquire, who now lived a brutiſh, ſottiſh life, at his little eſtate at Doncaſter: for my part, I was ſo eaſy at preſent, that I ſeldom thought of him; and, when I did, it was not revengefully, but with abſolute pity and contempt; and we all agreed, that, if he remained quiet, it was not worth while to uſe him as he deſerved, my father concluding with the poet—

'It is puniſhment enough to be a villain!'

'Now morn, her roſy ſteps in th' eaſtern
'clime
'Advancing, ſtrew'd the earth with orient
'pearl!'

The morn, the gladſome morn! that was to make the lovely cauſe of all my cares and pains for ever, ever, mine. It was in the joyous month of May, when nature all around bloomed odorous ſweets, that forth iſſued our bliſsful brides, but chief my Louiſa—

——'Dreſs'd in rich array;
'Freſh as the month, and, as the morning,
'fair;
'Adown her ſhoulders fell her length of
'hair:
'Ribbands and gems her braided treſſes
'bind,
'The reſt hung looſe, and wanton'd in the
'wind.'

A gown of white damaſk, richly embroidered, ſhaded her tranſporting beauties, which received ſtill greater luſtre by the crimſon bluſhes that overſpread her lovely face; and her eyes put to ſhame the cluſters of diamonds that were ſpread all over her hair and boſom! Serena and Miſs Bellair were as richly dreſſed; but Fidele had, with becoming modeſty, contrived to ſuit her habit a little to her former condition. We ſeized their willing, yet reluctant, hands; and, followed by our admiring friends, and wondering neighbours, proceeded to the church; Sir Walter, at my deſire, having once more caſt off his mourning, and dreſſed himſelf in rich cloaths ſuitable to the occaſion. Louiſa put on her maſque as ſoon as he appeared; which he wondering at, I told him I was forced to indulge her modeſty, by letting her be married thus veiled. He ſurveyed her ſhape and ſtature as we walked along; and, fetching a ſad ſigh, wiped his eyes, endeavouring, however, to conceal his emotion under an air of affected gaiety. My father joined our hands in the holy tie, and we were edified with the grave and truly apoſtolical air with which he performed the ſacred ceremony. After it was over, Sir Walter inſiſting upon ſupplying the marriage-feaſt, we adjourned to his houſe, where the whole neighbourhood was alſo invited; and, juſt before we ſat down to dinner, my father called him aſide into a room, where only Louiſa and her aunt, both ſtill maſqued, and he and myſelf, were, and addreſſed him thus—'Sir Walter, Providence 'orders all things for the beſt; and 'this day, by means no one ever could 'think of, has made us all happy.— 'If theſe young folks have exerciſed a

'little

'little ſtratagem with you, it was to 'increaſe the pleaſure you will feel, I 'am ſure, when, in my ſon's wife— 'in Mrs. Thompſon—you will diſco- 'ver your long-loſt Louiſa!' Upon which ſhe unmaſked, and we knelt before him, and intreated his bleſſing. He was motionleſs ſome time—but ſoon diſcovered it was really his daughter; and, without enquiring into the affair, embraced us one after another, bleſſed us, and jumped and danced about in ſuch a manner, that any one would have thought him diſtracted. At length he reſumed himſelf, and we ſhed tears in concert; and my Louiſa hung about his neck, whilſt he held her faſt in his arms, crying, every now and then, 'It is ſhe herſelf, and I am 'happy—bleſſed for ever!' And when his ſiſter diſcovered herſelf, and had informed him ſuccinctly of all this wondrous turn of fortune, he was amazed, and told her he would love her better than himſelf as long as he lived. Nothing but joy reigned throughout the whole vicinity: the houſe was full of delight and pleaſure. Abroad, every green ſward was exerciſed by the gambols of our country lads and laſſes; and, Louiſa's return being noiſed abroad, the hearts of all that knew us ran over with ſatisfaction.—Sharpley was preſented to Sir Walter as his nephew, and he received him with the utmoſt goodneſs—buſſed Serena, and was quite inebriated with his felicity. 'You ſee, papa,' ſaid my lovely conſort, 'I am as good as 'my word, and have not only married 'with your conſent, but you have 'given me away with your own hands.' —'Yes,' he replied, 'it is true; and, 'if I could, I would give thee away 'an hundred times over to that wor- 'thy youth, my dear Joey!—So make 'haſte, my boy, and make me a grand- 'father.' I bowed—Louiſa bluſhed. Oh! the delightful moments I paſſed this night in the arms of this adorable end of all my wiſhes! even luxuriant fancy cannot paint in colours equal to the truth!—'Oh, life! how art thou 'improved by a virtuous and lawful 'intercourſe with theſe delightful com- 'panions, theſe ſoft, melting recom- 'penſers of all our pains and nume- 'rous cares!'

We were complimented next morning by all our friends, who ſpent a fortnight more with us; and they had the pleaſure to ſee Sir Walter pay me the twelve thouſand pounds that was his daughter's, and he made over the eſtate in our neighbourhood, of near one thouſand pounds *per annum*, to us and our heirs. Mr. Goodwill and his lady repaired to their country-houſe; Mr. Diaper and Mrs. Diaper, with my friend and his charming ſpouſe, went with Mr. Bellair and his wife to their ſeat, to ſpend ſome time before they returned to London; and Sharpley, with his dear Serena and Colonel Williams, accompanied Madam Rich to the eſtate in Somerſetſhire, which they were to poſſeſs at her death. Prig accompanied Mr. Archer the younger to London, where he was going to ſettle in the profeſſion of a wine-merchant; and our adieus were ſenſibly touching to us all: but, as our fortunes were all conſiderable enough to viſit each other in the moſt diſtant parts we could ſettle in, we comforted ourſelves with the thoughts of frequently ſeeing each other again, and the promiſe of correſponding conſtantly by letter. Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley each ſet out with his ſon for ſome months; ſo that now our happineſs was quite domeſtick. Truman bought a pretty eſtate in our neighbourhood, where he happily ſtill lives with our Fidele, and often viſits us, ſtill preſerving that modeſty and diſcretion that made every one love him. As to myſelf, I enjoy, my gentle reader, in the ſociety of my charming wife, all thoſe comforts and ſolacements that give a man a reliſh, and earneſt deſire, of life. Her virtue, and her good-ſenſe and prudence, endear her to all the world; and I ſtrive to act in ſuch a manner as to preſerve that love and eſteem from her, that is the principal ingredient in conjugal felicity. My father and mother are ſtill living, and behold in their ſon the good qualities, I flatter myſelf, that they early endeavoured to inſpire; and are never eaſy a day without the ſight of my charming Louiſa. Sir Walter lives with us, and is hearty and well, and like to ſurvive long enough to ſee his ſecond generation riſe to maturity; for already I have been bleſſed with two fine children, a boy and a girl, who are the very pictures of their angelick mother. Our correſpondence with, and now

and

and then the ſight of our dear friends add greatly to our happineſs; and I reckon myſelf, at preſent, at the ſummit of human felicity.

Thus, through a long and toilſome pilgrimage of woe, attended with few real delights, I have attained that ſettled ſtate of pure, uncorrupted bliſs, that we are all, in different routs, wandering after: and I hope my papers may happily fall into ſuch proper hands as will improve by my misfortunes; and, by avoiding vice and folly, with all their attendant ills, acquire the ſame ſerenity that is at length my happy lot: and as, with my Louiſa, I purſue a conſtant courſe of benevolence and kindneſs to our fellow-creatures, I hope, with Dryden—

'We ever ſhall be bleſs'd—who live to bleſs.'

FINIS.

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS,

A CORNISH MAN.

TAKEN FROM HIS OWN MOUTH, IN HIS PASSAGE TO ENGLAND, FROM OFF CAPE HORN IN AMERICA, IN THE SHIP HECTOR.

BY R. S. A PASSENGER IN THE HECTOR

IN TWO VOLUMES.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoſter-Row.
M DCC LXXXIII.


BRITISH MUSEUM

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

Elizabeth, Counteſs of Northumberland.

MADAM,

FEW authors, I believe, who write in my way, (whatever view they may ſet out with) can, in the proſecution of their work, forbear to dreſs their fictitious characters in the real ornaments themſelves have been moſt delighted with.

This, I confeſs, hath been my caſe, in the perſon of Youwarkee, in the following ſheets; for having formed her body, I found myſelf at an inexpreſſible loſs how to adorn her mind in the maſterly ſentiments I coveted to endue her with, till I recollected the moſt amiable pattern in your ladyſhip; a ſingle view of which, at a time of the utmoſt fatigue to his lordſhip, hath charmed my imagination ever ſince.

If a participater of the cares of life in general alleviates the concerns of man, what an invaluable bleſſing muſt that lady prove, to the ſoftneſs of whoſe ſex nature hath conjoined an aptitude for council, an application, zeal, and diſpatch, but too rarely found in his own!

Had my ſituation in life been ſo happy as to have preſented me with opportunities of more frequent and minuter remarks upon your ladyſhip's conduct, I might have defied the whole Britiſh fair to have outſhone my ſouthern Gawry; for if to a majeſtick form and extenſive capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, that maternal tenderneſs, that chearfulneſs, that complacency, condeſcenſion, affability, and unaffected benevolence, which ſo apparently diſtinguiſh the Counteſs of Northumberland; I had exhibited in my Youwarkee a ſtandard for future generations.

Madam, I am the more ſenſible of my ſpeaking but the truth, from the late inſtance of your benignity, which entitles me to the honour of ſubſcribing myſelf,

Madam,

Your Ladyſhip's

Moſt obliged and

Moſt obedient Servant,

R. P.

EXPLANATION

OF

Names and Things mentioned in this Work.

A.

ABB—a room.
Apſilo—capital of Norbon.
Arco—a man who committed the firſt murder.
Arndrumnſtake—Pendlehamby's colambat.
Arkoe—water ſurrounded with wood.

B.

Barbarſa—Georigetti's favourite.
Barkatt—a huſband.
Barras—a leathern apron, or flap behind.
Baſh—a valet de chambre.
Battringdrigg—the name of an arkoe.
Begſurbeck—an old king of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Born Iſles—iſlands to the right-hand.
Boſkee—a very grand room, or ſaloon.
Bott—a gourd.
Bougee—lie down.
Brandleguarp—chief city of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.

C.

Callentar—a doctor, or ſurgeon.
Cluff—a captain.
Colamb—a governor.
Colambat—a government.
Colapet—a bag for proviſion.
Coll-war—God.
Coovett—a manſion-houſe or ſeat.
Craſhdoorpt—Quangrallort's colambat, or country of the ſlit.
Craſhee—ſlit.
Crullmott—a fruit taſting like a fowl.

D.

David—Peter's fourth ſon.
Doorpt Swangeanti—the land of flight.
Doors—a ſort of apples.
Doſſee—a ſoft thing.

E.

Emina—a rock.

F.

Felbamko—Oniwheſke's nephew.
Filgay—a freeman.
Filus—a rib of the graundee.

G.

Gadſi—governor of Mount Alkoe.
Gauingrunt—a revolted town in the weſt.
Gawrey—a flying woman.
Georigetti—king of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Glanlipze—an African who eſcaped with Peter.
Glumm—a flying man.
Glumm Boſs—a young man.
Goppa—a father-in-law.
Gorpell—an enſign.
Gowren—women.
Graundee—the glumms wings and dreſs.
Gripſack—a trumpet.
Graundevolet—Peter's arkoe.
Gume—the leather between the filuſes of the graundee.

H.

Hallycarnie—Youwarkee's ſiſter, alſo her ſecond daughter.
Harlokin—prince of the rebels.
Hoximo—a place to bury the dead.
Hunkum—marriage.

I.

I. O.—the chief ragam.

J.

Jahamel—the king's ſiſter.
Jemmy—Peter's ſecond ſon.

L.

Lallio—firſt king of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Laſk—a ſlave.
Laſkmett—ſlavery.
Laſmeel—Peter's ſcholar.

M.

Maleck—Peter's man from Mount Alkoe.
Mindrack—the devil.
Mouch—a church.
Moucheratt—an aſſembly of the ſtates.
Mount Alkoe—a kingdom taking name from a burning mountain.

N.

Naſgig—a common ſoldier made a general at the requeſt of Peter.
Nicor—a creature of Barbarſa, the king's favourite.
Norbon—the name of the north country.

Normnbdſgrſutt—ancient name of Youwarkee's country.

O.

Oniwheſke—king of Norbon.
Ors clam gee—here am I.

P.

Padſi—a fruit taſting like fiſh.
Palang—a town.
Parky—ſweet.
Patty—Peter's eldeſt daughter, alſo his firſt wife.
Pedro—Peter's eldeſt ſon.
Peter—the author.
Pendlebamby—Youwarkee's father, the colamb of Arndrumnſtake.
Perigen—the firſt-born man.
Phileila—the firſt-born woman.
Puly—an image.
Praave—modeſt.

Q.

Quangrollart—Youwarkee's brother, colamb of Craſhdoorpt.
Quilly—Peter's baſh.

R.

Ragan—a prieſt.
Razy—mighty.
Richard—Peter's fifth ſon.
Roppin—marmalade.
Roſig—Quangrallort's companion.

S.

Sary—Peter's youngeſt daughter.
Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti—Peter's new name given to Georigetti's dominions.
Slip the graundee—drawing the graundee tight to the body, by a running nooſe on a line.
Stapps—minutes.
Stygee—Oniwheſke's daughter.
Sweecoe—an inſect giving a ſtrong light in the dark.
Sweecoan—a flight with ſweecoes.
Swangean—flight.

T.

Telamine—a woman, whoſe huſband committed the firſt murder.
Tommy—Peter's ſecond ſon.

Y.

Yaccombourſe—the king's miſtreſs.
Yacom—a man child.
Youk—capital of the weſt.
Youwarkee—Peter's wife.

Z.

Zaps—lords.

THE INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the life of another, to trouble the reader with any of my own concerns, or the affairs that led me into the South Seas. Therefore, I ſhall only acquaint him, that in my return on board the Hector, as a paſſenger, round Cape Horn, for England, full late in the ſeaſon, the wind and currents ſetting ſtrong againſt us, our ſhip drove more ſouthernly, by ſeveral degrees, than the uſual courſe, even to the latitude of 75 or 76; when the wind chopping about, we began to reſume our intended way. It was about the middle of June, when the days are there at the ſhorteſt, on a very ſtarry and moon-light night, that we obſerved at ſome diſtance a very black cloud, but ſeemingly of no extraordinary ſize or height, moving very faſt towards us, and ſeeming to follow the ſhip, which then made great way. Every one on deck was very curious in obſerving it's motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and preſently to cloſe again, and not to continue long in any determined ſhape, our captain, who had never before been ſo far to the ſouthward as he then found himſelf, had many conjectures what this phænomenon might portend; and every one offering his own opinion, it ſeemed at laſt to be generally agreed, that there might poſſibly be a ſtorm gathering in the air, of which this was the prognoſtick; and by it's following, and nearly keeping pace with us, we were in great fear leſt it ſhould break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our commander, therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the ſhip's guns to be fired, to try if the percuſſion of the air would diſperſe it. This was no ſooner done, than we heard a prodigious flounce in the water, at but a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, on the weather-quarter; and after a violent noiſe, or cry in the air, the cloud, that upon our firing diſſipated, ſeemed to return again, but by degrees diſappeared. Whilſt we were all very much ſurprized at this unexpected accident, I, being naturally very curious and inquiſitive into the cauſes of all unuſual incidents, begged the captain to ſend the boat, to ſee, if poſſible, what it was that had fallen from the cloud, and offered myſelf to make one in her. He was much againſt this at firſt, as it would retard his voyage, now we were going ſo ſmoothly before the wind. But in the midſt of our debate, we plainly heard a voice calling out for help, in our own tongue, like a perſon in great diſtreſs. I then inſiſted on going, and not ſuffering a fellow-creature to periſh for the ſake of a trifling delay. In compliance with my reſolute demand, he ſlackened ſail; and hoiſting out the boat, myſelf and ſeven others made to the cry; and ſoon found it to come from an elderly man, labouring for life, with his

arms acroſs ſeveral long poles, of equal ſize at both ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd manner. The ſailors at firſt were very fearful of aſſiſting, or coming near him; crying to each other, 'He 'muſt be a monſter!' and, perhaps, might overſet the boat and deſtroy them; but hearing him ſpeak Engliſh, I was very angry with them for their fooliſh apprehenſions, and cauſed them to clap their oars under him, and at length we got him into the boat. He had an extravagant beard, and alſo long blackiſh hair upon his head. As ſoon as he could ſpeak, (for he was almoſt ſpent) he very familiarly took me by the hand, I having ſet myſelf cloſe by him to obſerve him, and ſqueezing it, thanked me very kindly for my civility to him, and likewiſe thanked all the ſailors. I then aſked him by what poſſible accident he came there; but he ſhook his head, declining to ſatisfy my curioſity. Hereupon reflecting that it might juſt then be troubleſome for him to ſpeak, and that we ſhould have leiſure enough in our voyage for him to relate, and me to hear, his ſtory, (which, from the ſurprizing manner of his falling amongſt us, I could not but believe would contain ſomething very remarkable) I waved any farther ſpeech with him at that time.

We had him to the ſhip, and taking off his wet cloaths, put him to bed in my cabbin; and I having a large proviſion of ſtores on board, and no concern in the ſhip, grew very fond of him, and ſupplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent diſcourſes together, he had ſeveral times dropped looſe hints of his paſt tranſactions, which but the more inflamed me with impatience to hear the whole of them. About this time, having juſt begun to double the Cape, our captain thought of watering at the firſt convenient place; and finding the ſtranger had no money to pay his paſſage, and that he had been from England no leſs than thirty-five years, deſpairing of his reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him that he muſt expect to be put on ſhore to ſhift for himſelf, when we put in for water. This entirely ſunk the ſtranger's ſpirits, and gave me great concern; inſomuch that I fully reſolved, if the captain ſhould really prove ſuch a brute, to take the payment of his paſſage on myſelf.

As we came nearer to the deſtined watering, the captain ſpoke the plainer of his intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my deſign to him or any one elſe;) and one morning the ſtranger came into my cabbin, with tears in his eyes, telling me, he verily believed the captain would be as good as his word, and ſet him on ſhore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuſe to tell him immediately what I deſigned in his favour, but aſked him if he could think of no way of ſatisfying the captain, or any one elſe who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and farther, how he expected to live when he ſhould get to England, a man quite forgotten and pennyleſs. Hereupon he told me he had, ever ſince his being on board, conſidering his deſtitute condition, entertained a thought of having his adventures written; which, as there was ſomething ſo uncommon in them, he was ſure the world would be glad to know; and he had flattered himſelf with hopes of raiſing ſomewhat by the ſale of them to put him in a way of living: but as it was plain now he ſhould never ſee England without my aſſiſtance, if I would anſwer for his paſſage, and write his life, he would communicate to me a faithful

narrative

narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any charge I might be at on his account. I was very well pleaſed with this overture; not from the proſpect of gain by the copy, but from the expectation I had of being fully ſatisfied in what I had ſo long deſired to know: ſo I told him I would make him eaſy in that reſpect. This quite tranſported him: he careſſed me, and called me his deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the captain to tell him ſo. But I put a ſtop to that: 'For,' ſays I, 'though I inſiſt 'upon hearing your ſtory, the captain may yet relent of his pur-'poſe, and not leave you on ſhore; and if that ſhould prove the 'caſe, I ſhall neither part with my money for you, nor you with your 'intereſt in your adventures to me.' Whereupon he agreed I was right, and deſiſted.

When we had taken in beſt part of our water, and the boat was going it's laſt turn, the captain ordered up the ſtrange man, as they called him, and told him he muſt go on board the boat, which was to leave him on ſhore with ſome few proviſions. I happening to hear nothing of theſe orders, they were ſo ſudden, the poor man was afraid, after all, he ſhould have been hurried to land without my knowledge; but begging very hard of the captain only for leave to ſpeak with me before he went, I was called, (though with ſome reluctance; for the captain diſliked me, for the liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal behaviour.) I expoſtulated with the cruel wretch on the inhumanity of the action he was about; telling him, if he had reſolved the poor man ſhould periſh, it would have been better to have ſuffered him to do ſo, when he was at the laſt extremity, than to expoſe him afreſh, by this means, to a death as certain, in a more lingering and miſerable way. But the ſavage being reſolved, and nothing moved by what I ſaid, I paid him part of the paſſage down, and agreed to pay the reſt at our arrival in England.

Thus having reprieved the poor man, the next thing was to enter upon my new employ of amanuenſis: and having a long ſpace of time before us, we allotted two hours every morning for the purpoſe of writing down his life from his own mouth; and frequently, when wind and weather kept us below, we ſpent ſome time of an afternoon in the ſame exerciſe, till we had quite compleated it. But then there were ſome things in it ſo undeſcribable by words, that if I had not had ſome knowledge alſo in drawing, our hiſtory had been very incompleat. Thus it muſt have been, eſpecially in the deſcription of the *Glumms* and *Gawrys* therein mentioned. In order to gain (that ſo I might communicate) a clear idea of theſe, I made ſeveral drawings of them from his diſcourſes and accounts; and, at length, after divers trials, I made ſuch exact delineations, that he declared they could not have been more perfect reſemblances if I had drawn them from the life. Upon a ſurvey, he confeſſed the very perſons themſelves could not have been more exact. I alſo drew with my pencil the figure of an aërial engagement, which, having likewiſe had his approbation, I have given a draught of.

Then, having finiſhed the work to our mutual ſatisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruſe it at leiſure, intending to have preſented it

to him at our arrival in England, to diſpoſe of as he pleaſed, in ſuch a way as might have conduced moſt to his profit; for I reſolved, notwithſtanding our agreement, and the obligations he was under to me, that the whole of that ſhould be his own. But he, having been in a declining ſtate ſome time before we reached ſhore, died the very night we landed; and his funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greateſt right to the manuſcript: which, however, I had no deſign to have parted with; but ſhewing it to ſome judicious friends, I have by them been prevailed with not to conceal from the world what may prove ſo very entertaining, and perhaps uſeful.

THE

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

GIVING AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S BIRTH AND FAMILY—THE FONDNESS OF HIS MOTHER—HIS BEING PUT TO AN ACADEMY AT SIXTEEN BY THE ADVICE OF HIS FRIEND—HIS THOUGHTS OF HIS OWN ILLITERATURE.

I WAS born at Penhale, in the county of Cornwall, on the twenty-firſt day of December 1685, about four months after my father, Peter Wilkins, who was a zealous proteſtant of the church of England, had been executed by Jefferys, in Somerſetſhire, for joining in the deſign of raiſing the Duke of Monmouth to the Britiſh throne. I was named, after my father and grandfather, Peter, and was my father's only child by Alice his wife, the daughter of John Capert, a clergyman in a neighbouring village. My grandfather was a ſhopkeeper at Newport, who, by great frugality, and extraordinary application, had raiſed a fortune of about one hundred and ſixty pounds a year in lands, and a conſiderable ſum of ready-money; all which at his death devolved upon my father, as his only child; who being no leſs parſimonious than my grandfather, and living upon his own eſtate, had much improved it in value, before his marriage with my mother; but he coming to that unhappy end, my mother, after my birth, placed all her affection upon me, (her growing hopes as ſhe called me) and uſed every method, in my minority, of encreaſing the ſtore for my benefit.

In this manner ſhe went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for confinement at the apron-ſtring, being then about fourteen years of age; and having met with ſo much indulgence from her, for that reaſon, found very little or no contradiction from any body elſe; ſo I looked on myſelf as a perſon of ſome conſequence, and began to take all opportunities of enjoying the company of my neighbours, who hinted, frequently, that the reſtraint I was under, was too great a curb upon an inclination like mine of ſeeing the world: but my mother, ſtill impatient of any little abſence, by exceſſive fondneſs, and encouraging every inclination I ſeemed to have, when ſhe could be a partaker with me, kept me within bounds of reſtraint, till I arrived at my ſixteenth year.

About this time I got acquainted with a country gentleman, of a ſmall paternal eſtate, which had been never the better for being in his hands, and had ſome uneaſy demands upon it.

He

He ſoon grew very fond of me, hoping, as I had reaſon afterwards to believe, by an union with my mother, to ſet himſelf free from his entanglements. She was then about thirty-five years old, and ſtill continued my father's widow, out of particular regard to me, as I have all the reaſon in the world to believe. She was really a beautiful woman, and of a ſanguine complexion; but had always carried herſelf with ſo much reſerve, and given ſo little encouragement to any of the other ſex, that ſhe had paſſed her widowhood with very few ſolicitations to alter her way of life. This gentleman obſerving my mother's conduct, in order to ingratiate himſelf with her, had ſhewn numberleſs inſtances of regard for me; and, as he told my mother, had obſerved many things in my diſcourſe, actions, and turn of mind, that preſaged wonderful expectations from me, if my genius was but properly cultivated.

This diſcourſe, from a man of very good parts, and eſteemed by every body an accompliſhed gentleman, by degrees wrought upon my mother, and more and more inflamed her with a deſire of adding what luſtre ſhe could to my applauded abilities, and influenced her ſo far as to aſk his advice in what manner moſt properly to proceed with me. My gentleman then had his deſire; for he feared not the widow, could he but properly diſpoſe of her charge; ſo having deſired a little time to conſider of a matter of ſuch importance, he ſoon after told her he thought the moſt uſeful method of eſtabliſhing me, would be at an academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious gentleman, about thirty, or more, miles from us, in Somerſetſhire; where, if I could but be admitted, the maſter taking in but a ſtated number of ſtudents at a time, he did not in the leaſt doubt but I ſhould fully anſwer the character he had given her of me, and out-ſhine moſt of my cotemporaries.

My mother, over-anxious for my good, ſeeming to liſten to this propoſal, my friend (as I call him) propoſed taking a journey himſelf to the academy, to ſee if any place was vacant for my reception, and learn the terms of my admiſſion; and in three days time returned with an engaging account of the place, the maſter, the regularity of the ſcholars, of an apartment ſecured for my reception, and, in ſhort, whatever elſe might captivate my mother's opinion in favour of his ſcheme; and, indeed, though he acted principally from another motive, as was plain afterwards, I cannot help thinking he believed it to be the beſt way of diſpoſing of a lad, ſixteen years old, born to a pretty fortune, and who, at that age, could but juſt read a chapter in the Teſtament: for he had before beat my mother quite out of her inclination to a grammar-ſchool in the neighbourhood, from a contempt, he ſaid, it would bring upon me from lads much my juniors in years, by being placed in the firſt rudiments of learning with them.

Well, the whole concern of my mother's little family was now employed in fitting me out for my expedition; and as my friend had been ſo inſtrumental in bringing it about, he never miſſed a day enquiring how preparations went on; and, during the proceſs, by humouring me, ingratiated himſelf more and more with my mother, but without ſeeming in the leaſt to aim at it.

In ſhort, the hour of my departure arrived; and, though I had never been maſter of above ſixpence at one time, unleſs at a fair, or ſo, for immediate ſpending, my mother, thinking to make my heart eaſy at our ſeparation, (which, had it appeared otherwiſe, would have broke her's, and ſpoiled all) gave me a double piſtole in gold, and a little ſilver in my pocket to prevent my changing it.

Thus I, (the coach waiting for us at the door) having been preached into a good-liking of the ſcheme by my friend, who now inſiſted upon making one of our company to introduce us, mounted the carriage with more alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the ſmoak of his mother's chimney; but the thoughts I had conceived, from my friend's diſcourſe, of liberty in the academick way, and the weight of ſo much money in my pocket, as I then imagined would ſcarce ever be exhauſted, were prevailing cordials to keep my ſpirits on the wing. We lay at an inn that night, near the maſter's houſe, and the next day I was initiated; and, at parting with me, my friend

friend preſented me with a guinea. When I found myſelf thus rich, I muſt ſay I heartily wiſhed they were all fairly at home again, that I might have time to count my caſh, and diſpoſe of ſuch part of it as I had already appropriated to ſeveral uſes then in embryo.

The next morning left me maſter of my wiſhes; for my mother came and took her laſt (though ſhe little thought it) leave of me, and ſmothering me with her careſſes and prayers for my well-doing, in the heighth of her ardour, put into my hand another guinea, promiſing to ſee me again quickly; and deſiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good huſband, which I have ſince taken to be a ſort of prophetick ſpeech, ſhe bid me farewel.

I ſhall not trouble you with the reception I met from my maſter, or his ſcholars; or tell you how ſoon I made friends of all my companions, by ſome trifling largeſſes which my ſtock enabled me to beſtow as occaſion required: but I muſt inform you, that, after ſixteen years of idleneſs at home, I had but little heart to my nouns and pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldeſt lad in the houſe, I ſometimes regretted the loſs of the time paſt, and at other times deſpaired of ever making a ſcholar at my years; and was aſhamed to ſtand like a great lubber, declining of *hæc mulier*, a woman, whilſt my ſchool-fellows, and juniors by five years, were engaged in the love-ſtories of Ovid, or the luſcious ſongs of Horace. I own theſe thoughts almoſt overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholy, of which I ſoon after, by letter, informed my mother; who (by the advice, as I ſuppoſe, of my friend, by this time her ſuitor) ſent me word to mind my ſtudies, and I ſhould want for nothing.

CHAP. II.

HOW HE SPENT HIS TIME AT THE ACADEMY—AN INTRIGUE WITH A SERVANT-MAID THERE—SHE DECLARES HERSELF WITH CHILD BY HIM—HER EXPOSTULATIONS TO HIM—HE IS PUT TO IT FOR MONEY—REFUSED IT FROM HOME BY HIS FRIEND, WHO HAD MARRIED HIS MOTHER—IS DRAWN IN TO MARRY THE MAID—SHE LIES-IN AT HER AUNT'S—RETURNS TO HER SERVICE—HE HAS ANOTHER CHILD BY HER.

I Had now been paſſing my time for about three months in this melancholy way; and, you may imagine, under that diſadvantage, had made but little progreſs in my learning; when one of our maids taking notice one day of my uneaſineſs, as I ſat muſing in my chamber according to my cuſtom, began to rally me, that I was certainly in love, I was ſo ſad. Indeed, I never had a thought of love before; but the good-natured girl ſeeming to pity me, and ſeriouſly aſking me the cauſe, I fairly opened my heart to her; and, for fear my maſter ſhould know it, gave her half-a-crown to be ſilent. This laſt engagement fixed her my devotee, and from that time we had frequent conferences in confidence together; till at length inclination, framed by opportunity, produced the date of a world of concern to me: for, about ſix months after my arrival at the academy, inſtead of proving my parts by my ſcholarſhip, I had proved my manhood, by being the deſtined father of an infant, which my female correſpondent then aſſured me would ſoon be my own.

We, nevertheleſs, held on our frequent intercourſe; nor was I ſo alarmed at the news as I ought to have been, till about two months after; when Patty (for that was the only name I then knew her by) explained herſelf to me in the following terms—'You 'know, Mr. Peter, how matters are 'with me; I ſhould be very ſorry, for 'your ſake, and my own too, to re'veal my ſhame; but, in ſpite of us 'both, nature will ſhew itſelf; and, 'truly, I think, ſome care ſhould be 'taken, and ſome method propoſed, 'to preſerve the infant, and avoid, as 'far as may be, the inconveniences 'that may attend us; for here is now 'no room for delay.' This ſpeech, I own, gave me the firſt reflection I ever had in my life, and locked up all my faculties for a long time; nor was I able, for the variety of ideas that crouded my brain, to make a word of anſwer, but ſtood like an image of ſtone; till Patty, ſeeing my confuſion, deſired me

me to recollect my reaſon; for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that prudence and caution which the nature of the caſe required; and that, for her part, ſhe would concur in every reaſonable meaſure I ſhould approve of: but, I muſt remember, ſhe was only a ſervant, and had very little due to her for wages, and not a penny beſides that; and that there muſt neceſſarily be a preparation made for the reception of the infant, when time ſhould produce it. I now began to ſee the abſolute neceſſity of all ſhe ſaid; but how to accompliſh it was not in me to comprehend. My own ſmall matter of money was gone, and had been ſo a long time; we therefore agreed I ſhould write to my mother for a freſh ſupply. I did ſo; and, to my great confuſion, was anſwered by my former friend, in the following words—

'SON PETER,

'YOUR mother and I are much 'ſurprized you ſhould write for 'money, having ſo amply provided 'for you; but as it is not many months 'to Chriſtmas, when poſſibly we may 'ſend for you home, you muſt make 'yourſelf eaſy till then; as a ſchool-'boy, with all neceſſaries found him, 'can't have much occaſion for money.

'*Your loving father,*

'J. G.'

Imagine, if it is poſſible, my conſternation at the receipt of this letter. I began to think I ſhould be tricked out of what my father and grandfather had, with ſo much pains and induſtry, for many years been heaping up for me, and had a thouſand thoughts all together, juſtling out each other; ſo could reſolve on nothing. I then ſhewed Patty the letter, and we both condoled my hard fortune, but ſaw no remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be, as I could ſee. For my part, I was like one diſtracted, and no more able to aſſiſt, or counſel what ſhould be done, than a child in arms. At length poor Patty, who had ſat thinking ſome time, began, with telling me ſhe had formed a ſcheme which in ſome meaſure might help us; but, fearing it might be diſagreeable to me, ſhe durſt not mention it, till I ſhould aſſure her, whatever I thought of that, I would think no worſe of her for propoſing it. This preparatory introduction ſtartled me a great deal; for it darted into my head, ſhe waited for my concurrence to deſtroy the child; to which I could never have conſented. But, upon my aſſuring her that I would not think the worſe of her for whatever ſhe ſhould propoſe, but freely give her my opinion upon it, ſhe told me, as ſhe could ſee no other way before us, but what tended to our diſgrace and ruin, if I would marry her, ſhe would immediately quit her place, and retire to her aunt, who had brought her up from a child, and had enough prettily to live upon; who, ſhe did not doubt, would entertain her as my wife; but ſhe was aſſured, upon any other ſcore, or under any other name, would prove her moſt inveterate enemy. When Patty had made an end, I was glad to find it no worſe; and, revolving matters a little in my mind, both as to affairs at home, and the requeſted marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great inclination to acquaint my mother of it; but was diverted from that, by ſuſpecting it might prove a good handle for my new father, to work with my mother ſome miſchief againſt me; ſo determined to marry forthwith, ſend Patty to her aunt's, and remain ſtill at the academy myſelf, till I ſhould ſee what turn things would take at home. Accordingly, the next day, good part of Patty's wages went to tie the connubial knot, and to the honeſt parſon for a bribe to ante-date the certificate; and ſhe very ſoon after took up the reſt, to defray her journey to her aunt's.

Though Patty was within two months of her time, ſhe had ſo managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting ſafe to her aunt's, was delivered of a daughter, of which ſhe wrote me word, and ſaid, ſhe hoped to ſee me at the end of her month. 'How,' thought I, 'can ſhe expect 'to ſee me; money I have none!' and then I deſpaired of leave for a journey, if I had it; and to go without leave, would only arm J. G. againſt me, as I perceived plainly his intereſt and mine were very remote things; ſo I reſolved to quit all thoughts of a journey, and wait till opportunity better ſerved, for ſeeing my wife and child, and our good aunt, to whom we

we were ſo much obliged. While theſe and ſuch like cogitations engroſſed my whole attention, I was moſt pleaſingly ſurprized one day, upon my return from a muſing walk, by the river ſide, at the end of our garden, where I frequently got my taſks, to find Patty ſitting in the kitchen, with my old miſtreſs, my maſter's mother, who managed his houſe, he having been a widower many years. The ſight of her almoſt overcame me, as I had bolted into the kitchen, and was ſeen by my old miſtreſs, before I had ſeen Patty was with her. The old lady perceiving me diſcompoſed, enquired into the cauſe, which I directly imputed to the ſymptoms of an ague, that, I told her, I had felt upon me beſt part of the morning. She, a good motherly woman, feeling my pulſe, and ſatisfying herſelf of it's diſorder, immediately ran to her cloſet to bring me a cordial, which ſhe aſſured me had done wonders in the like caſes; ſo that I had but juſt time to embrace Patty, and enquire after our aunt and daughter, before Madam returned with the cordial. Having drank it, and given thanks, I was going to withdraw, but ſhe would not part with me ſo; for nothing leſs than my knowledge, that this cordial was of her own making, from whence ſhe had the receipt, and an exact catalogue of the ſeveral cures it had done, would ſerve her turn; which, taking up full three quarters of an hour, gave room to Patty and me to enjoy each other's glances for that time, to our mutual ſatisfaction. At laſt, the old prattlebox having made a ſhort pauſe, to recover breath, from the narrative of the cordial—'Mr. 'Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'you look as if you 'did not know poor Patty; ſhe has 'not left me ſo long that you ſhould 'forget her; ſhe is a good tight wench, 'and I was ſorry to part with her; 'but ſhe is out of place, ſhe ſays, and 'as that dirty creature Nan is gone, I 'think to take her again.' I told her, I well knew ſhe was judge of a good ſervant, and I did not doubt Patty was ſuch, if ſhe thought ſo; and then I made my exit, lighter in heart by a pound than I came.

I ſhall not tire you any farther with the amours between ſelf and Patty; but to let you know ſhe quitted her place again ſeven months after, upon the ſame ſcore.

CHAP. III.

MINDS HIS STUDIES—INFORMS HIS MASTER OF HIS MOTHER'S MARRIAGE, AND USAGE OF HIM—HEARS OF HER DEATH—MAKES HIS MASTER HIS GUARDIAN—GOES WITH HIM TO TAKE POSSESSION OF HIS ESTATE—IS INFORMED ALL IS GIVEN TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW—MORAL REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION, AND ON HIS FATHER'S CRIMES.

I Was now near nineteen years of age; and though I had ſo much more in my head than my ſchool-learning, I know not how it happened, but ever ſince the commencement of my amour with Patty, having ſomebody to diſburden my mind to, and to participate in my concerns, I had been much eaſier, and had kept true tally with my book, with more than uſual delight; and being arrived to an age to comprehend what I heard and read, I could, from the general idea I had of things, form a pretty regular piece of Latin, without being able to repeat the very rules it was done by; ſo that I had the acknowledgment of my maſter for the beſt capacity he ever had under his tuition: this, he not ſparing frequently to mention it before me, was the acuteſt ſpur he could have applied to my induſtry; and now, having his good will, I began to diſuſe ſet hours of exerciſe, but at my conveniency applied myſelf to my ſtudies, as I beſt pleaſed, being always ſure to perform as much, or more, than he ever enjoined me; till I grew exceedingly in his confidence, and by reaſon of my age, (though I was but ſmall, yet manly) I became rather his companion upon parties, than his direct pupil.

It was upon one of theſe parties I took the opportunity to declare the diſſatisfaction I had at my mother's ſecond marriage. 'Sir,' ſays I, 'ſurely 'I was of age to have known it firſt, 'eſpecially, conſidering the affection 'my mother had always ſhewn to me, 'and my never once having done the

'leaſt thing to diſoblige her; but, 'Sir,' ſaid I, 'ſomething elſe I fear 'is intended, by my mother's ſilence 'to me; for I have never received 'above three letters from her ſince I 'came here, which is now, you know, 'three years, and thoſe were within 'the firſt three months.' I then ſhewed him the fore-mentioned letter I received from my new father-in-law, and aſſured him, that gave me the firſt hint of this ſecond marriage.

I found, by the attention my maſter gave to my relation, he ſeemed to ſuſpect this marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the ſudden, knowing what to ſay to it, he told me he would conſider of it; and, by all means, adviſed me to write a very obliging letter to my new father, with my humble requeſt, that he would pleaſe to order me home the next receſs of our learning. I did ſo, under my maſter's dictation; and not long after received an anſwer to the following effect—

'SON PETER,

'YOUR mother has been dead a 'good while; and as to your re-'queſt, it will be only expenſive, and 'of little uſe; for a perſon who muſt 'live by his ſtudies can't apply to 'them too cloſely.'

This letter, if I had a little hope left, quite ſubdued my fortitude, and well-nigh reduced me to clay. However, with tears in my eyes, I ſhewed it to my maſter; who, good man! wiſhing me well; 'Peter,' ſays he, 'what can 'this mean, here is ſome myſtery con-'cealed in it; here is ſome ill deſign 'on foot!' Then taking the letter into his hand, "A perſon who muſt live by "his ſtudies," ſays he; 'here is more 'meant than we can think for. Why, 'have not you a pretty eſtate to live 'upon, when it comes to your hands? 'Peter,' ſays he, 'I would adviſe you 'to go to your father, and enquire 'how your affairs are left; but I am 'afraid to let you go alone, and will, 'when my ſtudents depart at Chriſt-'mas, accompany you myſelf with 'all my heart; for, you muſt know, 'I have adviſed on your affair already, 'and find you are of age to chuſe your-'ſelf a guardian, who may be any 'relation or friend you can confide in; 'and may ſee you have juſtice done you.' I immediately thanked him for the hint, and begged him to accept of the truſt, as my only friend, having very few, if any near relations: this he with great readineſs complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So ſoon as our ſcholars were gone home, my maſter lending me a horſe, we ſet out together, to poſſeſs ourſelves of all my father's real eſtate, and ſuch part of the perſonal as he had been adviſed would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old houſe, but were not received with ſuch extraordinary tokens of friendſhip, as would give the leaſt room to ſuppoſe we were welcome. For my part, all I ſaid, or could ſay, was, that I was very ſorry for my mother's death. My father replied, ſo was he. Here we pauſed, and might have ſat ſilent till this time for me, if my maſter, a grave man, who had ſeen the world, and was unwilling any part of our time there, which he gueſſed would be ſhort, ſhould be loſt, had not broke ſilence. 'Mr. 'G.' ſays he, 'I ſee the loſs of Ma-'ſter Wilkins's mother puts him un-'der ſome confuſion; ſo that you will 'excuſe me, as his preceptor and 'friend, in making ſome enquiry how 'his affairs ſtand, and how his effects 'are diſpoſed; as I don't doubt you 'have taken care to ſchedule every 'thing that will be coming to him; 'and though he is not yet of the ne-'ceſſary age for taking upon himſelf 'the management of his eſtate, he is 'nevertheleſs of capacity to under-'ſtand the nature, and quantum of it, 'and to ſhew his approbation of the 'diſpoſition of it, as if he was a year 'or two older.' During this diſcourſe, Mr. G. turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himſelf; but, however, kept ſilence till my maſter had done; when, with a ſneer, he replied, 'Sir, I muſt own 'myſelf a great ſtranger to your diſ-'courſe; nor can I, for my life, ima-'gine what your harangue tends to; 'but ſure I am, I know of no eſtate, 'real or perſonal, or any thing elſe 'belonging to young Mr. Wilkins, to 'make a ſchedule of, as you call it; 'but this I know, his mother had an 'eſtate in land, near two hundred a 'year, and alſo a good ſum of money, 'when I married her; but the eſtate

'ſhe

'she settled on me before her marriage, 'to diſpoſe of after her deceaſe as I ſaw 'fit; and her money and goods are all 'come to my ſole uſe, as her huſband.' I was juſt ready to drop, while Mr. G. gave this relation, and was not able to reply a word; but my maſter, though ſufficiently ſhocked at what he had heard, replied—'Sir, I am informed 'the eſtate, and alſo the money, you 'mention, was Mr. Wilkins's father's 'at his death; and I am ſurprized to 'think any one ſhould have a better 'title to them than my pupil, his only 'child.'—'Sir,' ſays Mr. G. 'you 'are deceived; and though what you 'ſay ſeems plauſible enough, and is in 'ſome part true, as that the late Mr. 'Wilkins had ſuch eſtate, and ſome 'hundreds, I may ſay thouſands, at his 'death; yet you ſeem ignorant that he 'made a deed, juſt before entering into 'the fatal rebellion, by which he gave 'my late wife both the eſtate, money, 'and every thing elſe he had, abſolutely, 'without any conditions whatſoever; 'all which, on his unhappy execu-'tion, ſhe enjoyed; and now of right, 'as I told you before, belongs to me: 'however, as I have no child, if Pe-'ter behaves well under your direction, 'I have thoughts of paying another 'year's board for him, and then he 'muſt ſhift for himſelf.'

'Oh!' cried I, 'for the mercy of 'ſome ſavage beaſt to devour me! Is 'this what I have been cocker'd up 'for! Why was I not placed out to 'ſome laborious craft, where I might 'have drudged for bread in my pro-'per ſtation! But, I fear, it is too 'late to enquire into what is paſt, and 'muſt ſubmit.'

My maſter, good man! was thun-derſtruck at what he had heard; and finding our buſineſs done there, we took our leaves; after Mr. G. had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my preceptor ſhould keep me ano-ther year, which was all I muſt ex-pect from him; and, at my departure, he gave me a crown-piece, which I then durſt not refuſe, for fear of of-fending my maſter.

We made the beſt of our way home again to my tutor's, where I ſtaid but a week to conſider what I ſhould do with myſelf. In this time he did all he could to comfort me, telling me, if I would ſtay with him, and become his uſher, he would compleat my learning for nothing, and allow me a ſalary for my trouble. But my heart was too lofty to think of becoming an uſher, within ſo little a way from mine own eſtate in other hands. However, ſince I had not a penny of money to endea-vour at recovering my right with, I told my maſter I would conſider of his propoſal.

During my ſtay with him, he uſed all methods to make me as eaſy as poſſible; and frequently moraliz'd with ſo much effect, that I was almoſt convinced I ought to ſubmit, and be content. Amongſt the reſt of his diſ-courſe, he endeavoured to ſhew me, (one day, after I had been loudly con-demning my cruel fortune, and ſaying I was born to be unhappy) that I was miſtaken, if I thought, or imagined, it was chance or accident that had been againſt me, when I complained of for-tune; 'For,' ſays he, 'Peter, there 'is nothing done below, but is at leaſt 'fore-known, if not decreed, above; 'and our buſineſs in life is to believe 'ſo: not that I would have ſuch be-'lief make us careleſs, and think it to 'no purpoſe to ſtrive, as ſome do; 'who being perſuaded that our actions 'are not in our own choice, but that 'being preſſed by an irreſiſtible de-'cree we are forced to act this or 'that, fancy we muſt be neceſſarily 'happy or miſerable hereafter; or, as 'others, who, for fear of falling upon 'that ſhocking principle, would even 'deprive the Almighty of fore-know-'ledge, leſt it ſhould conſequentially 'amount to a decree—"For," ſay 'they, "what is fore-known, will, "and muſt be." But I would have 'you act ſo, as that, let either of theſe 'tenets be true, you may ſtill be ſure 'of making yourſelf eaſy and happy: 'and for that purpoſe let me recom-'mend to you an uniform life of juſtice 'and piety; always chuſing the good 'rather than the bad ſide of every 'action; for this, ſay they what they 'will to the contrary, is not above the 'power of a reaſonable being to prac-'tiſe; and doing ſo, you may without 'ſcruple ſay, "If there is fore-know-"ledge of my actions, or they are de-"creed, I then am one who is fore-"known or decreed to be happy." And 'this, without farther ſpeculation, you 'will find the only means always to

'keep you ſo; for all men, of all denominations, fully allow this happy effect to follow good actions. Again, Peter, a perſon acting in a vicious courſe, with ſuch an opinion in his head as above, muſt ſurely be very miſerable, as his very actions themſelves muſt pronounce the decree againſt him: whilſt, therefore, we have not heard the decree read, you ſee we may eaſily give ſentence whether it be for good or evil to us, by the tenor and courſe of our own actions.

'You are not now to learn, Peter, that the crimes of the father are often puniſhed in the children, often in the father himſelf, ſometimes in both, and not ſeldom in neither, in this life; and though, at firſt, one ſhould think the future puniſhment, annexed to bad actions, was ſufficient, ſtill it is neceſſary ſome ſhould ſuffer here alſo for an example to others; we being much more affected with what the eye ſees, than what the heart only meditates upon.

'Now, to bring it to our own caſe: your father, Peter, roſe againſt the lawful magiſtrate, to deprive him (it matters not that he was a bad one) of his lawful power. Your father's policy was ſuch, and his deſign ſo well laid, as he thought, that upon any ill ſucceſs to himſelf, he had ſecured his eſtate to go in the way of all others he could wiſh to have it, and ſits down very well contented, that, happen what would, he ſhould bite the government, in preventing the forfeiture. But, lo! his policy is as a wall of ſand blown down with a puff! for it is to you it ought, even himſelf being umpire, to have come, as no one would think he could prize any before you his own child. Now, could he look from the grave, and know what paſſes here, and ſee Mr. G. in poſſeſſion of all he fancied he had ſecured for you, what a weak and ſhort-ſighted creature would he find himſelf! If it be ſaid, he did not know he ſhould have a child, then herein appears God's policy beyond man's; for he knew it, and has ſo ordered, that that child ſhould be diſinherited; for, by the way, Peter, take this for a maxim, wherever the firſt principle of an action is ill, no good conſequence can poſſibly ever be an attendant on it. Could he, as I ſaid before, but look up and ſee you, his only child, undone by the very inſtrument he deſigned for your ſecurity, how pungent would be his anxiety! I ſay, Peter, though there is ſomething ſo unaccountable, to human wiſdom, in ſuch events of things, yet there is ſomething therein ſo reaſonable and juſt withal, that by a prying eye, the Supreme Hand may very viſibly be ſeen in them. Now, this being plainly the caſe before us, and herein the glory of the Almighty exalted, reſt content under it, and let not this diſappointment, befallen you for your father's faults, be attended with others ſent down for your own; but remember this, the Hand that depreſſes a man, is no leſs able to exalt and eſtabliſh him.'

CHAP. IV.

DEPARTS SECRETLY FROM HIS MASTER—TRAVELS TO BRISTOL—RELIGIOUS THOUGHTS BY THE WAY—ENTERS ON SHIPBOARD, AND IS MADE CAPTAIN'S STEWARD.

I Seemed to be very well ſatisfied whilſt my maſter was ſpeaking; but though I thought he talked like an angel, my former uneaſineſs ſeized me at parting with him. In ſhort, without more conſideration, I roſe in the morning early, and marched off, having firſt wrote to my wife, at her aunt's, relating the ſtate of the caſe to her, with my reſolution to leave England the firſt opportunity, giving her what comfort I could, aſſuring her, if I ever was a gainer in life, ſhe ſhould not fail to be a partaker, and promiſing alſo to let her know where I ſettled. I walked at a great rate, for fear my maſter's kindneſs ſhould prompt him to ſend after me; and taking the bye-ways, I reached by dark-night a little village, where I reſolved to halt. Upon enquiry, I found myſelf thirty-five miles from my maſter's. I had eaten nothing all day, and was very hungry and weary, but my crown-piece was as yet whole; however, I fed very ſparingly, being over-preſſed with the diſtreſs of my affairs, and the confuſion of my thoughts. I ſlept that night tolerably;

literally; but the morning brought it's face of horror with it. I had enquired over night where I was, and been informed that I was not above ſixteen miles from Briſtol, for which place I then reſolved. At my ſetting out in the morning, after I had walked about three miles, and had recollected a little my maſter's laſt diſcourſe, I found by degrees my ſpirit grew calmer than it had been ſince I left Mr. G. at my houſe, (as I ſhall ever call it) and looking into myſelf for the cauſe, found another ſet of thoughts were preparing a paſſage into my mind, which did not carry half the dread and terror with them that their predeceſſors had; for I began to caſt aſide the difficulties and apprehenſions I before felt in my way, and encouraging the preſent motions, ſoon became ſenſible of the benefit of a virtuous education; and though what I had hitherto done in the immediate ſervice of God, I muſt own had been performed from force, cuſtom, and habit, and without the leaſt attention to the object of the duty; yet, as under my mother at home, and my maſter at the academy, I had been always uſed to ſay my prayers, as they called it, morning and night; I began, with a ſort of ſuperſtitious reflection, to accuſe myſelf of having omitted that duty the night before, and alſo, at my ſetting out in the morning, and very much to blame myſelf for it, and, at the ſame inſtant, even wondered at myſelf for that blame. 'What,' ſays I, 'is the real uſe of this 'praying? and to whom or to what 'do we pray? I ſee no one to pray to; 'neither have I ever thought that my 'prayers would be anſwered. It is 'true, they are worded as if we prayed 'to God: but he is in Heaven, does 'he concern himſelf with us, who can 'do him no ſervice? Can I think all my 'prayers that I have ſaid, from day to 'day, ſo many years, have been heard 'by him? No, ſure; if they had, I 'ſhould ſcarce have ſuſtained this hard 'fate in my fortune. But hold, how 'have I prayed to him? Have I as earneſtly prayed to him, as I uſed to petition my mother for any thing when 'I wanted it againſt her inclination? 'No, I can't ſay I have. And would 'my mother have granted me ſuch 'things, if ſhe had not thought I 'from my heart deſired them, when 'I uſed to be ſo earneſt with her? No, 'ſurely; I can't ſay ſhe had any reaſon for it. But I had her, indeed, 'before me; now I have not God in 'my view, he is in Heaven; yet, let 'me ſee, my maſter (and I can't help 'thinking he muſt know) uſed to ſay, 'that God is a ſpirit, and not confined 'by the incumbrance of a body, as we 'are; now, if it is ſo, why may he not 'virtually be preſent with me, though 'I don't perceive him? Why may he not 'be at once in Heaven and elſewhere? 'For, if he conſiſts not of parts, nothing 'can circumſcribe him: and, truly, I 'believe it muſt be ſo; for if he is of 'that ſupreme power as he is repreſented, he could never act in ſo unconfined a capacity, under the reſtraint of place; but if he is an operative and purely ſpiritual Being, 'then I can ſee no reaſon why his virtual eſſence ſhould not be diffuſed 'through all nature; and then, (which 'I begin to think moſt likely) why 'ſhould I not ſuppoſe him ever preſent with me, and able to hear me? 'And why ſhould not I, when I pray, 'have a full idea of the being, though 'not of any corporeal parts or form 'of God, and ſo have actually ſomewhat to be intent upon in my prayers? and not do as I have hitherto 'done, ſay ſo many words only upon 'my knees; which, I cannot help 'thinking may be as well without 'either ſenſe or meaning in themſelves, 'as without a proper object in my 'mind to direct them unto.'

Theſe thoughts agitated me at leaſt two miles, working ſtronger and ſtronger in me; till at length, burſting into tears, 'Have I been doing nothing,' ſays I, 'in the ſight of God, under 'the name of prayers, for ſo many 'years? Yes, it is certainly ſo. Well, 'by the grace of God, it ſhall be ſo no 'longer; I will try ſomewhat more.' So looking round about me, to ſee if I was quite alone, I ſtept into an adjoining copſe, and could ſcarce refrain falling on my knees, till I came to a proper place for kneeling in. I then poured forth my whole ſoul and ſpirit to God; and all my ſtrength, and every member, every faculty, was to the utmoſt employed, for a conſiderable time, in that moſt agreeable as well as uſeful duty. I would, indeed, have began with my accuſtomed prayers,

and

and had repeated ſome words of them; when, as though againſt and contrary to my deſign, I was carried away by ſuch rapturous effuſions, that, to this hour, when I reflect thereon, I cannot believe but I was moved to them by a much more than human impulſe. However, this extaſy did not laſt above a quarter of an hour; but it was conſiderably longer before my ſpirits ſubſided to their uſual frame. When I had a little compoſed myſelf, how was I altered; how did I condemn myſelf for all my paſt diſquiet! what calm thanks did I return for the eaſe and ſatisfaction of mind I then enjoyed! And coming to a ſmall rivulet, I drank an hearty draught of water, and contentedly proceeding on my journey, I reached Briſtol about four o'clock in the afternoon. Having refreſhed myſelf, I went the ſame evening to the Kay, to enquire what ſhips were in the river, whither bound, and when they would depart. My buſineſs was with the ſailors, of whom there were at that time great numbers there; but I could meet with no employ, though I gave out I would gladly enter myſelf before the maſt: after I had done the beſt I could, but without ſucceſs, I returned to the little houſe I had dined at, and went to bed very penſive. I did not forget my prayers; but I could by no means be rouzed to ſuch devotion as I felt in the morning. Next day I walked again to the Kay, aſking all I met, who looked like ſeafaring men, for employment; but could hear of none, there being many waiting for births; and I feared my appearance (which was not ſo mean as moſt of that ſort of gentry is) would prove no ſmall diſappointment to my preferment that way. At laſt, being out of heart with my frequent repulſes, I went to a landing-place juſt by, and as I aſked ſome ſailors, who were putting two gentlemen on ſhore, if they wanted a hand on board their ſhip, one of the gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the maſter of a veſſel bound to the coaſt of Africa, turned back, and looking earneſtly on me, 'Young man,' ſays he, 'do you want employment on 'board?' I immediately made him a bow, and anſwered, 'Yes, Sir.' Said he, 'There is no talking in this wea-'ther,' (for it then blew almoſt a ſtorm) 'but ſtep into that tavern,' pointing to the place, 'and I will be with you 'preſently.'—I went thither, and not long after came my future maſter. He aſked me many queſtions, but the firſt was, whether I had been at ſea. I told him no; but I did not doubt ſoon to learn the duty of a ſailor. He then looked on my hand, and ſhaking his head, told me it would not do, for I had too ſoft a hand. I told him I was determined for the ſea, and that my hand and heart ſhould go together; and I hoped my hand would ſoon harden, though not my heart. He then told me, it was pity to take ſuch a pretty young fellow before the maſt; but if I underſtood accounts tolerably, and could write a good hand, he would make me his ſteward, and make it worth my while. I anſwered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his offer; but on his aſking me where my cheſt was, ('For,' ſays he, 'if the wind had 'not been ſo ſtrong againſt me, I had 'fallen down the river this morning,') I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other ſtores than I carried on my back. The captain ſmiled. Says he, 'Young man, I ſee you are a 'novice; why, the meaneſt ſailor in 'my ſhip has a cheſt, at leaſt, and 'perhaps ſomething in it: come,' ſays he, 'my lad, I like your looks; be 'diligent and honeſt, I will let you 'have a little money to ſet you out, 'and deduct it in your pay.' He was then pulling out his purſe, when I begged him, as he ſeemed to ſhew me ſo great a kindneſs, that he would order ſomebody to buy what neceſſaries he knew I ſhould want for me, or I ſhould be under as great a difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them, as I ſhould have been at for want of them. He commended my prudence, and ſaid he would buy them, and ſend them on board himſelf; ſo bid me trouble myſelf no more about them, but go to the ſhip, in the return of his boat, and ſtay there till he came; giving me a ticket to the boat's crew to take me in. When I came to the ſhore, the boat was gone off, and at a good diſtance; but I hailed them, and ſhewing my ticket, they put back, and took me ſafe to the ſhip; heartily glad that I was entered upon my new ſervice.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

HIS FIRST ENTERTAINMENT ON BOARD—SETS SAIL—HIS SICKNESS—ENGAGEMENT WITH A FRENCH PRIVATEER—IS TAKEN AND LAID IN IRONS—TWENTY-ONE PRISONERS TURNED ADRIFT IN A SMALL BOAT WITH ONLY TWO DAYS PROVISION.

BEING once on board, and in pay, I thought I was a man for myſelf, and ſet about conſidering how to behave; and nobody knowing, as yet, upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a paſſenger, as my dreſs did not at all beſpeak me a ſailor; ſo every one, as I ſauntered about, had ſomething to ſay to me. By and by comes a pert young fellow up, 'Sir,' ſays he, 'your ſervant; what, I ſee, our captain has 'picked up a paſſenger at laſt.'—'Paſſenger,' ſays I, 'you are pleaſed 'to be merry, Sir; I am no paſſenger.'—'Why, pray,' ſays he, 'what may 'you be, then?'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'the 'captain's ſteward.'—'You impertinent puppy,' ſays he, 'what an anſwer you give me; you the captain's 'ſteward! No, Sir, that place, I can 'aſſure you, is in better hands!' and away he turned.—I knew not what to think of it, but was terribly afraid I ſhould draw myſelf into ſome ſcrape. By and by, others aſked me, ſome one thing, ſome another, and I was very cautious what anſwers I made them, for fear of offence: till a graviſh ſailor came and ſat down by me; and, after talking of the weather, and other indifferent matters, 'Pray,' ſays I, 'Sir, 'who is that gentleman that was ſo 'affronted at me ſoon after I came on 'board?'—'Oh,' ſays he, 'a proud 'inſignificant fellow, the captain's 'ſteward: but don't mind him, ſays he, 'he uſes the captain himſelf as 'bad; they have had high words juſt 'before the captain went on ſhore; 'and had he uſed me, as he did him, 'I ſhould have made no ceremony of 'tipping him over-board, a raſcal!'—Says I, 'you ſurprize me, for the 'captain ſent me on board to be his 'ſteward, and agreed with me about 'it this afternoon.'—'Huſh,' ſays he, 'I ſee how it will go; the captain, if 'that's the caſe, will diſcharge him 'when he comes on board; and, in'deed, I believe he would not have 'kept him ſo long, but we have wait'ed for a wind, and he could not pro'vide himſelf.'

The captain came on board at night; and the firſt thing he did was, to demand the keys of Mr. Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on ſhore.

The next morning the captain went on ſhore himſelf; but the wind chopping about, and ſtanding fair about noon, he returned then with my cheſt, and before night we were got into ſailing order, and before the wind, with a briſk gale.

What happened the firſt fourteen days of our paſſage I know not, having been all that time ſo ſick and weak, I could ſcarcely keep life and ſoul together; but after grew better and better. We proſecuted our voyage, touching, for about a week, at the Madeiras in our way. The captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard duty, and I paſſed my time, under his favour, very pleaſantly. One evening, being within ſixty leagues of the Cape of Palmes, calm weather, but the little wind we had againſt us, one of our men ſpied a ſail, and gave the captain notice of it. He not ſuſpecting danger, minded it little; and we made what way the wind would permit; but, night coming on, and the calm continuing, about peep of day we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a French privateer; who, hoiſting French colours, called out to us to ſtrike. Our captain had ſcarce time to conſider what to do, they were ſo near us; but as he had twenty-two men on board, and eight guns he could bring to, he called all hands on deck, and telling them the conſequence of a ſurrender, aſked them if they would ſtand by him. One and all ſwore they would fight the ſhip to the bottom, rather than fall into the privateer's hands. The captain immediately gave the word for a clear deck, prepared his fire-arms, and begged them to be active, and obey orders; and perceiving the privateer out-numbered our hands by abundance, he commanded all the ſmall arms to be brought upon deck loaded, and to run out as many of the ſhip's guns as ſhe could bring

bring to on one ſide; and to charge them all with ſmall ſhot; then ſtand to till he gave directions.—The privateer being a light ſhip, and a ſmall breeze ariſing, run up cloſe to us; firſt firing one gun, then another, ſtill calling out to us to ſtrike; but we neither returned fire nor anſwer, till he came almoſt within piſtol-ſhot of us, and ſeeing us a ſmall veſſel, thought to board us directly; but then our captain ordered a broadſide, and immediately all hands to come on deck; himſelf ſtanding there at the time of our firſt fire with his fuſee in his hand, and near him I ſtood with another. We killed eight men and wounded ſeveral others. The privateer then fired a broadſide through and through us. By this time our hands were all on deck, and the privateer puſhing, in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a volley from thence, that did good execution; and then all hands to the ſhip's guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the ſmall arms. It is incredible how ſoon they had fired the great guns, and were on deck again. This laſt fire, being with ball, raked the privateer miſerably. Then we fired the ſmall arms, and away to the ſhip's guns. This we did three times ſucceſſively without loſs of a man; and I believe if we could have held it once more, and no aſſiſtance had come to the privateer, ſhe had ſheered quite off: but our captain ſpying a ſail at ſome diſtance behind the privateer, who lay to windward of us, and ſeeing by his glaſs it was a Frenchman, was almoſt diſmayed; the ſame ſight put courage into our enemies, who thereupon redoubled the attack; and, the firſt volley of their ſmall arms ſhot our captain in the breaſt, upon which he dropped dead without ſtirring. I need not ſay, that ſight ſhocked me exceedingly. Indeed, it diſconcerted the whole action; and though our mate, a man of good courage and experience, did all that a brave man could do to animate the men, they apparently drooped, and the loſs of the ſhip became inevitable; ſo we ſtruck, and the Frenchman boarded us.

During the latter part of the engagement, we had two men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their wounds. We, who were alive, were all ordered on board the Frenchman; who, after rifling us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the hold. Our veſſel was then ranſacked; and the other privateer, who had ſuffered much the day before, in an engagement with an Engliſh twenty-gun ſhip of war, coming up, the prize was ſent by her into port, where ſhe herſelf was to refit.

In this condition did I, and fourteen of our crew, lie for ſix weeks; till the fetters on our legs had almoſt eaten to the bone, and the ſtench of the place had well-nigh ſuffocated us.

The Glorieux (for that was the name of the privateer who took us) ſaw nothing farther in five weeks worth her notice, which very much diſcouraged the men; and, conſulting together, it was agreed to cruize more northward, between Sierra Leon and Cape de Verde; but, about noon, next day, they ſpied a ſail, coming weſt, north-weſt, with a freſh gale. The captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and lie by for her. But, though ſhe diſcerned us, ſhe kept her way, bearing only more ſouthward; when the wind ſhifting to north-eaſt, ſhe ran for it, full before the wind, and we after her with all the ſail we could croud; and though ſhe was a very good ſailer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before night came pretty well up with her; but, being a large ſhip, and the evening hazy, we did not chuſe to engage her till morning. The next morning we found ſhe was ſlunk away; but we fetched her up, and, hoiſting French colours, fired a ſhot; which ſhe not anſwering, our captain run along-ſide of her, and fired a broadſide; then ſlackening upon her, a hard engagement enſued; the ſhot thumping ſo againſt our ſhip, that we priſoners, who had nothing to do in the action, expected death, one or other of us, every moment. The merchantman was ſo heavy loaded, and drew ſo much water, that ſhe was very unwieldy in action; ſo after a fight of two hours, when moſt of her rigging and maſts were cut and wounded, ſhe ſtruck. Twelve men were ſent on board her, and her captain and ſeveral officers were ordered on board us.

There were thirty-eight perſons in her, including paſſengers; all of whom, except five, and the like number which had

had been killed in the action, were sent chained into the hold to us, who had lain there almost six weeks. This prize put Monsieur into good heart, and determined him to return home with her. But in two days time, his new acquisition was found to have leaked so fast near the bottom, that before they were aware of it, the water was risen some feet. Several hands were employed to find out the leak; but all asserted it was too low to be come at: and as the pumps, with all the labour the prisoners, who were the persons put to it, could use, would not reduce it, but it still increased, they removed what goods they could into the privateer, and before they could unload it, the prize sunk.

The next thing they consulted upon, was, what to do with the prisoners, who, by the loss of the prize, were now grown too numerous to be trusted in the privateer; fearing, too, as they were now so far out at sea, by the great addition of mouths, they might soon be brought to short allowance, it was, on both accounts, resolved to give us the prize's boat, which they had saved, and turn us adrift to shift for ourselves. There were in all forty-three of us; but the privateer having lost several of their own men in the two engagements, they looked us over, and picking out two and twenty of us, who were the most likely fellows for their purpose, the remaining one and twenty were committed to the boat, with about two days provision and a small matter of ammunition, and turned out.

CHAP. VI.

THE BOAT, TWO HUNDRED LEAGUES FROM LAND, MAKES NO WAY, BUT DRIVES MORE TO SEA BY THE WIND—THE PEOPLE LIVE NINE DAYS AT QUARTER ALLOWANCE—FOUR DIE WITH HUNGER THE TWELFTH DAY—FIVE MORE THE FOURTEENTH DAY—ON THE FIFTEENTH THEY EAT ONE JUST DEAD—WANT OF WATER EXCESSIVE—SPY A SAIL—ARE TAKEN UP—WORK THEIR PASSAGE TO THE AFRICAN SHORE—ARE SENT ON A SECRET EXPEDITION—ARE WAY-LAID, TAKEN SLAVES, AND SENT UP THE COUNTRY.

WHEN we, who were in the boat, came to reflect on our condition, the prospect before us appeared very melancholy; though we had at first readily enough embraced the offer, rather than perish in so much misery as we suffered in our loathsome confinement. We now judged we were above two hundred leagues from land, in about eight degrees north latitude; and it blowing north-east, a pretty stiff gale, we could make no way, but rather lost, for we aimed at some port in Africa, having neither sail, compass, nor any other instrument to direct us; so that all the observation we could make was by the sun for running southward, or as the wind carried us, for we had lost the north-pole. As we had little above two day's provisions, we perceived a necessity of almost starving voluntarily, to avoid doing it quite; seeing it must be many days before we could reach shore, if ever we did, having visibly driven a great deal more southward than we were; nay, unless a sudden change happened, we were sure of perishing, unless delivered by some ship that Providence might send in our way. In short, the ninth day came, but no relief with it; and though we had lived at quarter allowance, and but just saved life, our food, except a little water, was all gone, and this caused us quite to despair. On the twelfth day four of our company died with hunger, in a very miserable way; and yet the survivors had not strength left to move them to pity their fellows. In truth, we had sat still, attempting nothing in several days; as we found, that unless the wind shifted, we only consumed the little strength we had left to no manner of purpose. On the fourteenth day, and in the night, five more died, and a sixth was near expiring; and yet we, the survivors, were so indolent, we would scarce lend a hand to throw them overboard. On the fifteenth day, in the morning, our carpenter, weak as he was, started up, and as the sixth man was just dead, cut his throat, and, whilst warm, would let out what blood

would flow; then, pulling off his old jacket, invited us to dinner, and cutting a large slice off the corpse, devoured it with as much seeming relish as if it had been ox-beef. His example prevailed with the rest of us, one after another, to taste and eat; and as there had been a heavy dew or rain in the night, and we had spread out every thing we had of linen and woollen to receive it, we were a little refreshed by wringing our cloaths, and sipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the sun, stowing them all close together to keep in the moisture, which served us to suck at for two days after, a little and a little at a time; for now we were in greater distress for water, than for meat. It has surprized me, many times since, to think how we could make so light a thing of eating our fellow-creature just dead before our eyes; but I will assure you, when we had once tasted, we looked on the blessing to be so great, that we cut and eat with as little remorse as we should have had for feeding on the best meat in an English market: and most certainly, when this corpse had failed, if another had not dropped by fair means, we should have used foul, by murdering one of our number as a supply for the rest.

Water, as I said before, to moisten our mouths, was now our greatest hardship, for every man had so often drank his own, that we voided scarce any thing but blood, and that but a few drops at a time; our mouths and tongues were quite flayed with drought, and our teeth just falling from our jaws; for, though we had tried, by placing all the dead men's jackets and shirts one over another, to strain some of the sea-water through them by small quantities, yet that would not deprive it of it's pernicious qualities; and though it refreshed a little in going down, we were so sick, and strained ourselves so much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miserable than before. Our corpse now stunk so, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on board, and every man began to look with an evil eye on his fellow, to think whose turn it would be next; for the carpenter had started the question, and preached us into the necessity of it; and we had agreed, the next morning, to put it to the lot who should be the sacrifice. In this distress of thought, it was so ordered, by good Providence, that, on the twenty-first day, we thought we spied a sail coming from the north-west, which caused us to delay our lots till we should see whether it would discover us or not: we hung up some jackets upon our oars to be seen as far off as we could, but had so little strength left we could make no way towards it; however, it happened to direct it's course so much to our relief, that, an hour before sun-set, it was within a league of us, but seemed to bear away more eastward, and our fear was, that they should not know our distress, for we were not able to make any noise from our throats that might be heard fifty yards; but the carpenter, who was still the best man amongst us, with much ado, getting one of the guns to go off, in less than half an hour she came up with us, and, seeing our deplorable condition, took us all on board, to the number of eleven. Though no methods were unessayed for our recovery, four more of us died in as many days. When the remaining seven of us came a little to ourselves, we found our deliverers were Portuguese, bound for Saint Salvadore. We told the captain, we begged he would let us work our passage with him, be it where it would, to shore; and then, if we could be of no farther service to him, we did not doubt getting into Europe again: but, in the voyage, as we did him all the service in our power, we pleased him so well, that he engaged us to stay with him, to work the ship home again, he having lost some hands by fevers soon after his setting sail.

We arrived safe in port; and, in a few days, the captain, who had a secret enterprize to take in hand, hired a country coasting-vessel, and sent her seventeen leagues farther on the coast for orders from some factory or settlement there. I was one of the nine men who were destined to conduct her; but, not understanding Portuguese, I knew little of the business we went upon. We were to coast it all the way; but, on the tenth day, just at sun-rise, we fell in with a fleet of boats, which had way-laid us, and were taken prisoners. Being carried ashore,

ashore, we were conducted a long way up the country, where we were imprisoned, and almost starved; though I never knew the meaning of it; nor did any of us, unless the mate, who, we heard, was carried up the country, much farther, to Angola; but we never heard more of him, though we were told he would be sent back to us.

Here we remained under confinement almost three months, at the end of which time our keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us, two and two together, sent a guard with us to Angola; when, crossing a large river, we were set to work in removing the rubbish and stones of a castle, or fortress, which had been lately demolished by an earthquake and lightning. Here we continued about five months, being very sparingly dieted, and locked up every night.

This place, however, I thought a paradise to our former dungeon; and, as we were not over-worked, we made our lives comfortable enough, having the air all day to refresh us from the heat, and not wanting for company; for there were, at least, three hundred of us about the whole work; and I often fancied myself at the tower of Babel, each labourer, almost, speaking in a language of his own.

Towards the latter end of our work, our keepers grew more and more remiss in their care of us. At my first coming thither, I had contracted a familiarity with one of the natives, but of a different kingdom, who was then a slave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to understand each other, he hinted to me, one day, the desire he had of seeing his own country and family; who neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, since he had left them, seven years before, to make war in this kingdom; and insinuated, that as he had taken a great liking to me, if I would endeavour to escape with him, and we succeeded, he would provide for me; 'For,' says he, 'you see, now our 'work is almost over, we are but 'slightly guarded; and if we stay till 'this job is once finished, we may be 'commanded to some new works, at 'the other end of the kingdom, for 'aught we know; so that our labours 'will only cease with our lives; and, 'for my part, immediate death, in the 'attempt of liberty, is to me preferable to a lingering life of slavery.'

These, and such like arguments, prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled most of the country before, in the wars of the different nations; so, having taken our resolution, the following evening, soon after our day's work, and before the time came for locking up, we withdrew from the rest, but within hearing; thinking, if we should then be missed, and called, we would appear, and make some excuse for our absence, but if not, we should have the whole night before us.

When we were first put upon this work, we were called over singly, by name, morning and evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly observed in our motions; but not one of us having been ever absent, our actions were at length much less minded than before, and the ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; so that we concluded, if we got away unobserved the first night, we should be out of the reach of pursuers by the next; which was the soonest it was possible for them to overtake us, as we proposed to travel the first part of our journey with the utmost dispatch.

CHAP. VII.

THE AUTHOR ESCAPES WITH GLANLIPZE, A NATIVE—THEIR HARDSHIPS IN TRAVEL—PLUNDER OF A COTTAGE — HIS FEARS — ADVENTURE WITH A CROCODILE—PASSAGE OF A RIVER—ADVENTURE WITH A LIONESS AND WHELP — ARRIVE AT GLANLIPZE'S HOUSE—THE TRIAL OF GLANLIPZE'S WIFE'S CONSTANCY — THE TENDER MEETING OF HER AND HER HUSBAND—THE AUTHOR'S REFLECTIONS THEREUPON.

HAVING now set out with all possible speed, we seemed to each other as joyful as we could; though it cannot be supposed we had no fears in our minds, the first part of our journey, for we had many; but as our way advanced our fears subsided; and having,

ing, with ſcarce any delay, puſhed forwards for the firſt twenty-four hours, nature then began to have two very preſſing demands upon us, food and reſt; but as one of them was abſolutely out of our power to comply with, ſhe contented herſelf with the other, till we ſhould be better able to ſupply her, and gave a farther time till the next day.

The next morning found us very empty, and ſharp ſet, though a very ſound night's reſt had contributed it's utmoſt to refreſh us. But what added much to our diſcomfort was, that though our whole ſubſiſtence muſt come from fruits, there was not a tree to be found at a leſs diſtance than twelve leagues, in the open rocky country we were then in; but a good draught of excellent water we met with, did us extraordinary ſervice, and ſent us with much better courage to the woods, though they were quite out of the way of our rout: there, by divers kinds of fruits, which, though my companion knew very well, I was quite a ſtranger to, we ſatisfied our hunger for the preſent, and took a moderate ſupply for another opportunity. This retarded our journey very much, for in ſo hard travel every pound weighed ſix before night.

I cannot ſay this journey, though bad enough, would have been ſo diſcouraging, but for the trouble of fetching our proviſions ſo far; and then, if we meant not to loſe half the next day in the ſame manner, we muſt double load ourſelves, and delay our progreſs by that means; but we ſtill went on, and in about eight days got quite clear of Angola.

On the eighth day, my companion, whoſe name was Glanlipze, told me we were very near the confines of Congo, but there was one little village ſtill in Angola, by which we muſt paſs, within half a league; and, if I would agree to it, he would go ſee what might be got here to ſupply ourſelves with. I told him I was in an unknown world, and would follow wherever he ſhould lead me; but aſked him if he was not afraid of the people, as he was not of that country. He told me, as there had been wars between them and his country for aſſiſting their neighbours of Congo, he was not concerned for any miſchief he ſhould do them, or they him; 'But,' ſays he, 'you have a knife in your pocket, 'and with that we will cut two ſtout 'clubs, and then follow me, fear no-'thing.'

We ſoon cut our clubs, and marching on, in the midſt of ſome ſmall ſhrubs, and a few ſcattering trees, we ſaw a little hovel, larger, indeed, but worſe contrived, than an Engliſh hog-ſtye, to which we boldly advanced; and Glanlipze entering firſt, ſaluted an old man, who was lying on a parcel of ruſhes. The man attempted to run away, but Glanlipze ſtopped him, and we tied his hands and feet. He then ſet up ſuch a hideous howl, that, had not Glanlipze threatened to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raiſed the whole village upon us: but we quieted him; and, rummaging to find proviſion, which was all we wanted, we, by good luck, ſpied beſt part of a goat hanging up behind a large mat at the farther end of the room. By this time in comes a woman with two children, very ſmall. This was the old man's daughter, of about five and twenty. Glanlipze bound her alſo, and laid her by the old man; but the two children we ſuffered to lie untied. We then examined her; who told us the old man was her father, and that her huſband, having killed a goat that morning, was gone to carry part of it to his ſiſter; that they had little or no corn; and finding we wanted victuals, ſhe told us there was an earthen pot we might boil ſome of the goat in if we pleaſed.

Having now ſeen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our bundle; when a muletto, very gently, put his head into the door-way: him Glanlipze immediately ſeized; and, bidding me fetch the great mat and the goat's fleſh, he, in the mean time, put a long rope he found there about the beaſt's neck, and laying the mat upon him, we packed up the goat's fleſh, and a little corn, in a calabaſh-ſhell; and then, turning up the mat round about, ſkewered it together, and over all we tied the earthen pot; Glanlipze crying out, at every thing we loaded, 'It is 'no hurt to plunder an enemy!' and ſo we marched off.

I own, I had greater apprehenſions from this adventure than from any thing before: 'For,' ſays I, 'if the

'woman's

'woman's huſband returns ſoon, or 'if ſhe or her father can releaſe them-'ſelves, they will raiſe the whole vil-'lage upon us, and we are undone.' But Glanlipze laughed at me; ſaying, we had not an hour's walk out of the Angola dominions, and that the King of Congo was at war with them, in helping the King of Loango, whoſe ſubject himſelf was; and that the Angolans durſt not be ſeen out of their bounds on that ſide the kingdom; for there was a much larger village of Congovians in our way, who would certainly riſe and deſtroy them, if they came in any numbers amongſt them; and though, the war being carried on near the ſea, the borders were quiet, yet, upon the leaſt ſtir, the whole country would be in arms, whilſt we might retire through the woods very ſafely.

Well, we marched on, as faſt as we could, all the remainder of that day, till moon-light, cloſe by the ſkirt of a long wood, that we might take ſhelter therein, if there ſhould be occaſion; and my eyes were the beſt part of the way behind me; but neither hearing nor ſeeing any thing to annoy us, and finding by the declivity of the ground we ſhould ſoon be in ſome plain or bottom, and have a chance of water for us all, and paſture for our muletto, which was now become one of us, we would not halt till we found a bottom to the hill; which in half an hour more we came to, and in ſome minutes after to a rivulet of fine clear water, where we reſolved to ſpend the night. Here we faſtened our muletto by his cord to a ſtake in the ground; but perceiving him not to have ſufficient range to fill his belly in before morning, we, under Glanlipze's direction, cut ſeveral long ſlips from the mat, and ſoaking them well in water, twiſted them into a very ſtrong cord, of ſufficient length, for the purpoſe. And now, having each of us brought a bundle of dry fallen ſticks from the wood with us, and gathered two or three flints as we came along, we ſtruck fire on my knife upon ſome rotten wood, and boiled a good piece of our goat's fleſh; and having made ſuch a meal as we had neither of us made for many months before, we laid us down and ſlept heartily till morning.

As ſoon as day broke we packed up our goods; and, filling our calabaſh with water, we loaded our muletto, and got forward very pleaſantly that day, and ſeveral others following, and had tolerable lodgings.

About noon, one day, travelling with great glee, we met an adventure which very much daunted me, and had almoſt put a ſtop to my hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great river, whoſe name I have now forgot, near a league over, but full, and eſpecially about the ſhores, of large trees that had fallen from the mountains, and been rolled down with the floods, and lodged there in a ſhocking manner. This river, Glanlipze told me, we muſt paſs: for my part, I ſhrunk at the ſight of it, and told him, if he could get over, I would not deſire to prevent his meeting with his family; but, as for my ſhare, I had rather take my chance in the woods on this ſide, than plunge myſelf into ſuch a ſtream only for the ſake of drowning. 'Oh!' ſays Glanlipze, 'then you can't ſwim?' —'No,' ſays I, 'there's my misfor-'tune.'—'Well,' ſays the kind Glanlipze, 'be of good heart, I'll have 'you over.' He then bade me go cut an armful of the talleſt of the reeds that grew there near the ſhore, whilſt he pulled up another where he then was, and bring them to him. The ſide of the river ſloped for a good way with an eaſy deſcent, ſo that it was very ſhallow where the reeds grew, and they ſtood very cloſe together upon a large compaſs of ground. I had no ſooner entered the reeds a few yards, to cut ſome of the longeſt, but (being about knee-deep in the water and mud, and every ſtep raiſing my feet very high to keep them clear of the roots, which were matted together) I thought I had trod upon a trunck of one of the trees, of which, as I ſaid, there was ſuch plenty thereabouts; and, raiſing my other foot, to get that alſo upon the tree, as I fancied it, I found it move along with me; upon which I roared out, when Glanlipze, who was not far from me, imagining what was the matter, cried out—'Leap off, and 'run to ſhore to the right!' I knew not yet what was the caſe, but did as I was bid, and gained the ſhore. Looking back, I perceived the reeds ſhake and ruſtle all the way to the ſhore, by degrees, after me. I was terribly frighten-

ened,

ched, and ran to Glanlipze, who then told me the danger I had eſcaped, and that what I took for a tree was certainly a large alligator or crocodile.

My blood ran chill within me, at hearing the name of ſuch a dangerous creature; but he had no ſooner told me what it was, than out came the moſt hideous monſter I had ever ſeen. Glanlipze ran to ſecure the muletto; and then, taking the cord which had faſtened him, and tying it to each end of a broken arm of a tree that lay on the ſhore, he marched up to the crocodile without the leaſt diſmay, and beginning near the tail, with one leg on one ſide, and the other on the other ſide, he ſtraddled over him, ſtill mending his pace as the beaſt crept forward till he came to his fore-feet; then throwing the great log before his mouth, he, by the cord in his hand, bobbed it againſt the creature's noſe, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the muletto; then of a ſudden, jerking the wood between his jaws with all his force by the cord, he gagged the beaſt, with his jaws wide open up to his throat, ſo that he could neither make uſe of his teeth, nor ſhut his mouth; he then threw one end of the cord upon the ground, juſt before the creature's under-jaw, which, as he by degrees crept along over it, came out behind his fore-legs on the contrary ſide; and ſerving the other end of it in the ſame manner, he took up thoſe ends and tied them over the creature's back, juſt within his fore-legs, which kept the gag firm in his mouth; and then calling out to me, (for I ſtood at a good diſtance) 'Peter,' ſays he, 'bring me your knife!' I trembled at going ſo near; for the crocodile was turning his head this way and that very uneaſy, and wanting to get to the river again; but yet I carried it, keeping as much behind him as I could, ſtill eyeing him which way he moved, and at length toſſed my knife ſo near that Glanlipze could reach it; and he, juſt keeping behind the beaſt's fore-feet, and leaning forward, firſt darted the knife into one eye, and then into the other; and immediately leaping from his back, came running to me. 'So, Peter,' ſays he, 'I have 'done the buſineſs.'—'Aye! buſineſs 'enough, I think;' ſays I, 'and more 'than I would have done to have been 'King of Congo.'—'Why, Peter,' ſays he, 'there is nothing but a man 'may compaſs by reſolution, if he takes 'both ends of a thing in his view at 'once, and fairly deliberates on both 'ſides what may be given and taken 'from end to end. What you have ſeen 'me perform, is only from a thorough 'notion I have of this beaſt, and of 'myſelf, how far each of us hath 'power to act and counter-act upon 'the other, and duly applying the 'means.—But,' ſays he, 'this talk 'will not carry us acroſs the river.— 'Come, here are the reeds I have 'pulled up, which, I believe, will be 'ſufficient without any more, for I 'would not overload the muletto.'— 'Why,' ſays I, 'is the muletto to 'carry them?'—'No, they are to carry you,' ſays he. 'I can never ride 'upon theſe,' ſays I. 'Huſh!' ſays he, 'I'll not loſe you, never fear. Come, 'cut me a good tough ſtick, the length 'of theſe reeds.'—'Well,' ſays I, 'this 'is all conjuration; but I don't ſee a 'ſtep towards my getting over the river yet, unleſs I am to ride the muletto upon theſe reeds, and guide myſelf 'with the ſtick.'—'I muſt own, Peter,' ſays he, 'you have a bright gueſs.' So, taking an armful of the reeds, and laying them on the ground; 'Now, Peter,' ſays he, 'lay that ſtick upon thoſe 'reeds, and tie them tight at both 'ends.' I did ſo. 'Now, Peter,' ſays he, 'lay yourſelf down upon them.' I then laying myſelf on my back, lengthwiſe, upon the reeds, Glanlipze laughed heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my breaſt upon the reeds at the height of my arm-pits; and then taking a handful of the reeds he had reſerved by themſelves, he laid them on my back, tying them to the bundle cloſe at my ſhoulders, and again at the ends. 'Now, Peter,' ſays he, 'ſtand up;' which I did, but it was full as much as I could do. I then ſeeing Glanlipze laughing at the figure I cut, deſired him to be ſerious, and not put me upon loſing my life for a joke; for I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear; and, looking more ſoberly, ordered me to walk to the river, and ſo ſtand juſt within the bank till he came; then leading the muletto to me, he tied me to her, about a yard from the tail, and, taking the cord in his hand, led the muletto and me into the water. We had not gone far before

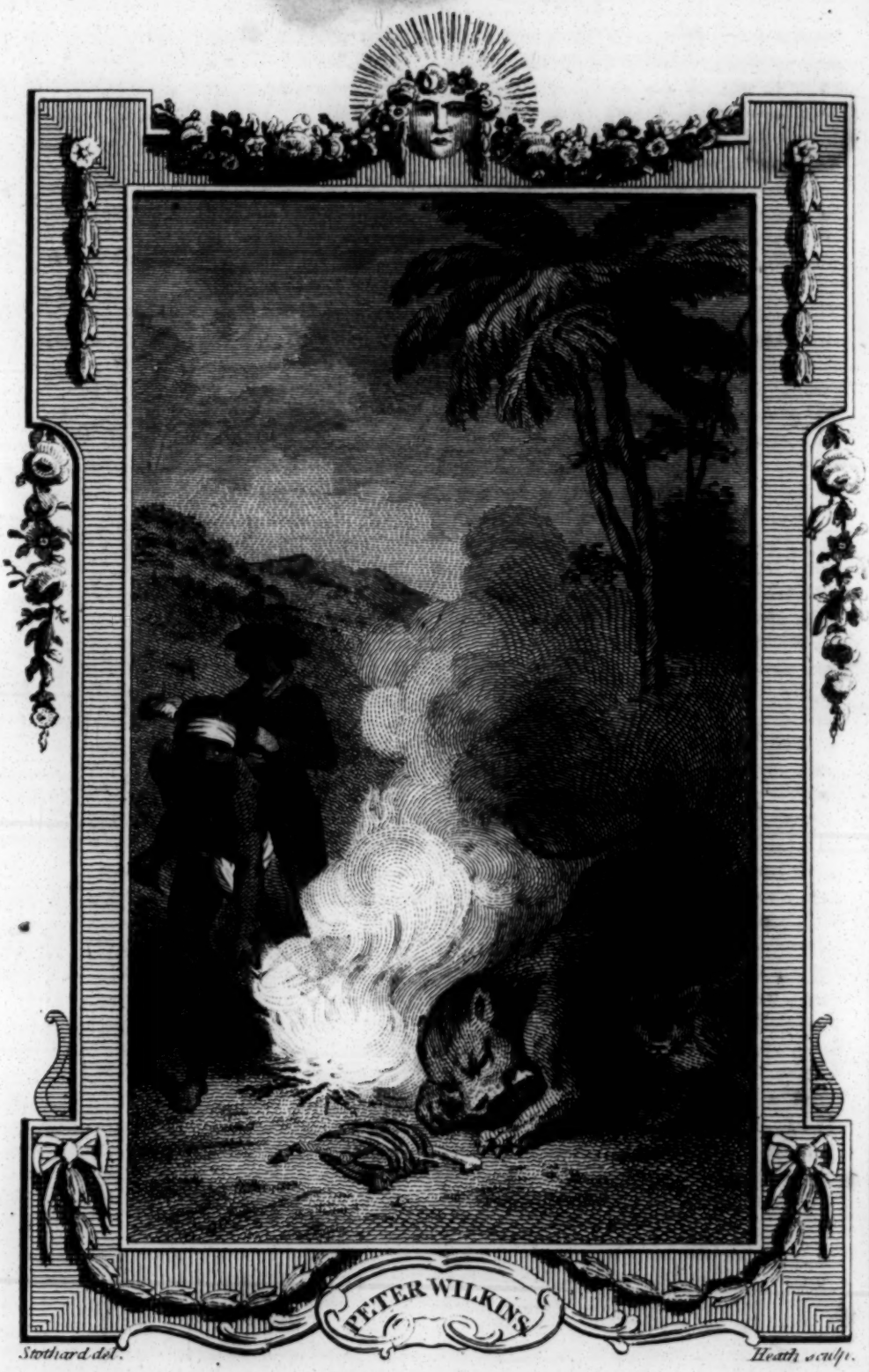


Plate II.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 9. 1783.

my guide began to ſwim; then the muletto and I were preſently chin-deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every moment: however, having gone ſo far, I was aſhamed to cry out; when, getting out of my depth, and my needs coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the eaſe imaginable: my conductor guiding us between the trees ſo dexterouſly, that not one accident happened to either of us all the way, and we arrived ſafe on the oppoſite ſhore.

We had now got into a very low, cloſe, ſwampy country, and our goat's fleſh began to be very ſtale through the heat, not only of the ſun, but the muletto's back: however, we pleaſed ourſelves we ſhould have one more meal of it before it was too bad to eat; ſo, having travelled about three miles from the river, we took up our lodging on a little riſing, and tied our muletto in a valley about half a furlong below us, where he made as good a meal in his way as we did in ours.

We had but juſt ſupped, and were ſauntering about to find the eaſieſt ſpot to ſleep on, when we heard a ruſtling and a grumbling noiſe in a ſmall thicket juſt on our right; which ſeeming to approach nearer and nearer, Glanlipze rouzed himſelf, and was on his legs juſt time enough to ſee a lioneſs, and a ſmall whelp which accompanied her, within thirty yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards gueſſed, for the ſake of our goat's fleſh, which now ſmelt very ſtrong. Glanlipze whipped on the contrary ſide of the fire to that where the goat's fleſh lay, and fell to kicking the fire about at a great rate, which being made of dry wood, cauſed innumerable ſparks to fly about us; but the beaſts ſtill approaching in a couchant manner, and ſeizing the ribs of the goat, and other bones, (for we had only cut the fleſh off) and grumbling and cracking them like rotten twigs, Glanlipze ſnatched up a fire-brand, flaming, in each hand, and made towards them, which ſight ſo terrified the creatures, that they fled with great precipitation to the thicket again.

Glanlipze was a little uneaſy at the thoughts of quitting ſo good a lodging as we had found, but yet held it beſt to move farther; for as the lions had left the bones behind them, we muſt expect another viſit if we ſtaid there, and could hope for no reſt; and, above all, we might poſſibly loſe our muletto; ſo we removed our quarters two miles farther, where we ſlept with great tranquillity.

Reflections on the nature of mankind have often aſtoniſhed me. I told you at firſt my thoughts concerning prayer, in my journey to Briſtol, and of the benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the neceſſity of it; which one would think was a ſufficient motive to a reaſonable creature to be conſtant in it; and yet, it is too true that, notwithſtanding the difficulties I had laboured under, and hardſhips I had undergone, and the danger of ſtarving at ſea or being murdered for food by my fellows, when there was as urgent a neceſſity of begging divine aſſiſtance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, nor of the Object of it, nor returned thanks for my being delivered, till the lioneſs had juſt left me; and then I felt near the ſame force, urging me to return thanks for my eſcape, as I had impelling me to prayer before; and I think I did ſo with great ſincerity.

I ſhall not trouble you with a relation of the common accidents of our journey, which laſted two months and better, nor with the different methods we uſed to get ſubſiſtence; but ſhall at once conduct you to Quamis, only mentioning that we were ſometimes obliged to go about, and were once ſtopped by a cut that my guide and companion received by a ragged ſtone in his foot, which growing very bad almoſt deprived me of the hopes of his life; but, by reſt, and conſtant ſucking and licking it, which was the only remedy we had to apply, except green leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his direction, to ſupple and cool it, he ſoon began to be able to ride upon the muletto, and ſometimes to walk a little.

I ſay, we arrived at Quamis, a ſmall place on a river of that name, where Glanlipze had a neat dwelling, and left a wife and five children when he went out to the wars. We were very near the town when the day cloſed; and, as it is ſoon dark there after ſunſet, you could but juſt ſee your hand at our entrance into it. We met nobody in the way, but I went directly to Glanlipze's door, by his direction, and

and ſtruck two or three ſtrokes hard againſt it with my ſtick. On this there came a woman to it ſtark-naked. I aſked her, in her own language, if ſhe knew one Glanlipze. She told me, with a deep ſigh, that once ſhe did. I aſked then, where he was. She ſaid with their anceſtors, ſhe hoped, for he was the greateſt warrior in the world; but, if he was not dead, he was in ſlavery. Now, you muſt know, Glanlipze had a mind to hear how his wife took his death, or ſlavery, and had put me upon aſking theſe queſtions before he diſcovered himſelf. I proceeded then to tell her, I brought ſome news of Glanlipze, and was lately come from him, and by his order. 'And does 'my dear Glanlipze live!' ſays ſhe, flying upon my neck, and almoſt ſmothering me with careſſes, till I begged her to forbear, or ſhe would ſtrangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a light, when ſhe ſaw I was a white man, ſhe ſeemed in the utmoſt confuſion at her own nakedneſs; and, immediately retiring, ſhe threw a cloth round her waiſt, and came to me again. I then repeated to her, that her huſband was alive and well, but wanted a ranſom to redeem himſelf, and had ſent me to ſee what ſhe could any ways raiſe for that purpoſe. She told me, ſhe and her children had lived very hardly ever ſince he went from her, and ſhe had nothing to ſell, or make money of, but her five children; that, as this was the time for the ſlaving-trade, ſhe would ſee what ſhe could raiſe by them, and if that would not do, ſhe would ſell herſelf and ſend him the money, if he would let her know how to do it.

Glanlipze, who heard every word that paſſed, finding ſo ſtrong a proof of his wife's affection, could hold out no longer; but, burſting into the room, claſped her in his arms, crying, 'No, 'Zulika!' (for that was her name) 'I 'am free; there will be no occaſion for 'your or my dear children's ſlavery; 'and rather than have purchaſed 'my freedom at that rate, I would 'willingly have died a ſlave myſelf. 'But my own ears have heard the ten-'der ſentiments my Zulika has for 'me.' Then, drowned in tears of joy, they embraced each other ſo cloſe, and ſo long, that I thought it impertinent to be ſeen with them, till their firſt tranſports were over. So I retired without the houſe, till Glanlipze called me in, which was not in leſs than full half an hour. I admired at the love and conſtancy of the perſons I had juſt left behind me; and, 'Good 'Heaven,' thinks I to myſelf, with a ſigh, 'how happy has this our eſcape 'rendered Glanlipze and his wife! 'what a mutual felicity do they feel! 'And what is the cauſe of all this? Is 'it that he has brought home great 'treaſures from the wars? Nothing 'like it; he is come naked. Is it that, 'having eſcaped ſlavery and poverty, 'he is returned to an opulent wife, 'abounding with the good things of 'life? No ſuch thing. What, then, 'can be the cauſe of this exceſs of ſa-'tisfaction, this alternate joy, that 'Patty and I could not have been as 'happy with each other? Why, it was 'my pride that interpoſed and pre-'vented it. But what am I like to 'get by it, and by all this travel, and 'theſe hazards? Is this the way to 'make a fortune, to get an eſtate? No, 'ſurely, the very contrary. I could 'not, forſooth, labour for Patty and 'her children, where I was known; 'but am I any better for labouring 'here, where I am not known, where 'I have nobody to aſſiſt me, than I 'could have been where I am known, 'and where there would have been my 'friends about me, at leaſt, if they 'could have afforded no great aſſiſt-'ance? I have been deceived, then, and 'have travelled ſo many thouſand 'miles, and undergone ſo many dan-'gers, only to know, at laſt, I had 'been happier at home; and have 'doubled my miſery, for want of con-'ſideration, that very conſideration 'which, impartially taken, would have 'convinced me I ought to have made 'the beſt of my bad circumſtances, 'and to have laid hold of every com-'mendable method of improving them. 'Did I come hither to avoid daily 'labour or voluntary ſervitude at 'home? I have had it in abundance. 'Did I come hither to avoid poverty 'and contempt? Here I have met with 'them ten-fold. And now, after all, 'was I to return home empty and 'naked, as Glanlipze has done; ſhould 'I meet a wife, as bare as myſelf, 'ſo ready to die in my embraces, 'and to be a ſlave herſelf, with her 'children, for my ſake only? I fear 'not!'

Theſe and the like reflections had taken poſſeſſion of me, when Glanlipze called me in; where I found his wife, in her manner, preparing our ſupper, with all that chearfulneſs which gives a true luſtre to innocence.

The buſtle we made had by this time awakened the children; who, ſtark-naked, as they were born, both boys and girls, came crawling out, and black as jett, from behind a curtain at the farther end of the room, which was very long. The father, as yet, had only enquired after them; but, upon ſight of them, he fell into an extaſy, kiſſing one, ſtroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldeſt was ſcarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for ſeven years makes a great chaſm in young memories. The more I ſaw of this ſport the ſtronger impreſſions Patty and my own children made upon me. My mind had been ſo much employed on my own diſtreſſes, that thoſe dear ideas were almoſt effaced; but this moving ſcene introduced them afreſh, and imprinted them deeply on my imagination, which cheriſhed the ſweet remembrance.

CHAP. VIII.

HOW THE AUTHOR PASSED HIS TIME WITH GLANLIPZE—HIS ACQUAINTANCE WITH SOME ENGLISH PRISONERS—THEY PROJECT AN ESCAPE—HE JOINS THEM—THEY SEIZE A PORTUGUESE SHIP, AND GET OFF—MAKE A LONG RUN FROM LAND—WANT WATER—THEY ANCHOR AT A DESART ISLAND—THE BOAT GOES ON SHORE FOR WATER—THEY LOSE THEIR ANCHOR IN A STORM—THE AUTHOR AND ONE ADAMS DROVE TO SEA—A MIRACULOUS PASSAGE TO A ROCK—ADAMS DROWNED THERE—THE AUTHOR'S MISERABLE CONDITION.

I Paſſed my time with Glanlipze and his wife, who both really loved me, with ſufficient bodily quiet, for about two years: my buſineſs was chiefly in company with my patron, to cultivate a ſpot of ground wherein we had planted grain and neceſſaries for the family; and once or twice a week we went a fiſhing, and ſometimes hunted and ſhot veniſon. Theſe were our chief employments; for as to excurſions for ſlaves, which is a practice in many of thoſe countries, and what the natives get money by, ſince our own ſlavery, Glanlipze and I could not endure it.

Though I was tolerably eaſy in my external circumſtances, yet my mind hankering after England made my life ſtill unhappy; and that infelicity daily increaſed, as I ſaw the leſs probability of attaining my deſire. At length, hearing of ſome European ſailors, who were under confinement for contraband trade, at a Portugueſe fort about two leagues from Quamis, I reſolved to go to ſee them; and, if any of them ſhould be Engliſh, at leaſt to enquire after my native country. I went, and found two Dutchmen, who had been ſailors in Britiſh pay ſeveral years, three Scotchmen, an Iriſhman, and five Engliſhmen, but all had been long in Engliſh merchants ſervice. They were taken, as they told me, by a Portugueſe veſſel, together with their ſhip, as a Dutch prize, under pretence of contraband trade. The captain was known to be a Dutchman, though he ſpoke good Engliſh, and was then in Engliſh pay, and his veſſel Engliſh; therefore they would have it that he was a Dutch trader, and ſo ſeized his ſhip in the harbour, with the priſoners in it. The captain, who was on ſhore with ſeveral of his men, was threatened to be laid in irons, if he was taken; which obliged him and his men to abſcond, and fly over land, to an Engliſh factory, for aſſiſtance to recover his ſhip and cargo; being afraid to appear and claim it, amongſt ſo many enemies, without an additional force. They had been in confinement two months, and their ſhip confiſcated and ſold. In this miſerable condition I left them, but returned once or twice a week, for a fortnight or three weeks, to viſit them. Theſe inſtances of regard, as they thought them, created ſome confidence in me, ſo that they converſed with me very freely. Amongſt other diſcourſe, they told me, one day, that one of their crew, who went with the captain, had been taken ill on the way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good Portugueſe, he was not ſuſpected to belong to them; and that he had been

to viſit them, and would be there again that day. I had a mind to ſee him, ſo ſtaid longer than I intended, and in about an hour's time he came. After he was ſeated, he aſked who I was, and (privately) if I might be truſted. Being ſatisfied I might, for that I was a Corniſh man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to ſee he was not overheard: 'My lads,' ſays he, 'be of good courage, I have hopes for 'you; be but men, and we ſhall ſee 'better days yet.' I wondered to what this preface tended; when he told us, that ſince his return from the captain, as he ſpoke good Portugueſe, and had ſailed on board Portugueſe traders ſeveral years, he mixed among that people, and particularly among the crew of the Del Cruz, the ſhip which had taken them; that that ſhip had partly unloaded, and was taking in other goods for a future voyage; that he had informed himſelf of their ſtrength, and that very ſeldom more than three men and two boys lay on board; that he had hired himſelf to the captain, and was to go on board the very next day. 'Now,' ſays he, 'my lads, if you can break priſon any 'night after to-morrow, and come di-'rectly to the ſhip,' (telling them how ſhe lay, 'for,' ſays he, 'you cannot 'miſtake, you will find two or three 'boats moored in the gut againſt the 'church) I will be ready to receive 'you, and we will get off with her, 'in lieu of our ſhip they have taken 'from us, for there is nothing ready 'to follow us.'

The priſoners liſtened to this diſcourſe very attentively; but ſcratched their heads, fearing the difficulty of it, and ſeverer uſage if they miſcarried, and made ſeveral objections; but, at laſt, they all ſwore to attempt it the night but one following. Upon which the ſailor went away, to prepare for their reception on board. After he was gone, I ſurveyed his ſcheme attentively in my own mind, and found it not ſo difficult as I firſt imagined, if the priſoners could but eſcape cleverly. So, before I went away, I told them I approved of their purpoſe; and as I was their countryman, I was reſolved, with their leaves, to riſk my fortune with them. At this they ſeemed much pleaſed, and all embraced me. We then fixed the peremptory night, and I was to wait at the water-ſide, and get the boats in readineſs.

The priſon they were in was a Portugueſe fort, which had been deſerted ever ſince the building a much better on the other ſide of the river, a gun-ſhot lower. It was built with walls too thick for naked men to ſtorm; the captives were ſecurely locked up every night; and two ſoldiers or centinels, kept watch in an outer-room, who were relieved from the main-guard in the body of the building.

The expected night arrived; and a little before midnight, as had been concerted, one of the priſoners cried out, he was ſo parched up, he was on fire, he was on fire! The centinels were both aſleep; but the firſt that waked, called at the door, to know what was the matter; the priſoner ſtill crying out, 'I am on fire!' the reſt begged the centinel to bring a bowl of water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

The good-natured fellow, without waking his companion, brought the water, and having a lamp in the guard-room, opened the door; when the priſoners ſeizing his arms, and commanding him to ſilence, bound his hands behind him, and his feet together; then ſerving the other in the ſame manner, who was now juſt awake, and taking from them their ſwords and muſquets, they made the beſt of their way over the fort-wall; which, being built with buttreſſes on the inſide, was eaſily ſurmounted. Being got out, they were not long in finding me, who had before this time made the boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; ſo in we all got, and made good ſpeed to the ſhip, where we were welcomed by our companion, ready to receive us.

Under pretence of being a new-entered ſailor, he had carried ſome Madeira wine on board, and treated the men and boys ſo freely, that he had thrown them into a dead ſleep; which was a wiſe precaution. There being now, therefore, no fear of diſturbance or interruption, we drew up the two boats, and ſet all hands at work to put the ſhip under way; and plied it ſo cloſely, the wind favouring us, that by eleven o'clock the next morning we

were

were out of ſight of land; but we ſet the men and boys adrift, in one of the boats, nigh the mouth of the river.

The firſt thing we did, after we had made a long run from ſhore, was to conſult what courſe to ſteer. Now, as there was a valuable loading on board, of goods from Portugal, and others taken in ſince, ſome gave their opinion for ſailing directly to India, ſelling the ſhip and cargo there, and returning by ſome Engliſh veſſel: but that was rejected; for we did not doubt but notice would be given of our eſcape along the coaſt, and if we ſhould fall into the Portugueſe's hands, we could expect no mercy; beſides, we had not people ſufficient for ſuch an enterprize. Others, again, were for ſailing the directeſt courſe for England; but I told them, as our opinions were different, and no time was to be loſt, my advice was, to ſtretch ſouthward, till we might be quite out of fear of purſuit, and then, whatever courſe we took, by keeping clear of all coaſts, we might hope to come ſafe off.

My propoſal ſeemed to pleaſe the whole crew; ſo, crouding all the ſail we could, we puſhed ſouthward very briſkly before the wind for ſeveral days. We now went upon examining our ſtores, and found we had flour enough, plenty of fiſh, and ſalt proviſions, but were ſcant of water and wood; of the firſt whereof there was not half a ton, and but very little of the latter. This made us very uneaſy; and being none of us expert in navigation, farther than the common working of the ſhip, and having no chart on board that might direct us to the neareſt land, we were almoſt at our wit's end, and came to a ſhort allowance of liquor. That we muſt get water if we could, was indiſputable; but where to do it puzzled us, as we had determined not to get in with the African ſhore, on any account whatever.

In this perplexity, and under the guidance of different opinions, (for we were all captains now) we ſometimes ſteered eaſtward, and ſometimes weſtward, for about nine days; when we eſpied a little bluiſh cloud-like appearance to the ſouth-weſt: this continuing, we hoped it might be land, and therefore made to it. Upon our nearer approach, we found it to be, as we judged, an iſland; but, not knowing it's name, or whether it was inhabited, we coaſted round it two days, to ſatisfy ourſelves as to this laſt particular. Seeing no living creature on it during that time, and the ſhore being very broken, we came to an anchor about two miles from it, and ſent ten of our crew in our beſt boat, with ſome caſks, to get water and cut wood. The boat returned at night, with ſix men, and the caſks filled, having left four behind, to go on with the cutting of wood againſt next day. Accordingly, next morning, the boat went off again, and made two turns with water and wood ere night, which was repeated for two or three days after. On the ſixth ſhe went off for wood only, leaving none but me and one John Adams on board.

The boat had ſcarce reached the iſland, this laſt turn, before the day overcaſt, and there aroſe ſuch a ſtorm of wind, thunder, lightning, and hail, as I had never before ſeen. At laſt our cable broke cloſe to the anchor, and away we went with the wind, full ſouthward by weſt; and not having ſtrength to keep the ſhip upon a ſide wind, we were forced to ſet her head right before it, and let her drive. Our hope was, every hour, the ſtorm would abate; but it continued with equal violence for many days; during all which time, neither Adams nor I had any reſt, for one or other of us was forced, and ſometimes both, to keep her right before the wind, or ſhe would certainly have overſet. When the ſtorm abated, as it did by degrees, neither Adams nor I could tell where we were, or even in what part of the world.

I was ſorry I had no better a ſailor with me, for neither Adams nor myſelf had ever made more than one voyage till now, ſo that we were both unacquainted with the latitude, and ſcarce knew the uſe of the compaſs to any purpoſe; and, being out of all hope of ever reaching the iſland to our companions, we neither knew which way to ſteer, nor what to do: and, indeed, had we known where we were, we two only could not have been able to navigate the ſhip to any part we deſired, or ever get to the iſland, unleſs ſuch a wind as we had before would of itſelf have driven us thither.

Whilſt we were conſidering, day after day, what to do, though the ſea was now very calm and ſmooth, the ſhip ſeemed to ſail at as great a rate as before, which we attributed to the velocity ſhe had acquired by the ſtorm, or to currents that had ſet that way by the violence of the winds. Contenting ourſelves with this, we expected all ſoon to be right again; and as we had no proſpect of ever ſeeing our companions, we kept the beſt look-out we could, to ſee for any veſſel coming that courſe, which might take us in; and reſolved to reſt all our hopes upon that.

When we had ſailed a good while after this manner, we knew not whither, Adams called out, 'I ſee land!' My heart leaped within me for joy; and we hoped, the current that ſeemed to carry us ſo faſt, ſet in for ſome iſlands or rivers that lay before us. But ſtill we were exceedingly puzzled at the ſhip's making ſuch way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the land, which was now very viſible, the more ſpeed the ſhip made, though there was no wind ſtirring. We had but juſt time to think on this unexpected phænomenon, when we found that what we had taken for land was a rock of an extraordinary height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the ſhip increaſed it's motion; and all our ſtrength could not make her anſwer her rudder any other way. This put us under the apprehenſion of being daſhed to pieces immediately; and, in leſs than half an hour, I verily thought my fears had not been groundleſs. Poor Adams told me he would try when the ſhip ſtruck, if he could leap upon the rock, and ran to the head for that purpoſe; but I was ſo fearful of ſeeing my danger, that I ran under hatches, reſolving to ſink in the ſhip. We had no ſooner parted but I felt ſo violent a ſhock, that I verily thought the ſhip had brought down the whole rock upon her, and been thereby daſhed to pieces; ſo that I never more expected to ſee the light.

I lay under this terror for at leaſt half an hour, waiting the ſhip's either filling with water or bulging every moment. But finding neither motion in her, nor any water riſe, nor the leaſt noiſe whatſoever, I ventured, with an aching heart, from my retreat, and ſtole up the hatch-way as if an enemy had been on deck, peeping firſt one way, then another. Here nothing preſented but confuſion; the rock hung over the hatchway, at about twenty feet above my head, our foremaſt lay by the board, the mainmaſt yard-arm was down, and great part of the mainmaſt ſnapped off with it, and almoſt every thing upon deck was diſplaced. This ſight ſhocked me extremely; and calling for Adams, in whom I hoped to find ſome comfort, I was too ſoon convinced I had loſt him.

CHAP. IX.

WILKINS THINKS OF DESTROYING HIMSELF — HIS SOLILOQUY — STRANGE ACCIDENT IN THE HOLD—HIS SURPRIZE—CANNOT CLIMB THE ROCK—HIS METHOD TO SWEETEN HIS WATER—LIVES MANY MONTHS ON BOARD — VENTURES TO SEA IN HIS BOAT SEVERAL TIMES, AND TAKES MANY FISH—ALMOST OVERCOME BY AN EEL.

AFTER I had ſtood a while in the utmoſt confuſion of thought, and my ſpirits began to be a little compoſed, I was reſolved to ſee what damage the hull of the ſhip had received. Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only ſhe was immoveably fixed in a cleft of the rock, like a large arch-way, and there ſtuck ſo faſt, that though upon fathoming, I could find no bottom, ſhe never moved in the leaſt by the working of the water.

I now began to look upon Adams as a happy man, being delivered by immediate death, from ſuch an inextricable ſcene of diſtreſs, and wiſhed myſelf with him a thouſand times. I had a great mind to have followed him into the other world; yet, I know not how it is, there is ſomething ſo abhorrent to human nature, in ſelf-murder, be one's condition what it will, that I was ſoon determined on the contrary ſide. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large field to expatiate in upon the trial of his creatures, by bringing them into imminent dangers, ready to overwhelm them, and at the ſame time, as it were,

were, hanging out the flag of truce and mercy to them. These thoughts brought me to my knees, and I poured out my soul to God, in a strain of humiliation, resignation to his will, and earnest petitions for deliverance or support in this distress. Having finished, I found myself in a more composed frame; so having eaten a biscuit, and drank a cann of water, and not seeing any thing to be done whereby I could better my condition, I sat me down upon the deck, and fell into the following soliloquy.

'Peter,' says I, 'what have you to 'do here?'—'Alas!' replied I to myself, 'I am fixed against my will in 'this dismal mansion, destined, as 'rats might be, to devour the provi'sions only, and having eat all up, to 'perish with hunger for want of a sup'ply.'—'Then,' says I, 'of what 'use are you in the world, Peter?'—'Truly,' answered I, 'of no other 'use, that I can see, but to be an ob'ject of misery for Divine vengeance to 'work upon, and to shew what a de'plorable state human nature can be 'reduced to; for I cannot think any 'one else can be so wretched.'—'And 'again, Peter,' says I, 'what have 'you been doing ever since you came 'into the world?'—'I am afraid,' says I, 'I can answer no better to this 'question than to either of the for'mer; for if only reasonable actions 'are to be reckoned among my do'ings, I am sure I have done little 'worth recording; for, let me see 'what it all amounts to. I spent my 'first sixteen years in making a fool 'of my mother; my three next in 'letting her make a fool of me; and 'in being fool enough myself to get 'me a wife and two children before I 'was twenty. The next year was 'spent in finding out the misery of 'slavery from experience. Two years 'more I repined at the happiness of 'my benefactor, and at finding it was 'not my lot to enjoy the same. This 'year is not yet spent, and how many 'more are to come, and where they 'may be passed, and what they may 'produce, requires a better head than 'mine even to guess at; but certainly 'my present situation seems to pro'mise nothing beside woe and misery.'—'But hold a little,' says I, 'and let 'me clearly state my own wretched'ness. I am here, it is true; but for 'any good I have ever done, or any 'advantage I have reaped in other 'places, I am as well here as any 'where. I have no present want of 'food, or unjust or cruel enemy to 'annoy me; so, as long as the ship 'continues entire, and provisions last, 'I shall do tolerably. Then, why 'should I grieve or terrify myself 'about what may come? What my 'frighted imagination suggests may 'perhaps never happen. Deliver'ance, though not to be looked for, is 'yet possible: and my future fate may 'be as different from my present con'dition, as this is from the hopes with 'which I lately flattered myself. And 'why, after all, may I not die a natu'ral death here as well as any where? 'all mankind die, and then there is 'an end of all——An end of all! 'did I say? No, there is something 'within that gives me the lye when I 'say so. Let me see, "Death," my ma'ster used to say, "is not an end, but a "beginning, of real life:" and may it 'not be so? May I not as well, un'dergo a change from this to a differ'ent state of life, when I leave this 'world, as be born into it I know 'not from whence? Who sent me in'to this world? Who framed me of 'two natures so unlike, that death 'cannot destroy but one of them? It 'must be the Almighty God. But all 'God's works tend to some end; and 'if he has given me an immortal na'ture, it must be his intention that I 'should live somewhere and somehow 'for ever. May not this stage of be'ing, then, be only an introduction to 'a preparative for another? There is 'nothing in this supposition repug'nant to reason. Upon the whole, if 'God is the Author of my being, he 'only has a right to dispose of it, 'and I may not put an end thereto 'without his leave. It is no less true, 'that my continuing therein during 'his pleasure, and because it is so, 'may turn vastly to my advantage in 'his good time; it may be the means 'of my becoming happy for ever, 'when it is his will that I go hence. 'It is no less probable, that, dismal 'as my present circumstances appear, 'I may be even now the object of a 'kind Providence: God may be lead'ing me by affliction to repentance of

'former

'former crimes; deſtroying thoſe ſen-
'ſual affections that have all my days
'kept me from loving and ſerving
'him. I will therefore ſubmit myſelf
'to his will, and hope for his mercy.'

Theſe thoughts, and many others I then had, compoſed me very much, and by degrees reconciled me to my deſtined ſolitude. I walked my ſhip, of which I was now both maſter and owner, and employed myſelf in ſearching how it was faſtened to the rock, and where it reſted; but all to no purpoſe as to that particular. I then ſtruck a light, and went into the hold, to ſee what I could find uſeful, for we had never ſearched the ſhip ſince we took her.

In the hold I found abundance of long iron bars, which I ſuppoſe were brought out to be trafficked with the blacks. I obſerved they lay all with one end cloſe to the head of the ſhip, which I preſumed was occaſioned by the violent ſhock they received when ſhe ſtruck againſt the rock; but ſeeing one ſhort bar lying out beyond the reſt, though touching at the end one of the long bars, I thought to take it up, and lay it on the heap with the others; but the moment I had raiſed the end next the other bars, it flew out of my hand, with ſuch violence, againſt the head of the ſhip, and with ſuch a noiſe, as greatly ſurprized me, and put me in fear it had broke through the plank.

I juſt ſtayed to ſee no harm was done, and ran upon deck, with my hair ſtiff on my head; nor could I conceive leſs than that ſome ſubtle ſpirit had done this prank merely to terrify me.

It ran in my pate ſeveral days, and I durſt upon no account have gone into the hold again, though my whole ſupport had lain there; nay, it even ſpoiled my reſt, for fear ſomething tragical ſhould befal me, of which this amazing incident was an omen.

About a week after, as I was ſhifting myſelf, (for I had not taken my cloaths off ſince I came there) and putting on a new pair of ſhoes which I found on board, my own being very bad, taking out my iron buckles, I laid one of them upon a broken piece of the maſt that I ſat upon; when, to my aſtoniſhment, it was no ſooner out of my hand but up it flew to the rock, and ſtuck there. I could not tell what to make of it; but was ſorry the devil had got above deck. I then held ſeveral other things, one after another, in my hand, and laid them down where I laid the buckle, but nothing ſtirred, till I took out the fellow of that from the ſhoes; when, letting it go, away it jumped alſo to the rock.

I muſed on theſe phænomena for ſome time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the devil; who muſt, as I imagined, have a hand in ſuch unaccountable things as they then ſeemed to me. But at length reaſon got the better of theſe fooliſh apprehenſions, and I began to think there might be ſome natural cauſe of them, and next to be very deſirous of finding it out. In order to this, I ſet about making experiments, to try what would run to the rock, and what would not. I went into the captain's cabbin, and opening a cupboard, of which the key was in the door, I took out a pipe, a bottle, a pocket-book, a ſilver ſpoon, a tea-cup, &c. and laid them ſucceſſively near the rock; when none of them anſwered; but the key which I had brought out of the cupboard on my finger, dropping off while I was thus employed, no ſooner it was diſengaged, but away it went to it. After that I tried ſeveral other pieces of iron-ware, with the like ſucceſs. Upon this, and the needle of my compaſs ſtanding ſtiff to the rock, I concluded that this ſame rock contained great quantity of load-ſtone, or was itſelf one vaſt magnet, and that our lading of iron was the cauſe of the ſhip's violent courſe thereto, which I mentioned before.

This quite ſatisfied me, as to my notion of ſpirits, and gave me a more undiſturbed night's reſt than I had had before; ſo that now, having nothing to affright me, I paſſed the time tolerably well in my ſolitude, as it grew by degrees familiar to me.

I had often wiſhed it had been poſſible for me to climb the rock; but it was ſo ſmooth in many places, and craggy in others, and over-hanging, continuing juſt the ſame to the right and left of me as far as ever I could ſee, that from the impoſſibility of it, I diſcharged all thoughts of ſuch an attempt.

I had now lived on board three months, and perceived the days grow

ſhorter

ſhorter and ſhorter, till, having loſt the ſun for a little time, they were quite dark: that is, there was no abſolute day-light, or indeed viſible diſtinction between day and night; though it was never ſo dark but I could ſee well enough upon deck to go about.

What now concerned me the moſt was, my water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unſavoury, ſo that I could ſcarce drink it; but had no proſpect of better. Now and then, indeed, it ſnowed a little, which I made ſome uſe of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive; and, having nothing elſe to do, I ſet two open veſſels upon deck, and drawing water from the hold, I filled one of my veſſels, and letting it ſtand a day and a night, I poured it into the other, and ſo ſhifted it every twenty-four hours: this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive taſte, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheleſs a great help to it, by incorporating the freſh air with it; ſo that it became very potable: and this method I conſtantly uſed with my drinking-water, ſo long as I ſtayed on board the ſhip.

It had now been ſharp weather for ſome time; and the cold ſtill increaſing, this put me upon rummaging the ſhip farther than ever I thought to do before; when, opening a little cabbin under deck, I found a large cargo of fine French brandy, a great many bottles, and ſome ſmall caſks of Madeira wine, with divers cordial waters. Having taſted theſe, and taken out a bottle or two of brandy, and ſome Madeira, I locked up my door, and looked no farther that time.

The next day I enquired into my proviſions; and ſome of my fleſh having ſoaked out the pickle, I made freſh pickle, and cloſed it up again. I that day alſo found ſeveral cheeſes, caſed up in lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon: but what time of day or night it was when I eat this meal, I could not tell. I found a great many cheſts well filled, and one or two of tools, which ſome years after ſtood me in a very good ſtead; though I did not expect they would ever be of that ſervice when I firſt met with them.

In this manner I ſpent my time till I began to ſee broad day-light again, which cheared me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the dark ſeaſon, that ſhips were coming towards me, and that I ſhould once more have the converſation of mankind; for I had, by the ſmall glimmering, ſeen many large bodies (to my thinking) move at a little diſtance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the light; but though I hallooed as loud as I could, and often fired my gun, I never received an anſwer.

When the light returned, my days increaſed in proportion as they had before decreaſed; and gathering comfort from that, I determined to launch my ſmall boat, and to coaſt along the iſland, as I judged it, to ſee if it was inhabited, and by whom; I determined alſo to make me ſome lines for fiſhing, and carry my gun to try for other game if I found a place for landing: for though I had never, ſince my arrival ſeen a ſingle living creature but my cat, except inſects, of which there were many in the water and in the air before the dark weather, and then began to appear again, yet I could not but think there were both birds and beaſts to be met with.

Upon launching my boat, I perceived ſhe was very leaky; ſo I let her fill, and continue thus a week or more, to ſtop her cracks; then getting down the ſide of my ſhip, I ſcooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for uſe; ſo putting on board my gun, lines, brandy-bottles, and a cloaths-cheſt for a ſeat, with ſome little water, and proviſions for a week, I once more committed myſelf to the ſea; having taken all the obſervation I could, to gain my ſhip again, if any accident ſhould happen; though I reſolved, upon no account, to quit ſight of the rock willingly.

I had not rowed very long, before I thought I ſaw an iſland to my right, about a league diſtant, to which I inclined to ſteer my courſe, the ſea being very calm; but, upon ſurveying it nearer, I found it only a great cake of ice about forty yards high above the water, and a mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for ſhips, were only theſe lumps of ice. Being thus diſappointed as to my iſland, I made what haſte I could back to the rock again, and coaſted part of it's circumference; but though

I had

I had gone two or three leagues of it's circuit, the proſpect it afforded was juſt the ſame.

I then tried my lines, by faſtening ſeveral very long ones, made of the log-line, to the ſide of the boat, baiting them with ſeveral different baits, but took only one fiſh of about four pounds weight, very much reſembling a haddock; part of which I dreſſed for my ſupper, after my return to the ſhip, and it proved very good. Towards evening I returned to my home, as I may call it.

The next day I made a voyage on the other ſide of the rock, though but to a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, with intent only to fiſh, but took nothing. I had then a mind to victual my boat, or little cruizer, and prepare myſelf for a voyage of two or three days, which I thought I might ſafely undertake, as I had never ſeen a troubled ſea ſince I came to the iſland; for, though I heard the wind often roaring over my head, yet it coming always from the land-ſide, it never diſturbed the water near the ſhore. I ſet out the ſame way I went at firſt, deſigning to ſail two or three days out, and as many home again; and reſolved, if poſſible, to fathom the depth as I went. With this view I prepared a very long line, with a large ſhot tied in a rag at the end of it, by way of plummet; but I felt no ground till the ſecond night. The next morning I came into thirty fathom water, then twenty, then ſixteen. In both tours, I could perceive no abatement in the height or ſteepneſs of the rock.

In about fourteen fathom water I dropped my lines, and lay by for an hour or two. Feeling ſeveral jars, as I ſat on my cheſt in the boat, I was ſure I had caught ſomewhat; ſo pulling up my lines ſucceſſively, I brought firſt a large eel, near ſix feet long, and almoſt as thick as my thigh, whoſe mouth, throat, and fins, were of a fine ſcarlet, and the belly as white as ſnow: he was ſo ſtrong, while in the water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the boat, and then had a harder job to kill him; for though having a hatchet with me, to cut wood in caſe I met with any landing-place, I chopped off his head, the moment I had him on board, yet he had ſeveral times after that have liked to have broken my legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his life from him; and, had I not whipped off his tail, and alſo divided his body into two or three pieces, I could not have maſtered him. The next I pulled up was a thick fiſh like a tench, but of another colour, and much bigger. I drew up ſeveral others, flat and long fiſh, till I was tired with the ſport; and then I ſet out for the ſhip again, which I reached the third day.

During this whole time, I had but one ſhot, and that was as I came homewards, at a creature I ſaw upon a high crag of the rock, which I fired at with ball, fearing that my ſmall ſhot would not reach it. The animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the rock, very near me. I picked it up, and found it to be a creature not much unlike our rabbits, but with ſhorter ears, a longer tail, and hoofed like a kid, though it had the perfect ſluck of a rabbit. I put it into my boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the ſhip; and plying my oars, got ſafe, as I ſaid, on the third day.

I made me a fire to cook with as ſoon as I had got my cargo out of the boat into my ſhip, but was under debate which of my dainties to begin upon. I had ſometimes a mind to have broiled my rabbit, as I called it, and boiled ſome of my fiſh; but being tired, I hung up my fleſh till the next day, and boiled two or three ſorts of my fiſh, to try which was beſt. I knew not the nature of moſt of them, ſo I boiled a piece of my eel, to be ſure, judging that, however I might like others, I ſhould certainly be able to make a good meal of that. This variety being ready, I took a little of my oil out of the hold for ſauce, and ſat down to my meal, as ſatisfied as an emperor. But upon taſting my ſeveral meſſes, though the eel was rather richer than the ſmaller fiſhes, yet the others were all ſo good, I gave them the preference for that time, and laid by the reſt of the eel, and of the other fiſh, till the next day, when I ſalted them for future uſe.

I kept now a whole week or more at home, to look farther into the contents of the ſhip, bottle off a caſk of Madeira, which I found leaking, and to conſume my new ſtores of fiſh and fleſh;

flesh; which being somewhat stale, when first salted, I thought would not keep so well as the old ones that were on board; I added also some fresh bread to my provision, and sweetened more water by the aforementioned method; and when my necessary domestick affairs were brought under, I then projected a new voyage.

CHAP. X.

LAYS IN GREAT STORE OF PROVISION—RESOLVES TO TRAVERSE THE ROCK—SAILS FOR THREE WEEKS, STILL SEEING IT ONLY—IS SUCKED UNDER THE ROCK, AND HURRIED DOWN A CATARACT—CONTINUES THERE FIVE WEEKS—HIS DESCRIPTION OF THE CAVERN—HIS THOUGHTS AND DIFFICULTIES—HIS ARRIVAL AT A GREAT LAKE—AND HIS LANDING IN THE BEAUTIFUL COUNTRY OF GRAUNDEVOLET.

I Had for a long time wanted to see the other side of the rock, and at last resolved to try if I could not coast it quite round; for, as I reasoned with myself, I might possibly find some landing-places, and perhaps a convenient habitation on shore. But as I was very uncertain what time that might take up, I determined on having provisions, instruments of divers kinds, and necessary utensils in plenty, to guard against accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another seachest out of the hold of the ship, and letting it into my boat, replenished it with a stock of wine, brandy, oil, bread, and the like, sufficient for a considerable voyage. I also filled a large cask with water, and took a good quantity of salt to cure what fish I should take by the way. I carried two guns, two brace of pistols, and other arms, with ammunition proportionable; also an ax or two, a saw to cut wood if I should see any, and a few other tools, which might be highly serviceable if I could land. To all these I added an old sail, to make a covering for my goods and artillery against the weather. Thus furnished and equipped, having secured my hatches on board, and every thing that might spoil by wet, I set out, with a God's speed, on my expedition; committing myself once more to Providence and the main ocean, and proceeding the same way I went the first time.

I did not sail extraordinary fast, but frequently fished in proper places, and caught a great deal, salting and drying the best of what I took. For three weeks time and more, I saw no entrance into the island, as I call it, nor any thing but the same unscaleable rock. This uniform prospect gave me so little hopes of landing, that I was almost of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature deliberation, resolving to go forward a day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four hours, when, just as it was becoming dark, I heard a great noise, as of a fall of water; whereupon I proposed to lie by and wait for day, to see what it was: but the stream insensibly drawing me on, I soon found myself in an eddy; and the boat drawing forward, beyond all my power to resist it, I was quickly sucked under a low arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my boat, having barely light enough to see my danger, I had undoubtedly been crushed to pieces, or driven over-board. I could perceive the boat to fall with incredible violence, as I thought, down a precipice, and suddenly whirled round and round with me; the water roaring on all sides, and dashing against the rock with a most amazing noise.

I expected every moment my poor little vessel would be staved against the rock, and I overwhelmed with waters; and for that reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my peril, till after the commotion had in some measure ceased. At length, finding the perturbation of the water abate, and as if by degrees I came into a smoother stream, I took courage just to lift up my affrighted head; but guess, if you can, the horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of darkness, unable to perceive the smallest glimmer of light.

However, as my boat seemed to glide easily, I rouzed myself, and struck a light: but if I had my terrors before, what must I have now! I was quite stupified at the tremendous view of an immense arch over my head, to which I could see no bounds; the stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty yards broad, but in some places wider,

in ſome narrower. It was well for me I happened to have a tinder-box, or, though I had eſcaped hitherto, I muſt have at laſt periſhed; for in the narrower parts of the ſtream, where it ran ſwifteſt, there were frequently ſuch craggs ſtood out from the rock, by reaſon of the turnings and windings, and ſuch ſets of the current againſt them, as, could I not have ſeen to manage my boat, which I took great care to keep in the middle of the ſtream, muſt have thrown me on them, to my inevitable deſtruction.

Happy it was for me, alſo, I was ſo well victualled, and that I had taken with me two bottles of oil, (as I ſuppoſed, for I did not imagine I had any more) or I had certainly been loſt, not only through hunger, for I was, to my gueſs, five weeks in the vault or cavern, but for want of light, which the oil furniſhed, and without which all other conveniences could have been of no avail to me. I was forced to keep my lamp always burning; ſo, not knowing how long my reſidence was to be in that place, or when I ſhould get my diſcharge from it, if ever, I was obliged to huſband my oil with the utmoſt frugality; and notwithſtanding all my caution, it grew low, and was juſt ſpent, in little above half the time I ſtayed there.

I had now cut a piece of my ſhirt, for a wick to my laſt drop of oil, which I twiſted and lighted. I burnt the oil in my braſs tobacco-box, which I had fitted pretty well to anſwer the purpoſe. Sitting down, I had many black thoughts of what muſt follow the loſs of my light, which I conſidered as near expiring, and that, I feared, for ever. 'I am here,' thought I, 'like a poor condemned criminal, 'who knows his execution is fixed for 'ſuch a day, nay, ſuch an hour, and 'dies over and over in imagination, 'and by the torture of his mind, till 'that hour comes: that hour, which 'he ſo much dreads! and yet that very 'hour which releaſes him from all 'farther dread!—Thus do I—My laſt 'wick is kindled—my laſt drop of 'fuel is conſuming!—and I am every 'moment apprehending the ſhocks of 'the rock, the ſuffocation of the wa-'ter; and, in ſhort, thinking over my 'dying thoughts, till the ſnuff of my 'lamp throws up it's laſt curling, expiring flame, and then my quietus 'will be preſently ſigned, and I re-'leaſed from my tormenting anxiety! 'Happy minute! Come, then; I only 'wait for thee!'

My ſpirits grew ſo low and feeble upon this, that I had recourſe to my brandy-bottle to raiſe them; but, as I was juſt going to take a ſip, I reflected that would only increaſe thirſt, and, therefore, it were better to take a little of my white Madeira: ſo, putting my dram-bottle again into the cheſt, I held up one of Madeira, as I fancied, to the lamp; and ſeeing it was white, (for I had red too) I clapped it eagerly to my mouth, when the firſt gulp gave me a greater refreſhment, and more cheered my heart, than all the other liquors I had put together could have done; inſomuch as I had almoſt leaped over the boat's-ſide for joy. 'It is 'oil!' cried I, aloud, 'it is oil!' I ſet it down carefully, with inexpreſſible pleaſure; and examining the reſt of the bottles I had taken for white Madeira, I found two more of thoſe to be filled with oil. 'Now,' ſays I, 'here is the counter-part of my con-'demned priſoners! For let but a par-'don come, though at the gallows, 'how ſoon does he forget he has been 'an unhappy villain! And I, too, have 'ſcarce a notion now, how a man, in 'my caſe, could feel ſuch ſorrow as 'I have for want of a little oil.'

After my firſt tranſport, I found myſelf grow ſerious; reflecting upon the vigilance of Providence over us poor creatures, and the various inſtances wherein it interpoſes to ſave or relieve us, in caſes of the deepeſt diſtreſs, where our own foreſight, wiſdom, and power, have utterly failed, and when, looking all around, we could diſcover no means of deliverance. And I ſaw a train of circumſtances leading to the incident I have juſt mentioned, which obliged me to acknowledge the ſuperintendence of Heaven over even my affairs: and as the goodneſs of God had cared for me thus far, and manifeſted itſelf to me now, in reſcuing me, as it were, from being ſwallowed up in darkneſs, I had ground to hope he intended a compleat deliverance of me out of that diſmal abyſs, and would cauſe me yet to praiſe him in the full brightneſs of day.

A ſeries of theſe meditations brought me

me (at the end of five weeks, as nearly as I could compute it by my lamp) to a prodigious lake of water, bordered with a graſſy down, about half a mile wide, of the fineſt verdure I had ever ſeen: this again was flanked with a wood or grove, riſing like an amphitheatre, of about the ſame breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked rock to an immenſe height.

CHAP. XI.

HIS JOY ON HIS ARRIVAL AT LAND —A DESCRIPTION OF THE PLACE —NO INHABITANTS — WANTS FRESH WATER — RESIDES IN A GROTTO—FINDS WATER—VIEWS THE COUNTRY — CARRIES HIS THINGS TO THE GROTTO.

IT is impoſſible to expreſs my joy at the ſight of day once more. I got on the land as ſoon as poſſible, after my diſmiſſion from the cavern, and, kneeling on the ground, returned hearty thanks to God for my deliverance, begging, at the ſame time, grace to improve his mercies, and that I might continue under his protection, whatever ſhould hereafter befal me, and at laſt die on my native ſoil.

I unloaded my veſſel as well as I could, and hauled her up on the ſhore; and, turning her upſide down, made her a covering for my arms and baggage: I then ſat down to contemplate the place, and eat a moſt delightful meal on the graſs, being quite a new thing to me.

I walked over the green-ſward to the wood, with my gun in my hand, a brace of piſtols in my girdle, and my cutlaſs hanging before me; but, when I was juſt entering the wood, looking behind me, and all around the plain, 'Is it poſſible,' ſays I, 'that 'ſo much art (for I did not then believe it was natural) could have been 'beſtowed upon this place, and no inhabitant in it? Here are neither 'buildings, huts, caſtle, nor any living creature to be ſeen!—It cannot 'be,' ſays I, 'that this place was 'made for nothing!'

I then went a conſiderable way into the wood, and inclined to have gone much farther, it being very beautiful; but, on ſecond thoughts, judged it beſt to content myſelf at preſent with only looking out a ſafe retreat for that night; for, however agreeable the place then ſeemed, darkneſs was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or leſs of horror in it.

The wood, at it's firſt entrance, was compoſed of the moſt charming flowering ſhrubs that can be imagined; each growing upon it's own ſtem, at ſo convenient a diſtance from the other, that you might fairly paſs between them any way without the leaſt incommodity. Behind them grew numberleſs trees, ſomewhat taller, of the greateſt variety of ſhapes, forms, and verdures, the eye ever beheld; each, alſo, ſo far aſunder as was neceſſary for the ſpreading of their ſeveral branches, and the growth of their delicious fruits, without a buſh, briar, or ſhrub, amongſt them. Behind theſe, and ſtill on the higher ground, grew an infinite number of very large, tall trees, much loftier than the former, but intermixed with ſome underwood, which grew thicker and cloſer the nearer you approached the rock. I made a ſhift to force my way through theſe as far as the rock; which roſe as perpendicular as a regular building, having only here and there ſome crags and unevenneſſes. There was, I obſerved, a ſpace all the way between the underwood and the rock, wide enough to drive a cart in; and, indeed, I thought it had been left for that purpoſe.

I walked along this paſſage a good way, having tied a rag of the lining of my jacket at the place of my entrance, to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be ere it grew dark; but I found ſo much pleaſure in the walk, and ſurveying a ſmall natural grotto which was in the rock, that the day-light forſook me unawares; whereupon I reſolved to put off my return unto the boat till next morning, and to take up my lodging for that night in the cave.

I cut down a large bundle of underwood with my cutlaſs, ſufficient to ſtop up the mouth of the grotto, and laying me down to reſt, ſlept as ſound as if I had been on board my ſhip; for I never had one hour's reſt together ſince I ſhot the gulph till this. Nature, in-

deed, could not have ſupported itſelf thus long under much labour; but as I had nothing to do, but only keep the middle ſtream, I began to be as uſed to guide myſelf in it with my eyes almoſt cloſed, and my ſenſes retired, as a higler is to drive the cart to market in his ſleep.

The next morning I awaked ſweetly refreſhed; and, by the ſign of my rag, found the way again through the underwood to my boat. I raiſed that up a little, took out ſome bread and cheeſe, and, having eat pretty heartily, laid me down to drink at the lake, which looked as clear as chryſtal, expecting a moſt delicious draught; but I had forgot it brought me from the ſea, and my firſt gulp almoſt poiſoned me. This was a ſore diſappointment, for I knew my water-caſk was nigh emptied; and, indeed, turning up my boat again, I drew out all that remained, and drank it, for I was much athirſt.

However, I did not deſpair; I was now ſo uſed to God's providence, and had a ſenſe of it's operations ſo rivetted in my mind, that though the vaſt lake of ſalt-water was ſurrounded by an impenetrable rock or barrier of ſtone, I reſted ſatisfied that I ſhould rather find even that yield me a freſh and living ſtream than that I ſhould periſh for want of it.

With this eaſy mind did I travel five or ſix miles on the ſide of the lake, and ſometimes ſtepped into the wood, and walked a little there, till I had gone almoſt half the diameter of the lake, which lay in a circular or rather an oval figure. I had then thoughts of walking back, to be near my boat and lodging, for fear I ſhould be again benighted if I went much farther; but, conſidering I had come paſt no water, and poſſibly I might yet find ſome if I went quite round the lake, I rather choſe to take up with a new lodging that night, than to return: and I did not want for a ſupper, having brought out with me more bread and cheeſe than had ſerved for dinner, the remainder of which was in the lining of my jacket. When it grew darkiſh, I had ſome thoughts of eating; but I conſidered, as I was then neither very hungry nor dry, if I ſhould eat it would but occaſion drought, and I had nothing to allay that with; ſo I contented myſelf for that night to lay me down ſupperleſs.

In the morning I ſet forward again upon my water-ſearch, and hoped to compaſs the whole lake that day. I had gone about ſeven miles more, when, at a little diſtance before me, I perceived a ſmall hollow or cut in the graſs from the wood to the lake; thither I haſted with all ſpeed, and bleſſed God for the ſupply of a fine freſh rill, which, diſtilling from ſeveral ſmall clefts in the rock, had collected itſelf into one ſtream, and cut it's way through the green ſod to the lake.

I lay down with infinite pleaſure, and ſwallowed a moſt chearing draught of the precious liquid; and, ſitting on the brink, made a good meal of what I had with me, and then drank again. I had now got five-ſixths of the lake's circumference to go back again to my boat; for I did not ſuſpect any paſſage over the cavern's mouth where I came into the lake; and I could not, without much trouble, conſider, that, if I would have this water for a conſtant ſupply, I muſt either come a long way for it, or fix my habitation near it. I was juſt going back again, revolving theſe uneaſy thoughts in my breaſt, when this roſe ſuddenly in my mind; that, if I could poſſibly get over the mouth of the cavern, I ſhould not have above three miles from my grotto to the water. Now, as I could not get home that night, otherwiſe than by croſſing it, and as, if I loſt my labour, I ſhould be but where I was, whereas if I ſhould get over it, it would very much ſhorten my journey, I reſolved to try whether the thing was practicable; firſt, however, looking out for a reſting-place ſomewhere near my water, if I ſhould meet with a diſappointment.

I then walked into the wood; where, meeting with no place of retreat to my liking, I went to my rill, and taking another ſup, determined not to leave that ſide of the lake till morning; but having ſome time to ſpare, I walked about two miles to view the inlet of the lake, and was agreeably ſurprized, juſt over the mouth of the cavern, to ſee a large ſtone-arch like a bridge, as if it had been cut out of the rock, quite acroſs the opening: this cheered me vaſtly; and, puſhing over it, I found a path

a path that brought me to my boat before night.

I then went up to my grotto, for the third night in this moſt delightful place; and the next morning early I launched my boat, and taking my water-caſk and a ſmall dipping-bucket with me, I rowed away for the rill, and returned highly pleaſed with a ſufficiency of water, whereof I carried a bucket and a copper-kettle full up with me to the grotto. Indeed, it was not the leaſt part of my ſatisfaction that I had this kettle with me; for though I was in hopes, in my laſt voyage, I ſhould have come to ſome ſhore, where I could have landed and enjoyed myſelf over ſome of my fiſh, and for that reaſon had taken it, notwithſtanding things did not turn out juſt as I had ſchemed, yet my kettle proved the moſt uſeful piece of furniture I had.

Having now acquainted myſelf with the circumference of the lake, and ſettled a communication with my rill, I began to think of commencing houſe-keeper. In order thereunto, I ſet about removing my goods up to the grotto. By conſtant application, in a few days I had gotten all thither but my two great cheſts and my water-caſk; and how to drag or drive any of thoſe to it, I was entirely at a loſs. My water-caſk was of the utmoſt importance to me, and I had thoughts, ſometimes, of ſtopping it cloſe, and rolling it to the place; but the aſcent through the wood to the grotto was ſo ſteep, that, beſides the fear of ſtaving it, which would have been an irreparable loſs, I judged it impoſſible to accompliſh it by my ſtrength; ſo, with a good deal of diſcontent, I determined to remit both that and the cheſts to future conſideration.

CHAP. XII.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE GROTTO—A ROOM ADDED TO IT—A VIEW OF THAT BUILDING—THE AUTHOR MAKES A LITTLE CART—ALSO A WET DOCK FOR HIS BOAT—GOES IN QUEST OF PROVISION—A DESCRIPTION OF DIVERS FRUITS AND PLANTS—HE BRINGS HOME A CART-LOAD OF DIFFERENT SORTS—MAKES EXPERIMENTS ON THEM—LOADS HIS CART WITH OTHERS—A GREAT DISAPPOINTMENT—MAKES GOOD BREAD—NEVER SEES THE SUN—THE NATURE OF THE LIGHT.

HAVING come to a full reſolution of fixing my reſidence at the grotto, and making that my capital ſeat, it is proper to give you ſome deſcription of it.

This grotto, then, was a full mile from the lake, in the rock which encompaſſed the wood. The entrance was ſcarcely two feet wide, and about nine feet high, riſing, from the height of ſeven feet upward, to a point in the middle. The cavity was about fifteen feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to lie lengthwiſe in it, full ſix feet of it were taken up at the farther end for my lodging only, as nothing could ſtand on the ſide of my bed that would leave me room to come at it. The remaining nine feet of the cave's length were taken up, firſt, by my fire-place, which was the deepeſt ſide of the door-way, ranging with my bed, (which I had ſet cloſe to the rock on one ſide) and took up near three feet in length; and my furniture and proviſions, of one ſort or other, ſo filled up the reſt, that I had much ado to creep between them into my bed.

In the cheſt which I had taken for a ſeat in the boat, as aforeſaid, upon breaking it open by the water-ſide, I found a mattraſs, ſome ſhirts, ſhoes, ſtockings, and ſeveral other uſeful things; a ſmall caſe of bottles with cordials in them, ſome inſtruments of ſurgery, plaiſters and ſalves; all which, together with a large quantity of fiſh that I had ſalted, I carried to the grotto.

My habitation being thus already over-charged, and as I could not, however, bear the thoughts of quitting it, or of having any of my goods expoſed to the weather on the outſide, I was naturally bent on contriving how I ſhould encreaſe my accommodations. As I had no proſpect of enlarging the grotto itſelf, I could conceive no other way of effecting my deſire but by the addition of an outer-room. This thought pleaſed me very much, ſo that the next day I ſet myſelf to plan out the building, and trace the foundation of it.

I told you before there was about the

the ſpace of a cart-way between the wood and the rock clear; but this breadth, as I was building for life, (ſo I imagined) not appearing to me ſpacious enough for my new apartment, I conſidered how I ſhould extend it's bounds into the wood. Hereupon I ſet myſelf to obſerve what trees ſtood at a proper diſtance from my grotto, that might ſerve as they ſtood, with a little management of hewing and the like, to compoſe a noble door-way, poſts, and ſupporters; and I found, that upon cutting down three of the neareſt trees, I ſhould anſwer my purpoſe in this reſpect; and that there were ſeveral others, about twenty feet from the grotto, and running parallel with the rock, the ſituation of which was ſo happily adapted to my intention, that I could make them become, as I fancied, an out-fence or wall: ſo I took my ax, to cut down my neareſt trees; but as I was going to ſtrike, a ſomewhat different ſcheme preſented to my imagination that altered my reſolution.

In conformity with this new plan, I fixed the height of my intended cieling, and ſawed off my neareſt trees to that, ſloping from the ſides to the middle, to ſupport croſs beams for the roof to reſt on, and left the trunks ſtanding, by way of pillars, both for the uſe and ornament of the ſtructure. In ſhort, I worked hard every day upon my building for a month, in which time I had cut all my timber into proper lengths for my out-works and covering; but was at a great ſtand how to fix my ſide-poſts, having no ſpade or mattock, and the ground almoſt as hard as flint, for to be ſure it had never been ſtirred ſince the creation. I then thought I had the worſt part of my job to get over; however, I went on, and having contrived, in moſt of my upright ſide-quarters, to take the tops of trees, and leave on the lower parts of their cleft, where they began to branch out and divide from the main ſtem, I ſet one of them upright againſt the rock, then laid one end of my long cieling-pieces upon the cleft of it, and laid the other end upon a tree on the ſame ſide, whoſe top I had alſo ſawed off with a proper cleft. I then went and did the ſame on the other ſide; after this, I laid on a proper number of croſs-beams and tied all very firmly together with the bark of young trees ſtripped off in long thongs, which anſwered that purpoſe very well. Thus I proceeded, croſſing, joining, and faſtening all together, till the whole roof was ſo ſtrong and firm that there was no ſtirring any part of it: I then ſpread it over with ſmall lop-wood, on which I raiſed a ridge of dried graſs and weeds, very thick, and thatched over the whole with the leaves of a tree very much reſembling thoſe of a palm, but much thicker, and not quite ſo broad; the entire ſurface, I might ſay, was as ſmooth as a dye, and ſo ordered, by a gentle declivity every way, as to carry off the wet.

Having covered in my building, I was next to finiſh and cloſe the walls of it; the ſkeleton of theſe was compoſed of ſticks, croſſing one another checker-wiſe and tied together: to fill up the voids, I wove upon them the longeſt and moſt pliable twigs of the underwood I could find, leaving only a door-way on one ſide, between two ſtems of a tree, which dividing in the trunk, at about two feet from the ground, grew from thence, for the reſt of it's height, as if the branches were a couple of trees a little diſtant from one another, which made a ſort of ſtileway to my room. When this was all done, I tempered up ſome earth by the lake-ſide, and mixing it to a due conſiſtence with mud, which I took from the lake, applied it as a plaſtering in this manner: I divided it into pieces, which I rolled up of the ſize of a foot-ball; theſe lumps I ſtuck cloſe by one another on the lattice, preſſing them very hard with my hands, which forced part of them quite through the ſmall twigs, and then I ſmoothed both ſides with the back of my ſaw, to about the thickneſs of five or ſix inches, ſo that by this means I had a wall round my new apartment a foot thick. This plaſter-work coſt me ſome time, and a great deal of labour, as I had a full mile to go to the lake for every load of ſtuff, and could carry but little at once, it was ſo heavy; but there was neither water for tempering, nor proper earth to make it with, any nearer. At laſt, however, I compleated my building in every reſpect but a door, and for this I was forced to uſe the lid of my ſea-cheſt; which, indeed, I would have choſen not to apply that way, but I had

had nothing elſe that would do; and there was, however, this conveniency, that it had hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myſelf in my new habitation, like the abſolute and ſole lord of the country, for I had neither ſeen man nor beaſt ſince my arrival, ſave a few animals in the trees like our ſquirrels, and ſome water-rats about the lake; but there were ſeveral ſtrange kinds of birds I had never before ſeen, both on the lake and in the woods.

That which now troubled me moſt was, how to get my water nearer to me than the lake, for I had no leſſer veſſel than the caſk which held above twenty gallons, and to bring that up was a fatigue intolerable. My next contrivance, therefore, was this: I told you I had taken my cheſt-lid to make a door for an anti-chamber as I now began to call it; ſo I reſolved to apply the body of the cheſt alſo to a purpoſe different from that it originally anſwered. In order to this, I went to the lake where the body of the cheſt lay, and ſawed it through within about three inches of the bottom. Of the two ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two wheels; and with one of the ſides I made two more. I burnt a hole through the middle of each; then preparing two axle-trees, I faſtened them, after ſetting on the wheels, to the bottom of the cheſt, with the nails I had drawn out of it. Having furniſhed this machine, on which I beſtowed no ſmall labour, I was hugely pleaſed with it, and only wiſhed I had a beaſt, if it were but an aſs, to draw it; however, that taſk I was ſatisfied to perform myſelf, ſince there was no help for it; ſo I made a good ſtrong cord out of my fiſhing-lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readineſs, filling my water-caſk, I bound it thereon, and ſo brought it to the grotto, with ſuch eaſe, comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having ſucceeded ſo well in the firſt eſſay, I no ſooner unloaded, but down went I again with my cart, or truckle rather, to the lake, and brought from thence on it my other cheſt, which I had left entire.

I had now nothing remaining near the lake but my boat, and had half a mind to try to bring that up too; but having ſo frequent occaſion for her to get my water in, which I uſed in greater abundance now than I had done at firſt, a great part going to ſupply my domeſtick uſes, as well as for drinking, I reſolved againſt that, and ſought out for a convenient dock to ſtow it in, as a preſervative againſt wind and weather, which I ſoon after effected; for having pitched upon a ſwampy place, overgrown with a ſort of long flags or reeds, I ſoon cut a trench from the lake, with a ſort of ſpade or board that I had chopped and ſharpened for that uſe.

Thus having ſtowed my boat, and looked over all my goods, and ſorted them, and taken a ſurvey of my proviſions, I found I muſt ſoon be in want of the laſt if I did not forthwith procure a ſupply; for though I had victualled ſo wel lat ſetting out, and had been very ſparing ever ſince, yet, had it not been for a great quantity of fiſh I took and ſalted in my paſſage to the gulph, I had been to ſeek for food much ſooner. Hereupon, I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

With this reſolution I accoutred myſelf, as in my firſt walk, with my inſtruments and arms: but inſtead of travelling the lake-ſide, I went along the wood, and therein found great plenty of divers kinds of fruits; though I could ſcarce perſuade myſelf to taſte, or try the effects of them, being ſo much unlike our own, or any I had ſeen elſewhere. I obſerved amongſt the ſhrubs abundance of a fruit, or whatever elſe you may call it, which grew like a ram's horn; ſharp at the point next the twig it was faſtened to, and circling round and round, one fold upon another, which gradually increaſed to the ſize of my wriſt in the middle, and then as gradually decreaſed till it terminated in a point again at the contrary extreme; all which ſpiral, if it were fairly extended in length, might be a yard or an ell long. I ſurveyed this ſtrange vegetable very attentively; it had a rind, or cruſt, which I could not break with my hand, but taking my knife, and making an opening therewith in the ſhell, there iſſued out a ſort of milky liquor in great quantity, to at leaſt a pint and half, which having taſted, I found as ſweet as honey, and very pleaſant: however, I could not perſuade

ſuade myſelf any more than juſt to taſte it. I then found on the large trees ſeveral kinds of fruits, like pears or quinces, but moſt of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite diſagreeable; ſo I quitted my hopes of them.

About three miles from my grotto I met with a large ſpace of ground full of a low plant, growing only with a ſingle woody ſtalk half a foot high, and from thence iſſued a round head, about a foot or ten inches diameter, but quite flat, about three quarters of an inch thick, and juſt like a cream-cheeſe, ſtanding upon it's edge: theſe grew ſo cloſe together, that, upon the leaſt wind ſtirring, their heads rattled againſt each other very muſically; for though the ſtalks were ſo very ſtrong that they would not eaſily either bend or break, yet the fanning of the wind upon the broad heads twiſting the ſtalks, ſo as to let the heads ſtrike each other, they made a moſt agreeable ſound.

I ſtood ſome time admiring this hubb, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two pounds: they had a tough, green rind, or covering, very ſmooth, and the inſide full of a ſtringy pulp, quite white. In ſhort, I made divers other trials of berries, roots, herbs, and what elſe I could find, but received little ſatisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad qualities. I returned back ruminating on what things I had ſeen, reſolving to take my cart the next walk, and bring it home loaded with different kinds of them, in order to make my trials thereof at leiſure: but my cart being too flat, and wanting ſides, I conſidered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwiſe bear, on that account, muſt tumble and roll off; ſo I made a fire, and turned ſmith; for with a great deal to do, breaking off the wards of a large key I had, and making it red-hot, I by degrees faſhioned it into a kind of ſpindle, and therewith making holes quite round the bottom of my cart, in them I ſtuck up ſticks, about two feet high, that I had tapered at the end to fit them.

Having thus qualified my cart for a load, I proceeded with it to the wood, and cutting a ſmall quantity of each ſpecies of green, berry, fruit, and flower, that I could find, and packing them ſeverally in parcels, I returned at night heavy laden, and held a council with myſelf what uſe they could moſt properly be applied to.

I had amongſt my goods, as I ſaid, a copper-kettle, which held about a gallon; this I ſet over my fire, and boiled ſomething, by turns, of every ſort in it, watching all the while, and with a ſtick ſtirring and raiſing up one thing and then another, to feel when they were boiled tender: but of upwards of twenty greens which I thus dreſſed, only one proved eatable, all the reſt becoming more ſtringy, tough, and inſipid, for the cooking. The one I have excepted, was a round, thick, woolly-leafed plant, which boiled tender, and taſted as well as ſpinnage; I therefore preſerved ſome leaves of this, to know it again by; and, for diſtinction, called it by the name of that herb.

I then began upon my fruits of the pear and quince kind, at leaſt eight different ſorts; but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were moſt of them as rough and crabbed after ſtewing as before, ſo I laid them all aſide. Laſtly, I boiled my ram's-horn and cream-cheeſe, as I called them, together. Upon taſting the latter of theſe, it was become ſo watery and inſipid, I laid it aſide as uſeleſs. I then cut the other, and taſted the juice, which proved ſo exceeding pleaſant, that I took a large gulp or two of it, and toſſed it into the kettle again.

Having now gone through the ſeveral kinds of my exoticks, I had a mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of my greens but the ſpinnage. I tried ſeveral berries and nuts too; but, ſave a few ſorts of nuts, they were all very taſteleſs. Then I began to review the fruits, and could find but two ſorts that I had any the leaſt hopes from. I then laid the beſt by, and threw the others away. After this proceſs, which took me up near a whole day, and clearing my houſe of good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my cheeſe, that was grown cold, and was now ſo dry and hard I could not get my teeth into it; upon which I was going to ſkim it away out of my grotto, ſaying, 'Go, thou worthleſs!'

(for

(for I always ſpoke aloud my thoughts to myſelf) I ſay, I was juſt diſpatching it, when I checked my hand, and, as I could make no impreſſion with my teeth, had a mind to try what my knife could do. Accordingly I began at the edge of the quarter, for I had boiled but a quarter of it; but the rind was grown ſo hard and brittle that my knife ſlipping, and taking along the cut-edge of it, ſcratched off ſome powder as white as poſſible; I then ſcraped it backward and forward ſome time, till I found it would all ſcrape away in this powder, except the rind; upon which I laid it aſide again for farther experiment.

During this review, my kettle and ram's-horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and ſeeing there was but little liquor in it, I whipped it off the fire, for fear of burning it's bottom, but took no farther notice of it till about two hours after; when, returning to the grotto, I went to waſh out my kettle, but could ſcarce get my ram's-horn from the bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a ſort of pitchy ſubſtance, though not ſo black, and ſeveral gummy threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great length. I wondered at this, and thought the ſhell of the ram's-horn had melted, or ſome ſuch thing; till venturing to put a little of the ſtuff on my tongue, it proved to my thinking as good treacle as I had ever taſted.

This new diſcovery pleaſed me very much. I ſcraped all the ſweet thing up, and laid it near my grotto, in a large leaf of one of the trees, (about two feet long, and broad in proportion) to prevent it's running about. In getting this curioſity out of my kettle, I found in it a ſmall piece of my cheeſe, which I ſuppoſe had been broke off in ſtirring; and biting it, (for it was ſoft enough) I think it was the moſt luſcious and delicate morſel I ever put into my lips. This unexpected good fortune put me on trying the beſt of my pears again; ſo, ſetting on my kettle, with very little water, and putting ſome of my treacle into it, and two of the beſt pears quartered, I found, upon a little boiling, they alſo became an excellent dainty.

Having ſucceeded ſo well, I was quite ripe for another journey with my cart; which I accordingly undertook, taking my route over the ſtone-bridge, to ſee what the other ſide of the lake produced. In travelling through the trees, I met, amongſt other things, with abundance of large gourds, which, climbing the trees, diſplayed their fruit to the height of twenty or thirty feet above the ground. I cut a great many of theſe, and ſome very large ones of different hues and forms; which of themſelves making a great load, with ſome few new ſorts of berries and greens, were the gathering of that day. But I muſt tell you, I was almoſt foiled in getting them home; for coming to my ſtone-bridge, it roſe ſo ſteep, and was ſo much ruggeder than the graſs or wood-ground, that I was at a ſet upon the firſt entrance, and terribly afraid I ſhould either break my wheels, or pull off my axle-trees. Hereupon I was forced to unload, and carry my cargo over in my arms to the other ſide of the bridge; whither having then, with leſs fear but much caution, drawn my cart, I loaded again, and got ſafe home.

I was mightily pleaſed with the acquiſitions of this journey; 'For now,' thought I, 'I ſhall have ſeveral conve-'nient family-utenſils;' ſo ſpent the next day or two in ſcooping my gourds and cleaning away the pulp. When I had done this, finding the rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good fire, and ſetting them round it at a moderate diſtance, to dry, I went about ſomething elſe without doors: but, alas! my hopes were ill-founded; for coming home to turn my gourds, and ſee how dry they were, I found them all warped, and turned into a variety of uncouth ſhapes. This put me to a ſtand; but, however, I recovered ſome pieces of them for uſe, as the bottom parts of moſt of them, after paring away the ſides, would hold ſomething, though they by no means anſwered my firſt purpoſe.

'Well,' thought I, 'what if I 'have loſt my gourds, I have gained 'experience. I will dry them next 'time with the guts in, and having 'ſtiffened their rinds in their proper 'dimenſions, then try to cleanſe 'them.' So, next morning, (for I was very eager at it) I ſet out with my

cart for another load; and having handed them over the bridge, got ſafe with them to the grotto. Theſe by proper management proved exceedingly valuable to me; anſwering, in one way or other, the ſeveral uſes of plates, bottles, pans, and divers other veſſels.

I now got a large quantity of the vegetable ram's-horn, and filled a great many of my gourds with the treacle it yielded; I alſo boiled and dried a large parcel of my cheeſes, and hung them up for uſe, for I had now for ſome time made all my bread of the latter, ſcraping and bruiſing the flour, and mixing it with my treacle and water; and this, indeed, made ſuch a ſweet and nouriſhing bread, that I could even have lived wholly upon it: but I afterwards very much improved it, by putting the milky juice of the ram's-horn, unboiled, to my flour, in a ſmall quantity, and then baking it on the hearth, covered over with embers. This detracted nothing from the ſweetneſs and mellowneſs of my bread, but made it much lighter than the treacle alone would have done.

Finding there was no fear of ſtarving, but ſo far from it, that from day to day I found out ſomething new to add to my repaſts, either in ſubſtantials or by way of deſſert, I ſet me down very well contented with my condition. I had nothing to do but to lay up ſtore againſt ſickneſs and the dark weather; which laſt I expected would ſoon be upon me, as the days were now exceeding ſhort. Indeed, though I had now been here ſix months, I had never ſeen the ſun ſince I firſt entered the gulph; and though there was very little rain, and but few clouds, yet the brighteſt day-light never exceeded that of half an hour after ſun-ſet in the ſummer-time in England, and little more than juſt reddened the ſky. For the firſt part of my time here, there was but little, if any, difference between day and night; but afterwards, what I might call the night, or leſſer degree of light, took up more hours than the greater, and went on gradually encreaſing as to time, ſo that I perceived total darkneſs approached, ſuch as I had on board my ſhip the year before.

CHAP. XIII.

THE AUTHOR LAYS IN A STORE AGAINST THE DARK WEATHER—HEARS VOICES—HIS THOUGHTS THEREON—PERSUADES HIMSELF IT WAS A DREAM—HEARS THEM AGAIN—DETERMINES TO SEE IF ANY ONE LODGED IN THE ROCK—IS SATISFIED THERE IS NOBODY—OBSERVATIONS ON WHAT HE SAW — FINDS A STRONG WEED LIKE WHIPCORD—MAKES A DRAG-NET—LENGTHENS IT—CATCHES A MONSTER—IT'S DESCRIPTION—MAKES OIL OF IT.

I Had now well ſtored my grotto with all ſorts of winter proviſions; and feeling the weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for, the total darkneſs. I went little abroad, and employed myſelf within doors, endeavouring to fence againſt the approaching extremity of the cold. For this purpoſe, I prepared a quantity of ruſhes; which being very dry, I ſpread them ſmoothly on the floor of my bed-chamber a good thickneſs, and over them I laid my mattraſs. Then I made a double ſheet of the boat's awning, or ſail, that I had brought to cover my goods; and having ſkewered together ſeveral of the jackets and cloaths I found in the cheſt, of them I made a coverlid; ſo that I lay very commodiouſly, and made very long nights of it now the dark ſeaſon was ſet in.

As I lay awake one night, or day, I know not which, I very plainly heard the ſound of ſeveral human voices, and ſometimes very loud; but though I could eaſily diſtinguiſh the articulations, I could not underſtand the leaſt word that was ſaid; nor did the voices ſeem at all to me like ſuch as I had any where heard before, but much ſofter and more muſical. This ſtartled me, and I roſe immediately, ſlipping on my cloaths, and taking my gun in my hand, (which I always kept charged, being my conſtant travelling companion) and my cutlaſs. Thus equipped, I walked into my anti-chamber, where I heard the voices much plainer, till, after ſome little time, they by degrees died quite away. After watching here, and hearkening a good while, hearing

hearing nothing, I walked back into the grotto, and laid me down again on my bed. I was inclined to open the door of my anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; beſides, I conſidered that if I did, I could diſcover nothing at any diſtance, by reaſon of the thick and gloomy wood that incloſed me.

I had a thouſand different ſurmizes about the meaning of this odd incident; and could not conceive how any human creatures ſhould be in my kingdom (as I called it) but myſelf, and I never yet ſee them, or any trace of their habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had ſurrounded the whole lake, yet I had not traced the out-bounds of the wood next the rock, where there might be innumerable grottos like mine; nay, perhaps, ſome as ſpacious as that I had ſailed through to the lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful ſpot might be very well peopled. 'But,' ſays I again, 'if there be any 'ſuch beings as I am fancying here, 'ſurely they don't ſkulk in their dens, 'like ſavage beaſts, by day-light, and 'only patrole for prey by night! if 'ſo, I ſhall probably become a deli-'cious morſel for them ere long, if 'they meet with me.' This kept me ſtill more within doors than before, and I hardly ever ſtirred out but for water or firing. At length, hearing no more voices, nor ſeeing any one, I began to be more compoſed in my mind, and at laſt grew perſuaded it was all a mere deluſion, and only a fancy of mine without any real foundation; and ſometimes, though I was ſure I was fully awake when I heard them, I perſuaded myſelf I had roſe in my ſleep, upon a dream of voices, and recollected with myſelf the various ſtories I had heard, when a boy, of walking in one's ſleep, and the ſurprizing effects of it; ſo the whole notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoyed my tranquillity above a week, before my fears were rouzed afreſh, hearing the ſame ſound of voices twice the ſame night, but not many minutes at a time. What gave me moſt pain was, that they were at ſuch a diſtance, as I judged by the languor of the ſound, that if I had opened my door, I could not have ſeen the utterers through the trees, and I was reſolved not to venture out; but then I determined, if they ſhould come again any thing near my grotto, to open the door, ſee who they were, and ſtand upon my defence, whatever came of it: 'For,' ſays I, 'my entrance is 'ſo narrow and high, that more than 'one cannot come at a time; and I 'can with eaſe diſpatch twenty of them 'before they can ſecure me, if they 'ſhould be ſavages; but if they prove 'ſenſible human creatures, it will be 'a great benefit to me to join myſelf 'to their ſociety.' Thus had I formed my ſcheme, but I heard no more of them for a great while; ſo that at length, beginning to grow aſhamed of my fears, I became tranquil again.

The day now returning, and with it my labours, I applied to my uſual callings; but my mind ran ſtrangely upon viewing the rock quite round, that is, the whole circuit of my dominions; 'For,' thinks I, 'there may 'poſſibly be an outlet through the rock 'into ſome other country, from whence 'the perſons I heard may come.' As ſoon therefore as the days grew towards the longeſt, I prepared for my progreſs. Having lived ſo well at home ſince my ſettlement, I did not care to truſt only to what I could pick up in the woods for my ſubſiſtence during this journey, which would not only take up time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; ſo I reſolved to carry a ſupply with me, proportionate to the length of my perambulation. Hereupon conſidering, that though my walk round the lake was finiſhed in two days, yet as I now intended to go round by the rock, the way would be much longer, and perhaps more troubleſome than that was; remembering alſo my journey with Glanlipze in Africa, and how much I complained of the fruits we carried for our ſubſiſtence; theſe circumſtances, I ſay, laying together, I reſolved to load the cart with a variety of food, bread and fruits eſpecially, and draw that with me.

Thus provided, I ſallied forth with great chearfulneſs, and proceeded in the main eaſily; though in ſome places I was forced to make way with my hatchet, the ground was ſo over-run with underwood. I very narrowly viewed the rock as I went, bottom and ſides, all the way, but could ſee nothing like a paſſage through it, or in-

deed any more than one opening, or inlet, which I entered for about thirty yards, but it was not above three feet wide, and terminated in the ſolid rock.

After ſome days travel, (making all the obſervations I could on the ſeveral plants, ſhrubs, and trees, which I met with, particularly where any of theſe occurred to me entirely new) finding myſelf a little faintiſh, I had a mind for a ſup of ram's-horn juice; ſo I cut me one, but upon opening it found therein only a pithy pulp, and no ways fit to taſte. I ſuppoſed by this I was too early for the milk, it being three months later the laſt year when I cut them. Hereon, ſeeing one upon another ſhrub, which by it's ruſty colour I judged might have hung all the winter, I opened that, and found it full of milk; but putting ſome of it into my mouth, it was as ſour as any vinegar I ever taſted in my life. 'So,' thinks I, (and ſaid ſo too; for, as I told you before, I always ſpoke out) 'here's ſauce 'for ſomething when I want it;' and this gave me a hint to ſtore myſelf with theſe gourds, to hang by for vinegar the next winter.

By this time I had come almoſt to my rill, when I entered upon a large plat of ground miſerably over-run with weeds, matted together very thick, Theſe choaked up my wheels in ſuch a manner that I could neither free them with my hands, nor get either backwards or forwards, they binding my cart down like ſo many cords; ſo that I was obliged to cut my way back again with my hatchet, and take a ſweep round in the wood, on the outſide of theſe weeds.

In all my life I never ſaw any thing of it's ſize, for it was no thicker than a whipcord, ſo ſtrong as this weed; and what raiſed my wonder was the length of it, for I drew out pieces of it near fifty feet long, and even they were broken at the end, ſo that it might be as long again for aught I know, for it was ſo matted and twiſted together, that it was a great trial of patience to untangle it; but that which was drieſt, and to me looked the rotteneſt and weakeſt, I found to be much the ſtrongeſt. Upon examination of it's parts, I diſcovered it to be compoſed of an infinite number of ſmall threads, ſpirally overlaying and infolding one another.

As I ſaw but few things that I could not find a uſe for, ſo this I perceived would ſerve all the common purpoſes of packthread; a thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a load of it home with me. Indeed, the difficulty of getting a quantity in the condition I deſired it, puzzled me a little; 'For,' ſays I, 'if I cut up a 'good deal of it with my hatchet, as I 'firſt deſigned, I ſhall only have ſmall 'lengths good for little, and to get 'it in pieces of any conſiderable length, 'ſo as to be of ſervice, will require 'much time and labour.' But reflecting how much I needed it, and of what benefit it would be, I reſolved to make a trial of what I could do; ſo, without more heſitation, I went to work, and cutting a fibre cloſe to it's root, I extricated that thread from all it's windings, juſt as one does an entangled whipcord. When I had thus diſengaged a ſufficient length, I cut that off; and repeating the like operation, in about three hours time, but with no little toil, I made up my load of different lengths juſt to my liking. Having finiſhed this taſk, I filled the gourd, brought for that purpoſe, with water; and having firſt viewed the whole remaining part of the rock, I returned over the ſtone-bridge home again.

This journey, though it took me up ſeveral days, and was attended with ſome fatigue, had yet given me great ſatisfaction; for now I was perſuaded I could not have one rival, or enemy, to fear in my whole dominions. And from the impoſſibility, as I ſuppoſed, of there being any, or of the ingreſs of any, unleſs by the ſame paſſage I entered at, and by which I was well aſſured they could never return, I grew contented, and blamed myſelf for the folly of my imaginary voices, as I called them then, and took it for a diſtemper of the fancy only.

The next day I looked over my load of mat-weed, having given it that name, and ſeparated the different lengths from each other. I then found I had ſeveral pieces between forty and fifty feet long, of which I reſolved to get a good number more, to make me a drag-net, that I might try for ſome fiſh in the lake. A day or two after, therefore, I brought home another load of it. Then I picked out a ſmooth level ſpot upon

upon the green-ſward, and having prepared a great number of ſhort wooden pegs, I ſtrained a line of the matweed about ten feet long, tying it at each end to a peg, and ſtuck a row of pegs along by that line, about two inches aſunder; I next ſtrained another line of the ſame length, parallel to that, at the diſtance of forty feet from it, and ſtuck pegs thereby, correſponding to the former row; and from each peg on one ſide, to the oppoſite peg on the other, I tied a like length of my mat-line, quite through the whole number of pegs; when the work looked like the inſide of an harpſichord; I afterwards drove pegs in like manner along the whole length of the two outermoſt longer lines, and tied ſhorter lines to them; ſo that the whole affair then repreſented the ſquares of a racket; the corners of each of which ſquares I tied very tight with ſmaller pieces of the line, till I had formed a compleat net of forty feet long and ten wide.

When I had finiſhed my net, as I thought, I wrapped ſeveral ſtones in rags, and faſtened them to the bottom to ſink it, and ſome of the ſmalleſt unſcooped dry gourds to the top, to keep that part buoyant. I now longed to begin my new trade, and carried the net to my boat with that intention; but after two or three hauls I found it would not anſwer for want of length; (though by chance I caught a blackiſh fiſh without ſcales, a little bigger than whiting, but much longer, which ſtuck by the gills in it;) ſo I left the net in the boat, reſolving to make an addition to it with all ſpeed; and returning to my grotto, I ſupped on the fiſh I had taken, and conſidered how to purſue my enterprize with better effect.

I provided me with another large parcel of line; and having brought two more lengths to perfection, I joined all together, and fixing one end on ſhore, by a pole I had cut for that purpoſe, I launched my boat, with the other end in it, taking a ſweep the length of my net round to my ſtick again, and getting on ſhore, hauled up my net by both ends together. I found now I had mended my inſtrument, and taken a proper way of applying it; for by this means, in five hauls, I caught about ſixteen fiſh of three or four different ſorts, and one ſhell-fiſh, almoſt like a lobſter, but without great claws, and with a very ſmall ſhort tail; which made me think, as the body was thrice as long as a lobſter's in proportion, that it did not ſwim backwards, like that creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having lobſter-like legs, but much ſhorter and ſtronger) and that the legs all ſtanding ſo forward, it's tail was, by it's motion, to keep the hinder part of the body from dragging upon the ground, as I obſerved it did when the creature walked on land, it then frequently flacking it's ſhort tail.

Theſe fiſh made me rich in proviſions. Some of them I eat freſh, and the remainder I ſalted down. But of all the kinds, my lobſter was the moſt delicious food, and made me almoſt three meals.

Thus finding there were fiſh to be had, though my preſent tackle ſeemed ſuitable enough to my family, yet could I not reſt, till I had improved my fiſhery by enlarging my net; for as it was, even with my late addition, I muſt either ſweep little or no compaſs of ground, or it would have no bag behind me. Upon this I ſet to work, and ſhortly doubled the dimenſions of it. I had then a mind to try it at the mouth of my rill; ſo taking it with me the next time I croſſed the lake for water, and faſtening it to my pole, cloſe by the right-ſide of the rill, I ſwept a long compaſs round to the left, and cloſing the ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow cut of the rill. But by the time I had gathered up two thirds of the net, I felt a reſiſtance that quite amazed me. In ſhort, I was not able to ſtand againſt the force I felt. Whereupon, ſitting down in the rill, and clapping my feet to the two ſides of it, I exerted all my ſtrength, till finally I became conqueror, and brought up ſo ſhocking a monſter, that I was juſt riſing to run for my life on the ſight of it. But recollecting that the creature was hampered, and could not make ſo much reſiſtance on the land as in the water, I ventured to drag the net up as far from the rill as my ſtrength and breath would permit me; and then running to the boat for my gun, I returned to the net, to examine my prize: Indeed, I had not inſtantly reſolution

enough to ſurvey it; and when at length I aſſumed courage enough to do ſo, I could not perfectly diſtinguiſh the parts, they were ſo diſcompoſed; but taking hold of one end of the net, I endeavoured to diſentangle the thing, and then drawing the net away, a moſt ſurprizing ſight preſented itſelf: the creature reared upright, about three feet high, covered all over with long black ſhaggy hair, like a bear, which hung down from his head and neck quite along his back and ſides. He had two fins, very broad and large, which, as he ſtood erect, looked like arms, and thoſe he waved and whirled about with incredible velocity; and though I wondered at firſt at it, I found afterwards it was the motion of theſe fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceaſed their motion he fell flat on his belly. He had two very large feet, which he ſtood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them, which made me in the leſs haſte to diſpatch him; and after he had ſtood upon his feet about four minutes, clapping his fins to his ſides, he fell upon his belly.

When I found he could not attack me, I was moving cloſer to him; but, upon ſight of my ſtirring, up he roſe again, and whirled his fins about as before, ſo long as he ſtood. And now I viewed him round, and found he had no tail at all, and that his hinder fins, or feet, very much reſembled a large frog's, but were at leaſt ten inches broad, and eighteen long, from heel to toe; and his legs were ſo ſhort that when he ſtood upright his breech bore upon the ground. His belly, which he kept towards me, was of an aſh-colour, and very broad, as was alſo his breaſt. His eyes were ſmall and blue, with a large black ſight in the middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long ſnout like a boar, and vaſt teeth. Thus having ſurveyed him near half an hour living, I made him riſe up once more, and ſhot him in the breaſt. He fell, and giving a loud howl, or groan, expired.

I had then time to ſee what elſe I had caught; and turning over the net, found a few of the ſame fiſh I had taken before, and ſome others of a flattiſh make, and one little lump of fleſh unformed; which laſt, by all I could make of it, ſeemed to be either a ſpawn or young one of that I had ſhot.

The great creature was ſo heavy, I was afraid I muſt have cut him in pieces to get him to the boat; but with much ado, having ſtowed the reſt, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my water-caſk, and rowed homewards. Being got to land, I was obliged to bring down my cart, to carry my great beaſt-fiſh, as I termed him, up to the grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a notion of firſt taſting, and then, if I liked his fleſh, of ſalting him down, and drying him; ſo, having flayed him, and taken out the guts and intrails, I broiled a piece of him; but it made ſuch a blaze, that moſt of the fat ran into the fire, and the fleſh proved ſo dry and rank, that I could no ways endure it.

I then began to be ſorry I had taken ſo much pains for no profit, and had endangered my net into the bargain, (for that had got a crack or two in the ſcuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large but worthleſs acquiſition.

However, as I was now prone to weighing all things, before I threw it away, I reſolved to conſider a little; whereupon I changed my mind. Says I, 'Here is a good warm ſkin, which, 'when dry, will make me a rare 'cuſhion. Again, I have for a long 'while had no light beſide that of the 'day; but now, as this beaſt's fat 'makes ſuch a blaze in the fire, and 'iſſues in ſo great a quantity from 'ſuch a ſmall piece as I broiled, why 'may not I boil a good tallow or oil 'out of it? and if I can, I have not 'made ſo bad a hand of my time as I 'thought for.'

In ſhort, I went immediately to work upon this ſubject, (for I never let a project cool after I had once ſtarted it) and boiled as much of the fleſh as the kettle would hold, and letting it ſtand to cool, I found it turned out a very good oil for burning; though, I confeſs, I thought it would rather have made tallow. This ſucceſs quickened my induſtry; and I repeated the operation till I got about ten quarts of this ſtuff, which very well rewarded my labour. After I had extracted as much oil as I could from the beaſt-fiſh, the creature having

ſtrongly

ſtrongly impreſſed my imagination, I conceived a new fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling groan at his death, I endeavoured to perſuade myſelf, and at laſt verily believed, that the voices I had ſo often heard, in the dark weather, proceeded from numbers of theſe creatures, diverting themſelves in the lake, or ſporting together on the ſhore; and this thought, in it's turn, contributed to eaſe my apprehenſions in that reſpect.

CHAP. XIV.

THE AUTHOR PASSES THE SUMMER PLEASANTLY—HEARS THE VOICES IN THE WINTER—VENTURES OUT—SEES A STRANGE SIGHT ON THE LAKE—HIS UNEASINESS AT IT—HIS DREAM—SOLILOQUY—HEARS THE VOICES AGAIN, AND PERCEIVES A GREAT SHOCK ON HIS BUILDING—TAKES UP A BEAUTIFUL WOMAN—HE THINKS HER DEAD, BUT RECOVERS HER—A DESCRIPTION OF HER—SHE STAYS WITH HIM.

I Paſſed the ſummer (though I had never yet ſeen the ſun's body) very much to my ſatisfaction; partly in the work I have been deſcribing, (for I had taken two more of the beaſt-fiſh, and had a great quantity of oil from them;) partly, in building me a chimney in my anti-chamber of mud and earth burnt on my own hearth into a ſort of brick; in making a window at one end of the aboveſaid chamber, to let in what little light would come through the trees, when I did not chuſe to open my door; in moulding an earthen lamp for my oil; and, finally, in providing and laying in ſtores, freſh and ſalt, (for I had now cured and dried many more fiſh) againſt winter. Theſe, I ſay, were my ſummer employments at home, intermixed with many agreeable excurſions. But now the winter coming on, and the days growing very ſhort, or indeed there being no day, properly ſpeaking, but a kind of twilight, I kept moſtly in my habitation, though not ſo much as I had done the winter before, when I had no light within doors, and ſlept, or at leaſt lay ſtill, great part of my time; for now my lamp was never out. I alſo turned two of my beaſt-fiſh ſkins into a rug to cover my bed, and the third into a cuſhion, which I always ſat upon, and a very ſoft and warm cuſhion it made. All this together rendered my life very eaſy, yea, even comfortable.

An indifferent perſon would now be apt to aſk, 'What would this man de-'ſire more than he had?' To this I anſwer, that I was contented while my condition was ſuch as I have been deſcribing: but a little while after the darkneſs or twilight came on, I frequently heard the voices again; ſometimes a few only at a time, as it ſeemed, and then again in great numbers. This threw me into new fears, and I became as uneaſy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite melancholy; though, otherwiſe, I never received the leaſt injury from any thing. I foolifhly attempted ſeveral times, by looking out of my window, to diſcover what theſe odd ſounds proceeded from, though I knew it was too dark to ſee any thing there.

I was now fully convinced, by a more deliberate attention to them, that they could not be uttered by the beaſt-fiſh, as I had afore conjectured, but only by beings capable of articulate ſpeech; but then, what or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

At length, one night or day, I cannot ſay which, hearing the voices very diſtinctly, and praying very earneſtly to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took courage, and arming myſelf with gun, piſtols, and cutlaſs, I went out of my grotto, and crept down the wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the compaſs they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the ſound, till I came to the verge of the wood, where I could ſee the lake very well by the dazzle of the water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a fleet of boats, covering a large compaſs, and not far from the bridge. I was ſhocked hereat beyond expreſſion. I could not conceive where they came from, or whither they would go; but ſuppoſed there muſt be ſome other paſſage to the lake than I had found in my voyage through the cavern, and that for certain they came that way, and

and from ſome place, of which as yet I had no manner of knowledge.

Whilſt I was entertaining myſelf with this ſpeculation, I heard the people in the boats laughing and talking very merrily, though I was too diſtant to diſtinguiſh the words. I diſcerned ſoon after all the boats (as I ſtill ſuppoſed them) draw up, and puſh for the bridge; preſently after, though I was ſure no boat entered the arch, I ſaw a multitude of people on the oppoſite ſhore all marching towards the bridge; and what was the ſtrangeſt of all, there was not the leaſt ſign of a boat now left upon the whole lake. I then was in a greater conſternation than before; but was ſtill much more ſo, when I ſaw the whole poſſe of people, that as I have juſt ſaid were marching towards the bridge, coming over it to my ſide of the lake. At this my heart failed, and I was juſt going to run to my grotto for ſhelter; but taking one look more, I plainly diſcovered that the people, leaping one after another from the top of the bridge, as if into the water, and then riſing again, flew in a long train over the lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my ſight, laughing, hallooing, and ſporting together; ſo that looking back again to the bridge, and on the lake, I could neither ſee perſon nor boat, nor any thing elſe, nor hear the leaſt noiſe or ſtir afterwards for that time.

I returned to my grotto brim-full of this amazing adventure, bemoaning my misfortune in being at a place where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. 'For,' ſays I, 'if I am in a land of ſpirits, as 'now I have little room to doubt, 'there is no guarding againſt them. 'I am never ſafe, even in my grotto; 'for that can be no ſecurity againſt 'ſuch beings as can ſail on the water 'in no boats, and fly in the air on no 'wings, as the caſe now appears to 'me, who can be here and there, and 'wherever they pleaſe. What a miſerable ſtate, I ſay, am I fallen to?' I ſhould have been glad to have had human converſe, and to have found inhabitants in this place; but there being none, as I ſuppoſed hitherto, I contented myſelf with thinking I was at leaſt ſafe from all thoſe evils mankind in ſociety are obnoxious to. 'But 'now, what may be the conſequence 'of the next hour I know not; nay, I 'am not able to ſay, but whilſt I ſpeak, 'and ſhew my diſcontent, they may 'at a diſtance conceive my thoughts, 'and be hatching revenge againſt me 'for my diſlike of them.'

The preſſure of my ſpirits inclining me to repoſe, I laid me down, but could get no reſt; nor could all my moſt ſerious thoughts, even of the Almighty Providence, give me relief under my preſent anxiety: and all this was only from my ſtate of uncertainty concerning the reality of what I had heard and ſeen; and from the earneſtneſs with which I coveted a ſatisfactory knowledge of thoſe beings who had juſt taken their flight from me.

I really believe, the fierceſt wild beaſt, or the moſt ſavage of mankind that had met me, and put me upon my defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that I had no ſeeming poſſibility of ever being rid of my apprehenſions: ſo, finding I could not ſleep, I got up again; but as I could not fly from myſelf, all the art I could uſe with myſelf, was but in vain to obtain me any quiet.

In the height of my diſtreſs I had recourſe to prayer, with no ſmall benefit; begging, that if it pleaſed not the Almighty Power to remove the object of my fears, at leaſt to reſolve my doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. I hereupon, as I always did on ſuch occaſions, found myſelf much more placid and eaſy, and began to hope the beſt, till I had almoſt perſuaded myſelf that I was out of danger; and then laying myſelf down, I reſted very ſweetly, till I was awakened by the impulſe of the following dream.

Methought I was in Cornwall, at my wife's aunt's; and enquiring after her and my children, the old gentlewoman informed me, both my wife and children had been dead ſome time, and that my wife, before her departure, deſired her (that is, her aunt) immediately upon my arrival to tell me, ſhe was only gone to the lake, where I ſhould be ſure to ſee her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the lake to find her. In my paſſage ſhe ſtopped me, crying, 'Whither ſo faſt, Peter?

'I am

'I am your wife, your Patty.' Methought I did not know her, ſhe was ſo altered; but obſerving her voice, and looking more wiſtfully at her, ſhe appeared to me as the moſt beautiful creature I ever beheld. I then went to ſeize her in my arms; but the hurry of my ſpirits awakened me.

When I got up, I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my door. My dream ran ſtrangely in my head, and I had now nothing but Patty in my mind. 'Oh!' cries I, 'how happy 'could I be with her, though I had 'only her in this ſolitude. Oh! that 'this was but a reality, and not a 'dream.' And, indeed, though it was but a dream, I could ſcarce refrain from running to the lake to meet my Patty. But then I checked my folly, and reaſoned myſelf into ſome degree of temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, 'What, no-'body to converſe with! Nobody to 'aſſiſt, comfort, or counſel me! This 'is a melancholy ſituation indeed.' Thus I ran on lamenting till I was almoſt weary; when, on a ſudden, I again heard the voices, 'Hark!' ſays I, 'here they come again. Well, I 'am now reſolved to face them; come 'life, come death! It is not to be 'alone I thus dread; but to have com-'pany about me, and not know who 'or what, is death to me worſe than I 'can ſuffer from them, be they who 'or what they will.'

During my ſoliloquy the voices increaſed, and then by degrees diminiſhed as uſual; but I had ſcarce got my gun in my hand, to purſue my reſolution of ſhewing myſelf to thoſe who uttered them, when I felt ſuch a thump upon the roof of my anti-chamber, as ſhook the whole fabrick, and ſet me all over into a tremor; I then heard a ſort of ſhriek, and a ruſtle near the door of my apartment: all which together ſeemed very terrible. But I, having before determined to ſee what and who it was, reſolutely opened my door and leaped out. I ſaw nobody; all was quite ſilent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own fears a moving. I went then ſoftly to the corner of the building, and there looking down by the glimmer of my lamp, which ſtood in the window, I ſaw ſomething in human ſhape lying at my feet. I gave the word, 'Who's 'there?' Still no one anſwered. My heart was ready to force a way through my ſide. I was for a while fixed to the earth like a ſtatue. At length, recovering, I ſtepped in, fetched my lamp, and returning, ſaw the very beautiful face my Patty appeared under in my dream; and not conſidering that it was only a dream, I verily thought I had my Patty before me, but ſhe ſeemed to be ſtone dead. Upon viewing her other parts, (for I had never yet removed my eyes from her face) I found ſhe had a ſort of brown chaplet, like lace, round her head, under and about which her hair was tucked up and twined; and ſhe ſeemed to me to be cloathed in a thin hair-coloured ſilk garment, which, upon trying to raiſe her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was life in the body it contained. I then took her into my arms, and treading a ſtep backwards with her, I put out my lamp; however, having her in my arms, I conveyed her through the door-way in the dark into my grotto; here I laid her upon my bed, and then ran out for my lamp.

'This,' thinks I, 'is an amazing 'adventure. How could Patty come 'here, and dreſſed in ſilk and whale-'bone too? ſure that is not the reign-'ing faſhion in England now? But 'my dream ſaid ſhe was dead. Why, 'truly,' ſays I, 'ſo ſhe ſeems to be. 'But be it ſo, ſhe is warm. Whether 'this is the place for perſons to inha-'bit after death or not, I can't tell, '(for I ſee there are people here, 'though I don't know them;) but be 'it as it will, ſhe feels as fleſh and 'blood; and if I can but bring her 'to ſtir and act again as my wife, 'what matters it to me what ſhe is! 'it will be a great bleſſing and com-'fort to me; for ſhe never would have 'come to this very ſpot, but for my 'good.'

Top full of theſe thoughts, I reentered my grotto, ſhut my door, and lighted my lamp; when going to my Patty, (as I delighted to fancy her) I thought I ſaw her eyes ſtir a little. I then ſet the lamp farther off, for fear of offending them if ſhe ſhould look up; and warming the laſt glaſs I had reſerved of my Madeira, I carried it to her, but ſhe never ſtirred. I now ſuppoſed the fall had abſolutely killed

her, and was prodigiouſly grieved; when, laying my hand on her breaſt, I perceived the fountain of life had ſome motion. This gave me infinite pleaſure; ſo, not deſpairing, I dipped my finger in the wine, and moiſtened her lips with it two or three times, and I imagined they opened a little. Upon this I bethought me, and taking a tea-ſpoon, I gently poured a few drops of the wine by that means into her mouth. Finding ſhe ſwallowed it, I poured in another ſpoonful, and another, till I brought her to herſelf ſo well as to be able to ſit up. All this I did by a glimmering light, which the lamp afforded from a diſtant part of the room, where I had placed it, as I have ſaid, out of her ſight.

I then ſpoke to her, and aſked divers queſtions, as if ſhe had really been Patty, and underſtood me; in return of which, ſhe uttered a language I had no idea of, though in the moſt muſical tone, and with the ſweeteſt accent I ever heard. It grieved me I could not underſtand her. However, thinking ſhe might like to be on her feet, I went to lift her off the bed; when ſhe felt to my touch in the odde[illegible] manner imaginable: for, while in one reſpect, it was as though ſhe had been caſed up in whalebone, it was at the ſame time as ſoft and warm as if ſhe had been naked.

I then took her in my arms and carried her into my anti-chamber again; where I would fain have entered into converſation, but found ſhe and I could make nothing of it together, unleſs we could underſtand one another's ſpeech. It is very ſtrange my dream ſhould have prepoſſeſſed me ſo of Patty, and of the alteration of her countenance, that I could by no means perſuade myſelf the perſon I had with me was not ſhe; though, upon a deliberate compariſon, Patty, as pleaſing as ſhe always was to my taſte, would no more come up to this fair creature, than a coarſe ale-wife would to Venus herſelf.

You may imagine we ſtared heartily at each other, and I doubted not but ſhe wondered as much as I by what means we came ſo near each other. I offered her every thing in my grotto, which I thought might pleaſe her; ſome of which ſhe gratefully received, as appeared by her looks and behaviour. But ſhe avoided my lamp, and always placed her back toward it. I obſerving that, and aſcribing it to her modeſty in my company, let her have her will, and took care to ſet it in ſuch a poſition myſelf as ſeemed agreeable to her, though it deprived me of a proſpect I very much admired.

After we had ſat a good while, now and then, I may ſay, chattering to one another, ſhe got up, and took a turn or two about the room. When I ſaw her in that attitude, her grace and motion perfectly charmed me, and her ſhape was incomparable; but the ſtrangeneſs of her dreſs put me to my trumps, to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we ſupped together, and I ſet the beſt of every thing I had before her, nor could either of us forbear ſpeaking in our own tongue, though we were ſenſible neither of us underſtood the other. After ſupper I gave her ſome of my cordials, for which ſhe ſhewed great tokens of thankfulneſs, and often, in her way, by ſigns and geſtures, which were very far from being inſignificant, expreſſed her gratitude for my kindneſs. When ſupper had been ſome time over, I ſhewed her my bed, and made ſigns for her to go to it; but ſhe ſeemed very ſhy of that, till I ſhewed her where I meant to lie myſelf, by pointing to myſelf, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my bed. When, at length, I had made this matter intelligible to her, ſhe lay down very compoſedly; and after I had taken care of my fire, and ſet the things I had been uſing for ſupper in their places, I laid myſelf down too: for I could have no ſuſpicious thoughts, or fear of danger, from a form ſo excellent.

I treated her for ſome time with all the reſpect imaginable, and never ſuffered her to do the leaſt part of my work. It was very inconvenient to both of us only to know each other's meaning by ſigns; but I could not be otherwiſe than pleaſed to ſee, that ſhe endeavoured all in her power to learn to talk like me. Indeed, I was not behindhand with her in that reſpect, ſtriving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, ſhe never ſhewed the leaſt diſquiet at her confinement; for I kept my door ſhut at firſt, through fear of loſing her, thinking

ſhe

Plate I. Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Aug. 2, 1783.

ſhe would have taken an opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think ſhe could fly.

CHAP. XV.

WILKINS AFRAID OF LOSING HIS NEW MISTRESS—THEY LIVE TOGETHER ALL WINTER—A REMARK ON THAT—THEY BEGIN TO KNOW EACH OTHER'S LANGUAGE—A LONG DISCOURSE BETWEEN THEM AT CROSS-PURPOSES—SHE FLIES—THEY ENGAGE TO BE MAN AND WIFE.

AFTER my new love had been with me a fortnight, finding my water run low, I was greatly troubled at the thought of quitting her any time, to go for more; and having hinted it to her, with ſeeming uneaſineſs, ſhe could not for a while fathom my meaning; but when ſhe ſaw me much confuſed, ſhe came at length, by the many ſigns I made, to imagine it was my concern for her which made me ſo; whereupon ſhe expreſſively enough ſignified I might be eaſy, for ſhe did not fear any thing happening to her in my abſence. On this, as well as I could declare my meaning, I entreated her not to go away before my return. As ſoon as ſhe underſtood what I ſignified to her, by actions, ſhe ſat down, with her arms acroſs, leaning her head againſt the wall, to aſſure me ſhe would not ſtir. However, as I had before nailed a cord to the outſide of the door, I tied that for caution's ſake to the tree, for fear of the worſt: but I believe ſhe had not the leaſt deſign of removing.

I took my boat, net, and water-caſk, as uſual; deſirous of bringing her home a freſh fiſh dinner, and ſucceeded ſo well as to catch enough for ſeveral good meals, and to ſpare. What remained I ſalted, and found ſhe liked that better than the freſh, after a few days ſalting; though ſhe did not ſo well approve of that I had formerly pickled and dried. As my ſalt grew very low, though I had been as ſparing of it as poſſible, I now reſolved to try making ſome; and the next ſummer I effected it.

Thus we ſpent the remainder of the winter together, till the days began to be light enough for me to walk abroad a little in the middle of them: for I was now under no apprehenſions of her leaving me, as ſhe had before this time had ſo many opportunities of doing ſo, but never once attempted it.

I muſt here make one reflection upon our conduct, which you will almoſt think incredible, viz. that we two, of different ſexes, not wanting our peculiar deſires, fully inflamed with love to each other, and no outward obſtacle to prevent our wiſhes, ſhould have been together, under the ſame roof, alone for five months, converſing together from morning to night, (for by this time ſhe pretty well underſtood Engliſh, and I her language) and yet I ſhould never have claſped her in my arms, or have ſhewn any farther amorous deſires to her, than what the deference I all along paid her could give her room to ſurmiſe. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know that the covering ſhe wore was not the work of art, but the work of nature, for I really took it for ſilk; though it muſt be premiſed that I had never ſeen it by any other light than of my lamp. Indeed, the modeſty of her carriage, and ſweetneſs of her behaviour to me, had ſtruck into me ſuch a dread of offending her, that though nothing upon earth could be more capable of exciting paſſion than her charms, I could have died rather than have attempted to ſalute her only without actual invitation.

When the weather cleared up a little, by the lengthening of day-light, I took courage one afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the lake; but ſhe ſweetly excuſed herſelf from it, whilſt there was ſuch a frightful glare of light, as ſhe ſaid; but, looking out at the door, told me, if I would not go out of the wood, ſhe would accompany me: ſo we agreed to take a turn only there. I firſt went myſelf over the ſtyle of the door, and thinking it rather too high for her, I took her in my arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this manner, I knew not what to make of her cloathing, it ſat ſo true and cloſe; but ſeeing her by a ſteadier and truer light in the grove, though a heavy, gloomy one, than my lamp had afforded, I begged ſhe would let me know of what ſilk or other compoſition her garment was made. She ſmiled, and aſked me if mine was not the ſame under my jacket.

'No, lady,' says I, 'I have nothing 'but my skin under my cloaths.'— 'Why, what do you mean?' replies she, somewhat tartly; 'but, indeed, I 'was afraid something was the matter, 'by that nasty covering you wear 'that you might not be seen. Are 'not you a glumm?'—'Yes,' says I, 'fair creature.' (Here, though you may conceive she spoke part English, part her own tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each other, yet I shall give you our discourse, word for word, in plain English) 'Then,' says she, 'I am afraid you must have 'been a very bad man, and have been 'crashee, which I should be very sorry 'to hear.' I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my faults had not at most exceeded other men's; but I had suffered abundance of hardships in my time; and that at last Providence having settled me in this spot, from whence I had no prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of it's mercies to bring to my knowledge and company the most exquisite piece of all his works, in her, which I should acknowledge as long as I lived. She was surprized at this discourse; and asked me, (if I did not mean to impose upon her, and was indeed an ingcrathee glumm) why I should tell her I had no prospect of departing from hence. 'Have not you,' says she, 'the same 'prospect that I or any other person 'has of departing? Sir,' added she, 'you don't do well, and really I fear 'you are slit, or you would not wear 'this nasty cumbersome coat,' taking hold of my jacket-sleeve, 'if you were 'not afraid of shewing the signs of a 'bad life upon your natural cloathing.'

I could not for my heart imagine what way there was to get out of my dominions. 'But certainly,' thought I, 'there must be some or other, or she 'would not be so peremptory.' And as to my jacket, and shewing myself in my natural cloathing, I profess she made me blush; and, but for shame, I would have stripped to my skin to have satisfied her. 'But, Madam,' says I, 'pray pardon me, for you are really 'mistaken; I have examined every 'nook and corner of this new world, 'in which we now are, and can find 'no possible outlet; nay, even by the 'same way I came in, I am sure it 'is impossible to get out again.'— 'Why,' says she, 'what outlets have 'you searched for, or what way can 'you expect out, but the way you 'came in? And why is that impossible 'to return by again? If you are not 'slit, is not the air open to you? Will 'not the sky admit you to patrole in 'it, as well as other people? I tell 'you, Sir, I fear you have been slit for 'your crimes; and though you have 'been so good to me, that I can't help 'loving of you heartily for it, yet 'if I thought you had been slit, I 'would not, nay could not, stay a 'moment longer with you; no, though 'it should break my heart to leave 'you.'

I found myself now in a strange quandary, longing to know what she meant by being slit; and had a hundred strange notions in my head whether I was slit or not; for though I knew what the word naturally signified well enough, yet in what manner, or by what figure of speech she applied it to me, I had no idea of. But seeing her look a little angrily upon me, 'Pray, Ma- 'dam,' says I, 'don't be offended, if 'I take the liberty to ask you what 'you mean by the word crashee, so 'often repeated by you; for I am an 'utter stranger to what you mean by 'it.'—'Sir,' says she, 'pray answer 'me first, how you came here?'— 'Madam,' replied I, 'if you will 'please to take a walk to the verge 'of the wood, I will shew you the 'very passage,'—'Sir,' says she, 'I 'perfectly know the range of the rocks 'all round, and by the least descrip- 'tion, without going to see them, can 'tell from which you descended.'— 'In truth,' said I, 'most charming 'lady, I descended from no rock at 'all; nor would I for a thousand 'worlds attempt what could not be 'accomplished but by my destruction.' —'Sir,' says she, in some anger, 'it 'is false, and you impose upon me.' —'I declare to you,' says I, 'Ma- 'dam, what I tell you is strictly true, 'I never was near the summit of any 'of the surrounding rocks, or any 'thing like it; but as you are not far 'from the verge of the wood, be so 'good as to step a little farther, and I 'will shew you my entrance in hither.'

—'Well,'

—'Well,' says she, 'now this odious 'dazzle of light is lessened, I don't 'care if I do go with you.'

When we came far enough to see the bridge, 'There, Madam,' says I, 'there is my entrance, where the sea 'pours into this lake from yonder ca-'vern.'—'It is not possible,' says she; 'this is another untruth: and as I see 'you would deceive me, and are not 'to be believed, farewel; I must be 'gone.—But, hold,' says she, 'let me 'ask you one thing more; that is, by 'what means did you come through 'that cavern? You could not have 'used to have come over the rock!'—'Bless me, Madam!' says I, 'do you 'think I and my boat could fly!—"Come over the rock," did you say? 'No, Madam; I sailed from the great 'sea, the main ocean, in my boat, 'through that cavern into this very 'lake here.'—'What do you mean 'by your boat?' says she. 'You seem 'to make two things of your boat you 'say you sailed with and yourself.'—'I do so,' replied I; 'for, Madam, I 'take myself to be good flesh and 'blood, but my boat is made of wood 'and other materials.'—'Is it so?' says she. 'And, pray, where is this 'boat that is made of wood and other 'materials? under your jacket?'—'Lord, Madam!' says I, 'you put 'me in fear that you was angry; but 'now I hope you only joke with me. 'What, put a boat under my jacket! 'No, Madam; my boat is in the lake.' —'What, more untruths!' says she. 'No, Madam,' I replied; 'if you 'would be satisfied of what I say, '(every word of which is as true as 'that my boat now is in the lake) 'pray walk with me thither, and make 'your own eyes judges what sincerity 'I speak with.' To this she agreed, it growing dusky; but assured me, if I did not give her good satisfaction, I should see her no more.

We arrived at the lake; and going to my wet-dock, 'Now, Madam,' says I, 'pray satisfy yourself whether I 'spake true or no.' She looked at my boat, but could not yet frame a proper notion of it. Says I, 'Madam, in 'this very boat I sailed from the main 'ocean through that cavern into this 'lake; and shall at last think myself 'the happiest of all men if you con-'tinue with me, love me, and credit 'me; and I promise you I'll never de-'ceive you, but think my life happily 'spent in your service.' I found she was hardly content yet to believe what I told her of my boat to be true; till I stepped into it, and pushing from the shore, took my oars in my hand, and sailed along the lake by her, as she walked on the shore. At last, she seemed so well reconciled to me and my boat, that she desired I would take her in. I immediately did so, and we sailed a good way; and as we returned to my dock, I described to her how I procured the water we drank, and brought it to shore in that vessel.

'Well,' says she, 'I have sailed, as 'you call it, many a mile in my life-'time, but never in such a thing as 'this. I own it will serve very well 'where one has a great many things 'to carry from place to place; but to 'be labouring thus at an oar, when 'one intends pleasure in sailing, is, in 'my mind, a most ridiculous piece of 'slavery.'—'Why, pray, Madam, 'how would you have me sail? for 'getting into the boat only, will not 'carry us this way or that without 'using some force.'—'But,' says she, 'pray where did you get this boat, as 'you call it?'—'O Madam!' says I, 'that is too long and fatal a story to 'begin upon now: this boat was made 'many thousand miles from hence, 'among a people coal-black, a quite 'different sort from us; and, when I 'first had it, I little thought of seeing 'this country: but I will make a faith-'ful relation of all to you when we 'come home.' Indeed, I began to wish heartily we were there, for it grew into the night; and having strolled so far without my gun, I was afraid of what I had before seen and heard, and hinted our return; but I found my motion was disagreeable to her, and so I dropped it.

I now perceived, and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agree-able it seemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good-humour again, by seeing and sailing in my boat, I was not willing to prevent it's increase. I told her, if she pleased, we would land, and when I had dock-ed my boat, I would accompany her where and as long as she liked. As we talked and walked by the lake, she made a little run before me, and sprung

into

into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon ſhe merrily called on me to follow her. The light was then ſo dim, as prevented my having more than a confuſed ſight of her when ſhe jumped in; and looking earneſtly after her, I could diſcern nothing more than a ſmall boat on the water, which ſkimmed along at ſo great a rate that I almoſt loſt ſight of it preſently; but, running along the ſhore for fear of loſing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely loſt ſight of the boat upon the lake.—'This,' ſays ſhe, accoſting me with a ſmile, 'is my way of ſailing, which, 'I perceive, by the fright you were 'in, you are altogether unacquainted 'with; and, as you tell me, you came 'from ſo many thouſand miles off, it 'is poſſible you may be made differently from me: but, ſurely, we are the 'part of the creation which has had 'moſt care beſtowed upon it; and I 'ſuſpect, from all your diſcourſe, to 'which I have been very attentive, it 'is poſſible you may no more be able 'to fly than to ſail as I do.'—'No, 'charming creature,' ſays I, 'that I 'cannot, I'll aſſure you.' She then ſtepping to the edge of the lake, for the advantage of a deſcent before her, ſprung up into the air, and away ſhe went, farther than my eyes could follow her.

I was quite aſtoniſhed. 'So,' ſays I, 'then all is over! all a deluſion which 'I have ſo long been in! a mere phantom! Better had it been for me never 'to have ſeen her, than thus to loſe 'her again! But what could I expect 'had ſhe ſtaid? For it is plain ſhe is 'no human compoſition.—But,' ſays I, 'ſhe felt like fleſh, too, when I lifted 'her out at the door!' I had but very little time for reflection; for, in about ten minutes after ſhe had left me in this mixture of grief and amazement, ſhe alighted juſt by me on her feet.

Her return, as ſhe plainly ſaw, filled me with a tranſport not to be concealed; and which, as ſhe afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed, I was ſome moments in ſuch an agitation of mind from theſe unparalleled incidents, that I was like one thunderſtruck; but coming preſently to myſelf, and claſping her in my arms with as much love and paſſion as I was capable of expreſſing, and for the firſt time with any deſire, 'Are you re-'turned again, kind angel,' ſaid I, 'to bleſs a wretch who can only be 'happy in adoring you! Can it be, 'that you, who have ſo many advan-'tages over me, ſhould quit all the 'pleaſures that nature has formed you 'for, and all your friends and rela-'tions, to take an aſylum in my arms! 'But I here make you a tender of all 'I am able to beſtow—my love and 'conſtancy.'—'Come, come,' ſays ſhe, 'no more raptures; I find you are 'a worthier man than I thought I had 'reaſon to take you for, and I beg 'your pardon for my diſtruſt, whilſt I 'was ignorant of your imperfections; 'but now I verily believe all you have 'ſaid is true; and I promiſe you, as 'you have ſeemed ſo much to delight in 'me, I will never quit you till death, 'or other as fatal accident ſhall part 'us. But we will now, if you chuſe, 'go home; for I know you have been 'ſome time uneaſy in this gloom, 'though agreeable to me: for, giv-'ing my eyes the pleaſure of looking 'eagerly on you, it conceals my bluſhes 'from your ſight.'

In this manner, exchanging mutual endearments and ſoft ſpeeches, hand in hand, we arrived at the grotto; where we that night conſummated our nuptials, without farther ceremony than mutual ſolemn engagements to each other; which are, in truth, the eſſence of marriage, and all that was there and then in our power.

CHAP. XVI.

THE AUTHOR'S DISAPPOINTMENT AT FIRST GOING TO BED WITH HIS NEW WIFE—SOME STRANGE CIRCUMSTANCES RELATING THERETO—SHE RESOLVES SEVERAL QUESTIONS HE ASKS HER, AND CLEARS UP HIS FEARS AS TO THE VOICES—A DESCRIPTION OF SWANGEANS.

EVERY calm is ſucceeded by a ſtorm, as is every ſtorm by it's calm; for, after ſupper, in order to give my bride the opportunity of undreſſing alone, which I thought might be moſt agreeable the firſt night, I withdrew into the anti-chamber till I thought ſhe was laid; and then, having firſt

diſpoſed

diſpoſed of my lamp, I moved ſoftly towards her, and ſtepped into bed too; when, on my nearer approach to her, I imagined ſhe had her cloaths on. This ſtruck a thorough damp over me; and aſking her the reaſon of it, not being able to touch the leaſt bit of her fleſh but her face and hands, ſhe burſt out a laughing; and, running her hand along my naked ſide, ſoon perceived the difference ſhe before had made ſuch doubt of between herſelf and me. Upon which ſhe fairly told me, that neither ſhe, nor any perſon ſhe had ever ſeen before, had any other covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with but with their lives. This ſhocked me terribly; not from the horror of the thing itſelf, or any diſtaſte I had to this covering, (for it was quite ſmooth, warm, and ſofter than velvet or the fineſt ſkin imaginable) but from an apprehenſion of her being ſo wholly incaſed in it, that, though I had ſo fine a companion, and now a wife, yet I ſhould have no conjugal benefit from her, either to my own gratification, or the increaſe of our ſpecies.

In the height of my impatience, I made divers eſſays for unfolding this covering, but unſucceſsfully. 'Surely,' ſays I, 'there muſt be ſome way 'of coming at my wiſhes! or why 'ſhould ſhe ſeem ſo ſhy of me at firſt, 'and now we are under engagements 'to each other, meet me half way 'with ſuch a yielding compliance?' I could, if I had had time to ſpare, have gone on, ſtarting objections and anſwering them, in my own breaſt, a great while longer, (for I now knew not what to make of it;) but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling, as tenderly as poſſible, upon her boſom, for the folds or plaits of her garment, ſhe lying perfectly ſtill, and perceiving divers flat broad ledges, like whalebone, ſeemingly under her covering, which cloſely infolded her body, I thought it might be all laced on together ſomewhat like ſtays, and felt behind for the lacing. At length, perceiving me ſo puzzled, and beyond conception vexed at my diſappointment, of a ſudden, leſt I ſhould grow outrageous, (which I was almoſt come to) ſhe threw down all thoſe ſeeming ribs flat to her ſide ſo imperceptibly to me, that I knew nothing of the matter, though I lay cloſe to her; till putting forth my hand again to her boſom, the ſofteſt ſkin, and moſt delightful body, free from all impediment, preſented itſelf to my wiſhes, and gave up itſelf to my embraces.

I ſlept very ſoundly till morning, and ſo did ſhe; but at waking I was very ſolicitous to find out what ſort of being I had had in my arms, and with what qualities her garment was endued, or how contrived, that, notwithſtanding all my fruitleſs attempts to uncover her, ſhe herſelf could ſo inſtantaneouſly diſpoſe of it, undiſcerned by me. 'Well,' thought I, 'ſhe is my wife, I will be ſatisfied in 'every thing; for, ſurely, ſhe will 'not now refuſe to gratify my cu'rioſity.'

We roſe with the light; but, ſurely, no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up firſt, lighted the fire, and prepared breakfaſt of ſome fiſh-ſoup, thickened with my cream-cheeſe; and then calling her, I kept my eye towards the bed to ſee how ſhe dreſſed herſelf; but throwing aſide the cloaths, ſhe ſtepped out ready dreſſed, and came to me. When I had kiſſed her, and wiſhed her a good day, we ſat down to breakfaſt; which being ſoon over, I told her I hoped every minute of our lives would prove as happy as thoſe we ſo lately paſſed together; which ſhe ſeemed to wiſh with equal ardour. I then told her, now ſhe was my wife, I thought proper to know her name, which I had never before aſked, for fear of giving uneaſineſs; for, as I added, I did not doubt ſhe had obſerved in my behaviour, ever ſince I firſt ſaw her, a peculiar tenderneſs for her, and a ſedulous concern not to offend, which had obliged me hitherto to ſtifle ſeveral queſtions I had to aſk her whenever they would be agreeable to her. She then bid me begin; for, as ſhe was now my wife, whilſt I was ſpeaking, it became her to be all attention, and to give me the utmoſt ſatisfaction ſhe could in all I ſhould require, as ſhe herſelf ſhould have ſo great an intereſt in every thing for the future which would oblige me.

Compliments (if, in compliance with old cuſtom, I may call them ſo, for they were by us delivered from the heart)

heart) being a little over on both ſides, I firſt deſired to know what name ſhe went by before I found her: 'For,' ſays I, 'having only hitherto called 'you Madam, and my Lady, beſides 'the future expreſſion of my love to 'you in the word dear, I would know 'your original name, that ſo I might 'join it with that tender epithet.'—'That you ſhall,' ſays ſhe, 'and alſo 'my family at another opportunity; 'but as my name will not take up 'long time to repeat at preſent, it is 'YOUWARKEE.—And, pray,' ſays ſhe, 'now gratify me with the know-'ledge of yours.'—'My dear You-'warkee,' ſays I, 'my name was PE-'TER WILKINS when I heard it laſt; 'but that is ſo long ago, I had almoſt 'forgot it.—And now,' ſays I, 'there 'is another thing you can give me a 'pleaſure in.'—'You need, then, only 'mention it, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe. 'That is,' ſays I, 'only to tell me, 'if you did not, by ſome accident, 'fall from the top of the rock over 'my habitation, upon the roof of it, 'when I firſt took you in here; and 'whether you are of the country upon 'the rocks?' She, ſoftly ſmiling, anſwered, 'My dear Peter, you run your 'queſtions too thick; as to my coun-'try, which is not on the rocks, as 'you ſuppoſe, but at a vaſt diſtance 'from hence, I ſhall leave that, till I 'may hereafter, at more leiſure, ſpeak 'of my family, as I promiſed you be-'fore; but as to how I came into this 'grotto, I knew not at firſt, but ſoon 'perceived your humanity had brought 'me in, to take care of me, after a 'terrible fall I had; not from the 'rock, as you ſuppoſe, for then I 'muſt not now have been living to 'enjoy you, but from a far leſs con-'ſiderable height in the air. I'll tell 'you how it happened. A parcel of 'us young people were upon a merry 'ſwangean round this arkoe, which 'we uſually divert ourſelves with at 'ſet times of the year, chacing and 'purſuing one another, ſometimes 'ſoaring to an extravagant height, 'and then ſhooting down again with 'ſurprizing precipitancy, till we even 'touch the trees; when of a ſudden 'we mount again and away. I ſay, 'being of this party, and purſued by 'one of my comrades, I deſcended 'down to the very trees, and ſhe after 'me; but as I mounted, ſhe over-'ſhooting me, bruſhed ſo ſtiffly againſt 'the upper part of my graundee, that 'I loſt my bearing; and being ſo near 'the branches, before I could recover 'it again, I ſunk into the tree, and 'rendered my graundee uſeleſs to me; 'ſo that down I came, and that with 'ſo much force, that I but juſt felt 'my fall, and loſt my ſenſes. Whe-'ther I cried out or no upon my com-'ing to the ground I cannot ſay; but 'if I did, my companion was too far 'gone by that time to hear or take 'notice of me; as ſhe, probably, in 'ſo ſwift a flight, ſaw not my fall. 'As to the condition I was in, or 'what happened immediately after-'wards, I muſt be obliged to you for 'a relation of that: but one thing I 'was quickly ſenſible of, and never 'can forget, viz. that I owe my life 'to your care and kindneſs to me.'

I told her ſhe ſhould have that part of her ſtory from me another time: 'But,' ſays I, 'there is ſomething ſo 'amazing in theſe flights, or ſwan-'geans, as you call them, that I muſt, 'as the queſtions for this day, beg 'you would let me know what is the 'method of them. What is the na-'ture of your covering?' (which was at firſt ſuch an obſtacle to my wiſhes) 'How you put it on? And how you 'uſe it in your ſwangean?'

'Surely, my deareſt Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'but that I can deny you nothing, 'ſince you are my barkatt, which you 'ſeem ſo paſſionately to deſire, the 'latter of your queſtions would not 'be anſwered, for it muſt put me to 'the bluſh. As to our method of 'flight, you ſaw ſomewhat of that laſt 'night, though in a light hardly ſuf-'ficient for you; and for the nature 'of my covering, you perceive that 'now: but to ſhew you how it is put 'on, as you call it, I am afraid it will 'be neceſſary, as far as I can, to put 'it off, before I can make you com-'prehend that; which having done, 'the whole will be no farther a myſ-'tery. But, not to be tedious, is it 'your command that I uncover? Lay 'that upon me, it ſhall be done.' Here I was at a plunge whether to proceed or drop the queſtion. Thinks I, 'If 'my curioſity ſhould be fatal to me, as 'I may ſee ſomething I can never bear 'hereafter, I am undone. She waits

'the

'the command!—Why ſo?—I know 'not the conſequence!—What ſhall I 'do?' At laſt, ſomewhat reſolutely, I aſked her whether her anſwer either way to my command would cauſe her to leave me, or me to love her leſs. She ſeeing my heſitation, and perceiving the cauſe, was ſo pleaſed, that ſhe cried out, 'No, my dear Peter, nor 'that, nor all the force on earth, ſhall 'ever part me from you. But I con-'ceive you are afraid you ſhall diſco-'ver ſomething in me you may not 'like: I fear not that; but an im-'modeſt appearance before you I can-'not ſuffer myſelf to be guilty of, 'but under your own command.'

'My lovely Youwarkee,' ſays I, 'delay then my deſires no longer; and 'ſince you require a warrant from me, 'I do command you to do it.' Immediately her graundee flew open, (diſcovering her naked body juſt to the hip, and round the rim of her belly) and expanding itſelf was near ſix feet wide. Here my love and curioſity had a hard conflict; the one to gain my attention to the graundee, and the other to retain my eyes and thoughts on her lovely body, which I had never beheld ſo much of before. Though I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not eaſily diſmiſs ſo charming a ſight. I attentively viewed her lovely fleſh, and examined the caſe that enthrined it: but as I ſhall give you a full deſcription of this graundee hereafter, in a more proper place, I will mention it no farther here, than to tell you that when I had narrowly ſurveyed the upper part of it, ſhe in a moment contracted it round her ſo cloſe that the niceſt eye could not perceive the joining of the parts.

'Indeed, my dear Youwarkee,' ſays I, 'you had the beſt of reaſons for 'ſaying you was not fearful I ſhould 'diſcover any thing in you diſpleaſing; for if my boſom glowed with 'love before, you have now therein 'raiſed an ardent flame which neither 'time, nor aught elſe, will ever be 'able to extinguiſh. I now almoſt 'conceive how you fly; though yet I 'am at a loſs to know how you extend and make uſe of the lower part 'of your graundee, which riſes up 'and meets the upper; but I will rather gueſs at that by what I have 'ſeen, than raiſe the colour higher in 'thoſe fair cheeks which are, how-'ever adorned with bluſhes.' Then running to her, and taking her in my arms, I called her the gift of Heaven; and left off farther interrogatories till another opportunity.

CHAP. XVII.

YOUWARKEE CANNOT BEAR A STRONG LIGHT—WILKINS MAKES HER SPECTACLES WHICH HELP HER—A DESCRIPTION OF THEM.

YOUWARKEE and I having no other company than one another's, we talked together almoſt from morning to night, in order to learn each other's dialect. But how compliable ſoever ſhe was in all other reſpects, I could not perſuade her to go out with me to fetch water, or to the lake, in the day-time. It being now the light ſeaſon, I wanted her to be more abroad; but ſhe excuſed herſelf, telling me her people never came into thoſe luminous parts of the country during the falſe glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their light was more moderate and ſteadier; and that the place where I reſided was not frequented by them for half the year, and at other times only upon parties of pleaſure, it not being worth while to ſettle habitations where they could not abide always. She ſaid, Normnbdſgrſutt was the fineſt region in the world, where her king's court was, and a vaſt kingdom. I aſked her twice or thrice more to name the country to me, but not all the art we could uſe, her's in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me conqueror of that poor monoſyllable, (for as ſuch it ſounded from her ſweet lips;) ſo I relinquiſhed the name to her; telling her, whenever ſhe had any more occaſion to mention the place, I deſired it might be under the ſtile of Doorpt Swangeanti, which ſhe promiſed; but wondered, as ſhe could ſpeak the other ſo glibly, as ſhe called it, I could not do ſo too.

I told her, that the light of my native country was far ſtronger than any I had ſeen ſince my arrival at Graundevolet, (for that, I found by her, was the name my dominions went by;)

and that we had a ſun, or ball of fire, which rolled over our heads every day with ſuch a light and ſuch a heat, that it would ſometimes almoſt ſcorch one it was ſo hot, and was of ſuch brightneſs that the eye could not look at it without danger of blindneſs. She was heartily glad, ſhe ſaid, ſhe was not born in ſo wretched a land; and ſhe did not believe there was any other ſo good as her own. I thought no benefit could ariſe from my combating theſe innocent prejudices, ſo I let them alone.

She had often lamented to me the difference of our eye-ſight, and the trouble it was to her that ſhe could not at all times go about with me, till it gave me a good deal of uneaſineſs to ſee her concern. At laſt I told her, that though I believed it would be impoſſible to reduce my ſight to the ſtandard of her's, yet I was perſuaded I could bring her's to bear the ſtrongeſt light I had ever ſeen in this country. She was mightily pleaſed with the thought of that, and ſaid ſhe wiſhed I might, for ſhe was ſenſible of no grief like being obliged to ſtay at home when I went abroad on my buſineſs, and was reſolved to try my experiment if I pleaſed, and in the mean time ſhould heartily pray for the ſucceſs. I hit on the following invention.

I rummaged over all my old things, and by good luck found an old crape hatband. This I tried myſelf, ſingle, before my own eyes, in the ſtrongeſt light we had; but believing I had not yet obſcured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it ſhould not, I trebled it, and then it ſeemed too dark for eyes like mine to diſcover objects through it, and ſo I judged it would ſuit her's; for I was determined to produce ſomething, if poſſible, that would do at firſt, without repetition of trial, which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper method for fixing it on her, and this I thought would be eaſily effected, but had much more difficulty in it than I imagined. At firſt I purpoſed to tie the crape over her eyes, but trying it myſelf I found it very rough and fretting: I then deſigned fixing it to an old crown of a hat that held my fiſh-hooks and lines, and ſo let it hang down before her face, but that alſo had it's inconveniences, as it would flap her eyes in windy weather, and would be not only uſeleſs but very troubleſome in flight; ſo that I was ſcarce ever more puzzled before. At laſt I thought of a method that anſwered exceedingly well, the hint of which I took from ſomewhat I had ſeen with my maſter when I was at ſchool, which he called goggles, and which he uſed to tie round his head to ſkreen his eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that plan was compoſed of old hat, pieces of ram's-horn, and the abovementioned crape.

When I had finiſhed the whole apparatus, I tried it firſt upon myſelf, and finding great reaſon to believe it would perfectly anſwer the intention, I ran directly to Youwarkee. 'Come,' ſays I, 'my dear, will you go with 'me to the water-rill; for I muſt fetch 'ſome this morning?' She ſhook her head, and with tears in her eyes wiſhed ſhe could. 'But,' ſays ſhe, 'let me 'ſee how light it is abroad.'—'No,' ſays I, 'my love, you muſt not look 'out till you go.'—'Indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'if it did not affect my eyes and 'head you ſhould not aſk me twice.'—'Well,' ſays I, 'my Youwarkee, I 'am now come to take you with me; 'and that you may not ſuffer by it, 'turn about, and let me apply the re-'medy I told you of for your ſight.' She wanted much to ſee firſt what it was, but I begged her to forbear till ſhe tried whether it would be uſeful or not. She told me ſhe would abſolutely ſubmit to my direction, ſo I adjuſted the thing to her head. 'Now,' ſays I, 'you have it on, let us go out and try 'it, and let me know the moment you 'find the light offenſive, and take par-'ticular notice how you are affected.' Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no complaint in all our walk to the lake.

'Now, my dear Youwarkee,' ſays I, when we got there, 'what do you 'think of my contrivance? Can you 'ſee at all?'—'Yes, very well,' ſays ſhe. 'But, my dear Peter, you have 'taken the advantage oft he twilight, 'I know, to deceive me; and I had ra-'ther have ſtayed at home than have 'ſubjected you to return in the night 'for the ſake of my company.' I then aſſured her it was mid-day, and no later, which pleaſed her mightily; and,

and, to ſatisfy her, I untied the ſtring behind, and juſt let her be convinced it was ſo. When I had fixed the ſhade on her head again, ſhe put up her hands and felt the ſeveral materials of which it conſiſted; and after expreſſing her admiration of it, 'So, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'you have now encumbered 'yourſelf with a wife indeed, for ſince 'I can come abroad in a glaring light 'with ſo much eaſe, you will never 'henceforward be without my com-'pany.'

Youwarkee being thus in ſpirits, we launched the boat, watered, took a draught of fiſh, and returned; paſſing the night at home, in talking of the ſpectacles, (for that was the name I told her they muſt go by) and of the fiſhing, for that exerciſe delighted her to a great degree: but, above all, the ſpectacles were her chief theme; ſhe handled them and looked at them again and again, and aſked ſeveral rational queſtions about them; as how they could have that effect on her eyes, enabling her to ſee, and the like. She ventured out with them next day by herſelf; and, as ſhe threatened, ſhe was as good as her word, for ſhe ſcarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myſelf, but accompanied me every where freely, and with delight.

CHAP. XVIII.

YOUWARKEE WITH CHILD—WILKINS'S STOCK OF PROVISIONS—NO BEAST OR FISH IN YOUWARKEE'S COUNTRY—THE VOICES AGAIN—HER REASON FOR NOT SEEING THOSE WHO UTTERED THEM—SHE BEARS A SON—A HARD SPEECH IN HER LYING-IN—DIVERS BIRDS APPEAR—THEIR EGGS GATHERED—HOW WILKINS KEPT ACCOUNT OF TIME.

ABOUT three months after we were married, as we called it, Youwarkee told me ſhe believed ſhe was breeding, and I was mightily pleaſed with it, for though I had had two children before by Patty, yet I never had ſeen either of them, ſo that I longed to be a father. I ſometimes amuſed myſelf with whimſical conjectures, as whether the child would have a graundee or not; which of us it would be moſt like; how we ſhould do without a midwife; and what muſt become of the infant, as we had no milk, in caſe Youwarkee could not ſuckle it. Indeed, I had leiſure enough for indulging ſuch reveries; for having laid in our winter ſtores, my wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy ourſelves over a good fire, prattling and toying together, making as good cheer as we could; and truly that was none of the worſt, for we had as fine bread as need to be eaten; we had pears preſerved; all ſorts of dried fiſh; and once a fortnight, for two or three days together, had freſh fiſh; we had vinegar, and a biting herb, I had found, for pepper; and ſeveral ſorts of nuts; ſo there was no want.

It was at this time, after my return from watering one day, where Youwarkee had been with me, that, having taken ſeveral fiſh, and amongſt them ſome I had not before ſeen, I aſked her, as we were preparing and ſalting ſome of them, how they managed fiſh in her country, and what variety they had of them there; ſhe told me, ſhe neither ever ſaw nor heard of a fiſh in her life till ſhe came to me. 'How!' ſays I, 'no fiſh amongſt you! why 'you want one of the greateſt dainties 'that can be ſet upon a table. Do 'you wholly eat fleſh,' ſays I, 'at 'Doorpt Swangeanti?'—'Fleſh!' ſays ſhe, laughingly, 'of what?'—'Nay,' ſays I, 'you know beſt what the beaſts 'of your own country are; we have 'in England, where I was born and 'bred, oxen, very large hogs, ſheep, 'lambs, and calves; theſe make our 'ordinary diſhes: then we have deer, 'hares, rabbits, and theſe are reck-'oned dainties; beſides numberleſs 'kinds of poultry, and fiſh without 'ſtint.'—'I never heard of any of 'theſe things in my life,' ſays Youwarkee; 'nor did I ever eat any thing 'but fruits and herbs, and what is 'made from them at Normnbdſgrſutt.' —'You will ſpeak that crabbed word,' ſays I, 'again,'—'I beg your par-'don, my dear,' ſays ſhe; 'at Doorpt 'Swangeanti I ſay, nor I, nor any 'one elſe, to my knowledge, ever eat 'any ſuch thing: but ſeeing you eat 'fiſh, as you call them, I made no 'ſcruple of doing ſo too, and like 'them very well, eſpecially the ſalted

'ones, for I never taſted what you call 'ſalt neither till I came here.'—'I 'cannot think,' ſays I, 'what ſort of 'a country yours is, or how you all 'live there.'—'O,' ſays ſhe, 'there is 'no want; I wiſh you and I were 'there.' I was afraid I had talked too much of her country already, ſo we called a new cauſe.

Soon after winter had ſet in, as we were in bed one night, I heard the voices again: and though my wife had told me of her country-folks, Swangeans, in that place, I being frighted a little waked her; and ſhe hearing them too, cried out, 'There they are! 'it is ten to one but my ſiſter or ſome 'of our family are there: hark! I be-'lieve I hear her voice.' I myſelf hearkened very attentively; and by this time underſtanding a great deal of their language, I not only could diſtinguiſh different ſpeakers, but knew the meaning of ſeveral of the words they pronounced.

I would have had Youwarkee have gotten up and called to them. 'Not 'for the world,' ſays ſhe. 'Have you 'a mind to part with me? Though I 'have no intent to leave you, as I am 'with child, if they ſhould try to 'force me away without my conſent, I 'may receive ſome injury, to the dan-'ger of my own life, or at leaſt of 'the child's.' This reaſon perfectly ſatisfying me, endeared the loving creature to me ten times more, if poſſible, than ever.

The next ſummer brought me a yacom as fair as alabaſter. My wife was delivered without the uſual aſſiſtance, and had as favourable a labour as could be. The firſt thing I did, after giving her ſome fiſh-ſoup, made as ſkilfully as I was able, and a little cordial, was to ſee if my yacom had the graundee or not: finding it had, 'So,' ſays I to Youwarkee, 'you 'have brought me a legitimate heir to 'my dominions, whoſe title ſure can-'not be diſputed, being one of you.' Though I ſpoke this with as much pleaſure, and in as endearing a way as ever I ſpoke in my life, and quite innocently, the poor Youwarkee burſt into tears to ſuch exceſs there was no pacifying her. I aſked her the reaſon of her grief, begged and intreated her to let me know what diſturbed her, but all in vain; till, ſeeing me in a violent paſſion, ſuch as I had never before appeared to be in, ſhe told me ſhe was very ſorry I ſhould queſtion her fidelity to me. She ſurprized me in ſaying this, as I never had any ſuch apprehenſion. 'No, my deareſt wife,' ſays I, 'I never had any ſuch ſuſpicion as 'you charge me with, I can ſafely af-'firm; nor can I comprehend your 'meaning by imputing ſuch a thing to 'me.'—'Oh!' ſays ſhe, 'I am ſure 'you have no cauſe for it! but you 'ſaid the poor child was one of us; as 'much as to intimate, that had it been 'your own it would have been born as 'you were, without the graundee: 'which thought I cannot bear; and 'if you continue to think ſo it muſt 'end me; therefore take away my life 'now, rather than let me live to ſee 'my farther miſery.'

I was heartily ſorry for what I had ſaid, when I ſaw the effects of it, though I did not imagine it could have been perverted to ſuch a contrary meaning. But conſidering her to be the faithfulleſt and moſt loving creature upon earth, and that true love cannot bear any thing that touches upon or can be applied (though with ever ſo forced a conſtruction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous meaning, I attributed her groundleſs reſentment to her exceſs of fondneſs only for me; and falling upon the bed by her, and bathing her face in my tears, I aſſured her the interpretation ſhe had put on my words was altogether foreign from the view they were ſpoken with; profeſſing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the leaſt cauſe of jealouſy. On my confirming this abſolute confidence in her virtue by the ſtrongeſt aſſeverations, ſhe grew fully convinced of her error, and acknowledged ſhe had been too raſh in cenſuring me; and growing pleaſed at my freſh profeſſions of love to her, we preſently were reconciled, and became again very good friends.

When Youwarkee had gathered ſtrength again, ſhe proved an excellent nurſe to my Pedro, (for that was the name I gave him) ſo that he ſoon grew a charming child, able to go in his twelfth month, and ſpoke in his twentieth. This and two other lovely boys I had by her within three years; every one of which ſhe brought up with the breaſt, and they thrived delicately.

I do not mention the little intervening

ing

ing occurrences which happened during this period; they conſiſting chiefly of the old rota of fiſhing, watering, providing in the ſummer for the winter, and in managing my ſalt-work; which all together kept me at full employment, comfortably to maintain an increaſing family.

In this time I had found out ſeveral new ſorts of eatables. I had obſerved, as I ſaid before, abundance of birds about the wood and lake in the ſummer months. Theſe, by firing at them two or three times on my firſt coming, I had almoſt cauſed to deſert my dominions. But as I had for the laſt two or three years given no diſturbance at all to them, they were now in as great plenty as ever; and I made great profit of them by the peace they enjoyed; and yet my table never wanted a ſupply, freſh in the ſummer, or ſalted and pickled in winter.

I took notice it was about October theſe birds uſed to come; and moſt of the month of November they were buſy in laying their eggs, which I uſed at that time to find in great plenty along the banks of the lake in the reeds, and made great collections of them; I uſed alſo to find a great many in the woods amongſt the ſhrubs and underwood. Theſe furniſhed our table various ways; for with my cream-cheeſe flour, and a little mixture of rams-horn juice, I had taught my wife to make excellent puddings of them; abundance of them alſo we eat boiled or fried alone, and often as ſauce to our fiſh. As for the birds themſelves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual means of taking them otherwiſe by nets, which I ſet between the trees, and alſo very large pitfal nets, with which I uſed to catch all ſorts, even from the ſize of a thruſh to that of a turkey. But as I ſhall ſay more of theſe when I come to ſpeak of my ward bye and bye, and of my poultry, I ſhall omit any farther mention of them here.

You may perhaps wonder how I could keep an account of my time ſo preciſely, as to talk of the particular months. I will tell you. At my coming from America, I was then exact; for we ſet ſail the fourteenth of November, and ſtruck the firſt or ſecond day of February. So far I kept perfect reckoning. But after that, I was not ſo exact; though I kept it as well as my perplexity would admit even then, till the days ſhortening upon me, prevented it.

Hereupon I ſet about making a year for myſelf. I found the duration of the comparative darkneſs, or what might with me be termed night, in the courſe of the twenty four hours or day, gradually increaſed for ſix months; after which it decreaſed reciprocally for an equal time, and the lighter part of the day took it's turn, as in our parts of the world, only inverſely; ſo that as the light's decreaſe became ſenſible about the middle of March, it was at the greateſt pitch the latter end of Auguſt, or beginning of September; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreaſing to the cloſe of February, when I had the longeſt portion of light. Hereupon, dividing my year into two ſeaſons only, I began the winter half in March, and the ſummer half in September. Thus my winter was the ſpring and ſummer quarters of us in Europe, and my ſummer thoſe of our autumn and winter.

From my ſettling this matter I kept little account of days or weeks, but only reckoned my time by ſummer and winter; ſo that I am pretty right as to the revolutions of theſe; though the years, as to their notation, I kept no account of, nor do I know what year of the Lord it now is.

CHAP. XIX.

WILKINS'S CONCERN ABOUT CLOATHING FOR PEDRO HIS ELDEST SON—HIS DISCOURSE WITH HIS WIFE ABOUT THE SHIP—HER FLIGHT TO IT—HIS MELANCHOLY REFLECTIONS TILL HER RETURN—AN ACCOUNT OF WHAT SHE HAD DONE, AND OF WHAT SHE BROUGHT—SHE CLOATHS HER CHILDREN, AND TAKES A SECOND FLIGHT.

AS my boy Pedro grew up, though, as I ſaid before, he had the graundes, yet it was of leſs dimenſions than it ought to have been to be uſeful to him; ſo that it was viſible he could never fly, for it would ſcarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from ſide to ſide both ways.

This

This pleaſed my wife to the heart; for now ſhe was ſure, whatever I had done before, I could not ſuſpect her. Be that as it will, the boy's graundee not being a ſufficient veſtment for him, it became neceſſary he ſhould be cloathed.

I turned over my hoard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at leaſt, that we knew how to fit him with. I had deſcribed my own country veſt for lads to Youwarkee, and ſhe formed a tolerable idea of it, but we had no tackle to alter any thing with. 'O my dear,' ſays I, 'had I 'but been born with the graundee, I 'need not be now racking my brains 'to get my child cloaths.'—'What do 'you mean by that?' ſays ſhe.—'Why,' ſays I, 'I would have flown 'to my ſhip,' (for I had long before related to her all my ſea-adventures, till the veſſel's coming to the magnetical rock) 'and have brought ſome 'ſuch things from thence, as you, not 'wanting them in this country, can 'have no notion of.' She ſeemed mighty inquiſitive to underſtand how a ſhip was made, what it was moſt like to, how a perſon who never ſaw one might know it only by the deſcription, and how one might get into it; with abundance of the like queſtions. She then enquired what ſort of things thoſe needles and ſeveral other utenſils were, which I had at times been ſpeaking of; and in what part of a ſhip they uſually kept ſuch articles. And I, to gratify her curioſity, as I perceived ſhe took a pleaſure in hearing me, anſwered all her queſtions to a ſcruple; not then conceiving the ſecret purpoſe of all this inquiſitiveneſs.

About two days after this, having been out two or three hours in the morning, to cut wood; at coming home I found Pedro crying, ready to break his heart, and his little brother Tommy hanging to him, and crawling about the floor after him: the youngeſt, pretty baby! was faſt aſleep upon one of the beaſt-fiſh ſkins, in a corner of the room. I aſked Pedro for his mother, but the poor infant had nothing farther to ſay to the matter, than 'Mammy run away, I cry! Mammy 'run away, I cry!' I admired where ſhe was gone, never before miſſing her from our habitation. However, I waited patiently till bed-time, but no wife. I grew very uneaſy then. Yet, as my children were tired and ſleepy, I thought I had beſt go to bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their ſuppers, we lay down together. They ſlept; but my mind was too full to permit the cloſure of my eyes. A thouſand different chimeras ſwam in my imagination relating to my wife. One while I fancied her carried away by her kinsfolks; then, that ſhe was gone of her own accord to make peace with her father. But that thought would not fix, being put aſide by her conſtant tenderneſs to her children, and regard to me; whom I was ſure ſhe would not have left without notice. 'But, alas!' ſays I, 'ſhe may even now be near me, but 'taken ſo ill ſhe cannot get home, or 'ſhe may have died ſuddenly in the 'wood.' I lay tumbling and toſſing in great anxiety, not able to find out any excuſable occaſion ſhe could have of ſo long abſence. 'And then,' thinks I, 'if ſhe ſhould either be dead, 'or have quite left me, which will be of 'equally bad conſequence to me, what 'can I do with three poor helpleſs in-'fants? If they were a little more 'grown up, they might be helpful to 'me, and to each other; but at their 'age how ſhall I ever rear them with-'out the tenderneſs of a mother? And 'to ſee them pine away before my 'face, and not know how to help them, 'will diſtract me.'

Finding I could neither ſleep nor lie ſtill, I roſe, intending to ſearch all the woods about, and call to her, that if any accident had prevented ſight of her, ſhe might at leaſt hear me. But upon opening the door, and juſt ſtepping out, how agreeably was I ſurprized to meet her coming in, with ſomething on her arm. 'My dear 'Youwarkee,' ſays I, 'where have 'you been? What has befallen you to 'keep you out ſo long? The poor chil-'dren have been at their wit's end to 'find you; and I, my dear, have been 'inconſolable, and was now, almoſt 'diſtracted, coming in ſearch of you.'

Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what concern ſhe had given me and the children. 'My deareſt Peter,' ſays ſhe, (kiſſing me) 'pray forgive 'me the only thing I have ever done 'to offend you, and the laſt cauſe you 'ſhall ever have, by my good will, to 'complain of me; but walk within

'doors,

'doors, and I will give you a farther 'account of my abſence. Don't you 'remember what delight I took the 'other day to hear you talk of your 'ſhip?'—'Yes,' ſays I, 'you did ſo; 'but what of that?'—'Nay, pray,' ſays ſhe, 'forgive me, for I have been 'to ſee it.'—'That's impoſſible,' ſays I: and truly this was the firſt time I ever thought ſhe went about to deceive me. 'I do aſſure you,' ſays ſhe, 'I 'have; and a wonderful thing it is! 'But if you diſtruſt me, and what I 'ſay, I have brought proof of it; ſtep 'out with me to the verge of the wood, 'and ſatisfy yourſelf.'—'But pray,' ſays I, 'who preſented you with this 'upon your arm?'—'I vow,' ſays ſhe, 'I had forgot this; yes, this will, 'I believe, confirm to you what I have 'ſaid.' I turned it over and over; and looking wiſtfully upon her, ſays I, 'This waiſtcoat, indeed, is the very 'fellow to one that lay in the captain's 'locker in the cabbin.'—'Say not the 'very fellow,' ſays ſhe, 'but rather 'ſay the very ſame, for I'll aſſure 'you it is ſo; and had you been with 'me, we might have got ſo many 'things for ourſelves and the chil-'dren, we ſhould never have wanted 'more, though we lived theſe hundred 'years; but as it is, I have left ſome-'thing without the wood for you to 'bring up.' When we had had our talk out, ſhe hearing the children ſtir, took them up, and was going, as ſhe always did, to get their breakfaſts. 'Hold,' ſays I, 'this journey muſt 'have fatigued you too much already, 'lay yourſelf to reſt, and leave every 'thing elſe to me.'—'My dear,' ſays ſhe, 'you ſeem to think this flight 'tireſome, but you are miſtaken; I 'am more weary with walking to the 'lake and back again, than with all 'the reſt. Oh,' ſays ſhe, 'if you had 'but the graundee, flying would reſt 'you, after the greateſt labour; for 'the parts which are moved with ex-'erciſe on the earth, are all at reſt in 'flight; as, on the contrary, the parts 'uſed in flight are when on earthly 'travel. The whole trouble of flight 'is in mounting from the plain ground, 'but when once you are upon the 'graundee, at a proper height, all the 'reſt is play, a mere trifle; you need 'only think of your way, and incline 'to it, your graundee directs you as 'readily as your feet obey you on the 'ground, without thinking of every 'ſtep you take; it does not require la-'bour, as your boat does, to keep you 'a going.'

After we had compoſed ourſelves, we walked to the verge of the wood, to ſee what cargo my wife had brought from the ſhip. I was aſtoniſhed at the bulk of it; and ſeeing, by the outſide, it conſiſted of cloaths, I took it with much ado upon my ſhoulders, and carried it home. But upon opening it I found far more treaſure than I could have imagined; for there was a ham-mer, a great many ſpikes and nails, three ſpoons, about five plates of pew-ter, four knives and a fork, a ſmall china punch-bowl, two chocolate-cups, a paper of needles, and ſeveral of pins, a parcel of coarſe thread, a pair of ſhoes, and abundance of ſuch other things as ſhe had heard me wiſh for and deſcribe; beſides as much linen and woollen, of one ſort or another, as made a good package for all the other things; with a great tin porridge-pot, of about two gallons, tied to the out-ſide; and all theſe as nicely ſtowed as if ſhe had been bred a packer.

When I had viewed the bundle, and poiſed the weight; 'How was it poſſi-'ble, my dear Youwarkee,' ſaid I, 'for you to bring all this? You could 'never carry them in your hands.'—'No, no,' replied ſhe, 'I carried them 'on my back.'—'Is it poſſible,' ſays I, 'for your graundee to bear yourſelf 'and all this weight too in the air, and 'to ſuch an height as the top of theſe 'rocks?'—'You will always,' replies ſhe, 'make the height a part of your 'difficulty in flying; but you are de-'ceived; for as the firſt ſtroke (I have 'heard you ſay often) in fighting is 'half the battle, ſo it is in flying; get 'but once fairly on the wind, nothing 'can hurt you afterwards. My me-'thod, let me tell you, was this; I 'climbed to the higheſt part of the 'ſhip, where I could ſtand clear, hav-'ing firſt put up my burden, which 'you have there; and then getting that 'on my back near my ſhoulders, I 'took the two cords you ſee hang looſe 'to it in my two hands, and extend-'ing my graundee, leaped off flatwiſe 'with my face towards the water;

'when

'when inſtantly playing two or three 'good ſtrokes with my graundee, I 'was out of danger; now, if I had 'found the bundle too heavy to make 'my firſt ſtrokes with, I ſhould di-'rectly have turned on my back, drop-'ped my bundle, and floated in my 'graundee to the ſhip again, as you 'once ſaw me float on the lake.' Says I, 'you muſt have flown a prodigious 'diſtance to the ſhip, for I was ſeveral 'days ſailing, I believe three weeks, 'from my ſhip before I reached the 'gulph; and after that could be little 'leſs than five weeks (as I accounted 'for it) and at a great rate of ſailing 'too under the rock, before I reached 'the lake; ſo that the ſhip muſt be a 'monſtrous way off.'—'No, no,' ſays ſhe, 'your ſhip lies but over yon cliff, 'that riſes as it were with two points; 'and as to the rock itſelf, it is not 'broader than our lake is long; but 'what made you ſo tedious in your 'paſſage was, many of the windings 'and turnings in the cavern returning 'into themſelves again; ſo that you 'might have gone round and round 'till this time if the tide had not 'luckily ſtruck you into the direct 'paſſage: this,' ſays ſhe, 'I have 'heard from ſome of my countrymen, 'who have flown up it, but could 'never get quite through.'

'I wiſh with all my heart,' ſays I, 'fortune had brought me firſt to light 'in this country; or (but for your 'ſake I could almoſt ſay) had never 'brought me into it at all; for to be 'a creature of the leaſt ſignificancy 'of the whole race about one, is a me-'lancholy circumſtance.'—'Fear not,' ſays ſhe, 'my love, for you have a 'wife will hazard all for you, though 'you are reſtrained; and as my incli-'nations and affections are ſo much 'yours, that I need but know your 'deſires to execute them as far as my 'power extends; ſurely you, who can 'act by another, may be content to 'forego the trouble of your own per-'formance. I perceive, indeed,' continued ſhe, 'you want mightily to go 'to your ſhip, and are more uneaſy 'now you know it is ſafe, than you 'was before; but that being paſt my 'ſkill to aſſiſt you in, if you will com-'mand your deputy to go backwards 'and forwards in your ſtead, I am 'ready to obey you.'

Thus ended our converſation about the ſhip for that time. But it left not my mind ſo ſoon; for a ſtronger hankering after it purſued me now than ever ſince my wife's flight, but to no purpoſe.

We ſat us down, and ſorted out our cargo, piece by piece; and having found ſeveral things proper for the children, my wife longed to enter upon ſome piece of work towards cloathing Pedro in the manner ſhe had heard me talk of, and laid hard at me to ſhew her the uſe of the needles, thread, and other things ſhe had brought. Indeed, I muſt ſay ſhe proved very tractable; and from the little inſtruction I was able to give her, ſoon outwrought my knowledge; for I could only ſhew her that the thread went through the needle, and both through the cloth to hold it together; but for any thing elſe I was as ignorant as ſhe. In much leſs time than I could have imagined, ſhe had cloathed my ſon Pedro, and had made a ſort of mantle for the youngeſt. But now ſeeing us ſo ſmart, (for I took upon me ſometimes to wear the green waiſtcoat ſhe had brought under my dirty jacket) ſhe began to be aſhamed of herſelf, as ſhe ſaid, in our fine company; and afterwards (as I ſhall ſoon acquaint you) got into our faſhion.

Seeing the advantages of her flight to the ſhip, and that ſo many conveniences aroſe from it, ſhe was frequently at me to let her go again. I ſhould as much have wiſhed for another return of goods as ſhe, but I could by no means think of parting with my factor; for I knew her eagerneſs to pleaſe me, and that ſhe would ſtick at nothing to perform it; 'And,' thinks I, 'ſhould any accident happen to her, 'by over loading, or otherwiſe, and I 'ſhould loſe her, all the other com-'modities of the whole world put to-'gether would not compenſate her 'loſs.' But as ſhe ſo earneſtly deſired it, and aſſured me ſhe would run no hazards, I was prevailed on at length, by her inceſſant importunities, to let her go; though under certain reſtrictions, which ſhe promiſed me to comply with. As firſt, I inſiſted upon it that ſhe ſhould take a tour quite round the rock, ſetting out the ſame way I had laſt gone with my boat; and, if poſſible, find out the gulph, which I told her ſhe could not miſtake, by

reaſon

reaſon of the noiſe the fall of the water made; and deſired her to remark the place, ſo as I might know within-ſide where it was without. And then I told her ſhe might review and ſearch every hole in the ſhip as ſhe pleaſed; and if there were any ſmall things ſhe had a mind to bring from it, ſhe was welcome, provided the bundle ſhe ſhould make up was not above a fourth part either of the bulk or weight of the laſt. All which ſhe having engaged punctually to obſerve, ſhe bid me not expect her till I ſaw her, and ſhe would return as ſoon as poſſible. I then went with her to the confines of the wood, (for I told her I deſired to ſee her mount) and ſhe, after we had embraced, bidding me to ſtand behind her, took her flight.

CHAP. XX.

THE AUTHOR OBSERVES HER FLIGHT—A DESCRIPTION OF A GLUMM IN THE GRAUNDEE—SHE FINDS OUT THE GULPH, NOT FAR FROM THE SHIP—BRINGS HOME MORE GOODS; MAKES HER A GOWN BY HER HUSBAND'S INSTRUCTION.

I Had ever ſince our marriage been deſirous of ſeeing Youwarkee fly, but this was the firſt opportunity I had of it; and indeed the ſight was worthy of all the attention I paid it; for I deſired her ſlowly to put herſelf in proper order for it, that I might make my obſervation the more accurately; and ſhall now give you an account of the whole apparatus, though ſeveral parts of the deſcription were taken from ſubſequent views; for it would have been impoſſible to have made juſt remarks of every thing at that once, eſpecially as I only viewed her back parts then.

I told you before, I had ſeen her graundee open, and quite extended, as low as her middle; but that being in the grotto by lamp-light, I could not take ſo juſt a ſurvey as now, when the ſort of light we ever had was at the brighteſt.

She firſt threw up two long branches or ribs of the whale-bone, as I called it before, (and indeed for ſeveral of it's properties, as toughneſs, elaſticity, and pliableneſs, nothing I have ever ſeen can ſo juſtly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper-bone of the ſpine, and which, when not extended, lie bent over the ſhoulders on each ſide of the neck forwards, from whence, by nearer and nearer approaches, they juſt meet at the lower rim of the belly in a ſort of point; but when extended they ſtand their whole length above the ſhoulders, not perpendicularly, but ſpreading outwards, with a web of the ſofteſt and moſt pliable and ſpringy membrane that can be imagined, in the interſtice between them, reaching from their root or joint on the back up above the hinder part of the head, and near half-way their own length; but when cloſed the membrane falls down in the middle upon the neck, like an handkerchief. There are alſo two other ribs riſing as it were from the ſame root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not ſo long as the others. Theſe are filled up in the interſtice between them and the upper ones with the ſame membrane; and on the lower ſide of this is alſo a deep flap of the membrane, ſo that the arms can be either above or below it in flight, and are always above it when cloſed. This laſt rib, when ſhut, flaps under the upper one, and alſo falls down with it before to the waiſt, but is not joined to the ribs below. Along the whole ſpine-bone runs a ſtrong, flat, broad, griſly cartilage, to which are joined ſeveral other of theſe ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the interſtices with the above membrane, and are jointed to the ribs of the perſon juſt where the plane of the back begins to turn towards the breaſt and belly; and, when ſhut, wrap the body round to the joints on the contrary ſide, folding neatly one ſide over the other. At the lower ſpine are two more ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the hips, and long enough to meet the joint on the contrary ſide croſs the belly; and from the hip-joint, which is on the outermoſt edge of the hip-bone, runs a pliable cartilage quite down the outſide of the thigh and leg to the ancle; from which there branch out divers other ribs horizontally alſo when open, but when cloſed they encompaſs the whole thigh and leg, rolling inwards croſs the back of the leg

and thigh, till they reach and juſt cover the cartilage. The interſtices of theſe are alſo filled up with the ſame membrane. From the two ribs which join to the lower ſpine-bone there hangs down a ſort of ſhort apron, very full of plaits, from hip-joint to hip-joint, and reaches below the buttocks, half way or more to the hams. This has alſo ſeveral ſmall limber ribs in it. Juſt upon the lower ſpine-joint, and above the apron, as I call it, there are two other long branches, which, when cloſe, extend upon the back from the point they join at below to the ſhoulders, where each rib has a claſper, which reaching over the ſhoulders, juſt under the fold of the uppermoſt branch or ribs, hold up the two ribs flat to the back like a V, the interſtices of which are alſo filled up with the aforeſaid membrane. This laſt piece, in flight, falls down almoſt to the ancles, where the two claſpers lapping under each leg within-ſide, hold it very faſt; and then alſo the ſhort apron is drawn up, by the ſtrength of the ribs in it, between the thighs forward, and covers as far as the rim of the belly. The whole arms are covered alſo from the ſhoulders to the wriſt with the ſame delicate membrane, faſtened to ribs of proportionable dimenſions, and jointed to a cartilage on the outſide in the ſame manner as on the legs.

It is very ſurprizing to feel the difference of theſe ribs when open and when cloſed; for cloſed they are as pliable as the fineſt whalebone, or more ſo; but when extended, are as ſtrong and ſtiff as a bone. They are tapering from the roots, and are broader or narrower, as beſt ſuits the places they occupy, and the ſtreſs they are put to, up to their points, which are almoſt as ſmall as a hair. The membrane between them is the moſt elaſtick thing I ever met with, occupying no more ſpace, when the ribs are cloſed, than juſt from rib to rib, as flat and ſmooth as poſſible; but when extended in ſome poſtures, will dilate itſelf ſurprizingly. This will be better comprehended by the plates, where you will ſee ſeveral glumms and gawreys in different attitudes, than expreſſed by words.

As ſoon as my wife had expanded the whole graundee, being upon plain ground, ſhe ſtooped forward, moving with a heavy wriggling motion at firſt, which put me into ſome pain for her; but after a few ſtrokes, beginning to riſe a little, ſhe cut through the air like lightning, and was ſoon over the edge of the rock, and out of my ſight.

It is the moſt amazing thing in the world to obſerve the large expanſion of this graundee when open; and, when cloſed, (as it all is in a moment upon the party's deſcent) to ſee it fit ſo cloſe and compact to the body, as no taylor can come up to it; and then the ſeveral ribs lie ſo juſtly diſpoſed in the ſeveral parts, that inſtead of being, as one would imagine, a diſadvantage to the ſhape, they make the body and limbs look extremely elegant; and by the different adjuſtment of their lines on the body and limbs, the whole, to my fancy, ſomewhat reſembles the dreſs of the old Roman warriors in their buſkins; and, to appearance, ſeems much more noble than any factitious garb I ever ſaw, or can frame a notion of to myſelf.

Though theſe people in height, ſhape, and limb, very much reſemble the Europeans, there is yet this difference, that their bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their limbs, though as long and well-ſhaped, are ſeldom ſo thick as ours: and this I obſerved generally in all I ſaw of them during a long time among them afterwards; but their ſkin, for beauty and fairneſs, exceeds ours very much.

My wife having now taken her ſecond flight, I went home, and never left my children till her return: this was three days after our parting. I was in bed with my little ones when ſhe knocked at the door. I ſoon let her in, and we received each other with a glowing welcome. The news ſhe brought me was very agreeable. She told me ſhe firſt went and pried into every nook in the ſhip, where ſhe had ſeen ſuch things, could we get at them, as would make us very happy. Then ſhe ſet out the way I told her to go, in order to find the gulph. She was much afraid ſhe ſhould not have diſcovered it, though ſhe flew very ſlow, that ſhe might be ſure to hear the water-fall, and not over-ſhoot it. It was long ere ſhe came at it; but when ſhe did, ſhe perceived ſhe might have ſpared moſt of her trouble, had ſhe ſet out the other way; for, after ſhe had flown

almoſt

almoſt round the iſland, and not before, ſhe began to hear the fall, and, upon coming up to it, found it to be not above ſix minutes flight from the ſhip. She ſaid the entrance was very narrow, and, ſhe thought, lower than I repreſented it; for ſhe could ſcarce diſcern any ſpace between the ſurface of the water and the arch-way of the rock. I told her that might happen from the riſe or fall of the ſea itſelf. But I was glad to hear the ſhip was no farther from the gulph; for my head was never free from the thoughts of my ſhip and cargo. She then told me ſhe had left a ſmall bundle for me without the wood, and went to look after her children. I brought up the bundle; and though it was not near ſo large as the other, I found ſeveral uſeful things in it, wrapped up in four or five yards of dark blue woollen-cloth, which I knew no name for, but which was thin and light, and about a yard wide. I aſked her where ſhe met with this ſtuff: ſhe anſwered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our bed, in a cloth like our ſheet, which ſhe cut open, and took it out of.—'Well,' ſays I, 'and what will you 'do with this?'—'Why, I will make 'me a coat, like yours,' ſays ſhe; 'for I don't like to look different from 'my dear huſband and children.'—'No, Youwarkee,' replied I, 'you 'muſt not do ſo: if you make ſuch a 'jacket as mine, there will be no diſtinction between glumm and gawrey; 'the gowren praave, in my country, 'would not on any account go dreſſed 'like a glumm; for they wear a fine 'flowing garment called a gown, 'that ſits tight about the waiſt, and 'hangs down from thence in folds, 'like your barras, almoſt to the 'ground, ſo that you can hardly diſcern their feet, and no other part of 'their body but their hands and face, 'and about as much of their necks 'and breaſts as you ſee in your graundee.'

Youwarkee ſeemed highly delighted with this new-fancied dreſs, and worked day and night at it againſt the cold weather. Whilſt ſhe employed herſelf thus, I was buſied in providing my winter ſtores; which I was forced to do alone now, herſelf and children taking up all my wife's time. About a fortnight after ſhe had began mantua-making, ſhe preſented herſelf to me one day as I came from work in her new gown: and, truly, conſidering the ſcanty deſcription I had given her of ſuch a garment, it appeared a good comely dreſs. Though it had not one plait about the body, it ſat very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a counteſs; for ſhe would have put it all in (all the ſtuff ſhe had) had there been as much more of it. I could ſee no opening before, ſo aſked her how ſhe got it on. She told me ſhe laid along on the ground, and crept through the plaits at the bottom, and ſewed the body round her after ſhe had got her hands and arms through the ſleeves. I wondered at her contrivance; and, ſmiling, ſhewed her how ſhe ſhould put it on, and alſo how to pin it before: and after ſhe had done that, and I had turned up about half a yard of ſleeve, which then hung down to her fingers ends, I kiſſed her, and called her my country-woman, of which and her new gown ſhe was very proud for a long time.

CHAP. XXI.

THE AUTHOR GETS A BREED OF POULTRY, AND BY WHAT MEANS —BUILDS THEM AN HOUSE— HOW HE MANAGED TO KEEP THEM IN WINTER.

ONE day, as I was traverſing the woods to view my bird-traps, looking into the underwood among the great trees on my right-hand, I ſaw a wood-hen (a bird I uſed to call ſo, from it's reſemblance in make to our Engliſh poultry) come out of a little thicket. I know not whether my ruſtling or what had diſturbed it; but I let her paſs, and ſhe ran away before me. When ſhe was fairly out of ſight, I ſtepped up, and found ſhe had a neſt and ſixteen eggs there. I exactly marked the place; and taking away one of the eggs, I broke it, at ſome diſtance from the neſt, to ſee how forward they were; and I had no ſooner broke the ſhell but out came a young chicken. I then looked into the neſt again, and taking up more of the eggs, I found them all juſt ſplintered in the ſhell, and ready for hatching. I had immediately a deſire to ſave them, and bring them up tame;

but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little ſtrengthened under the hen, they would all die; ſo I let them remain till next day. In the mean while I prepared ſome ſmall netting of ſuch a proper ſize as I conceived would do; and with this I contrived, by faſtening it to ſtakes which I fixed in the ground, to ſurround the neſt, and me on the outſide of it. All the while I was doing this the hen did not ſtir, ſo that I thought ſhe had either been abſent when I came, or had hatched and gone off with the young ones. As to her being gone I was under no concern; for I had no deſign to catch her, but only to confine the chickens within my net if they were hatched. But, however, I went nearer, and peeping in, found ſhe ſat ſtill, ſqueezing herſelf as flat to the ground as ſhe could. I was in twenty minds whether to take her firſt, and then catch the chickens, or to let her go off, and then clap upon them; but as I propoſed to let her go, I thought if ſhe would ſit ſtill till I had got the chickens, that would be the beſt way; ſo I ſoftly kneeled down before her, and ſliding my hand under her, I gently drew out two, and put them in a bag I had in my left-hand. I then dipped again and again, taking two every turn; but going a fourth time, as I was bringing out my prize, the hen jumped up, flew out, and made ſuch a noiſe, that, though I the minute before ſaw ſix or ſeven more chicks in a lump where ſhe had ſat, and kept my eye upon them, yet, before I could put the laſt two I had got into my bag, theſe were all gone, and in three hours ſearch I could not find one of them, though I was ſure they could not paſs my net, and muſt be within the compaſs of a ſmall room, my toils incloſing no more. After tiring myſelf with looking for them, I marched home with thoſe eight I had got.

I told Youwarkee what I had done, and how I intended to manage the little brood, and, if I could, to bring them up tame. We kept them ſome days very warm by the fire, and fed them often, as I had ſeen my mother do with her early chickens; and in a fortnight's time they were as ſtout and familiar as common poultry. We kept them a long while in the houſe; and when I fed them I always uſed them to a particular whiſtle, which I alſo taught my wife, that they might know both us and their feeding time; and in a very ſhort while they would come running, upon the uſual ſound, like barn-door fowls to the name of Biddy.

There happened in this brood to be five hens and three cocks; and they were now ſo tame that, having cut their wings, I let them out, when the weather favoured, at my door, where they would pick about in the wood, and get beſt part of their ſubſiſtence; and having uſed them to rooſt in a corner of my anti-chamber, they all came in very regularly at night, and took their places. My hens, at the uſual ſeaſon, laid me abundance of eggs, and hatched me a brood or two each of chickens; ſo that now I was at a loſs to know what to do with them, they were become ſo numerous. The anti-chamber was no longer a proper receptacle of ſuch a flock, and therefore I built a little houſe, at a ſmall diſtance from my own, on purpoſe for their reception and entertainment. I had by this time cleared a ſpot of ground on one ſide of my grotto, by burning up the timber and underwood which had covered it: this I incloſed, and within that incloſure I raiſed my aviary; and my poultry thrived very well there, ſeemed to like their habitation, and grew very fat.

My wife and I took much delight in viſiting and feeding them, and it was a fine diverſion alſo to my boys; but at the end of ſummer, when all the other birds took their annual flight, away went every one of my new-raiſed brood with them, and one of my old cocks, the reſt of the old ſet remaining very quiet with me all the winter. The next ſummer, when my chicks of that year grew up a little, I cut their wings, and by that means preſerved all but one, which I ſuppoſe was either not cut ſo cloſe as the reſt, or his wings had grown again. From this time I found, by long experience, that not two out of a hundred that had once wintered with me would ever go away, though I did not cut their wings; but all of the ſame ſeaſon would certainly go off with the wild ones, if they could any ways make a ſhift to fly. I afterwards got a breed of black-necks, which was a name I gave them from the peculiar blackneſs of their necks,

let

let the reſt of their bodies be of what colour they would, as they are indeed of all colours. Theſe birds were as big or bigger than a turkey, of a delicious flavour, and were bred from turkey eggs hatched under my own wood-hens in greaty plenty. I was forced to clip theſe as I did the other young fowl, to keep them; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every night during the dark ſeaſon. The greateſt difficulty now was to get meat for all theſe animals in the winter, when they would ſit on the rooſt two days together, if I did not call and feed them, which I was ſometimes forced to do by lamp-light, or they would have ſtarved in cloudy weather. But I overcame that want of food by an accidental diſcovery; for I obſerved my black-necks in the woods jump many times together at a ſort of little round heads or pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a ſhrub that grew in great abundance there. I cut ſeveral of theſe heads, and carrying them home with me broke them, and took out a ſpoonful or more from each head of ſmall yellow ſeeds; which giving to my poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I ſoon laid in a ſtock for twice my number of mouths, ſo that they never after wanted. I tried ſeveral times to raiſe a breed of water-fowl by hatching their eggs under my hens; but not one in ten of the ſorts, when hatched, were fit to eat; and thoſe that were would never live and thrive with me, but got away to the lake, I having no ſort of water nearer me; ſo I dropped my deſign of water-fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my land-fowl ſo conſtantly in my farm-yard, I never wanted of that ſort at my table, where we eat abundance of them; for my whole ſide of the lake in a few years was like a farm-yard, ſo full of poultry that I never knew my ſtock; and upon the uſual whiſtle they would flock round me from all quarters. I had every thing now but cattle, not only for the ſupport but convenience and pleaſure of life; and ſo happily ſhould I have fared here, if I had had but a cow and bull, a ram and ſheep, that I would not have changed my dominions for the crown of England.

CHAP. XXII.

REFLECTIONS ON MANKIND—THE AUTHOR WANTS TO BE WITH HIS SHIP—PROJECTS GOING, BUT PERCEIVES IT IMPRACTICABLE—YOUWARKEE OFFERS HER SERVICE, AND GOES—AN ACCOUNT OF HER TRANSACTIONS ON BOARD—REMARKS ON HER SAGACITY—SHE DISPATCHES SEVERAL CHESTS OF GOODS THROUGH THE GULPH TO THE LAKE—AN ACCOUNT OF A DANGER SHE ESCAPED—THE AUTHOR HAS A FIT OF SICKNESS.

STRANGE is the temper of mankind; who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any return from my ſhip, I reſted tolerably eaſy, and but ſeldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her, thinking myſelf happy in what I had, and compleatly ſo ſince my union with my dear wife: but after I had got what I could never have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the reſt, and thought I ſhould never enjoy true happineſs while even a plank of the ſhip remained. My head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wiſhed for her in the lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I ſhould be an emperor: and though I wanted for nothing to maintain life, and had ſo good a wife and five children I was very fond of, yet the one thing I had not, reduced the comfort of all the reſt to a ſcanty pattern, even ſo low as to deſtroy my whole peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the cavern again, but was reſtrained from the attempt by the certain impracticableneſs of it. Then I thought Youwarkee ſhould make another trip to the ſhip: 'But what can 'ſhe bring from it,' ſays I to myſelf, 'in reſpect of what muſt be left be-'hind? Her whole life will not ſuffice 'to clear it in, at the rate ſhe can fetch 'the loading hither in parcels.' At laſt a project ſtarted, that as there were ſo many cheſts on board, Youwarkee ſhould fill ſome of them, and ſend them through the gulph to take their chance for the lake. This at firſt ſight ſeemed feaſible; but then I conſidered how

how they could be got from the ſhip to the gulph; and again, that they would never keep out the water, and if they filled with a lading in them they would ſink; or, if this did not happen, they might be daſhed to pieces againſt the craggs in the cavern. Theſe apprehenſions ſtopped me again; till, unwilling to quit the thought, 'True,' ſays I, 'this may happen to ſome; but 'if I get but one in five, it is better 'than nothing.' Thus I turned and wound the affair in my mind; but objections ſtill ſtarted too obſtinate to be conquered.

In the height of my ſoliloquy in comes Youwarkee; and ſeeing my dejected look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly that I could get no reſt from day to day ever ſince ſhe firſt went to the ſhip, to think ſuch a number of good things lay there to be a prey to the ſea, as the ſhip waſted, when they might be of ſuch infinite ſervice here; and that, ſince her laſt flight, I had ſuffered the more, when I thought how near the gulph was to the ſhip; ſo that could I but get thither myſelf with my boat, I would contrive to pack up the goods in the cheſts that were on board, and, carrying them in the boat, drop them near the draft of the water, which of itſelf would ſuck them under the rock down the gulph; and when they were paſſed through the cavern, I might take them up in the lake. 'Well,' ſays ſhe, 'Peter, and why cannot I 'do this for you?'—'No,' ſays I, 'even this has it's objections.' Then I told her what I feared of their taking water, or daſhing againſt the rock, and twenty other ways of fruſtrating my views: 'But, above all,' ſays I, 'how can you get ſuch large and 'weighty things to the gulph without 'a boat? There is another impoſſibi-'lity! it won't do.'

Youwarkee eyed me attentively.—'Pr'ythee, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'ſet your heart at reſt about that. 'I can only try: if no good is to 'be done, you ſhall ſoon know it, 'and muſt reſt contented under the 'diſappointment.' I told her if I was there, I could take all the things out of the cheſt, and then melt ſome pitch and pour into every crack, to keep out the water when they were ſet afloat. 'Pitch!' ſays ſhe, 'what's that!'—'Why,' ſays I, 'that is a naſty, hard, 'black ſticking thing, that ſtands in 'tubs in the ſhip, and which being put 'over the fire in any thing to melt, will 'grow liquid, and when it is cold be 'hard again, and will reſiſt the water 'and keep it out.' Says ſhe, 'How 'can I put this pitch within-ſide of the 'cheſt-lid when I have tied it up?'—'It is to no manner of purpoſe,' ſays I, 'to talk of it; ſo there's an end of 'it.'—'But,' ſays ſhe, 'ſuppoſe your-'ſelf there, what things would you 'bring firſt?' I then entered into a long detail of particulars; ſaying, I would have this and that, and ſo on, till I had ſcarce left out a thing I either knew of or could ſuppoſe to be in the ſhip; and, for fear I had not mentioned all, ſays I, at laſt, 'If I 'was there, I believe I ſhould leave 'but little portable behind me.'

'So, ſo, my dear,' ſays Youwarkee, 'you would roll in riches, I 'find; but you have mentioned never 'a new gown for me.'—'Why, aye!' ſays I, 'I would have that too.'—'But how would you melt the pitch?' ſays ſhe. 'O,' ſays I, 'there is a tin-'der-box and matches in a room be-'low, upon the ſide of the fire-hearth.' And then I let her ſee one I had brought with me, and ſhewed her the uſe of the flint and ſteel. 'Well, my dear,' ſays ſhe, 'will you once more truſt 'me?' I told her, her going would be of little more uſe than to get a ſecond gown, or ſome ſuch thing; but if ſhe was deſirous, I would let her make another flight on her promiſe to be back as ſoon as poſſible.

In the evening ſhe ſet out, and ſtaid two days, and till the night of the third. I would here obſerve, that though it was much lighter and brighter on the outſide of the rock where the ſhip lay, than with us at Graundevolet, yet having always her ſpectacles with her, I heard no more complaint of the glare of light ſhe uſed to be ſo much afraid of: indeed, ſhe always avoided the fire and lamp at home as much as ſhe could, becauſe ſhe generally took off her ſpectacles within doors; but when at any time ſhe had them on, ſhe could bear both well enough.

Upon her return again, ſhe told me ſhe

ſhe had ſhipped ſome goods to ſea for me, which ſhe hoped would arrive ſafe, (for by this time ſhe had had my ſea-faring terms ſo often over, ſhe could apply them very properly) and that they were in ſix cheſts, which ſhe had pitched after my directions. 'Aye!' ſays I, 'you have pitched them into 'the ſea, perhaps; but, after my di-'rections, I am ſatisfied, was beyond 'your ability.'—'You glumms,' ſays ſhe, 'think us gawreys very ignorant; 'but I'll ſatisfy you we are not ſo 'dull of apprehenſion as you would 'make us. Did not you ſhew me one 'day how your boat was tarred and 'caulked, as you call it?'—'I did,' ſays I; 'what then?'—'I'll tell you,' ſays ſhe. 'When I had emptied the 'firſt cheſt, and ſet it properly, I 'looked about for your pitch, which 'at laſt I found by it's ſticking to my 'fingers; I then put a good piece in-'to a ſort of a little kettle, with a 'long handle, that lay upon the pitch.' —'O, the pitch-ladle!' ſays I. 'I 'know not what you call it,' ſays ſhe; 'but then I made a fire, as you told 'me, and melted that ſtuff; after-'wards turning up the cheſt ſide-ways, 'and then end-ways, I poured it into 'it, and let it ſettle in the cracks, and 'with an old ſtocking, ſuch as yours, 'dipped into the pitch, I rubbed every 'place where the boards joined. I 'then ſet the cheſt on the ſide of the 'ſhip, and when the pitch was cold 'and hardened in it, filled it top-full 'of things: but when I had done 'thus, and ſhut the lid, I found that 'would not come ſo cloſe but I could 'get the blade of a knife through any 'where between it and the cheſt; 'whereupon I cut ſome long ſlips of 'the cloth I was packing up, and 'fitting them all round the edge of the 'cheſt, I dipped them into the pitch, 'and laid them on hot; and where one 'ſlip would not do, I put two; and 'ſhutting the lid down cloſe upon 'them, I nailed it, as I had ſeen you 'do ſome things, quite round; then 'tying a rope to the handle, I tipped 'the cheſt into the ſea, holding the 'rope. I watched it ſome time, and 'ſeeing it ſwim well, I took flight 'with the rope in my hand, and drew 'the cheſt after me to the gulph, when 'letting go the rope, away it went. I 'ſerved five more in the ſame manner: 'and now, my deareſt, I am here to 'tell you I hope you will be able to 'ſee at leaſt ſome of them, one time 'or other, in the lake.'

I admired in all this at the ſagacity of the gawreys. 'Alas!' thinks I, 'what narrow-hearted creatures are 'mankind? Did I not heretofore look 'upon the poor blacks in Africa as 'little better than beaſts, till my friend 'Glanlipze convinced me, by diſ-'abling the crocodile, the paſſage of 'the river, and ſeveral other atchieve-'ments, that my own excellences 'might have periſhed in a deſart with-'out his genius; and now what could 'I, or almoſt any of us maſter-pieces 'of the creation, (as we think our-'ſelves) and Heaven's peculiar fa-'vourites, have done in this preſent 'caſe, that has been omitted by this 'woman, (for I may juſtly ſtile her 'ſo in an eminent degree) and that in 'a way to which ſhe was bred an utter 'ſtranger.'

After what I had heard from Youwarkee, I grew much more chearful; which ſhe, poor creature, was remark-ably pleaſed with. She went with me conſtantly once, and ſometimes twice, a day, for ſeveral days together, to ſee what ſucceſs at the lake; till at length ſhe grew very impatient, for fear, as ſhe afterwards told me, I ſhould either think ſhe had not done what ſhe ſaid, or had done it in an ineffectual man-ner. But one day, walking by the lake, I thought I ſaw ſomething fl-ing in the water at a very great tance. 'Youwarkee,' ſays I, ' 'a ſail!' Then running to my and taking her in, away we went, pry-ing my oars with all my might; for I longed to ſee what it was. At nearer view I perceived it to be one of my wife's fleet. But what added to my ſatisfaction was to ſee Youwarkee ſo pleaſed, for ſhe could ſcarcely contain herſelf.

When we came cloſe to it, up ſhe ſtarted: 'Now, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'torment yourſelf no more about 'your goods on board; for if this 'will do, all ſhall be your own.' She then lent me a hand to take it in; but we had both work enough to compaſs it, the wood had ſoaked in ſo much water. We then made the beſt of our way homewards to my wet-dock; when, juſt as we had landed our trea-

ſure,

ſure, we ſaw two more boxes coming down the ſtream both together; whereupon we launched again, and brought them in one by one; for I did not care to truſt them both on one bottom, my boat being in years, and growing ſomewhat crazy.

We had now made a good day's work of it; ſo, mooring the boat, we went home, intending to be out next morning early with the cart, to convey our imports to the grotto.

After ſupper, Youwarkee looking very earneſtly at me, with tears juſt glittering in her eyes, broke out in theſe words—'What ſhould you have 'thought, Peter, to have ſeen me come 'ſailing, drowned, through the ca-'vern, tied to one of your cheſts?'—'Heaven forbid ſuch a thought, my 'charmer!' ſays I. 'But, as you 'know I muſt have been rendered the 'moſt miſerable of all living creatures 'by ſuch a ſight, or any thing elſe 'that would deprive me of you, pray 'tell me how you could poſſibly have 'ſuch a thought in your head?' She ſaw ſhe had raiſed my concern, and was very ſorry for what ſhe had ſaid. 'Nothing, nothing,' ſays ſhe, 'my 'dear! it was only a fancy juſt come 'into my head.'—'My dear Youwee,' ſays I, 'you muſt let me know what 'you mean; I am in great pain till 'you explain yourſelf; for I am ſure 'there is ſomething more in what you 'ſay than fancy; therefore, pray, if 'you love me, keep me on the rack longer.'—'Ah, Peter!' ſays ſhe, 're was but a ſpan between me and th not many days ago; and when 'I ſaw the line of the laſt cheſt we 'took up juſt now, it gave me ſo much 'horror, I could ſcarce keep upon my 'feet.'—'My dear Youwee, proceed,' ſays I; for I cannot bear my torment 'till I have heard the worſt.'—'Why, 'Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'now the danger 'is over, I ſhall tell you my eſcape 'with as much pleaſure as I gueſs 'you will take in hearing of it.—'You muſt know, my life,' ſays ſhe, 'that having caſt that cheſt into the 'ſea, as I was tugging it along by 'that very line, it being one of the 'heavieſt, and moving but ſlowly, I 'twiſted the ſtring ſeveral times round 'my hand, one fold upon another, 'the eaſier to tow it; when, drawing 'it rather too quick into the eddy, it 'pulled ſo hard againſt me, towards 'the gulph, and ſo quick, that I 'could no way looſen or diſengage 'the cord from my fingers, but was 'dragged thereby to the very rock, 'againſt which the cheſt ſtruck vio-'lently. My laſt thought, as I ſup-'poſed it, was of you, my dear,' (on which ſhe claſped me round the neck, in ſenſe of her paſt agony;) 'when, 'taking myſelf for loſt, I forbore far-'ther reſiſtance; at which inſtant the 'line, ſlackening by the rebound of 'the cheſt, fell from my hand of it-'ſelf; and the cheſt, returning to the 'rock, went down the current. I 'took a turn or two round on my 'graundee to recollect my paſt dan-'ger, and went back to the ſhip, fully 'reſolved to avoid the like ſnare for 'the future. Indeed I did not eaſily 'recover my ſpirits, and was ſo terri-'fied with the thought, that I had half 'a mind to have left the two remain-'ing cheſts behind me; but as dan ger 'overcome gives freſh reſolution, I 'again ſet to work, and diſcharged 'them alſo down the gulph, as I hope 'you will ſee in good time.'

My heart bled within me all the while ſhe ſpoke, and I even felt ten times more than ſhe could have ſuffered by the gulph. 'My deareſt Youwee,' ſays I, 'why did not you tell me this 'adventure ſooner?'—'It is too ſoon 'I fear now!' ſays ſhe; for ſhe then ſaw the colour forſake my lips, my eyes grow languid, and myſelf dropping into her arms. She ſcreamed out, and ran to the cheſt, where all was empty; but turning every bottle up, and from the remaining drops in each collecting a ſmall quantity of liquor, and putting it by little and little to my lips, and rubbing my wriſts and temples, ſhe brought me to myſelf again; but I continued ſo extremely ſick for ſome days after, that it was above a week before I could get down with my cart to fetch up my cheſts.

When I was able to go down, Youwarkee would not venture me alone, but went herſelf with me. We then found two more of the cheſts, which we landed; and I had work ſufficient for two or three days in getting them all up to the grotto, they were ſo heavy, and all the way through the wood being up hill.

We had five in hand, and watched

ſeveral

Stothard del. Birrell Sculp.

Plate IV. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 23, 1783.

ſeveral days for the ſixth, when ſeeing nothing of it we gave it over for loſt: but one day, as I was going for water, Youwarkee would go with me, and urged our carrying the net, that we might drag for ſome fiſh; accordingly we did ſo; and now having taken what we wanted, we went to the rill, and puſhing in the head of the boat, (as I uſually did, for by that means I could fill the veſſel as I ſtood on board) the firſt thing that appeared was my ſixth cheſt. Youwarkee ſpied it firſt, and cried, pointing thereto, 'O, Pe-'ter, what we have long wiſhed for, 'and almoſt deſpaired of, is come at 'laſt! let us meet and welcome it.' I was pleaſed with the gaiety of her fancy. I did as ſhe deſired; we got it into the boat, after merrily ſaluting it, and ſo returned home. It took us up ſeveral day's time in ſearching, ſorting, and diſpoſing our cargo, and drying the cheſts; for the goods themſelves were ſo far from being wetted or ſpoiled, that even thoſe in the laſt cheſt, which had lain ſo long in the water, had not taken the leaſt moiſture.

Youwarkee was quite alert at the ſucceſs of her packing, but left me to ring her praiſes, which I did not fail of doing more than once at unpacking each cheſt, and could ſee her eyes glow with delight to ſee ſhe had ſo pleaſed me.

She had been ſo curious as to examine almoſt every thing in the ſhip; and as well of things I had deſcribed, and ſhe did know, as of what ſhe did not, brought me ſomething for a ſample; but, above all, had not forgot the blue ſtuff, for the moment ſhe had ſeen that ſhe deſtined it to the uſe of herſelf and children.

CHAP. XXIII.

THE RELIGION OF THE AUTHOR'S FAMILY.

YOUWARKEE and I having fixed ourſelves, by degrees, into a ſettled rota of action, began to live like Chriſtians, having ſo great a quantity of moſt ſorts of neceſſaries about us. But I ſay we lived like Chriſtians on another account, for you muſt not think, after what I have ſaid before, that I and my family lived like heathens: no, I will aſſure you, they by degrees knew all I knew, and that, with a little artificial improvement, and a well-regulated diſpoſition, I hoped, and did not doubt, would carry them all to Heaven. I would many a time have given all my intereſt in the ſhip's cargo for a Bible; and a hundred times grieved that I was not maſter of a pocket-one, which I might have carried every where about me. I never imagined there was one aboard, and if there were, and Youwarkee ſhould find it, I ſuppoſed it would be in Portugueſe, which I knew little of; ſo it would be of ſmall ſervice to me if I had it.

Since I am upon the topick of religion, it may not be amiſs, once for all, to give you a ſmall ſketch of my religious proceedings after coming into my new dominions. I have already told you that from my firſt ſtop at the rock I had prayed conſtantly morning and evening, but I cannot ſay I did it always with the ſame efficacy. However, my imperfect devotions were not without good effect; and I am confident, wherever this courſe is purſued with a right view, ſooner or later the iſſue will prove the ſame to others as I found it to myſelf; I mean, that mercies will be remembered with more gratitude, and evils be more diſregarded, and become leſs burdenſome: and ſurely the perſon whoſe caſe this is, muſt neceſſarily enjoy the trueſt reliſh of life. As daily prayer was my practice, in anſwer to it I obtained the greateſt bleſſing and comfort my ſolitude was capable of receiving; I mean my wife, whoſe character I need not farther attempt to blazon in any faint colours of my own, after what has been already ſaid; her acts having ſpoken her virtues beyond all verbal deſcription.

After we were married, as I call it, that is, after we had agreed to become man and wife, I frequently prayed before her, and with her, (for by this time ſhe underſtood a good deal of my language;) at which, though contrary to my expectation, ſhe did not ſeem ſurprized, but readily kneeled by and joined with me. This I liked very well: and upon my aſking her one day after prayer, if ſhe underſtood what I had been doing, (for I had a notion ſhe did not) 'Yes, verily,' ſays ſhe,

'you have been making petitions to 'the image of the great Collwar.'—'Pray,' ſays I, (willing gently to lead her into a juſt ſenſe of a Supreme Being) 'who is this Collwar? and 'where does he dwell?'—'He it is,' ſays ſhe, 'that does all good and evil 'to us.'—'Right,' ſays I, 'it is in 'ſome meaſure ſo; but he cannot of 'himſelf do evil, abſolutely and properly as his own act.'—'Yes,' ſays ſhe, 'he can; for he can do all that 'can be done, and as evil can be done 'he can do it.' So quick a reply ſtartled me. Thinks I, 'She will 'run me aground preſently; and from 'being a doctor, as I fancied myſelf, 'I ſhall become but a pupil to my own 'ſcholar.' I then aſked her where the great Collwar dwelt: ſhe told me, 'In 'heaven, in a charming place.'—'And 'can he know what we do?' ſays I. 'Yes,' replied ſhe, 'his image tells 'him every thing; and I have prayed 'to his image, which I have often 'ſeen; and it is filled with ſo much 'virtue that it is his ſecond ſelf: for 'there is only one of them in the 'world who is ſo good, he gives ſeveral virtues to other images of himſelf, which are brought to him, and 'put into his arms to breathe upon; 'and the only thing I have ever regretted ſince I knew you is, that I 'have not one of them here to comfort 'and bleſs us and our children.'

Though I was ſorry for the oddity of her conceptions, I was almoſt glad to find her ſo ignorant, and pleaſed myſelf with thinking that as ſhe had already a confuſed notion of a Supreme Power, I ſhould ſoon have the ſatisfaction of bringing her to a more rational knowledge of him.

'Pray, Youwee,' ſays I, 'what is 'your God made of?'—'Why of 'clay,' ſays ſhe, 'finely painted, and 'looks ſo terrible he would make you 'tremble to behold him.'—'Do you 'think,' ſays I, 'that is the true 'Collwar's real ſhape, if you could 'ſee himſelf?' She told me, 'Yes;' for that ſome of his beſt ſervants had ſeen him, and took the repreſentation from himſelf. 'And pray, do you 'think he loves his beſt ſervants, as 'you call them, and is kind to them?' —'You need not doubt it,' ſays ſhe. 'Why, then,' replied I, 'how came 'he to look ſo terrible upon them 'when they ſaw him, as you ſay they 'did? for I can ſee no reaſon how terrible ſoever he looks to others, why 'he ſhould ſhew himſelf ſo to thoſe he 'loves. I ſhould rather think, as 'you ſay he is kind to them, that he 'ſhould have two images, a placid 'one for his good, and a terrible one 'for his bad ſervants; or elſe, who 'by ſeeing him can tell whether he is 'pleaſed or angry? for even you yourſelf, Youwee, when any thing pleaſes 'you, have a different look from that 'you have when you are angry; and 'little Pedro can tell whether he does 'well or ill by your countenance: 'whereas, if you made no diſtinction, 'but looked with the ſame face on all 'his actions, he would as readily 'think he did well as ill in committing 'a bad action.' Youwarkee could not tell what to ſay to this, the fact ſeeming againſt her.

I then aſked her, if ſhe thought the image itſelf could hear her petitions. She replied, 'Yes.'—'And can he,' ſays I, 'return you an anſwer?' She told me, he only did that to his beſt ſervants. 'Did you ever hear him do 'it?' ſays I. 'For unleſs he can 'ſpeak too, I ſhould much ſuſpect his 'hearing; and you being one of his 'beſt ſervants, ſeeing you love him, 'and pray heartily to him, why ſhould 'you not hear him as ſoon as others?' —'No,' ſays ſhe, 'there are a great 'number of glumms on purpoſe to 'ſerve him, pray for us to him, and 'receive his anſwers.'—'But to what 'purpoſe then,' ſays I, 'is your praying to him if their prayers will ſerve 'your turn?'—'O,' ſays ſhe, 'the 'image hears them ſooner than us, 'and ſends the petitions up to the 'great Collwar, and lets him know 'who makes them, and deſires him to 'let them have what they want.'—'But ſuppoſe,' ſays I, for argument ſake, 'that you could ſee the great 'Collwar, or know where he was, 'and ſhould pray to himſelf, without 'going about to his image firſt, do 'you think he could not hear you?'—'I cannot tell that,' ſays ſhe. 'But 'how then,' ſays I, 'can he tell what '(if it could ſpeak) his image ſays, 'which is as far from him as you are? 'And, pray, do you think he can hear

'an

'an image which he did not make, 'which could not make itſelf, and 'which can neither hear, nor ſee, nor 'ſpeak, better than he can hear a 'glumm whom he did make, and who 'made that image, and who himſelf 'can hear, and ſee, and ſpeak to him?' She pauſed here a good while. At laſt, ſays ſhe, 'Why, truly, I cannot 'think but he might as well, or bet-'ter, hear me than the image.'—'Why, then,' ſaid I, 'don't you 'make your petitions to himſelf, and 'not to the image? It is for the rea-'ſon I have given you, my dear You-'warkee, that I pray to him, and not 'to his image, or any repreſentation 'of him upon earth; and, conſe-'quently, am more ſure of being heard 'and anſwered.'—'Indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'I never thought of that before, for 'our ragans always charged me to 'pray to the image, or to let them 'know what I wanted, and they 'would pray to him for me; and they 'have had many a roppin of me for ſo 'doing, and ſometimes two or three, 'when they told me I ſhould have 'what I wanted: but you have con-'vinced me it is better to pray to him-'ſelf, and I ſhall always do it here-'after.'

Having conducted my ſcholar thus far, I left off, thinking I had now laid a ſolid baſis, that I need be in no fear for my ſuperſtructure; and as the ſlower you build, the firmer it ſettles, I thought fit to let this firſt work ſettle into a firm principle before I raiſed any farther doctrine upon it, which, as occaſion offered, I determined to purſue. I propagated no theological notions in my children till they were capable of conceiving the truth of them from principles of reaſon; but only inculcated on them juſtice, truth, and love to myſelf, their mother, and each other. Having brought my wife firmly to believe in a Supreme Being, (let her call him what ſhe would) who could hear our prayers, ſee our actions, and anſwer our petitions as he ſees fit, and to an aſſurance that his love to us is ſo great that he will do what is moſt beneficial for us, though it ſhould not always prove what we think ſo; the great truths concerning his diſpenſations in our creation and redemption, and our duty towards him, followed of courſe, as direct conſequences of ſuch his love and knowledge of us, and ſhe eaſily came into them. Accordingly, I opened the doctrine of the creation to her as well as I could. I am ſorry to ſay my explication of this great point was not ſo juſt, ſo particular, and clear, as it might have been if I had had a Bible, any more than was the ſucceeding hiſtory of our redemption; however, in general, I explained both ſo effectually, that though it required time to ground her in the full practical faith of it, yet the opinion ſhe had of me, and my fidelity to her, with the reaſons I was able to urge for what I taught her, perſuaded her I was in the right, and diſpoſed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous application, with God's grace, ſoon brought her to a firm belief in it, and a ſuitable temper and conduct with reſpect to God and man.

After I had began with my children, I frequently referred their farther inſtruction to their mother, for I have always experienced that a ſuperficial knowledge, with a deſire of becoming a teacher, is, in ſome meaſure, equivalent to better knowledge; for it not only excites every principle one has to the utmoſt, but makes matters more clear and conſpicuous even to one's ſelf.

By theſe means, and the Divine bleſſing thereon, in a few years, I may fairly ſay, I had a little Chriſtian church in my own houſe, and in a flouriſhing way too, without a Schiſmatick or Heretick amongſt us.

CHAP. XXIV.

THE AUTHOR'S ACCOUNT OF HIS CHILDREN — THEIR NAMES — THEY ARE EXERCISED IN FLYING—HIS BOAT CRAZY—YOUWARKEE INTENDS A VISIT TO HER FATHER, BUT FIRST TAKES ANOTHER FLIGHT TO THE SHIP —SENDS A BOAT AND CHESTS THROUGH THE GULPH — CLOATHS HER CHILDREN — IS WITH CHILD AGAIN, SO HER VISIT IS PUT OFF—AN INVENTORY OF THE LAST FREIGHT OF GOODS—THE AUTHOR'S METHOD OF TREATING HIS CHIL-

DREN—YOUWARKEE, HER SON TOMMY, WITH HER DAUGHTERS PATTY AND HALLYCARNIE, SET OUT TO HER FATHER'S.

I Had now lived here almoſt fourteen years; and beſides the three ſons before-mentioned, had three girls and one boy. Pedro, my eldeſt, had the graundee, but too ſmall to be uſeful; my ſecond ſon Tommy had it compleat; ſo had my three daughters; but Jemmy and David, the youngeſt ſons, none at all. My eldeſt danghter I named Patty, becauſe I always called my firſt wife ſo; I ſay my firſt wife, though I had no other knowledge of her death than my dream; but am from that as verily perſuaded if ever I reach England I ſhall find it ſo, as if I had heard it from her aunt's own mouth. My ſecond daughter my wife deſired might be called by her ſiſter's name Hallycarnie; and my youngeſt I named Sarah, after my mother. I put you to the trouble of writing down the names, for as I ſhall hereafter have frequent occaſion to mention the children ſeverally, it will be pleaſanter for myſelf and you to call them by their ſeveral names of diſtinction, than to call them my ſecond ſon, or my eldeſt daughter, and ſo-forth.

My wife now took great delight in exerciſing Tommy and Patty (who were big enough to be truſted) in flight, and would often ſkim round the whole iſland with them before I could walk half through the wood. And ſhe would teach them alſo to ſwim or ſail; I know not which to call it, for ſometimes you ſhould ſee them dart out of the air as if they would fall on their faces into the lake, when coming near the ſurface they would ſtretch their legs in an horizontal poſture, and in an inſtant turn on their backs, and then you could ſee nothing from the bank, to all appearance, but a boat ſailing along, the graundee riſing at their head, feet, and ſides, ſo like the ſides and ends of a boat, that you could not diſcern the face or any part of the body. I own I often envied them this exerciſe, which they ſeemed to perform with more eaſe than I could only ſhake my leg, or ſtir an arm.

Though we had perpetually Swangeans about us, and the voices as I uſed to call them, I could never once prevail on my wife to ſhew herſelf, or to claim any acquaintance with her country-folks. And what is very remarkable in my children is, that my three daughters and Tommy, who had the full graundee, had exactly their mother's ſight, Jemmy and David had juſt my ſight, and Pedro's ſight was between both, though he was never much affected with any light; but I was obliged to make ſpectacles for Tommy and all my daughters when they came to go abroad.

I had in this time twice enlarged my dwelling, which the increaſe of my family had rendered neceſſary. The laſt alteration I was enabled to do in a much better manner, and with more eaſe, than the firſt; for by the return of my flota, I had gotten a large collection of uſeful tools; ſeveral of iron, where the handles or wood-work preponderated the iron; but ſuch as were all, or greateſt part of that metal had got either to the rock, or were ſo faſt fixed to the head of the ſhip, that it was difficult to remove them; ſo that my wife could get comparatively few of this latter ſort, though ſome ſhe did. It was well, truly, I had theſe inſtruments, which greatly facilitated my labours, for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making proviſion for us all; and my ſons Pedro and Tommy commonly aſſiſted. I had alſo had another importation of goods through the gulph, which ſtill added to my convenience. But my boat made me ſhudder every time I went into her; ſhe had leaked again and again, and I had patched her till I could ſcarce ſee a bit of the old wood. She was of unſpeakable uſe to me, and yet I could not venture myſelf in her, but with the utmoſt apprehenſion and trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had ſuch helps to build a new one, but had been diverted by one avocation or other.

About this time Youwarkee, who was now upwards of thirty-two years of age, the fondeſt mother living, and very proud of her children, had formed a project of taking a flight to Arndrumnſtake, a town in the kingdom of Doorpt Swangeanti, as I called it, where her father, if living, was a colamb under Georigetti, the prince of that country. She imparted her deſire

to

to me, aſking my leave; and ſhe told me, if I pleaſed, ſhe would take Patty and Tommy along with her. I did not much diſlike the propoſal, becauſe of the great inclination I had for a long time to a knowledge of, and familiarity with, her countrymen and relations; and now I had ſo many of her children with me, I could not think ſhe would ever be prevailed on, but by force, to quit me and her offspring, and be contented to loſe ſix for the ſake of having two with her; eſpecially as ſhe had ſhewed no more love for them than the reſt: ſo I made no heſitation, but told her ſhe ſhould go.

I expected continually I ſhould hear of her departure; but ſhe ſaying no more of it, I thought ſhe had dropped her deſign, and I did not chuſe to mention it. But one day as we were at dinner, looking mighty ſeriouſly, ſhe ſaid, 'My dear, I have conſidered of 'the journey you have conſented I 'ſhould take, but in order thereto it 'is neceſſary that I prepare ſeveral 'things for the children, eſpecially 'thoſe who have no graundee, and I 'am reſolved to finiſh them before I 'go, that we may appear with de-'cency, both here and at Arndrumn-'ſtake; for I am ſure my father, whoſe 'temper I am perfectly acquainted 'with, will, upon ſight of me and my 'little ones, be ſo overjoyed, that he 'will forgive my abſence and mar-'riage, provided he ſees reaſon to be-'lieve I have not matched unworthily, 'unbecoming my birth; and after 'keeping me and the children with 'him, it may be two or three months, 'will accompany me home again him-'ſelf with a great retinue of ſervants 'and relations; or, at leaſt, if he is 'either dead or unable for flight, my 'other relations will come or ſend a 'convoy to take care of me and the 'children: and, my dear, as I ſhall 'give them all the encomiums I can 'of you, and of my ſituation with 'you, while I am among them, I 'would have them a little taken with 'the elegance of our domeſtick condi-'tion when they come hither, that they 'may think me happy in you and my 'children; for I would not only put 'my family into a condition to appear 'before them, but to ſurprize the old 'gentleman and his company, who 'never in their lives ſaw any part of 'mankind with another covering than 'the graundee.' When ſhe had done, I expreſſed my approbation of her whole ſyſtem, as altogether prudent; and ſhe proceeded immediately to put it in execution. To work ſhe went, opened every cheſt, and examined their contents. But while ſhe was upon the hunt, and ſelecting ſuch things as ſhe thought fit for her purpoſe, ſhe recollected ſeveral articles ſhe had obſerved in the ſhip, which ſhe judged far more for her turn than any ſhe had at home. Hereupon ſhe prayed me to let her take another trip to the veſſel, and to carry Tommy with her.

After ſo many trials, and ſuch happy experience of her wiſe and fortunate conduct, I conſented to her flight, and away went ſhe and her ſon. Upon their return, which was in a few days, ſhe told me what they had been doing, and ſaid, as ſhe ſo often heard me complain of the age of my boat, and fear to fail in her, ſhe had fitted me out a little ſhip, and hoped it would in due time arrive ſafely. As ſhe paſſed quickly on to other things, I never once thought of aſking her what ſhe meant by the little ſhip ſhe ſpoke of; but muſt own, that, like a fooliſhly fond parent, I was more intent on her telling me how Tommy had found a hoard of playthings, which he had packed up for his own uſe.

As to this laſt particular, I learned by the ſequel of the ſtory, when the ſpark, proud of his acquiſition, came to me, that he had been peeping about in the cabbin whilſt his mother was packing the cheſts, and ſeeing a ſmall braſs knob in the wainſcot, took it for a plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little door of a cupboard, where he had found ſome very pretty toys, that he poſitively claimed for himſelf; among which were a ſmall plain gold ring, and a very fine one ſet with diamonds, which he ſhewed me upon two of his fingers. I wondered how the child, who had never before ſeen ſuch things, or the uſe of them, ſhould happen to apply theſe ſo properly; but he told me in playing with this, meaning the diamond ring about his fingers, it ſlipped over his middle finger joint, and he could not get it off again, ſo he put the other upon another finger to keep it company.

We watched daily, as uſual on ſuch occaſions,

occaſions, for the arrival of our fleet. It was ſurprizing that none of the cheſts which Youwarkee ſhot down the gulph were ever half ſo long in their paſſage as I was myſelf, but ſome came in a week, ſome in a few days more, and even ſome in leſs; which I attributed to their following directly the courſe of the water, ſhooting from ſhelf to ſhelf as the tide ſat; and I believe my keeping the boat I ſailed in ſo ſtrictly and conſtantly in the middle of the ſtream, was the reaſon of my being detained there ſo long. In leſs than a fortnight every thing came ſafe but one cheſt, which, as we never heard of it, I ſuppoſe was either ſunk or bulged.

Being one day upon ſhore, watching to ſee if any thing more was come through the cavern, I ſpied at a diſtance ſomewhat looking very black and very long, and by the colour and ſhape thereof I took it for a young whale. Having obſerved it ſome time making very little way, I took my old boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, leſt a ſtroke with it's tail (which I then fancied I ſaw move) might endanger my boat and myſelf too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and ſeeing it did not ſtir, I believed it to be dead; whereupon, taking courage, I drew ſo cloſe, that at length I plainly perceived it was the ſhip's ſecond boat turned upſide-down. It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I felt on this diſcovery. It was the very thing I was now, as I have ſaid, in the greateſt want of. I preſently laid hold of it and brought it aſhore; and it was no ſmall pleaſure to find, on examining, that though it had lain ſo long dry, it was yet quite ſound, and all it's chinks filled up in it's paſſage; and it proved to me afterwards the moſt beneficial thing I could have had from the ſhip.

I got all my goods home from the lake to my grotto, by means of the cart, as uſual. My wife and daughters waited with impatience for me to unpack, that they might take poſſeſſion of ſuch things as would be needful for rigging out the family againſt the ſuppoſed reception of the old glumm, and had ſet all the cheſts in the order they deſired they might be opened in. But Tommy running to me, with a 'Pray, daddy, open my cheſt 'firſt! pray, give me my play-things 'firſt!' it was, to ſatisfy him, concluded in favour of his demand. So, he pointing to the cheſt which he regarded as his property, I opened it whilſt his eyes were ready to pierce through it, till I came to his treaſure. 'There, 'there they are, daddy!' ſays he, as ſoon as I had uncovered them. And indeed, when I ſaw them I could not but much commend the child for his fancy; for the firſt things that appeared were a ſilver punch or wine-cann and a ladle, then a gold watch, a pair of ſciſſars, a ſmall ſilver chafing-diſh and lamp, a large caſe of mathematical inſtruments, a flagellet, a terrella, or globular load-ſtone, a ſmall globe, a dozen of large ſilver ſpoons, and a ſmall caſe of knives and forks and ſpoons; in ſhort, there was, I believe, the greateſt part of the Portugueſe captain's valuable effects.

Theſe Tommy claiming as his own proper chattels, I could not help interpoſing ſomewhat of my authority in the affair. 'Hold, hold, ſon!' ſays I, 'theſe things are all mine; but as I 'have ſeveral of you who will all be 'equally pleaſed with them, though, 'as the firſt finder, you may be entitled to the beſt ſhare, you are not to 'graſp the whole, you muſt all have 'ſomething like an equality; and as 'to ſome things which may be equally 'uſeful to us all, they muſt be ſet up 'to be uſed upon occaſion, and are to 'be conſidered as mine and your mother's property.' I thereupon gave each of them a large ſilver ſpoon, and with a fork I ſcratched the initials of their names reſpectively on them, and divided ſeveral of the trifles amongſt them equally. 'And now, Tommy,' ſays I, 'you for your pains ſhall have this 'more than the reſt,' offering him the flagellet. Tommy looked very gloomy; and though he durſt not find fault, his diſſatisfaction was very viſible by coolly taking it, toſſing it down, and walking gravely off. 'I thought,' ſays I, 'Tommy, I had made a good 'choice for you; but, as I find you 'deſpiſe it—here Pedro, do you take 'that pretty thing, ſince your brother 'ſlights it.' Tommy replied, (ſpeaking but half out, and a little ſurly, more than I ever obſerved before) 'Let 'him take it if he will, I can get bits 'of ſticks enough in the wood.'

My method had always been to avoid either beating or ſcolding at my children,

dren, for preferring their own opinion to mine; but I ever let things turn about ſo, that from their own reaſon they ſhould perceive they had erred in oppoſing my ſentiments; by which means they grew ſo habituated to ſubmit to my advice and direction, that for the moſt part my will was no ſooner known to them than it became their own choice; but then I never willed according to fancy only, but with judgment, to the beſt of my ſkill.

Tommy, therefore, (as I ſaid before) having ſhewn a diſapprobation of my doings; to convince him of his miſtake, I took the flagellet from Pedro, 'And now, Pedro,' ſays I, 'let me 'teach you how to manage this piece 'of wood, as Tommy calls it, and 'then let me ſee if in all the grove he 'can cut ſuch another.' On this I clapped it to my mouth, and immediately played ſeveral country-dances and hornpipes on it; for though my mother had ſcarce taught me to read, I had learnt muſick and dancing, being, as ſhe called them, gentleman-like accompliſhments. My wife and children, eſpecially Tommy, all ſtared as if they were wild, firſt on me, then on one another, whilſt I played a country-dance; but I had no ſooner ſtruck up an hornpipe, than their feet, arms, and heads, had ſo many twitchings and convulſive motions, that not one quiet limb was to be ſeen amongſt them; till having exerciſed their members as long as I ſaw fit, I almoſt laid them all to ſleep with Chevy Chace, and ſo gave over.

They no ſooner found themſelves free from this enchantment, than the children all huſtled round me in a cluſter, all ſpeaking together, and reaching out their little hands to the inſtrument. I gave it Pedro. 'There,' ſays I to him, 'take this ſlighted 'favour as no ſuch contemptible pre-'ſent.'

Poor Tommy, who had all this while looked very ſimple, burſt into a flood of tears at my laſt words, as if his heart would have broke; and running to me, fell on his knees, and begged my pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and kiſſing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more children to give any thing to which either of the reſt deſpiſed, it was equal to me who had it, ſo it was thankfully received. I found that did not ſatisfy; ſtill in tears, he ſaid, might he not have the ſtick again, as I gave it to him firſt. 'Tommy,' ſays I, 'you know I gave it to you 'firſt; but you diſapproving my kind-'neſs, I have now given it Pedro, 'who, ſhould I againſt his will take it 'from him, would have that reaſon to 'complain which you have not, who 'parted with it by your own conſent; 'and therefore, Tommy, as I am de-'termined to acquaint you as near as 'I can with the ſtrict rules of juſtice, 'there muſt no more be ſaid to me of 'this matter.' Such as this was my conſtant practice amongſt them; and they having always found me inflexible from this rule, we ſeldom had any long debates.

Though I ſay the affair ended ſo with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not ſo with Tommy; for though he knew he had no hopes of moving me, he ſet all his engines at work to recover his ſtick (as he called it) by his mother's and ſiſter's intereſt. Theſe ſolicited Pedro very ſtrongly to gratify him. At length Pedro (he being a boy of a moſt humane diſpoſition) granted their deſire, if I would give leave; and I having ſignified, that the cauſe being now out of my hands, he might do as he pleaſed, he generouſly yielded it. And indeed he could not have beſtowed it more properly; for Tommy had the beſt ear for muſick I ever knew; and in leſs than a twelvemonth could far outdo me, his inſtructor, in ſoftneſs and eaſineſs of finger; and was alſo maſter of every tune I knew, which were neither inconſiderable in number, nor of the loweſt rate.

Youwarkee, with her daughters, ſat cloſe to work, and had but juſt compleated her whole deſign for the family cloathing when ſhe told me ſhe found herſelf with child again. As that circumſtance ill-ſuited a journey, ſhe deferred her flight for about fifteen months; in which time ſhe was brought to bed, and weaned the infant, which was a boy, whom I named Richard, after my good maſter at the academy. The little knave thrived amain, and was left to my farther nurſing during

it's

it's mammy's abſence; who, ſtill firm to her reſolution, after ſhe had equipped herſelf and companions with whatever was neceſſary to their travelling, and locked up all the apparel ſhe had made till her return, becauſe ſhe would have it appear new when her father came, ſet out with her ſon Tommy and my two daughters Patty and Hallycarnie; the laſt of which by this time being big enough alſo to be truſted with her mother.

CHAP. XXV.

YOUWARKEE'S ACCOUNT OF THE STAGES TO ARNDRUMNSTAKE—THE AUTHOR UNEASY AT HER FLIGHT—HIS EMPLOYMENT IN HER ABSENCE, AND PREPARATIONS FOR RECEIVING HER FATHER—HOW HE SPENT THE EVENINGS WITH THE CHILDREN.

MY wife was now upon her journey to her father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impoſſible for me to conceive by her deſcription of the way; for ſhe diſtinguiſhed it not by miles or leagues, but by ſwangeans, and names of rocks, ſeas and mountains, which I could neither comprehend the diſtance of from each other, nor from Graundevolet where I was. I underſtood by her, indeed, there was a great ſea to be paſſed, which would take her up almoſt a day and night, having the children with her, before ſhe reached the next arkoe; though ſhe could do it herſelf ſhe ſaid, and ſtrain hard, in a ſummer's night; but if the children ſhould flag by the way, as there was no reſting-place between us and Battringdrigg, the next arkoe, it might be dangerous to them; ſo ſhe would take the above time for their ſakes. After this I found by what ſhe ſaid there was a narrow ſea to paſs, and a prodigious mountain, before ſhe reached her own country; and that her father's was but a little beyond that mountain. This was all I could know in general about it. At their departure ſhe and the children had taken each a ſmall proviſion for their flight, which hung about their necks in a ſort of purſe.

I cannot ſay, notwithſtanding this journey was taken with my concurrence and conſent, that I was perfectly eaſy when they were gone; for my affection for them all would work up imaginary fears too potent for my reaſon to diſpel, and which at firſt ſat with no eaſy preſſure upon my mind. This my pretty babies at home perceiving, uſed all the little winning arts they could to divert and keep up my ſpirits; and from day to day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with and amuſing them at home, I grew more and more perſuaded that all would go right with the abſent, and that in due time I ſhould ſee them return again.

But as the winter ſet in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourſelves within doors in preparing ſeveral things which might not only be uſeful and ornamental, if the old glumm ſhould come to ſee us, but might alſo divert us, and make the time paſs leſs tediouſly. The firſt thing I went upon was a table, which, as my family conſiſted of ſo many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that view I broke up a couple of cheſts; and, taking the two ſides of one of them, I nailed them edge to edge by ſtrong thick pieces underneath at each end and in the middle; then I took two cheſt-lids with their hinges, nailing one to each ſide of my middle piece, which made two good flaps; after this, with my tools, of which I had now a cheſt-full, I chopped out of new ſtuff and planed four ſtrong legs quite ſquare, and nailed them ſtrongly to each corner of my middle board; I then nailed pieces from one leg to the other, and nailed the bed likewiſe to them; then I faſtened a border quite round within ſix inches from the bottom, from foot to foot, which held all faſt together. When all this was done, ſtill my table was imperfect, I could not put up the flaps, having no proper ſupport. To remedy this I ſawed out a broad ſlip from a cheſt-ſide, and boring a large hole through the center, I ſpiked it up to the under-ſide of the table's bed, with a ſpindle I contrived juſt looſe enough to play round the head of the ſpike, filing down that part of the ſpindle which paſſed through the bed of the table, and rivetting it cloſe; ſo that when

when my flaps were ſet up, I pulled the ſlip croſswiſe of the table, and when the flaps were down, the ſlip turned under the top of the table lengthwiſe: next, under each flap, I nailed a ſmall ſlip lengthwiſe of the flaps, to raiſe them on a level, when up, with the top of the table. When I had thus compleated the ſeveral parts of this needful utenſil, I ſpent ſome time and pains, by ſcraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the ſucceſs ſo well anſwered my wiſh, that I was not a little proud of the performance: and what rendered my work thereon a ſtill more agreeable taſk, was my pretty infants company, who ſtood by, expreſſing their wonder and approbation at every ſtroke.

Now I had gotten a table, I wanted chairs to it; for as yet we had only ſat round the room upon cheſts, which formed a bench of the whole circumference, they ſtood ſo thick. There was no moving of them without a monſtrous trouble every time I might have occaſion to ſet out my table; beſides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for ſeats; ſo I reſolved to make ſome chairs and ſtools alſo, that might be manageable. I will not trouble you with the ſteps I took in the formation of theſe; only, in general, you muſt know, that ſome more cheſts I broke up to that purpoſe ſerved me for timber, out of which I framed ſix ſizeable handſome chairs, and a competent number of ſtools.

But now that I was turned joiner I had another convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to incloſe things, and preſerve them from duſt, except the cheſts; and they were quite unfit for holding liquors, victuals, and ſuch-like matters, in open ſhells, as moſt of my veſſels were. Wherefore, having ſeveral boards now remaining of the boxes I had broken up for chairs and ſtools, I bethought me of ſupplying this great deficiency; ſo of theſe ſpare boards, in a workmanlike way, (for by this time I was become a tolerable mechanick) I compoſed a very tight cloſet, holding half a dozen broad ſhelves, ſhut up by a good pair of doors, with a lock and key to faſten them.

Theſe jobbs took me up almoſt three months, and I thought I had not employed them idly, but for the credit and ſervice of my family. I was now again at leiſure for farther projects. I was uncertain as to my wife's return, how ſoon ſhe might be with me, or how much longer ſhe might ſtay; but I was ſure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful than increaſing, by all means in my power, the accommodations of my houſe; for the more polite as well as convenient reception of her father, or any elſe who might accompany her home in the way of a retinue, as ſhe talked of. I ſaw plainly I had not room for lodging them, and that was a circumſtance of main importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long apartment to one of my outer-rooms, to range againſt the ſide of the rock; but reflecting that ſuch a thing would be quite uſeleſs, unleſs I could finiſh it in time, ſo as to be compleat when my gueſts came, and not knowing how ſoon that might be, I reſolved to quit this deſign; and I fell upon another which might do as well, and required much leſs labour and fewer days to perfect.

I remembered, that amongſt thoſe things my wife had packed up on board the ſhip, and which came home through the gulph, there were two of the largeſt ſails, and a couple of ſmaller ſize. Theſe I carried to the wood, and tried them in ſeveral places to ſee where they might be diſpoſed to moſt advantage in the nature of a tent; and having found a convenient ſpot to my purpoſe, I cut divers poles for ſupporters, and making ſtraining-lines of my matweed, I pitched a noble one, ſufficient to cover or entertain a numerous company, and ſo tight every where as to keep out the weather. The front of this new apartment I hung with blue cloth, which had a very genteel effect. I had almoſt forgotten to tell you that I contrived (by hanging one of the ſmaller ſails acroſs, juſt in the middle, which I could let down or raiſe up at pleaſure) to divide the tent occaſionally into two diſtinct rooms.

When I had proceeded thus far, there were ſtill wanting ſeats for this additional building, as I may call it; and though I could ſpare ſome cheſts to ſit on, I found they would not half do.

For a ſupplement, then, I took my axe, and felled a couple of great trees, one from each ſide of the tent, ſawed off the tops, and cut each of the trunks in two about the middle: theſe huge cylinders I rolled into the tent with a good deal of toil and difficulty; two of them I thruſt into the inner diviſion, and left two in the outer; I placed them as benches on both ſides; then, with infinite pains, I ſhaved the upper face of each ſmooth and flat, and pared off all the little knots and roughneſſes of the front; ſo that they were fitted to ſit on, and their own weight fixed them in the place where I intended them to be. At the upper-end of the farther chamber I ſet three cheſts lengthwiſe for ſeats, or any other uſe I might ſee fit to put them to.

During theſe operations we were all hard at it, and no hand idle but Dicky in arms, and Sally, whom he kept in full employ; but Pedro, being a ſturdy lad, could drive a nail, and lift or carry the things I wanted; and Jemmy and David, though ſo young, could pick up the chips, hold a nail, or the lamp, or be ſome way or other uſeful: for I always preached to them the neceſſity of earning their bread before they eat it, and not think to live on mine and their brother's labour.

The nights being pretty long, after work was over, and Sarah had fed her brother and laid him in his hammock, we uſed to ſit all down to enjoy ourſelves at a good meal; for we were never regular at that till night; and then, after ſupper, my wife being abſent, one or other of the young ones would begin with ſomething they had before heard me ſpeak of, by ſaying, 'Daddy, how 'did you uſe to do this or that in 'England?' Then all ears were immediately open to catch my anſwer, which certainly brought on ſomething elſe done either there or elſewhere; and by their little queſtions and my anſwers they would ſometimes draw me into a ſtory of three hours long, till, perhaps, two out of three of my audience were falling aſleep, and then we all went to bed.

I verily believe my children would, almoſt any of them, from the frequent repetition of theſe ſtories, have given a ſufficient account of England to have gained a belief from almoſt any Engliſhman of their being natives there.

I frequently obſerved, that when we had begun upon Cornwall, and traverſed the mines, the ſea-coaſt, or talked of the fine gentlemen's ſeats, and ſuch things, one would ſtart up, and, if the diſcourſe flagged ever ſo little, would cry, 'Aye, but daddy, 'what did you do when the crocodile 'came after you out of the water?' And another, before that ſubject was half-ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they ſtarted) would be impatient for the ſtory of the lion; and I always took notice that the part each had made the moſt reflections on, was always moſt acceptable to the ſame perſon: but poor Sally would never let the converſation drop without ſome account of the muletto, it was ſuch a pretty, gentle creature, ſhe ſaid.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE AUTHOR'S CONCERN AT YOUWARKEE'S STAY—REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION—HEARS A VOICE CALL HIM—YOUWARKEE'S BROTHER QUANGROLLART VISITS HIM WITH A COMPANION—HE TREATS THEM AT THE GROTTO—THE BROTHER DISCOVERS HIMSELF BY ACCIDENT—WILKINS PRODUCES HIS CHILDREN TO HIM.

MY head, as well as my hands, had now been employed for five months in adjuſting all things in the moſt ſuitable manner for the reception of Youwarkee and her friends; but nobody coming, and light days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneaſy, and had formed divers imaginations of what might occaſion her ſtay. Thought I, 'I am afraid all 'the pains I have been taking will 'be to no purpoſe; for either her fa-'ther will not let her return, or ſhe 'has of herſelf come to ſuch a reſo-'lution: for ſhe knows I cannot fol-'low her, and had rather, perhaps, 'live and enjoy the three children ſhe 'has with her, amidſt a number of her 'friends and acquaintance, than ſpend 'the remainder of her days with me 'and all our offspring in this ſolitude.' —But then I reflected ſhe choſe it herſelf, or at leaſt declared herſelf perfectly ſatisfied, yea, delighted therewith!— 'And here are her children with me, the

'major

'major part of them: yet, what can I 'think? since her return is put off till 'the swangeans are over at this arkoe, 'she will never bring her relations 'now in this unseasonable time for 'flight; therefore I must think, if she 'intended to return at all, it would 'have been before now: and as the case 'is not so, my fear of losing her entirely 'prevails greatly.—O!' says I, 'that 'we had but a post here as we have in 'England; there we can communicate 'our thoughts at a distance to each 'other without any trouble, and for 'little charge! What a country is 'this to live in! and what an impro-'per creature am I to live in it! Had 'I but the graundee, I would have 'found her out by this time, be she 'where she would; but, whilst every 'one about me can pass, repass, and 'act as they please, I am fixed here 'like one of my trees, bound to the 'spot, or, upon removal, to die in the 'attempt. Alas! why did I beget 'children here, but to make them as 'wretched and inconsolable as myself! 'Some of them are so formed, indeed, 'as to shift for themselves; but they 'owe it to their mother, not to me. 'What! am I a father of children who 'will be bound one day to curse me! '—Severe reflection!—Yet I never 'thought of this till now. But am 'I the only father in such a case? No, 'surely! for am not I as much bound 'to curse my father as my children are 'to curse me? He might have left me 'happy if he would; I would them 'if I could. Again, are there not 'others who, by improper junction 'with persons diseased in body, or 'vicious in mind, have entailed greater 'misery upon their posterity than I 'have on mine? My children are all 'healthy, strong, and sound, both in 'body and mind; and is not that the 'greatest blessing that can be bestowed 'on our beings? But they are impri-'soned in this arkoe!—What then!—'With industry, here is no want; and 'as they increase they may settle in 'communities, and be helpful to each 'other. I have lived well here nigh 'sixteen years, and it was God's plea-'sure I should be here; and can I think 'I was placed here with an injunction 'contrary to the great command, "*In-'crease and multiply?*" If that were 'so, can it be possible I should have re-'ceived the only means of propagat-'ing, as it were from Heaven itself? 'No, it was certainly as much my 'Maker's will that I should have pos-'terity here as that I myself should at 'first be brought hither. This is a 'large and plentiful spot, and capable 'of great improvement, when there 'shall be hands sufficient. How many 'petty states are less than these my do-'minions! I have here a compass of 'near twenty miles round, and how 'many thousands grow voluntarily 'grey in a far less circuit!'

I had hardly finished my reflections (for I was sitting by myself in my tent upon one of the trees I had turned into benches) when I heard a musical voice call—'Peter! Peter!' I started. 'What's this?' says I. 'It is not You-'warkee's voice! What can this mean!' Listening, I heard it again, but at so great a distance I could but just perceive the sound. 'Be it where it will,' says I, 'I will face it!' Thus speaking, I went out of the tent, and hearkened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then ran for my gun, and walked through the wood as fast as I could to the plain; but still I neither saw nor heard any thing. I was then in hopes of seeing somebody on the lake, but no one appeared; for I was fully determined to make myself known to whomsoever I should meet; and, if possible, to gain some intelligence of my wife. But after so much fruitless pains, my hopes being at an end, I was returning, when I heard 'Peter! 'Peter!' again, at a great distance, the sound coming from a different quarter than at first. Upon this I stopped, and heard it repeated; and it was as if the speaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I stepped out of the wood, (for I had just re-entered it upon my return home) when I saw two persons upon the swangean just over my head. I cried out, 'Who's 'that?' And they immediately called again, 'Peter! Peter!'—'Ors clam 'gee,' says I; that is, 'Here am I.' On this they directly took a small sweep round, (for they had overshot me before they heard me) and alighted just by me: when I perceived them to be my wife's countrymen, being dressed like her, with only broader chaplets about their heads, as she had told me the glumms all wore. After a short

obeiſance, they aſked me if I was the glumm Peter, barkatt to Youwarkee. I anſwered, I was. They then told me they came with a meſſage from Pendlehamby, colamb of Arndrumnſtake, my goppa, and from Youwarkee, his daughter. I was vaſtly rejoiced to ſee them, and to hear only the name of my wife. But though I longed to know their meſſage, I trembled to think of their mentioning it, as one of them was juſt going to do, for fear of hearing ſome things very diſpleaſing; ſo I begged them to go through the wood with me to the grotto, where we ſhould have more leiſure and convenience for talk, and where, at the ſame time, they might take ſome refreſhment. But though I had thus put off their meſſage, I could not forbear enquiring by the way after the health of my goppo and my wife and children, how they got to Arndrumnſtake, and how they found their relations and friends. They told me all were well; and that Youwarkee, as ſhe did on me, deſired I would think on her with true affection. I found this was the phraſe of the country. As for the reſt, I hoped it would turn out well at laſt, though I dreaded to hear it.

Being arrived at the grotto, I deſired my gueſts to ſit down, and take ſuch refreſhment as I could prepare them. When they were ſeated, I went to work, in order to provide them a repaſt. Seeing my fire piled up very high, and burning fierce, and the children about it, they wondered where they were got, and who they had come to, and turned their faces from it; but I ſetting ſome chairs, ſo that the light might not ſtrike on their eyes, they liked the warmth well enough; though, I remarked, the light did not affect them ſo much as it had done Youwarkee.

Whilſt I was cooking, the poor children got all up in a corner, and ſtared at the ſtrangers, not being able to conceive where they came from; and by degrees crept all backwards into the bed-chamber, and hid themſelves; for they had never before ſeen any body but my own family.

I obſerved that one of my gueſts paid more than ordinary reſpect to the other; and though their graundees made no diſtinction between them, yet there was ſomething, I thought, much more noble in the addreſs and behaviour of the latter; and taking notice that he was alſo the chief ſpokeſman, I judged it proper to pay my reſpects to him in a ſomewhat more diſtinguiſhing manner, though ſo as not to offend the other if I ſhould happen to be miſtaken.

I firſt preſented a cann of my Madeira, and took care, as if by accident, to give it to Mr. Uppermoſt, as I thought him, who drank half of it, and would have given the remainder to his companion; but I begged him to drink it all up, and his friend ſhould be ſerved with ſome preſently: he did ſo, and thanked me by lifting his hand to his chin. I then gave the other a cann of the ſame liquor, which he drank, and returned thanks as his companion had before. I then took a cann myſelf, and telling them I begged leave to uſe the ceremony of my own country to them, I drank, wiſhing their own health, and that of all relations at Arndrumnſtake. He that I took for the ſuperior fell a laughing heartily: 'Ha, ha, ha!' ſays he, 'this is the very way my ſiſter 'does every day at Arndrumnſtake.'—'Your ſiſter, Sir!' ſays I. 'Pray, has 'ſhe ever been in Europe or in Eng-'land?'—'Well!' ſays he, 'I have 'plainly diſcovered myſelf, which I did 'not intend to do yet; but, truly, bro-'ther Peter, I mean none other than 'your own wife Youwarkee.'

The moment I knew who he was, I roſe up, and taking him by the right-hand, lifted it to my lips and kiſſed it. He likewiſe immediately ſtood up, and we embraced each other with great tenderneſs. I then begged him, as I had ſo worthy and near a relation of my wife's with me, that he would not delay the happineſs I hoped for, in a narrative from his mouth, how it fared with my father, wife, and children, and all their kinsfolks and friends, whom I had ſo often heard mentioned by my deareſt Youwarkee, and ſo earneſtly deſired to ſee.

My brother Quangrollart (for that he told me was his name) was preparing to gratify my impatience; but ſeeing I had ſet the entertainment on the table, which conſiſted chiefly of bread, ſeveral ſorts of pickles and preſerves, with ſome cold ſalted fiſh, he ſaid that eating would but interrupt the thread

of

of his diſcourſe; and therefore, with my leave, he would defer the relating of what I deſired for a little while; which we all thinking moſt proper, I deſired him and his friend (who might be another brother for aught I knew) to refreſh themſelves with the poor modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilſt my brother Quangrollart was looking upon and handling his plate, being what he had never before ſeen, his friend had got the handle of one of the knives in his mouth, biting it with all his force; but finding he could make nothing of that end, he tried the other, and got champing the blade. Perceiving what he was at, though I could not help laughing, I roſe, and begging pardon, took the knife from him; telling him I believed he was not acquainted with the uſe of that inſtrument, which was one of my country implements; and that the deſign of it, which was called a knife, and of that other, (pointing to it) called a fork, was the one to reduce the food into pieces proper for chewing, and the other to convey it to the mouth without daubing the fingers, which muſt happen in handling the food itſelf: and I then ſhewed him what uſe I put them to, by helping each of them therewith to ſomewhat, and by cutting a piece for myſelf, and putting it to my mouth with the fork.

They both ſmiled, and looked very well pleaſed; and then I told them that the plate was the only thing that need be daubed, and when that was taken away, the table remained clean. So, after I had helped each of them for the firſt time, I deſired them to help themſelves where they liked beſt; and, to ſay the truth, they did ſo more dextrouſly than I could have expected.

During our repaſt, we had frequent ſketches of the obſervations they made in their flight, and of the places where they had reſted; and I could plainly ſee that neither of them had ever been at this arkoe before, by hinting that if they had not taken ſuch a courſe they had miſſed me.

I took particular notice which part of my entertainment they eat moſt of, that I might bring a freſh ſupply of that when wanted; and I found, that though they eat heartily of my bread and preſerves, and taſted almoſt of every thing elſe, they never once touched the fiſh; which put me upon deſiring I might help them to ſome. At this they looked upon each other, which I readily knew the meaning of, and excuſed themſelves, expreſſing great ſatisfaction in what they had already gotten. I took however a piece of fiſh on my own plate, and eating very heartily thereof, my brother deſired me to give him a bit of it; I did ſo, taking care to cut it as free from bones as I could, and for greater ſecurity cautioning him, in caſe there ſhould be any, to pick them out, and not ſwallow them. He had no ſooner put a piece in his mouth, but, 'Roſig,' ſays he to his friend, 'this is padſi.' I thought indeed I had puzzled my brother when I gave him the fiſh, but by what he ſaid of it, he puzzled me; for I knew not what he meant by padſi, my wife having told me they had no fiſh: or elſe I ſhould have taken that word for their name of it. However, I cut Roſig a ſlice; and he agreeing it was padſi, they both eat heartily of it.

While we were at dinner, my brother told me he thought he ſaw ſome of my children juſt now; for his ſiſter had informed him ſhe had five more at home; and he aſked me why they did not appear, and eat with us. I excuſed their coming, as fearing they would only be troubleſome; and ſaid, when we had done they ſhould have ſome victuals. But he would not be put off, and entreated me to admit them. So I called them by their names, and they came, all but Dicky, who was aſleep in his hammock. I told them, that the gentleman, pointing to Quangrollart, was their uncle, their mamma's brother, and ordered them to pay their obeiſance to him, which they ſeverally did. I then made them ſalute Roſig. This laſt would have had them ſit down at table; but I poſitively forbade that; and giving each of them a little of what we had before us, they carried it to the cheſts, and eat it there.

When we had done, the children helped me to clear the table, and were retiring out of the room; but then I recalled them, and deſired their uncle to excuſe their ſtay: for as he had promiſed me news of their mammy and her family, it would be the height of pleaſure to them to hear him. He

ſeemed

ſeemed very much pleaſed with this motion, deſiring by all means they might be preſent while he told his ſtory. Whereupon I ordered them to the cheſts again, while Quangrollart delivered his narrative.

CHAP. XXVII.

QUANGROLLART'S ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S JOURNEY, AND RECEPTION AT HER FATHER'S.

HAVING ſet on the table ſome brandy and Madeira, and each of us taken one glaſs of both, I ſhewed, by the attentiveneſs of my aſpect and poſture, how deſirous I was he ſhould proceed to what he had promiſed. Obſerving this, he went on in the following manner. 'Brother 'Peter,' ſays he, 'my ſiſter Youwarkee, as I don't doubt you will 'be glad to hear of her firſt, arrived 'very ſafe at Arndrumnſtake, the 'third day after ſhe left you, and 'after a very ſevere flight to the dear 'little Hallycarnie, who was a full 'day and a night on her graundee; and 'at laſt would not have been able to 'have reached Battringdrigg but for 'my ſiſter's aſſiſtance, who, taking 'her ſometimes on her back for a 'ſhort flight, by thoſe little refreſh-'ments enabled her to perform it; 'but from Battrindrigg, after ſome 'hours reſt, they came with pleaſure 'to the White Mountains, from 'whence, after a ſmall ſtay, they ar-'rived at Arndrumnſtake.

'They alighted at our coovett, but 'were oppoſed at their entrance by the 'guards, to whom they did not chuſe 'to diſcover themſelves, till notice 'was given to my father; who, upon 'hearing that ſome ſtrangers deſired 'admittance to him, ſent me to in-'troduce them, if they were proper 'for his preſence, or elſe give orders 'for ſuch other reception as was ſuita-'ble to them.

'When I came to the guard, I 'found three gawreys and a glumm-'boſs, whoſe appearance and beha-'viour, I muſt own, prejudiced me 'very much in their favour. I then 'aſked from whence they came, and 'their buſineſs with the colamb. 'Youwarkee told me they came not 'about buſineſs of publick concern, re-'lating to the colamb's office, but out 'of a dutiful regard, as relations, to 'kiſs his knees. "My father," ſaid 'I, "ſhall know it immediately; but "firſt, pray inform me of your name?" "Your father!" replied Youwarkee, "are you my brother Quangrollart?" "My name is ſo," ſays I, "but I have "only one ſiſter, now with my father, "and how I can be your brother, I "am not able to gueſs."—"Have "you never had another ſiſter?" ſays 'ſhe. "Yes," ſays I, "but ſhe is "long ſince dead; her name was "Youwarkee." At my mentioning 'her name ſhe fell upon my neck in 'tears, crying, "My dear brother, I "am that dead ſiſter Youwarkee, and "theſe with me are ſome of my chil-"dren, for I have five more; but "pray how does my father and ſiſter?" 'I ſtarted back at this declaration, to 'view her and the children, fearing 'it was ſome groſs impoſition, not in 'the leaſt knowing or remembering 'any thing of her face, after ſo long 'an abſence; but I deſired them to 'walk in, till I told my father.

'The guard, obſerving the ſeveral 'paſſages between us, were amazed 'to think who it could be had ſo fa-'miliarly embraced me; eſpecially as 'they plainly ſaw I only played a 'paſſive part in it.

'When I went in, I did not think 'proper directly to inform my father 'what had happened; but calling my 'ſiſter Hallycarnie, I let her into the 'circumſtances of this odd affair, and 'deſired her advice what to do: "For, 'ſays I, "ſurely this muſt be ſome "impoſtor; and as my father has "ſcarce ſubdued his ſorrow for my "ſiſter's loſs, if this gawrey ſhould "prove a deceiver, it will only revive "his affliction, and may prove at this "time extremely dangerous to him: "therefore let's conſider what had "beſt be done in the matter."

'Hallycarnie, who had attentively 'weighed all I ſaid, ſeemed to think 'it was ſome cheat, as well as I did; 'for we could neither of us conceive 'that any thing but death, or being ſlit, 'could have kept Youwarkee ſo long 'from the knowledge of her relations; 'and that neither of them could be 'the caſe was plain, if the perſon at-'tending was Youwarkee. "Beſides,

"brother,"

" brother," ſays Hallycarnie, " ſhe " cannot ſurely be ſo much altered in " fifteen years, but you muſt have " known her: and yet, now I think, " it is poſſible, you being ſo much " younger, may have forgot her; but " whilſt we have been talking of her, " I have ſo well recollected her, that " I think I could hardly be impoſed " upon by any deceiver."

' I then deſired her to go with me ' to the ſtrangers, and ſee if ſhe could ' make any diſcovery. She did ſo, ' and had no ſooner entered the abb, ' but Youwarkee called out, " My " dear ſiſter Hallycarnie!" and ſhe as ' readily recollecting Youwarkee, they ' in tranſport embraced each other; ' and then your wife preſenting to us ' her three children, it proved the ten- ' dereſt ſcene, except the following, I ' ever ſaw.

' My father having kept his cham- ' ber ſome time with a fever, and ' though he was pretty well recovered, ' having not yet been out of it, we ' conſulted how we might introduce ' our ſiſter and her children to him, ' with as little ſurprize as might be, ' for fear of a relapſe by too great a ' hurry of his ſpirits. At length we ' concluded, I ſhould go tell him ' that ſome ſtrangers had arrived, de- ' ſiring to ſee him; but, on inquiry, ' finding their buſineſs was too trifling ' to trouble him upon, I had diſpatch- ' ed them: I was then to ſay, how ' like one of them was to my ſiſter ' Youwarkee; and whilſt I was ' ſpeaking, Hallycarnie was to enter, ' and keep up the diſcourſe, till we ' ſhould find a proper opportunity of ' diſcovery. I went in, therefore, as ' had been agreed; and, upon men- ' tioning the name of Youwarkee, my ' father fetched a deep ſigh, and ' turned away from me in tears. At ' that inſtant Hallycarnie came in as ' by accident; " Sir," ſays ſhe, " what makes you ſo ſad? are you " worſe to-day?"—" O!" ſays he, " I " have heard a name that will never " be out of my heart, till I am in " hoximo."—" What, I ſuppoſe my " ſiſter?"—" 'Tis true," replied he, " the ſame." Says ſhe, " I fancied " ſo; for I have juſt ſeen a ſtranger " as like her as two doors could be, " and would have ſworn it was ſhe, if " that had been poſſible. I thought " my brother had been ſo imprudent " as to mention her to you; and I " think he did not do well to rip up " an old ſore he knew was almoſt " healed, and make it break out a- " freſh."—" Ah! no, child," ſays " my father, " that ſore never has, " nor can be healed. O Great Image! " why can't I by ſome means or other " be aſcertained what end ſhe came " to?"

" Sir," ſays my ſiſter, " I think you " are much to blame for theſe excla- " mations, after ſo long abſence: for, " if ſhe be dead, what uſe are they of? " and if ſhe be not, all may be well, " and you may ſtill ſee her again."—" O never, never!" ſays my father; " but could I be ſure ſhe was alive, I " would take a ſwangean, and never " cloſe my graundee, till I found her, " or dropt dead in the ſearch."—" And " ſuppoſe you could meet with her, " Sir," ſays I, " the very ſight would " overcome you, and be dangerous."—" No, believe me, boy," ſays he, " I " ſhould then be fully eaſy and com- " poſed; and were ſhe to come in this " moment, I ſhould ſuffer no ſurprize, " but pleaſure."—" No ſurprize, " Sir?" ſays I. " Not if ſhe were alive " and well," ſays he. " Then, Sir," ' ſays Hallycarnie, " will you excuſe " me if I introduce her?" and went ' out directly without ſtaying for an ' anſwer.

' When ſhe was gone, " Quangrol- " lart," ſays my father, ſternly, " what is the meaning of yours and " your ſiſter's playing thus upon my " weakneſs? It is what I can upon no " account forgive. It looks as if you " were weary of me, and wanted to " break my heart. To what purpoſe " is all this prelude of yours, to in- " troduce to me ſomebody who, by " her likeneſs to my daughter, may " expoſe me to your ſcoff and raillery? " This is a diſobedience I never ex- " pected from either of you."

" The Great Image attend me!" ' ſays I, " Sir, you have much miſtaken " me; but I will not leave you in " doubt, even till Hallycarnie's re- " turn, you ſhall ſee Youwarkee with " her; for all our diſcourſe, I'll aſſure " you, has but been concerted to pre- " pare you for her reception, with " three of her children."—" And am " I then," ſays he, in a tranſport,

" ſtill

" ſtill to be bleſſed?"—" You are, " Sir," ſays I; " aſſure yourſelf you " are."

'By this time we heard them coming; but my poor father had not 'power to go to meet them: and upon 'Youwarkee's nearer approach, to 'fall at his knees, his limbs failing 'him, he ſunk, and without ſpeaking a word, fell backwards on a 'couch, which ſtood behind him; 'and being quite motionleſs, we concluded him to be ſtone-dead. On 'this the women became entirely helpleſs, ſcreaming only, and wringing 'their hands in extravagant poſtures. 'But I, having a little more preſence 'of mind, called for the callentar; 'who, by holding his noſe, pinching 'his feet, and other applications, in a 'little time brought him to his ſenſes 'again.

'You may more eaſily conceive than 'I deſcribe, both the confuſion we 'were all in during my father's diſorder, and the congratulations upon 'his recovery; ſo, as I can give you 'but a defective account of theſe, I 'ſhall paſs them by, and come to our 'more ſerious diſcourſe, after my father and your wife had, without 'ſpeaking a word, wept themſelves 'quite dry on each other's necks.

'My father then looking upon the 'three children, (who were alſo cry'ing to ſee their mammy cry) " And " who are theſe?" ſays he. " Theſe, " Sir," ſays Youwarkee, " are three " of eight of your grand-children." —" And where is your barkatt?" ſays 'he. " At home with the reſt, Sir," 'replied ſhe, " who are ſome of them " too ſmall to come ſo far yet: but " Sir," ſays ſhe, " pray excuſe my " anſwering you any more queſtions, " till you are a little recovered from " the commotion I perceive my preſence has brought upon your ſpirits; " and as reſt, the callentar ſays, will " be exceedingly proper, I will retire " with my ſiſter till you are better able " to bear company." My father was 'with much difficulty prevailed with 'to part with her out of his ſight; but 'the callentar preſſing it, we were all 'diſmiſſed, and he laid down to reſt.'

My brother would have gone on, but I told him, as it grew near time for repoſe, and he and Roſig muſt needs be fatigued with ſo long a flight, if they pleaſed, (as I had already heard the moſt valuable part of all he could ſay, in that my father had received my wife and children ſo kindly, and that he left them all well) we would defer his farther relation till the next day: which they both agreeing to, I laid them in my own bed, myſelf ſleeping in a ſpare hammock.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A DISCOURSE ON LIGHT—QUANGROLLART EXPLAINS THE WORD CRASHEE—BELIEVES A FOWL IS A FRUIT—GIVES A FARTHER ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S RECEPTION BY HER FATHER, AND BY THE KING—TOMMY AND HALLYCARNIE PROVIDED FOR AT COURT—YOUWARKEE AND HER FATHER VISIT THE COLAMES, AND ARE VISITED—HER RETURN PUT OFF TILL NEXT WINTER, WHEN HER FATHER IS TO COME WITH HER.

THE next day I prepared again of the beſt of every thing for my new gueſts. I killed three fowls, and ordered Pedro (who was as good a cook almoſt as myſelf) to get them ready for boiling, whilſt we took a walk to the lake. Though we went out in the cleareſt part of the morning, I heard no complaint of the light. I took the liberty to aſk my brother, if the light did not offend him; for I told him my wife could not bear ſo much without ſpectacles. 'What is 'that ſpectacle?' ſays he. 'Some'thing I made your ſiſter,' ſays I, 'to 'prevent the inconvenience of too 'much light upon her eyes.' He ſaid the light was ſcarce at all troubleſome to him, for he had been in much greater, and was uſed to it; and that the glumms, who travelled much abroad, could bear more light than the gawreys, who ſtaid much at home: theſe ſtirring but little out, unleſs in large companies, and that of one another, and very rarely admitted glumms amongſt them before marriage. For his own part, he ſaid, he had an office at Craſhdoorpt, which, though he executed chiefly by a deputy, obliged him to reſide there ſometimes for a long ſeaſon together; and that being a more luminous country than Arndrumn-

ſtake,

ſtake, light was become familiar to him; for it was very obſervable, that ſome who had been uſed to it young, though they might in time overcome it, yet at firſt it was very uneaſy.

I was upon the tenter whilſt he ſpoke, leſt, before he had done, a queſtion I had a thouſand times thought to have aſked my wife, ſhould ſlip out of my head, as it had ſo often done before, and was what I had for years deſired to be reſolved in; viz. what the meaning of the word ſlit was, when applied to a man. So, on his pauſing, I ſaid, that his mention of Craſhdoorpt reminded me of enquiring what craſſiee meant, when applied to a glumm or gawrey. It would be no hard taſk, he ſaid, to ſatisfy me in reſpect of that, as I already underſtood the nature of the graundee; whereupon he went on thus—'Slitting is the only puniſhment 'we uſe to incorrigible criminals: 'our method is, where any one has 'committed a very heinous offence, 'or, which is the ſame thing, has 'multiplied the acts of offence, he 'has a long ſtring tied round his neck, 'in the manner of a cravat; and then 'two glumms, one at each end, take 'it in their hands, ſtanding ſide by 'ſide with him; two more ſtand be-'fore him, and two behind him; all 'which in that manner take flight, ſo 'that the ſtring keeps the criminal in 'the middle of them: thus they con-'duct him to Craſhdoorpt, which lies 'farther on the other ſide of Arn-'drumnſtake than this arkoe does on 'this ſide of it, and is juſt ſuch an 'arkoe as ours, but much bigger with-'in the rocks. When they come to 'the coovett they alight, where my de-'puty immediately orders the male-'factor to be ſlit, ſo that he can never 'more return to Normnbdſgrſutt, or 'indeed by any means get out of that 'arkoe, but muſt end his days there. 'The method of ſlitting is thus: the 'criminal is laid on his back with his 'graundee open, and after a recapitu-'lation of his crimes and his condem-'nation, the officer with a ſharp ſtone 'ſlits the gume between each of the 'filuſes of the graundee, ſo that he can 'never fly more. But what is ſtill 'worſe to new comers, if they are 'not very young, is, the light of the 'place, which is ſo ſtrong, that it is 'ſome years before they can overcome 'it, if ever they do.'

This diſcourſe gave me a great plea-ſure; thereupon I repeated the dia-logue that had paſſed between me and Youwarkee about my being ſlit, and how we had held an argument a long time, without being able to come at one another's meaning. 'But pray, 'brother,' ſays I, 'how comes that 'light country to agree ſo well with 'you?'—'Why,' ſays he, 'the co-'lambat of Craſhdoorpt is reckoned 'one of the moſt honourable employ-'ments in the ſtate, by reaſon of the 'hazard of it, and the perſon accept-'ing it muſt be young; it was, by my 'father's intereſt at court, given to 'me at nine years of age; my friend 'Roſig has followed my fortune in it 'ever ſince, being much about my 'age, and has a poſt under me there: 'in ſhort, by being obliged to be ſo 'much there, and from ſo tender an 'age too, I have pretty well enured 'myſelf to any light.'

By this time we had got home again to dinner, which Pedro had ſet out as elegantly as my country could afford, conſiſting of pickles and preſerves, as uſual, a diſh of hard eggs, and boiled fowls with ſpinage.

My gueſts, as I expected, ſtared at the fowls, but never offered to touch them, or ſeemed in the leaſt inclined to do ſo. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a wing on each of their plates, and a leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to ſee how I ma-naged it, I ſtuck in my fork, cut off a ſlice, dipped it in the ſalt, and put it in my mouth. Juſt as I did they did, and appeared very well pleaſed with the taſte. 'I never in my life,' ſays Roſig, 'ſaw a crullmott of this 'ſhape before;' and laid hold of a leg, (taking it for a ſtick I had thruſt in, as he told me afterwards) intend-ing to pull it out; but finding it grew there, 'Mr. Peter,' ſays he, 'you 'have the oddeſt-ſhaped crullmotts 'that ever I ſaw; pray, what part of 'the woods do they grow in?'—'Grow in?' ſays I. 'Aye,' ſays he, 'I mean whether your crullmott-trees 'are like ours or not?'—'Why,' ſays I, 'theſe fowls are about my yard and 'the wood too.'—'What,' ſays he,

'is it a running plant like a bott?'—'No, no,' says I, 'a bird that I keep 'tame about my house; and these,' (shewing him the eggs) 'are the eggs 'of these birds, and the birds grow 'from them.'—'Pr'ythee,' says Quangrollart, 'never let's enquire what 'they are till we have dined; for my 'brother Peter will give us nothing 'we need be afraid of.'

It growing into the night by that time we rose from table, I set a bowl of punch before them, made with my treacle and sour rams-horn juice, which they pulled off plentifully. After some bumpers had gone round, I desired my brother to proceed where he left off, in the account of my wife's reception with her father.

'When my father,' says he, 'had 'recovered himself by some hours re-'pose, the first thing he did was to 'order my sister Youwarkee to be 'called; who coming into his pre-'sence, he took her from her knees, 'kissed her, and ordered all to depart 'but myself and Hallycarnie. Then 'bidding us sit down, says he to your 'wife, "Daughter, your appearance, "whom I have so long lamented as "dead, has given me the truest cor-"dial I could have received, and I "hope will add both to my health and "years. I have heard, you suspect my "anger for some part of your past "conduct," (for she had hinted so to 'her sister and me) "which you just-"ly enough imagine may be censured; "but, my dear life, I am this day, "what I did not expect any more to "be, a father of a new-born child; "and not of one only, but of many; "and this day, I say, daughter, shall "not be spent in sorrow and excuses, "or any thing to interrupt our mu-"tual felicity; neither will I ever "hereafter permit you to beg my for-"giveness, or attempt to palliate any "of your proceedings; for know, "child, that a benevolence freely be-"stowed, is better than twice it's va-"lue obtained by petition: I there-"fore, as in presence of the Great "Image, your brother and sister, at "this instant, erase from my mind "for ever what thoughts I may have "had prejudicial to the love I ever "bore you, as I will have you to do "all such as may cloud the unreserv-"ed complacency you used to appear "with before me—and now, Quan-"grollart," says he, "let the guard "be drawn out before my coovett, and "let the whole country be entertain-"ed for seven days; proclaim li-"berty to all persons confined; and "let not the least sorrow appear in "any face thoughout my colambat."

'I retired immediately, and gave 'the necessary orders for the speedy 'dispatch of my father's commands; 'which indeed were performed to the 'utmost; and nothing for seven days 'was to be heard through the whole 'district of Arndrumnstake, but joy 'and the name of Youwarkee.

'My father, so soon as he had dis-'patched the above orders, sent for 'the children before him, whom he 'kissed and blessed, frequently lifting 'up his eyes in gratitude to the Great 'Image, for the unexpected happiness 'he enjoyed on that occasion; and then 'he ordered Youwarkee to let him 'know what had befallen her in her 'absence, and where she lived, and 'with whom.

'Youwarkee was setting out with 'some indirect excuses; but my fa-'ther absolutely forbid her, and 'charged her only to mention plain 'facts, without flourishes. So she 'began with her swangean, and the ac-'cidental fall she had, your taking her 'in after it, and saving her life. She 'told him, your continued kindness 'so wrought upon her, that she found 'herself incapable of disesteeming 'you, but never shewed her affection, 'till, having examined every parti-'cular of your life, and finding you 'a worthy man, she could not avoid 'becoming your wife; and she said, 'the reason why she always declined 'being seen by her friends, in their 'swangeans, was, for fear she should 'be forced from you, though she 'longed to see us; and that at last, 'she was come by your consent; and, 'that had it rested there only, she might 'have come much sooner; for that 'you would often have had her shew 'herself to her friends, when you 'heard them, having strong desires 'yourself to be known to them.

'My father, upon hearing this, was 'so charmed with your tenderness and 'affection to his daughter, that you 'already rival his own issue in his 'esteem, and he is persuaded he can

'never

'never do enough for you or your children.

'The noiſe of Youwarkee's return, and my father's rejoiceing, ſoon ſpread over all Normnbdſgrſutt; and King Georigetti ſent expreſs to my father, to command him to attend with your wife and children at Brandleguarp, his capital. Thither accordingly we all went, with a grand retinue, and ſtaid twenty days. The king took great delight, as well as the ladies of the court, to hear Youwarkee and her children talk Engliſh, and in being informed of you and your way of life; and ſo fond was Yaccombourſe (who, though not the king's wife, is inſtead of one) of my nephew Tommy, that, upon my father's return, ſhe took him to herſelf, and aſſured my ſiſter he ſhould continue near her perſon till he was qualified for better preferment. The king's ſiſter Jahamel would alſo have taken Patty into her ſervice; but ſhe begged to be permitted to attend her mother to Arndrumnſtake; ſo Hallycarnie her ſiſter, who choſe to continue with Jahamel, was received in her room.

'Upon my father's return to Arndrumnſtake, he found no leſs than fifteen expreſſes from ſeveral colambs, deſiring to rejoice with him on the return of his daughter, with particular invitations to him and her to ſpend ſome time with them. My father, though he hates more pomp than is neceſſary to ſupport dignity, could do no leſs than ſeverally viſit them, with Youwarkee, attended by a grand retinue, ſpending more or leſs days with each; hoping when that was over, he ſhould have ſome little time to ſpend in retirement with his daughter before her departure, who now began to be uneaſy for you, who, ſhe ſaid, would ſuffer the greateſt concern in her abſence: but, upon their return from thoſe viſits, at about the end of four months progreſs, they found themſelves in as little likelihood of retirement as the firſt day; for the inferior colambs were continually poſting away, one after another, to perform their reſpects to my father, and all the inferior magiſtrates of ſmaller diſtricts ſending to know when they might be permitted to do the ſame. Poor Youwarkee, who ſaw no end of it, expreſſed her concern for you in ſo lively a manner to my father, that, finding he could by no means put a ſtop to the good-will of the people, and not bearing the thoughts of Youwarkee's departure till ſhe had now received all their compliments, he reſolved to keep her with him till the next winter ſet in, in theſe parts, and then to accompany her himſelf to Graundevolet. In the mean while, that you might not remain in an uneaſy ſuſpenſe what was become of my ſiſter, he ordered me to diſpatch meſſengers expreſs to inform you of the reaſons of her ſtay; but I told him, if he pleaſed, I would execute that office myſelf, with my friend Roſig, with which he was very well pleaſed, and enjoined me to aſſure you of his affection, and that he himſelf was debtor to you for the love and kindneſs you had ſhewn his daughter.

'Thus, brother,' ſays Quangrollart, 'I hope I have acquitted myſelf of my charge to your ſatisfaction, and it only now remains that I return you my acknowledgments for your hearty welcome to myſelf and friend; which (with concern I ſpeak it) I am afraid I ſhall not have an opportunity to return at Arndrumnſtake, the diſtance being ſo immenſely great, and you not having the graundee. To-morrow morning my friend and I will ſet out on our return home.'

Quangrollart having done, I told him I could not but bluſh at the load of undeſerved praiſes he had laid on me; but, as he had received his notion of my merits from a wife, too fond to let my character ſink for want of her ſupport, it would be ſufficient if himſelf could conceive of, and alſo repreſent me at his return, in no worſe a light than other men; and though it gave me pain to think of loſing my wife ſo long, yet his account of her health, and the company he aſſured me ſhe would return in, would doubly compenſate my loſs; and I begged of him, if it might be with any convenience, he would let ſome meſſenger come the day before her, to give me notice of their approach. As to their departure on the morrow, I told them I could by no means think of that, as

I had propoſed to catch them a dinner of freſh fiſh in the lake, and to ſhew them my boat, and how and where I came into this arkoe; believing, by what I had obſerved, it would be no ſmall novelty to them. So, having engaged them one day more, we parted for that night to reſt.

CHAP. XXIX.

THE AUTHOR SHEWS QUANGROLLART AND ROSIG HIS POULTRY — THEY ARE SURPRIZED AT THEM—HE TAKES THEM A FISHING—THEY WONDER AT HIS CART, AND AT HIS SHOOTING A FOWL—THEY ARE TERRIBLY FRIGHTENED AT THE FIRING OF THE GUN—WILKINS PACIFIES THEM.

I Was heartily ſorry to loſe my brother thus quickly, and ſtill more ſo to find it would be a long time yet ere I ſhould ſee my wife; however, I was reſolved to behave as chearfully as poſſible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining hours of Quangrollart's ſtay with me, to rivet myſelf thoroughly in his eſteem, and to diſmiſs him with a moſt cordial affection to me and the reſt of my children here with him. I roſe early in the morning, to provide a good breakfaſt for my gueſts, and conſidering we ſhould be in the air moſt part of that day, I treated them with a diſh of hot fiſh-ſoup, and ſet before them on the table a jovial bottle of brandy, and my ſilver cann: this laſt piece I choſe to ſhew them, as a ſpecimen of the richneſs of my houſhold furniture, and the grandeur of my living, concealing moſt of my other curioſities till Pendlehamby my father-in-law's arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have ſomewhat new of this kind to diſplay at his entertainment.

After a plenteous meal, we ſet out on our pleaſurable expedition, having told Pedro what to get for dinner, and that I believed we ſhould not return till late.

We firſt took a turn in the wood, but I did not lead them near my tent, becauſe I did not chuſe my wife ſhould hear of that till ſhe came; I then ſhewed them my farm-yard and poultry, which they were ſtrangely ſurprized at, and wondered to ſee ſo many creatures come at my call, and run about my legs only upon a whiſtle, though before there were only two or three to be ſeen. They aſked me an hundred queſtions about the fowl, which I anſwered, and told them theſe were ſome ſuch as they had eaten, and called crullmotts, the day before. I afterwards carried them to hear the muſick of thoſe plants that I call my cream-cheeſe; which, as there happened to be a ſmall breeze ſtirring, made their uſual melody.

When we had diverted ourſelves ſome time in the wood, we went to the wet dock, where I ſhewed them my boat. At firſt view they wondered what uſe it was for; to ſatisfy them in that I ſtepped in, deſiring them to follow me, but ſeeing the boat's agitation, they did not chuſe to venture till I aſſured them they might come with the greateſt ſafety: at length, with ſome perſuaſion, and repeated aſſurances, I prevailed on them to truſt themſelves with me.

We firſt rowed to the bridge, where I informed them by what accident I was drawn down the ſtream on the other ſide of the rock, and after a tedious and dangerous paſſage, diſcharged ſafe in the lake through that opening.

I then told them how ſurprized I had been, juſt before I knew Youwarkee, with the ſight of her country-folks, firſt on the lake, and then taking flight from that bridge, and what had been my thoughts, and how great my terrors, on that occaſion.

After we had viewed the bridge, I took them to my rill, (for by this time they were reconciled to the boat, and would help me to row it) and ſhewed them how I got water. I then landed them to ſee the method of fiſhing, for which purpoſe I laid my net in proper order, and fixing it as uſual, I brought it round out at the rill, and had a very good haul, with which I deſired them to help me up; for though I could eaſily have done it myſelf, I had a mind to let them have a hand in the ſport, with which they were pleaſed. I perceived, however, the fiſh were not agreeable to them; for when any one came near their hands, they avoided touching it: notwithſtanding, having got the net on ſhore, I laid it open; but

to

to ſee how they ſtared at the fiſh, creeping backwards, and then at me and the net, it made me very merry to myſelf, though I did not care to ſhew it.

I drew up at that draught twenty-two fiſhes in all, of which a few were near an ell long, ſeveral about two feet, and ſome ſmaller. When they ſaw me take up the large ones in my arms, and tumble them into the boat, they both, unrequeſted, took up of the ſmall ones, and put them in likewiſe; but dropping them every time they ſtruck their tails, the fiſh had commonly two or three falls ere they came to the boat.

I aſked them how they liked that ſport, and they told me it was ſomething very ſurprizing, that I ſhould know juſt where the fiſh were, as they could ſee none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whiſtle. I perceived by this, they imagined I could whiſtle the fiſh together as well as the fowls, and I did not undeceive them, being well enough pleaſed they ſhould think me excellent for ſomething, as I really thought they were on account of the graundee.

Upon our return, when I had docked my boat, as there were too many fiſh to carry up by hand to the grotto, I deſired them to take a turn upon the ſhore till I fetched my cart for it. I made what haſte I could, and brought one of my guns with me, which I determined, upon ſome occaſion or other, to fire off; for I took it they would be more ſurprized at the exploſion of that than at any thing they had yet ſeen. Having loaded my fiſh, and marched backwards, they eyed my cart very much, and wondered what made the wheels move about ſo, taking them for legs it walked upon, till I explained the reaſon of it, and then they deſired to draw it, which they did with great eagerneſs, one at a time, the other obſerving it's motions.

As we advanced homewards, there came a large water-fowl, about the ſize of a gooſe, flying croſs us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my brother, 'I wiſh I had it!'—'If 'you have a mind for it,' ſays I, 'I'll 'give it you.'—'I wiſh you would,' ſays he, 'for I never ſaw any thing 'like it in my life!'—'Stand ſtill 'then,' ſays I; and ſtepping two or three yards before them, I fired, and down it dropped. I then turned about to obſerve what impreſſion the gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to ſee them ſo terrified. Roſig, before I could well look about, had got fifty paces from me, and my brother was lying behind the cart of fiſh. I called and aſked them what was the matter, and deſired them to come to me, telling them they ſhould receive no harm, and offered my brother the gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to Roſig.

Finding they made a ſerious affair of it, (for I ſaw them whiſpering together) I was under ſome apprehenſion for the conſequences of my frolick. Thinks I, 'If under this diſguſt they 'take flight, refuſing to hear me, and 'report that I was about to murder 'them, or tell any other pernicious 'ſtory to my father of me, I am ab-'ſolutely undone, and ſhall never ſee 'Youwarkee more.' So I laid down the gun by the fiſh, and moving ſlowly towards them, expoſtulated with them upon their diſorder; aſſuring them, that though the object before them might ſurprize them, it was but a common inſtrument in my country, which every boy uſed to take birds with; and proteſted to them, that the gun of itſelf could do nothing without my ſkill directing it, and that they might be ſure I ſhould never employ that but to their ſervice. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reaſoning coolly, they blamed me for not giving them notice. Says I, 'There was no room for me 'to explain the operation of the gun 'to you whilſt the bird was on the 'wing, for it would have been gone 'out of my reach before I could have 'made you ſenſible of that, and ſo 'have eſcaped me; which, as you de-'ſired me to get it you, I was reſolved 'it ſhould not do. But for your-'ſelves, ſurely you could have no dif-'fidence in me; that is highly unbe-'coming of man to man, eſpecially 'relations; and, above all, a relation 'to whom you have brought the wel-'comeſt news upon earth, in the love 'of my dear father, and his reconci-'liation to my wife.'

At laſt, by degrees, I brought them to confeſs, that it was only a groundleſs ſudden terror which ſuppreſſed their reaſon for a while, but that what I

ſaid

ſaid was all very true; and as their ſerious reflection returned, they were ſatisfied of it. I then ſtepped for the bird, and brought it to them: it was a very fine-feathered creature, and they were very much delighted with the beauty of it, and deſired it might be laid upon the cart and carried home.

All the way we went afterwards to the grotto, nothing was to be heard from them but my praiſes, and what a great and wiſe man brother Peter was. 'And no wonder now, ſiſter You-'warkee,' ſays Quangrollart, 'once 'knowing him, could never leave 'him.' It was not my buſineſs to gainſay this, but only to receive it with ſo much modeſty as might ſerve to heighten their good opinion of me; and I found, upon my wife's return, that Quangrollart had painted me in no mean colours to his father.

I once more had the pleaſure of entertaining them with the old fare, and ſome of the freſh fiſh, part boiled and part fried, which laſt they choſe before the boiled. We made a very chearful ſupper, talking over that day's adventures, and of their enſuing journey home, after which we retired to reſt, mutually pleaſed. We all aroſe early the next morning. We took a ſhort breakfaſt, after which Quangrollart and Roſig ſtuck their chaplets with the longeſt and moſt beautiful feathers of the bird I ſhot, thinking them a fine ornament. Being now ready for departure, they embraced me and the children, and were juſt taking flight, when it came into my head that as the king's miſtreſs had taken Tommy into her protection, it might poſſibly be a means of ingratiating him in her favour if I ſent him the flagellet, (for I had, in my wife's abſence, made two others near as good, by copying exactly after it.) I therefore deſired to know, if one of them would trouble himſelf with a ſmall piece of wood I very much wanted to convey to my ſon. Roſig anſwered, with all his heart; if it was not very long he would put it into his colapet. So I ſtepped in, and fetching the flagellet, preſented it to Roſig. My brother ſeeing it look oddly, with holes in it, deſired (after he had aſked if it was not a little gun) to have the handling of it. It was given him, and he ſurveyed it very attentively. Being inquiſitive into the uſe of it, I told him it was a muſical inſtrument, and played ſeveral tunes upon it; with which he and his companion were in raptures. I doubt not they would have ſat a week to hear me if I would have gone on; but I deſiring the latter to take care of it's ſafety, he put it in his colapet, and away they went.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

PETER PREPARES FOR HIS FATHER'S RECEPTION — ARGUMENTS ABOUT HIS BEARD—EXPECTS HIS WIFE — REFLECTIONS ON HER NOT COMING—SEES A MESSENGER ON THE ROCK—HAS NOTICE OF PENDLEHAMBY'S ARRIVAL, AND PREPARES A TREAT.

THE news my late viſitors had brought me, ſet my mind quite at eaſe; and now, having leiſure to look into my own affairs, with the ſummer before me, I began to conſider what preparations I muſt make againſt the return of my wife; for, according to the report I had heard, I concluded there would be a great number of attendants; and, as her father would no doubt pique himſelf upon the grandeur of his equipage, if his followers ſhould ſee nothing in me but a plain dirty fellow, I ſhould be contemned, and perhaps my wife, through my means, be ſlighted; or, at leaſt, loſe that reſpect the report of me had in a great meaſure procured her.

The firſt thing therefore that I did, was to look into my cheſts again, wherein I knew there were many of the Portugueſe captain's cloaths, and take out ſuch as would be moſt ſuitable to the occaſion, and lay them all by themſelves. I found a blue cloth laced-coat, double-breaſted, with very large gold buttons, and very broad gold button-holes, lined with white ſilk; a pair of black velvet breeches, a large gold-laced hat, and a point neckcloth, with two or three very good ſhirts, two pair of red-heeled ſhoes, a pair of white and another of ſcarlet ſilk-ſtockings, two ſilver-hilted ſwords, and ſeveral other good things; but upon examination of theſe cloaths, and by a letter or two found in the pockets of ſome of them, directed to Captain Jeremiah Vauclaile, in Thread-needle Street, London, I judged theſe belonged to the Engliſh captain, taken by the Portugueſe ſhip in Africa. I immediately tried ſome of them on, and thought they became me very well, and laid all thoſe in particular cheſts, to be ready when the time came, and ſet them into one of my inner rooms.

Upon examining the contents of another cheſt, I found a long ſcarlet cloak laced, a caſe of razors, a pair of ſciſſars, and ſhaving-glaſs; a long-wig, and two bob-wigs, and laid them by; for I was determined, as I might poſſibly have no other opportunity, to make myſelf appear as conſiderable as I could.

When I had digeſted in my mind

upon

upon what occaſions I would appear in either of them, and laid them in proper order, Pedro and I went ſeveral days to work with the net, and caught abundance of fiſh, which I ſalted and dried; and we cut a great quantity of long graſs to dry, and ſpread in my tent for the lower gentry, and made up a little cock of it; we alſo cut and piled up a large parcel of fire-wood; and as I had now about thirty of the beſt fiſh-ſkins, each of which would cover four chairs, I nailed them on for cuſhions to my chairs, and the reſt I ſewed together, and made rugs of them.

I had obſerved, that my brother Quangrollart, and Roſig, neither of them had beards, and as they were quite ſmooth-chinned, I conjectured that none of their countrymen had any; 'So,' ſays I, 'if that is the caſe, as 'I have now both ſciſſars and razors, 'I will e'en cut off mine, to be like 'them.' I then ſet up my glaſs, taking my ſciſſars in hand; but had not quite cloſed them for a ſnip, when I conſidered, that as I was not of their country, and was ſo different from them in other reſpects, whether it would not add to my dignity to appear with my beard before them. This I debated ſome time, and then determined in favour of my beard; but as this queſtion ſtill ran in my mind, and I wavered ſometimes this way, ſometimes that, I ſome days after prepared again for execution, and took a large ſnip off; 'When,' ſays I, 'how can 'I tell whether I can ſhave after all? 'I have not tried yet, and if I can't, 'how much more ridiculous ſhall I 'look with ſtubbed hair here and 'there, than with this comely beard?' I muſt ſay, I never in my life had ſo long a debate with myſelf, it holding upwards of two months, varying almoſt every time I thought of it; till one day, dreſſing myſelf in a ſuit I had not before tried on, and looking in the glaſs; 'It can never be,' ſays I, 'that this grave beard ſhould ſuit 'with theſe fine cloaths: no, I will 'have it off, I am reſolved.' I had no ſooner given another good ſnip, than ſpying the cloak, I had a mind to ſee how I looked in that: 'Aye,' ſays I, 'now I ſee I muſt either wear 'this beard or not this cloak. How 'majeſtick does it look! So ſage, ſo 'grave, it denotes wiſdom and ſolidity; and if they already think well 'of me, don't let me be fool enough 'to relinquiſh my claim to that for a 'gay coat.' I had no ſooner fixed on this, than I took up all the implements to put again into the cheſt; and the laſt of them being the glaſs, I would have one more look before I parted with it: but my beard made ſuch a horrid, frightful figure, with the three great cuts in it, that though it grieved me to think I muſt part with it juſt when I had come to a reſolution to preſerve it, I fell to work with my ſciſſars, and off it came; and after two or three trials, I became very expert with my razor.

Winter coming on, as I knew I muſt ſoon have more occaſion than ever for a ſtock of proviſion, from the increaſe of mouths I expected, I laid in a ſtock for a little army, and when the hurry of that was over, I kept a ſharp look-out upon the level, in expectation of my company, and had once a mind to have brought my tent thither to entertain them in; but it was too much trouble for the hands I had, ſo I dropped the deſign. I took one or other of the children with me every day, and grew more and more uneaſy at hearing nothing of them; and as uncertain attendance naturally breeds thoughtfulneſs, and the hours in no employ paſs ſo leiſurely as in that, my mind preſaged numberleſs intervening accidents, that might, if not entirely prevent their coming, at leaſt poſtpone it.

Thinks I, (and that I fixed for my ſtandard) 'Youwarkee, I am ſure, 'would come if ſhe could; but then,' ſays I, 'here is a long flight, and to be 'undertaken by an old man too, (for I 'thought my father-in-law much older 'than I afterwards found him) who 'is now ſafe and quiet at home; and 'having his daughter with him, is no 'doubt deſirous of continuing ſo: now, 'what cares he for my uneaſineſs? He 'can find one pretence or other, no 'doubt, of drilling on the time till 'the dark weather is over; and then, 'forſooth, it will be too light to come; 'and thus ſhall I be hung up in ſuſpenſe for another year; or what if 'my brother, as he called himſelf, for 'he may be no more a brother of mine 'than the pope's, for aught I know, 'came only on a pretence to ſee how 'I went on; and not finding, for all

'his

Plate V. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 30. 1783.

'his ſham compliments to me, his 'ſiſter married to his father's liking, 'ſhould adviſe him not to ſend my 'wife back again; and ſo all the 'trouble I have had on their account 'ſhould only prove a ſtanding monu-'ment of my fooliſh credulity! Nay, 'it is not impoſſible, but as I have al-'ready had one meſſage to inform me 'Tommy and Hallycarnie are pro-'vided for, as much as to ſay in plain 'Engliſh, I ſhall ſee them no more, ſo 'I may ſoon have another by ſome 'ſneaking puppy or other, whom I 'ſuppoſe I am to treat for the news, to 'tell me my wife and Patty are pro-'vided for too, and I am to thank 'my kind benefactors for taking ſo 'great a charge off my hands. Am 'I? No! I'll firſt ſet my tent, cloaths, 'chairs, and all other mementos of 'my ſtupidity on fire, and by periſh-'ing, what's left of us, in the blaze, 'exterminate at once the wretched re-'mains of a deſerted family. I hate 'to be made a fool of!'

I had ſcarce finiſhed my ſoliloquy, when I heard a monſtrous ſort of groan or growl in the air, like thunder at a diſtance. 'What's that, Pedro?' ſays I; 'I never heard the like before, 'daddy!' ſays he. 'Look about, 'boy,' ſays I, 'do you ſee any thing?' We heard it again. 'Hark!' ſays Pedro, 'it comes from that end of the 'lake.' While we were liſtening to the third ſound, ſays Pedro, 'Daddy, 'yonder is ſomething black upon the 'rock, I did not ſee juſt now.'—'Why, it moves,' ſays I, 'Pedro; 'here is news, good or bad.'—'Hope 'the beſt, daddy,' ſays Pedro; 'I 'wiſh it may be mammy.'—'No,' ſays I, 'Pedro, I don't expect her be-'fore I hear from her.'—'Why then,' ſays Pedro, 'here they come; I can 'plainly diſcern three of them. If 'my brother Tommy ſhould be there, 'daddy!'—'No,' ſays I, Pedro, 'no 'ſuch good news; they tell me Tom-'my's provided for, and that's to ſuf-'fice for the loſs of my child: and 'yet Pedro, if I could get you ſettled 'in England in ſome good employ, I 'ſhould conſent to that: but what 'Tommy's to be I know not.'

By this time the three perſons were ſo near, that ſeeing us, they called out 'Peter!' and I making ſigns for them to alight, they ſettled juſt before me, and told me that Pendlehamby and Youwarkee would be with me by light next day.

I had no ſooner heard this, but ſo far was I from firing my tent, that I invited them to my grotto, ſet the beſt chear before them, and with over-haſte to do more than one thing at once, I even left undone what I might have done.

I aſked them who came with my father; and they told me about two hundred guards: that knocked me up again, as I had but prepared for about ſixty; thinks I, 'My ſcheme is all un-'twiſted.' I then aſked them, what loud noiſe it was, and if they heard it juſt before I ſaw them over the rock. They told me they heard only the gripſack they brought with them to diſtinguiſh them from ordinary meſſengers; and then one of them ſhewed it me, for I had before only taken it for a long ſtaff in his hand; 'But,' ſays he, 'you will hear them 'much louder to-morrow, and long-'er, before they come to you.'

Having entertained them to their content, I ſent them to reſt, not chuſing to aſk any queſtions; for I avoided anticipating the pleaſure of hearing all the news from Youwarkee herſelf. However, the boys and I prepared what proviſions of fowl and fiſh we could in the time, to be ready cold againſt they came, and then laid down ourſelves.

CHAP. II.

PETER SETTLES THE FORMALITY OF HIS FATHER'S RECEPTION—DESCRIPTION OF THEIR MARCH, AND ALIGHTING; RECEIVES HIS FATHER—CONDUCTS HIM TO HIS GROTTO—OFFERS TO BEG PARDON FOR HIS MARRIAGE—IS PREVENTED BY PENDLEHAMBY—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN IN ENGLISH HABIT — QUARTERS THE OFFICERS IN THE TENT.

MY mind ran ſo all night upon the ſettling the formality with which I ſhould receive Pendlehamby, that I got little or no reſt. In the morning I ſpread my table in as neat a manner as I could, and having dreſſed myſelf, Pedro, Jemmy, and David, we marched to the plain; myſelf carrying

a chair, and each of them a ſtool. I was dreſſed in a cinnamon-coloured gold-button coat, ſcarlet waiſtcoat, velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, the campaign-wig flowing, a gold-laced hat and feather, point cravat, ſilver ſword, and over all my cloak: as for my ſons, they had the cloaths my wife made before ſhe went.

When we heard them coming, I marſhalled the children in the order they were to ſit, and charged them to do as they ſaw me do; but to keep rather a half-pace backwarder than me; and then ſitting down in my chair, I ordered Pedro to his ſtool on my right-hand, and Jemmy to his on my left, and David to the left of Jemmy.

I then ſent two of the meſſengers to meet them, with inſtructions to let Youwarkee know where I waited for them, that they might alight at a ſmall diſtance before they came to me. This ſhe having communicated to her father, the order ran through the whole corps immediately when and where to alight.

It will be impoſſible for me by words to raiſe your ideas adequate to the grandeur of the appearance this body of men made, coming over the rock; but, as I perceive your curioſity is on the ſtretch to comprehend it, I ſhall faintly aim at gratifying you.

After we had heard for ſome time a ſound as of diſtant rumbling thunder, or of a thouſand bears in conſort, ſerenading in their hoarſeſt voices, we could juſt perceive by the clearneſs of the dawn gilding the edge of the rock, a black ſtream ariſe above the ſummit of it, ſeemingly about forty paces broad; when the noiſe increaſing very much, the ſtream aroſe broader and broader; and then you might perceive rows of poles, with here and there a ſtreamer; and as ſoon as ever the main body appeared above the rock, there was ſuch an univerſal ſhout as rent the air, and ecchoing from the oppoſite rock, returned the ſalute to them again. This was ſucceeded with a moſt raviſhing ſound of voices in ſong, which continued till they came pretty near me; and then the firſt line conſiſting of all the trumpets mounting a conſiderable height, and ſtill blowing, left room for the next ranks, about twenty abreaſt, to come forward beneath them; each of which dividing in the middle, alighted in ranks at about twenty paces diſtant from my right and left, making a lane before me, at the farther end of which Pendlehamby and his two daughters alighted, with about twenty of his guards behind them; the remainder conſiſting of about twenty more, coming forward over my head, and alighting behind me; and during this whole ceremony, the gripſacks ſounded with ſuch a din, it was aſtoniſhing.

Poor Youwarkee, who knew nothing of my dreſs, or of the loſs of my beard, was thunder-ſtruck when ſhe ſaw me, not being able to obſerve any viſage I had for my great wig and hat; but putting a good face on the matter, and not doubting but if the perſon ſhe ſaw was not me, ſhe ſhould ſoon find her huſband, for ſhe knew the children by their cloaths, ſhe came forward at her father's right-hand, I ſitting as great as a lord, till they came within about thirty paces of my ſeat; and then gravely riſing, I pulled off my hat and made my obeiſance, and again at ten ſteps forwarder; ſo that I made my third low bow cloſe at the feet of Pendlehamby, the children all doing the ſame. I then kneeling with one leg, embraced his right-knee; who raiſing me up, embraced me. Then retiring three ſteps, and coming forward again, I embraced Youwarkee ſome time; during which the children obſerved my pattern with Pendlehamby, who took them up and kiſſed them.

I whiſpered Youwarkee to know if any more of her relations were in the train, to whom I ought to pay my compliments; ſhe told me only her ſiſter Hallycarnie, juſt behind her father; I then ſaluted her, and ſtepping forward to the old gentleman's left-hand, I uſhered him through the lines of guards to my chair; where I cauſed him to ſit down with Youwarkee and Hallycarnie on each ſide, and myſelf on the left of Hallycarnie.

After expreſſing the great honour done me by Pendlehamby in this viſit, I told him I had a little grotto about half a mile through the wood, to which if he pleaſed to command, we would retire; for I had only placed that ſeat to relieve him immediately upon his deſcent.

Pendlehamby roſe, and all the gripſacks

ſacks ſounded; he leading Youwarkee in his right-hand, and I Hallycarnie in mine.

At the grotto, my father being ſeated, taking Youwarkee in my hand, we paid our obedience to him. I would have aſked his pardon for taking his daughter to wife without his leave, and was going on in a ſet ſpeech I had ſtudied for the purpoſe; but he refuſed to hear me, telling me I was miſtaken, he had conſented. I was replying I knew he had been ſo good as to paſs it over, but that would not excuſe—when he again interrupted me, by ſaying, 'If 'I approve it, and eſteem you, what 'can you deſire more!' So, finding the ſubject ungrateful, I deſiſted.

I then gave each of them a ſilver cann of Madeira, and Youwarkee retired. I ſoon made an excuſe to follow her, to learn if ſhe was pleaſed with what I had done. Says ſhe, 'My 'deareſt, what is come to you? I will 'promiſe you, but for fear of ſurprizing my father, I had diſowned 'you for my huſband.'—'Dear Youwee,' ſays I, 'do you approve my 'dreſs, for this is the Engliſh faſhion?'—'This, Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'I perceived 'attracted all eyes to you, and indeed is 'very ſhowy, and I approve it in regard to thoſe we are now to pleaſe; 'but you are not to imagine I eſteem 'you more in this than your own old 'jacket; for it is Peter I love, in this 'and all things elſe: but ſtep in again, 'I ſhall only dreſs, and come to you.'

My wife being dreſſed in her Engliſh gown, juſt croſſed the room where my father ſat, to ſee Dicky, who was in another ſide-room. I was then ſitting by, and talking with him. 'Son,' ſays my father, 'I underſtood you had 'no other woman in this arkoe but 'my daughter; for ſurely you have 'no child ſo tall as that,' pointing to my wife. 'No, Sir,' ſaid I, 'that is a 'friend.'—'Is ſhe come to you,' ſays he, 'in my daughter's abſence?'—'O 'Sir,' ſays I, 'ſhe is very well known 'to my wife.'

Whilſt we were talking, in comes Youwarkee, with the child in her arms, which ſhe kept covered to her wriſts with her gown-ſleeve, to hide her graundee; and playing with the child, talked only in Engliſh to it. 'Is this 'your youngeſt ſon?' ſays my father. I told him 'Yes.'—'Pray, Madam,' ſays I, 'bring the child to my father.'—'Madam,' ſays he, 'you have a fine 'baby in your arms; has his mother 'ſeen him ſince ſhe came home?' He ſpeaking this in his own tongue, and Youwarkee looking at me, as if ſhe could not underſtand him, I interpreted it to her. My ſiſter then deſired to ſee the child, but I was forced again to interpret there too. In ſhort, they both talked with my wife near half an hour, but neither of them knew her; till at laſt, ſaying in her own language, 'That is your grand-daddy, my dear 'Dicky!' the old gentleman ſmoaked her out; 'I'll be ſlit,' ſays he, 'if 'that is not Youwarkee!'—'It's im-'poſſible,' ſays Hallycarnie. 'Indeed, 'ſiſter,' ſays Youwarkee, 'you are 'miſtaken!' and my father proteſting he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of her, till ſhe ſpoke in his tongue, roſe, and kiſſing her and the child, deſired her to appear in that habit during his ſtay.

I aſked Pedro what proviſion had been made for the guards: 'Son,' ſays my father, 'I bring not this number 'of people to eat you up; they have 'their ſubſiſtence with them;' and he would by no means ſuffer me to allow them any. I then deſired to know if there were any officers or others to whom he would have ſhewn any particular marks of diſtinction. 'Son,' ſays the old glumm, 'you ſeem to have 'ſtudied punctilios; and though I 'ſhould be ſorry to incommode you 'for their ſakes, if you could procure 'ſome ſhelter and ſleep-room for about 'twenty of them, who are ſuperiors, 'ten at a time, while the reſt are on 'duty, I ſhould be glad.' I told him I had purpoſely erected a tent, which would with great eaſe accommodate a greater number; and as they were of diſtinction, with his leave I inſiſted upon providing for them; to which, with ſome reluctance, I procured his conſent.

When Pendlehamby was refreſhed, he would go with me to ſee the officers quarters; and ſhewing him my tent, he having never ſeen ſuch a thing before, was going to climb up the out-ſide of it, taking it for earth. 'Hold, Sir,' ſaid I, 'you cannot do ſo!' Then taking him to the front of it, I turned aſide the blue cloth, and deſired him to walk in; at which he ſeemed wonderfully pleaſed, and aſked me how it was made. I

told him in as few words as I could; but he underſtood ſo little of it, that any thing elſe I had ſaid might have done as well. He mightily approved it; and calling the chief officer, I deſired he would command my houſe, and that proviſion ſhould be ſupplied to his quarters daily; at which he heſitating, I aſſured him I had my father's leave for what I offered; whereupon he ſtroked his chin.

I then aſked him if he had any clever fellows under him to ſerve them, and dreſs their proviſions; but he hoped, he ſaid, they were ready-dreſſed, as his men knew little of that matter; but for any other piece of ſervice, as many as I pleaſed ſhould be at my command.

CHAP. III.

THE MANNER OF THEIR DINNER—BELIEVE THE FISH AND FOWL TO BE FRUITS—HEARS HIS BROTHER AND THE COLAMBS ARE COMING—ACCOUNT OF THEIR LYING—PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WANT OF THE GRAUNDEE—THEY VIEW THE ARKOE—SERVANTS HARDER TO PLEASE THAN THEIR MASTERS—REASONS FOR DIFFERENT DRESSES THE SAME DAY.

PENDLEHAMBY having a mind to view my arkoe, took a long walk with Hallycarnie in the wood till dinner-time; and he having before told me, that ſome of his guards always waited on him at meals, I ordered their dinner before his return, ſending a large diſh of cold fowls, cut into joints, into the tent, to be ſpread on clean leaves I had laid on the cheſts, and ſetting a ſufficient quantity of bread and fiſh there alſo, I deſired the officers preſent to refreſh themſelves now; and the reſt, when relieved, ſhould have a freſh ſupply. I ſaw there was an oddity in their countenances, which at firſt I did not comprehend; but preſently turning about to the ſuperior, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'though 'this food may look unuſual to you, 'it is what my iſland affords, and you 'will be better reconciled to it after 'taſting.' So taking a piece of fowl, and dipping it in the ſalt, I eat a bit myſelf, and recommended another to him; who, eating it, they all fell to without farther ſcruple; above all things commending the ſalt, as what they had never taſted the like of before, though they thought they had both of the fiſh and fowl.

I then told them where my ſupply of water came from, and that they muſt furniſh themſelves with that by their own men.

Upon the return of my father and ſiſter, the gripſack ſounded for dinner; when four officers on duty entering, deſired, as their poſts, to have the ſerving up of the diſhes; one of them I perceived having ſet on the firſt diſh, never ſtirred from behind Pendlehamby; but upon his leaſt word or ſign, ordered the others what to do or bring, which he only preſented to my father; and he frequently gave him a piece from his own plate; but the other officers ſerved at the table promiſcuouſly.

After dinner I brought in a bowl of punch; when begging leave to proceed in my country method, I drank to my father's health. 'So, daughter,' ſays he, to my wife, 'we are at the old 'game again.—Son,' ſays he, 'this 'is no novelty to me,' Youwarkee conſtantly drinking to the health of her dear Peter, and the children at Graundevolet, and obliging us to pledge her, as ſhe called it: but I thank you, and will return your civility; ſo taking a glaſs, 'Son and daughter,' ſays he, 'long life, love and unity, attend you 'and my grand-children!' Youwarkee and I both riſing till he had done, returned him our thanks.

When we had ſat ſome time, 'Son,' ſays my father, 'you and your wife 'having lived ſo retired, I fear my 'company and attendants muſt put 'you to an inconvenience; now, as my 'ſon intends you a viſit alſo, in com-'pany with ſeveral of my brother co-'lambs, if we ſhall be too great a load 'upon you, declare it, for they will 'be at Battrindrigg arkoe to-morrow, 'to know whether it will be agreeable 'for them to proceed.

'You know, ſon,' ſays my father, 'the mouth is a great devourer, and 'that the ſtock your family cannot con-'ſume in a year, by multiplying their 'numbers, may be reduced in a day: 'now freely let me know (for you ſay

'you

'you provided for us) how your ſtock 'ſtands, that you may not only pleaſure 'us, but we not injure you.'

I told him, as for dried fiſh I had a vaſt quantity, and that my fowls were ſo numerous I knew not my ſtock; as to bread, I had a great deal, and might have almoſt what more I would; and then for freſh fiſh, the whole province of Arndrumnſtake could not ſoon devour them; but for my pickles and preſerves, I had neither ſuch large quantities, nor conveniences to beſtow them if I had.

'If this be the caſe, ſon,' ſays my father, 'I may ſend your brother word 'to proceed:' and diſpatched ten meſſengers with a gripſack to haſten his ſon's arrival.

It now began to be time for reſt, and the old gentleman growing pretty mellow with the punch, which, by the heavy pulls he took at it, I perceived was no diſagreeable entertainment to him, I conducted him to his repoſe; and diſpoſing of the reſt of the family, Youwarkee and I with great impatience retired.

You may imagine I was ſincerely glad to find myſelf once more along with my Youwarkee; when, after a tranſport of mutual endearments, I deſired to know how Pendlehamby firſt received her; which ſhe told me, with every circumſtance, in ſo affecting a manner, that the tears forced paſſage from mine eyes in perfect ſtreams; and I loved the dear man ever after as my own father.

She told me Tommy was in great favour at court before her brother returned from me; but ever ſince I ſent him the flagellet he had been careſſed above meaſure, and would ſoon be a great man: that Hallycarnie was a conſtant attendant on Jahamel both in her diverſions and retirement; and, ſhe did not doubt, would in time marry very well: as for Patty, ſhe ſaid her father intended, with my leave, to adopt her as his own child.

My wife ſlept very ſound after her journey; but my hurry of ſpirits denying me that refreſhment, I never ſo much as now lamented the want of the graundee: 'For,' thinks I, 'now I 'have once again taſted the ſweets of 'ſociety, how ſhall I ever reliſh a total 'deſertion of it, which in a few days 'muſt be the caſe, when all this com-'pany are fled, and myſelf am reduced 'to my old jacket and water-cart 'again! Now, if I was as others here 'are, I might make a better figure 'than they by my ſuperior knowledge 'of things, and have the world my 'own; nay, I would fly to my own 'country, or to ſome other part of 'the world, where even the ſtrange-neſs of my appearance would pro-'cure me a good ſubſiſtence.—But,' ſays I, 'if with my graundee I ſhould 'loſe my ſight, or only be able to live 'in the dark in England, why I ſhould 'be full as bad as I am here! for 'nobody would be able to keep me 'company abroad, as my hours for 'the air would be theirs of retirement; 'and then, at home, it would be much 'the ſame; no one would prefer my 'company in a dark room in the day-'time, when they could enjoy others 'in the light of the ſun; then how 'ſhould I be the better for the graun-'dee, unleſs I fixed a reſolution of 'living here, or hereabouts? and then 'to get into company, I muſt retire 'to ſtill darker regions, which my eyes 'are no ways adapted to: in ſhort, I 'muſt be quite new-moulded, new-'made, and new-born too, before I 'can attain my deſires. Therefore, 'Peter,' ſays I, 'be content; you 'have been happy here in your wife 'and children without theſe things; 'then never make yourſelf ſo wretched 'as to hope for a change which can 'never poſſibly happen, and which, 'perhaps, if obtained, might undo 'you; but intend only what you can 'compaſs, by weighing all circum-'ſtances, and your felicity will lie in 'very narrow bounds, free from two 'of the greateſt evils a man can be 'beſet by, hopes and fears; two in-'ſeparable companions, and deadly 'enemies to peace: for a man is de-'ſtroyed by hope through fear of diſ-'appointment.' This brought me a ſhew of peace again: 'Surely,' ſays I, 'I am one of the moſt unaccountable 'amongſt mankind! I never can re-'flect till I am worn down with vex-'ation.—O Glanlipze! Glanlipze!' ſays I, 'I ſhall never forget thy ſpeech 'after engaging the crocodile, that 'every thing was to be attained by re-'ſolution by him that takes both ends 'of a thing in his view at once, and 'fairly deliberates what may be given

'and

'and taken from end to end. Surely,' says I, 'this ought to be engraven on 'brass, as I wish it was on my heart, 'it would prevent me many painful 'hours, help me with more ease to 'compass attainable ends, and to rest 'contented under difficulties insuper-'able: and if I live to rise again, I 'will place it where it shall never be 'more out of my sight, and will en-'force it not only more and more on 'myself, but on my children.'

With this thought I dropped to sleep, and with this I awaked again, and the first thing I did was to find a proper place to write it, which, having fixed for the door of my cupboard, I took a burnt stick for my pencil, and wrote as follows—'He that is resolved to 'overcome, must have both ends of an 'object in view at once, and fairly 'deliberate what may be given and 'taken from end to end; and then 'pursue the dictates of cool reason.' This I wrote in English, and then in the Doorpt Swangeantine tongue; and having read it twice or thrice over, I went for water and fish, and returned before the family were up.

I took care to-day also, that the officers should be as well served as possible, and where an accommodation must be wanting, I rather chose to let it fall on my father than on them; for I had ever observed it to be an easier thing to satisfy the master than the man; as the master weighs circumstances, and, from a natural complacency in himself, puts a humane construction upon that error or omission which the servant wholly attributes to slight and neglect.

My company being abroad, about the time I expected their return, I dressed myself as the day before, only without my cloak, and in a black bob-wig, and took a turn to meet them.

Pendlehamby spying me first among the trees, 'Daughter Youwarkee,' says he, 'you have an husband, I think, for 'every day in the week. Who's this, 'my son Peter? Why, he is not the 'same man he was yesterday.' She told him she had heard me say we changed our apparel almost every day in England; nay, sometimes twice or thrice the same day. 'What!' says Pendlehamby, 'are they so mischievous there 'they are fearful of being known in 'the latter by those who saw them in 'the former part of the day?'

By this time I was come up, and after paying due compliments, says Youwarkee, 'My father did not know 'you, my dear, you are so altered in 'your other wig; and I told him in 'your country they not only change 'wigs, but their whole cloathing, two 'or three times a day sometimes.'—'Son,' says my father, 'if it be so, 'I cannot guess at the design of a 'man's making himself unlike him-'self.'—'O, Sir,' says I, 'it is ow-'ing to the different functions he is 'to perform that day: as, suppose, in 'the morning he is to pursue business 'with his inferiors, or meet at our 'coffee-houses to hear and chat over 'the news of the day, he appears in 'a light easy habit proper for dispatch, 'and comes home dirty: then, per-'haps, he is to dine with a friend at 'mid-day, before whom, for respect's 'sake, not chusing to be seen in his 'dirty dress, he puts on something 'handsomer; and, after spending some 'time there, he has, it may be, an 'appointment at court, at play, or with 'his mistress, in all which last cases, 'if he has any thing better than or-'dinary, it is a part of good-breeding 'to appear in that: but if the very 'best was to be used in common, it 'might soon become the worst, and 'not fit for a nice man to stir abroad 'in.'—'The different custom of 'countries you have told me of,' says my father, 'is surprizing: here are 'we born with our cloaths on, which 'always fit, be we ever so small or 'large; nay, are never the worse for 'constant wearing; and you must be 'eternally altering and changing co-'lour, shape, and habit. But,' says he, 'where do they get all these things? 'Does every man make just what he 'likes?'—'No,' says I, 'there are a 'particular set of men whose busi-'ness it is to make for all the rest.'—'What,' says he, 'I suppose their 'lasks make them?'—'No, Sir, they 'are filgays,' says I. 'It is their 'trade, they do it for a livelihood, 'being paid by them they work for. 'A suit of these cloaths,' says I, taking up the flap of my coat, 'will 'cost what we call twelve or fourteen 'pounds in money.'—'I don't un-'derstand you,' says he. 'Why, Sir,' says

ſays I, 'that is as much as will pro-
'vide one moderate man with all the
'neceſſary things of life for two
'months.'—'Then,' ſays he, 'theſe
'nice men muſt be very rich.'—'No,'
'Sir,' ſaid I, 'there you are under a
'miſtake; for if a man, very rich,
'and who is known to be ſo, neglects
'his habit, it is taken to be his choice;
'but one who is not known to be rich,
'and is really not ſo, is, by appearing
'gay ſometimes, thought to be ſo;
'for he comes little abroad, and pinch-
'es miſerably at home, firſt to get
'that gay ſuit, and then acts on the
'ſame part to preſerve it, till ſome
'lucky hit may help him to the means
'of getting another, as it frequently
'happens by a good marriage: for
'though he is but ſeldom ſeen in pub-
'lick, yet always appearing ſo fine
'when he is, the ladies, whoſe fancies
'are frequently more tickled with
'ſhew than ſenſe, admitting him only
'at firſt as a companion, are at laſt,
'if worth any thing, taken in the
'toils he is ever ſpreading for them;
'and, becoming his wife, produce a
'ſtanding fund to make him a rich
'man in reality, which he but per-
'ſonated before.'

Pendlehamby could not well underſtand all I ſaid; and I found by him that all the riches they poſſeſſed were only food and ſlaves; and, as I found afterwards when amongſt them, they know the want of nothing elſe: but I am afraid I have put them upon another way of thinking, though I aimed at what we call civilizing of them.

CHAP. IV.

QUANGROLLART ARRIVES WITH THE COLAMBS — STRAITENED FOR ACCOMMODATION—REMOVE TO THE TENT—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN—PETER RELATES PART OF HIS TRAVELS—DISPUTE ABOUT THE BEAST-FISH SKINS.

SLEEPING longer than uſual, I was awakened next morning by a gripſack from Quangrollart; upon hearing of which I rouzed immediately, thinking they were at my door; but the meſſenger told me they could not be there in what I underſtood by his ſigns to be about two hours; for they have no ſuch meaſure for time as hours; ſo I dreſſed at leiſure, and then went to Youwarkee, and waked her. 'Youwee,' ſays I, 'your brother will 'be here preſently, and I having a 'mind you ſhould appear as my coun-'try-woman, would have you dreſs 'yourſelf.'

We walked down to the level, and but juſt ſaved our diſtance; for the van of them were within the arkoe before we arrived, and with ſuch a train after them as ſeemed to reach the whole length of the arkoe. The regularity and order of their flight was admirable, and the break of the trumpets ſo great, ſounding all the way they came, (for we had not only one ſet of them, but at leaſt thirty, there being ſo many colambs and petty princes in the train, each with fifty attendants) that I wondered how they could bear it. As the principals alighted, which was at leaſt an hundred paces from me, the gripſacks ſtill kept wing, ſounding as long as we ſtaid.

This was a very tedious ceremony; for the guards alighting with their colambs, ranged juſt as Pendlehamby's had done, but reached as far as the eye could ſee. As they moved towards us, Youwarkee and I having ſtood ſtill ſome time, moved ſlowly forward to meet them.

It would have ſurprized you to have ſeen the deference they paid us; and I believe the guards took us for ſomething above the mortal race. Youwarkee ſhewed no part of her grandee, having on ſleeves down to her wriſts, white ſilk ſtockings, and red-heeled ſhoes; ſo that none of them knew her for one of them.

The firſt that we met was my brother, to whom we had only an opportunity of paying our compliments *en paſſant*, before another grandee came up, who was ſucceeded by another and another, to the number of thirty; ſome out of reſpect to my father and brother, and ſome out of mere curioſity to ſee me; and as faſt as each had paid his ſalutes, he paſſed us, till we found we had no more to meet; when we turned about, and fell in with the company.

When we came to the grotto, I was very much put to it for room, we ſcarce being able to ſtand upright by each

each other, much leſs to ſit down; which my father perceiving, 'My dear 'friends,' ſays he, 'had my ſon known 'in time of ſo much good company, 'he would have been better provided 'with ſeats for us all; but, conſider-'ing all we ſee is the labour only of 'his own hands, we ſhould rather ad-'mire at the many conveniences we 'ſee here, than be uneaſy there are no 'more.—And, ſon,' ſays he, 'as we 'are now ſo large a body, I propoſe 'that we adjourn to the officers quar-'ters, and let them take ours.' I returned my father thanks for the hint, and led the way, the reſt following; where we found room enough, and to ſpare.

Though Youwarkee was with us all dinner-time helping the gueſts, we had no ſooner done, 'But,' ſays Quangrollart, aloud, 'brother Peter, are we 'not to ſee my ſiſter?' I not hearing perfectly what he ſaid, though I perceived he ſpoke to me, 'Sir!' ſays I. 'My ſiſter Youwarkee!' ſays he, 'why 'won't ſhe appear? Here are ſeveral 'of her good friends, as well as my-'ſelf, will be glad to ſee her.' My father then laughed ſo heartily, that the reſt taking notice of it, my poor brother was put to the bluſh. 'Son,' ſays my father, 'don't you know your 'own ſiſter?'—'We have not ſeen her 'yet,' ſays one of the colambs, 'or 'any lady but your daughter Hally-'carnie and that attendant.' My brother then ſeeing how it was, came up to ſalute my wife; but even then had his ſcruples, till he ſaw her ſmile, and then begged pardon for his overſight, as did all the colambs upon ſaluting her: my brother declaring, that as ſhe was ſomewhat behind me on the level, he had only paid her the reſpect of his chin, taking her for ſome one attending me. The colamb following my brother, aſſured her the little regard ſhewn her by Quangrollart, who he thought ſhould know beſt where to beſtow his reſpects, was the reaſon of his taking no more notice of her; and each confeſſing his miſtake aroſe from too nearly copying the ſteps of his immediate predeceſſor, they all made excuſe, and the miſtake made us very merry, till they propoſed taking a turn in the woods, it being a great novelty to them, they ſaid; but I begged they would leave me behind to prepare for their return.

Having refreſhed themſelves after they came home, Quangrollart (being put upon it by ſome of the colambs) told me I could not render a more acceptable favour to the whole company than to relate to them an account of my adventures: 'For though,' ſays he, 'I told them laſt night what I re-'membered to have heard from you, 'yet the variety was ſo great I could 'not deliver the facts in order as I 'heard them, but was obliged to take 'here a piece, and there another, as 'they occurred to me, making rather 'ſeveral ſtories of it than a continued 'ſeries of facts.'

All the colambs immediately ſeconded the motion, and deſired me to begin. I then ordering a clear table and a bowl of punch, and having drank all the company's healths, began my narration, hoping to have finiſhed it before bed-time; but they preſſing me to be very particular, and frequently one or other requiring explanations upon particular facts, and then one making a remark upon ſomething, which another anſwered, and a third replied to, they got the talk out of my hands ſo long, that having loſt themſelves in the argument, and forgot what I ſaid laſt, they begged my pardon, and deſired me to go on; when one, who in contemplation of one fact had loſt beſt part of another, prayed me to go on from ſuch an incident, and another from one before that; ſo that I was frequently obliged to begin half-way back again. This method not only ſpun out my ſtory to a very great length; but, inſtead of it's being finiſhed that evening, as I had purpoſed, it was ſcarce well begun before bed-time drew on: ſo I juſt having brought them to Angola, told them, as it grew late, if they pleaſed, I would finiſh the remainder next night, which they agreed to.

Quangrollart then aſked my father if he had been fiſhing ſince he came; but he told him he knew not what he meant. Then all the company deſired I would ſhew them what that was. I told them they might command me as they pleaſed; ſo we appointed the next morning for that exerciſe. 'But, gen-'tlemen,' ſays I, 'your lodging to-

'night

'night gives me the greateſt pain; for 'I know not what I ſhall do about 'that. I have a few beaſt-fiſh ſkins, 'which are very ſoft and hairy, but 'not a ſufficiency for ſo many friends 'as I would at preſent be proud to 'oblige: but I can lay them as far as 'they will go upon as much dry reeds 'and graſs as you pleaſe.' I then ſent a ſervant to Youwarkee for the ſkins; after which, they one and all crying out if they had but good dry reeds they deſired no better lodging, I diſpatched hands to bring away a large parcel of them to the tent, which they did in a trice. Then waiting on thoſe few who lay at the grotto to their quarters, and having ſent Youwarkee to her ſiſter, I returned to the tent to take up my own lodging with thoſe I had left there.

I had not yet entered the tent, when I heard a perfect tumult within, every one talking ſo loud, and all together, that I verily thought they had fallen out, and were going to handy-cuffs; however, I reſolved to go in amongſt them, and try to compoſe their difference; when juſt entering, and they ſpying me, ſeveral ran to me, with each a ſkin in his hand, the reſt following as faſt as they could. 'Gentlemen,' ſays I, 'I hoped to have 'found you all at reſt.'—'So we 'ſhould have been,' ſays one of them, 'but for theſe, what you call 'ems.'—'It is my unſpeakable misfortune,' ſays I, 'that I have no more at your 'ſervice, and am ſorry I ſhould cauſe 'them to be brought, ſince each of 'you cannot have one.' Says one of them, 'I don't want one, I have ſeen 'enough of it.'—'Then, gentlemen,' ſays I, 'it is poſſible there may be ſo 'many more of that colamb's mind, 'that there may be ſufficient for thoſe 'who deſire them.' They neither knew what to make of me, nor I of them, all this while; till an old colamb perceiving our miſtake, 'Mr. 'Peter,' ſays he, 'we have only had 'a diſpute.'—'I am ſorry at my heart 'for it,' ſays I; 'but I perceived you 'were very warm before I entered, 'and am in great hopes of compro'miſing matters to all your ſatisfac'tions.'—'I was going,' ſays the ſame colamb, 'to tell you we had a 'diſpute about what theſe things were, 'nothing elſe.' I was then ſtruck on a heap, being quite aſhamed they ſhould think I ſuſpected they had been quarrelling for the ſkins; and how to come off I knew not. 'You'll excuſe me, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'for expreſſing a con'cern that you could not each have 'one to examine into at the ſame time, 'that one of you need not have wait'ed to make your remarks, till the 'other had done.'—'No occaſion, no 'occaſion for that, Mr. Peter,' ſaid they all together; 'we ſhall have lei'ſure enough to examine them to'morrow; but we want to know what 'they are, and where they grow.'—'Gentlemen,' ſays I, 'each of theſe 'is the cloathing of a particular fiſh.'—'And where do they grow?' ſaid they. 'In the lake,' ſays I; 'they are a liv'ing creature, who inhabit that great 'water; I often catch them when I am 'fiſhing; the ſame exerciſe we ſhall go 'upon to-morrow.'

I had much ado to perſuade them they did not grow on trees, which I was then much more ſurprized at than ſome time after, that I returned their viſit; but having ſatisfied them, and given them ſome poſſible hopes they might ſee one alive next day, they were very well contented, and we all lay down to reſt.

CHAP. V.

GO A FISHING—CATCH A BEAST-FISH—AFRAID OF THE GUN—HOW PETER ALTERED HIS NET—FISH-DINNER FOR THE GUARDS—METHOD OF DRESSING AND EATING IT.

I Appeared before them, in the morning, in my old jacket, and an old hat with brims indented almoſt to the crown, a flannel night-cap, and chequered ſhirt. 'How now, ſon!' ſays my father, 'what have we here?'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'this will ſhew you the 'uſe of our Engliſh faſhion I mentioned 'the other day, and the neceſſity of 'it. You ſee me in this indifferent 'habit, becauſe my next buſineſs re'quires it; but when I come back, 'and have no farther dirty work to 'do, I ſhall then dreſs, as near as I 'can, to qualify me for your com'pany.'

'Are you for moving gentlemen?' ſays my brother; 'I believe it is time:' they then all ariſing, we went to the lake; where getting into my boat, and telling them, that any ſix of them might go with me, they never having ſeen ſuch a thing before, and not much liking the looks of it, all made excuſes; till my brother, aſſuring them it was very ſafe, and that he had ſailed in it the laſt trip, three or four of them, with my father, and Hallycarnie, who was very deſirous of ſeeing me fiſh, got in; and we ſailed a great way up the lake, taking my gun as uſual with me.

It gave me exceeding delight, to ſee the whole body of the people then in the arkoe on the graundee; ſome hovering over our heads, and talking with us; others flying this way, others that, till I had pitched upon a ſpot to begin my operation; when rowing to ſhore, and quitting my boat, the whole body of people ſettled juſt by me, ſtaring at me and my net, and wondering what I was doing. I then taking a ſweep as uſual, got ſome of the ſoldiers to aſſiſt me to ſhore with it; but when the cod of the net landed, and the fiſh began to daſh with their tails at the water's edge, away ran all my ſoldiers, frighted out of their wits to think what was coming: but it being a large hale, and a ſhelving bank, I could not lift it to the level myſelf; which my brother, who had ſeen the ſport before, perceiving, though not one of the reſt ſtirred, lent me a hand, and we got it up.

You cannot imagine what ſurprize appeared in every face upon opening the net, and ſeeing all the fiſh naked: they drew up by degrees cloſer and cloſer, for I let the fiſh lie ſome time for their obſervation; but ſeeing the large fiſh, upon my handling them, flap their tails, they very expeditiouſly retired again. I then toſſed ſeveral of them into the boat; but two of them being very large, and rough-ſcaled ugly fiſh, I did not think I could lift them myſelf, ſo deſired aſſiſtance, but nobody ſtirred; I expected ſome of the colambs would have ordered their men to have helped me, but they were ſo terrified with ſeeing me handle them, that they could not have the conſcience to order their men on ſo ſevere a duty, till a common man came to me, and taking the tail, and I the head, we toſſed them both into the boat.

I went higher up the lake than uſual, in hopes of a beaſt-fiſh to ſhew them; but, though I could not meet with one, I had ſeveral very great hawls, and took three or four of my lobſters, very large ones. This was the ſecond trial I had made of my net ſince I had altered it, and gave me great ſatisfaction, for I could now take as many fiſh at one draught as I could before have done at ten; I had found, that though my net was very long, yet for want of a bag, or cod to incloſe the fiſh, many that were included within it's compaſs would, whilſt I drew round, ſwim to the extremes, and ſo get out, for want of ſome inlet to enter at; for which reaſon I ſawed off the top of a tree at about ten feet from the ground, and drawing a circle of ſix feet diameter round the tree, on the ground, I ſtuck it round with ſmall pegs, at two inches diſtance; then I drove the like number of nails round the top of the trunk of the tree, and ſtraining a length of mat-line from each peg on the ground to a correſpondent nail on the tree, I tied my mat-line in circles round the ſtrained lines, from top to bottom, about two inches diſtance at the bottom, but at a leſs diſtance where the ſtrained lines grew nearer to each other towards the top; and having ſecured all the ends, by ſome line twiſted round them, I cut a hole in the middle of my net, and tied the large ground-end over the hole in the net, and gathered the ſmall end up in a purſe, tying it up tight; and by this means I now ſcarce loſt any fiſh which once were within the ſweep of my net.

Having had ſo good ſucceſs, I had a deſign of returning, but thought, as I could now ſo eaſily entertain a multitude, I might as well take another hawl or two, and make an handſome treat for the ſoldiery; then coming up to my drill's mouth, I fixed my implements for a draught there, and beginning to draw up, I found great reſiſtance in the net, and got two or three to help me; but, coming near ſhore, when the company ſaw the net tumble and roll, and riſe and fall, they all ran as if they were mad, till I called them, and told the colambs it was only one of the fiſh whoſe ſkins I had ſhewn them; upon which, by that time I had

diſcharged

diſcharged the fiſh from the net, they were all round me again: but no ſooner had he got looſe, than up he roſe, whirled his wings, and at the ſame inſtant uttered ſuch a groan that my whole company retreated again, thinking me ſomewhat more than a man, who could face ſo dreadful an enemy. I entreated them to come and view it; but finding no arguments could bring them nearer, I edged round till I got him between me and the water, and ſhot him dead.

Upon the report of my gun, the whole field was in the air, darting and ſcreaming, as I have often ſeen a flight of rooks do on the ſame occaſion; and I am apt to believe ſome of them never returned again, but went directly home.

I was a little concerned to ſee the confuſion I had cauſed; and laying down my gun, my brother, who though at a diſtance when I ſhot, knowing what I was at, and coming up to me, it put the reſt upon their conſideration; and they alighted one by one, at a diſtance, till they were all on the level again.

My father and the colambs, who were the firſt that durſt approach, wondered what I had done, and how the fiſh came to be dead, and whence ſo much fire and ſmoak proceeded, for they were ſure I brought none with me, and aſked me abundance of queſtions; but as I knew I muſt have occaſion for anſwering to the ſame thing twenty times over, had I entered upon an explanation there, I deferred giving them ſatisfaction till we came home; when all at once might be capable of hearing what was ſaid. So I told them the moſt neceſſary thing at preſent was to ſtow the fiſh in the boat; for it was the largeſt I had ever taken, and I could not wholly do it myſelf. I made ſeveral efforts for help, but in vain, till the ſame ſoldier who had helped me with one of the firſt fiſh, came to my relief, and, deſiring my orders what to do, aſſiſted me; and the reſt ſeeing the difficulty we both had to manage it, one or two more of them came up, and we ſhipped it on board.

I then called the colambs to me, telling them I was ſorry I had given ſuch a general diſturbance to them, by ſhooting the fiſh; but, as they kept at too great a diſtance from me to have notice of my deſign, and if I had followed them, the fiſh might have eſcaped before my return, I was obliged to do as I did, which was without any poſſibility of hurting them. But, as I had given them ſuch a fright, I hoped they would this one day give me an opportunity of complimenting their guards with a fiſh-dinner, if we could any way contrive to dreſs it; for whoever did that muſt be able to bear the cloſe light of a large fire. They all ſhook their heads but my brother, who told me he had in his retinue ſix men from Mount Alkoe, purpoſely retained for their ſtrong ſight, to attend him always to Craſhdoorpt, who, he believed, for the benefit of the reſt, would undertake the cookery, if I would ſhew them how. I deſired he would give them orders to attend me on the other ſide the lake, and I would inſtruct them at my landing; and then I croſſed over with my booty.

Finding the Mount Alkoe men waiting for my landing, I aſked if they could bear the ſight of fire: they told me they were uſed to much greater light and flames than I had ever ſeen, they believed. 'Very good,' ſaid I; 'then 'get into my boat, three of you, and 'hand out that fiſh to the ſhore.' I found they were more afraid of the fiſh than of the fire, for not one of them ſtirred till I got in and toſſed out ſeveral ſmall ones; and then taking up a large one, 'Help me, ſomebody!' ſays I, they looking a little at one another, till one of them venturing to take it, the reſt fell heartily to work, and diſpatched the whole lading preſently. I then laid a ſmall parcel upon my cart, for our own eating and the officers, and ſending them to the grotto, I gave the cooks their charge.

'Now,' ſays I, 'my lads, 'do you 'ſerve all the reſt of the fiſh as I do 'this;' cutting it open at the ſame time, and throwing away the guts; 'and I will ſend each of you ſuch an 'inſtrument as I uſe here,' pointing to my knife. 'I ſhall order ſix large 'heaps of wood to the level, to be 'piled up there: when you have done 'the fiſh, do you ſet fire to the heaps, 'and let them burn till the flame is 'over and the coals are clear; then 'lay on your fiſh, and if any are too 'large to be manageable, cut them in 'proper pieces, and with ſticks, which 'I will ſend you, turn them over and

'over, walking round the fire, and 'with the forked end of the ſtick toſs 'the leaſt off firſt, and afterwards the 'greater; but be ſure throw the fiſh 'as far as ever you can from the fire, 'amongſt the men, that they may not 'be obliged to come too near it: and 'in this manner go on, till either they 'have enough, or your fiſh are gone; 'and when you have done, come to 'the grotto for your reward.'

I then ſet abundance of hands to work to carry wood, to be laid in ſix heaps, two hundred paces from each other, and told them how to pile it. I then prepared ſix long taper ſticks with forked ends, and ordered more hands to divide the fiſh equally to the piles. I ſent others with ſalt and bread; and I ordered them to let me know when all was ready.

While theſe preparations were making, my tent-viſitors had all dined, and my cart had returned with the beaſt-fiſh, which the company deſired might be brought in; when every one paſſed his judgment upon it, and a long diſſertation we had on the marvellous works of Collwar. I let them go on with their ſhew, though I could have diſproved moſt of their concluſions from the little knowledge I had of things; but I never was knight-errant enough to oppoſe my ſentiments to a multitude already prepoſſeſſed on the other ſide of the queſtion; for this reaſon, becauſe I have ever obſerved that where ſeveral have imbibed the ſame ridiculous principle in infancy, they never want arguments, though ever ſo ridiculous, to ſupport it; and, as no one of them can deſert it without impeaching the judgment of the reſt, they encourage each other in their obſtinacy, and quite out-vote a ſingle perſon; and then, the laugh beginning on the ſtrongeſt ſide, nothing is ſo difficult as to get it out of their hands; but when a ſingle man in the wrong hears a juſt argument from a ſingle antagoniſt which he cannot contradict, he imbibes it's force, and whilſt that laſts, as nothing but a better argument, with better reaſons, can remove it, he from thenceforth adopts his adverſary's reaſons for his own, to oppoſe againſt his own former opinion.

In the height of our diſputations on the beaſt-fiſh, came news that the broil was going to begin; and, as I expected very good diverſion at it, I invited the company to go ſee it, telling them, in my opinion, it would exceed the ſport in taking them. We paſſed through the wood till we came amongſt the ſhrubs, where I placed them to be out of harm's way; and the fire, which was now nothing but cinders, was of no inconvenience to them. They were pleaſed with it to perfection; for, firſt, the ſix men who walked round the fires, by the glowing light of the embers, and the ſhining of their graundees, looked like men on fire; then, to ſee each fire ſurrounded with a circle of men at the diameter of near two hundred paces, as cloſe as they could well ſtand, by a more diſtant ſhine of the fire, had a very pleaſing effect; but, when the broilers began to throw the fiſh about, (for each man ſtood with ſome ſalt and a cut of bread in his hand) to ſee a body of an hundred men running for it, and whilſt they were ſtooping and ſcrambling for that, to ſee a hot fiſh fall on the back of one, which was whipped off by another, who, ſcalding his mouth with it, threw it in the face of a third; when a fourth, fifth, and ſixth, pulling it in pieces, ran away with it: and to ſee the different poſtures, courſes, and groupes, during this exerciſe and running-feaſt, was the moſt agreeable farce my gueſts had ever ſeen in their lives; and, to the great ſaving of my liquors, kept us in the wood for full three hours, not a ſoul ſtirring till the feaſt was over.

We ſpent beſt part of this evening in diſcourſe on the paſſages of the day, the reflections on which not being concluded till bed-time, my adventures were poſtponed till the next night; but we had firſt concluded upon a ſhooting for the next morning, (for they were all extremely deſirous of knowing how I did it) at a time they ſhould have opportunity of ſeeing me and making remarks; and I, being unwilling they ſhould think me a conjuror, agreed to make them maſters of part of the myſtery of powder and ball.

CHAP. VI.

A SHOOTING PROPOSED—ALL AFRAID OF THE GUN BUT ONE PRIVATE GUARD—HIS BEHAVIOUR—

VIOUR—PENDLEHAMBY, AT PETER'S REQUEST, MAKES HIM A GENERAL—PETER'S DISCOURSE THEREON—REMAINDER OF HIS STORY — THE COLAMBS RETURN.

THIS being the fifth morning, I cleaned up my beſt gun, and prepared my balls, and we all took a walk towards the bridge, every one admiring my gun as we went; but I could get none of them to carry it, and we had at leaſt five hundred queſtions propoſed about it. I told them they need not be afraid of it, for it was only wood and iron, but they knew nothing of iron. I then ſhewed them how I made it give fire, by ſnapping the cock; they thought it was very ſtrange. I then put a little powder in the pan, and made it flaſh, and ſhewing them the empty pan, they would not be perſuaded but I had taken away the powder before the flaſh, or elſe, they ſaid, it was impoſſible that ſhould be all gone upon flaſhing only; for they ſaid it was a little nut, uſing the ſame word to expreſs both nut and ſeed. I then deſired one of them to put in ſome powder, and ſnap it himſelf; but having prevailed with him to try the experiment, if I had not through caution held my hand upon the barrel, the gun had been on the ground, for the moment it flaſhed, he let go and ran for it.

I had a great inclination to gain the better of their prejudices, and uſed abundance of arguments to prove the gun as innocent a thing as a twig I took up; and that it was the powder which, when ſet on fire, the flame thereof wanting more room than the powder itſelf did, forced itſelf, and all that oppoſed it, out of the mouth of the gun with ſuch fury as to make the noiſe they heard; and being juſt come to the rock, 'Now,' ſays I, 'you 'ſhall ſee that what I tell you is true.' They told me they deſired nothing more than that I would make them underſtand it, for it was the ſtrangeſt thing they had ever ſeen. 'Well, then,' ſays I, 'obſerve; I put in this much 'powder only, and with this rag I ſtop 'it down cloſe. Now,' ſays I, 'you 'ſee by the length of this ſtick that 'the rag and powder take up the ſpace 'only of a finger's depth on the inſide 'of the gun.' They ſaw that plainly they ſaid; 'But how could that kill 'any thing?'—'Now look again,' ſays I; 'I put in a little more powder, 'as I did before when I made a flaſh, 'and you ſee there is a little hole from 'this powder through the ſide of the 'gun to the powder within. Do you 'obſerve that this communicates with 'that through this hole?'—'Yes,' they ſaid, they did. 'Now,' ſays I, 'when I put fire to this, it ſets fire to 'that within, which fire turning to 'flame, and wanting room, burſts out 'at the mouth of the gun; and to 'ſhew you with what force it comes 'out, here handle this round ball,' giving them a bullet to handle; 'you 'feel how heavy it is: now, can any 'of you throw this ball as far as that 'rock?' for I ſtood a good hundred paces from it. They told me, 'No.' —'And don't you think,' ſays I, 'that if the force of the fire made by 'this powder can throw this ball to 'that rock, that force muſt be very 'great?' They ſaid, they thought it muſt, but believed it to be impoſſible. 'But,' ſays I, 'if it not only throws 'it to the rock, but beats out a piece 'of the ſtone, muſt not that be much 'more violent?' They agreed it muſt. Then putting in the ball, 'Now,' ſays I, 'we will try.' I then ordered one to daub a part of the rock, about breaſt high, with ſome mud, and firſt to obſerve about it, if the rock was any where freſh broken or not; who, returning, reported that the rock was all of a colour and ſound, but ſomewhat ragged all about the mud. 'Did 'you lay the mud on ſmooth?' ſays I. He replied, 'Yes.' Then lifting up my gun, I perceived they were creeping off; ſo I took it down again, and calling, reaſoned with them upon their fears. 'What miſchief,' ſays I, 'can 'you apprehend from this gun in my 'hand? Should I be able to hurt you 'with it, are you not all my friends 'or relations, could I be willing to do 'it? If the gun of itſelf could hurt, 'would I handle it as I do? For 'ſhame! be more courageous, rouze 'your reaſon, and ſtand by me; I ſhall 'take care not to hurt you. It looks 'as if you miſtruſted my love to you, 'for this gun can do nothing but what 'I direct it to.'

By ſuch like perſuaſions, rough and ſmooth, I prevailed upon the major part

part of the colambs and officers to ſtand near me to ſee me fire, and then I ſhot; but though my words had engaged them to ſtand it, I had no ſooner ſnapped but the graundees flew all open, though they cloſed again immediately; and then we fell to queſtion and anſwer again. I deſired them to walk to the rock; and ſent the perſon who put up the mark before, to ſee and ſhew us exactly what alteration there was: he told us there was a round hole in the mud, pointing to it, which he did not leave there, and taking away the mud, a thick ſhiver of the rock followed it. They then all agreed, that the ball muſt have made both the hole in the mud and alſo ſplintered the rock; and ſtood in amaze at it, not being able to comprehend it: but, by all the art I had, I could not prevail with a man of them to fire the gun himſelf, till it had been buzzed about a good while, and at laſt came to my ears, that a common ſoldier behind ſaid he ſhould not be afraid of it, if the gentleman would ſhew him how.

I then ordered the fellow to me, and he told me, with a compoſed look, that it had always been his way of thinking, that what he ſaw another do he could do himſelf, and could not reſt till he had tried. 'And, Sir,' ſays he, 'if this gun, as you call it, does 'not hurt you, why ſhould it hurt me? 'And if you can make it hit that 'rock, why ſhould not I, when you 'have told me how you manage it?' —'Are not you the man that firſt 'helped me up with the large fiſh yeſ-'terday?' ſays I. He told me, he was.

I was prodigiouſly pleaſed with the fellow's ſpirit, 'And,' ſays I, 'my 'friend, if you will, and I live, you 'ſhall hit it before you have done.' I then ſhewed him the ſight of the gun, and how to hold it; and being perfect in that, 'Now,' ſays I, 'ſhut your 'left eye, and obſerve with your right, 'till this knob, and that notch, are 'exactly even with each other and 'the middle of that mark; and when 'they are ſo, pull this bit with your 'fore-finger, holding the gun tight to 'your ſhoulder.' He ſo exactly purſued my directions, that he hit the very middle of the mud; and then, without any emotion, walked up with the gun in his hand, as I had done before; and turning to me, very gravely, 'Sir,' ſays he, 'it is hit.' I told him the beſt markſman on earth could not be ſure of coming ſo near his mark. He ſtroaked his chin, and giving me the gun again, was walking to his place; but I ſtopped him, and ſeeing ſomething ſo modeſt and ſincere in his countenance and behaviour, and ſo generous in his ſpirit, I aſked him to which colamb he belonged. He told me to Colamb Pendlehamby. 'To my father?' ſays I; 'then ſure I ſhall not be denied.'

I took him with me to my father, who was not yet come up to the rock. 'Sir,' ſays I, 'there is a favour I 'would beg of you.'—'Son,' ſays he, 'what is it you can aſk that I can 'refuſe you?' Says I, 'This man 'belongs to your guards; now there 'is ſomething ſo noble and daring in 'his ſpirit, and yet ſo meek and de-'ſerving in his deportment, that if 'you will load me with obligation, it 'is to make him an officer: he is not 'deſerving of ſo ill a ſtation as a pri-'vate man.'

My father looking at me, 'Son,' ſays he, 'there is ſomething to be 'done before he can be qualified for 'what you require.'—'This,' thinks I, 'is a put-off.—Pray, Sir,' ſays I, 'what can a man of courage, ſenſe, 'and a cool temper, want to qualify 'him for what I aſk?'—'Some-'thing,' ſays he, 'which none but 'myſelf can give; and that, at your 'deſire, I will ſupply him with.' Then, my father calling him, 'Laſk 'Naſgig, bonyoe,' ſays he, that is, 'Slave Naſgig, lie down.' Naſgig (for that was his name) immediately fell on his face, with his arms and hands ſtraight by his ſides; when my father, ſetting his left-foot on Naſgig's neck, pronounced theſe words: 'Laſk, I 'give thee life, thou art a filgay!' Then Naſgig, raiſing himſelf on his knees, made obeiſance to my father, and ſtanding up, ſtroaked his chin; and my father taking him by the hand, in token of equality, the ceremony ceaſed.

'Now, ſon,' ſays my father, 'let 'me hear your requeſt?'—'It is only, 'Sir,' ſaid I, 'preferment for the de-'ſerving, equal to his merit.' My father aſked him if he underſtood the duty of a gorpell. He did not reply

yes,

yes, but beginning, gave a compendious ſort of hiſtory of his whole duty; at which, all the colambs were very much ſurprized, for even his comrades were not apprized, or ever imagined, he knew more of military affairs than themſelves. My father then aſked him, if he knew how to behave as a cluff; but he made as little difficulty of that as the other, going through the ſeveral parts of duty in all the different branches, in peace and war, at home and abroad. 'Son,' ſays my father, 'it is a myſtery to me, you 'ſhould have found out more in an 'hour, than I myſelf could in half 'an age; for this man was born in 'my palang, of my own laſk, and 'has been mine, and my father's, 'theſe forty years. I ſhall be glad if 'you will look on the reſt of my laſks, 'and give me your opinion; I may 'have more as deſerving.' I told him, ſuch as Naſgig were not to be met with very often; and when they were found, ought to be cheriſhed accordingly.

'Sir,' ſays I, 'nature works upon 'the ſame ſort of materials divers 'ways; on ſome in ſport, and ſome 'in earneſt; and if the neceſſary qualifications of a great man are impreſſed on our maſs, it is odds but we improve regularly into one, though it may never be publickly known, or even to ourſelves, till a proper occaſion: for as a curious genius will be moſt inquiſitive after, and is moſt an end retentive of knowledge, ſo no man is leſs oſtentatious of it. He covets knowledge, not from the proſpect of gain, but merely for it's own ſake; the very knowing, being his recompence: and if I may preſume to give you a hint, how properly to beſtow your favours, let it be on perſons like this; for the vain, knowing man, who is always ſhewing it, as he for the moſt part labours for it, to ſhew out with, and procure his riſe by it, were it not for the hopes of that, would not think knowledge worth attaining; and as his riſe is his aim, if he could invent any more expeditious method than that, he would not pretermit any ill act, that might advance him according to his luſt of riſing. But the man who aims at perfection, from his natural inclination, muſt, to attain his end, avoid all ill courſes, as impediments to that perfection he luſts after: and that, by Naſgig's worth being ſo little known, I'll anſwer for it is his character. And this being true, yourſelf will deduce the conſequence, which is the fitter man to bear place; for with me it is a maxim, he that labours after truth for truth's ſake, (and that he ſurely muſt who propoſes no worldly view in it) can't arrive at his ends by falſe methods; but is always the trueſt friend to himſelf and others, the truſtieſt ſubject to his lord, and the moſt faithful ſervant to his God.'

My father then turning to me, 'Son,' ſays he, 'you have enlightened me more than ever I was before, 'and have put me on a new way of 'thinking; for which I am to return 'you many thanks.' And the whole company doing the ſame; ſays my father, 'I loſt a brave general officer 'lately, who was deſtined to the weſtern wars, which are breaking out, 'and have been long debating in my 'mind, to whom I ſhould commit his 'corps; and, but for the hazard of 'the enterprize, I would have now 'given it to Naſgig; but ſhall be loth 'to loſe him ſo ſoon after I am acquainted with his worth; ſo will 'think of ſome other poſt nearer my 'perſon for him, leſs dangerous, 'though perhaps not ſo honourable.'

'Great Sir,' ſays Naſgig, 'I am 'too ſenſible of the honour already 'done me, to think any poſt wherein 'I may continue to ſerve you either 'too mean or too hazardous for me; 'and as valour is no where ſo conſpicuous as in the greateſt dangers, I 'ſhall eſteem my blood ſpent to great 'advantage in any enterprize where 'my duty under your command leads 'me: I therefore the rather humbly 'requeſt this dangerous poſt, that I 'may either loſe my life in your ſervice, or live to ſee you juſtified in 'your advancement of me by the 'whole nation. For what can I do, 'or how can I demonſtrate my affection to your perſon and pleaſure, 'in an inactive ſtate?'

Here the whole level rang with applauſe to Naſgig.

My father then giving his hand to Naſgig, in token of friendſhip, and his

his word for inveſtiture in the command of that vacant poſt, the whole level again reſounded with, 'Long live 'Pendlehamby, and his ſervant Naſ-'gig!'

This being the laſt day of my company's ſtay, for they had agreed to go homewards next morning, ſome of them moved to return the ſooner, that they might have time to hear out my ſtory. So that our ſtay was very little longer.

In our return home, Naſgig ſingled me out, to return his acknowledgments for my favour; and, viewing my gun, told me, they had no ſuch thing growing in his country. I told him, if he had it, it would do no good without my powder. I then, at his requeſt, deſcribed what I had heard of our method of fighting in battle in Europe; and mentioning our cannon, he ſaid, he ſuppoſed they killed every man they hit. 'No,' ſays I, 'not ſo bad as 'that; ſometimes they hit the fleſh 'only, and that is commonly cured; 'ſometimes break a leg or arm, and 'that may in time be cured, ſome ſo 'well as to be uſeful again, and others 'are cut off, and healed up again; but 'if the ball hits the head or vitals, it 'is commonly mortal.'—'O,' ſays he, 'give me the head or vitals, then; 'no broken limbs for me.'

After dinner, at their requeſt, I went on with my ſtory, at repairing the caſtle, and my eſcape with Glanlipze, and ſo on to the crocodile; when I repeated his ſpeech to me on that account, and told them it had made ſuch an impreſſion upon me that I had endeavoured to make it the leading thought of my mind, and had ſet it down upon one of my doors at the grotto, that it might the oftener be in my ſight when any difficulty aroſe.

One of the colambs begged pardon for interrupting, but told me, though he underſtood what Glanlipze meant, he could not tell how I could ſet what he ſaid down at my grotto, or have it in my ſight; and deſired me to explain that. I would have told my gueſt I took it down in writing, if that would not have puzzled the cauſe more; but, to go the neareſt way I could, I told him, we had a method in my country, of conveying to a man at a great diſtance whatever we have a mind to ſay to him; and in ſuch a manner, that nobody but himſelf would know what we would have him know. And pauſing here a little, to conſider the eaſieſt method of demonſtrating this to their ſenſes, they told me they had gone as far as their conjectures could carry them, but could conclude on nothing ſo probable as ſending it by a meſſenger. I told them, that in part was my way; but my meſſenger ſhould not know the meſſage he carried. That gravelled them quite, and they were unanimous that was what could not be done. By this time I had ſent for a wood-coal, to write with upon my deal-table; and kneeling down to the table, I began to write, 'Honoured 'Sir, I ſend this to gain by your an-'ſwer to it an account of your arrival 'at Arndrumnſtake.' I then called them all to me: 'Now,' ſays I, 'ſup-'poſe I want to know how my father 'gets back to Arndrumnſtake, my way 'is this: I ſet down ſo many words as 'will expreſs my meaning to my fa-'ther, after the manner you ſee on 'this table, and make a little diſtance 'between each word, which is the 'ſame thing as you do in ſpeaking; 'for there, if you run one word into 'another, and don't give each it's pro-'per ſound, who can underſtand you? 'For though you ſpeak what contains 'all the words, yet, without the pro-'per ſound and diſtinction, it is only 'confuſion. Do you underſtand that?' They told me they did. 'Then,' ſays I, 'theſe are the words I would have 'my father know, I being at this 'arkoe, and he at Arndrumnſtake. "'Honoured Sir," and ſo I read on; 'here,' ſays I, 'you muſt take us to 'be countrymen, and that he and I 'underſtand both the ſame method. 'Now look, this word, which ends 'where you ſee the gap, ſtands for '*honoured*, and this next for *Sir*, the 'next for *I*; and ſo on; and we both 'uſing the ſame method, and ſeeing 'each other's words, are able to open 'our minds at a diſtance.' I was now in hopes I had done, and was going on with my ſtory; but, ſays one of the colambs, 'Mr. Peter, though this is 'a matter that requires conſideration, 'I plainly ſee how you do it, by agree-'ing that all theſe ſtrokes, put into 'this form, ſhall ſtand for the word 'honoured, and ſo on, as you ſay, 'let who will make them; but have

'not

'not you ſet down there the word 'Arndrumnſtake?'—'Yes,' ſays I. 'Why, then,' ſays he, 'none of your 'countrymen could underſtand what 'that means.'—'No!' ſays I, ſmiling; 'but they could!' Says he, 'You ſay, you agree what ſtrokes 'ſhall ſtand for one word, and what 'for another; but then, how could 'your countryman, who never knew 'what ſtrokes you would ſet down for 'Arndrumnſtake, know that your 'ſtrokes meant that very country? 'for that you could not have agreed 'upon before either of you knew there 'was any ſuch place.'

I was at a loſs, without ſpending more words than I was willing about it, how to anſwer this cloſe reaſoner; and talking of ſyllables and letters would only have perplexed the affair more, ſo I told him the readieſt for diſpatch; that as every word conſiſted of one or more diſtinct ſounds, and as ſome of the ſame ſounds happened in different words, we did not agree ſo much upon making our ſtrokes ſtand for ſeveral words, as for ſeveral ſounds; and thoſe ſounds, more or leſs of them, added together, made the particular words. 'As for example,' ſays I, '*Arn* is one ſound, *drumn* is another 'ſound, and *ſtake* is another; now, 'by our knowing how to ſet down 'theſe ſeveral ſounds by themſelves, 'we can couple them, and apply them 'to the making up any word, in the 'manner we pleaſe; and therefore he, 'by ſeeing thoſe three ſounds together, 'knows I mean *Arndrumnſtake*, and 'can ſpeak it as well, though he ne-'ver heard the whole word ſpoken to-'gether, as if he heard me ſpeak to 'him.'—'I have ſome little notion of 'what you mean,' ſays he, 'but not 'clear enough to expreſs myſelf upon 'it; and ſo, go on! go on! And pray 'what did you do about the reeds?'

I then reſuming my diſcourſe where I left off, compleated my narration that night; but I could perceive the water in my father's eyes, when I came to the account of Youwarkee's fall, and the condition I took her up in.

When I had done, they adjuſted the order of their flight, for avoiding confuſion, one to go ſo long before another, and the junior colambs to go firſt.

In the morning nothing was to be heard but the gripſacks; the men were all ranged in order to go off with their reſpective colambs; and after all compliments paſſed, the junior colamb ariſing, walked half way to the wood, where his gripſack ſtanding to wait for him, preceded him to the level, the next gripſack ſtanding ready to ſound as ſoon as the firſt removed; and this was the ſignal for the ſecond colamb to move; ſo that each colamb was a quarter of a mile before the other.

My father was the laſt but two; but I ſhall never forget his tenderneſs at parting with his daughter and grandchildren, and I may ſay with myſelf too; for by this time he had a high opinion of me. Patty went with my father, ſhe ſo much reſembling my wife, that my father ſaid, he ſhould ſtill have his two daughters in his ſight, having her with him.

At parting, I preſented Naſgig with a broad-ſword; and, ſhewing him the uſe of it, with many expreſſions of gratitude on his part, and reſpect on mine, he took flight after the reſt.

CHAP. VII.

PETER FINDS HIS STORES LOW—SENDS YOUWARKEE TO THE SHIP—RECEIVES AN INVITATION TO GEORIGETTI'S COURT.

FOR the firſt few days after our company had left us, Youwarkee could not forbear a tear now and then for the loſs of her father and ſiſter; but I endeavoured not to ſee it, leſt I ſhould, by perſuading her to the contrary, ſeem to oppoſe what I really thought was a farther token of the ſweetneſs of her diſpoſition; but it wore off by degrees, and having a clear ſtage again, it coſt us ſeveral days to ſettle ourſelves, and put our confuſed affairs in order; and when we had done, we bleſſed ourſelves that we could come and go, and converſe with the pleaſing tenderneſs we had hitherto always done.

She told me, nothing in the world but her concern for ſo tender a father, and the fear of diſpleaſing me if ſhe diſobliged him, ſhould have kept her ſo long from me; for her life had never been ſo ſweet and ſerene as with me and her children; and if ſhe was

to begin it again, and chuſe her ſettlement and company, it ſhould be with me in that arkoe. I told her, though I was entirely of her opinion for avoiding a life of hurry, yet I loved a little company, if for nothing elſe but to advance topicks for diſcourſe, to the exerciſe of our faculties; but I then agreed, it was not from mere judgment I ſpoke, but from fancy. 'But, 'Youwee,' ſays I, 'it will be proper 'for us to ſee what our friends have 'left us, that we don't want before 'the time comes about again.' Then ſhe took her part, and I mine; and having finiſhed, we found they would hold out pretty well, and that the firſt thing to be done, was to get the oil of the beaſt-fiſh.

When we came to examine the brandy and wine, I found they had ſuffered greatly; ſo I told Youwarkee, when ſhe could ſpare time, ſhe ſhould make another flight to the ſhip; 'And,' ſays I, 'pray look at all the ſmall 'caſks of wine or brandy, or be they 'what they will, if they are not above 'half full, or thereabouts, they will 'ſwim, and you may ſend them 'down.' I deſired her to ſend a fire-ſhovel and tongs, deſcribing them to her; 'And there are abundance of 'good ropes between decks, rolled 'up, ſend them,' ſays I, 'and any 'thing elſe you think we want, as 'plates, bowls, and all the cutlaſſes 'and piſtols,' ſays I, 'that hang in 'the room by the cabbin: for I 'would, methinks, have another cargo, as it may poſſibly be the laſt; for 'the ſhip can't hold for ever.'

Youwarkee, who loved a jaunt to the ſhip mightily, ſat very attentive to what I ſaid, and told me, if I pleaſed, ſhe would go the next day; to which I agreed.

She ſtayed on this trip till I began to be uneaſy for her, being gone almoſt four days, and I was in great fear of ſome accident; but ſhe arrived ſafe, telling me, ſhe had ſent all ſhe could any ways pack up; and any one who had ſeen the arrival of her fleet would have taken it for a good ſhip's cargo, for it coſt me full three weeks to land and draw them up to the grotto: and then we had ſuch a redundancy of things, that we were forced to pile them upon each other, to the top of the room.

It began to draw towards long days again, when one morning, in bed, I heard the gripſack. I waked Youwarkee, and told her of it; and we both got up, and were going to the level, when we met ſix glumms in the wood, with a gripſack before them, coming to the grotto. The trumpeter, it ſeems, had been there before; but the others, who ſeemed to be of a better rank, had not. We ſaluted them, and they us; and Youwarkee knowing one of them, we deſired them to walk to the grotto.

They told us, they came expreſs from Georigetti's palace, with an invitation to me and Youwarkee to ſpend ſome time at his court. I let them know what a misfortune I lay under in not being born with a graundee, ſince Providence had pleaſed to diſpoſe of me in a part of the world where alone it could have been of ſuch infinite ſervice to me; or I ſhould have taken it for the higheſt honour to have laid myſelf at their maſter's feet: and after ſome other diſcourſe, one of them preſſed me to return his maſter my anſwer; for they had but a very little time to ſtay. I told them, they ſaw plainly, by bareing my breaſt to them, that I was under an abſolute incapacity for ſuch a journey, and gratifying the higheſt ambition I could have in the world; for I was pinned down to my arkoe, never more to paſs the barrier of that rock. One of them then aſking, if I ſhould chuſe to go, if it was poſſible to convey me thither, I told him, he could ſcarce have the leaſt doubt, was my ability to perform ſuch a journey equal to my inclination to take it, that I ſhould in the leaſt heſitate at obeying his maſter. 'Sir,' ſays he, 'you make me very happy, in the re-'gard you ſhew my maſter; and I muſt 'beg leave to ſtay another day with 'you.' I told him, they did me great honour; but little thought what it all tended to.

We were very facetious; and they talked of the number of viſitors I had had here; and they mentioned ſeveral facts which had happened, and, amongſt the reſt, that of Naſgig, who they ſaid, ſince his return, had been introduced by Pendlehamby to the king, and was for his great prudence and penetration become Georigetti's great favourite. They told me war was upon the point of breaking

breaking out, and ſeveral other pieces of news, which, as they did not concern me, I was very eaſy about.

The next morning they deſiring to walk, and view what was moſt remarkable in my arkoe, and above all to ſee me fire my gun, which they had heard ſo much of; I gratified them at a mark, and hit the edge of it, and found them quite ſtaunch, without the leaſt ſtart at the report. I paid them a compliment upon it, and told them how their countrymen had behaved, even at a ſecond firing: 'But,' ſays he, who was the chief ſpokeſman, and knew, I found, as much as I could tell him, 'that ſecond fright was from ſeeing 'death the conſequence of the firſt; 'and though you had then to do moſtly 'with ſoldiers, you muſt not think 'they chuſe death more than others, 'though their duty obliges them to 'ſhun it leſs.'

The ſame perſon then deſired me to ſhew him how to fire the gun; which I did, and believe he might hit the rock ſomewhere or other; but he did not ſeem to admire the ſport, and I having but few balls left, did not recommend the gun to the reſt.

A little before bed-time, the ſtrangers told me, they believed I ſhould ſee Naſgig next morning. I preſently thought there was ſomewhat more than ordinary in this viſit; but could no ways dive to the bottom of it.

Juſt before they went to reſt, they ordered the trumpeter to be early on the rock next morning; and upon the firſt ſight of Naſgig's corps, to ſound notice of it, for us to be ready to receive him.

CHAP. VIII.

NASGIG COMES WITH A GUARD TO FETCH PETER — LONG DEBATE ABOUT HIS GOING — NASGIG'S UNEASINESS AT PETER'S REFUSAL — RELATES A PREDICTION TO HIM, AND PROCEEDINGS THEREON AT GEORIGETTI'S COURT — PETER CONSENTS TO GO — PREPARES A MACHINE FOR THAT PURPOSE.

WE were waked by the trumpet giving notice of Naſgig's coming; I did not care to enquire of the ſtrangers into the particulars of his embaſſy; 'For be it what it will,' thinks I, 'Naſgig is ſo much my friend 'that I can know the motives of it 'from him, and, or I am much de-'ceived, he is too honeſt to impoſe 'upon me.' But I had but little time for thought, for upon our entering the level, we found him and his train, of at leaſt an hundred perſons, juſt alighting before us.

We embraced, and profeſſed the particular pleaſure fortune had done us in once more meeting together. When we arrived at the grotto, he told me he was aſſured I had been informed of the occaſion of his viſit; and that it would be the greateſt honour done to his country that could be imagined. He then laid his hand on my beard, which was now of about five months growth, having never ſhaved it ſince my father went, and told me he was glad to ſee that. 'And are you not ſo to ſee me?' ſays I. 'Yes, ſurely,' ſays he, 'for 'I prize that for your ſake.'—'But,' ſays I, 'pray be open with me, and tell 'me what you mean by my being 'informed of the occaſion of your 'coming?'—'Why,' ſays he, 'of 'Georigetti's meſſage to you; as it 'will be of ſuch infinite ſervice to our 'country: and,' ſays he, 'if you had 'not conſented to it, the meſſengers 'had returned and ſtopped me.'—'True,' ſays I, 'one of the meſſen-'gers told me the king would be glad 'to ſee me; which as I, ſo well as 'he, knew it was impoſſible he ſhould, 'in return to his compliment, I believe 'I might ſay, what a happineſs it would 'be to me if I could wait on him. But 'pray what is your immediate meſ-'ſage; for I hear you are in great 'favour at court, and would never 'have come hither with this retinue 'in ſo much ceremony on a trifling 'account?'

'My dear Peter,' ſays Naſgig, 'know that your fame has reached far 'and near ſince I ſaw you before; and 'our ſtate, though a large and popu-'lous one, and once of mighty power 'and twice it's preſent extent, by the 'revolt of the weſtern part of it, who 'choſe themſelves a king, has been ſo 'miſerably harraſſed by wars, that the 'revolters, who are ever fomenting 'diſcontent and rebellion amongſt us, 'will by the encroachments they daily

'make on us, certainly reduce us at 'laſt to a province under their govern-'ment; which will render us all ſlaves 'to an uſurped power, ſet up againſt 'our lawful ſovereign. Now theſe 'things were foretold long enough be-'fore they actually began to be tran-'ſacted; but all being then at peace, 'and no proſpect of what has ſince 'happened, we looked not out for a 'remedy, till the diſeaſe became ſtub-'born and incurable.'—'Pray,' ſays I, 'by whom were the things you 'mention foretold?'—'By a very an-'cient and grave ragan,' ſays he. 'How long ago,' ſays I?—'O, above 'four times the age of the oldeſt man 'living,' ſays he. 'And when did 'he ſay it would happen,' ſays I? 'That,' ſays he, 'was not quite ſo 'clear then.'—But how do you know,' ſays I, 'that he ever ſaid any ſuch 'thing?'—'Why the thing itſelf was 'ſo peculiar,' ſays he, 'and the ra-'gan delivered it ſo poſitively, that his 'ſucceſſors have ever ſince pronounced 'it twelve times a year publickly, word 'for word, to put the people in mind 'of it, and from whom they muſt hope 'for relief; and now the long expect-'ed time being come, we have no 'hopes but in your deſtruction of the 'tyrant-uſurper.'—'I deſtroy him!' ſays I: 'if he is not deſtroyed till I do 'it, I fear your ſtate is but in a bad 'caſe.'—'My good friend Peter,' ſays he, 'you or nobody can do it.'—'Pugh,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, I took you 'for a man of more ſenſe, notwith-'ſtanding the prejudices of education, 'than to think, becauſe you have ſeen 'me kill a beaſt-fiſh that could not 'come to hurt me, at the diſtance of 'twenty paces, that I can kill your 'uſurper at the diſtance he is from me.' —'No, my good friend,' ſays Naſ-gig, 'I know you take me to have 'more judgment than to think ſo.'—'Why, what elſe can I do?' ſays I, 'unleſs he will come hither to be kill-'ed by me.'—'Dear Peter,' ſays he, 'you will not hear me out.'—'I will,' ſays I; 'ſay on.'—'You, as I ſaid 'before, being the only perſon that 'can, according to our prediction, 'deſtroy this uſurper, and reſtore peace 'among us, my maſter Georigetti, 'and the whole ſtate of Normn-'bdſgrſutt, were going to ſend a ſplen-'did embaſſy to you; but your father 'adviſing to repoſe the commiſſion 'wholly in me, they all conſented to 'it, and I am come to invite you over 'to Brandleguarp for that purpoſe. 'I know you will tell me you have 'not the graundee, and cannot get 'thither: but I am aſſured you have 'what is far better; the wiſdom you 'have will help you to ſurmount that 'difficulty, which our whole mou-'cheratt cannot get over. And I am 'ſure did you apply half the thought 'to accompliſh it, you ſeem to do to 'invent excuſes againſt it, you would 'eaſily overcome that. And now, 'dear friend,' continues he, 'refuſe 'me not; for as my firſt riſe was 'owing to your favour, ſo my down-'fall as abſolutely attends your re-'fuſal.'

'Dear Naſgig,' ſays I, 'you know 'I love you, and could refuſe you no-'thing in my power; but for me to 'be mounted in the air, I know not 'how, over theſe rocks, and then 'drowned by a fall into the ſea, which 'is a neceſſary conſequence of ſuch a 'mad attempt; and all this in proſe-'cution of a project founded upon an 'old wife's tale, is ſuch a chimera as 'all men of ſenſe would laugh at; as 'if there was no way of deſtroying me, 'but with a guard of an hundred men, 'to ſouſe me into the wide ocean. A 'very pretty conqueror of rebels I 'ſhould prove, truly, kicking for life, 'till the next wave ſent me to the 'bottom.'

Naſgig looked then ſo grave, I al-moſt thought I ſhould have heard no more of it; but, after a ſhort pauſe, 'Peter,' ſays he, 'I am ſorry you 'make ſo light of ſacred things; a 'thing foretold ſo long ago by a holy 'ragan, kept up by undoubted tra-'dition ever ſince, in the manner I have 'told you, in part performed, and now 'waiting your concurrence for it's ac-'compliſhment: but if I cannot pre-'vail with you, though I periſh at my 'return, I dread to think you may be 'forced without thanks to perform 'what generouſly to undertake will be 'your greateſt glory.'

'Pray,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, (for now 'I perceive you are in earneſt) what 'may this famous prediction be?'

'Ah, Peter!' ſays Naſgig, 'to what 'purpoſe ſhould I relate ſo ſacred a 'prediction to one who, though the

'moſt

'moſt concerned in it, makes ſuch a 'jeſt of it?'

His mentioning me as concerned in it, raiſed my curioſity once more to deſire a relation of it. 'Why ſhould I 'relate it,' ſays he, 'if you are re'ſolved not to fulfil it?' I told him I had no reſolution againſt any thing that related to my own good, or that of my friends; 'But the greateſt queſtion with 'me,' ſays I, 'is, whether I am at 'all concerned in it.'—'O clearly, 'clearly!' ſays he, 'there is no doubt 'of it; it muſt mean you or nobody.' I told him I muſt judge by the words of it, that I was the perſon intended by it; and till that was apparent to my reaſon, it would be difficult to procure my conſent to ſo perilous an undertaking. 'And,' ſays he, 'will you 'upon hearing it, judge impartially, 'and go with me if you can take the 'application to yourſelf?'—'I cannot 'go quite ſo far as that,' ſays I; 'but 'this I'll promiſe you, I'll judge impartially, and if I can ſo apply it to 'myſelf, that it muſt neceſſarily mean 'me, and no other, and if you convince 'me I may go ſafely, I will go.'

Naſgig was ſo rejoiced at this, he was at a loſs how to expreſs himſelf. 'My dear Peter,' ſays he, 'you have 'given me new life! our ſtate is free! 'our perſons free! we are free! we are 'free! And, Peter,' ſays he, 'now I 'have given vent to my joy, you ſhall 'hear the prediction.

'You muſt know, this holy ragan 'lived four ages ago; and from cer'tain dreams and revelations he had 'had, ſet himſelf to overturn our 'country-worſhip of the Great Image; 'and by his ſanctity of life, and ſound 'reaſonings, had almoſt effected it 'under the aſſiſtance of Begſurbeck, 'then our king, who had fully em'braced his tenets; but the reſt of the 'ragans oppoſing him, and finding he 'could not advance his ſcheme, he 'withdrew from the ragans to a cloſe 'retirement for ſeveral years; and juſt 'before his death, ſending for the king 'and all the ragans, he told them he 'ſhould certainly die that day; and 'that he could not die at peace till he 'had informed them what had been 'revealed to him; deſiring them to 'take notice of it, not as a conjecture 'of his own, but a certain verity 'which ſhould hereafter come to paſs. 'Says he, "You know you have re"jected the alteration in your religion "I propoſed to you; and which Beg"ſurbeck, here preſent, would have "advanced: and now I muſt tell you "what you have brought upon your"ſelves. As for Begſurbeck, he "ſhall reign the longeſt and moſt proſ"perouſly of all your former and fu"ture kings; but in twice his time "out-run, the weſt ſhall be divided "from the eaſt, and bring ſorrow, "confuſion, and ſlaughter, till the "waters of the earth ſhall produce a "glumm, with hair round his head, "ſwimming and flying without the "graundee; who, with unknown fire "and ſmoak ſhall deſtroy the traitor "of the weſt, ſettle the ancient limits "of the monarchy, by common con"ſent eſtabliſh what I would have "taught you, change the name of this "country, introduce new laws and "arts, add kingdoms to this ſtate, "and force tributes from the bowels "of the earth, of ſuch things as this "kingdom ſhall not know till then, "and ſhall never afterwards want; "and then ſhall return to the waters "again. Take care," ſays he, "you "miſs not the opportunity when it "may be had; for once loſt, it ſhall "never, never more return; and then, "woe, woe, woe, to my poor coun"try!" The ragan having ſaid this, 'expired.

'This prediction made ſo great an 'impreſſion on Begſurbeck, that he 'ordered all the ragans ſingly before 'him, and heard them repeat it; which 'having done, and made himſelf per'fect in it, he ordered it to be pro'nounced twelve times in the year on 'particular days, in the moucheratt, 'that the people might learn it by heart; 'that they and their children being per'fect in it, might not fail of applying 'it, when the man from the waters 'ſhould appear with proper deſcription.

'Thus, Peter,' ſays he, 'has this 'prediction been kept up in our me'mories as perfectly as if it had but 'juſt been pronounced to us.'

'Tis very true,' ſays I, 'here may 'have been a prediction, and it may 'have been, as you ſay, handed down 'very exactly from Begſurbeck's days 'till now; but how does that affect 'me? how am I concerned in it? 'Surely, if any marks would have de-

'noted

'noted me to be the man, ſome of 'the colambs who have ſo lately left 'me, and were ſo long with me, would 'have found them out in my perſon, 'or among the ſeveral actions of my 'life I recounted to them.'

'Upon the return of the colambs 'from you,' ſays Naſgig, 'they told 'his majeſty what they had heard and 'ſeen at Graundevolet, and the ſtory 'was conveyed through the whole 'realm: but every man has not the 'faculty of diſtinction. Now, one of 'the ragans, when he had heard of 'you, applying you to the prediction, 'and that to you, ſoon found our de-'liverer in you; and at a publick 'moucheratt, after firſt pronouncing 'the prediction, declared himſelf there-'on to the following effect—

"May it pleaſe your majeſty—and "you the honourable colambs—the "reverend ragans—and people of this "ſtate," ſays he—"you all know that "our famous King Begſurbeck, who "reigned at the time of this predic-"tion, did live ſixty years after it in "the greateſt ſplendor, and died at "the age of one hundred and twenty "years, having reigned full ninety "of them; and herein you will all "agree with me, no king before or "ſince has done the like. You all "likewiſe know, that within two hun-"dred years after Begſurbeck's death, "that is, about twice his reign of "ninety years out-run, the rebellion "in the weſt began, which has been "carried on ever ſince; and our "ſtrength diminiſhing as theirs in-"creaſes, we are now no fair match "for them, but are fearful of being "undone. So far you will agree mat-"ters have tallied with the prediction: "and now, to look forward to the "time to come, it becomes us to lay "hold of the preſent opportunity for "our relief; for that, once ſlipped, "will never return; and, if I have "any ſkill in interpretations, now is "the time of our deliverance.

"Our prediction foretells the paſt "evils, their increaſe and continuance, "till the waters of the earth ſhall pro-"duce a glumm. Here I muſt appeal "to the honourable colambs preſent, "if the waters have not done ſo in "the perſon of glumm Peter of "Graundevolet, as they have received "it from his own report."

'All the colambs then riſing, and 'making reverence to the king, de-'clared it was moſt true.

"The next part," ſays the ragan, "is, he is to be hairy round his head; "and how his perſon in this reſpect "agrees with the prediction, I beg "leave to be informed by the co-"lambs."

'The colambs then riſing, declared, 'that having ſeen and converſed with 'him, they could not obſerve any hair 'on the fore-part of his head; but I 'anſwered, that when I left you, I 'well remembered your having ſhort 'ſtubbs of hair upon your cheeks and 'chin; which I had no ſooner men-'tioned, than your father aroſe, and 'told the aſſembly, that though he did 'not mind it whilſt he was with you, 'yet he remembered that his daugh-'ter, a year before, had told him that 'you had hair on your face before as 'long as that behind.

'This again putting new life into 'the ragan, he proceeded—"Then "let this," ſays he, "be put to the "trial by an embaſſy to glumm Pe-"ter; and if it anſwers, there will be "no room to doubt the reſt. Then," 'ſays the ragan, "it is plain by the "report of the colambs, that glumm "Peter has not the graundee.

"As to the next point, he is to "ſwim and fly. Now I am informed "he ſwims daily in a thing he calls a "boat."—To which the colambs all 'agreed. "And now," ſays he, "that he flies too, that muſt be ful-"filled; for every word muſt have a "meaning, and that indeed he muſt "do if ever he comes hither. I there-"fore adviſe, that a contrivance be "ſomehow found out for conveying "glumm Peter through the air to us, "and then we ſhall anſwer that part "of the prediction; and I think, and "do not doubt, but that may be "done.

"Now," ſays he, "let us ſee the "benefit predicted to us upon the ar-"rival of glumm Peter. Our words "are—"Who, with unknown fire and "ſmoak, ſhall deſtroy the traitor of "the weſt."—What can be plainer "than this? For I again appeal to the "colambs for his making unknown "fire and ſmoak.

"Thus far," ſays the ragan, "we "have ſucceeded happily towards a

"diſcovery

" diſcovery of the perſon; but it ends " not here with the death of the trai- " tor; but ſuch other benefits are to " accrue as are mentioned in the fol- " lowing part of the prediction: they " are bleſſings yet to come; and who " knows the end of them?

" I hope," ſays the ragan, " I have " given ſatisfaction in what I have " ſaid, and ſhall now leave it to the " care of thoſe whoſe buſineſs it is to " provide, that none of thoſe woes pro- " nounced againſt us may happen, by " miſſing the time which, when gone, " will never return."

' The aſſembly were coming to a re- ' ſolution of ſending you a pompous ' embaſſy, but your father prevailed ' for ſending me only; " For," ſays ' he, " my ſon thinks better of him " than of the reſt of our whole race." So ' this important affair was committed to ' me, with orders to prepare a convey- ' ance for you, which I cannot at- ' tempt to do; but ſhall refer myſelf ' to your more ſolid judgment in the ' contrivance of it.'

I had ſat very attentive to Naſgig, and from what he had declared, could not ſay but there was a very great reſemblance between myſelf and the perſon predicted of; ' But, then,' ſays I, ' they are idolaters; Providence would ' not interpoſe in this affair, when all ' the glory of it's ſucceſs muſt redound ' to an idol. But,' ſays I, ' has not ' the ſame thing often happened from ' oracular preſages, where the glory ' muſt redound to the falſe deity? But ' what if, as is predicted, their reli- ' gion is to be changed to the old ra- ' gan's plan, and that will be to the ' abolition of idolatry? I know not ' what to ſay; but if I thought my ' going would gain a ſingle ſoul to the ' eternal Truth, I would not ſcruple to ' hazard my life in the attempt.'

I then called in Youwarkee, told her the whole affair of the prediction, which ſhe had often heard, I found, and could have repeated. I told her that the king and ſtates had pitched on me as the perſon intended by their prediction, and that Naſgig was ſent to fetch me over: ' And, indeed,' ſays I, ' Youwee, if this be a true predic- ' tion, it ſeems very applicable to me as ' far as I can ſee.'—' Yes, truly,' ſays ſhe, ' ſo it does, now I conſider it ' in the light you ſay the ragan puts ' it.'—' Why,' ſays I, ' prophecies ' and predictions are never ſo plain as ' to mention names; but yet, upon ' the ſolution, they become as intelli- ' gible as if they did, the circumſtances ' tallying ſo exactly. But what would ' you have me do? Shall I, or ſhall I ' not, go?'—' Go!' ſays ſhe, ' how ' can you go?'—' O,' ſays I, ' never ' fear that. If this is from above, ' means will ſoon be found; Provi- ' dence never directs effects without ' means.'

Youwarkee, whoſe head ran only on the dangers of the undertaking, had a violent conflict with herſelf; the love of me, of her children, and of her country, divided her ſo, ſhe was not capable of adviſing. I preſſed her opinion again, when ſhe told me to follow the dictates of my own reaſon; ' And, but for the dread of loſing ' you, and for my children's ſakes,' ſays ſhe, ' I ſhould have no choice to ' make when my country is at ſtake: ' but you know beſt.'

I told Youwarkee that I really found the prediction the plainer the more I thought of it; and that, above all, the change of religion was the uppermoſt: ' For if I can reduce a ' ſtate from the miſery and bondage of ' idolatry, to a true ſenſe of the Su- ' preme Being, and ſeemingly by his ' own direction, ſhall I fear to riſque ' my own life for it; or, will he ſuffer ' me to periſh till ſomewhat at leaſt is ' done towards it? And how do I know ' but the whole tendency of my life ' has been by impulſe hither for this ' very purpoſe? My dear Youwee,' ſays I, ' fear nothing, I will go.'

I called Naſgig, and told him my reſolution, and that he had nothing now to do but prepare a means of conveying me. He ſaid, he begged to refer that to me, for my own thoughts would ſuggeſt to me both the ſafeſt and eaſieſt means.

I wanted to venture on the back of ſome ſtrong glumm; when Naſgig told me, no one could endure my weight ſo long a flight. But what charmed me moſt was, the lovely Youwarkee offered to carry me herſelf if ſhe could; ' And if I can't hold out,' ſays ſhe, ' my dear, we can but at laſt drop ' both together.' I kiſſed the charming creature with tears in my eyes, but declined the experiment.

I told

I told Naſgig I wanted to divide my weight between two or four glumms, which I believed I could eaſily do; and aſked if each could hold out with a fourth part of my weight. He told me there was no doubt of that; but he was afraid I ſhould drop between their graundees, he imagining I intended to lie along on their backs, part of me on each of them, or ſhould bear ſo much on them as to prevent their flight. I told him I did not purpoſe to diſpoſe of myſelf in the manner he preſumed, but if two or four could undoubtedly bear my weight ſo long a flight, I would order myſelf without any other inconvenience to my bearers than their burden. He made light of my weight between four, as a trifle, and ſaid, he would be one with all his heart. 'Nay,' ſays I, 'if four 'cannot hold out, can eight?' He plainly told me, as he knew not what I meant, he could ſay nothing to it, nor could imagine how I could divide ſo ſmall a body as mine into eight different weights, for it ſeemed impoſſible, he ſaid, to him; but if I would ſhew him my method, he would then give me his opinion.

I then, leaving him, took out my tools: I pitched upon a ſtrong broad board my wife had ſent me from the ſhip, about twelve feet long, and a foot and half broad; upon the middle of which I nailed down one of my chairs; then I took one cord of about thirty-four feet long, making hand-loops at each end, and nailed it down in the middle to the under ſide of my board, as near as I could to the fore-end of it; and I took another cord of the ſame length and make, and this I nailed within three feet of the farther end of my board. I then took a cord of about twenty feet long, and nailed about three feet before the foremoſt, and a fourth of the ſame length, at the farther end of my board; by which means, the firſt and third ropes being the longeſt, and at ſuch a diſtance from the ſhort ropes, the glumms who held them, would fly ſo much higher and forwarder than the ſhort rope ones, that they and their ropes would be quite out of the others way, which would not have happened if either the ropes had been all of one length, or nearer to or farther from one another: and then conſidering that if I ſhould receive a ſudden jerk or twitch, I might poſſibly be ſhook off my chair, I took a ſmaller rope to tie myſelf with faſt to the chair, and then I was ſure, if I fell into the ſea, I ſhould at leaſt have the board and chair with me, which might poſſibly buoy me up till the glumms could deſcend to my aſſiſtance.

Having carried the machine down to the level with the help of two of Naſgig's men, he being out on a walk, and having never ſeen it, I ordered one of the men to ſit upon the chair, and eight more to hold by the loops, and riſe with him; but, as I found it difficult at their firſt riſing, not being able to mount all equally, to carry the board up even, and the back part riſing firſt, the front pitched againſt the ground, and threw the fellow out of the chair: I therefore bade them ſtop, and ordering eight others to me, ſaid I, 'Hold each of you one of theſe 'ropes as high as you can over your 'heads; then,' ſays I, to the eight bearers, 'mount on your graundees, 'and come round behind him in the 'chair gently, two and two, and take 'each of you a loop, and hover with 'it till you are all ready, and then riſe 'together, keeping your eye on the 'board that it riſes neither higher at 'one end or one ſide than the other; 'and ſee you all feel your weight 'alike; then fly croſs the lake and 'back again.' They did ſo, and with as much eaſe, they told me, as if they had nothing in their hands; and the man rode with ſo much ſtate and compoſure, he ſaid, that I longed to try it myſelf; ſo, ſhifting places with the glumm, I mounted the chair, and tying myſelf round, I aſked if any one knew which way Naſgig walked: one of them pointing to where he ſaw him juſt before in the wood, I ordered them to take me up as before, and go that way.

Upon coming to the place where I expected Naſgig was, I hallooed and called him; who, knowing my voice, ran to the ſkirt of the wood; and ſeeing me mounted in my flying chair, I jokingly told him I was going, if he had any commands; but he mounting immediately came up to me, and viewing me round, and ſeeing the pleaſure the men ſeemed to carry me with, ſays he, 'Are you all ſure you can carry

'him

'him ſafe to Battringdrigg?' They all replied, 'Yes, with eaſe.'—'This, 'then,' ſays he, 'is your doom; if 'you perform it not, every one ſhall 'be ſlit; but if you carry the deli-'verer ſafe, you are filgays every man 'of you!' he verily thinking I was then going off; but I undeceived him, by ordering them to turn about and ſet me down where I was taken up.

Naſgig alighting, and viewing my contrivance, 'This, Peter,' ſays he, 'is but a very plain thing.'—'It is 'ſo,' ſays I, 'but it is as far as my 'ingenuity could reach.'—'Ah, Pe-'ter!' ſays he, 'ſay not ſo, for if the 'greateſt difficulties, as I and all my 'nation thought it would be to convey 'you to them, are ſo plain and eaſy to 'you, what muſt leſſer things be? 'No, Peter, I did not call it plain be-'cauſe it might be eaſily done when it 'was ſeen, but in reſpect to the head 'that formed it; for the neareſt way 'to attain one's end is always the 'beſt, and attended for the moſt part 'with feweſt inconveniences; and I 'verily think, Peter, though we be-'lieve the riſe or fall of our ſtate 'wholly depends on you, you muſt 'have ſtayed at Graundevolet but for 'your own ingenuity. Well, and 'when ſhall we ſet out?' ſays he. I told him it would take up ſome time to ſettle the affairs of my family, and to conſider what I had beſt take with me; and required at leaſt three days, being as little as I could have told him for that purpoſe.

Naſgig, who as he was an honeſt man, and for making the beſt for his patrons, was ſorry it was ſo long, though he imagining at the ſame time it was ſhort enough for one who was to go on ſuch an enterprize, was glad it was no longer; and immediately diſpatched a trumpet expreſs with notice, that on the fourth day he ſhould beat the height of Battringdrigg, and that having myſelf formed a machine for that purpoſe, I would accompany him.

I began next to conſider what part I had to act at Doorpt Swangeanti, (for I neither could nor would call it by any other name when I came thither) and what it was they expected from me. 'I am,' ſays I, 'to kill a traitor; 'good, that may be, but then I muſt 'take a gun and ammunition; and 'why not ſome piſtols and cutlaſſes? 'If I cannot uſe them all, I can teach 'others who may: I will take ſeveral 'of them, and all my guns but two, 'and I will leave a pair of piſtols; I 'may return and want them. I will 'take my two beſt ſuits of cloaths, 'and other things ſuitable; for, if I 'am to perform things according to 'this prediction, it may be a long time 'before I get back again.' Thinks I, 'Youwarkee ſhall ſtay here with 'the children, and if I like my ſettle-'ment I can ſend for her at any time.' I then began to ſee the neceſſity of making at leaſt one more machine to carry my goods on: 'And,' ſays I, 'as they will be very weighty, I muſt 'have more laſks to ſhift in carrying 'them, for I will retain ſixteen for my 'own body-machine, in order to re-'lieve each other; and as the diſtance 'is ſo great, I will not be ſtinted for 'want of freſh hands.'

Being come to this reſolution, I called Naſgig, and ordered eight freſh laſks to attend my baggage; theſe he ſoon ſingled out: ſo, having ſettled all matters with my wife, and taken leave of her and the children, I charged them not to ſtir out of the grotto till I was gone; and leaving them all in tears, I ſet out with a heavy heart for the level, where the whole convoy and my two machines waited for me.

CHAP. IX.

PETER'S SPEECH TO THE SOLDIERY — OFFERS THEM FREEDOM — HIS JOURNEY — IS MET BY THE KING — THE KING SENT BACK, AND WHY — PETER ALIGHTS IN THE KING'S GARDEN — HIS AUDIENCE — DESCRIPTION OF HIS SUPPER AND BED.

WHEN we came to the level, I deſired Naſgig to draw all his men into a circle as near as they could ſtand; I then aſked them who would undertake to carry me; when not a man but proffered his ſervice, and deſired to have the poſt of honour, as they called it. I told them my queſtion was only in caſe of neceſſity, to know whom I might depend upon, for my bearers were already provided, ſaving accidents. 'But, my friends,' ſays I,

'as you are equally deſerving for the 'offered ſervice, as if you were ac-'cepted, are any of you deſirous of 'being filgays?' They all anſwering together, 'I, I, I!'—'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'you and I muſt come to a capitu-'lation before I go, and your honour 'muſt be pledged for performance of 'articles.'

I began with telling them what an enemy I was to ſlavery; 'And,' ſays I, to Naſgig, 'as I am about to undertake 'what no man upon earth ever did be-'fore; to quit my country, my fami-'ly, my every other conveniency of 'life, for I know not what, I know 'not where, and from whence I ſhall 'never return; I muſt be indulged, 'if I am ever ſo fortunate as to arrive 'ſafe in your country, in the ſatis-'faction of ſeeing all theſe my fellow-'travellers as happy as myſelf; for 'which reaſon I muſt inſiſt upon every 'man preſent alighting with me in 'ſafety, being made free the moment 'we touch the ground: and unleſs 'you will engage your honour for 'this, I will not ſtir a ſtep farther.'

Naſgig pauſed for an anſwer; for though my bearers were his own laſks, and he could diſpoſe of them at plea-ſure, yet, as the reſt were the kings, he knew not how far he might venture to promiſe for them; but being deſirous to get me over the rock, fearing I might ſtill retract my purpoſe, he en-gaged to procure their freedom of the king. And this, I thought, would make the men more zealous in my ſer-vice.

I then permitting them to take me up, we were over the rock as quick as thought; and when I had a little ex-perienced the flight, I perceived I had nothing to fear; for they were ſo dex-trous on the graundee, that I received not the leaſt ſhock all the way, or ſcarce a wry poſition, though every quarter of an inch at hand made a con-ſiderable deflection from the perpendi-cular. We ſhifted but twice till we came to Battringdrigg; the manner of which I directed as I ſat in my chair: for I ordered the new man to hover over him he was to relieve, and reaching down his hand to meet the others which were held up with a rope, the old bearer ſunk beneath the chair, and the reliever took his courſe. This we did one by one, till all were chang-ed; but there was one, a ſtout young fellow, at the firſt ſhort rope on my right-hand, who obſerving me to eye him more than the reſt, in a bravado would not be relieved before we arrived at Battringdrigg arkoe; and I afterwards took him into my family.

As it was now ſomewhat advanced into the light ſeaſon, I had hopes of a tolerable good proſpect; but had it been quite light, I ſhould have been never the better for it. I had been upon very high mountains in the inland parts of Africa; but was never too high to ſee what was below me before, though very much contracted; but here, in the higheſt of our flight, you could not diſtinguiſh the globe of the earth but by a ſort of miſt, for every way looked alike to me; then ſometimes on a cue given, from an inexpreſſible height my bearers would dart as it were ſloping like a ſhooting-ſtar, for an in-credible diſtance, almoſt to the very ſurface of the ſea, ſtill keeping me as upright as a Spaniard on my ſeat. I aſked them the reaſon of their ſo vaſt deſcent, when I perceived the labour they had afterwards to attain the ſame height again. They told me, they not only eaſed their graundees by that de-ſcent, but could fly half as far again in a day, as by a direct (they meant horizontal) flight; for though it ſeemed laborious to mount ſo exceſſive high, yet they went on at the ſame time at a great rate; but when they came to de-ſcend again, there was no compariſon in their ſpeed. And, on my con-ſcience, I believe they ſpoke true, for in their deſcents I think no arrow could have reached us.

In about ſixteen hours, for I took my watch with me, we alighted on the height of Battringdrigg; when I thought I had returned to my own ar-koe, it was ſo like it, but much larger. Here we reſted four hours; I opened my cheſt, and gave each of my bearers a drop of brandy. Naſgig and I alſo juſt wetted our mouths, and eat a piece of preſerve to moiſten us; the reſt of the laſks ſitting down, and feeding upon what they had brought with them in their colapets; for their method is, when they take long flights, to carry a number of hard round fruits, flat like my cream-cheeſes, but much leſs, which containing a ſort of flower they eat dry; then drinking, that ſwells, and

fills

fills them as much as a good meal of any thing elſe would. Here we met with abundance of delightful pools of water on the vaſt flat of the rocks. They told me, in that arkoe the young glumms and gawreys came in vaſt flights ſeparately, to divert themſelves on the fine lake of waters, and from thence went ſometimes as far as my arkoe, for that purpoſe; but that was but ſeldom.

When we had ſufficiently reſted, they ſhut their colapets, which ſometimes hung down from their necks, and were ſometimes ſwung round to their backs, and croſſing the arkoe and another large ſea, but nothing comparable to the firſt, we arrived in about ſix hours more to the height of the white mountains, which Naſgig told me were the confines of Georigetti's territories; 'But,' thinks I, 'it may belong to 'whom it will for the value of it;' for nothing could be more barren than all the top of it was; but the inſide of it made amends for that, by the prodigious tall and large trees it abounded with, full of the ſtrangeſt kinds of fruits I had ever ſeen; and theſe trees moſt of them ſeemed to grow out of the very ſtone itſelf, not a peck of dirt being to be collected near them. Without-ſide of theſe mountains, it was ſcarce darker than at my arkoe; for I made all the obſervation my time would allow me; when ſpying at a vaſt diſtance ſeveral lights which were unuſual things to me in that country, they told me, the largeſt was the burning mountain Alkoe: this I remembered to have heard the name of upon ſome former occaſion, though I could not recollect what; and that the reſt were of the ſame ſort, but ſmaller. I aſked if they were in Georigetti's territories. They ſaid no, they belonged to another king formerly, whoſe ſubjects were as fond of fire as Georigetti's were of avoiding it; and that many of them worked with it always before them, and made an inſufferable noiſe by it.

At hearing the above relation, an impreſſion ſtruck my fancy, that they might be a ſort of ſmiths or workers in iron, or other metals; and I wiſhed myſelf with them, for I had a mighty notion of that work, having been frequently at a neighbouring forge when a boy, and knew all their tools, and reſolved to get all the information I could of that country ſome other time; for our company drawing to their poſts, and preparing to ſet forward again, I could have no more talk now; and you muſt know, I had obſerved ſo many idle raſcals before I left England, who could neither ſtrike a ſtroke, nor ſtir a foot, whilſt you talked with them, that I feared if I aſked queſtions by the way, they ſhould in anſwering me neglect their duty, and let me drop.

When we came near our journey's end, Naſgig aſked me where I would pleaſe to alight. I told him I thought at my father's; for though I came on a viſit to the king, it would not ſhew reſpect to go before him juſt off a journey. But I might have ſpared me the trouble of ſettling that point; for we were not gone far from the Black Mountain, it going by that name within ſide, though it is called the White without, before we heard the gripſacks, and a ſort of ſqueaking or ſcreaming muſick, very loud. Naſgig told me the king was in flight. I aſked him, how he knew that, for I could ſee nobody. He knew it, he ſaid, by the gripſack, and the other muſick, which never played but on that occaſion; and, preſently after, I thought the whole kingdom were on the graundee, and was going to order my bearers back to the mountain, for fear of the concourſe. Thinks I, 'They will 'joſtle me down out of civility, and 'I ſhall break my neck to gratify their 'curioſity.' So I told Naſgig, if he did not ſomehow ſtop the multitude, I would turn back for the mountain, for I would never venture into that crowd of people.

Naſgig ſprung away to the king, and informed him; but the king fearing the people ſhould be diſguſted at his ſending them back, gave orders for the whole body to file off to the right and left, and taking a vaſt ſweep each way, to fall in behind me; but upon no account to come near me for fear of miſchief. This was no ſooner ſaid than done, and all ſpreading into two vaſt ſemicircles, met in a train juſt behind my chair.

Naſgig had alſo perſuaded the king to retreat back to the palace, telling him it was not with me as with them, who could help themſelves in caſe of accident; but as I was under the

guidance of others, and on a foundation he ſhould ſcarce, in my condition, have ventured upon, he was ſure I ſhould be better ſatisfied with his intended reſpect only, than to receive it there: 'But,' ſays he, 'that your majeſty may ſee his contrivance, I will 'cauſe him to alight in the palace-'garden, where you may have the 'pleaſure of viewing him in his ma-'chine.'

The king returning, ordered all the colambs, who waited my arrival, to aſſemble in council again; and as I went over the city, I was ſurprized to ſee all the rock of which it conſiſted quite covered with people, beſides prodigious numbers in the air, all ſhouting out peals of welcome to me; and as we were then but little above their heads, every one had ſomething to ſay of me; one wondering what I had got on, another ſwearing he ſaw hair on my face as long as his arm; and in general, every one calling on the Image for my ſafety.

The king was preſent when I alighted in the garden; and himſelf taking me from my chair, I bent on one knee to kiſs his hand: but he took me in his arms, called me his father, and told me, he hoped I would make his days equal in glory to his great anceſtor Begſurbeck. We complimented ſome time, before he took me into a ſmall refectory in the garden, and gave me ſome of his ſort of wine; which I found was loaded with rams-horn, and ſome dried and moiſt ſweetmeats. He then told me, I had a piece of ceremony to go through, after which he hoped to have me to himſelf. I told him, whatever forms of ſtate were cuſtomary, they become neceſſary, and I ſhould obey him.

His majeſty then called one of the perſons in waiting, and telling him he was going to the room of audience, ordered him to conduct me thither forthwith.

Following my guide, after a long walk through a ſort of piazza, we entered under a ſtately arch, curiouſly carved, into a very ſpacious room, lighted with infinite numbers of globe-lamps; where he deſired me to ſit down on a round ſtone pedeſtal covered with leaves, and all round the ſides of it were running foliages exquiſitely wrought; on the walls were carved figures of glumms in ſeveral actions, but chiefly in battle, or other warlike exerciſes, in alto-relievo, very bold; with other devices interſperſed. I ſat down, having firſt paid my ſubmiſſion to the throne, and to the ſeveral colambs who ſat on the king's right and left, down the ſides of the room.

The perſon then who introduced me, going into the middle of the room, ſpoke to this effect—'Mighty king—'and you honourable lords his co-'lambs—here is preſent the glumm 'Peter of Graundevolet; I wait your 'commands where to diſpoſe him.'

Then the king and all the colambs ariſing, another perſon ſtepped forth, and looking at me, for I was ſtanding, 'Glumm Peter of Graundevolet,' ſays he, 'I am to ſignify to you that the 'mighty King Georigetti, and all his 'honourable colambs, congratulate 'your arrival in Normnbdſgrſutt, and 'have commanded me to give you rank 'according to your merit.' Then the king and colambs ſat down, and I was led to the king's right-hand, and placed on the ſame ſtone with, but at ſome ſmall diſtance from, his majeſty.

The king then told me the great pleaſure I had done him and the colambs, in my ſo ſpeedy arrival upon their meſſage; but ſaid, he would give me no farther trouble now, than to know how I choſe to be ſerved; and deſired me to give orders to a baſh he would ſend to me, for whatever I wanted; and then giving orders to a baſh to ſhew me my lodgings, I was permitted to retire to refreſh myſelf.

I was then conducted to my apartment, up a ſloping flight of ſtone, very long, with a vaſt arch over my head; I believe it might be fifty paces long at leaſt, but being a very broad eaſy aſcent, and ſmooth, it was not in the leaſt fatiguing. All the way I went, were the ſame ſorts of globe-lights as in the audience-room. The ſtair-caſe, if I may call it ſo, it anſwering the ſame purpoſe, was moſt beautifully carved, both ſides and top: at length I came into a very large gallery, at leaſt fourſcore paces long, and about twenty broad; on each ſide of which hung the ſame globes. At the farther end of this gallery I entered by an arch, very narrow, but moſt neatly wrought into an oval room; in the middle of this room, on the right-hand, was another ſmall neat arch-

way;

Stothard del. Angus Sculp.

Plate VI. Publiſhed as the Act directs, by Harriſon & Cº Sepr. 6. 1783.

way; entering through which about ten paces, there were two ſmaller arches to the right and left, and within them, with an eaſy aſcent of about three paces, you came to a flat trough of ſtone, ſix or ſeven feet long, and about the ſame width; theſe, I underſtood by my baſh, were the beds to lie on. I aſked him, if they were uſed to lie on the bare ſtone. He told me ſome did; but he had orders to lay me on doſſee; and preſently up came four fellows with great matts, as I took them for by my globe-light, full of ſomething, which by their ſo eaſily carrying ſo great bulk, I perceived was very light. They pitched it down upon my ſtone bedſtead, and firſt with great ſticks, and then with ſmall ſwitches having beat it ſoundly, retired.

Whilſt I was looking about at the oddity of the place, I found my baſh was gone too. 'So,' ſays I, 'all 'gone! I ſuppoſe they intend I ſhall 'now go to bed.' I then went into my bed-chamber, for there were globe-lights there too, and obſerving my bed lay full four feet above the ſtone, and ſloping higher to the ſides and head, I went to feel what it was; but laying my hand upon it, it was ſo ſoft I could feel no reſiſtance till I had preſſed it ſome way; and it lay ſo light, that a fly muſt have ſunk upon it.—'Well,' thinks I, 'what if I never lay thus 'before, I believe I have lain as bad!'

I then took a turn into my oval room again, and obſerved the floor, ſides, and all was ſtone, as ſmooth as poſſible, but not poliſhed; and the walls and cieling, and in ſhort every place, where they could be ornamental, were well adorned with carvings as can be conceived.

Though nobody came near me yet, I did not care to be too inquiſitive all at once, but I longed to know what they burnt in the globes, which gave ſo ſteady a light, and yet ſeemed to be incloſed quite round, top and ſides, without any vent-hole for the ſmoke to evaporate. 'Surely,' thinks I, 'they 'are a dulliſh glaſs,' for they hung almoſt above my touch, 'and muſt be exceeding hot with the fire ſo in-'cloſed, and have ſome ſmall vent-'hole, thought I can't ſee it.' Then ſtanding on tip-toe to feel, it ſtruck quite cold to my finger; but I could only reach to touch that, or any of the reſt, being all of one height.

Whilſt I was muſing thus, I heard the ſound of voices coming along the gallery; and preſently came a train of ſervants, with as much victuals as an hundred men could eat, and wines proportionable; they ſet it down at the upper end of the oval room, on a flat of ſtone, which on making the room had been left in the upper bend of the oval quite croſs it, about table high, for that purpoſe. Theſe eatables, ſuch as were liquid, or had ſauces to them, were ſerved up in a ſort of grey ſtone-bowls; but the dry were brought in neat wooden baſkets of twig-work.

The ſervants all retiring into the gallery, except my baſh, I aſked him, if any body was to eat with me: he told me, 'No.'—'I wonder,' ſays I, 'they ſhould ſend me ſo much, then.' He replied, it was the allowance of my apartment by his majeſty's orders; which ſilenced me.

I believe there were twenty different things on the table, inſomuch that I did not know where to begin, and heartily wiſhed for an excuſe to get rid of my baſh, who ſtood cloſe at my elbow, that I might have ſmelt, and taſted, before I helped myſelf to any thing; for I knew not what any one thing was.

In this perplexity, I aſked my baſh, what poſt he was in under his majeſty. He ſaid, one of the fifty baſhes appointed to be near the king's favourites when at court. 'And pray,' ſaid I, 'are you the perſon to attend me?' He was, he ſaid, the principal to wait on my perſon; but there were at leaſt ſixty others, who had different offices in this apartment. 'I would be glad,' ſaid I, 'to know your name, that I 'may the more readily ſpeak to you.' He told me his name was Quilly. 'Then, pray, Quilly,' ſays I, 'do 'you know what is become of my bag-'gage and my chair?' I found, though he gueſſed at my baggage, he was puzzled at the name of chair; 'My 'ſeat,' ſays I. 'O, I underſtand 'you,' ſays he. 'Then, pray, will 'you go bring me word of them, and 'ſee them brought ſafe up into the 'gallery.' He tripped away on my errand. 'So,' thinks I, 'now I am 'fairly rid of you!' but I had ſcarce turned any of my viands over, before I found he had but ſtepped into the gallery, to ſend ſome of the idle fellows in waiting there; and this put-

ting

ting me to a nonplus, 'Quilly,' says I, 'you know I am a ſtranger here; and 'as different countries have different 'ways and cuſtoms, as well of dreſ- 'ſing their eatables as other things, 'and theſe diſhes being dreſſed con- 'trary to my cuſtom, I ſhall be glad 'if you will name ſome of them to 'me, that I may know them when I 'ſee them again.'

Quilly began with this, and run on to that, which was a fine diſh; and the other few but the king have at their tables: 'And here,' ſays he, 'is a 'diſh of padſi; and there ——' 'Hold, 'hold,' ſays I, 'Quilly! let's try theſe 'firſt, before you proceed;' for I remembered, at my grotto, they all eat my fiſh for padſi, and I cut a ſlice of it, (for I always carried my claſp-knife in my pocket, and they had no ſuch thing there) and laying it on a round cake I took for my trencher, I taſted it, and found it ſo, to my apprehenſion, in the palate; but it did not look or flake like fiſh, as I obſerved by the ſlices they had cut it into; for all the victuals were in long ſlices ready to bite at. I aſked him if theſe things were not all cut, and with what; (for I underſtood they had no knives, ſhewing him mine:) he ſaid the cook cut it with a ſharp ſtone. I then aſked him the names of ſeveral other things, and at laſt he came to crullmott; which having heard of before, I now taſted, and could have ſworn it had been a haſhed fowl. I aſked him if crullmotts were very common; he told me 'Yes,' towards the bottoms of the mountains there were abundance of crullmott-trees. 'No, no,' ſays I, 'not trees; 'I mean fowls, birds.' — 'I don't 'know what they are,' ſaid he; 'but 'theſe crullmotts grow on very large 'trees.' Indeed, I did not know yet what I was at; 'But,' ſays I, 'if 'your fowls do, ſure your fiſh don't 'grow on trees too!'—'We have none 'of them,' ſays he, 'in this country.' —'Why,' ſays I, 'it is but this mo- 'ment I taſted one.'—'I don't know, 'then,' ſaid he, 'where the cook got 'it.'—'Why, here,' ſays I, 'what 'you call padſi I call fiſh.'—'Aye, 'padſi,' ſays he, 'grows upon a buſh 'in the ſame woods.'—'Well done,' ſays I, 'this is the firſt country I was 'ever in where the fiſh and fowl grew 'on trees: it is ten to one but I meet 'with an ox growing on ſome tree by 'the tail before I leave you.'

I had by this time, out of theſe two and ſome other pickings, made up a very good meal; and putting my knife into my pocket, deſired ſomething to drink. My baſh aſked me what I pleaſed to have; I told him, any thing to take a good draught of. Then he filled me a bott of wine, very well taſted, though too ſweet for meals; but putting ſome water to it, it did very well.

My meſſengers being returned, and having ſet all my things in the gallery, I deſired Quilly to let the victuals be taken away: upon which there came more ſervants than diſhes, who took all at once, but ſome wine and water I deſired might remain.

I told Quilly I ſaw there were two beds—'Who are they for?' ſays I. 'One for you, and one for me,' ſays he; 'for we baſhes never leave the 'king's favourites.'—'Pray, Quilly,' ſays I, 'what is the meaning that to 'the ſeveral rooms I have been in, there 'is never a door?'—'Door!' ſays he, 'I don't know that.'—'What!' ſays I, 'don't you ſhut your rooms at 'night?'—'No, no! ſhut at night! 'I never heard of that!'—'I believe,' ſays I, 'Quilly, it is almoſt bed-time, 'is it not?'—'No, no!' ſays Quilly, 'the gripſack has not ſounded.'— 'How do you know,' ſays I, 'in this 'country, when you ſhall lie down, 'and when ariſe? for my wife has 'told me you have no clocks.'—'No! 'no clocks!' ſays he. 'Then,' ſays I, 'does every one riſe and lie down 'when they pleaſe? or do you all lie 'down and all riſe together about the 'ſame time?'—'O,' ſays Quilly, 'you 'will hear the gripſack preſently; 'there are ſeveral glumms who take it 'by turns to ſound it for reſt, and 'then we know it is time to lie down; 'and when they ſound it again, we 'know it is time to riſe.' And afterwards I found theſe people gueſſed the time (being twelve hours between ſound and ſound) ſo well, that there were but few minutes variation at any time between them and my watch; and I ſet my watch to go from their ſoundings at ſix o'clock.

I found myſelf pretty much fatigued after my journey; for though I had only to ſit ſtill, yet the exceſſive velo-

city

city of ſuch an unuſual motion ſtrained every muſcle as much as the hardeſt labour: for, you may imagine, I could not at firſt be without my fears upon ever ſo ſmall a variation of my chair; which, though I could not poſſibly by my own inclination one way or other rectify, yet a natural propenſity to a perpendicular ſtation involuntarily biaſes one to incline this or that way in order to preſerve it: and then, at firſt, my breath being ready to fail me in proportion to the celerity of the flight, and to my own apprehenſions, and being upon that exerciſe near thirty hours, and without ſleep for almoſt forty, you may judge I wanted reſt: ſo I told Quilly I would lie down, and ordered him not to diſturb me till I waked of myſelf.

I could not prevent the officiouſneſs of my valet to put me to-bed, and cover me with the down, or whatever it was; for having no ſheets, I pulled off nothing but my coat, wig, and ſhoes; and putting on my flannel night-cap, I laid me down.

CHAP. X.

THE KING'S APARTMENTS DESCRIBED — IS INTRODUCED TO THE KING—A MOUCHERATT CALLED —HIS DISCOURSE WITH THE KING ABOUT RELIGION.

I Have known ſome travellers ſo peculiar in their taſte as not to be able to ſleep in a ſtrange lodging; but, thanks to my kind ſtars, that did not prove my caſe; for having looked on my watch when I went to-bed, as I call it, and finding it was down, I wound it up, and obſerved it began to go at about three o'clock, whether day or night, matters not; and when I waked it was paſt nine, ſo that I know I had ſlept eighteen hours; and finding that a very reaſonable refreſhment, and myſelf very hungry, I called Quilly to get me my breakfaſt.

Quilly told me his majeſty had been to viſit me, but would not have me diſturbed. I begging him to diſpatch my breakfaſt as ſoon as poſſible, and let me have ſome water for my hands, he ordered the gallery-waiters, and every thing came immediately.

My breakfaſt was a brown liquid, with a ſort of ſeeds or grain in it, very ſweet and good; but the fear of the king's return before I was ready for him, prevented my enquiring into what it was: ſo having finiſhed it, and waſhed my hands, Quilly preſented me a towel, which looked like an unbleached coarſe linen, but was very ſoft and ſpongy; and I found afterwards was made of threads of bark ſtripped from ſome tree. I put on my brown ſuit, ſword, and long wig, and ſent Quilly to know when it was his majeſty's pleaſure I ſhould wait upon him.

I had been ſo much uſed to lamp-light in my grotto, that the lights of this gloomy manſion did not ſeem ſo unuſual a thing to me as they would have done to a ſtranger. The king ſent me word he would admit me immediately, and Quilly was my conductor to his majeſty's apartment.

We paſſed through the gallery, at the farther end of which was a very beautiful arch even with the ſtair-caſe, through which Quilly led me into a large guard-room, wherein were above an hundred glumms poſted in ranks, with their pikes in hand, ſome headed with ſharp-pointed ſtone, others with multangular ſtone, and others with ſtone globes. Paſſing through theſe, we entered another gallery as long as that to my apartment; then under another arch we came into a ſmall ſquare room, carved exceeding fine; on the right and left of which were two other arch-ways leading into moſt noble rooms; but we only ſaw them, paſſing quite croſs the little room, through an arch that fronted us into a ſmall gallery of prodigious height; at the farther end of which Quilly turning aſide a mat, introduced and left me in the moſt beautiful place in the univerſe; where, neither ſeeing nor hearing any body ſtir, I employed myſelf in examining the magnificence of the place, and could, as I then thought, have feaſted my eye with variety for a twelvemonth. I paced it over one hundred and thirty of my paces long, and ninety-ſix broad: there were arches in the middle of each ſide, and in the middle of each end; the arch-ceiling could not be leſs than the breadth of the room, and covered with the moſt delightful carvings, from whence hung globe-lights innumerable,

ble, but ſeemingly without order, which I thought appeared the more beautiful on that account. In the center of the room hung a prodigious cluſter of the ſame lights, ſo diſpoſed as to repreſent one vaſt light; and there were ſeveral rows of the ſame lights hung round the room, one row above another at proper diſtances: theſe lights repreſented to me the ſtars, with the moon in the middle of them; and after I came to be better acquainted with the country, I perceived the lights were to repreſent the ſouthern conſtellations. The arch-ways were carved with the fineſt devices imaginable, gigantick glumms ſupporting on each ſide the pediments. At every ten paces, all along the ſides and ends, aroſe columns, each upon a broad ſquare baſe, admirably carved; theſe reached to the cornice or baſe of the arched cieling, quite round the room. On the pannels between each column were carved the different battles and moſt remarkable atchievements of Begſurbeck himſelf. Over the arch I entered at, was the ſtatue of Begſurbeck, and over the oppoſite arch the old prophetick ragan. In the middle of the room ſtood a long ſtone-table lengthwiſe, moſt exquiſitely carved, almoſt the length of the room, except where it was divided in the middle about the breadth of the arch-ways, in order for a paſſage from one arch to the other. In ſhort, to deſcribe this one room particularly, would make a volume of itſelf.

I ſtaid here a full hour and half, wondering why nobody came to me; at length turning myſelf about, I ſaw two glumms coming towards me, and having received their compliments, they deſired me to walk in to the king. We paſſed through another middling room, and taking up a matt at the farther ſide of it, I was conducted in where his majeſty was ſitting with another glumm. They both aroſe at my entrance, and calling me their father, and leading me, one by each hand, obliged me to ſit down between them.

After ſome compliments about my journey, and accommodation ſince, the king told me I had not waited ſo long without, but he had ſome urgent diſpatches to make; and as he choſe to have me in private with him, he imagined, he ſaid, I would be able to divert myſelf in the boſkee. I declared I had never ſeen any thing like it for grandeur and magnificence before; but the beauty of the ſculpture, and diſpoſition of the lights, were moſt exquiſite.

All this while I felt the other glumm handling my long wig, and feeling whether it grew to my head, or what it was; for he had by this time got his finger under the caul, and was pulling my hair down: when I turning about my head, 'Glumm Peter,' ſays the king, 'don't be uneaſy, the ragan will 'do you no hurt, it is only to ſatisfy 'his curioſity; and I choſe to have the 'ragan here, that we may more leiſurely adviſe with you what courſe 'to take in the preſent exigences of 'my ſtate. I have fully heard the 'ſtory of your travels from my colambs, and we have returned thanks 'to the Great Image for bringing you, 'after ſo many hazards and deliverances, ſafe to my dominions for our 'defence.'

The ragan deſired to know whether all that hair (meaning my wig) grew upon my head or not. I told him no, it was a covering only, to put on occaſionally; but that hair did grow on my head, and pulling off my wig I ſhewed them. The ragan then aſked me if I had hair of my own growing under that too, (meaning my beard, which he then had in his hand, for their glumms have no beards;) but I told him that grew there of itſelf. 'O parly Puly!' ſays the ragan, riſing up, and ſmiting his hands together, 'it is he! it is he!'

'Pray,' ſays I, 'ragan, who is this 'Puly you ſpeak of?'—'It is the 'Image,' ſays he, 'of the great Coll-'war.'—'Who is that?' ſays I.—'Why, he that made the world,' ſays he. 'And, pray,' ſays I, 'what did 'his Image make?'—'O,' ſays he, 'we made the Image.'—'And, pray,' ſays I, 'can't you break it again?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'if we had a mind to 'be ſtruck dead, we might; for that 'would be the immediate conſequence 'of ſuch an attempt; nay, of but 'holding up a finger againſt it in con-'tempt.'—'Pray,' ſays I, 'did ever 'any body die that way?'—'No,' ſays he, 'no one ever durſt preſume 'to do it.'—'Then, perhaps,' ſaid I, 'upon trial, the puniſhment you ſpeak 'of might not be the conſequence of

'ſuch

'such an attempt. Pray,' says I, 'what makes Collwar have so great a 'kindness for that Image?' — 'Because,' says he, 'it is his very likeness, and he gives him all he asks 'for us; for we only ask him. Why,' says he, 'it is the Image that has 'brought you amongst us.'

I did not then think it a proper time to advance the contrary to the person I then had to do with, as I was sure it would have done no good; for a priest is only to be convinced by the strongest party; so I deferred my argument on that head to a fitter opportunity.

'Most admirable Peter,' says the king, 'you, you are the glumm we 'depend upon to fulfil an ancient pre-'diction delivered by a venerable ra-'gan. If you will, Ragan I. O. shall 'repeat it to you, and therein you will 'be able to discern yourself plainly 'described, in not only similar, but 'the express words I myself, from 'your story, should describe you in.'

In good earnest, I had from divers circumstances concluded that I might be the person; and resolved, as I thought I had the best handle in the world for it from the prediction, to do what I could in the affair of religion, by fair means or stratagem, (for I was sensible my own single force would not do it) before I began to shew myself in their cause, or else to desert them; and having had a small hint from Nasgig of what the old ragan's design was in part, and which I approved of, I purposed to add what else was necessary as part of his design, if his proposals had been approved of.

I told the king I would excuse the ragan the repetition of the prediction, as I had partly been informed of it by Nasgig; and that conceiving myself, as he did, to be the person predicted of by the ragan, I had the more readily set out on this expedition, which nothing but the hopes of performing so great a good could have prevailed with me to undertake; and I did not doubt, with God's blessing, to accomplish it.

The king grew exceeding joyous at what I said, and told me he would call a moucheratt, at which all his colambs should attend to have their advice, and then we would proceed to action; and ordered the ragan to let it be for the sixth day, and in the mean time that he and his brethren should, day and night, implore the Image to guide their deliberations.

The ragan being gone, I told the king I had something to impart to him, in which it was my duty to obtain his majesty's sentiments before I appeared publickly at the moucheratt. He desired me to proceed: I told him I had been some time considering the old ragan's prediction, with the occasion of it; 'And,' says I, 'it is plain to me 'that all these mischiefs have befallen 'you for neglect of the ragan's pro-'posal concerning religion; as I un-'derstand your great ancestor would 'have come into it, and would have 'had his people done so too but for 'the ragans, who hindered it.

'You find,' says I, 'by your tra-'ditional history, that Begsurbeck liv-'ed long, and reigned gloriously; and 'I would aim at making you as pros-'perous as he was, and infinitely more 'happy, not only in outward splen-'dor here, but in great glory here-'after.'

Perceiving that my discourse had quickened the king's attention, says I, 'I must let your majesty know it is the 'old ragan's plan I must proceed upon 'in every branch of it.'—'Why,' says the king, 'he would have abolished 'our worship of the image.'—'And 'so would I,' says I; 'nay, not only 'would, but must and will, before I 'engage myself in your deliverance; 'and then with the only assistance of 'the great Collwar, whom I adore, 'and whom you must too, if you ex-'pect any service from me, I don't 'doubt to prevail.

'Your majesty sees,' says I, 'in 'few words, I have been very plain 'with you; and I desire you, in as 'concise and plain a manner, to an-'swer me, what are your thoughts on 'this head? for I can say no more till 'I hear them.'

The king seeing me so peremptory; 'Glumm Peter,' says he, looking about to see no one was near, 'I have 'too much sense to imagine our Image 'can do either good or hurt; for if it 'could have done us good, why would 'it not in our greatest distress, now 'near two hundred years past? For my 'own part, I put no trust in it, nor did 'my famous ancestor the great Beg-

'ſurbeck: but here is my difficulty, 'where to chuſe another object of wor-'ſhip; for I perceive by myſelf, man-'kind muſt, through natural impulſe, 'look to ſomewhat ſtill above them, as 'a child does to his father, from whom 'he hopes for and expects ſuccour in 'his difficulties; and though the father 'be not able to aſſiſt him, ſtill he looks 'to him; and therefore, I ſay, we 'muſt have another before we can part 'with this, or the people, inſtead of 'the part who have been in the de-'fection, will all deſert me; for they 'are eaſy now in hopes of help from the 'Image, and every little gleam of ſuc-'ceſs is attributed to it; but for the 'diſadvantages we receive, the ragans 'charge them on the people's not 'praying, and paying ſufficiently; 'which they, poor ſouls, knowing in 'their conſciences to be true enough, 'are willing rather, as they are bid, 'to take the blame upon themſelves, 'than to ſuffer the leaſt to fall on the 'Image.

'All this,' ſays the king, 'I am 'ſenſible of; but ſhould I tell them 'ſo, my life muſt pay for it; for the 'ragans would bring ſome meſſage 'from the Image againſt me, to deſert 'or murder me; and then happy 'would be the firſt man who could 'begin the miſchief, which the reſt 'would ſoon follow.'

This ſo frank and unexpected declaration, gave me great confidence in the king; and I told him, if that was his opinion, he might leave the reſt to me. I would ſo manage it, that the thing ſhould be brought about by my means; and I would then ſatisfy all his ſcruples, and make him a flouriſhing prince. But I could not help reflecting with myſelf, how nearly this diſtant prince, and his ſtate, copied ſome of my neighbours in Europe.

CHAP. XI.

PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON WHAT HE WAS TO PERFORM—SETTLES THE METHOD OF IT—HIS ADVICE TO HIS SON AND DAUGHTER — GLOBE-LIGHTS LIVING CREATURES — TAKES MALECK INTO HIS SERVICE—NASGIG DISCOVERS TO PETER A PLOT AT COURT — REVOLT OF GAUIN-GRUNT.

HAVING now fully entered into the ſpirit of the buſineſs with my own good liking, I was determined to puſh it vigorouſly, or periſh in the attempt. 'Have I,' ſays I, 'ſo large a 'field before me now to manifeſt my 'Maker in to a whole nation, and un-'der his own call, and to fulfil their 'own prediction too; and ſhall I ſhrink 'at the poſſible danger? Or may there 'not rather be no probability of dan-'ger in it? The nation is in diſtreſs, 'the readier therefore to try any re-'medy for help: their Image has ſtood 'idle two hundred years; there has 'been an old prophecy, or at leaſt if 'not true, as firmly believed to be true 'as if it was ſo; and this, in regard to 'the people, anſwers in all reſpects as 'well. But why ſhould it not be true? 'It is better atteſted by the frequent 'repetition, from the original delivery 'to this time, than are many tradi-'tions I have heard of amongſt us 'chriſtians, which have come out ſpick 'and ſpan new from the repoſitories of 'the learned, of twelve or fifteen hun-'dred years old, little the worſe for lying 'by; though they are not pretended 'to have ſeen light all that time, and 'are undoubted verities the moment 'they receive the grand ſanction. Then 'if any means but fraud or force can 'gain ſo large a territory to the truth, 'and I am the only perſon can intro-'duce it, ſhall not I endeavour it? 'Yes, ſurely; but I am not excluded 'all advantages neither, for all the 'works of Providence are brought to 'paſs by appointed means: and, indeed, 'were it otherwiſe, what could we call 'providence? For a peremptory fiat, 'and it is over, may work a miracle, 'it is true, but will not exhibit the 'proceedings of Providence. There-'fore let me conſider, in a prudential 'way, how to proceed to the execution 'of what I am to ſet about—and guide 'me, Providence! I beſeech you, to 'the end!'

Upon the beſt deliberation I could take, I came to the following reſolutions: firſt, to inſiſt on the abolition of the Image worſhip, and to introduce true religion by the fitteſt means I could find opportunity for.

Secondly,

Secondly, as the revolters had been one people with thoſe I would ſerve, and had this prediction amongſt them too, and were intereſted in it, in hopes of it's diſtant accompliſhment; ſo if they came properly to the knowledge, that the perſon predicted of had appeared, and was ready for execution of his purpoſes, it muſt ſtagger their fidelity to their new maſter; and therefore I would find means to let them know it.

Thirdly, that I would not march till I was in condition not eaſily to be repulſed; for that would break both the hopes and hearts of my party, and deſtroy my religious ſcheme; and therefore I would get ſome of my cannon.

Fourthly, that I would go to the war in my flying-chair, and train up a guard for my perſon with piſtols and cutlaſſes.

Theſe reſolutions I kept to myſelf till the moucheratt was over, to ſee firſt how matters would turn out there.

Whilſt I waited for the approaching moucheratt, my ſon Tommy, and daughter Hallycarnie, paid their duties to me. It is ſtrange how ſoon young minds are tainted by bad company. I found them both very glad to ſee me, for every body, they ſaid, told them I was to be their deliverer. They had both got the prophecy by heart, and mentioned the Image with all the affection of natural ſubjects. The moment Tommy ſpoke of it to me; 'Hold,' ſays I, 'young man, 'what's become of thoſe good princi- 'ples I took ſo much pains to ground 'you in? Has all my concern for your 'ſalvation been thrown away upon 'you? Are you become a reprobate? 'What! an apoſtate from the faith you 'inherited by birth-right? Is the God 'I have ſo often declared to you a 'wooden one? Anſwer me, or never 'ſee my face more.'

The child was extremely confounded to ſee me look ſo ſevere, and hear me ſpeak ſo harſh to him. 'Indeed, 'father,' ſays he, 'I did not willingly offend, or deſign to ſhew any particular regard to the Image; for, 'thanks to you, I have none; but 'what I ſaid was only the common 'diſcourſe in every body's mouth; I 'meant neither good nor harm by it.'

'Tommy,' ſays I, 'it is a great 'fault to run into an error, though 'in company of multitudes; and where 'a perſon's principle is ſound at bottom, and founded upon reaſon, no 'numbers ought to ſhake it. You are 'young, therefore hearken to me—and 'you, Hallycarnie—whatever you ſhall 'ſee done by the people of this country, in the worſhip of this idol, don't 'you imitate it, don't you join in it. 'Keep the ſound leſſons I have preached to you in mind; and upon every 'attempt of the ragans, or any other, 'to draw you aſide to their worſhip, 'or even to ſpeak or act the leaſt thing 'in praiſe of this idol, think of me 'and my words; pay your adoration 'to the Supreme Father of ſpirits only, 'and to no wooden ſtone or earthen 'deity whatever.'

The children wept very heartily, and both promiſed me to remember and to do as I had taught them.

Being now in my oval chamber, and alone with my children, I had a mind to be informed of ſome things I was almoſt aſhamed to aſk Quilly. 'Tom- 'my,' ſays I, 'what ſort of fire do 'they keep in theſe globes? and what 'are they made of?'—'Daddy,' ſays he, 'yonder is the man ſhifting them, 'you may go and ſee.' Being very curious to ſee how he did it, I went to him; as I came near him, he ſeemed to have ſomething all fire on his arm. 'What has the man got there?' ſays I. 'Only ſweecoes,' ſays Tommy. By this time I came up to him; 'Friend,' ſays I, 'what are you about?'— 'Shifting the ſweecoes, Sir,' ſays he, 'to feed them.'—'What oil do you 'feed with,' ſays I? 'Oil!' ſays he, 'they won't eat oil; that would kill 'them all.'—'Why,' ſays I, 'my 'lamp is fed with oil.'

Tommy could ſcarce forbear laughing himſelf; but for fear the ſervant ſhould do ſo too, pulled me by the ſleeve, and deſired me to ſay no more. So turning away with him; 'Daddy,' ſays he, 'it is not oil that gives this 'light, but ſweecoes, a living crea- 'ture; he has got his baſket full, and 'is taking the old ones out to feed 'them, and putting new ones in; they 'ſhift them every half-day, and feed them.'—'What,' ſays I, 'are all theſe 'infinite number of globes I ſee living 'creatures!'—'No,' ſays he, 'the 'globes are only the tranſparent ſhell 'of a bott, like our calibaſhes, the 'light comes from the ſweecoe with-

'in.'—'Has that man,' ſays I, 'got 'any of them?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'you may ſee them; the king, and the 'colambs, and, indeed, every man of 'note, has a place to breed and feed 'them in.'—'Pray, let us go ſee 'them,' ſays I, 'for that is a curioſity 'indeed.'

Tommy deſired the man to ſhew me the ſweecoes, ſo he ſet down his baſket, which was a very beautiful reſemblance of a common higler's baſket, with a handle in the middle, and a diviſion under it, with flaps on each ſide to lift up and down. It was made of ſtraw-coloured ſmall twigs, neatly compacted, but ſo light as ſcarce to be of any weight. Opening one of the lids, I could make very little diſtinction of ſubſtances, the bottom ſeeming all over of a quite white colour. I looking ſurprized at the light, the man took out one, and would have put it into my hand, but perceiving me ſhy of it, he aſſured me it was one of the moſt innocent things in the world; I then took it, and ſurveying it, it felt to my touch as ſmooth and cold as a piece of ice. It was about as long as a large lob-worm, but much thicker. The man ſeeing me admire the brightneſs of it's colour, told me it had done it's duty, and was going to be fed; but thoſe which were going upon duty were much clearer: and then opening the other lid, thoſe appeared far exceeding the others in brightneſs, and thickneſs too. I aſked what he fed them with. He ſaid, 'Leaves and fruit;' but graſs, when he could get it, which was not often, they were very fond of.

Having diſmiſſed my children, I ſent for Naſgig, to gain ſome intelligences I wanted to be informed of. The moment I ſaw him, it came into my mind to enquire after my new filgays. He ſaid the king granted my requeſt at the firſt word. I told him then he had ſaved his honour with me, and I was obliged to him: 'But,' ſays I, 'you 'told me my bearers ſhould be free 'too.'—'They are ſo,' ſays he. 'Then there is one thing I want,' ſays I; 'and that is, to ſee the ſecond 'bearer on my right-hand, who came 'through without ſhifting. I have a 'fancy for that fellow,' ſays I, 'to be 'about my perſon: I like him; and, if 'you can give him a good word, I 'ſhould be glad to treat with him 'about it.'

'My friend Peter,' ſays he, 'you 'are a man of penetration, though it 'ill becomes me to ſay ſo in regard of 'perſons; but I can ſay that for him, 'if he likes you as well as you ſeem 'to like him, he is the truſtieſt fellow 'in the world: but as he knows his 'own worth, he would not be ſo to 'every body, I can tell you that.'—'I 'don't fear his diſliking me,' ſays I, 'for I make it my maxim to do as I 'would be done by; and if he is a man 'of honour, as you ſeem to ſay, he 'would do the ſame, and we ſhall be 'ſoon agreed.'—'But,' ſays Naſgig, 'it being now the fourth day ſince he 'was freed, he may be gone home 'perhaps, for he is not of our coun-'try, but of Mount Alkoe. If Quil-'ly can find him, he will come.' So he ordered Quilly to ſend for Maleck of Mount Alkoe, with orders to come to me.

We deſcended from one diſcourſe to another, and at length to King Georigetti's affairs; when Naſgig, giving a ſigh, 'Ah, Peter!' ſays he, 'we ſhall 'loiter away our time here till the 'enemy are upon our backs. There 'is venom in the graſs; I wiſh my 'good maſter is not betrayed.'—'By 'whom?' ſays I. 'By thoſe he little 'ſuſpects,' ſays he. 'Why,' ſays I, 'they tell me you are much in his fa-'vour; if ſo, why do you ſuffer it?'—'I believe,' ſays Naſgig, 'I am in his 'favour, and may continue in it if I 'will join in meaſures to ruin him; 'but elſe I ſhall ſoon be out of it.'—'You tell me riddles,' ſays I. 'Theſe 'things,' ſays he, 'a man talks with 'his head in his teeth. There is dan-'ger in them, Peter; there is danger!'—'You don't ſuſpect me,' ſays I, 'do 'you?'—'No,' ſays he, 'I know your 'ſoul too well; but there are three 'perſons in theſe dominions who will 'never let my maſter reſt till out of 'his throne, or in hoximo. I am but 'lately in favour, but have made as 'many obſervations, perhaps, as thoſe 'who have been longer about the 'king.'

'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'your concern 'proceeds from an honeſt heart; don't 'ſtifle what you have to ſay: if I can

'counſel

'counſel you with ſafety I'll do it; if 'not, I'll tell you ſo.'

'Peter,' ſays he, 'Georigetti was 'the only ſon of a well-beloved fa- 'ther, and aſcended his throne ten 'years ago on his deceaſe; but Harlo- 'kin, the prince of the revolters, whoſe 'head is never idle, finding that whiſ- 'pers and baſe ſtories ſpread about, did 'not hurt Georigetti, or withdraw his 'ſubjects affections, has tried a means 'to make him undo himſelf.'—'As 'how?' ſays I. 'Why,' ſaid he, 'by 'cloſely playing his game he has got 'one of his relations into the king's 'ſervice, than whom he could never 'have choſen a fitter inſtrument. He 'by degrees, feeding the king's hu- 'mour, and promiſing mountains, has 'puſhed into the beſt places in the 'kingdom: his name is Barbarſa, a 'moſt inſolent man, who has had the 'aſſurance to corrupt the king's miſ- 'treſs, and has prevailed and brought 'her over to his intereſt.'—'O perfi- 'dy!' ſays I, 'is it poſſible?'—'Yes,' ſays he; 'and more than that, has 'drawn in, till now, an honeſt man 'called Nicor; and it has been agreed 'between them to protract this war, 'till by their ſtratagems in procuring 'the revolt of Gauingrunt, a very 'large and populous province, and now 'the barrier between us and the re- 'bels, and two or three more places, 'they ſhall have perſuaded Georigetti 'to fly; and then Barbarſa is to be 'king, and Yaccambourſe his queen. 'A union is then to be ſtruck between 'him and Harlokin, and peace made, 'by reſtoring ſome of the ſurrendered 'provinces: and upon the death of the 'firſt of them, or their iſſue, childleſs, 'the ſurvivor, or his iſſue, is to take 'the whole. They laugh at your 'uniting the dominions, and the old 'prediction.'

'Theſe,' ſaid I, 'Naſgig, are ſeri- 'ous things, and, as you ſay, are not 'lightly to be talked of; but, Naſgig, 'know this, he that conceals them is 'a traitor. Can you prove this?'—'I 'have heard them ſay ſo,' ſays Naſ- gig. 'How!' ſays I, 'and not diſco- 'ver it?'—'I am as anxious for that 'as you can be,' ſays he; 'but for 'me to be caſhiered, ſlit, and ſent to 'Craſhdoorpt, only for meaning well; 'without power to perfect my good 'intentions, where will be the benefit 'to my maſter or me?'—'When and 'where did you hear this?' ſays I. 'Several and ſeveral times,' ſays he, 'in my own bed.'—'In your own 'bed!' ſays I. 'I'll tell you,' ſays he; 'it ſo happens that when I reſt at 'the palace, as I am bound to do when 'on duty, there is a particular bed for 'me: now, as the whole palace is cut 'out of one ſolid rock, though Yac- 'combourſe's apartment at the en- 'trance is at a prodigious diſtance 'from the entrance to mine, yet my 'bed, and one in an inner apartment 'of hers, ſtand cloſe together; the 'partition, indeed, is ſtone, but either 'from the thinneſs of it, or ſome flaw 'in it I have not yet diſcovered, I can 'plainly hear every word that is 'ſpoken. And there it is, in their 'hours of dalliance, when they uſe 'this bed, that I hear what I have now 'told you.'—'Say nothing of it,' ſays I, 'but leave the iſſue to me.'

By this time the meſſenger returned with Maleck, and he and I ſoon agree- ing, I took him into my ſervice.

I went to bed as uſual, but could get no reſt, Naſgig's ſtory engroſſing my whole attention; I was reſolved, however, to be better informed before I acquainted the king of it: but riſing pretty early next morning, the king came into my chamber, leaning upon Barbarſa, to tell me he had received an expreſs that Gauingrunt had revolted. 'Peter,' ſays he, 'behold a diſtreſſed 'monarch; nay, an undone monarch!' —'Great Sir,' ſays Barbarſa, 'you 'afflict yourſelf too much; here is 'Mr. Peter come to aſſiſt you, and he 'will ſettle all your concerns, never 'fear.' I eyed the man, and (though prejudice may hang an honeſt perſon) found him a villain in his heart; for even while he was forcing a feeling tone of affliction, he was ſtaring at my laced hat and feather that lay on the ſeat, by which I was ſure nothing could be at a greater diſtance than his heart and tongue. His ſham concern put me within a moment of ſeizing him in the king's preſence; but his majeſty, at that inſtant ſpeaking, diverted me.

Before the king left me, I told him, having certain propoſitions to make to the moucheratt next day, it was poſſi- ble they might require time to conſider them; wherefore it would be proper, at this critical time, to let them meet every

every other day, buſineſs or none, till this affair was over. The king ordered Barbarſa to ſee it was ſo, and then we parted.

CHAP. XII.

HOLD A MOUCHERATT—SPEECHES OF RAGANS AND COLAMBS—PETER SETTLES RELIGION—INFORMS THE KING OF A PLOT—SENDS NASGIG TO THE SHIP FOR CANNON.

ATTENDING at the moucheratt to-day, I happened to be ſeated within two paces of the idol. There was the moſt numerous aſſembly that had ever been ſeen; and when all was quiet, the king opened with ſignifying the revolt of Gauingrunt, the approach of the enemy, and no forces in the field to ſtop them. This he ſet forth in terms ſo moving, that the whole aſſembly were melted into ſighs; till one of the colambs riſing up, ſays he, 'His 'majeſty has ſet forth the ſtate of his 'affairs in ſuch a manner, and, I am 'ſatisfied, a true one, that it becomes 'us all to be vigilant. We all ſeem to 'have, and I believe have, great faith 'in the remedy this day to be propoſed 'to us, in anſwer to our ancient pre-'diction: and as I doubt not but 'glumm Peter is the man, ſo I doubt 'not but through his management 'we ſhall ſtill receive help; but let us 'conſider, if we might not have pre-'vented theſe preſſing evils, and eſpe-'cially this laſt, by ſpeedier prepara-'tions againſt them. What province, 'or member of a ſtate will not revolt 'to a numerous hoſt juſt ready to de-'vour them, if they can receive no aſ-'ſiſtance from their head? for, to my 'certain knowledge, his majeſty had 'ordered this almoſt a year ago, and 'not a man gone yet. Can we ex-'pect Peter to go ſingly to fight an 'army? Did your prediction ſay he 'ſhould go alone? No, he ſhall ſlay; 'that is, he and his army; what is 'done by them, being always attri-'buted to their general. Enquire 'therefore into your paſt conduct, 'ſend Peter your general, and truſt to 'the Great Image.'

His majeſty then ſaid, if there had been any remiſſneſs in executing his commands, he believed it was done with a view to his ſervice; but a more proper opportunity might be found for an enquiry of that nature. As for the preſent moucheratt, it was called ſolely to propoſe to Peter the execution of the remaining part of the prediction; or at leaſt ſuch part of it as ſeems now, or never, to wait it's accompliſhment.

Here aroſe a ragan, and told the aſſembly, in the name of himſelf and brethren, that the prediction had never yet been applicable to any one perſon till glumm Peter arrived; and that his ſagacity of itſelf was a ſufficient recommendation of him to the guidance of the enterprize; and requeſted, that glumm Peter might forthwith be declared protector of the army, and ſet forward with it, that the ſtate might receive ſafety, and the Great Image it's proper honour.

I could now hold out no longer; but, ſtanding up, made my ſpeech in the following manner, or very near it. 'Mighty king—you reverend ragans '—and honourable colambs—with the 'good people of this auguſt aſſembly— 'I am come hither, led by the force of 'your own prediction, at the requeſt 'of his majeſty and the ſtates, at the 'peril of my life, to accompliſh things 'ſaid to be predicted of me glumm 'Peter. If then you have a predic-'tion, if then your prediction de-'ſcribes me, and the circumſtances of 'theſe times, it conſiſting of ſeveral 'parts, they ought ſeriouſly to be 'weighed, that I may know when and 'where I am to begin my operation, 'and when and where to leave off; for 'in predictions, the whole is to be ac-'compliſhed as much as any member 'of it.

'It is ſaid, I ſhall deſtroy the trai-'tor of the weſt; I am ready to enter 'upon it, and ſettle the ancient limits of 'your monarchy. Are you willing, 'therefore, that ſhould be done? yea, 'or nay?' Then every one anſwered, 'Yea!'—'And by common conſent 'eſtabliſh what the old ragan would 'have taught you?' Here the king roſe up; but Barbarſa giving him a touch, (for every one waited to be guided by the voice of the ragans) he ſat down again; and no one anſwering, 'Yea,' I again put the ſame queſtion, and told them, as it was their

own

own concern, I would have an anſwer before I proceeded. One of the ragans then roſe, and ſaid, that part of the prediction was too looſe to be relied on, for it was to ſettle what he would have taught: 'Now who 'knows,' ſays he, 'what he would 'have taught.' The aſſembly pauſed a conſiderable time, and juſt as I was opening my mouth to ſpeak, an ancient and venerable ragan roſe: ſays he, 'I am ſorry, at my years, to find 'that truth wants an advocate; my 'age and infirmities might well have 'excuſed me from ſpeaking in this aſ'ſembly, ſo many of my brethren be'ing preſent, younger and better qua'lified for that purpoſe than myſelf; 'but, as we are upon a ſacred thing, 'and leſt, as I find none of them care 'to declare the truth, I ſhould alſo be 'thought to conſent to it's ſuppreſſion 'if I ſat ſilent and ſuffered it to be hid 'under a quibble, I muſt beg to be 'heard a few words. My brother 'who ſpoke laſt, ſays, the words are 'too looſe, which ſay, "And by "common conſent eſtabliſh what I "would have taught:" but I beg 'leave to think it far otherwiſe, for 'we all know what he would have 'taught, and the memory of that hath 'been as exactly kept as the predic'tion; for how could our anceſtors 'have oppoſed his doctrine, but from 'hearing and diſapproving it? And 'we all know, not only the predic'tion, but the doctrine, hath been 'punctually handed down to us; 'though, woe be to us! we have not 'proclaimed it as we have the predic'tion: and let me tell you, when you, 'my brethren, ſeverally come to my 'years, and have but a ſingle ſtep 'farther to hoximo, you will wiſh 'you had taught it, as I do, who do 'believe and approve it.'

The poor old man, having ſpoke as long as his breath and ſpirits would permit him, ſat down, and I again reſumed the queſtion, as I now thought, on a much better foundation than before, and was immediately told by another ragan, that there would be no end to the aſſembly, if we conſidered every point at once, for we might next go upon what countries we ſhould conquer, and of whom to demand tribute; which would be debating about the fruit before the ſeed was ſown. But his opinion was, to go on and quell the rebellion, and reſtore the monarchy, and then go upon the other points.

I told them, if they made ſo light of the prediction as not to declare publickly, ſince they knew it, what the ragan would have taught, it ill became me to be more zealous in their own concerns than they were themſelves; and I ſhould imagine there was very little truth in any part of it, and would never hazard my life for their ſakes, who would not ſpeak the truth to ſave the kingdom; and deſired leave of the ſtates for my departure; for I was not a perſon, I told them, to be cajoled into any thing. I undertook it at firſt voluntarily; and no man could, or ſhould compel me to it: my life they might take, but my honour they ſhould never ſtain, though I was aſſured I could eaſily, with their concurrence, compleat all that related to them.

The ſenior colamb immediately riſing, deſired me to have a little patience, and not to leave the aſſembly (for I was going out) till I had heard him.

'Here is,' ſays he, 'this day a 'thing ſtarted, which, I think, every 'whit as much concerns us all, and 'the body, and every member of the 'people to know, as it does Peter; 'and I am ſurprized, unleſs the pre'ſent ragans believe what their prede'ceſſor would have taught to be better 'than what they now teach, (for no'thing elſe can make us conſent to it) 'that they ſhould ſcruple to let us 'know it, and keep us ignorant, who 'are worſhippers as well as them'ſelves, of any matter which ſo nearly 'concerns us to know. I am for 'obliging the ragans to declare the 'truth. If this be a true prediction, 'all the relatives to it are true, and I 'inſiſt that we hear it.'

This ſpeech emboldened ſeveral others; and all the populace ſiding with the colambs out of curioſity, cried out to know it.

Perceiving the ragans ſtill huſh, I roſe; and, beckoning the populace to ſilence, 'Mighty king—you, honour'able colambs—and you, good peo'ple,' ſays I—'for it is to you I now 'ſpeak, hear me with attention. You 'think, perhaps, that the ſuppreſſion 'of the truth by your ragans, '(charged to their teeth by the moſt

'reverend

'reverend of their whole body, whoſe 'infirmities rendering him unable, 'though his will is good, to declare 'this ſecret to you) will prevent the 'knowledge of that truth your old 'ragan would have taught; but you 'are miſtaken: and that you may 'know I don't come here at a venture 'to try if I can relieve you, but with 'an aſſurance of doing it if you con-'ſent, I muſt let you know, from me, 'what the ragan would have taught. 'The ragan would have demoliſhed 'this trumpery piece of dirt, this gri-'malkin, ſet out with horrid face and 'colour to fright children; this, I 'ſay, he would have demoliſhed, be-'ing aſſured it could neither do good 'nor hurt, give joy or grief to any 'man, or ſerve any other purpoſe 'whatſoever, but to procure a main-'tenance to a ſet of men who know 'much better than they dare to tell 'you. Can any of you believe this 'ſtupid piece of earth hears me?' Some of the ragans cried, 'Yes!' 'And that he can revenge any affront 'I ſhall give him?' Again, 'Yes, to 'be ſure!'—'Let him then, if he 'dare,' ſays I, whipping out my cut-laſs, and with the backſide of it ſtrik-ing his head off. 'This,' ſays I, 'O 'glumms, is what the ragan knew, 'and what I defy them to deny. 'Now,' ſays I, 'I will farther ſhew 'you, to whom the old ragan would 'have taught you to make your peti-'tions, and pay your adoration; and 'that is to the Supreme Being, Maker 'of heaven and earth, of us and all 'things; who provides for us meat 'and drink, and all things, by cauſing 'the earth, which he has made, to pro-'duce things neceſſary for our uſe. 'That Being whom you have heard 'of by the name of Collwar, and are 'taught at preſent to be afraid to 'ſpeak to. And I appeal to your own 'hearts, if many of you have ever 'thought of him. Again,' ſays I; 'let any thing in the ſhape of man, 'that gives himſelf leave to conſider 'at all, only tell me, if what he can 'make, and does make, with his own 'hands, hath not more occaſion to 'depend on him as it's maker, than 'he on that? Why, then, ſhould not 'we depend upon and pray to our 'Maker?

'You very greatly miſtake me, O 'glumms,' ſays I, 'if you imagine I 'would have all thoſe reverend men 'turned out of employment as uſeleſs. 'No, I find they know too much of 'what is valuable; and therefore thoſe 'who are willing to continue in the 'ſervice of the mouch, and faithfully 'to teach you the old ragan's doctrine, 'and ſuch farther lights of the great 'Being as they ſhall hereafter receive, 'let them continue your ragans ſtill; 'and let others be choſen, and trained 'up in that doctrine.'

Here the poor old man got up again with much difficulty. 'Mr. Peter,' ſays he, 'you are the man predicted 'of; you have declared the old ragan's 'mind, and all my brethren know it.'

Finding I had the populace on my ſide, (for I did not doubt the king and the colambs) I put the queſtion to the ragans: 'Reverend,' ſays I, 'you 'ſee your prediction this day about to 'be fulfilled; for if it is a true one, 'no force of man can withſtand it. 'You ſee your image diſgraced; you 'ſee, and I appeal to you all for the 'truth of it, that what the ragan would 'have taught, has, without your aſſiſt-'ance, been diſcloſed. I therefore 'would have you the firſt to break the 'bondage of idolatry, and turn to the 'true Collwar, as it will be ſo much 'glory to you. Will you, and which 'of you, from henceforth ſerve Coll-'war, and no longer worſhip an idol? 'Such of you as will do ſo, let them 'continue in the mouch; if none of 'you will, it ſhall be my buſineſs to 'qualify a ſufficient number of true 'ragans to form a ſucceſſion for that 'purpoſe. The iſſue of this great 'affair depends upon your anſwers.' They waited ſome time for a ſpokeſman to begin; and ſo ſoon as he was able to get up, the poor old ragan ſaid, 'I 'will continue in it, and do all the 'little good I can; and bleſſed be the 'day this prediction is fulfilled, to 'ſucceeding generations! I have lived 'long enough, to have ſeen this.' Then the reſt of the ragans, one by one, followed his example. And thus, with prodigious acclamations, both the ragans and people ended the great af-fair of religion.

I now more and more believed the truth of the prediction; and told them I ſhould have occaſion for ſeven hun-dred men before I ſet out againſt the rebels;

rebels; and desired that they might be commanded by Nasgig. This was readily granted. I then told them, as I purposed to act nothing without their concurrence, I desired the colambs would remain in the city till I set out, that they might be readily called together.

I then desired I might be quite private from company till I departed.

I took Nasgig home with me; and, when we came there, 'My dear friend,' says he, 'what have you done to day! 'You have crushed a power hitherto 'immoveable; and I shall never more 'think any thing too difficult for you 'to attempt.'—'Nasgig,' says I, 'I 'am glad it is over. And now,' says I, 'you must enter on a new employ: 'but, first, can you provide me fifty 'honest, faithful glumms, for a parti-'cular expedition? they must be sen-'sible, close, and temporizing.' He said he would, and come to me again.

I then desired a private audience of the king; who, on seeing me, began upon my success at the moucheratt. I told his majesty, if I alone, and a stranger, could gain such influence there, I might have had much more if he had joined me, especially as he had told me he gave no credit to the Image; and that I expected he would have appeared on my side. 'Ah, 'Peter!' says he, 'monarchs neither 'see, hear, nor perceive, with their own 'eyes, ears, or understandings. I would 'willingly have done it; but Barbarsa 'prevented me, by assuring me it would 'be my ruin; and as he is my bosom 'friend, what reproaches must I have 'suffered if it had gone amiss! Nay, 'I will tell you, that he and Nicor 'are of opinion that your coming 'hither, which is looked upon by us 'all as such a blessing, will one day 'undo me: "For," say they, "though "he may perform what you expect "from him, it is not to be supposed "he should suffer it to redound to "you. No," say they, "if he can "do these great things, he can soon "set you aside." Thus, though I 'have no doubt of you, is my spirit 'wasting within me through perpetual 'fears and jealousies; and I cannot 'get these men, who, knowing all my 'secrets, are feared by me, into my own 'way of thinking.'

'Mighty Sir,' says I, 'don't think 'I came hither to possess, but redress 'a kingdom. I lived far more to my 'ease in my grotto, than I can in this 'palace; but I now desire you,' drawing my sword and putting it into his hand, 'to pierce this heart's blood, 'and make yourself easy in my death, 'rather than, suffering me to survive, 'live in distrust of me. No, great 'king,' says I, 'it is not I that would 'injure you; but, though I have been 'so short a time in your dominions, I 'find there are those who would, and 'will too, unless you exert the mo-'narch, and shake off those harpies, 'which lying always at your ear, are 'ever buzzing disquiet and mischief 'to you.'—'Peter,' says he, 'what 'do you mean? sure I have no more 'traitors in my state!'—'Your majesty 'has,' says I. 'How can you prove 'it?' says he. 'But pray inform me 'who they are?'—'I came not hither, 'great king,' says I, 'to turn informer, 'but reformer; and so far as that is 'necessary in order to this, I will give 'you satisfaction. I only desire you 'will wholly guide yourself by my di-'rection for three days, and you shall 'be able to help yourself to all the in-'formation you can require, without 'my telling you. In the mean time, 'appear no more thoughtful than 'usual, or in any other way alter your 'accustomed habits.'

Nasgig having sent me the fifty men, I asked them if they were to be trusted, and if they could carefully and artfully execute a commission I had to charge them with. They assuring me they would, I told them I would let them into my design, which would be the best instructions I could give them, and let the management alone to them.

My confidence in them made them twice as diligent as all the particular directions in the world would have done; so I only told them I had a mind the revolted towns, and also the enemy's army, should know that the person so long ago predicted of was now at Brandleguarp, and had, as the first step towards reducing them, and killing the traitor Harlokin, already altered their religion to the old ragan's plan; and that they had nothing now to expect but destruction to themselves

as ſoon as I appeared againſt them with my unknown fire and ſmoke, which I always had with me; and that the thing was looked upon to be as good as done already at Brandleguarp; and then to ſlip away again unperceived. They all promiſed me exact performance, and went off.

Naſgig then coming in, I told him he was now under my command, and muſt take ſix hundred glumms with him to Graundevolet; tell Youwarkee to ſhew him my ſhip, and then he muſt bring me the things I had deſcribed to her by the name of cannon; he muſt bring them by ropes, as I was brought; and bring powder, which ſhe would direct him to, and about fifty heavy balls which lay in the room with the powder. I told him if he thought he ſhould not have men enough, he muſt take more; and muſt be as expeditious as was conſiſtent with ſafety. I deſired him to tell Youwarkee I hoped in a ſhort time to ſend for her, and all the family, over to me. 'And now, 'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'my orders are 'finiſhed: but,' ſays I, 'the king! I 'muſt aſſiſt that good man. I there-'fore want to know the particular 'times Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe 'uſually meet.'—'That,' ſays he, 'is every night when ſhe is not with 'the king; for he is exceſſive fond of 'her, and ſeldom lies without her; 'but whenever he does, Barbarſa is 'admitted to her.'—'And how can I 'know,' ſays I, 'when ſhe will or 'will not lie with the king?'—'When 'ſhe is to lie with him,' ſays he, 'the 'king never ſups without her.'—'Now,' ſays I, 'you muſt ſhew me 'your lodging, that I may find it in 'your abſence; and give orders to the 'guard to let me, and whoever comes 'with me, enter at any time.' He then took me to his chamber; but I paſſed through ſo many rooms, galleries, and paſſages, that I was ſure I ſhould never find it again, ſo I aſked him if Maleck knew the way; and he aſſuring me he did, I took my leave of him, and he ſet out for Graundevolet.

CHAP. XIII.

THE KING HEARS BARBARSA AND YACCOMBOURSE DISCOURSE ON THE PLOT — THEY ARE IMPEACHED BY PETER AT A MOUCHERATT — CONDEMNED AND EXECUTED — NICOR SUBMITS, AND IS RELEASED.

I Had now ſeveral important irons in the fire, and all to be ſtruck whilſt hot; there was the ſecuring religion, ſowing ſedition amongſt the enemy, tripping up the heels of two miniſters, and a ſhe-favourite, and tranſporting artillery in the air ſome hundred leagues; either of which failing might have been of exceeding bad conſequence: but as the affair of the miniſters now lay next at hand, I entered upon that in the following manner.

The king coming to me the next day, as by appointment; and having aſſured me he had hinted nothing to any one, no, not to Barbarſa or Yaccombourſe, told me that Barbarſa had given orders for ſtopping Naſgig and his men; and had perſuaded him not to be in ſuch haſte in ſuffering me to do as I pleaſed, but to ſhew his authority, and keep me under. Says I, 'Your ma-'jeſty's ſafety is ſo near my heart, 'that even want of confidence in me 'ſhall not make me decline my en-'deavours to ſerve you. But have 'you ſuffered him to ſtop Naſgig?'—'No,' ſays he, 'Naſgig was gone 'ſome time before he ſent.'—'O Sir!' ſays I, 'you do not half know the 'worth of that man! but you ſhall 'hereafter, and will reward him ac-'cordingly. But now, Sir,' ſays I, 'to what we meet upon; if you will, 'as I told you, but comply with me 'for three days, without aſking queſ-'tions, I will ſhew you the greateſt 'traitors in your dominions, and put 'them into your power too.' He promiſed me again he would. 'Then, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'you muſt not ſend to 'Yaccombourſe to ſup with you to-'night.'—'Nor lie with me?'—'No,' ſays I. 'Pray, what hurt can ariſe to 'my affairs from her?' ſays he. 'Sir,' ſays I, 'you promiſed me to aſk no 'queſtions.'—'Agreed, agreed!' ſays he. 'Then,' ſays I, 'pleaſe to meet 'me at Naſgig's lodgings without 'being perceived, if you can; at leaſt 'without notice taken.'—'Good,' ſays he. 'And when you are there, ſee or 'hear what you will, you muſt not ſay

'a word

'a word till you are retired again.' All which the king engaging to perform, we parted till evening.

I called Maleck, and aſked if he knew the way to Naſgig's lodging. He told me, very well: and, the time being come, he conducted me thither; where I had not waited long before the king came, moſt of the court being in bed. I deſired the king to ſtay in the outer room till I went into the bed-chamber two or three times, and I thought we muſt have put it off till another night: but liſtening once again, I found they were come; ſo I called the king, and led him to the place; intreating him, whatever he heard, to keep his patience, or he would ruin all. We firſt heard much amorous diſcourſe between Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe, and then the enſuing dialogue.

YAC. 'My deareſt Barbarſa, what 'was all that uproar at the moucheratt 'the other day?'

BAR. 'Nothing, my love, but that 'mad fellow Peter, who ſets up for a 'conjuror, and wants us all to dance 'to his pipe.'

YAC. 'I heard he overcame the 'ragans at an argument about the 'Image.'

BAR. 'Why, I don't know how 'that was; but it was the doating old 'ragan did their buſineſs; and truly 'the king's fingers itched to be on 'Peter's ſide, but I gave him a judi-'cious nod, and you know he durſt 'not diſpleaſe ſo dear a friend as I 'am; ha, ha, ha! Am not I a ſad 'fellow, my love, to talk ſo of my 'king?'

YAC. 'He that wants but one ſtep 'to a throne, is almoſt a king's fel-'low.'

BAR. 'And that but a ſhort one 'too, my dear Yaccee; but I muſt get 'rid of that Naſgig, though I think I 'have almoſt ſpoiled him with the king, 'too. I don't love your thinking 'raſcals; that fellow thinks more than 'I do, Yaccee.'

YAC. 'He'll never think to ſo good 'purpoſe, I believe: but how goes 'couſin Harlokin on? I find Gauin-'grunt is gone over.'

BAR. 'And ſo ſhall Bazin, Iſtell, 'Pezele, and Ginkatt too, my dear; 'for I am at work there—And then 'good night, my poor King Georigetti; 'thou ſhalt be adviſed to fly, and I'll 'keep the throne warm for thee.—I 'don't ſee but King Barbarſa, and 'Queen Yaccombourſe, ſound much 'better than Georigetti. Well, my 'dear, whenever we come to ſove-'reignty, which now cannot be long, 'if Nicor has but played his part well, 'for I have not had an account of his 'ſucceſs yet; I ſay, when we come 'into power, never let us be above 'minding our own affairs, or ſuffer 'ourſelves to be led by the noſe, as 'this poor inſignificant king does. 'For, in ſhort, he may as well be a 'king of matts, as a king of fleſh, if 'he will not uſe his faculties, but 'ſuffer me to make a fool of him thus; 'and I ſhould be a fool indeed to neg-'lect it, when he thinks it the great-'eſt piece of ſervice I can do him.'

YAC. 'Come, come, my dear! let 'us enjoy ourſelves like king and 'queen till we come to the dignity.'

Finding a pauſe, the king, who had admirably kept his temper, even beyond imagination, ſtole into the outer room. 'Peter,' ſays he, 'I thank 'you, you have ſhewn me myſelf. 'What fools are we kings! In en-'deavouring to make others happy, 'how miſerable do we make ourſelves! 'How eaſily are we deceived by the 'deſigning flattery of thoſe below us! '—Ungrateful villain!—Degenerate 'ſtrumpet—I hate you both.—Peter,' ſays he, 'give me your ſword; I'll de-'ſtroy them both immediately.'

'Hold, Sir,' ſays I, 'your majeſty 'has heard ſufficient to found a true 'judgment upon; but kings ſhould 'not be executioners, or act by paſſion 'and revenge; but as you would 'puniſh that in others, ſo carefully 'avoid it yourſelf. You, who are in 'ſo exalted a ſtation, as always to have 'it in your power to puniſh a known 'crime in individuals, have not that 'neceſſity to prompt you to a violent 'act, that private perſons have, to 'whom it may be difficult to obtain 'juſtice. Therefore, my advice is, that 'you ſummon the colambs to-mor-'row; when Barbarſa and Nicor can-'not fail to attend; and I would alſo 'deſire Yaccombourſe to be there, you 'having great propoſals to make to 'the ſtates which you ſhall want her 'to hear. I will in the mean time 'prepare the ſervants under Quilly,

'and order Maleck with another poſſe
'to attend, as by your command, to
'execute your orders given by me;
'and I myſelf will impeach thoſe bad
'perſons in publick; and Nicor, if he
'will not ingenuouſly confeſs what
'commiſſion he was charged with from
'Barbarſa, ſhall be put to the torture
'I direct, till he diſcovers it.'

The king was very well pleaſed with this method; ſo I ordered Quilly, as from the king, to bring all my ſervants to the aſſembly, appointing him his place; and Maleck to ſelect me fifty ſtout perſons, and to wait to execute my orders on a ſignal given. So ſoon as the aſſembly met, I told them, ſince I had concerned myſelf in their affairs, I had made it my buſineſs to ſearch into the cauſe of their calamities; and finding ſome of the traitors were now approached not only near to, but even into, the capital city, his majeſty had therefore ordered me to aſk their advice, what puniſhment was adequate, in their judgments, to the crime of conſpiring againſt him and the ſtate, and holding treaſonable correſpondence with his enemies, under the ſhew of his greateſt friends.

I ſtopped, and looked at Barbarſa; he turned as pale as aſhes, and was riſing to ſpeak; when the ſenior colamb declared, if any ſuch thing could be made appear, the common puniſhment of Craſhdoorpt was too trivial; but they deſerved to be dropt alive either to hoximo or Mount Alkoe. The ſeveral colambs all declaring the ſame to be their judgment, and even thoſe to be too mild for their deſerts, I then ſtepped up to Barbarſa, who ſat at the king's left-hand, as did Yaccombourſe at his right, and telling them and Nicor they were all priſoners of ſtate, I delivered Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe in cuſtody to Quilly and his men, and Nicor to Maleck and his men; ordering them into ſeparate apartments, with ſtrict commands that neither ſhould ſpeak to the other upon pain of the laſt pronounced judgment.

Barbarſa would have ſpoke, and called out to the king, begging him not to deſert ſo faithful a ſervant for the inſinuations of ſo vile a man as Peter; but the king only told him the vile man could be made appear preſently, and he hoped he would meet his deſerts.

I then ſtood up, and told the aſſembly the whole of what we heard, how it firſt came to be diſcovered, and that the king himſelf had been an ear-witneſs of it; which the king confirming, the whole aſſembly rang with confuſion; and revenge and indignation appeared in every face.

I then propoſed, as we yet knew not what that ſecret commiſſion was which Nicor was charged with, having enough againſt the reſt, that Nicor might be brought forth; and, upon refuſal to anſwer, be put to the torture.

Nicor appearing before the aſſembly, I told him I was commanded by the king to aſk him what commiſſion he was charged with by Barbarſa, and to whom. I told him the ſafeſt way for his life, his honour, and his country, was to make a true confeſſion at firſt, or I had authority to put him to the torture: for, as for ſlitting and baniſhment, as they were too ſlight to atone for this offence, he might reſt ſatisfied his would be of another ſort, if he heſitated at delivering the thing in it's full truth.

My prelude terrifying him, he openly confeſſed that his laſt commiſſion was to ſeveral towns, as from the king, and with his gripſack, to order their ſubmiſſion to Harlokin, the king not being in any condition to relieve them; and that as ſoon as they had ſubmitted, Harlokin would be let into this city, which could not ſtand againſt him.

He alſo declared, that it had been agreed, and the boundaries ſettled, how far Barbarſa, who was to be declared king, and marry Yaccombourſe, ſhould govern, and how far Harlokin; that Barbarſa was to be ſtiled King of the Eaſt, and Harlokin King of the Weſt; and that either of them, on the other's dying childleſs, was to inherit the whole monarchy.

The king declaring this to be all true, and that by my procurement he heard it all mentioned but the laſt night between Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe, as they were ſolacing themſelves in bed, the whole aſſembly ordered them to be brought out, carried with cords about their necks, and precipitated into Mount Alkoe.

I then begged they might be ſuffered to ſpeak for themſelves before execution; and, acquainting them ſeverally with the evidence, I firſt aſked

Barbarſa

Barbarſa what he had to ſay againſt his ſentence. He declared, his ambition, and the eaſineſs of his maſter's temper, had inſtigated him to attempt what had been charged upon him; having, as he thought, a fair opportunity of ſo doing. I then aſked Yaccombourſe the ſame queſtion; ſhe anſwered me, her ambition had been her ſole governor from a child, and I had done my worſt in preventing the progreſs of that; and whatever elſe I could do was not worth her notice: 'But to 'have reigned,' ſays ſhe, with ſome emotion, 'was worth the lives of 'millions, and over-balanced every 'thing!'

I pleaded hard for Nicor, as I perceived him to be only the favourite's favourite, and not in the ſcrape for his own views, more than what he might merit from his new maſter; and as he had declared the truth, and I believed I might make farther uſe of him, I obtained that he might be only committed to me, and that I might have liberty of pardoning or ſlitting as I ſaw fit: and, as I expected, he afterwards proved very uſeful to me and my deſigns, and I pardoned him.

Before the aſſembly roſe, a party of the natives of Mount Alkoe were ordered to convey Yaccombourſe and Barbarſa to the mountain, ſlip their graundees, and drop them there: and thus ended the lives of theſe two aſpiring perſons.

When I came home, I called Nicor before me—'You know,' ſays I, 'Ni-'cor, you are obliged to me for this 'moment of your life; but I don't 'remind you of it for any return I 'want to myſelf; but as you are ſenſi-'ble my endeavours are to ſerve this 'ſtate, I offer you life and freedom 'upon condition you employ your ut-'moſt diligence to repair your paſt 'conduct, by a free declaration of 'every thing in your power that may 'be for the benefit of the kingdom, 'as you know the ſprings by which 'all theſe bad movements have been 'ſet at work: and I deſire your opinion 'how beſt to counteract the ſchemes 'formed, and redreſs the evils.'

Nicor being fully convinced of his error, and having loſt his patron, was very ſubmiſſive; and declared he believed none of the provinces would have gone over to Harlokin, unleſs they had thought it was the king's order Barbarſa had acted by, which, by hearing his gripſack, they made no doubt of. He adviſed to ſend expreſſes with the king's gripſack to ſuch places as had lately ſubmitted, and to ſuch as were about it, to put a ſtop to them. I told him I had done that; 'But not 'by the gripſack,' ſays he; 'and un-'leſs they ſee and hear that, they will 'give no credit to the meſſage.' He then gave me ſome particular hints in other affairs of no mean conſequence: and ſeeing him truly under concern, and, to my thinking, ſincere in what he ſaid, I told him I was an abſolute enemy to confinement, and if any perſon of repute would engage he ſhould be forthcoming upon all occaſions, that I might have recourſe to him, I would let him have his liberty.

Poor Nicor, as it commonly happens to great men in diſgrace, finding himſelf abandoned by all his friends, after trying every body, dropping ſome tears, told me next morning he was highly ſenſible of what a dye his offences had been, for that not one amongſt all his former friends would even look upon him in his preſent circumſtances, wherefore he muſt ſubmit to fate.

Nicor having borne a good character before ſeduced by Barbarſa, and knowing that an obliged enemy often becomes the ſincereſt friend, I preſſed him again to try his friends. He told me every body was ſhy of engaging in ſuch an affair; and that he had rather ſuffer himſelf, than meanly to intreat any one into an unwilling compliance. 'Come, Nicor,' ſays I, 'will you be 'your own ſecurity to me? May I take 'your own word?' He ſaid he could not expect that; for as the terror of ſlitting lay over him, and in my hands too, he could not anſwer but he might deceive me in caſe he ſhould conceive I had a deſign againſt him; which I myſelf, too, might have from a miſtaken motive.

'Why, then, Nicor,' ſays I, 'you 'are free; now uſe your own diſcre-'tion. I think you will never cauſe 'my judgment to be impeached for 'what I have done; but if you do, 'I can't condemn myſelf for it, and 'hope I ſhall have no reaſon to re-'pent it.'

Nicor fell at my feet, embraced them, and was ſo overcome with my generoſity

ſity to him, that I could with difficulty prevail on him to riſe again; ſaying he was now, more than ever, aſhamed to ſee my face. I told him I had not done with him, but would uſe him henceforth as my friend; and ordered him to call upon me daily, for I might have ſeveral occaſions for him; and, truly, next to Naſgig, he proved the uſefulleſt man in the kingdom.

CHAP. XIV.

NASGIG RETURNS WITH THE CANNON—PETER INFORMS HIM OF THE EXECUTION—APPOINTS HIM A GUARD—SETTLES THE ORDER OF HIS MARCH AGAINST HARLOKIN—COMBAT BETWEEN NASGIG AND THE REBEL-GENERAL—THE BATTLE—PETER RETURNING WITH HARLOKIN'S HEAD, IS MET BY A SWEECOAN—A PUBLICK FESTIVAL—SLAVERY ABOLISHED.

THE tenth day Naſgig arrived, whilſt I happened to be in the king's garden; and hearing the trumpet coming before, I called out to him, to give Naſgig notice where I was, and to deſire him to alight there.

After ceremonies paſt, and I had enquired after my wife and children, and his anſwers had informed me of their healths—'Well,' ſays Naſgig, 'my friend, am I to live or die?'—'Explain yourſelf,' ſays I. 'Nay, I 'only mean,' ſays he, 'have you diſ-'covered me to the king?'—'Pardon 'me,' ſays I, 'dear Naſgig, I muſt 'own the truth; I have.'—'Then,' ſays he, 'I ſuppoſe his majeſty has no 'more commands for me?'—'No,' ſays I, 'it is not ſo bad as that nei-'ther.'—'But, pray,' ſays he, 'what 'ſays Barbarſa to it?'—'O nothing 'at all!' ſays I; 'quite quiet.'—'Nor 'Yaccombourſe? Did you diſcover her 'baſeneſs to the king?'—'Yes,' ſays I; 'and the king behaved like a king 'upon the occaſion.'—'And where 'are they now?' ſays he. 'Only in 'Mount Alkoe,' ſays I. 'Mount Al-'koe!' replies he, 'what do you mean 'by that? How can they be in Mount 'Alkoe? Did they go of their own 'accords?'—'They fled off, I ſup-'poſe, with ropes about their necks,' ſays I, 'as your criminals go to Craſh-'doorpt.'—'Are they ſlit, too?' ſays he. 'No,' ſays I, 'but ſlipt, I'll 'aſſure you. Come, my good friend, 'I'll let you into the hiſtory of it.' And then I told all that had happened, and the king's ſatisfaction at the judgment of the moucheratt. 'And now,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, you may call your-'ſelf the favourite, I promiſe you; 'for his majeſty enjoys himſelf but 'to greet you on your return: but 'have a care of power; moſt grow 'giddy with it, and the next thing to 'that is a fall.'—'Pray,' ſays he, 'what is become of Nicor? Is he un-'der the ſame condemnation?'—'No,' ſays I, 'Nicor is now by my means 'abſolutely free; and no two greater 'than he and I.' I told him then my proceedings with him: he was glad of it; for, he ſaid, Nicor he believed was honeſt at bottom.

By this time up came the cannon; and, truly, had my countrymen but the graundee to convey their cannon at ſo eaſy an expence from place to place, the whole world would not ſtand before us. They brought me five cannon, and three ſwivel guns, and a larger quantity of ammunition than I had ſpoken for.

I introduced Naſgig to the king upon his return, as the perſon to whoſe conduct the ſafe arrival of my cannon was owing. His majeſty embracing him, told him the ſervice he had done him was ſo great in the affair of Barbarſa, and his management of it ſo prudent, he ſhould from thenceforth take him into his peculiar confidence and eſteem.

Naſgig thanked his majeſty for his acceptance of that act of his duty; and deſired to know when he pleaſed the operations for the campaign ſhould begin. 'Aſk my father,' ſays the king: 'do you conduct the war, and 'let him conduct you.'

Then Naſgig deſired to know what number of troops would be requiſite. I aſked him what number the enemy had: he ſaid, about thirty thouſand. 'Then,' ſays I, 'take you ſix only, 'beſides the bearers of me and the 'artillery; and pick me out fifty of 'the beſt men you have, as a guard for 'my perſon, and ſend them to me.'

I ſhewed theſe men my cutlaſſes and piſtols, and ſhewed them the uſe and management

management of them; 'And,' ſays I, 'as our enemies fight with pikes, keep 'you at a diſtance firſt; and when you 'would aſſault, toſs by the pike with 'your hand, and cloſing in, have at 'the graundee; and this edge,' (ſhewing them the ſharpneſs of it) 'will 'ſtrip it down from ſhoulder to heel; 'you need ſtrike but once for it; but 'be ſure come near enough: or,' ſays I, 'if you find it difficult to turn aſide 'the pike, give it one ſmart ſtroke 'with this, it will cut it in two, and 'then the point being gone, it will be 'uſeleſs.

'Theſe inſtructions,' ſays I, 'if 'rightly obſerved, will make us con-'querors.'

The next thing was to ſettle the order of my march, which I did in the following manner; and, taking leave of the king, I ſet out.

Firſt, Ten companies of one hundred men, including officers, with each a gripſack, in ten double lines, fifty abreaſt.

Secondly, Four hundred bearers of the cannon, with two hundred to the right, the like to the left, as relays.

Thirdly, Two hundred men with the ammunition, ſtores, hatchets, and other implements.

Fourthly, Fifty body-guards, in two lines.

Fifthly, Myſelf, borne by eight; with twelve on the right, and as many on the left, for relays.

Sixthly, Two thouſand men in columns, on each ſide the cannon and me; fifty in a line, double lines.

Seventhly, One thouſand men in the rear, fifty in a line, double lines.

I conſulted with Naſgig, how Harlokin's army lay, that I might avoid the revolted towns, rather chuſing to take them in my return; for my deſign was to encounter Harlokin firſt; and I did not doubt if I conquered him, but the towns would ſurrender of courſe.

When we arrived within a ſmall flight of his army, I cauſed a halt at a proper place for my cannon; and having pitched them, which I did by ſeveral flat ſtones, one on another to a proper elevation; I loaded them, and alſo my ſmall arms, conſiſting of ſix muſkets, and three brace of piſtols; and placing my army, two thouſand juſt behind me, two thouſand to my right, and the ſame number to my left; I gave a ſtrict command for none of them to ſtir forwards without orders; which Naſgig, who ſtood juſt behind me, was to give. I then ſent a defiance to Harlokin by a gripſack; who ſent me word, he fought for a kingdom, and would accept it; and, as I heard afterwards, he was glad I did; for ſince the intelligence I had ſcattered in his army, they had in great numbers deſerted him, and he was afraid it would have proved general. I then putting the end of a match into a piſtol-pan with a little powder, by flaſhing, lighted it; and this I put under my chair, for I ſat in that, with my muſkets three on each ſide, a piſtol in my right-hand, and five more in my girdle. In this manner I waited Harlokin's coming, and in about an hour we ſaw the van of his army, conſiſting of about five thouſand men, who flew in five layers, one over another. I had not loaded my cannon with ball, but ſmall ſized ſtones, about ſixty in each; and ſeeing the length of their line, I ſpread my cannons mouths ſomewhat wider than their breeches, and then taking my obſervation by a bright ſtar, for there was a clear dawn all round the horizon, I obſerved, as I retired to my chair, how that ſtar anſwered to the elevation of my cannon; and when the foremoſt ranks, who, not ſeeing my men ſtir, were approaching almoſt over me to to fall on them, and had come to my pitch, I fired two pieces of my ordnance at once, and ſo mauled them, that there dropped about ninety upon the firſt diſcharge, together with their commander; the reſt, being in flight, and ſo cloſe together, not being able to turn faſt enough to fly, being ſtopped by thoſe behind them, not only hindered thoſe behind from turning about, but clogged up their own paſſage. Seeing them in ſuch a prodigious cluſter, I ſo ſucceſsfully fired two more pieces, that I brought down double the number of the firſt ſhot; and then giving the word to fall on, my cutlaſs-guard, and the pikemen, did prodigious execution. But fearing the main body ſhould advance before we had got in order again, I commanded them to fall back to their former ſtations, and to let the remainder of the enemy go off.

This did me more good in the event, than if I had killed twice as many;

for

for they not only never returned themſelves, but flying ſome to the right, ſome to the left, and paſſing by the two wings of their own army, conſiſting of ſix thouſand men each, they ſeverally reported, that they were all that was left of the whole van of the army; and that the prediction would certainly be fulfilled, for that their companions had died by fire and ſmoke. This report ſtruck ſuch terror into each wing, that every one ſhifted for himſelf, and never appeared more.

The main battle conſiſting of about ten thouſand men, knowing nothing of what had happened to the wings, (for Harlokin had ordered the wings to take a great compaſs round to incloſe us) hearing we were but a handful, advanced boldly; and as I had ordered my men not to mount too high, the enemy ſunk to their pitch. When they came nearer, I aſked Naſgig who led them, and if it was Harlokin. He told me no, his general, but that he was behind; and Naſgig, begging me to let him try his ſkill with the general, I conſented, they not being yet come to the pitch of my cannon. Naſgig immediately took the graundee, and advancing ſingly with one of my cutlaſſes in his hand, challenged the general in ſingle combat. He like a man of honour, accepting it, ordered a halt, and to it they went, each emulous of glory, and of taking all the advantage he could, ſo that they ſuddenly did not ſtrike or puſh; but ſometimes one, then the other, was uppermoſt, and whirling expeditiouſly round, met almoſt breaſt to breaſt; when the general, who had not a pike, but a pike-ſtaff, headed with a large ſtone, gave Naſgig ſuch a ſtroke on his head, that he reeled and ſunk conſiderably; and I began to be in pain for him, the general lowering after him. But Naſgig ſpringing forward beneath him, and riſing light as air behind the general, had gained his height again before the general could turn about to diſcern him; and then plunging forward, and receiving a ſtroke acroſs his left-arm, at the ſame time he gave the general ſuch a blow near the out-ſide of the ſhoulder, as ſlit the graundee almoſt down to his hip, and took away part of the fleſh of the left-arm; upon which the general fell fluttering down in vaſt pain, very near me; but not before Naſgig, in his fall, deſcending, had taken another ſevere cut at him.

Immediately upon this defeat, Naſgig again took his place behind me; our army ſhouting to the ſkies: but no ſooner had the general dropt, but on came Harlokin, with majeſty and terror mixt in his looks; and ſeeming to diſdain the air he rode on, waved his men to the attack with his hand. When he came near enough to hear me, I called him vile traitor, to oppoſe the army of his lawful ſovereign; telling him, if he would ſubmit, he ſhould be received to mercy. 'Baſe 'creeping inſect!' ſays Harlokin, 'if 'thou haſt aught to ſay to me worth 'hearing, meet me in the air? This 'hand ſhall ſhew thee ſoon who'll 'moſt want mercy: and though I 'ſcorn to ſtoop to thee myſelf, this 'meſſenger ſhall ſatisfy the world 'thou art an impoſtor, and ſend thee 'lifeleſs back to the fond king that 'ſent thee hither.' With that he hurled a javelin pointed with flint, ſharp as a needle at me; but I avoiding it, 'This, then,' ſays I, 'if words will not 'do, ſhall juſtify the truth of our pre-'diction.' And then levelling a muſket at him, I ſhot him through the very heart, that he fell dead within twenty paces of me; but perceiving another to take his room, notwithſtanding the confuſion my muſket made amongſt them, I ran to my match, and giving fire to two more pieces of ordnance at the ſame time, they fell ſo thick about me, that I had enough to do to eſcape being cruſhed to death by them; and the living remainder ſeparating, fled quite away, and put an end to the war. I waited in the field three days, to ſee if they would make head again; but they were ſo far from it, that before I could return, as I found afterwards, moſt of the revolting provinces had ſent their deputies, who themſelves carried the firſt news of the defeat, to beg to be received into mercy; all of whom were detained there, till my return with Harlokin's head.

At my return to Brandleguarp, I was met by the king, the colambs, and almoſt the whole body of the people; every man, woman, and child, with two ſweecoe lights in their hands; which unuſual light in the air, gave me great alarm, till I enquired of Naſgig what it meant; who told me it

muſt

Plate III. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 16, 1783.

muſt certainly be a ſweecoan, or he knew not what it was. I aſking again what he meant by that, he told me it was a particular method of rejoicing he had heard of, but never ſeen; wherein, if the king goes in triumph, all the people of Brandleguarp, from fifteen to ſixty, are obliged to attend him with ſweecoes. He ſaid, it was reported amongſt them, that in Begſurbeck's time there were two of them, but there had been none ſince.

When we met them, I perceived they had opened into two lines or ranks of a prodigious length; at the farther end of which was the king with innumerable lights about him; the whole looked like a prodigious avenue or viſto of lights, bounded at the farther end where the king was, with a pyramid of light. This had the moſt ſolemn and magnificent effect on the eye, that any thing of light could poſſibly have; but as we paſſed through the ranks, each of the ſpectators having two lights, one was given to each ſoldier of the whole army. And then to look backward, as well as forward, the beauty of the ſcene was inexpreſſible. We marched all the way amidſt the ſhouts of people, and the ſound of the gripſacks, going very ſlowly between the ranks; and at length arriving at the pyramid, where the king was, I heard abundance of ſweet voices, chaunting my actions in triumphal ſongs: but I could take little notice of theſe, or of my ſon with his flagellet amongſt them, for the extravagant appearance of the pyramid, which ſeemed to reach the very ſky. For, firſt, there was a long line of a full half mile, which hovered at even height with the two ſide ranks; in the centre of that, and over it, was the king ſingle; over him, another line, ſhorter than the firſt, and again over that, ſhorter and ſhorter lines; till, at a prodigious height, it ended in one ſingle light. Theſe all hovering, kept their ſtations; while the king darted a little ſpace forward to meet me, and congratulate my ſucceſs; then turning, and preceding me, the whole pyramid turned, and marched before us, ſinging all the way, to the city; the pyramid changing ſeveral times into divers forms, as into ſquares, half-moons, with the horns ſometimes erect, and again reverſed; and various other figures; and yet amongſt this infinite number of globes, there was not the leaſt glaring or offenſive light; but only what was agreeable to the people themſelves. As the rear of the army entered the lines, they cloſed upon it, and followed us into Brandleguarp. While we paſſed the city to the palace, the whole body of people kept hovering, till the king and myſelf were alighted; and then every one alighted where he beſt could. All the ſtreets and avenues to the palace were blocked up with people, crouding to receive the king's beneficence; for he had proclaimed a feaſt, and open houſe-keeping to the people for ſix days. The king, the colambs, ragans, and great officers of ſtate, with myſelf, had a magnificent entertainment prepared us in Begſurbeck's great room; and his majeſty, after ſupper, being very impatient to know how the battle went, I told him, the only valorous exploit was performed by my friend Naſgig, who opened the way to victory, by the ſlaughter of Harlokin's general. Naſgig then roſe, deſiring only that ſo much might be attributed to him, as fortune had accidentally thrown into his ſcale; for it might have been equally his fate, as the general's, to have fallen: 'But except that ſkirmiſh,' ſays he, 'and 'ſome flying cuts at the van, we have 'had no engagement at all, nor have 'we loſt a ſingle man; Peter only ſitting in his chair, and commanding victory: he ſpake aloud but thrice, 'and whiſpered once to them; but ſo 'powerfully, that having at the two 'firſt words laid above three hundred 'of the enemy at their lengths, and 'brought Harlokin to his feet, with a 'whiſper, at the third word he concluded the war. The whole time, 'from the firſt ſight of the enemy to 'their total defeat, took not up more 'ſpace than one might fairly ſpend in 'traverſing his majeſty's garden. In 'ſhort, Sir,' ſays Naſgig, 'your majeſty needs no other defence againſt 'publick or private enemies, as I can 'ſee, than Peter; and my profeſſion, 'whilſt he is with us, can be of little 'uſe to the ſtate.'

After theſe compliments from Naſgig, and ſeparate ones from the king, and the reſt, I told them, it was the higheſt felicity to me to be made an inſtrument by the great Collwar, in free-

ing ſo mighty a kingdom and conſiderable a people from the miſery of a tyrannical power. 'You live,' ſays I, 'ſo happily, under the mild government of Georigetti, that it is ſhocking but to think into what a diſtreſſed ſtate you muſt have fallen under the power of an uſurper, who claiming all as his own by way of conqueſt, would have reduced you to a miſerable ſervitude. But,' ſays I, 'there is, and I am ſorry to ſee it, ſtill amongſt you, an evil that you great ones feel not, and yet it cries for redreſs. Are we not all, from the king to the meaneſt wretch amongſt us, formed with the ſame members? Do we not all breathe the ſame air? inhabit the ſame earth? Are we not all ſubject to the ſame diſorders? and do we not all feel pain and oppreſſion alike? Have we not all the ſame ſenſes, the ſame faculties? and, in ſhort, are we not all equally creatures of, and ſervants to, the ſame maſter, the great Collwar? Would not the king have been a ſlave, but for the accident of being begotten by one who was a king? and would not the pooreſt creature amongſt us have been the king had he been ſo begotten? Did you great men, by any ſuperior merit before your births, procure a title to the high ſtations in which you are placed? No, you did not. Therefore give me leave to tell you what I would have done. As every man has equal right to the protection of Collwar, why, when you have no enemy to diſtreſs you, will you diſtreſs one another? Conſider, you great ones, and act upon this diſintereſted principle; do to another, what you, in his place, would have him do to you: diſmiſs your ſlaves, let all men be what Collwar made them, free. But if this unequal diſtinction amongſt you, of man and man, is ſtill retained, though you are at preſent free from the late diſaſter, it ſhall be ſucceeded with more, and heavier. And now, that you may know I would not have every man a lord, nor every one a beggar, remember, I would only have every ſerving-man at liberty to chuſe his own maſter, and every maſter his own man: for he that has property and benefits to beſtow, will never want dependants, for the ſake of thoſe benefits, to ſerve him, as he that has them not muſt ſerve for the ſake of obtaining them. But then let it be done with free-will; he that then ſerves you will have an intereſt in it, and do it, for his own ſake, with a willing mind; and you, who are ſerved, will be tenderer and kinder to a good ſervant, as knowing by a contrary uſage you ſhall loſe him. I deſire this may now be declared to be ſo, or your reaſons, if any there are, againſt it.'

One of the ragans ſaid, he thought I ſpoke what was very juſt, and would be highly acceptable to Collwar.

Then two of the colambs roſe to ſpeak together, and after a ſhort compliment who ſhould begin, they both declared they only roſe to teſtify their conſents.

The king referring it to me, and the colambs conſenting, I ordered freedom to be proclaimed through the city; ſo that every one appeared at their uſual duties, to ſerve their own maſters for a month, and then to be at liberty to come to freſh agreement with them, or who elſe they pleaſed.

'This, Sir,' ſays I, to the king, 'will now be a day of joy indeed, to thoſe poor hearts who would have been in no fear of loſing before, let who would have reigned; for can any man believe a ſlave cares who is uppermoſt? he is but a ſlave ſtill. But now,' ſays I, 'thoſe who were ſo before, may by induſtry gain property; and then their own intereſt engages them to defend the ſtate.

'There is but one thing more I will trouble you with now—and that,' ſays I to the ragans, 'is, that we all meet at the mouch to-morrow, to render Collwar thanks for the late, and implore future, favour.' And this paſſed without any contradiction.

When we met, the poor ragans were at a great loſs for want of their Image, not knowing what to do or ſay: for their practice had been to proſtrate themſelves on the ground, making ſeveral odd geſtures; but whether they prayed, or only ſeemed to do ſo, no one knew.

While the people were gathering, I called to a ragan, ſeeing him out of character. 'Suppoſe,' ſaid I, '(for I ſee you want your image) you and your

'your brethren had received a favour 'of the king, and you was deputed 'by them to thank him, you would 'ſcarce be at a loſs to expreſs your 'gratitude to him, and tell him how 'highly you all eſteemed his benefits, 'hoping you ſhould retain a juſt ſenſe 'of them, and behave yourſelves as 'dutiful ſubjects for the future; and 'then deſire him to keep you ſtill in 'his protection. And this,' ſays I, 'as you believe in ſuch a Being as 'Collwar, who underſtands what you 'ſay, you may with equal courage do 'to him, keeping but your mind in-'tent upon him, as if you ſaw him 'preſent.'—'Indeed,' ſays he, 'I be-'lieve you are right; we may ſo: but 'it is a new thing, and you muſt ex-'cuſe us if we do it not ſo well at 'firſt.'

I found I had a very apt ſcholar, for after he had began, he made a moſt extraordinary prayer in regular order, the people ſtanding very attentive. It was not long, but he juſtly obſerved the points I hinted to him.

When he had done, another and another went on, till we had heard ten of them, and in every one ſomething new, and very *a-propos*; and ſeveral of them afterwards confeſſed, they never had the like ſatisfaction in their lives, for they had new hearts and new thoughts, they ſaid.

We ſpent the ſixth-day feaſt in every gaiety imaginable, and eſpecially in dancing, of which they were very fond, in their way; but it was not ſo agreeable to me as my own country way, there being too much antick in it. New deputies daily arrived from the revolted towns; and ſeveral little republicks, not claimed by Georigetti before, begged to be taken under his protection; ſo that, in one week, the king ſaw himſelf not only releaſed from the dread of being driven from his throne, but courted by ſome, ſubmitted to by others, and almoſt at the ſummit of glory a ſovereign can attain to.

CHAP. XV.

A VISITATION OF THE REVOLTED PROVINCES PROPOSED BY PETER—HIS NEW NAME OF THE COUNTRY RECEIVED — RELIGION SETTLED IN THE WEST—SLAVERY ABOLISHED THERE—LASMEEL RETURNS WITH PETER—PETER TEACHES HIM LETTERS—THE KING SURPRIZED AT WRITTEN CORRESPONDENCE—PETER DESCRIBES THE MAKE OF A BEAST TO THE KING.

THE feſtival being over, the colambs begged leave to depart; but the king, who now did nothing without me, conſulted with me, if it was yet proper. I told him, as things had ſo long been in confuſion in the weſt, that though the provinces had made their ſubmiſſion, yet the neceſſity of their circumſtances, and the general terror, might have cauſed them only to diſſemble till their affairs were compoſed again; and that as it was more than probable ſome relations of the deceaſed Harlokin, or other popular perſon, might engage them again in another revolt, I thought it would not be improper to adviſe with his colambs about the eſtabliſhment of the preſent tranquillity, and not by too great a ſecurity give way to future commotions; and as all the colambs were then preſent, it might be proper to ſummon them once more.

When they were met, the king declared the more particular ſatisfaction he took in that meeting than he had heretofore done, when they had been put to it for means to ſecure their lives and properties: 'For now,' ſays he, 'our deliberations muſt turn upon ſe-'curing our new acquiſitions, and on 'ſettling thoſe provinces which, till 'now, have never fallen under my 'power. But,' ſays he, 'I ſhall re-'fer it to Peter to propoſe to you what 'at preſent ſeems moſt neceſſary for 'you to conſider of; and, that adjuſt-'ed, ſhall diſmiſs you.'

I told them, that as the too ſudden healing of wounds in the body natural, before the bottom was clean and uncorrupt, made them liable to break out again with greater malignity, ſo wounds in the body political, if ſkinned over only, without probing and cleanſing the ſource and ſpring from whence they aroſe, would rankle and fret within, till a proper opportunity, and then burſt forth again with redoubled violence. I would therefore propoſe a viſitation of the ſeveral provinces;

an enquiry into their conduct; an examination into the lives and principles of the colambs, the inferior officers, and magiſtrates; and either to retain the old, or appoint new, as there ſhould be occaſion. 'This viſitation I 'would have performed by his majeſty—and ſo many of you the honourable colambs,' ſays I, 'as he ſhall 'ſee fit ſhould attend him in royal 'ſtate, that his new ſubjects may ſee 'his majeſty, and hear his moſt gracious words; and being ſenſible of 'his good diſpoſition towards them, 'may be won by his equity and juſtice, to a zealous ſubmiſſion to his 'government, which nothing but the 'perception of their own ſenſes can 'eſtabliſh in the heart. This, I don't 'doubt, will anſwer the end I propoſe, and conſolidate the peace and 'happineſs of Norm— Normus— I 'muſt ſay Doorpt Swangeanti.'

Hearing me heſitate at the word Normnbdſgrſutt, and call it Doorpt Swangeanti, the whole aſſembly rang with 'Doorpt Swangeanti!' and, at laſt, came to a reſolution that the weſt being now united again to the eaſt, the whole dominions ſhould be called Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti, or the Great Flight Land.

They approved the viſitation, and all offered to go with the king, but inſiſted I ſhould be of the party; which agreeing to do, I choſe me out two of the moſt knowing ragans, to teach the new religion amongſt them; for in every project I had my view to advance religion.

Some were for having the deputies releaſed, and diſpatched with notice of the king's intentions; but I objecting, that they might diſreliſh their confinement, and poſſibly raiſe reports prejudicial to our proceedings, it was thought better to take them with us, and go ourſelves as ſoon as poſſible.

We ſet out with a prodigious retinue, firſt to the right, in order to ſweep round the whole country, and take all the towns in our way, and occaſionally enter the middle parts, as the towns lay commodious.

We were met by the magiſtrates and chief officers of each diſtrict, at ſome diſtance from each city, with ſtrings about their necks, and the craſhee inſtrument borne before them in much humility. His majeſty ſaid but little to them on the way, but ordered them to precede him to the city, and conduct him to the colamb's houſe; when he was commanded to ſurrender his employment to his majeſty, as did all the other officers who held poſts under him. Then an examination was taken of their lives, characters, and behaviour in their ſtations; and finding moſt of them had behaved well to the government they had lived under, (for their plea was, they had found things under an uſurpation, and being ſo, that government was natural to them, having ſingly no power to alter it;) upon their perfect ſubmiſſion to the king, and ſolemn engagement to advance and maintain his right, they received their commiſſions anew from his majeſty's own mouth. But where any one had been cruel or oppreſſive to the ſubjects, or committed any notorious crime, or breach of truſt, (for the meaneſt perſons had liberty to complain) he was rejected, and for the moſt part ſent to Craſhdoorpt, to prevent the ill effects of his diſgrace.

We having diſplaced but five colambs, and a few inferior officers, the moderation and juſtice of our proceedings gave the utmoſt ſatisfaction both to the magiſtrates and people.

Having obſerved at Brandleguarp abundance of the ſmall images my wife had ſpoken of, and thinking this a proper opportunity to ſhew my reſentment againſt them, I ordered ſeveral of the ragans of the weſt before me, and aſked what ſmall images they had amongſt them. One, who ſpoke for the reſt, told me, very few, he believed; for he had ſcarce had any brought to him to be bleſſed. 'Where,' ſays I, 'is 'your Great Image?' He told me, 'At 'Youk.'—'And have not the people 'here many ſmall ones?'—'Very 'few,' ſays he; 'for they have not 'been forced upon us long.'—'How 'forced upon you?' ſays I; 'don't 'the people worſhip them?'—'A 'ſmall number now do,' ſays he. 'Pray ſpeak out,' ſays I. 'When 'might you not worſhip them?'—'Never, that I know of,' ſays he, 'in our ſtate, till about ten years ago, 'when Harlokin obliged us to it.'—'What, did you not worſhip them 'before?' ſays I. 'No,' ſays he, 'never ſince it has been a ſeparate 'kingdom; for we would follow the

'old

'old ragan's advice of worſhipping 'Collwar, which they not admitting 'of, the ſtate was divided between us 'who would, and them who would 'not, come into the ragan's doctrine: 'and though Harlokin was a zealous 'image-worſhipper, yet all he could 'do, would not bring the people hear-'tily into it, for Collwar never want-'ed a great majority.' This pleaſed me prodigiouſly, being what was never hinted to me before; and I reſolved not to let my ſcheme be a loſer by it.

As we were to viſit Youk in about eight days, I ſummoned the ragans and people to meet at the mouch; there recounting the great things done by Collwar in all nations. 'This I 'could make appear,' ſays I, 'by 'many examples; but as you have 'one even at your own towns, I need 'go no farther.

'I muſt begin in ancient times, 'when, I preſume, you all worſhipped 'an idol; have you any tradition be-'fore this?' They ſaid, 'No.'— 'This Image,' ſays I, 'was worſhip-'ped in Begſurbeck's days, when an 'old ragan, whoſe mind Collwar had 'enlightened with the truth, would 'have withdrawn your reverence from 'the Image, to the original Collwar 'himſelf; you would not conſent; he 'threatens you, but promiſes ſucceſs 'to Begſurbeck, who did conſent; 'and he had it to an old age. Then 'thoſe who would alſo conſent, were 'ſo far encouraged as to be able to 'form an independent kingdom. 'Could nobody yet ſee the cauſe? was 'it not apparent Collwar was angry 'with the eaſt, that would not follow 'the old ragan, and cheriſhed the weſt, 'who would? But, to be ſhort, let us 'apply the preſent inſtance, and ſure 'it will convince us who is right, 'who wrong.

'So long as the weſt followed Coll-'war, they flouriſhed, and the eaſt de-'clined; but no ſooner had the weſt 'degenerated under the command of 'Harlokin, and the eaſt by my means 'had embraced Collwar, but the ta-'bles were turned: the eaſt is found 'weighty, and the weſt kicks the 'beam. Theſe things whoſo ſees not, 'is blind indeed: therefore let pub-'lication be made, for the deſtruction 'of all ſmall images; and let the 'harbourers of them, contrary to this 'order, be ſlit: and for myſelf, I will 'deſtroy this mother-monſter. Take 'you, holy ragans, care to deſtroy 'the brood.' And having ſaid this, I hacked the new idol to pieces.

I ordered proclamation for aboliſh-ing ſlavery, under the reſtrictions uſed at Brandleguarp: and thus having compoſed the weſt, and given a gene-ral ſatisfaction, we returned, almoſt the whole weſt accompanying us, till the eaſt received us; and never was ſo happy an union, or more preſent to teſtify it, ſince the creation, I believe.

I ordered ſeveral of the principal men's ſons to court, in order for em-ployments, and to furniſh out future colambs; and this I did, as knowing each country would rather approve of a member of their own body for their head, than a ſtranger; and, in my opi-nion, it is the moſt natural union. And then breeding them under the eye of the king eight or ten years, or more, they are, as it were, naturalized to him too, and in better capacity to ſerve both king and country.

As my head was conſtantly at work for the good of this people, I turned the moſt trifling incidents into ſome uſe or other; and made the narroweſt pro-ſpects extend to the vaſteſt diſtances. I ſhall here inſtance in one only. There was at Youk a private man's ſon, whom by mere accident I happened to aſk ſome ſlight queſtion of; and he giving me, with a profound reſpect and graceful aſſurance, a moſt pertinent anſwer; that, and the manner of it's delivery, gave me a pleaſure, which upon farther diſcourſe with him, was, contrary to cuſtom, very much in-creaſed; for I found in him an exten-ſive genius, and a deſire for my con-verſation. I deſired his father to put him under my care, which the old man, as I was then in ſo great repute, rea-dily agreed to; and his ſon deſiring no-thing more, I took him with me to Brandleguarp. I ſoon procured him a pretty poſt of but ſmall duty, for I had purpoſed other employment for him, but of ſufficient ſignificancy to procure him reſpect. I took great de-light in talking with him on different ſubjects, and obſerved by his queſtions upon them, which often puzzled me, or his anſwers to them, he had a moſt pregnant fancy and ſurprizing ſolidity, joined to a continual and unwearied

application. I frequently mentioning book, writing, and letters to him, and telling him what great things might be attained that way; his inquiſitive temper and the ſchemes he had formed thereon, put me upon thinking of ſeveral things I ſhould never have hit upon without him. I conſidered all the ways I could contrive to teach him letters; and letting him into my deſign, he aſked me how I did to make a letter. I deſcribed a pen to him, and told him I put a black liquor into it, and as I drew that along upon a flat white thing we made uſe of, called paper, it would make marks which way ever I drew it, into what ſhape I pleaſed. 'Why then,' ſays he, 'any 'thing that will make a mark upon 'another thing as I pleaſe, will do.'— 'True,' ſays I, 'but what ſhall we 'get that will make a black mark?' We were entering farther into this debate; but the king ſending for me, I left him unſatisfied. I ſtayed late with the king that night, ſo did not ſee Laſmeel (for that was his name) till next night, wondering what was become of him. I aſked him then, where he had been all the day. He told me he had been looking for a pen and paper. I laughed, and aſked him if he had found them. 'Yes,' ſays he, 'or ſomething 'that will do as well:' ſo he opened one ſide of his graundee, and ſhewed me a large flat leaf, ſmooth and pulpy, very long and wide, and about a quarter of an inch thick, almoſt like an Indian fig-leaf. 'And what am I to 'do with this?' ſays I. 'To mark 'it,' ſays he, 'and ſee where you 'mark.'—'With what?' ſays I. 'With this,' ſays he, putting his hand again into his graundee, and taking out three or four ſtrong ſharp prickles. I looked at them both; and, clapping him on the head, 'Laſmeel,' ſays I, 'if you and I were in England, you 'ſhould be made a privy-counſellor.' —'What, won't it do, then?' ſays he. I told him we would try. 'I thought,' ſays he, 'it would have done very 'well; for I marked one all about, and 'though I could not ſee much at firſt, 'by that time I had made an end, that 'I did firſt was quite of a different 'colour from the leaf, and I could ſee 'it as plain as could be.' I told him, as he was of an age to comprehend what I meant, I would take another method with him than with a child; ſo I reaſoned from ſentences, backwards to words, and from them to ſyllables, and ſo on to letters. I then made one, the vowel A, told him it's ſound, and added a conſonant to it, and told him that part of the ſound of each diſtinct letter put together, as the two letters themſelves were, made another ſound, which I called a ſyllable; and that joining two or more of them together, made a word, by putting the ſame letters together as made the ſounds of thoſe ſyllables which made that word. Then ſetting him a copy of letters, which with very little difficulty were to be drawn upon the leaf, and telling him their ſounds, I left him to himſelf; and when he had done, though I named them but twice over, his memory was ſo ſtrong as to retain the ſounds, as he called them, of every one but F, L, and Q.

In two months time I made him maſter of any thing I wrote to him; and, as he delighted in it, he wrote a great deal himſelf; ſo that we kept an epiſtolary correſpondence, and he would ſet down all the common occurrences of the day, as what he heard and ſaw, with his remarks on divers things.

One day, as the king and I were walking in the gardens, and talking of the cuſtoms of my country, and about our wars, telling him how our ſoldiers fought on horſeback, the king could not conceive what I meant by an horſe. I told him my wife had ſaid there were neither beaſts nor fiſhes in her country; which I was very much ſurprized at, conſidering how we abounded with both; 'And therefore,' ſays I, 'to tell your majeſty that an 'horſe is a creature with four legs, 'you muſt naturally believe it to be 'ſomewhat like a man with four legs.' —'Why, truly,' ſays he, 'I believe it 'is; but has it the graundee?' I could not forbear ſmiling, even at his majeſty; and wanted to find ſome ſimilitude to compare it to, to carry the king's mind that way; for elſe he would ſooner, I thought, conceive it like a tree or a mountain, than what it really was; and as I was muſing, it came into my head, I had given Laſmeel a ſmall print of an horſe, which I found in one of the captain's pockets at Graundevolet, and believing it to be the ſtamp of a tobacco-paper, had

kept

kept it to pleaſe the children with; ſo I told the king I believed I could ſhew him the figure of an horſe. He told me it would much oblige him.

Seeing ſeveral of the guards waiting at the garden-arch, I looked, and at laſt found one of Laſmeel's leaves in the garden, and cutting one of them up with my knife, I took the point of that, and wrote to Laſmeel to ſend me by the bearer the picture of an horſe I gave him, that I might ſhew it the king. And calling one of the guards, 'Carry that to Laſmeel,' ſays I; 'he 'is, I believe, in my apartment, and 'bring me an anſwer directly.' Then falling into diſcourſe again with the king, and preſently turning at the end of the walk, I ſaw the ſame guard again. Says I, 'You cannot have 'brought me an anſwer already.'— 'You have not told me,' ſays he, 'what to bring you an anſwer to.'— 'Nor ſhall I,' ſays I; 'do as you are 'bid;' for I perceived then what the fellow ſtuck at. He walked off with the leaf, but very diſcontentedly. The king ſaid he wondered how I could act ſuch a contradiction. 'This, father,' ſays he, 'is not what I expected from 'you; to order a man to bring an an-'ſwer, without giving him a meſſage.' I deſired his patience only till the man came back. Preſently ſays the king, 'Here he comes!'—'Well,' ſays he, 'what anſwer?'—'Sir,' ſays the fellow, 'I have only had the walk for 'my pains; for he ſent it back again, 'and a little white thing with it.'— 'Ha, ha!' ſays the king, 'I thought 'ſo—come, father, own you have once 'been in the wrong; for I am ſure 'you intended to give him a meſſage, 'but having forgot it, would not ſub-'mit to be told of your miſtake by a 'guard.' I looked very grave, read-ing what Laſmeel had wrote; which was to tell me he had obeyed my orders by ſending the horſe; for he was juſt then drawing it out upon a leaf.

'Come, come,' ſays the king, 'give 'the man his meſſage, father, and let 'him go again.'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'there 'is no need of that, he has punctually 'obeyed me; and Laſmeel was then 'at the table in my oval chamber with 'a leaf, and this picture in my hand, 'before him.'

The king was ready to ſink when I ſaid ſo, and ſhewed the print. 'Truly, 'father,' ſays he, 'I have been to 'blame to queſtion you; for though 'theſe things are above my compre-'henſion, I am not to think any thing 'beyond your ſkill.' I made no reply to it; but ſhewing the king the picture, the guard ſneaked off, and glad he was, I believe, he could do ſo.

I went then upon the explanation of my horſe; and, anſwering fifty queſtions about him, at laſt he aſked what his inſide was; 'Exactly the ſame as your 'majeſty's,' ſaid I. 'And can he 'eat and breathe too?' ſays he. 'Juſt 'as you can,' ſays I. 'Well,' ſays he, 'I would never have believed there 'had been ſuch a creature; what 'would I give for one of them!' I ſet forth the divers other uſes we put them to, beſides the wars; and by the pic-ture, with ſome ſuppoſed alterations, I deſcribed a cow, a ſheep, and num-berleſs other quadrupedes; my account of which gave him great pleaſure.

CHAP. XVI.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—A RISING OF FORMER SLAVES ON THAT ACCOUNT—TAKES A VIEW OF THE CITY—DESCRIPTION OF IT, AND OF THE COUNTRY—HOT AND COLD SPRINGS.

HAVING now ſome leiſure time on my hands to conſider over my own affairs, I had thoughts of tranſ-porting my family, with all my effects, to Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti; but yet had no mind to relinquiſh all thought of my ſhip and cargo; for the greateſt part of this was ſtill remaining, I having had but the pickings through the gulph. I once had a mind to have gone myſelf; but conſidering the im-menſe diſtance over ſea, though I had once come ſafe, I thought I ought not to tempt Providence, where my preſence was not abſolutely neceſſary.

Naſgig, to whoſe care and conduct any enterprize might be truſted, offered his ſervice to go and execute any com-mands I ſhould give him. His only difficulty, he ſaid, was, that it would be impoſſible for him to remember the different names of many things, which he had no idea of to convey the know-ledge of them to his mind when he ſaw them; but barring that, he doubted not to give me ſatisfaction. I told him I would ſend an aſſiſtant with him,

who

who could remember whatever I once told him; and that I might not burden his memory with names only, Laſmeel ſhould carry his memory with him; and that he, Naſgig, ſhould only have the executive part.

Laſmeel, who had ſat waiting an opportunity to put in for a ſhare in the adventure, having a longing deſire to ſee the ſhip, told Naſgig he had a peculiar art of memory, ſo as to remember whatever he would as long as he pleaſed; and that if he carried that with him, they need fear no miſtakes.

The king having granted me as many of his guards as I pleaſed, for the carriage of my things, we appointed them to be ready on the fourth day; when Naſgig and Laſmeel ſet out with them.

I ordered Laſmeel, however, to be with me the next morning, that we might ſet down proper inſtructions; which I told him would be very long, and that he muſt bring a good number of leaves with him.

When Laſmeel entered my chamber next morning, he informed me that the whole city was in an uproar, eſpecially thoſe who had been freed by me. 'What!' ſays I, 'have they ſo ſoon 'forgot their ſubjection, to miſapply 'their liberty already? But ſtep and 'bring me word what's the matter, 'and order ſome of the ringleaders hi-'ther to me.'

Laſmeel upon enquiry found, that it had been given out I was going to leave the country, and they all ſaid, wherever I went they were determined to go and ſettle with me; for if I left them they ſhould be reduced to ſlavery again. However, he brought ſome of them to me; and upon my telling them I thanked them for their affection to me, but blamed them for ſhewing it in ſo tumultuous a manner, and that I was ſo far from intending to leave them, that I was ſending for my family and effects, in order to ſettle amongſt them, they rejoiced very much, and told me they would carry the good news to their companions, and diſperſe immediately: but I was now in more perplexity than before, for they having ſignified my deſigns to the reſt, they ruſhed into the gallery in ſuch numbers, that they forced up to my very chamber. I told them this was an unprecedented manner of uſing a perſon they pretended a kindneſs for; and told them, if they made uſe of ſuch riſings to expreſs their gratitude to me, it would be the direct means to oblige me to leave them: 'For,' ſays I, 'do 'you think I can be ſafe in a king-'dom where greater deference is paid 'to me, than to the crown?' They begged my pardon, they ſaid, and would obey me in any thing; but the preſent trouble was only to offer their ſervices to fetch my family and goods, or to do any thing elſe I ſhould want them for; and if I would favour them in that, they would retire directly. I told them, when I had conſidered of it they ſhould hear from me; and this again quieted them.

This diſturbance not only took up much of my time, which I could have better employed, but put me to a nonplus, how to come off with them; till I ſent Maleck to tell them, though I ſet a great value upon their eſteem, yet after what had paſſed, it would be the moſt unadviſable thing in nature for me to accept their kindneſs; for having before requeſted a body of men of the king, as he had graciouſly granted them, it would be preferring them to the king, ſhould I now relinquiſh his grant, and make uſe of their offer; and after this I heard no more of it.

I had ſcarce met with a more difficult taſk than to fix exact rules for the conduct of my preſent undertaking, there being ſo many things to be expreſſed, wherein the leaſt perplexity ariſing, might have cauſed both delay and damage; for I was not only forced to ſet down the things I would have brought, but the manner and method of packing and ſecuring them; but, as Laſmeel could read my writing to Pedro at home, and Youwarkee on board, it would be a means, though far from an expeditious one, of bringing matters into ſome order; and after I had done, as I thought, I could have enumerated many more things, and was obliged to add an *et cætera* to the end of my catalogue; and while they were ready for flight, I added divers other particulars and circumſtances. Nay, when they were even upon the graundee, I recollected the moſt material thing of all; for my greateſt concern was, having broke up ſo many of my cheſts, to find package for the things; I ſay, even ſo late as that, I bethought me of the ſeveral great water-caſks I had on board, that would hold

an

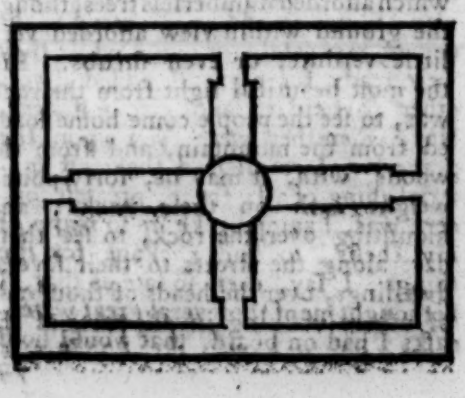
an infinite number of ſmall things, and would be ſtung eaſily; ſo I ſtopped them, and ſet down that; and they were no ſooner out of ſight and hearing, but remembering twenty more, I was then forced to truſt them to my *et cætera*.

I had ſent my own flying-chair to bring the boys who had not the graundee, with orders for Pedro to ſit tied in the chair, with Dicky tied in his arms; Jemmy to ſit tied to the board before the chair, and David behind: ſo I hoped they would come ſafe enough; and then my wife and Sally were able to help themſelves.

Having diſpatched my caravan, and being all alone, I called Quilly the next morning, and telling him I had thoughts of viewing the country, I bade him prepare to go with me.

I had now been here above ſix months, and yet upon coming to walk gravely about the city, I found myſelf as much a ſtranger to the knowledge of the place as if that had been the firſt day of my arrival, though I had been over it ſeveral times in my chair.

This city is not only one of, but actually the moſt curious piece of work in the world, and conſiſts of one immenſe entire ſtone of a conſiderable height, and it may be ſeven miles in length, and near as broad as it is long. The ſtreets, and habitable part of it, are ſcooped, as it were, out of the ſolid ſtone, to the level with the reſt of the country, very flat and ſmooth at bottom, the rock riſing perpendicular from the ſtreets on each ſide. The figure of the city is a direct ſquare; each ſide about ſix miles long, with a large open circle in the centre of the ſquare, about a mile in diameter; and from each of the ſides of the outer ſtreets to the oppoſite ſide, runs another ſtreet, cutting the centre of the circle as in the figure.



Along the whole face of the rock, bounding the ſtreets and the circle, there are arch-ways; thoſe in the circle, and the four croſs ſtreets, for the gentry and better people; and thoſe in the outer ſtreets, for the meaner; and it is as eaſy to know as by a ſign, where a great man lives, by the grandeur of his entrance, and laviſh diſtribution of the pillars, carving, and ſtatues, about his portico, within and without: for as they have no doors, you may look in, and are not forbid entrance; and though it ſhould look odd to an Engliſh reader, that an Engliſhman ſhould ſpeak with pleaſure of a land of darkneſs, as that almoſt was, yet I am ſatisfied, whoever ſhall ſee it after me, will be perſuaded, that for the real grandeur of their entrances, and for the magnificence of the apartments and ſculpture, no part of the univerſe can produce the like; and though within doors there is no other manner of light than the ſweecoes, yet that, when you are once uſed to it, is ſo agreeable and free from all noiſome ſavour, that I never once regretted the loſs of the ſun within doors, though I often have when abroad; but then that would be injurious to the proper inhabitants, though they can no more ſee in total darkneſs than myſelf.

I have been over ſome of theſe private houſes, which contain, it may be, thirty rooms, great and ſmall, ſome higher, ſome lower, full of ſweecoe-lights, and extremely well proportioned and beautiful.

The king's palace, with all the apartments, ſtands in, and takes up, one full fourth-part of the ſquare of the whole city; and is, indeed, of itſelf a perfect city.

There is no great man's houſe without one or more long galleries, for the ladies to divert themſelves at divers ſports in; particularly at one like our bowls on a bowling-green, and at ſomewhat like nine-holes, at which they play for wines, and drink a great deal, for none of them will intoxicate.

In my walk and ſurvey of the city, one of the colambs being making a houſe to reſide in when at Brandeguarp, I had the curioſity to go in. I ſaw there abundance of botts ſtand filled with a greeniſh liquor, and aſked Quilly what that was. He ſaid, it was what the ſtone-men uſed in making the houſes. I proceeded farther

in, where I ſaw ſeveral men at work, and ſtayed a good while to obſerve them. Each man had a bott of this liquor in his left-hand, and ſtood before a large bank of ſtone, it may be thirty feet high, reaching forward up to the cieling of the place, and aſcending by ſteps from bottom to top; the workmen ſtanding ſome on one ſtep, ſome on another, pouring on this liquor with their left-hands, and with their right holding a wooden tool, ſhaped like a little ſpade: I obſerved wherever they poured on this water, a ſmoke aroſe for a little ſpace of time, and then the place turned white, which was ſcraped off like fine powder with the ſpade-handle; and then pouring new liquor, he ſcraped again, working all the while by ſweecoe-lights.

Having my watch in my poeket, I meaſured a ſpot of a yard long, about a foot high, and a foot and a half on the upper flat, to ſee how long he would be fetching down that piece; and he got it away in little above two hours. By this means I came to know how they made their houſes; for I had neither ſeen any tool I thought proper, nor even iron itſelf, except my own, ſince I came into the country. Upon enquiry, I found that the ſcrapings of this ſtone, and a portion of common earth, mixed with a water they have, will cement like plaſter; and they uſe it in the ſmall ornamental work of their buildings. I then went farther into this houſe, where I ſaw one making the figure of a glumm by the ſame method; but it ſtanding upright in the ſolid rock againſt the wall, the workman held his liquor in an open ſhell, and dipping ſuch ſtuff as my bed was made of, bound up in ſhort rolls, ſome larger, ſome leſs, into the liquor, he touched the figure, and then ſcraped till he had reduced it into a perfect piece.

It is impoſſible to imagine how this work rids away; for in ten months time after I ſaw it, this houſe was compleated, having a great number of fine, large, and lofty rooms in it, exquiſitely carved to all appearance.

My wonder ceaſed as to the palace, when I ſaw how eaſily this work was done; but ſure there is no other ſuch room in the world as Begſurbeck's, that I deſcribed above.

The palace, as I ſaid before, taking up one quarter of the city, opens into four ſtreets by four different arches; and before one of the ſides, which I call the front, is a large triangle, formed by the entrance out of one of the croſs ſtreets, and the two ends of the front of the palace. Along the lower front of it, all the way runs a piazza of conſiderable height, ſupported by vaſt round columns, which ſeemed to bear up the whole front of the rock; over which was a gallery of equal length, with baluſtrades along it, ſupported with pillars of a yet finer make; and over that a pediment with divers figures, and other work, to the top of the rock; which being there quite even for it's whole length, was incloſed with baluſtrades between pedeſtals all the way; on which ſtood the ſtatues of their ancient kings, ſo large as to appear equal to the life. The other two ſides of the triangle were dwellings for divers officers belonging to the palace. Under the middle-arch of the piazza, was the way into the palace, through a long, ſpacious arched paſſage, whoſe farther end opened into a large ſquare: on each ſide of this paſſage were large ſtair-caſes, if I may ſo call them, by which you aſcend gradually, and without ſteps, into the upper apartments.

The next morning we took another walk, for I told Quilly I had a mind to take a proſpect of the country; we then went out at the back arch of the palace, as we had the day before at one of the ſides, there being a like paſſage through the rock from that we went out at, to an oppoſite arch leading into the garden. I ſay, we went out at the back-arch, and after paſſing a large quadrangle with lodgings all round it, we aſcended through a cut in the rock to a large flat, where we plainly ſaw the black mountain with it's top in the very ſky, the ſides of which afforded numberleſs trees, though the ground within view afforded very little verdure, or even ſhrubs. But the moſt beautiful ſight from the rock was, to ſee the people come home loaded from the mountain, and from the woods, with, it may be, forty pound weight each on their backs; and mounting over the rock, to ſee them dart along the ſtreets to their ſeveral dwellings, over the heads of thouſands of others walking in all parts of the

ſtreets,

ſtreets, while others were flying other ways. It was very pleaſant to ſee a man walking gravely in one ſtreet, and as quick as thought to ſee him over the rock, ſettled in another, perhaps two miles diſtant.

The near view of the country ſeeming ſo barren, naturally led me to aſk Quilly from whence they got proviſion for ſo many people as the city contained, which, to be ſure, could not be leſs than three hundred thouſand. He told me, that they had nothing but what came from the great foreſt, or the ſkirts of the mountain. 'But for 'the grain of it, and ſome few out-'ward marks,' ſays I, 'I could have 'ſworn I had eaten ſome of my coun-'try beef the other day at the king's 'table.'—'I don't know what your 'beef, as you call it, is; but I am 'ſure we have nothing here but the 'fruit of ſome tree or ſhrub, that 'ever I heard of.'—'I wonder,' ſays I, 'Quilly, how your cooks dreſs their 'victuals. I have eaten many things 'boiled, and otherwiſe dreſſed hot, but 'have ſeen no rivers, or water, ſince I 'came into this country, except for 'drinking, or waſhing my hands; and 'I don't know where that comes from. 'And another thing,' ſays I, 'ſur-'prizes me, though I ſee no ſun as we 'have to warm the air, you are very 'temperate in the town, and it is ſel-'dom cold here; but I neither ſee fire 'nor ſmoak.'—'We have,' ſays Quil-ly, 'ſeveral very good ſprings under 'the palace, both of hot water and 'cold; and I don't know what we 'ſhould do with fires, we ſee the dread 'of them ſufficiently at Mount Al-'koe. Our cooks dreſs their fruits at 'the hot ſprings.'—'That is a fancy,' ſays I; 'they cannot boil them there.' —'I am ſure we have no other dreſ-'ſing,' ſays he. 'Well, Quilly,' ſays I, 'we will go home the way you 'told me of, and to-morrow you ſhall 'ſhew me the ſprings: but, pray, how 'come you to be ſo much afraid of 'Mount Alkoe? I ſuppoſe your eyes 'won't bear the light; is not that all?' —'No, no,' ſays Quilly, 'that is the 'country of bad men; ſome of us 'have flown over there accidentally, 'when the mountain has been cool, as 'it is ſometimes for a good while to-'gether, and have heard ſuch noiſes 'as would frighten any honeſt man 'out of his ſenſes; for there they beat 'and puniſh bad men.' I could not make much of his ſtory, nor did I enquire farther; for I had before determined, if poſſible, to get over thither. As we were now come into the garden, I ordered Quilly to get ready my dinner, and I would come in preſently.

We went next morning to view the ſprings; and, indeed, it was a ſight well worth conſidering: we were in divers offices under the rock, (Quilly carrying two globe-lights before me) in which were ſprings of very clear water, ſome of hot, and ſome of cold, riſing within two or three inches of the ſurface of the floor. We then went into the kitchen, which was bigger than I ever ſaw one of our churches, and where were a great number of theſe ſprings, the hot all boiling full ſpeed day and night, and ſmoaking like a caldron, the water riſing through very ſmall chinks in the ſtone into baſons, ſome bigger, ſome leſs; and they had ſeveral deep ſtone-jars to ſet any thing to boil in. But what was the moſt ſurprizing was, you ſhould ſee a ſpring of very cold water within a few feet of one of hot, and they never riſe higher or ſink lower than they are. I talked with the maſter-cook, an ingenious man, about them; and he told me they lie in this manner all over the rocky part of the country, and that the firſt thing any one does in looking out for an houſe is to ſee for the water, whether both hot and cold may be found within the compaſs he deſigns to make uſe of; and, finding that, he goes on, or elſe ſearches another place. And, he told me, where this convenience was not in great plenty, the people did not inhabit, which made the towns all ſo very populous. He ſaid, too, that thoſe warm ſprings made the air more wholeſome about the towns than in other parts where there were none of them. I thanked him for his information, which finiſhed my ſearch for that time.

CHAP. XVII.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—PENDLEHAMBY GIVES A FABULOUS ACCOUNT OF THE PEOPLEING OF THAT COUNTRY—THEIR POLICY AND GOVERNMENT—PE-

TER'S DISCOURSE ON TRADE—YOUWARKEE ARRIVES—INVITES THE KING AND NOBLES TO A TREAT—SENDS TO GRAUNDEVOLET FOR FOWLS.

THE days hanging heavy on my hands till the arrival of my family, I ſent Pendlehamby word, that, as I had ſent for my family and effects, in order to ſettle in this country, and expected them very ſoon, I ſhould be glad of his, my brother, and ſiſter's company, to welcome them on their arrival.

My father came alone, which gave me an opportunity of informing myſelf in the riſe and policy of the ſtate, as I purpoſed to take ſeveral farther ſteps in their affairs, if they might prove agreeable and conſiſtent: for hitherto, having had only ſlight ſketches or hints of things, I could form no juſt idea of the whole of their laws, cuſtoms, and government. Explaining myſelf, therefore, to him, I begged his inſtruction in thoſe particulars.

'Son Peter,' ſays my father, 'you 'have already done too much in a ſhort 'time to **leave** any room to think you 'can do **no** more; and as you have 'hitherto directed your own proceed-'ings with ſuch incredible ſucceſs, 'neither the king nor colambs will 'interpoſe againſt your inclination, 'but give you all the advices in our 'powers; and I ſhall eſteem your 'ſelecting me for that purpoſe no ſmall 'honour.

'Know, then, that this ſtate, by the 'tradition of our ragans, has ſubſiſted 'eleven thouſand years; for, before 'that time, the great mountain Emina, 'then not far from the Black Moun-'tain, but now fallen and ſunk in the 'ſea, roaring and raging in it's own 'bowels for many ages, at laſt burſt 'aſunder with great violence, and 'threw up numberleſs unformed fleſhy 'maſſes to the very ſtars; two of which 'happening in their paſſage to touch 'the ſide of the Black Mountain, (for 'all the reſt fell into the ſea and were 'loſt) lodged there, and lying cloſe 'together as they grew, united to each 'other till they were joined in one; 'and in proceſs of time, by the dews 'of Heaven, became a glumm and a 'gawrey; but being ſo linked together 'by the adheſion of their fleſh, they 'were obliged both to move which 'way either would: living thus a long 'time in great love and fondneſs for 'each other, they had but one incli-'nation, leſt both ſhould be ſufferers 'upon the leaſt diſagreement.

'In proceſs of time they grew tired 'of each other's conſtant ſociety, and 'one willing to go here, and the other 'there, bred perpetual diſorders be-'tween them; for prevention where-'of, for the future, they agreed to 'cut themſelves aſunder with ſharp 'ſtones. The pain, indeed, was in-'tolerable during the operation; but, 'however, they effected it, and the 'wounds each received were very dan-'gerous, and a long time before they 'were perfectly healed: but at length, 'ſometimes agreeing, ſometimes not, 'they begat a ſon, whom they called 'Perigen, and a daughter they called 'Philella. Theſe two, as they grew 'up, deſpiſing their parents who lived 'on the top of the mountain, ventured 'to deſcend into the plains, and living 'upon the fruits they found there, 'ſheltered themſelves in this very rock. 'Mean time, the old glumm and gaw-'rey, having lived to a great age, 'were ſo infirm, that neither of them 'was able to walk for a long time; 'till one day, being near each other, 'and trying to riſe by the aſſiſtance of 'each other, they both got up, and 'leaning upon and ſupporting each 'other, they alſo walked commodi-'ouſly: this mutual aſſiſtance kept 'them in good-humour a great while; 'till, one day, paſſing along near hoxi-'mo, they both fell in.

'Perigen and Philella had ſeveral 'children in the plains; who, as they 'grew up, increaſing, ſpread into re-'mote parts, and peopled the country: 'at laſt, one of them being a very paſ-'ſionate man, at the inſtigation of his 'wife, became the firſt murderer, by 'ſlaying his father. This ſo enraged 'the people, that the murderer and his 'wife, in abhorrence of the fact, were 'conveyed to Mount Adkoe, where 'was then only a very narrow deep 'pit, into which they were both thrown 'headlong; but the perſons who car-'ried them thither had ſcarce retired 'from the mouth of the pit, when it 'burſt out with fire, raging prodigi-'ouſly, and has kept burning ever 'ſince. Areo and Telamine (the mur-

'derer

'derer and his wife) lived ſeven thou-
'ſand years in the flames; till having
'with their teeth wrought a paſſage
'through the ſide of the mountain,
'they begat a new generation about
'the foot of the mountain; and hav-
'ing brought fire with them, reſolved
'to keep it burning ever after in me-
'mory of their eſcape; and power
'being given them over bad men, they
'and their progeny are now wholly
'employed in beating and tormenting
'them.

'A great while after Arco and Te-
'lamine were thus diſpoſed of, the
'people of this country multiplying,
'it happened, one year, that all the
'fruits were ſo dry, that the people,
'not able to live any longer upon the
'moiſture of them only, as they had
'always done before, and fearing all
'to be conſumed with drought, one
'of their ragans praying very much,
'and promiſing to make an image to
'Collwar, and preſerve it for ever, if
'he would ſend them but moiſture, in
'one night's time the earth caſt up
'ſuch a flood, that they were forced to
'mount on the rocks for fear of drown-
'ing; but the next day it all ſunk
'away again, except ſeveral little bub-
'bles which remained in many places
'for a long time, and the people lived
'only on the moiſture they ſucked
'from the ſtone where thoſe bubbles
'ſettled for many years; for they
'found that the water aroſe to the
'height of the ſurface, and no higher;
'and where they found moſt of thoſe
'chinks and bubbles, they ſettled, and
'formed cities, living altogether in
'holes of the rock; till one Lallio,
'having found out the art of crum-
'bling the rock to duſt by a liquor he
'got from the trees, and working
'himſelf a noble houſe in the rock, in
'the place where our palace now ſtands,
'he told them, if they would make
'him their king, they ſhould each have
'ſuch an houſe as his own. To this
'they agreed, and then he diſcovered
'the ſecret to them.

'This Lallio directed the cutting
'out this whole city, divided the peo-
'ple into colonies where the waters
'were moſt plenty; and while half the
'people worked at the ſtreets and
'houſes, the other half brought them
'proviſions. In ſhort, he grew ſo
'powerful, that no one durſt diſpute
'his commands; all which authority
'he tranſmitted to his ſucceſſors, who
'finding by the increaſe of the people,
'and the many diviſions of them, that
'they grew inſolent and ungovernable,
'they appointed a colamb in every
'province, as a vice-king, with abſo-
'lute authority over all cauſes, except
'murder and treaſon, which are re-
'ferred to the king and colambs in
'moucheratt.

'As we had no want but of victuals
'and habitations, the king, when he
'gave a colambat, gave alſo the lands
'and the fruits thereof, together with
'all the hot and cold ſprings, to the
'colamb, who again diſtributed par-
'cels to the great officers under him,
'and they part of theirs to the meaner
'officers under them, for their ſubſiſt-
'ence, with ſuch a number of the
'common people as was neceſſary in
'reſpect to the dignity of the poſt each
'enjoyed, who for their ſervices are
'fed by their maſters.

'In all caſes of war, the king lays
'before the moucheratt the number of
'his own troops he deſigns to ſend;
'when each colamb's quota being ſet-
'tled at ſuch a proportion of the
'whole, he forthwith ſends his num-
'ber from out of his own laſks, and
'alſo from the ſeveral officers under
'him; ſo that every man, let the num-
'ber be ever ſo great, can be at the
'rendezvous in very few days.

'We have but three profeſſions, be-
'ſides the ragans and ſoldiery, amongſt
'us, and theſe are cooks, houſe-
'makers, and pike-makers, of which
'every colamb has ſeveral among his
'laſks; and theſe, upon the new re-
'gulation, will be the only gainers,
'as they may work where they pleaſe,
'and according to their ſkill will be
'their proviſion; but how the poor
'labourers will be the better for it, I
'cannot ſee.'

'Dear Sir,' ſays I, 'there are, you
'ſee, amongſt laſks, ſome of ſuch
'parts, that it is great pity they ſhould
'be confined from ſhewing them; and
'my meaning in giving liberty is in
'order for what is to follow; that is,
'for the introduction of arts amongſt
'you. Now, every man who has na-
'tural parts will exert them, when any
'art is laid before him; and he will
'find ſo much delight in making new
'diſcoveries, that, did no profit attend

'it,

'it, the ſatisfaction of the diſcovery 'to a prying genius would compenſate 'the pains: but I propoſe a profit alſo 'to the artificer.'—'Why, what pro-'fit,' ſays my father, 'can ariſe but 'food, and perhaps a ſervant of their 'own to provide it for them?'

'Sir,' ſays I, 'the man who has 'nothing to hope, loſes the uſe of one 'of his faculties; and, if I gueſs 'right, and you live ten years longer, 'you ſhall ſee this ſtate as much alter-'ed as the difference has been between 'a laſk and a tree he feeds on. You 'ſhall all be poſſeſſed of that which 'will bring you fruits from the woods 'without a laſk to fetch it. Thoſe 'who were before your ſlaves, ſhall 'then take it as an honour to be em-'ployed by you, and at the ſame time 'ſhall employ others dependent on 'them; ſo as the great and ſmall ſhall 'be under mutual obligations to each 'other, and both to the truly induſtri-'ous artificer; and yet every one con-'tent only with what he merits.'

'Dear ſon,' ſays my father, 'theſe 'will be glorious days indeed! But, 'come, come, you have played a good 'part already; don't, by attempting 'what you can't maſter, eclipſe the 'glory ſo juſtly due to you.'

'No, Sir,' ſays I, 'nothing ſhall 'be attempted by me to my diſhonour; 'for I ſhall ever remember my friend 'Glanlipze.—Sir,' ſays I, 'ſee here,' (ſhewing him my watch.) 'Why, this,' ſays he, 'hung by my daughter's ſide 'at Graundevolet.'—'It did ſo,' ſays I; 'and, pray, what did you take it 'for?'—'A bott,' ſays he. 'I thought 'ſo,' ſays I; 'but as you aſked no 'queſtions, I did not then force the 'knowledge of it upon you. But put 'it to your ear:' he did ſo. 'What 'noiſe is that!' ſays he. 'Is it alive?' —'No,' ſays I, 'it is not; but it is 'as ſignificant. If I aſk it what time 'of the day it is, or how long I have 'been going from this place to that, I 'look but in it's face, and it tells me 'preſently.'

My father looking upon it a good while, and perceiving that the mi-nute-hand had got farther than it was at firſt, was juſt dropping it out of his hand, had I not caught it. 'Why it 'is alive,' ſays he; 'it moves!'— 'Sir,' ſays I, 'if you had dropped it, 'you had done me an inexpreſſible in-'jury.'—'O ho,' ſays he, 'I find 'now how you do your wonders; it 'is ſomething you have ſhut up here 'that aſſiſts you; it is an evil ſpirit!' I laughing heartily, he was ſorry for what he had ſaid, believing he had ſhewn ſome ignorance. 'No, Sir,' ſays I, 'it is no ſpirit, good or evil, 'but a machine made by ſome of my 'countrymen, to meaſure time with.' —'I have heard,' ſays he, 'of mea-'ſuring an abb, or the ground, or a 'rock; but never yet heard of mea-'ſuring time.'—'Why, Sir,' ſays I, 'don't you ſay three days hence I will 'do ſo; or ſuch a one is three years 'old? Is not that a meaſuring of time 'by ſo many days or years?'—'Tru-'ly,' ſays he, 'in one ſenſe I think 'it is.'—'Now, Sir,' ſays I, 'how 'do you meaſure a day?'—'Why, by 'riſing, and lying down,' ſays he. 'But ſuppoſe I ſay I will go now 'and come again, and have a particu-'lar time in my head when I will re-'turn, how ſhall I do to make you 'know that time?'—'Why, that will 'be afterwards, another time,' ſays he; 'or I can think how long it will 'be.'—'But,' ſays I, 'how can you 'make me know, when you think it will 'be.'—'You muſt think too,' ſays he. 'But then,' ſays I, 'we may de-'ceive each other, by thinking dif-'ferently. Now this will ſet us to 'rights:' then I deſcribed the figures to him, telling him, how many parts they divided the day into, and that by looking on it, I could tell how many of ſuch parts were paſſed; and that if he went from me, and ſaid he would come one, or two, or three parts hence, I ſhould know when to expect him. I then ſhewed him the wheels, and ex-plained where the force lay, and why it went no faſter or ſlower, as well as I could; and, from my deſire of teach-ing, inſenſibly perfected myſelf more and more in it. So that beginning to have a little idea of it, he wiſhed he had one. 'And,' ſays he, 'will you 'teach all our people to make ſuch 'things?'—'Then they would be diſ-'regarded, Sir,' ſays I. 'It is im-'poſſible,' ſays he. 'I'll tell you,' 'Sir, how I mean,' ſaid I. 'I can 'hereafter ſhew you an hundred things 'as uſeful as this; now, if every body 'was to make theſe, how would other 'things be made? Beſides, if every

'body

'body made them, nobody would 'want them; and then what would 'any body get by them, beſides the 'pleaſing their own fancy? But if 'only twenty men make them in one 'town, all the reſt muſt come to them; 'and they who make theſe, muſt go 'to one of twenty others, who make 'another thing that theſe men want, 'and ſo on; by which means, every 'man wanting ſomething he does not 'make, it will be the better for every 'maker of every thing.'

'Son,' ſays my father, 'excuſe 'me; I am really aſhamed, now you 'have better informed me, I aſked ſo 'fooliſh a queſtion.' I told him, we had a ſaying in my country, that every thing is eaſy when it is known. 'I 'think,' ſays he, 'a man might find 'every thing in your country.'

Two days after, my wife and daughter Sally came very early; but ſure no joy could be greater than ours at ſight of each other. I embraced them both over and over, as did my father, eſpecially Sally, who was a charming child. They told me, I might expect every thing that evening, for they left them alighting at the height of Battringdrigg; for though they came out the laſt, yet the body of the people with their baggage could not come ſo faſt as they did. And little Sally ſaid, 'We ſtaid and reſted ourſelves, pure-'ly, daddy, at Battringdrigg, before 'the crowd came; but as ſoon as mam-'my had ſeen all my brothers ſafe, 'who came before the reſt, and kiſſed 'Dicky, we ſet out again.'

About ſeven hours after, arrived the ſecond convoy from abroad, that ever entered that country. I had too much to do with my wife and children that night, to ſpare a thought to my cargo; ſo I only ſet a guard over them: for though I had now been married about ſixteen years, Youwarkee was ever new to me.

I was now obliged to the king again, for ſome additional conveniences to my former apartment; and the young ones were mightily pleaſed to have ſo much more room than we had at home, and to ſee the ſweecoes; but finding themſelves waited upon in ſo elegant a manner, and by ſo many ſervants (for with our new rooms, we had all the ſervants belonging to them) they thought themſelves in a paradiſe to the grotto, where all we wanted we were forced to help ourſelves to.

The next day Tommy came to ſee us, the king having given him a very pretty poſt, ſince the death of Yaccombourſe; and Hallycarnie, with the Princeſs Jahamel her miſtreſs, who was mightily pleaſed to ſee Youwarkee in her Engliſh dreſs, and invited her and the children to her apartment.

It was but a few months ſince my wife ſaw the children; yet ſhe ſcarce knew them, they were ſo altered; for the two courtiers behaved with ſo much politeneſs, that their brothers and Sally looked but with an ill eye upon them, finding all the fault, and dropping as many little invidious expreſſions on them as poſſible. But I ſharply rebuked them: we were all made chiefly, I told them, to pleaſe our Maker, and that could be done only by the goodneſs of the heart; and if their hearts were more pure, they were the beſt children; but if they liked their brothers and ſiſters outward behaviour better than their own, they might ſo far imitate them.

When we were ſettled in our new apartment, I unpacked my chairs and tables, and ſet out my ſide-board, and made ſuch a figure as had never before been ſeen in that part of the world. I wanted now ſome ſhoes for Pedro, his own being almoſt paſt wear, for the young ones never had worn any, but could find none; till applying to Laſmeel, and ſhewing him what I wanted, he pointed to one of the great water-caſks; but as there were eleven of them, big and little, I knew not where to begin; till, having invited the king and ſeveral of the miniſters to dine with me, I was forced to look over my goods for ſeveral other things I ſhould want.

In my ſearch, I found half a ream of paper, a leather ink-bottle, but no ink in it, ſome quills, and books of accounts, and ſeveral other things relative to writing. The prize gave me courage to attempt the other caſks; but I found little more that I immediately wanted. In the laſt caſk were ſeveral books, two of them romances, ſix volumes of Engliſh plays, two of devotion, the next were either Spaniſh or Portugueſe, and the laſt looked like a bible; but juſt opening it, and taking it to be of the ſame language, I put

them

them all in again, thinking to divert myſelf with them ſome other time. I here found ſome more paper, and ſo many ſhoes, as when I had followed them, ſerved me as long as I ſtaid in the country.

Having, as I ſaid before, invited the king to eat with me, I was ſorry I had not ordered my fowls to be brought; and Youwarkee ſaid, ſhe thought to have done it, but I had not wrote for them. I told her, I would ſend Maleck for ſome of them, I was reſolved; for I ſhould pique myſelf on giving the king a diſh he had never before taſted. So I called Maleck, telling him, he muſt take thirty men with him to Graundevolet; 'And carry ſix 'empty cheſts with you,' ſays I, 'and 'put eight of my fowls in each cheſt, 'and bring them with all expedition.' —'Where do they lie, Sir?' ſays he. 'You will find them at rooſt,' ſays I, 'when it is dark.'—'I never was 'there,' ſays he, 'and don't know 'the way.'—'What,' ſays I, 'never 'at Graundevolet?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'but not at rooſt.' I laughed, ſaying. 'Maleck, did not you ſee fowls 'when you was there?' He ſaid, he did not know, what were they like. 'They are a bird,' ſays I. 'And 'what ſort of a thing is that?' ſays he. Youwee hearing us in this debate, 'Maleck,' ſays ſhe, 'did not you ſee 'me toſs down little nuts to ſomething 'that you ſtared at; you ſaw them eat 'the nuts.'—'O dear,' ſays he, 'I 'know it very well, with two legs and 'no arms.'—'The ſame,' ſays I, 'Maleck; do you go look for a little 'houſe almoſt by my grotto, and at 'night you will find theſe things 'ſtand on ſticks in that houſe. Take 'them down gently, and come away 'with them in the cheſts.' Maleck performed his buſineſs to a hair, but inſtead of forty-eight, brought me ſixty, telling me, he found the cheſts would hold them very well; and I kept them afterwards in the king's garden.

CHAP. XVIII.

PETER GOES TO HIS FATHER'S—TRAVERSES THE BLACK MOUNTAINS—TAKES A FLIGHT TO MOUNTALKOE—GAINS THE MINERS—OVERCOMES THE GOVERNOR'S TROOPS—PROCLAIMS GEORIGETTI KING—SEIZES THE GOVERNOR—RETURNS HIM THE GOVERNMENT—PETER MAKES LAWS WITH THE CONSENT OF THE PEOPLE—AND RETURNS TO BRANDLEGUARP WITH DEPUTIES.

NO farther project being ripe for execution, I took a journey home with my father to Arndrumnſtake, and he would take all the children with him. Youwarkee and I ſtayed about ſix weeks, leaving all the children with my father.

Upon my return, I frequently talked with Maleck about his country; who they originally were, and how long it had been inhabited, and what other countries bordered thereon, and how they lay. He told me, his countrymen looked upon themſelves to be very ancient, but they were not very numerous; for the old ſtock was almoſt worn out by the hardſhips they had undergone; that about three hundred years before, he ſaid, as he had it from good report, there were a people from beyond the ſea, or as they called themſelves from the little lands, had ſtrangely over-ran them; and he had heard ſay, they would have over-run this country too, but they thought it would not anſwer. He ſaid, when thoſe people firſt came, they began to turn up the earth to a prodigious depth; 'And now,' ſays he, bringing ſome naſty hard earth of ſeveral ſorts, 'they put it into great fires 'till it runs about like water, and 'then beat it about with great heavy 'things into ſeveral ſhapes; and ſome 'of it, Sir,' ſays he, 'looks juſt like 'that ſtuff that lay at the bottom of 'your ſhip, and ſome almoſt white, 'and ſome red; for when I was a boy 'I was to have been ſent to work 'amongſt them, as my father did; 'but it having killed him, I came hi-'ther, as many more have done, to 'avoid it.'—'And what do they do 'with it,' ſays I, 'when they have 'beat it about as you ſay?'—'Then,' ſays he, 'they carry it a long way to 'the ſea.'—'What then?' ſays I. 'Why then the little landers take it, 'and ſwim over the ſea with it.'—'And what do they do with it?' ſays I. 'Why,' ſays he, 'there are other 'people who take it from them, and

'go

'go away with it.'—'Why do they 'let them take it?' says I. 'Becauſe,' ſays he, 'they give them cloaths for 'it.'—'Do they want cloaths,' ſays I, 'more than you?' He told me they had no graundee. 'And what other 'countries have you here about?'—'There is one country,' ſays he, 'north of Alkoe, where they ſay there 'is juſt ſuch another people as the 'Little-landers, and they get ſome of 'the things from Mount Alkoe.'—'What do they do with them?' ſays I. 'I don't know,' ſays he; 'they fetch 'a great deal; but they won't let any 'body come into their country.'—'Is 'there nobody inhabits between the 'Mountain Alkoe and the ſea?' He told me no, the Little-landers would not let them.

Having got what information I could from Maleck, and alſo from a countryman or two of his he had brought to me, I conſidered it all over; 'And,' thinks I, 'if I could but get Mount 'Alkoe to ſubmit,' (for they had told me they were only governed by a deputy from the Little-lands) 'to ſee the 'work done, I might, by intercepting 'the trade to the ſea, turn the profit of 'the country my own way, and make 'it paſs through our hands.'

I next enquired of thoſe who brought the fruits from the great foreſt, what ſort of land they had there; and found, by their deſcription, it was a light mould, and in many places well covered with graſs and herbs; and, by all the report I could hear, muſt be a fruitful country, well managed; and being a flat country, and not encompaſſed on that ſide with the black mountain, was much higher than Doorpt Swangeanti. This news put me upon ſearching the truth of it; and I made the tour of the black mountain and the great foreſt, alighting often to make my obſervations. The foreſt is a little world of wood without end, with here and there a fine lawn very graſſy; and indeed the wood-grounds bear it very well, the trees not ſtanding in crowds, but at a healthy diſtance from each other. I went abundantly farther than any one had before been, but ſaw no variation in the woody ſcene; and coming round weſtward home, I had a view of hoximo; which is nothing but a narrow cleft in the earth, on the top of the black mountain, of a moſt extraordinary depth; for, upon dropping a ſtone down, you ſhall hear it ſtrike and hum for a long time before all is quiet again; and laying my ear over the cleft, whilſt I ordered one of my attendants to throw a large ſtone down, after the uſual thumps and humming, I imagined I heard it daſh in water, ſo that it is not impoſſible it may reach to the ſea; which is at leaſt ſix or ſeven miles below it. Into this hole all dead bodies are precipitated, from the king to the beggar; for four glumms holding by the ancles and wriſts of the deceaſed, fly with them to hoximo, and throw them down, whilſt the air is filled with the lamentations of the relations of the deceaſed, and of ſuch others as are induced to follow the corpſe for the ſake of the wines, on ſuch occaſions plentifully diſtributed to all comers, by the gentry; and in the beſt proportion they are able by even the meaneſt amongſt them.

After a ſtay of about fourteen days at home, I fixed my next trip for Mount Alkoe; and having told Maleck my deſign, he ſaid he would go with me with all his heart, but feared I ſhould get no Brandleguarpine to bear me; for he told me they had an old tradition, that Mindrack lived there, and would not go for all the world; 'Which has been the greateſt ſecurity 'that country has had, for this would 'have devoured them elſe,' ſays he.

I ſpoke to the king, to Naſgig, and the ragans; and found them all unanimous, that the mountain Alkoe was the habitation of Mindrack, and that the noiſes which had been heard there, were his ſervants beating bad men. Says I to myſelf, 'Here is one of the 'uſefulleſt projects upon earth ſpoiled, 'by an unaccountable prepoſſeſſion: 'what muſt be done to overcome this 'prejudice?'

I told Maleck I found what he ſaid to be too true, as to the people of Brandleguarp; 'But,' ſays I, 'are 'there not enough of your country-'men here to carry me thither?' He believing there were, I ordered him to contract with them; but it vexed me very much to be obliged to take theſe men. However, though I reſolved to go, yet I choſe to reaſon the ragans into the project, if I could; thinking they would ſoon bring the people over.

I called ſeveral of the ragans together, and ſaid: 'Becauſe you are a 'wiſer and more thinking people than 'the vulgar, I have applied myſelf to 'your judgments in the affair of 'Mount Alkoe. Now, conſider with 'yourſelves, whether you have any 'real reaſon beyond a prepoſſeſſion, 'for thinking theſe people fiends or 'devils ſervants, as you call them, 'without farther examination; for, 'according to my comprehenſion, they 'only underſtanding the nature of 'ſeveral ſorts of earth, reduce them 'by labour and fire to ſolid ſubſtances 'for the uſe of mankind; and the want 'of theſe things is the reaſon of your 'living as you do, without an hun-'dredth part of the benefits of life. 'Theſe ſort of people, theſe noiſes, 'and theſe operations, which you hear 'and ſee carried on at Alkoe, are to 'be heard and ſeen in my country; 'and we deal and traffick with their 'labours, from one end of the world 'to the other; and we who are with 'them the happieſt, without them 'ſhould be the moſt miſerable of peo-'ple. Did not ſome of you ſee, at my 'entertainment, what I called my 'knives and forks, and ſpoons, my 'piſtols, cutlaſſes, and ſilver cup? All 'theſe, and infinitely more, are the 'produce of theſe poor men's induſtry. 'Now,' ſays I, 'if we ſettle a com-'munication with theſe people, your 'dues will be all paid in theſe curious 'things; you will have your people 'employed in working them, and 'have ſtrangers applying to you to 'ſerve them with what they want; 'who, in return, will give you what 'you want; and you will find your-'ſelves known and reſpected in the 'world.' Finding ſome of theſe arguments, applied to the men, had ſtaggered them a little, I applied to their ſenſes. Says I, 'It ſtill appears 'to me that you have your prejudices 'hanging on you: but what will you 'ſay if I go thither and return ſafe; 'will you be afraid to follow me ano-'ther time?' They perſuaded me from it, as a dangerous experiment; but ſaid, if I did return, they would not think there was ſo much in it as they ſuſpected.

Maleck having choſen me out four-ſcore of his countrymen, in about a month's time I trained them up to the knowledge of my piſtols and cutlaſſes, and the management of them; and taking a cheſt with me for the arms and other neceſſaries, we ſallied up to the black mountain. I reſted there; and there Naigig and Laſmeel overtook me; ſaying, that when they found me obſtinate to go, they could not in their hearts leave me, happen what would. This put new ſpirits into me, and we conſulted how the noiſes lay, and agreed to engage firſt upon the ſkirts of them, where the ſmokes were moſt ſtraggling. I charged ſix guns, and all my piſtols, which I kept in my cheſt, and ordered them to alight with me about an hundred paces from the firſt ſmoke they ſaw; then ordered three of them to carry my guns after me, and twelve of them to take piſtols and follow me; but not to fire till I gave orders. The remainder I left with the baggage.

We marched up to the ſmoke, which iſſued out of a low arch-way juſt at the foot of the mountain. It was very light there with the flames of the volcano; and, entering the arch, a fellow ran at me with a red-hot iron-bar, him I ſhot dead; and ſeeing two more and a woman there, who ſtood with their faces to the wall of the hut or room, as unwilling to be ſeen, I ordered Maleck to ſpeak to them in a known tongue, and tell them we were no enemies, nor intended them any hurt; and that their companion's fate was owing to his own raſhneſs in running firſt at me with the hot bar; and that if they would ſhew themſelves good-natured and civil to us, we would be ſo to them; but if they offered to reſiſt openly, or uſe any manner of treachery towards us, they might depend upon the ſame fate their companion had juſt ſuffered.

Upon hearing this, they approached us; and ſhewing great tokens of ſubmiſſion, I delivered my gun to Maleck, and bade them go on with their work, ordering all the guns out of the ſhop, for fear of a ſpark. I then perceived they were direct forges, but made after another manner from ours, their wind being made by a great wheel, like a wheel of a water-mill, which worked with the fans or wings in a large trough, and cauſed a prodigious iſſue of air through a ſmall hole in the back of the fire-places. They were then drawing out iron-bars.

I gave

I gave each of these men, and also to the woman, a dram of brandy; which they swallowed down very greedily, and looked for more, and seemed very pleasant. I then enquired into the trade; by whom, and how it was carried on; and they told me just as Maleck had done. I then asked where the mines lay; and one of them looking full at me said, 'Then you know 'what we are about.'—'Yes,' says I, 'very well.' He told me the mine was (in his language, as Maleck interpreted it) about a quarter of a mile off, and directed me to it. I ordered them to go on with their work, telling them, though I left a guard over them, it was only that they might not raise their neighbours to disturb me; though if they did, I should serve them all as I had done their companion; and left four men with pistols at the arch-way.

I proceeded to the iron-mine, but supposed the men were all within, for I saw nobody; but there were many large heaps of ore lying, which I felt of; and, being vastly heavy, I supposed it might be rich in metal.

I returned to my men at the arch, and asked them what other mines there might be in that country, and of what other metals; but Maleck not knowing the metals themselves, was not able to interpret the names they called them by. I then shewed them an English halfpenny, a Portuguese piece of silver-money, and my gold watch; and asking if they had any of those, they pointed to the halfpenny and silver-piece, but shook their heads at the watch. I then shewed them a musket-ball, and they said they had a great deal of that.

I desired them to shew me the way to the copper-mine, (pointing my finger to the halfpenny) and told them if they would go with me, they should have some more, (pointing to my brandy;) and they readily agreed, if I would stand by them for leaving their work. I believe it might be two miles farther on the right to the copper-mine; and as these men had the graundee, I expected they would have flown by me; but I found they had a light chain round their graundee, which prevented them; so I walked too; and having made them my friends by being familiar with them, I desired they would go in, and let the head-man of the works know that a stranger desired to speak with him, and view his works, and to inform him how peaceable I was if he used me civilly; but that I could strike him dead at once if he did not.

I do not know how they managed, or what report they made; but the man came to me very courteously, and I bade Maleck ask if he came in friendship, as I did to him; and he giving me that assurance, I went in with him, taking Nasgig and Maleck with me, and leaving our fire-arms without. I ordered them both, as I did myself, to carry their cutlasses, sheathed in their hands, for fear of a surprize. We saw a great quantity of copper-ore, and several melting-vats, being just at the mouth of the mine, the mine running horizontally into the side of the mountain, and, as they said, was very rich. I gave the head-man a little brandy, and two or three more of them, who had been industrious in shewing and explaining things to me.

I desired the foreman to walk out with me; and, asking how long he had been in that employ, he told me he was a native of the Born Isles, and was brought thither young, where he first wrought in the iron, then in the silver, and now in this mine: that he had been there twenty years, and never expected to be delivered from his miserable slavery; but as he was now overseer of that work, he did pretty well, though nothing like freedom. He told me they expected several new slaves quickly; for the mines killed those they did not agree with so fast, they were very thinly wrought at present, and that the governor was gone to the isles to get more men. I was glad to hear this: 'And, pray,' says I, 'where 'does the governor reside?' He (pointing to the place) told me. 'And what 'guard,' says I, 'may he keep?'—'About four hundred men; but no-'body durst molest him,' says he; 'for he tortures them in such a man-'ner, never killing them, that not the 'least thing can be done against his 'will.'

After we had talked a good while on the misery of slavery, and finding him a man fit for my purpose, I asked him if he would go with me to Brandleguard; 'For,' said I, 'there are 'certainly good mines in those moun-

'tains; and if you will overlook them, you ſhall be free, and have whatever you deſire.' He ſhook his head, ſaying, how could he expect to be free where all the reſt were ſlaves; 'And, beſides,' ſays he, 'they are in ſuch commotions among themſelves, that it is ſaid the ſtate will be torn to pieces.'—'You are miſtaken,' ſays I, 'very much; I myſelf have ſettled peace amongſt them, and killed the uſurper.'—'Is it poſſible!' ſays he; 'and are you the man it was ſaid they expected to come out of the ſea?'—'The very ſame,' ſays I: 'and as to ſlavery, there is not a ſlave in the kingdom; nor ſhall be here, if you will hearken to me.'—'That would be a good time indeed,' ſays he. 'Well,' ſays I, 'my friend, I promiſe you it ſhall be ſo; only obſerve this, that when I come to reduce the governor, do none of you miners aſſiſt him.' He promiſed he would let the other miners ſecretly know it, and all ſhould be as I wiſhed; but deſired me to be expeditious, for the governor was expected every day.

I went from him to the other mines, and my guides with me; who ſeeing me ſo well received at the copper-mine, and reporting it to the others, it cauſed my proceedings to go on ſmoothly, and my offers to be readily embraced wherever I came.

Having prepared matters thus, I ſet Maleck and his countrymen upon the natives, to treat with them about ſubmiſſion to Georigetti, on promiſe of freedom; who being aſſured of what I had done at Brandleguarp, and in hopes of like liberty, readily came into it; ſo that the only thing remaining was, before the governor's return, to attack the ſoldiery. Having, therefore, renewed my engagements with the miners, and believing myſelf upon as good terms with the natives as I could wiſh, I was adviſed by Naſgig and Laſmeel to return for cannon and a large army, before I attacked the ſoldiery: but I, who had all my life rode upon the ſpur, having conſidered that an opportunity once loſt is never to be regained; and though I could have wiſhed for ſome cannon, I valued the men but for few: I therefore formed my reſolves to march with the force I had next morning, and pitch upon a plain juſt by the governor's garriſon, in order, if I could, to draw his men out. I did ſo, and it anſwered; for, upon the firſt news of my coming, they appeared with a ſort of heavy-headed weapons, which hurling round, they threw upwards aſlope, in order to light upon the backs of their enemies in flight, and beat them down; but they could not throw them above thirty paces.

I ſat ſtill in my chair, with a gun in my hand, and Maleck with another at my elbow, with four more lying by me, ready to be preſented; Laſmeel ſtanding by to charge again as faſt as we fired. I ordered a party of twenty of my men, with cutlaſſes, to attack the van of the enemy, by ruſhing impetuouſly upon them, they coming but thin againſt me; for I was not willing to employ my pieces till I could do more execution. They began the attack about an hundred yards before me, not very high in the air; and my cutlaſs-men having avoided the firſt flight of their weapons, fell upon them with ſuch fury, that chopping here a limb, and there a graundee, which diſabling their flight, was equally pernicious, they fell by ſcores before me: but I ſeeing thoſe in the rear, which made a body of near three hundred, coming very ſwift and cloſe in treble ranks, one above the other, hoping to bear down my handful of men with their numbers, I ordered my men all to retire behind me, and not, till the enemy were paſſed over my head, to fall on them. Maleck and I, as they came near, each firing a piece together, and whipping up another, and then another, in an inſtant, they fell round us, roaring and making a horrid yell. This the reſt ſeeing, went over our men's heads, not without many falling from the cuts of my men; and thoſe who eſcaped were never heard of more.

The miners, who from their ſeveral ſtations had beheld the action, came ſinging and dancing, from every quarter, round me; and if I had not drawn my men cloſe in a circle about me, would probably, out of affection, have done me more hurt than two of the governor's armies; for againſt theſe common gratitude denied the uſe of force; and they crouding every one but to touch me, they ſaid, for fear of being preſſed to death myſelf, as

ſome

ſome of them almoſt were, I ordered them to be let in through my men, at one ſide of the ring, and, paſſing by and touching me, to be let out on the other ſide; and this quieted them, but kept me in penance a long time.

We then marched in a body all into the town, where we were going to proclaim Georigetti King of Mount Alkoe; when a ſurly fellow, much wiſer than the reſt, as he thought, being about to harangue the people againſt being too haſty in it, was knocked down, and trod to death for his pains; and we went on with the proclamation, giving general liberty to all perſons without exception.

The next thing to be conſidered was, how to oppoſe the governor when he came; and for that purpoſe I enquired into the manner of his coming, the road he came, and his attendants; and being informed that an hundred of his guards, who had not the graundee, waited for him at the ſea-ſide, and that he had got no other guard, except a few friends and the ſlaves he went for, and that the ſlaves always came firſt, ſix in a rank tied together, under convoy of a few of his guards, I went in perſon to view the rout he came, and ſeeing a very convenient poſt in a thick wood through which they were to paſs, from whence we might ſee them before they came near us, I poſted a watch on the ſea-ſide of the wood, and myſelf and men lay on the hither-ſide of it, juſt where the governor's party muſt come out of it again: ſo that my watch giving notice of their approach, we might be ready to fall on at their coming out of our ſide of the wood.

When we had waited three days, our watch brought word they were coming; ſo we kept as cloſe as poſſible, letting the ſlaves and guards march on, who came by about two hours march before the governor: but ſo ſoon as he approached, I drew up my men on the plain within the wood in ranks, ordering them to lie cloſe on their bellies till they ſaw me riſe, and then to riſe, follow me, and obey orders.

Several of the firſt ranks having paſſed the wood, juſt as the governor had entered the open country, I roſe, and bade Maleck call aloud, that if any of them ſtirred or lifted up a weapon, he was a dead man; and then ſeeing one of the foremoſt running, I fetched him down with a muſket-ſhot, bidding Maleck tell the reſt, that if they ſubmitted and laid down their weapons, they were ſafe; but if they refuſed, I would ſerve them all as I had done him who fled. This ſpeech, with the terror of the gun, fixed every man to his place like a ſtatue.

I then went forward to the governor, and by Maleck, my interpreter, aſked him who they all were with him: he told me his ſlaves. I then made him call every man before him, and give him freedom; which, finding no way to avoid, (for I looked very ſtern) he did, and I had enough to do to quiet my new freemen, who, I thought, would have devoured me for joy. I aſked whither he was going; he ſaid, to his government. 'Under whom 'do you hold it?' ſays I. 'Under the 'zaps of the iſles,' ſays he. I then told him, that whoever held that government for the future, muſt receive it from the hands of Georigetti, the king of that country, to whom all the natives and miners had already engaged their fidelity. I told him both natives and foreigners had been all declared free.

The governor ſeemed much dejected, and told me he hoped I would not uſe him or his company ill. I told him that depended entirely on his own and their good behaviour. I aſked who his friends were that were with him; he ſaid, they were ſome of the zaps relations, who were come to ſee the method of the government, and inſpect the mines.

Ordering all the governor's guards and friends to go before, and all my own, but Maleck, to keep backwards ſome paces, I entered into diſcourſe with him about the ſtate of the iſles, and the country of Alkoe; and finding him a judicious perſon, and not a native of the iſles, I thought, with ſome management, he might prove a uſeful perſon to me, but did not like the character I had heard of his ſeverity; ſo I plainly told him, that only one thing prevented my making him a greater man than ever he was; which was, I had been informed he had a roughneſs in his nature which drove him to extremities with the poor ſlaves, which I could not bear. 'Sir,' ſays he, 'whatever a man is in his natural 'temper, where ſlavery abounds it is

'neceſſary

'neceſſary to act, or at leaſt be thought
'to do ſo, in a mercileſs manner. I
'am intruſted with the government of
'a land of only ſlaves; who have no
'more love, nor are they capable of
'any, for me, than the herbs of the
'ground have. I am to render an ac-
'count to my maſters of their labours;
'they work by force, and would not
'ſtir a ſtep without it, or the fear of
'correction; for which reaſon the rod
'muſt be ever held over them; and
'though I ſeldom let it fall, when I
'do, the ſuffering of one is too long
'remembered to permit others quickly
'to ſubject themſelves to the like pu-
'niſhment: and this method I judged
'to be the moſt mild, as the death or
'ſufferings of one but ſeldom, muſt,
'though ever ſo ſevere, be milder than
'the frequent execution of numbers.
'And as to my appearing ſevere to
'them, my poſt required it; for mercy
'to ſlaves being interpreted into fear,
'arms them with violence againſt
'you.'

I could not gainſay this, eſpecially as he told me he was glad I had freed them all; 'For no man,' ſays he, 'but 'if he were to chuſe, would rather 'reign by love (which he may in a 'free country, but it is impractica-'ble in one of ſlaves) than by fear, 'which alone will keep the latter in 'ſubjection.'

I aſked him whether, as he knew the nature of the country, and the buſineſs of the governor, he could become faithful to my maſter Georigetti: he told me he had ever been faithful to his maſters the paps, and would till he was ſure (without ſuſpecting in the leaſt my veracity) all was true that I was pleaſed to tell him; for nothing could ſatisfy his conſcience but being an eye-witneſs of it; and then being diſcharged from any farther capacity of ſerving them in an open way, he ſhould be free to chuſe his own maſter; of all whom, Georigetti ſhould to him be moſt preferable; but begged me not to interpret his deſire of retaining fidelity to his old maſters till he could no longer ſerve them, into an implication of aſſiſting them, by either open or concealed practices; for, wherever he engaged, he would be true to the utmoſt.

At the end of ſix days (for I travelled on foot with them) we arrived at the governor's palace, which we found without a guard, and all the ſlaves he had ſent before him at liberty: ſo I ordered my men to ſupply the uſual guard, and took my lodging in the governor's apartment.

As Gadſi (for that was the governor's name) was not confined, or any of his friends, he came into my apartment, and told me, ſince he had found all things anſwered my report, if I pleaſed, he would quit the palace to me, and every thing belonging to the government. I told him he ſaid well. He did ſo, taking with him only ſome few things, his own property. So ſoon as he was without the territory of the palace, I ſent for him and his friends back again: he could not help being dejected at his return, fearing ſome miſchief. 'Gadſi,' ſays I, 'this 'palace and this country, which I now 'hold for my maſter Georigetti, I de-'liver in cuſtody to you as his gover-'nor; and now charge you to make 'acknowledgment of your fidelity to 'him.' Then taking it from him in terms of my own propoſing, I delivered him the regalia of his government, charging him to maintain freedom: 'But,' ſays I, 'let no man eat 'who will not work, as the country 'and the produce are the king's.'

I then ſummoned an aſſembly of the people, and ſent notice to all the miners to attend me. I told them, all that the king deſired of them was to make themſelves happy; 'And as the mines 'at preſent,' ſays I, 'are the only 'employment of this country, I would 'have it agreed by your own conſent; 'for I will force nothing upon you, 'that every man amongſt you, from 'ſixteen to ſixty, ſhall work every 'third week at the mines, and other 'duties of the government; and two 'weeks out of three ſhall be your own 'to provide in for your families: and 'if I live to come back again, you 'ſhall each man have ſo much land 'of his own, as ſhall be ſufficient 'for his family; and I will make it 'my buſineſs to ſee for ſeeds to im-'prove it with. And this week's work 'in three, and if afterwards it can be 'done with leſs, in four, ſhall be an 'acknowledgment to the king for his 'bounty to you. Do you agree to 'this?' They all, with one voice, cried out, 'We do!'—'Then,' ſays I,

'agree

'agree amongſt yourſelves, and part 'into proper diviſions for carrying on 'the work; that is, into four parts, 'one for each ſort of metal; and then 'again, each of thoſe four into three 'parts; and on every ſeventh day in 'the morning, let thoſe who are to be-'gin meet thoſe who are leaving off 'work; ſo that there be clear ſix days 'work, and one of going and return-'ing. Do you all agree to this?' All cried, 'We do!'—'Then,' ſays I, 'whoever neglects his duty, unleſs 'through ſickneſs, or by leave of 'the governor, ſhall work a double 'week. Do you agree to this?'—'We do!'—'Then all matters of dif-'ference between you ſhall be decided 'by the governor; and in caſe of any 'injury or injuſtice, or wrong judg-'ment in the governor, by Georiget-'ti. Do you agree?'—'We do!'—'Then,' ſays I, 'agree upon ten 'men, two for the natives, and two 'for each mineral work, to ſend with 'me to Brandleguarp, to petition Ge-'origetti to confirm theſe laws, till 'you ſhall make others yourſelves, 'and to acknowledge his ſovereignty. 'Do you agree?'—'We do!'

I then told them, that as thoſe who had been ſlaves were now free, they might, if they pleaſed, return home; but, as I ſhould make it my endeavour to provide ſo well for them in all the comforts of life, I believed moſt of them would be of opinion, their intereſt would keep them where they were. And, above all things, recommending a hearty union between the new freemen and the natives, and to marry amongſt each other, and to continue in love amongſt themſelves, and duty to the king and his governor; and promiſing ſpeedily to return and ſettle what was wanting, I diſmiſſed the aſſembly, and ſet out for Brandleguarp with the ten deputies; but I left Lafmeel behind with the governor, and two ſervants with him, to give me immediate notice in caſe any diſturbance ſhould happen in my abſence.

CHAP. XIX.

PETER ARRIVES WITH THE DEPUTIES—PRESENTS THEM TO THE KING—THEY RETURN—A COLONY DECREED TO BE SENT THITHER—NASCIG MADE GOVERNOR—MANNER OF CHUSING THE COLONY—A FLIGHT-RACE, AND THE INTENT OF IT—WALSI WINS THE PRIZE, AND IS FOUND TO BE A GAWREY.

AS we alighted at the palace late at night, I kept the deputies with me till next morning; when I went to the king, deſiring them to ſtay in my apartment till I had received his majeſty's orders for their admiſſion.

The king was but juſt up when I came in; and ſeeing me, embraced me, ſaying, 'Dear father, I am glad to 'meet you again alive; your ſtay has 'given me the utmoſt perplexity; and 'could I have prevailed with any of 'my ſervants to have followed you, I 'had ſent before this time to have 'known what was become of you.'

I told his majeſty, the greateſt pleaſure of my life conſiſted in the knowledge of his majeſty's eſteem for me; and he might depend upon it, I would take care of myſelf from a double motive, whilſt I was in his dominions; the one, from the natural obligation of my own preſervation; and the other, equally compulſive, of continuing ſerviceable to his majeſty, till I had made him more famous than his anceſtor, the great Begſurbeck.

I told his majeſty, as a ſmall token of my duty and affection to him, I was come to make him a tender of the additional title of King of Mount Alkoe. 'Father,' ſays he, 'we ſhall 'never be able to get a ſufficient num-'ber of my ſubjects to go thither; 'for though your ſafe return may be 'ſome encouragement, yet, whilſt 'their old apprehenſions ſubſiſt, (and 'I know not what will alter them) we 'can do no good: and, indeed, were 'they free to go, and under no ſuſpi-'cion of danger, it would coſt abun-'dance of men to conquer Mount 'Alkoe.'

'Great Sir,' ſaid I, 'you miſtake 'me: I told you I came to make you 'a tender of it; I have proclaimed 'you king there, and freedom to the 'people: I have held an aſſembly of 'the kingdom; placed a governor; 'taken the engagement of himſelf and 'ſubjects to you; ſettled laws amongſt 'them for your benefit, the full third 'part of all their labour; have brought

'ten

'ten deputies, two from each denomi-
'nation of people among them: and
'they only wait your command to be
'admitted, to beg your acceptance of
'their ſubmiſſion, and pray your royal
'protection.'

'Father,' ſays the king, 'you amaze
'me! but, as it is your doing, let them
'come in.'

The deputies being received, and heard by Maleck, their interpreter, very graciouſly, the king told them, in a very favourable ſpeech, that whatever his father had done, or ſhould do, they might accept as done by himſelf; and commanded them to remind the governor, for whom he had the higheſt eſteem, to obſerve the laws, without the leaſt deviation, till his father ſhould make ſuch farther additions as were conſiſtent with his own honour and their future freedom: and having feaſted them in a moſt magnificent manner, they returned, highly ſatisfied with the honours they had received.

This tranſaction being immediately noiſed abroad, all the colambs came themſelves; and the great cities, by their deputies, ſent his majeſty their compliments upon the occaſion; and there was nothing but mirth and rejoicing throughout the whole kingdom. And thoſe who had refuſed going with me, as Maleck told me, hung their heads for ſhame and ſorrow, that they had miſſed the opportunity of bearing a part in the expedition.

I demonſtrated to the king, that the only way to preſerve that kingdom was to ſettle a large colony on the plains, between the mountain and the ſea, to intercept clandeſtine trade, and make a ſtand againſt any force that might be ſent from the Little-lands to recover the mines. And I promiſed to be preſent at the ſettlement, and an aſſiſtant in it.

Moſt of the colambs, as I ſaid, being at court upon this complimentary affair, the king ſummoned them for their advice on my propoſals; and told them he had ordered me to lay before them my thoughts on the affairs of that kingdom; and, after many compliments and encomiums had paſſed on me, I told them the neceſſity of the colony, the commodity that would ariſe from it, how I intended to manage it, and what proſpect I had of introducing amongſt them ſeveral extraordinary conveniences they had never before had.

The colambs, who, for want of practice this way, knew but little of the matter, thinking, nevertheleſs, that in the general turn of things, they muſt ſomehow come in for a ſhare, approved of all I ſaid. I deſired them then to ſettle, out of what part of the people, and how to be nominated, ſuch choice of the colony as ſhould be made for the new ſettlement; but found them much at a loſs to fix on any method of doing it. So I told them, I believed it would be the beſt way to iſſue an order for ſuch as would willingly go, to repair to a particular rendezvous; and in caſe ſufficient ſhould not appear voluntarily, to iſſue another order, that the colambs, out of their ſeveral diſtricts, ſhould compleat the number, ſo as to make a body of twelve thouſand men of arms, beſides women and children; and that ſuch a territory ſhould be allotted to each, with ſo much wood-grounds, in common to all, as would ſuffice for their ſubſiſtence: all which paſſed the vote.

I then told them, that this large people muſt have an head, or governor, to keep them to their duties, and to determine matters of property, and all diſputes amongſt them. Here they one and all nominated me; but I told them, I apprehended I could be more uſeful other ways, having too many things in my head for the general good, to confine myſelf to any particular province; but if they would excuſe me in preſuming to recommend a perſon, it ſhould be Naſgig. And immediately Naſgig being ſent for, and accepting it, they conferred it upon him.

All things, as I judged, went on in ſo ſmooth a way, in reference to the new colony, that I was preparing, with the aſſiſtance of the proper officer, expreſſes to be ſent with the king's gripſacks, into the ſeveral provinces, with notice of theſe orders, and an appointment for a rendezvous. But while this was doing, abundance of people came crouding about me, to be informed, whether I thought it ſafe for them to go; and I believe I had fully ſatisfied all their ſcruples, when by ſome management of the ragans, who, having ſo long declared Mount Alkoe to be inhabited by Mindrack, did not care the people ſhould all of a ſudden find out they had deceived them, there was a report ran current, that though I and my bearers, who were all Mount Alkoe men, returned ſafe, yet if any of

the

the Brandleguarpines had gone, they would never have come back again. This rumour coming to my ears, and fearing whitherto it might grow, I had no ſmall proſpect of a diſappointment; and I thereupon ſtopped iſſuing the orders till I had conſidered what farther to do in the affair: at length, being perſuaded I had already ſatisfied abundance of their ſcruples, and in order to diſſipate the doubts of others, and to familiarize them in ſome meaſure to the country and people of Mount Alkoe, I propoſed a prize to be flown for, and gave notice of it for ſix days all about the country, both to thoſe of Mount Alkoe, and thoſe of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti; that whoever, except thoſe who were with me in the late expedition, ſhould make the moſt ſpeedy flight to the governor's of Mount Alkoe, to carry a meſſage, and bring me an anſwer from Laſmeel, ſhould have one of my piſtols, with a quantity of powder, and ſo many balls; and the perſon who ſhould be ſecond, ſhould have a cutlaſs and belt. The time being fixed, very few had entered in the firſt two or three days; but on the third day came ſeveral over from Alkoe to enter, which the Brandleguarpines ſeeing, and having equal inclination to the prize, after half a dozen of them had entered on the fourth morning, before noon on the fifth, I had near ſixty of them on my liſt, beſides the Alkoe men; making in all about one hundred.

The time of ſtarting was fixed for the ſixth morning, from off the rock, on the back-ſide of the palace, upon my firing a piſtol.

This unuſual diverſion occaſioned a prodigious confluence of ſpectators; for ſcarce a perſon in Brandleguarp, except thoſe who were either too young or too old for flight, but were upon one or other of the rocks: even the king himſelf and all his court were there, with infinite numbers from all diſtant parts.

I had diſpatched a letter, by one of my old bearers, to Laſmeel ſome days before, to inform him of it, that he might get two letters ready wrote, one to deliver to the firſt, and another to the ſecond meſſenger; but not to take farther notice of the reſt: now, my flight-race being for the equal benefit of both the kingdoms, it happened, as I was in hopes it would, that ſo many of the Mount Alkoans coming over to me to be entered, and ſtaying with me till the flight began; and ſuch vaſt numbers of perſons meeting of both nations upon the black mountains, to ſee them go and return; and ſeveral of the Swangeantines going, out of bravado, quite through with the flyers; the intercourſe of the two nations was that day ſo great, and the diſcourſe they had with the natives and miners, ſo ſtripped the Swangeantines of their old apprehenſions of danger from Mount Alkoe, that in three days after the whole dread of the place was vaniſhed, and he would then have been thought mad who had attempted to revive it.

The time being come, I ſet my flyers in a row on the outer edge of the rock; and having given notice that no one ſhould preſume to riſe till the flyers were on the graundee, and at ſuch a diſtance, I then let the flyers know I ſhould ſoon give fire; which I had no ſooner done but down they all dropped as one man, as it were, headlong from the edge of the mountain; and preſently the whole field were after them. They ſkimmed with incredible ſwiftneſs croſs the face of the plain, between the rock and the mountain; the force of which deſcent ſwung them as it were up the mountain's ſide in an almoſt upright poſture; till ſeeming to ſweep the edge of the mountain with their bellies, they ſlid over it's ſurface, till they were loſt in the body of the Swangean, our rocks echoing the ſhouts of the mountaineers. I fired my piſtol, by my watch, at nine o'clock in the morning, but had no occaſion to enquire when it was thought they would return, for every one was paſſing his opinion upon it. Some ſaid, it could not be till midnight, or very near it; and others, that it would be almoſt next morning. However, we went to dinner, and coming again about ſix o'clock by my watch, I was told by the people on the rock, as the general opinion, (for it was then top-full) that they could not yet be expected a long time; and the major part concluded they could not be half way home yet; when, on a ſudden, we heard a prodigious ſhout from the mountain, which growing nearer and nearer to us, and louder and louder,

in a few moments came a ſlim young fellow, and nimbly alighting on the rock, tripped briſkly forward, as not able to ſtop himſelf at once, from the violence of the force he came with, and delivered me a letter from Laſmeel as I was ſitting in my chair. I gave him joy of the prize, and ordered him to come to my apartment ſo ſoon as I got home, and he ſhould have it. I then aſked him where he left the other flyers: he told me, he knew nothing of them ſince he came paſt the forges in his return; for there he met them going to Laſmeel. 'Why that,' ſays I, 'muſt be a great way on this 'ſide the governor's.' He told me, about half an hour's flight. I then told him, as he muſt be ſtrained with ſo hard a flight, it would be better if he laid down, and called on me in the morning. He thanked me; and after he had told me his name was Walſi, he ſaid he would take my advice; and, ſpringing up as light as air, went off, the rock being quite thronged with thoſe who had followed from the mountain to ſee the victor.

When Walſi came in, it was juſt ſeven o'clock by my watch; ſo that, according to the beſt computation by miles I could make from their deſcriptions of things, I judged he had flown at little more or leſs than at the rate of a mile a minute.

I ſtayed till near nine o'clock upon the rock, where it being cold, and the time tedious, I was taking Quilly home with me, and deſigned that Maleck ſhould wait for the coming of the ſecond; but hearing again a ſhout from the mountain, I reſolved to ſee the ſecond come in myſelf. The noiſe increaſing, I preſently ſaw the whole air full of people, very near me, for I had retired near two hundred paces from the edge of the rock to give room to the flyers to alight, and expected nothing leſs than to be borne down by them; when I ſpied two competitors, one juſt over the back of the other, the uppermoſt bearing down upon the other's graundee, their heads being juſt equal; ſo that the under man perceiving it impoſſible to ſink lower for the rock, or to mount higher, for the man above him, and as darting ſideways would loſe time, and fearing to bruſh his belly againſt the rock, he ſlackened, juſt to job up his head in his antagoniſt's ſtomach; which giving the upper man a ſmart check with the pain, and the under-one ſtriking, at that inſtant, one bold ſtroke with his graundee, he fell juſt with his head at my feet, and the other upon him, with his head in the under man's neck.

Thus they lay, for a conſiderable time, breathleſs and motionleſs, ſave the working of their lungs, and heaving of their breaſts; when each aſked me if he was not the firſt, and the under man giving me a letter; I told them, 'No,' Walſi had been in almoſt two hours ago. They both ſaid, it was impoſſible; they were ſure no glumm in the Doorpt could out-fly either of them. I ordered them both to call on me in the morning, and I would ſee they ſhould have right done to their pretenſions. The under man had but juſt told me his name was Naggitt, when another arrived, who, ſeeing Naggitt before him, told me he was ſure he was ſecond; but on ſeeing the other alſo, he gave it up.

I would ſtay no longer, it being now ſo late; but the next morning I was informed, that all the reſt had ſtopped at the mountain but two, who were obliged to give out before, being overſtrained, and unable to hold it.

The next morning, Walſi was the firſt at my apartment, when I happened to be with the king; and, ſpeaking of his buſineſs to Quilly, he ordered him to ſtay in my gallery till I came back; and Quilly preſently after ſeeing Youwarkee, told her the victor at the flight-race was waiting for me in the gallery. Youwarkee, who had great curioſity to ſee him, having heard how long he came in before the reſt, ſtepped into the gallery, and taking a turn or two there, fell into diſcourſe with him about his flight. And, as women are very inquiſitive, ſhe diſtinguiſhed, by the flyer's anſwers, ſpeech, ſhape, and manner of addreſs, that it was certainly a gawrey ſhe was talking with; though ſhe had endeavoured to diſguiſe herſelf, by rolling in her hair, and tying it round her head with a broad chaplet, like a man; and by the thinneſs of her body, and flatneſs of her breaſts, might fairly enough have paſſed for one, to a leſs penetrating eye than Youwarkee's. But Youwarkee putting ſome queſtions to her, and ſaying ſhe was more like a gawrey

than

than a glumm, ſhe put the poor girl (for ſo it was) to the bluſh, and at laſt ſhe confeſſed the deceit; but, upon her knees, begged Youwarkee not to mention it, for it would be her undoing.

This confeſſion gave Youwarkee a fair opportunity of aſking how ſhe came to be an adventurer for this ſort of prize. The girl, finding there was no remedy, frankly confeſſed, ſhe had a ſtrong affection for a glumm-boſs, who was a very ſtout glumm, ſhe ſaid, but ſomewhat too corpulent for ſpeedy flight; who ever ſince the prize had been propoſed, could reſt neither night nor day, to think he was not ſo well qualified to put in for it as others; eſpecially one Naggitt, who he well knew made his addreſſes to her, and alſo was an adventurer. 'Had it 'been a matter of ſtrength, valour, 'or manhood,' ſays he, 'I had had 'the beſt of chances for it; but to be 'under a natural incapacity of ob-'taining ſo glorious a prize, as even 'the king himſelf is not maſter of 'ſuch another, I cannot bear it!' She then ſaid, he had told her, he was reſolved to give in his name, and do his utmoſt, though he died in the flight. 'What!' ſaid he, 'ſhall I ſee Nag-'gitt run away with it, and, perhaps, 'with you too, when he has that to 'lay at your feet which no glumm 'elſe can boaſt of? No, I'll overcome, 'or never come home without it.'— 'I muſt confeſs, Madam,' ſays Walſi, 'as I knew his high ſpirit could never 'bear to be vanquiſhed, I was afraid 'he would be as good as his word, 'and come to ſome unlucky end; and 'told him, that though he need not 'have feared being conqueror in any 'thing elſe, had it been propoſed, yet 'in flight, there were ſo many, half 'glumms as they were, who from 'their effeminate make and ſize, and 'little value for any thing elſe, would 'certainly be in before him; that it 'was unworthy of a thorough glumm 'to contend with them, for what 'could be obtained only by thoſe who 'had no right to, or ſhare in any 'thing more excellent; and that he 'muſt therefore not think of more 'than his fatigue for his pains. But 'as he had ſet his heart ſo much upon 'it, I would enter, and try to get it 'for him; as, from my ſize and make, 'I believed few would have a better 'chance for it than myſelf. And, 'thanks to Collwar, Madam,' ſays ſhe, 'I hope to make him eaſy in it, 'if you will but pleaſe to conceal 'your knowledge of who and what 'I am.'

Youwarkee was mightily pleaſed with her ſtory, and promiſed ſhe would; but engaged her to come again to her apartment, ſo ſoon as ſhe was poſſeſſed of the prize.

When I returned, hearing Walſi waited for me, I called him in, read the letter he brought, and finding it Laſmeel's, I looked over my liſt for Walſi's name, for I ſet them all down as they entered; and finding it the very laſt name of all, and that it was entered but on the morning the race was flown, 'So,' ſays I, 'Walſi, I 'find the laſt at entering is the firſt at 'returning; but I ſee you have been 'there, by what Laſmeel has ſent me; 'though there were ſome laſt night 'who queſtioned it, by your ſo ſpeedy 'return. Here,' ſays I, 'take the 'prize, and ſee they are only uſed in 'the ſervice of your country:' and then I diſmiſſed him.

My two competitors appeared next for the cutlaſs; and had each of them many arguments to prevail with me, in favour of him, but I told them, I muſt do juſtice; and that, though the difference was ſo ſmall between them, yet certainly Naggitt was the neareſt me at the time they both ceaſed flight, his face lying on my foot; ſo that as they both complained of foul play, and were therefore equal in that reſpect, Naggitt in juſtice muſt have it. And I gave it him with theſe words, however: 'Take it, Naggitt, as certain-'ly yours by the law of the race, but 'with a diffidence in myſelf who beſt 'deſerves it.'

I own I pitied the other man's caſe very much, as I ſhould Naggitt's, had the other won it; but ſeeing the other turning away, and hearing him ſay, 'But by half a head! when I had 'ſtrove ſo hard!' as in a ſort of dejection, I told them, they were both brave glumms, and of intrepid reſolution; and gave him alſo one, with the like inſtruction as to Walſi.

Walſi went from me, as ſhe had promiſed, to Youwarkee, who wanted more diſcourſe with her; for in an af-

fair of love, her gentle heart could have dwelt all day upon the repetition of any circumſtances which would create delight in the enamoured. Youwarkee and Walſi ſat on thorns, wanting to be gone; but Youwarkee aſking queſtion upon queſtion, Walſi got up, and begged ſhe would excuſe her, ſhe would come and ſtay at any other time. 'But,' ſays ſhe, 'Madam, 'when the man one loves is in pain, '(for I am ſure he is on the rack for 'fear of a diſcovery, till he ſees me) 'if you ever loved yourſelf, you can-'not blame me for preſſing to relieve 'him.'

When ſhe was gone, Youwarkee, finding me alone, was ſo full of Walſi's adventure ſhe could not be ſilent; but after twenty round-about ſpeeches, and promiſes that I was to make, not to be angry with any body, or undo any thing I had done that day, and I know not what, out came the ſtory. I was prodigiouſly pleaſed with it, and wiſhed I had taken more notice of her. Says Youwarkee, 'I endeavoured to 'keep her till you had done, that you 'might have ſeen her.—'And why 'did not you?' ſays I. 'My dear,' ſays Youwarkee, 'had you ſeen the 'poor creature's uneaſineſs till ſhe got 'off with it, yourſelf could not have 'had the heart to have deferred that 'pleaſure you would have perceived 'ſhe expected when ſhe came home; 'nor could you in conſcience have 'detained her.

CHAP. XX.

THE RACE RECONCILES THE TWO KINGDOMS—THE COLONY PROCEEDS—BUILD A CITY—PETER VIEWS THE COUNTRY AT A DISTANCE—HEARS OF A PROPHECY OF THE KING OF NORBON'S DAUGHTER STYGEE—GOES THITHER—KILLS THE KING'S NEPHEW—FULFILS THE PROPHECY, BY ENGAGING STYGEE TO GEORIGETTI—RETURNS.

THIS race, notwithſtanding all that the ragans could ſay to keep up their credit, and to prevent the people's perceiving what fools they had made of them, had ſo good and ſudden an effect on the people's prejudices, that upon iſſuing the firſt proclamation, there was no occaſion for the ſecond; for at leaſt twenty-five thouſand men appeared voluntarily at the rendezvous, of the old ſlaves, whoſe maſters, though they were declared free, had uſed divers devices to oppreſs them, and render even their freedom a ſort of ſlavery, beſides women and children: ſo that we had now only to pick and chuſe thoſe who would be likelieſt to be of ſervice to the new colony.

Naſgig and I differed now about the choice of perſons; he, as a ſoldier, was for taking moſtly ſingle young men, and I for taking whole families, though ſome were either too old or too young for war; and, upon farther conſideration, he agreed with me; for I told him, young men would leave a father, mother, or miſtreſs, behind them, which would either cauſe a hankering after home, and conſequently the bad example of deſertion, or elſe create an uneaſy ſpirit, and perhaps a general diſtaſte to the ſettlement, ſo we choſe thoſe whole families, where they offered, which had the moſt young men in them, firſt; then others, in like order; after that, man by man, aſking them ſeverally, if any woman they liked would go with them; and if ſo, we took her, till we had about thirteen thouſand fighting men, beſides old men, women, and children; and then, marching by the palace, the king ordered ten days ſtores for every mouth, and with this we took our flight: but as I was always fearful of a concourſe in the air, Naſgig led them, and I brought up the rear.

Beſides the above number of people, I believe we could not have leſs than ten thouſand volunteers to the black mountain; ſome to take leave of their friends, and others out of curioſity to ſee our flight. I took three pieces of cannon with me, and proper ſtores.

Our firſt ſtage, after a ſhort halt on the black mountain, was to the governor's palace; where Gadſi received us with great reſpect. I told him my errand, which he approved; 'For,' ſays he, 'countryman, it is now as 'much my intereſt to keep my old 'maſters out, as ever it was to ſerve 'them when in: and you have taken 'the only method in the world to 'do it effectually. I conſulted him

where

where I ſhould fix my colony; and, by his advice, fixed it on this ſide the wood, with ſome ſcattering habitations behind the wood, as watch-houſes, to give notice of an enemy, having the wood for ſhelter, before they could reach the town, and, at the worſt, the town for a retreat.

I found, by Gadſi, that the ſhips from the Little-lands were ſoon expected, for that, he ſaid, the zaps knew nothing yet of the change of government, nor could, till the ſhips returned: he aſked me, as there was now a good lading, whether I thought fit to let them have it upon proper terms. I told him, I would not hinder their having the metals, or endeavour to ſtop their trade in the leaſt; but ſhould be glad to treat with them about it myſelf.

I gave the forge-men deſcriptions for making ſhovels, ſpades, pickaxes, hammers, and abundance of other iron implements I ſhould want in the building the new town; all which we got ready, and carried with us. We then took flight, and alighted on the ſpot of our intended city; and having viewed the ground ſome miles each way, we drew the out-lines, and ſet a great number of hands to cutting down trees, digging holes, and making trenches for the foundations. In ſhort, we were all hands at it, and the women fetched the proviſions; but I was obliged to ſhew them every ſingle ſtep they were to take, towards the new erections: and, I muſt ſay, it was with great pleaſure I did it, they ſeldom wanting to be told twice, having as quick an apprehenſion of what they heard or ſaw, as any people I had ever met with.

The whole city, according to our plan, was to conſiſt of ſeveral long ſtraight ſtreets, parallel to each other, with gardens backwards each way, and traverſe-paſſages at proper diſtances, to croſs each ſtreet, from one to the other, quite through the whole city.

While this work was in hand, I took a progreſs to view the other country Maleck had told me of. We had not taken a very long flight, before we ſaw at a diſtance ſeveral perſons of that country travelling to Mount Alkoe for metals. I had a great mind to have ſome talk with them about their kingdom, and ordered my bearers to go to them; they told me, they durſt not, for one of them would kill ten men. I did not chuſe to force them to it, for fear of ſome miſchief; but obſerving which way they came, and that they came in ſeveral ſmall bodies, of ſix or eight together, and that there was a little wood, and ſome bushes between me and them, I ordered my bearers to ſink beneath the trees out of their ſight, and to ground me juſt at the foot of the wood; for I reſolved to know ſomething more of them before we parted.

I lay perdue, till they arrived within ſixty paces of me; then aſking Maleck if he knew their language, and he telling me he did, having often converſed with them at the mines, I bid him greet them, and tell them I was a friend, and be ſure to ſtand by me. There were ſeven of them, and many more at different diſtances. I ſhewed myſelf, and Maleck ſpoke to them, when two or three of the hindermoſt ran quite away; one ſtood and looked very ſurly; but the reſt, who had ſtood with him, turning to run, I bid Maleck tell him, if he did not call them back, I would kill them. He that ſtood then called to them, but they mending their pace upon it, I let fly, and ſhot one in the ſhoulder; who dropping, I was afraid I had killed him. I then went up to the other, who had not ſtirred even at the report of the gun; ſeeming quite terrified. I took him by the hand, and kiſſed it; which made him recover himſelf a little, and he took mine and kiſſed it.

I bid Maleck tell him I was a great traveller, and only wanted to talk with him; but ſeeing the man I had ſhot ſtir, I went to him, and by Maleck told him I was ſorry I had hurt him; which I ſhould not have attempted, had he not ſhewn a miſtruſt of me by running away, for I could not bear that: this I ſaid to keep the other with me. I ſaw I had hurt his ſhoulder, but, being at a great diſtance, the ball had not entered the blade-bone, but ſtopping there, had fallen out; ſo tying my handkerchief over it, I told him I hoped it would ſoon be well.

I enquired into their country, it's name, the intent of their journey this way, their trades, the fruits, birds, and beaſts of the country.

The man I had ſhot, I found, was in pain, which gave me no little con-

cern;

cern; ſo I chiefly applied myſelf to the other, who told me the name of his country was Norbon, a large kingdom, and very populous, he ſaid, in ſome parts of it, and was governed by Oniwheſke, an old and good king. 'He 'has only one daughter,' ſays he, 'named Stygee; ſo that I am afraid, 'when he dies, it will go to a good 'for nothing nephew of his, a deſperate debauched man; who will probably ruin us, and deſtroy that kingdom, which has been in the Oniwheſke family theſe fifteen hundred 'years.'—'Won't his daughter have 'the kingdom,' ſays I, 'after his 'death, or her children?'—'Children,' ſays he, 'no, that's the pity; 'all would be well if ſhe had but children, and the ſtate continue fifteen 'hundred years longer in the ſame good 'family.'—'How is it poſſible for any 'one to know that?' ſays I. 'You 'may know how long it has, but how 'long it will laſt, is mere gueſs-work.' —'No,' ſays he, 'this very time, and 'the preſent circumſtances of our kingdom, were foretold at the birth of the 'firſt king we ever had, who was of 'the preſent royal family.'—'How 'ſo?' ſays I. 'Why,' ſays he, 'before we had any king, we had a very 'good old man, who lived retired in 'a cave by the ſea; and to him every 'body, under their difficulties, repaired for advice. This old man happening to be very ill, every body 'was under great affliction for fear 'they ſhould loſe him; when flocking 'to his aſſiſtance, he told them, they 'need not fear his death till the birth 'of a king, who ſhould reign fifteen 'hundred years. At hearing this, all 'perſons then preſent apprehended 'that his diſorder had turned his brain; 'but he perſiſted in it, and recovered.

'After a few years, a great number 'of perſons being about him, he told 'them he muſt now depart, for that 'their king was born, and pointed to a 'ſucking child a poor woman had then 'in her arms. It cauſed a great wonder 'in his audience, at the thoughts of 'that poor child's ever becoming a 'king; but he told them, it was ſo 'decreed; and farther, that as he was 'to die the next day, if they would 'gather all together, he would let them 'know what was to come in future 'times.

'When they were met, the woman 'and child being amongſt them, he 'told them, that child was their king; 'and that his loins ſhould produce 'them a race of kings for fifteen hundred years; during which time, 'they ſhould be happily governed: 'but then a female inhabitant of the 'ſkies ſhould claim the dominion, and, 'together with the kingdom, be utterly 'deſtroyed, unleſs a meſſenger from 'above, with a crown in each hand, 'ſhould procure her a male of her 'own kind; and then the kingdom 'ſhould remain for the like number of 'years to her poſterity. Now,' ſays he, 'the time will expire very ſoon, and 'as no one has been, or it is believed 'will ever come, with two ſuch crowns, 'the Princeſs Stygee, though ſhe undoubtedly will try for it, has little 'hopes of ſucceeding her father; for 'her couſin Felbamko pretends, as no 'woman ever reigned with us, he is 'the right heir, and will have the 'kingdom.'—'Pray,' ſays I, 'what 'do you mean by an inhabitant of the 'air?'—'O,' ſays he, 'ſhe flies.'—'And do moſt of your country folks 'fly?' ſays I, 'for I perceive you 'you don't.'—'No,' ſays he, 'no 'one but the Princeſs Stygee.'—'How 'comes that about?' ſays I. 'Her 'mother, when ſhe was with child with 'her,' ſays he, 'being one day in a 'wood near the palace, and having 'ſtraggled from her company, was attacked by a man with a graundee, 'who, not knowing her, claſped her 'within his graundee, and would have 'debauched her; but perceiving her 'cries had brought ſome of her ſervants to her aſſiſtance, he quitted her, 'and went off: this accident threw 'her into ſuch a fright, that it was a 'long time before ſhe recovered; and 'then was delivered of a daughter 'with a graundee.'—'My friend,' ſays I, 'your meeting with me will be 'a very happy affair for your kingdom. I am the man the princeſs 'expects; go back to the princeſs and 'let her and her father know, I will 'be with them in ſix days, and eſtabliſh his dominions in the princeſs.'

The fellow looked at me, thinking I joked, but never offered to ſtir a foot. 'Why don't you go?' ſays I. 'And 'for the good news you bear to the 'princeſs, I'll ſee you ſhall be made

'one

' one of the greateſt men in Norbon.' The man ſmiled ſtill, but could not conceive I was in earneſt: I aſked him then how long he ſhould be in going to the palace; he ſaid three days at ſooneſt; 'Deliver but your meſſage 'right,' ſays I, 'and I'll aſſure you 'it ſhall be the better for you.' The man ſeeing me look ſerious, did at length believe me, and promiſed he would obey me punctually; but he had not ſeen how I came to the place he met me at, for I had ordered my bearers into the wood with my chair, before I ſhewed myſelf.

He arrived, as I afterwards found, at the palace, the fourth morning very early; and paſſing the guard in a great heat, with much ado was introduced to the king, and diſcharged himſelf of my meſſage. His majeſty giving no credit to him, thought he had been mad; but he affirming it to be true, and telling the king at what a diſtance I had knocked down his companion, and made a great hole in his back, only holding up a thing I had in my hand, which made a great noiſe; Oniwheſke ordered his daughter to come before him, who having herſelf heard the man's report, and being very willing to believe it, with the king's leave, deſired that the meſſenger might be detained till the appointed day, and taken care of; and that preparation ſhould be made for the reception of the ſtranger, in caſe it ſhould be true.

The noiſe of my coming, and my errand, excited every one's curioſity to ſee me arrive; and the day being come, I hovered over the city a conſiderable time, to be ſure of grounding right. The king and his daughter, on the rumour of my appearing, came forth to view me, and receive me at my alighting. The people were collected into a large ſquare, on one ſide of the palace, and ſtanding in ſeveral cluſters at different places, I judged where the king might ſeem moſt likely to be, and ordered my bearers to alight there; but I happened upon the moſt unlucky poſt, as it might have proved, and at the ſame time the moſt lucky I could have found there; for I had ſcarce raiſed myſelf from my chair, but Felbamko puſhing up to me through the throng, and lifting up a large club he had in his hand, had certainly diſpatched me, if I had not at the inſtant, drawn a piſtol from my girdle, and ſhot him dead upon the ſpot; inſomuch, that the club which was then over my head, fell gently down on my ſhoulder.

I did not then know who it was I had killed; but for fear of a freſh attempt, I drew out another piſtol and my cutlaſs, and enquiring at which part of the ſquare the king was, I walked directly up to him, he not as yet knowing what had happened. His majeſty and his daughter met me, and welcomed me into his dominions. I fell at the king's feet, telling him I brought a meſſage, which I hoped would excuſe my entering his majeſty's dominions without the formality of obtaining his leave.

When we came to the palace, the king ordered ſome refreſhments to be given me and my ſervants; and then that I ſhould be conducted to the room of audience.

The report of Felbamko's death had reached the palace before us, and that it was by my hand: this greatly ſurprized the whole court, but proved agreeable news to Stygee.

At my entrance into the room of audience, the king was ſitting at the farther end of it againſt the wall, with his daughter on his right-hand; and a ſeat was placed for me at his left, but nearer to the middle of the room ſideways, on which I was ordered to ſit down: there were abundance of the courtiers preſent, and above me was a ſeat ordered for one of them, who I found afterwards was one of the religious.

His majeſty aſked me aloud how it happened, that the firſt moment of my entering his dominions I ſhould dip my hands in blood, and that, too, of one of his neareſt relations.

I then got up to make my anſwer; but his majeſty ordering me to my ſeat again, I told him, that as it was moſt certain I knew no one perſon in his kingdom, ſo it could not be ſuppoſed I could have an ill deſign againſt any one, eſpecially againſt that royal blood, into whoſe hands I then came to render myſelf; but the truth was, that what I had done was in preſervation of my own life; for that the perſon ſlain had ruſhed through the crowd upon me with a great club, intending to murder me; and that whilſt the

blow

blow was over my head, I killed him in such position, that by his fall the club rested on my shoulder, but was then too weak to hurt me.

The king asking if that was the real case, several from the lower end of the room said they were informed it was; and one in particular said he saw the transaction, and I had declared it faithfully. 'Then,' says the king, 'you are acquitted: and, now, what brings you hither? relate your business.'

'Great Sir,' says I, 'it is my peculiar happiness to be appointed by Providence as the proposer of a marriage for the princess Stygee, your daughter, with a potent neighbouring monarch; having already been enabled to perform things past belief for his honour. Know then, great Sir, I am a native of the north, and, through infinite perils and hardships, at last arrived in the dominions of Georigetti, where I have given peace to his state by the death of the usurper Harlokin. I have also just conquered the kingdom of Mount Alkoe for my master, and am here come to make your daughter an offer of both crowns, and also of all that is my master's, with his person in marriage.'

The old priest then rose, and said, May it please your majesty, we are almost right: but what has always staggered me, is, how the person should come; for the messenger to us on this errand is to come from above. Now this person has not the graundee, and therefore could not come from thence: as for the rest, I understand the prince from whom he brings this offer to your daughter has the graundee, and so is a male of her own kind; and I understand the two kingdoms in his possession to be the two crowns in the messenger's hands; but, I say, what I stick at is, his coming from above.'

'What,' says Stygee, 'did not you see him come?' — 'No,' says he. 'O,' says she, 'he came in the air, and was a long time over the city before he descended.'—'That's impossible,' says the old priest; 'for he is smooth, like us.'—'Indeed, Sir,' says she, 'I saw him, and so did most of the court.' The king and nobles then attesting this truth—'Sir,' says the priest to the king, 'it is compleated, and your majesty must do the rest.'

'I little expected,' says the king, 'to see this day—and now, daughter, as this message was designed for you, you only can answer it; but still I must say it surpasses my comprehension, that in the decree of Providence it should be so ordered, that the very hand which brings the accomplishment of what has been so long since foretold us, should, without design, have first destroyed all that could have rendered the marriage-state uncomfortable to you.'

Stygee then declared she submitted to fate and her father's will.

I staid here a week to view the country and the sea, which I heard was not far off. Here were many useful beasts for food and burden, fowls also in plenty, and fish near the sea-coasts, and the people eat flesh; so that I thought myself amongst mankind again. I made all the remarks the shortness of the time would allow, and then, taking my leave, departed.

I returned to the colony, where I heard that the Little-landers had been on the coast; but I not being there, or any lading ready, they were gone away again: however, they had detained two of them. I was pleased with that, but sorry they were returned empty.

I examined the prisoners; and, by giving them liberty and good usage, they settled amongst us; and the next fleet that came, the sailors to a man were all my own the moment they could get to shore: this, though I thought it would have spoiled our trade at first, brought the islanders and me to the following compromise, and upon this occasion. Their ships having laid on our coasts one whole season for want of hands to carry them back, I came to an agreement with their commanders, (for they were all willing to return) that such a number of them should be left as hostages with me till the return of a number of my own men, which I should lend them to navigate their ships home; and I sent word to the zaps, that as it might be beneficial to us both to keep the trade still on foot, to prevent the like inconveniences for the future, I would buy their shipping, paying for them in metals, and agree to furnish them yearly with such a quantity of my goods at a stated

a ſtated price, and would ſend them by my own people; which they approving, the trade went on in a very agreeable and profitable manner, and we in time built ſeveral new veſſels of our own, and employed abundance of hands in the trade, and had plenty of handicraftſmen of different occupations, each of whom I obliged to keep three natives under him, to be trained up in his buſineſs.

CHAP. XXI.

A DISCOURSE ON MARRIAGE BETWEEN PETER AND GEORIGETTI—PETER PROPOSES STYGEE—THE KING ACCEPTS IT—RELATES HIS TRANSACTIONS AT NORBON—THE MARRIAGE IS CONSUMMATED—ACCOUNT OF THE MARRIAGE-CEREMONY—PETER GOES TO NORBON—OPENS A FREE TRADE TO MOUNT ALKOE—GETS TRADERS TO SETTLE AT NORBON—CONVOYS CATTLE TO MOUNT ALKOE.

AT my return to Saſa Doorpt Swangeanti, I went directly to the king, and giving him an account of the ſettlement, and my proceedings thereon, he told me his whole kingdom would not be an equivalent for the ſervices I had done him. I begged of him to look on them in no other light than as flowing from my duty; but if, when I ſhould be no more, he or his children would be gracious to my family, it was all I deſired.

'This, father,' ſays the king, 'I can undertake for myſelf; but who's to come after me, nobody knows, for I ſhall never marry. Not Yaccombourſe has given me a ſurfeit of woman-kind; and unleſs the ſtates will ſettle the kingdom on you, to which I will conſent, it will probably be torn to pieces again by different competitors; for I am the laſt of the line of Begſurbeck, and of all the blood-royals; and, indeed, who is ſo proper to maintain it flouriſhing, as he who has brought it to the preſent perfection?'

'Great Sir,' ſays I, 'my ambition riſes no higher than to abound in good deeds whilſt I live, and to perfect my children in the ſame principle; and this, I hope, will entitle them to a ſupport when I am gone. But,' ſays I, 'why is your majeſty ſo averſe from marriage, merely on account of a woman you could not expect to be true to you?'—'Not expect it!' ſays he, 'what ſtronger tie upon earth could ſhe have had to be true, than my affection, and all that my kingdom could afford her?'—'Weak things all, Sir,' ſays I. 'Why, what could ſhe have had?' ſays he, in ſome warmth. 'Honour, Sir,' ſays I, 'and virtue, both which ſhe abandoned to become yours; and thoſe once loſt, how could you expect her to be true?'—'You are too hard for me, father,' ſays he, 'but they are all alike, and I don't believe there's a grain of honour in any of them.'—'In any of them like Yaccombourſe, I admit, Sir,' ſays I; 'but think not ſo of others, for no part of our ſpecies abounds more with it, or is more tender of it, than a good woman; and, take my word for it, Sir, there is more real ſincerity in an ordinary wife than in the moſt extraordinary miſtreſs. We are all biaſſed naturally by intereſt; and as there can be but one real intereſt between the man and wife, ſo the intereſt of a miſtreſs is, and ever will be, only to accommodate herſelf; for it's all one to her with whom ſhe engages, ſo ſhe can raiſe but the market by a change. Now, if your majeſty could find an agreeable and virtuous wife, one deſerving of your royal perſon and bed, and perhaps with a kingdom for her dowry, a partner fit to ſhare your cares as well as glory, would it not be a great pleaſure to you to be poſſeſſed of ſuch a mate; and to ſee heirs ariſing under your joint tuition, to convey down your royal blood to the lateſt poſterity? Would not this, I ſay, be a grateful reflection to you in your declining years?'

'Truly, father,' ſays the king, 'as you have painted it, the proſpect could not fail to pleaſe; and under the circumſtances you have put it, it would meet my approbation: but where is ſuch a thing as a woman of this character to be found? I fear only in the imagination.'

'Sir,' ſays I, after a ſeeming muſe for ſome time, 'what ſhould you think of Oniwheſke, the king of Norbon's

'daughter; he has but that one child, 'I hear?'—'Dear father, have done,' ſays his majeſty; 'to what purpoſe 'ſhould you mention her? We but 'barely know that there is ſuch a ſtate, 'we have never had an intercourſe; 'and, beſides, as you ſay he has but 'one child, can you ſuppoſe ſhe will 'ever marry, to leave ſo fine a king-'dom, and live here?'—'But, Sir,' ſays I, 'now we are ſuppoſing, ſup-'poſe ſhe ſhould, with her father's con-'ſent, be willing to marry you, would 'you have her for your queen?'—'To 'make any doubt of that, father,' ſays he, 'is almoſt to ſuppoſe me a fool.' —'Then, Sir,' ſays I, 'her father has 'conſented, and ſhe too; and if I durſt 'have preſumed ſo far, or had known 'your mind ſooner, ſhe would, I be-'lieve, have ventured with me to have 'become yours: but you might have 'ſlighted her, and crowned heads are 'not to be trifled with; but ſince you 'are pleaſed to ſhew your approbation 'of it, I can aſſure you, Sir, her per-'ſon will yield to none in your maje-'ſty's dominions; for, Sir, I have been 'there, and have ſeen her, and ſhe is 'your own, and her kingdom too, 'upon demand.'

'Father,' ſays the king, looking earneſtly at me; 'I have been fre-'quently, ſince I knew you firſt, in 'doubt of my own exiſtence; my life 'ſeems a dream to me; for if exiſtence 'is to be judged of by one's faculties 'only, I have been in ſuch a deluſion 'of them ever ſince, that as I find my-'ſelf unable to judge with certainty 'of any other thing, ſo I am ſubject 'to doubt whether I really exiſt. Are 'theſe things poſſible that you tell me, 'father?'

I then told him the whole affair, and adviſed him by all means to accept the offer, and marry the princeſs out of hand.

His majeſty, when I had brought him thoroughly to believe me, was as eager to conſummate the marriage, as I was to have him; but then, whether he ſhould go to her, or ſhe come to him, was the queſtion. I told him it was a thing unuſual for a ſovereign to quit his own dominions for a wife; but would adviſe an embaſſy to her father, with notice, that his majeſty would meet and eſpouſe her on the frontiers of the two kingdoms.

The ambaſſadors returning with an appointment of time and place, it was not above a month before I had ſettled Stygee on the thrones of Saſs Doorpt-Swangeanti and Mount Alkoe, with the reverſion of the kingdom of Norbon, without a competitor.

I ſhall here give you an account of the marriage-ceremony. The king being arrived on the borders, Stygee, who had waited but a few hours at the laſt village in Norbon, advanced to his majeſty on the very diviſion, as they called it, of the two kingdoms, a line being drawn to expreſs the bounds of each. The king and Stygee having talked apart from the company a little ſpace, each ſtanding hand in hand, on their own reſpective ground, the chief ragan advanced, and began the ceremony.

He firſt aſked each party aloud, if he and ſhe were willing to be united in body and affections, and would engage to continue ſo their whole lives; to which each party having anſwered aloud in the affirmative; 'Shew me then a 'token!' ſays he; and immediately each expanding the right-ſide of their graundees, laid it upon the other's left-ſide, ſo that they appeared then but as one body, ſtanding hand in hand, in-caſed round with the graundee. The ragan then having deſcanted upon the duties of marriage, concluded the ceremony with wiſhing them as fruitful as Perigen and Philella. So ſoon as it was over, and the gripſacks and voices had finiſhed an epithalamium, the bride and bridegroom taking wing, were conducted to Brandleguarp, amidſt the acclamations of an infinite number of Georigetti's ſubjects.

The king had made vaſt preparations for the reception of the princeſs Stygee; and nothing was to be heard or ſeen but feaſtings and rejoicing for many days: and his majeſty afterwards aſſured me of his entire ſatisfaction in my choice of his bride, without whom he confeſſed, that notwithſtanding the many other bleſſings I had procured him, his happineſs muſt have been incompleat.

Intending another flight to Norbon, I was charged with the king and queen's compliments to Oniwheſke; which having executed, I opened a free trade to Mount Alkoe; and hearing that ſmall veſſels came frequently on the

Norbonese

Norboneſe coaſt, to carry off the iron and other metals from thence unwrought, and paid part of their return in wrought metals, I ordered ſome of the next that came to be ſtopped, and brought to me; and the day before I had fixed for my departure, notice was ſent that twelve of thoſe traders were ſtopped, and in cuſtody at the ſea-ſide: I longed to ſee them, but then conſidering that it would take up more time to bring them to Apſilo the capital, where I was, than I ſhould take in going to them and returning, I reſolved to go and examine them myſelf.

They told me they traded with ſmall veſſels to Norbon for metals, which they carried home, and wrought great part of it themſelves, ſending it to, and diſperſing it in, ſeveral iſlands at a diſtance; and alſo ſold the unwrought to ſeveral people who carried it they knew not whither in great ſhips. They ſaid they kept abundance of hands at work in the trade. I aſked if their artificers wrought it for their own profit or their maſters. They told me for maſters, themſelves being all ſlaves. 'And 'are you all ſlaves?' ſays I. They told me 'Yes,' all but one, pointing to him. I then ordered him to be ſecured and removed; and told them if they would procure ſome hands to ſettle at Norbon and Mount Alkoe, they ſhould all be made free, have lands aſſigned them, and have other privileges, and I did not doubt in time would become the richeſt men in the country; for I underſtood by them they were acquainted with the uſe of money. I aſked them what other commodities they brought to Norbon in exchange: they ſaid cloaths for the people, both what they received in exchange from others who bought their iron, and ſome of a coarſer ſort of their own making. I found, in my diſcourſe I had with them, that out of my eleven men there were perſons of four different occupations; ſo I promiſed thoſe who would ſtay with me their freedoms, good houſes, and other rewards; and ſending three hands home with the veſſel, and a full freight, according to the value of the cargo they brought, I ordered them to engage as many as they could of their countrymen of diſtinct trades, to come and ſettle with me; and to be ſure, if they had any grain, corn, roots, plants, or ſeeds, uſually eaten for food, to bring all they could get with them, and they ſhould have good returns for them; and as to thoſe good hands that ſettled here, they ſhould be allowed all materials to work for their own profit the firſt year, and after that they ſhould alſo work for themſelves, allowing the king one tenth of the clear profit. This took ſo far with them, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty I got any of them to carry the ſhip back, for fear they ſhould not be able to return.

Before I parted from them, I aſſigned the eight who were left all proper conveniences, and recommended them to the king's protection; and I ordered the owner, then in cuſtody, to be conducted to Mount Alkoe, and from thence to Brandleguarp; where, treating him kindly, and giving him liberty, I made my proper uſe of him.

The king having lent me a convoy to conduct my priſoner, and given me a licenſe for as many cattle of the ſorts I choſe, as I pleaſed to drive to Georigetti's dominions, I made them drive a great number of ſheep of the fineſt wool I ever ſaw, and very large alſo; a great number of creatures not unlike an aſs for ſhape, but with two upright horns and ſhort ears, which gave abundance of rich milk; and alſo ſome ſwine. All theſe were drove to, and diſtributed at, my new colony, where I let them remain till I had provided a proper receptacle for them at Doorpt Swangeanti, near the woods; when I brought many over the black mountain, and diſtributed there, with directions how to manage them; and in about ſeven years time we held a little beaſt-market near Brandleguarp, twice a year, where the ſpare cattle were brought up, and preſerved in ſalt till the next market; for I had ſome years before made large ſalt-works near the ſea at Mount Alkoe, which employed abundance of hands, and was now become a conſiderable trade.

We had iron, copper, and ſilver money, which went very current; and had butter and cheeſe from the farms near the woods, as plenty as we had the fruits before, great numbers of families having ſettled there; and there was ſcarce a family but was of ſome occupation or other.

By the accounts I received from the mines, from time to time, it was prodigious to hear what vaſt quantities of

metals were prepared in one year now, by little above one third of the hands that were uſually employed in them before; for now the men's ambition was, to leave a good week's work done at their return, for an example to thoſe who were coming; and the overſeers told me, they would ſing and work with the greateſt delight imaginable, whilſt they pleaſed themſelves with telling one another how they intended to ſpend the next fourteen days.

CHAP. XXII.

PETER, LOOKING OVER HIS BOOKS, FINDS HE HAS GOT A LATIN BIBLE—SETS ABOUT A TRANSLATION—TEACHES SOME OF THE RAGANS LETTERS—SETS UP A PAPER MANUFACTURE—MAKES THE RAGANS READ THE BIBLE—THE RAGANS TEACH OTHERS TO READ AND WRITE—A FAIR KEPT AT THE BLACK MOUNTAIN — PETER'S REFLECTION ON THE SWANGEANTINES.

ALL things being now ſo ſettled, that they would go on of themſelves, and having no farther direct view in my head, I ſpent my time with my wife; and looking over my books one day to divert myſelf, with the greateſt joy imaginable, I found that the Bible I had taken to be in the Portugueſe tongue was a Latin one. It was many years ſince I had thought of that language, but on this occaſion, by force of memory and recollection, and with ſome attention, conſideration, and practice, I found it return to me in ſo plentiful a manner, that I fully reſolved to tranſlate my Bible into the Swangeantine tongue.

I ſent directly for Laſmeel to be my amanuenſis; and to work we went upon the tranſlation.

We began at the creation, and deſcending to the Flood, went on to the Jewiſh captivity in Egypt, and deliverance by Moſes; leaving out the genealogies, and all the Jewiſh ceremonies and laws, except the Ten Commandments. I tranſlated the Books of Samuel and Kings, down to the Babyloniſh captivity. I then tranſlated ſuch parts of the Prophets as were neceſſary to introduce the Meſſiah, and diſcover him; the Book of Pſalms, Job, and the Proverbs; and with the utmoſt impatience haſted to the New Teſtament. But then conſidering that when I had done, as only Laſmeel and myſelf could read it, in caſe of our deaths, the tranſlation muſt die with us, I choſe out ſix of the junior ragans, and two of the elder, to learn letters; and in leſs than twelve months I had brought them all to read mine and Laſmeel's writing perfectly well.

I inſtructed theſe ragans at ſpare hours, whilſt I went on with my tranſlation; but finding my paper grow low, having had a great ſupply of coarſe linen, and a ſort of calicoes from the iſles, in return for our metals, I ſet up a manufactory from that, and ſome gums of the trees, which we boiled with it to a pulp in iron pans, and beating it to pieces, made a uſeful paper, which would bear ink tolerably. But I could find nothing to make ink of, though I ſent over all the country to ſearch for every herb and fruit not commonly uſed; till at laſt I found an herb and flower on it, which if taken before the flower faded, would, by boiling thoroughly, become blue: this, by ſtill more boiling in a copper-pan, till it was dry and burnt hard to the bottom, in ſome meaſure anſwered my purpoſe; and I fixed upon it as the beſt I could obtain from all my experiments.

When the ragans were maſters of their pens, I ſet ſix of them to copy what Laſmeel had finiſhed, and the other two to teach their brethren; and in two years time, by a pretty conſtant application, (for I made them tranſcribe it perfectly fair and intelligible) we finiſhed our tranſlation, and two fair copies.

I then ordered the ragans to read a portion of it to the people conſtantly in the mouch: they, from the novelty of the ſtory, at firſt grew ſo exceeding fond of it, that upon the proper expoſitions of it I taught the ragans afterwards to make, they began to apply it ſeriouſly to religious purpoſes.

My writing-ragans were very fond of their knowledge of letters; and trade and commerce now increaſing, which put every one more or leſs in want of the ſame knowledge, they

made

made a great profit of it, by inſtructing all who applied to them. This increaſe of writing neceſſarily provided a maintenance for ſeveral perſons who travelled to Norbon for quills, and ſold them to the Swangeantines at extravagant rates; till the Norboneſe hearing that, brought them themſelves to the foot of the mountain, where the Swangeantines bought them, as they did ſeveral other commodities, which one country had, and the other wanted, eſpecially iron wares of almoſt every denomination; ſo that the mountain, being ſo exceſſively high, was the barrier; for the Norboneſe finding that difficulty in aſcending and deſcending, which the Swangeantines with their graundees did not, there was a conſtant market of buyers and ſellers on the Mount Alkoe ſide of the black mountain; which by degrees grew the general mart of the three kingdoms.

I have often reflected with myſelf, and have been amazed to think, that ſo ingenious and induſtrious a people as the Swangeantines have ſince appeared to be, and who, till I came amongſt them, had nothing more than bare food, and a hole to lie in, in a barren rocky country, and then ſeemed to deſire only what they had, ſhould in ten years time, be ſupplied not only with the conveniences, but ſuperfluities of life; and that they ſhould then become ſo fond of them, as rather willingly to part with life itſelf, than be reduced to the ſtate I found them in. And I have as often, on this occaſion, reflected on the goodneſs of Providence, in rendering one part of mankind eaſy under the abſence of ſuch comforts as others could not reſt without; and have made it a great argument for my aſſent to well-atteſted truths above my comprehenſion. 'For,' ſays I, 'to have affirmed, at my firſt 'coming, either that theſe things could 'have been made at all, or when done 'could have been of any additional be'nefit to theſe people, would have been 'ſo far beyond their imaginations, that 'the reporter of ſo plain a truth, as 'they now find it, would have been 'looked upon as a madman or an im'poſtor: but by opening their views 'by little and little, and ſhewing them 'the dependance of one thing upon 'another, he that ſhould now affirm 'the inutility of them, would be ob'ſerved in a much worſe light. And 'yet, without any embelliſhments of 'art, how did this ſo great a people live 'under the protection of Providence? 'Let us firſt view them at a vaſt diſ'tance from any ſort of ſuſtenance, 'yet from the help of the graundee, 'that diſtance was but a ſtep to them. 'They were forced to inhabit the 'rocks, from an utter incapacity of 'providing ſhelter elſewhere, having 'no tool that would either cut down 'timber for an habitation, or dig up 'the earth for a fence, or materials to 'make one: but they had a liquor 'that would diſſolve the rock itſelf 'into habitations. They had neither 'beaſt or fiſh, for food or burden; 'but they had fruits equivalent to 'both, of the ſame reliſh, and as 'wholeſome, without ſhedding blood. 'Their fruits were dangerous, till 'they had fermented in a boiling heat; 'and they had neither the ſun, or any 'fire, or the knowledge how to pro'pagate or continue it. But they had 'their hot ſprings always boiling, 'without their care or concern. They 'had neither the ſkins of beaſts, the 'original cloathing, or any other ar'tificial covering from the weather; 'but they were born with that warm 'cloathing the graundee, which being 'of a conſiderable denſity, and full of 'veins flowing with warm blood, not 'only defended their fleſh from all 'outward injuries, but was a moſt ſoft, 'comely, and warm dreſs to the body. 'They lived moſtly in the dark rock, 'having leſs difference of light with 'the change of ſeaſons, than other 'people have; but either by cuſtom or 'make, more light than what Pro'vidence has ſent them in the ſwee'coe, is diſagreeable: ſo that where 'little is to be obtained, Providence, 'by confining the capacity, can give 'content with that; and where appa'rent wants are, we may ſee, by theſe 'people, how careful Providence is to 'ſupply them; for neither the graun'dee, the ſweecoes, or their ſprings, 'are to be found where thoſe neceſſa'ries can be ſupplied by other means.'

Amongſt my other conſiderations, I have often thought, that if I had gone to the top of the black mountains northward of Brandleguarp, in the very lighteſt time, I might have ſeen the ſun; but theſe mountains were ſo elevated,

elevated, that our lighteſt time was only the gilded glimmering of their tops, having never ſeen ſo much light on them as totally to eclipſe all the ſtars; of which we had always the ſame in view, but in different poſitions.

CHAP. XXIII.

PETER'S CHILDREN PROVIDED FOR—YOUWARKEE'S DEATH—HOW THE KING AND QUEEN SPEND THEIR TIME—PETER GROWS MELANCHOLY—WANTS TO GET TO ENGLAND—CONTRIVES MEANS—IS TAKEN UP AT SEA.

I Had now been at Brandleguarp ten years; and my children were all provided for by the king but Dickey, as faſt as they were qualified for employment, and ſuch as were fit for it were married off to the beſt alliances in the country; ſo that I had only to ſit down, and ſee every thing I had put my hand to proſper, and not an evil eye in the three kingdoms caſt at me: but about my eleventh or twelfth year, my wife falling into a lingering diſorder, at the end of two years it carried her off. This was the firſt real affliction I had ſuffered for many years, and ſo ſoured my temper, that I became fit for nothing, and it was painful to me even to think of buſineſs.

The king's marriage had produced four children, three ſons and a daughter, which he would frequently tell me were mine.

Old Oniwheſke was dead, and the king and queen divided their whole time equally between Brandleguarp and Apſilo: but he was building a palace at my new colony, which by this time was grown to a vaſt city, and was called Stygena, in compliment to the queen; and this new palace was deſigned to receive the court one third of the year, as it lay almoſt at equal diſtance between both his other palaces. This method, which his majeſty took, at my perſuaſion, on the death of Oniwheſke, though it went againſt the grain at firſt, was now grown ſo habitual to him, and he ſaw his own intereſt ſo much in it, in the love and eſteem it procured him from the people, that at laſt he wanted no ſpur to it.

My melancholy for the death of my wife, which I hoped time would weat off, rather gained ground upon me; and though I was as much regarded as ever by the whole court, yet it grew troubleſome to me even to be aſked my advice; and it not only ſurprized thoſe about me, but even myſelf, to ſee the ſame genius, without any viſible natural decay, in ſo ſhort a time, from the moſt ſprightly and enterprizing, become the moſt phlegmatick and inactive.

My longings after my native country, ever ſince my wife's death, redoubled upon me, and I had formed ſeveral ſchemes of getting thither, as firſt, I had formed a project of going off by the iſlands, as I had ſo many ſmall veſſels at command there, and to get into the main ocean, and try my fortune that way; but, upon enquiry, I found that my veſſels could not get to ſea, or elſewhere, but to the zaps iſlands, by reaſon of the many rocks and ſand-banks which would oppoſe me, unleſs I went through the zaps country, which, in the light they had reaſon to view me, I was afraid to do. Then I had thoughts of going from the coaſt of Norbon; but that muſt have been in one of the foreign veſſels, and they coming from a quite different quarter than I muſt go, in all probability if I had put to ſea any way they were unacquainted with, they having no compaſs, we muſt have periſhed; for the more I grew by degrees acquainted with the ſituation of Doorpt Swangeanti, the ſtronger were my conjectures, that my neareſt continent muſt be the ſouthern coaſt of America; but ſtill it was only conjecture. At length, being tired and uneaſy, I reſolved, as I was accuſtomed to flight, and loved it, I would take a turn for ſome days, carry me where it would, I ſhould certainly light on ſome land, whence at worſt I could but come back again. I then went to ſee if my chair, board, and ropes, were ſound, for I had not uſed them for ſeveral years paſt; but I found them all ſo crazy, I durſt not venture in them; which diſappointment put off my journey for ſome time. However, as I had ſtill the thought remaining, it put me on ſeeking ſome other method to put it in practice; ſo I contrived the poles from which you took me, being a ſort of hollow cane the Swangeantines make

their

their ſpears of, but exceeding ſtrong and ſpringy, which interwoven with ſmall cords, were my ſeat, and were much lighter than my chair; and theſe buoyed me up when your goodneſs relieved me. I had taken Mount Alkoe bearers, as I knew I muſt come to a country of more light; and I now find, if I had not fallen, I muſt ſoon have reached land, if we could have held out; for we were come too far to think of returning, without a reſting-place: and what will become of my poor bearers, I dread to think; if they attempted to return, they muſt have dropt, for they had complained all the laſt day and night, and had ſhifted very often. If in your hiſtory you think fit to carry down the life of a poor old man any farther, you will as well know what to ſay of me, as I can tell you; and I hope what I have hitherto ſaid, will in ſome meaſure recompence both your expence and labour,

FINIS.